HARVEST TRUTH TOPICAL COMMENTS

Compiled by
LUDLOW LOOMIS
WATERBURY BIBLE STUDENTS
P. O. Box 1494
Waterbury, CT. 06721-1494

PREFACE

The Harvest Truth Topical Comments were compiled by Ludlow Loomis at the request of the Elders of the Chicago Bible Students. After he meticulously compiled the topics, the elders of Chicago edited the comments with some additional editing done by other elders.

Most of the topics examined are concepts of Truth as taught in the Holy Scriptures. Some are false concepts which are answered by scripture and quotes from the harvest message.

Most of the material is from The Bible plus quotes from the writings of Charles Taze Russell. Combined, it is quite an extensive compilation of proofs for each subject. Some quotes are from other sources which substantiate the Harvest Message. These quotes from more recent articles are information. An example of this is the section on Israel where more recent literature is quoted which provides information on the establishment of the nation and is an example of fulfillment of scripture.

The abbreviations from the writings of Pastor Russell are the same as used in other books recently published such as the Expanded Biblical Comments. They are as follows:

A F	Six Volumes of Scripture Studies
CR	Convention Report Sermons
PD	Photo Drama of Creation
OV	Overland Monthly
Q	Question Book
R	Reprints
SM	Sermon Book
T	Tabernacle Shadow of Better Sacrifices

For quotations from the Reprints and Convention Report Sermons the number following the colon (:) refers to the section number of the page. The page is divided into six sections, with the first three sections going down the left hand column and the last three down the right hand column.

It is hoped the references given will be a source for further study of the many topics herein discussed.

The Publishers

TABLE OF CONTENTS

1. Advocate 1
2. Ages and Dispensations 1
3. Ancient Worthies 2
4. Angels 4
5. Antichrist 8
6. Apostolic Succession 12
7. Atheism 13
8. Babylon 16
9. Baptism 18
10. Begotten and Born of the Spirit 20
11. The Bible 22
15. Christian Science 26
16. Chronology 28
17. Church Federation 36
18. Churchianity 40
19. Conscientious Objection to War 41
20. Consecration 43
21. Covenants 47
22. Creation and Fall 53
23. The Creator 57
24. Creeds 60
25. The Day of Vengeance 61
26. Days of Daniel 78
27. Divine Healing 80
28. Divine Plan — Chart 85
29. Doctrine 90
30. Permission of Evil 92
31. Faith 93
32. Five World Empires 96
33. Grace 101
    Free Grace (Election & Predestination) 101
    Once in Grace, Always in Grace 104
34. Great Company or Multitude 106
35. Harvest 111
36. Hell and Purgatory 120
37. High Calling 128
38. Holy Spirit 131
39. Immortality Versus Mortality 162
40. Incarnation 165
41. Israel: 166
    Natural (Fleshly) Israel 166
    Spiritual Israel 168
    Both the Houses of Israel 169
    British–American Israel 171
    Israel: Part 2 172
42. Jehovah's Witnesses 194
43. The Judgment Day 198
44. Justification 201
45. Kingdoms of This World 203
46. Liberty in Christ 207
47. New Light(?) 208
48. Marriage 209
49. The Mass 213
50. Mediator 215
51. The Memorial Supper 217
52. Miracles 220
53. Mormonism 229
54. Natures Distinct 233
55. Organization of the New Creation 237
56. Parables 244
57. Parental Obligations 262
58. Prayer 272
59. The Great Pyramid 277
60. Ransom 280
61. Reincarnation and Transmigration 282
62. Responsibility to the Truth 284
63. Restitution 285
64. Return of Christ 294
65. Sabbath 298
66. Salvation by Works 301
67. Two Salvations 303
68. Sanctification 305
69. Satan 308
70. Second Death 312
71. "That Wise and Faithful Servant" 314
72. Sin 317
73. Sin Offering 322
74. Soul 325
75. Spiritism 328
76. Sundry Earthly Obligations 330
77. Tabernacle Types and Shadows 336
78. Three Sourses of Temptations 343
79. Three Ways 344
80. Tithing 347
81. Gift of Tongues 348
82. Trinity 349
83. Types and Symbols: 354
    Symbols 354
    Types 386
84. Unity of the Faith 416
85. Universal Salvation (Not Universalism) 417
86. Walking in the Light 418
87. Index 421

DETAILED TABLE OF CONTENTS

ADVOCATE 1
Advocate Versus Mediator 1
Not Advocate For Deliberate Sin 1

AGES AND DISPENSATIONS 1
Third Heaven Associated With Paradise 1
Satan As Ruler of Second "World" 1
Satan's Associate Rulers 1
Second And Third "World" Differences 1
Ages 1

ANCIENT WORTHIES 2
Who They Are 2
Prophets 2
An Example To Us 2
Obtained A Good Report Through Faith 2
Their Justification 2
Their Trial 2
Called "The Fathers" 3
Earthly Phase Of The Kingdom 3
Their Preparation 3
Two Seeds 3
Not Of The Heavenly 4
Their Resurrection 4

ANGELS 4
Spirit Beings Called Angels 4
Higher Than Man 4
Our Lord Passed By the Nature of Angels To Redeem Us 4
Seen By Materialization As Man 4
Angels Sometimes Invisible To Some While Seen Miraculously By Others 4
Sometimes They Appeared In Dreams 4
Angels Seen As Men 5
Their Ministry 5
Neither Dying Nor Marrying 5
Michael The Archangel 5
Gabriel 5
Thrones, Dominions, Principalities, Powers and Authorities 5
Cherubim 5
Other Translations of Ezek. 28:14 6
Satan's Fall 6
Angels Called Sons of God 6
These Became Fallen Angels, Following Satan 6
How Christ Preached To These 7
Their Imprisonment 7
Their Judges 7
"Angels" Applied To Messengers of the Church in the Flesh 7

ANTICHRIST 8
Biblical Synonyms and Related Titles 8
Characteristics and Historical Development 8
(a) In the early church 8
(b) During the period of supremacy 8
(c) During the Reformation and thereafter 9
(d) Final Overthrow 9
The Beast Like Unto a Leopard 10
Blasphemies 10
Chart: The Church of God & Counterfeit 10
The "Little Horn" of Daniel 10
Wearing Out The Saints, etc. 11
"The Abomination of Desolation" 11
Other False Doctrines 11
Antichrist's End 11
References 12

APOSTOLIC SUCCESSION 12
Only Twelve Apostles 12
We Disagree With Those Claiming It 12
The Twelve Stars 12
No More Needed 12

ATHEISM 13
The Existence of a Supreme Intelligent Creator Established 13
How Nature Denies 13
A Reasonable Conclusion 13

The Self-Existing One 14
Mankind's Hope For Everlasting Life 15
Claiming The Bible's Support for Men's Creeds, Another Cause of Unbelief 15
World Conditions A Cause of Doubt 15

BABYLON 16
History 16
The Revelation 16
Symbols: City and Woman 16
Babylon—Mother and Daughters 16
Babylon: City and Empire—Nominal Church and Christendom 17
Babylon's Fall 18

BAPTISM 18
Baptized Unto Moses 18
John's Baptism 18
Baptism of Gentiles 18
Baptism into Christ's Death 18
Baptism of The Spirit 19

BEGOTTEN AND BORN OF THE SPIRIT 20
Jesus First Begotten, Then Born of the Spirit 20
The Church also Begotten 20
Significance of Greek Word Gennao 20
Born of the Spirit in the Resurrection 20
The Faithful Church Likewise Born of the Spirit in the Resurrection 21
Other Examples of the Use of the Word Gennao — Bare . . 21
Bear 21
Begotten 21
Born 21
From the Same Root Gennetos 22

THE BIBLE 22
It's Antiquity and Preservation 22
It's Influence and Benefits 22
It's Theme 22
Motive of It's Writers 22
The Laws Given Through Moses 23
Moses' Integrity and Humility 23
Justice of the Mosaic Law 23
Other Welfare Laws 23
The Tithe a Just Debt 23
Admonition—Not Tax Decree 23
The Prophets 24
Unity of Theme 24
Summary of the Bible's Theme 24
Redemption For All 25
Future Life Dependent Upon Resurrection 25
Rightly Dividing the Word of Truth 25
Topically 25
Dispensationally 25
Classes Involved 25
Literal vs. Figurative Language 25
Gradual Fulfillments 25
Context 26
Spurious Passages 26
Translations 26

CHRISTIAN SCIENCE 26
Founder 26
Definition 26
Founder a Woman 26
Paul Warned of False Science 27
Physical Well-Being Not Aim of Christians 27
Gifts Conferred By Apostles 27
Miracles Ceased 27
Good Works—A Deception 27
Sabbath For Healing 28
Misinterpreted Texts 28

CHRONOLOGY 28
The Millennium Here 28
Chart: From the Creation of Adam 28
Scriptures from Chart 28
Times of the Gentiles 30
Their Beginning 30
Length of Gentile Times 31
End of Gentile Times 31
Date of Jesus' Birth 31
Earth's Jubilee Year 32
The Seventh or Last Trumpet 33
Resurrection Change of Saints 33
Parallel Dispensations 33
Their Rejections 33
Restoration Foretold 34
Time Periods of the Double 34
Harvest Parallels 34
A Parallel Preceding the Harvest 35
Periods Mutually Corroborative 35
From 1916 Foreword—Volume Two 35
Further Evidence 35
God's 7000-Year Rest Day 35

CHURCH FEDERATION 36
A Confederacy 36
Temporary Exaltation and Persecuting Power 37
The Image of the Beast 37
1916 Prediction 38
Progressing Towards Union 38
Coming Soon 38
From Chicago Tribune 38
Ordination 38
Violent Overthrow 39

CHURCHIANITY 40
Christ Vs. Nominal Church 40
Not Divided 40
Christian, and Church Worship Differ 40
True Christian Fellowship 40
Church Federation 40

CONSCIENTIOUS OBJECTION TO WAR 41
Jesus an Example to Us 41
Love Your Enemies 41
Christian Not to Render Evil for Evil 41
A Matter of Conscience 41
The Golden Rule 41
Our Historic Position 41
Convention Resolution 42
Would Not Join the Association of Bible Students To Evade Military Service 42

CONSECRATION 43
Definition 43
Counting the Cost 43
Motivation 43
Call To Consecration 43
Discipline in Consecration 43
Should it Be Urged upon Any? 43
Aid in Fulfilling Our Consecrations 44
Rewards of Consecration 44
Family Obligations 44
Experiences to be Expected 44
Giving up Restitution Rights 44
Joys of Consecration 44
Consecration in Type 45
Liability To Second Death 45
Singleness of Purpose 45
What Age for Consecration 45
In the Days of Thy Youth 45
Consecration Between Ages 46
Consecrating Children 46
What it Means 46
Typical (Leviticus 16) 46
Antitypical 46
Consecration versus Sanctification 46
Voluntary 46

To Be Followed By Performance 47
Justification Vitalized 47
How We Come 47

COVENANTS 47
The Abrahamic Covenant 47
Two Seeds Promised 47
Confirmed With an Oath 47
The Unconditional Oathbound Covenant 47
Selection of the Church 47
The Spiritual Seed 48
The Land Promised to Abram 48
Not Yet Fulfilled 48
Spiritual Seed Raised First before Ancient Worthies . . . 48
Law Covenant 48
The Allegory 48
Explanation 48
The Decalogue 48
The Law Epitomized by Jesus 49
Covenant Exclusively with Israel 49
Moses The Mediator 49
Obedience Required 49
Earthly Blessings and Eternal Life Promised to Those Keeping...the Law of Love 49
Object of the Law Covenant 50
Israel Could Not Keep It 50
Our Lord Fulfilled It 50
He Made an End of It 50
Freed from the Law 50
Unbelieving Jews Still Under It 50
The Books of Moses and the Laws Therein Promulgated 51
The New Covenant 51

CREATION AND FALL 53
The Earthly Creation 53
Length of Days 53
Matter Thrown off by The Earth 53
The Creative Days 53
Man Created—Not Evolved 54
In God's Image and Likeness 54
No Missing Link 54
Man a Distinct Creation 54
Religion 54
Tools 54
Man Created Perfect 54
A Test Required 55
A Test Failed 55
Adam Fully Responsible 55
Wages of Sin Is Death 55
The Burden of Heredity 55
The Future 56

THE CREATOR 57
His Existence Established 57
The Divine Nature 57
His Name 57
How The Lord Repented 57
God's Attributes 57
Power 57
Justice 57
Absolute Justice of God's Law 57
Equality Under The Law 57
The Law Epitomized 58
Justice not Violated by Mercy 58
Love 58
His Kindness to Israel 58
His Mercy Revealed to Moses 58
His Love Revealed in The Psalms 58
Love Shown in the New Covenant 58
Love Shown to the New Creation 58
Power 59
Power Manifested in Creation 59
His Power on Behalf of His People 59
His Omnipotence 59
God Not the Author of Sin 59
God is Unchangeable 60

CREEDS 60
Traditions of Men 60
Creeds Misrepresent God's Character and Plan 60
Creeds Lead to Rejection of Bible 60
Apostles Creed 60

THE DAY OF VENGEANCE 61
Characteristics 61
It Comes as a Thief 62
Recompense for Persecution of the Faithful 62
The Day of Judgment 62
Christendom's Responsibility 62
The Heathen Also 62
By Whom Accomplished—The Winepress 63
Broken By God's Kingdom 63
The Trouble in Spasms 63
Types Illustrating the Day of Vengeance 64
Babylon 64
Edom 69
Egypt 71
Jerusalem 72
Many Nations 72
Jacob's Trouble 75
The Battle of Armageddon 76
Preliminary Features 76
Our Position in the Trouble 76
Our Deliverance 77
How The Trouble Will be Ended 77
The Outcome 77
Summary 78
The Benevolent Object of the Day of Vengeance 78

DAYS OF DANIEL 78
Napoleon Described 79
The Time of the End 79
The Three and a Half Times 79

The 1290 Days 80
The 1335 Days 80

DIVINE HEALING 80
Miraculous Healings in the Bible 80
Resurrections in the Bible 81
Who Were Healed 82
Reason For Miraculous Healings 82
Who Could Bestow the Gift of Healing 82
Healings Not of God 82
True Divine Healing 83
Resurrection: Complete Divine Healing 83
Misunderstood Texts on Healing 83
He Healed Many 83
Mostly Sinners Were Healed 84
Himself Took Our Infirmities 84
Proofs of our Lord's First and Second Advents 84
Type of Sin 84

DIVINE PLAN — CHART 85
Explanation of Chart: 85
Dispensations 85
Ages 85
Patriarchal Age 85
Jewish Age 85
Gospel Age 85
Millennial Age 86
Ages to Come 86
End of Ages—Harvests 86
Overlapping of Ages 86
Different Planes 86
Significance of Planes L and K 87
Explanation of Letters "a–z" 87
The Incorrigible Destroyed 89
The Final Unity of the Universe 89
The Tabernacle Parallel 89

DOCTRINE 90
Jesus' Doctrine from God 90
Doctrines of Men 90
Paul's Doctrine 90
Continue in the Doctrine 90
Attitude Toward False Doctrine 91
Present Disregard of Doctrine 91
Established in the Faith 91
A Purifying Influence 91
An Aid in Tests 91
Inspires Hope and Faith 91

PERMISSION OF EVIL 92
A Free Moral Agent 92
Man Not Forced Into Sin 92
God Not the Author of Sin 92
How We Learn 92

FAITH 93
Faith Vs. Credulity 93
Importance of Faith 93
Faith The Gift of God 94
Justification By Faith 94
Faith of the Ancient Worthies 94
Faith During Gospel Age 94
Faith During Restitution 94
Growth and Development 94
Tests of Faith 95
Holding Fast To The Faith 95
Losing Faith 95
The Fight of Faith 95
Contending for the Faith 96

FIVE WORLD EMPIRES 96
Nebuchadnezzar's Dream 96
Daniel's Interpretation 96
Babylon and Medo-Persia 96
Medo-Persia and Greece 96
Fourth World Empire—Rome 97
The Clay Mixed With the Iron 97
Fifth Universal Empire 97
The Church Included 97
The Stone—God's Kingdom 97
Daniel's Vision of These Empires 97
The Fourth Beast 97
The Little Horn 97
Its End 97
Existence of Fourth Beast not Prolonged 97
The Cause of the Overthrow 97
Embryo Kingdom Before Receiving Power 98
A Remarkable Confirmation 98
Fulfilled To The Day 98
Gentile Governments Better Than Anarchy 99
Not Christ's Kingdom 99
Resisting Christ's Kingdom 99
No Kingdom Without the King 100
Nebuchadnezzar a Type 100
Two Phases of God's Kingdom, How Manifested 100
The Spiritual Phase 100
The Earthly Phase 100
The Kingdom Everlasting 100

GRACE 101
Free Grace (Election & Predestination) 101
Election Not Arbitrary Coercion Scope of Free Grace . 101
Election in Previous Ages 101
Eternal Destiny Not Involved 101
God's Justice in Election 102
How God Raised Up Pharaoh 102
How God Hardened His Heart 102
Israel An Elect Nation 102
Free Grace First Manifested 102
Election in the Gospel Age 102
No Injustice Done to Israel 102
Jacob Elected 103
The Elect New Creation Foreknown 103
How Foreknown 103
To What Predestinated 103
Diligence Required of Those Predestinated 103

Free Grace 104
Once in Grace, Always in Grace 104
Texts Refuting This View 104
Make Calling and Election Sure 104
Grace of Justification May Be Lost 104
Losing Second Step of Grace 104
According to Our Will 105

GREAT COMPANY OR MULTITUDE 106
Have an Advocate 106
Resurrection of Great Company Before the Ancient Worthies 106
Foolish Virgins; Picture of the Gt. Co. 106
Destruction of the Flesh 106
Scape Goat 107
Sacrifice Unwilling 107
Lack of Love and Zeal 107
Spotted Robes 107
No Earthly Inheritance 107
Not To Share in the First Resurrection 108
No Call to Great Company 108
Pictured By The Levites 108
Elisha a Possible Picture 108
Chariot of Fire to Make Separation 108
Scriptures Referring To Great Company 108
Great Company a Spirit Class 109
Types and Figures of the Great Company 109
Sufferings of the Great Company 110
Great Company Will Be Overcomers 110
Causes of Falling into Great Company 111

HARVEST 111
The Parable 111
The Explanation 111
A Harvest of the Church 111
The World in Ignorance: True Christians Enlightened 111
Purpose of the Harvest 111
Wheat and Tares 111
The Sickle 112
Bundling—The Tares 112
Not Literal Burning 112
Tares—How Sown 112
Harvest Parallels 112
The Chaff Rejected 112
Gospel Harvest Parallels 112
A Sifting Time 112
The Harvest Not Yet Ended 112
The Reaped to Become Reapers 112
Jewish and Christian Harvest Parallels 112
The Burning of the Tares 113
The Reaping Message 113
Harvest in 2 Parts 113
Harvest Outline 113
I. What is the Harvest? 113
A. Object of 113
B. Importance of 114
C. Character of 114
II. The Three Harvests 114
A. Jewish Age 114
B. Gospel Age 114
1. True Church 114
2. Great Company 115
3. Nominal Church 116
C. Millennial Age 116
III. Message of Harvest 116
A. What Accomplishes the Separation? 116
B. What Message consists of: 116
IV. Time of Harvest 117
A. Parallels—1st & 2nd Advent 118
B. Chronology 119
C. Time Prophecies Converge 119

HELL AND PURGATORY 120
Sheol 120
Hades 123
Gehenna—Second Death—Lake of Fire 124
Uses of the Word Gehenna 124
Restraining Eyes and Hands 124
Soul and Body Destroyed 124
Everlasting Worms-Unquenchable Fire 125
How Can Ye Escape? 125
Tartaroo 125
Torment 125
Purgatory 126
A Catholic View 126
The Scriptural View 126
The World's Purgatory 126
Its Beginning 126
The Great Company 126
Purging the World 127
Deliverance of the Righteous 127
Present Purgatorial Judgment 127

HIGH CALLING 128
A Heavenly Calling 128
Called to Fellowship 128
The Call Conditional 128
The Kind Who are Called 128
Why Such are Called 128
Humility Required 128
Character a Condition of the Call 128
Called to Sacrifice 128
How Shall We Present Ourselves? 128
Those Counting the Cost 129
Bearing His Reproach 129
Showing Forth His Praises 129
Faithfulness unto Death Required 129
Sacrifice Voluntary 129
Obedience Leads into Sacrifice 129
The Reward 129
The Door Still Open 130
Night Cometh 130
Enter In 130
Sacrifice Your Will 130

Faithful Unto Death 130
The Call 130
A Reasonable Service 130

THE HOLY SPIRIT 131
Definition 131
Ruach 131
Pneuma 131
A Spirit Being 131
A Power: Not a Person 131
How it Operates (a) Generative Power 132
(b) Through (By) the Son 132
(c) Through Agencies 132
(d) Quickening Natural Faculties 132
(e) Through Godly Men (Inspiration) 133
(f) Through Angels 133
Witness of the Spirit 133
Erroneous Views 134
How to Know the Witness 134
(a) World's Hatred a Witness 135
(b) Separate From the World 135
(c) Knowledge of God's Plan 136
(d) Not Ashamed 136
(e) Chastenings 136
(1) Different Degrees of Discipline 136
(2) Judging Self 136
(3) Suffering for Righteousness 136
(4) New Creature Sinneth not 136
Seal of the Spirit in Heart and Head 137
Sanctification of the Spirit 137
Praying for the Spirit 138
Filled With the Spirit 139
Holy Spirit a Teacher and Guide (Guiding into all Truth) . 140
Begetting of the Spirit 141
Types of the Anointing of the Spirit 142
The Holy Anointing Oil 142
Types of the Anointing of the Spirit 143
Some Aspects of the Spirit (a) Spirit of Sonship 143
(b) Spirit of Understanding 143
(c) Spirit of Truth 144
(d) Spirit of Power 144
(e) Spirit of Promise 145
Born of the Spirit 145
Three Spirit Baptisms Sufficient 145
(1) Jesus' Baptism of the Spirit 145
(2) The Baptism at Pentecost 146
(3) Cornelius' Baptism 146
Definition of this Baptism 146
Keys of the Kingdom 146
Three Baptisms: Water, Holy Spirit, Fire 146
One Body 146
Gradual Development 147
By Measure or Without Measure 147
Spirit of a Sound Mind 147
Gifts of the Spirit 148
Some Gifts Passed Away 149
Some Workings of the Holy Spirit 150
Two Parts in Pouring Out the Spirit 150
Future Different From Present 151
The Channel Now and Future 151
Baptism, Witness, and Seal 151
To The World—Future Testimony 151
The Spirit on the Church 152
Gradual Development 152
The Spirit of the Church 152
Influence on the Church 152
Spirit of Sonship 152
Overcoming the World 153
Not an Individual Conflict 153
True Consecration 153
Fear Is a Foe 153
Knowledge not Sufficient 154
Spirit of Truth Leads to Activity 154
The Spirit That Lusteth to Envy 154
Taught Through the Spirit 154
The Comforter 154
Lying to the Spirit 155
Grieve Not—Quench Not the Spirit 155
Sin Against the Holy Spirit 155
The Spirit of the World—of Antichrist 156
Holy and Unholy Spirits at War 156
The Battle Ground 156
Various Delineations of the Holy Spirit 157
Contrasting Spirits 157
Supposed Objections Considered 157
(1) "Quench Not the Spirit" 157
(2) "Grieve Not the Holy Spirit" 157
(3) "The Spirit of Truth" 158
(4) "The Comforter" 158
(5) "Filled with the Holy Spirit" 158
(6) "Lying to the Holy Spirit" 158
(7) "Tempting the Holy Spirit" 158
(8) "Sin Against the Holy Spirit" 159
(9) "The Spirit Said unto Philip" 159
(10) "The Spirit Said unto Him..." 159
(11) "The Holy Spirit Said..." 160
(12) "It Seemed Good to the...Spirit " 159
(13) "Forbidden by the Holy Spirit" 159
(14) "The Holy Spirit Witnesseth..." 159
(15) "The Holy Spirit Made Some..." 161
(16) The Holy Spirit a Teacher 161
(17) "The Things of the Spirit of God" 161
(18) "An Unction from the Holy One" 160
(19) "Groanings...Cannot Be Uttered" 160
(20) How Spirit Reproves the World 160

IMMORTALITY VERSUS MORTALITY 162
Definitions 162
Origin of Human Immortality Error 163
Texts Proving That Man is Mortal 163
...Originally Possessed by the Father Only 164
...Given to Jesus at His Resurrection 164

Immortality Promised to the Saints 165

INCARNATION 165
Actually Made Flesh 165
Wrong Ideas Based on Incarnation Theory 165
Jesus Actually Became A Man 165
Why Necessary to be Made Flesh 165
Not a Sinful Man 166
Why Jesus Was Perfect 166

ISRAEL 166
Natural (Fleshly) Israel 166
Israel's Future Position 166
Spiritual Israel 168
Heavenly Promises 168
Tabernacle, Priesthood, Sacrifices 168
Babylonian Captivity 168
Charts: Both The Houses of Israel 169
British—American Israel 171
Anglo-Israelites 171

Israel: Part 2 172
Israel (Fleshly) 172
God's first chosen People, etc. 172
The Promised Land 173
Sojourning...Children of Israel 174
Jacob's Trouble 175
Times of the Gentiles 175
Fleshly Israel and Spiritual Israel 176
Chart: Fleshly & Spiritual Israel 176
Parable of the Rich Man & Lazarus 178
The Nation of Israel Elected 179
Earth's Great Jubilee 179
The Law Covenant: Are Jews still Bound Under The Law Covenant? 180
Berlin Congress of Nations 182
The Valley of Dry Bones 183
Israel's Double 185
Moses the Mediator of the Law Covenant 186
The Fulfillment of Time-Prophecy at the First Advent of Christ (The 70 Weeks) 187
History of the Modern Nation 188
Declaration of the Establishment of The State of Israel 188
The Balfour Declaration 189
Jewish State 190
Hatred of the Jews 190
Events Leading up to the Balfour Declaration 193
The White Paper 193

JEHOVAH'S WITNESSES 194
Numbers and Works 194
The Lord's True Church 194
Organization of the True Church, Jesus the Head 194
Inspired Apostles 194
Elders, Deacons, Etc. 194
Angels 194
That Servant 194
An Individual, Not a Group 194
Falling Away 195
The Channel—An Organization? 195
The Great Crowd 195
Armageddon 195
Present Work of Witnesses 195
Is Future Hope for World Dependent on our Present Efforts? 195
Did Jesus Preach From Door to Door? 195
Do These Texts They Cite Prove This...? 195
A Text not Cited 195
Jesus Teaching Publicly 196
If Thou Who Killed Him Had a Chance, Why Not Those Who Oppose Us? 196
Unrighteous May Pass Through 196
Parable of Sheep and Goats 196
The Saints Associate Judges 196
Satan Bound 196
Least of Christ's Brethren 196
Wilful Sin Not Forgiven 196
Adam Had to be Redeemed 196
A Ransom for All 196
Blessing for All 196
Restitution of All 196
Even the Sodomites 196
Age-Lasting but not Everlasting 196
Not Yet Having Full Light 196
Sodomites To Return 196
Perpetual Sleep 197
Definition of Olam, Perpetual 197
Compare Aaronic Priesthood 197
Other Lords To Perish 197
Sin Unto Second Death Follows Receiving The Holy Spirit 197
Only Spirit Begotten on Trial now for Eternal Life 197
The Door Not Yet Closed 197
Does Fear...Bring Acceptable Service...? 197
Will Survivors of Armageddon Have Children to Fill the Earth 197
Blood Transfusions 197

THE JUDGMENT DAY 198
Meaning of Judgment 198
Meaning of Day 198
More Than Twenty-four Hours 198
Other Judgment Days 198
The First Judgment Day 198
The Church Only Released Yet 199
Not Because Sentence was Unjust 199
Christ to be Their Judge 199
A Judge also a Deliverer 199
Obey and Live 199
An Individual Trial 199
According to Ability 199
One Hundred Years' Trial 199
Reward and Penalty 199

Everlasting Destruction 200
Present Responsibility 200
Only The Little Flock Now on Trial... 200
Two Classes Judged before the World's Judgment Day . . . 200
Their Judgment More Severe 200
A Time for Rejoicing 200
Misunderstanding Through Mistranslation 200

JUSTIFICATION 201
Definition 201
Church's Justification to Life 201
Church's Justification in Detail 201
By Blood 201
By Faith 201
In Jesus's Name 201
By Works of Faith 201
Jesus Raised For Our Justification 201
God Justifieth 201
Abraham Justified By Faith 201
Sacred Record of Ancient Worthies 201
Justified By Works of Faith 201
Not to Life, But to Friendship 201
Israel as a Nation Justified Typically 201
Justification to Friendship in Gospel Age Before Full Consecration 201
Those Whose Justification is Not Vitalized 202
Future Justification of the World 202

KINGDOMS OF THIS WORLD 203
Times of the Gentiles 203
Ordained of God 203
A Wise Purpose 203
Satan The Invisible Prince 203
Four Universal Empires 203
The Counterfeit Kingdom 204
Daniel's View of Those Kingdoms vs. Nebuchadnezzar's . 204
The Consuming and Destruction 204
Loss of Dominion and Destruction 204
Cause of Their Destruction 204
Not Peacefully 204
Better Than Lawlessness 204
Satan's Usurpation 205
Man's Objective in Self-Government 205
Present Awakening 205
Our Attitude 205
Not Engaging in Politics 205
Results of Erroneous View 205
The World Awakened 206
The Kingdoms Do Not Learn 206

LIBERTY IN CHRIST 207
New Creation Not Under Law of Liberty 207
Full Liberty to Each Member 207
Do Not Misuse Liberty 207
Keep Your Liberty 207
Still More Liberty Needed 207
All To The Glory of God 207
World Under Law of Liberty at End of Millennium 208

NEW LIGHT (?) 208
How To Test Teachings 208
Trying the Spirits 208
Avoid Forbidden Paths 208
By What to Prove New Light 209
How Satan Deceived Many 209
Desire for Change Not Normal 209
Light, Thought Not Self-Contradictory Is Progressive 209

MARRIAGE (and Re-Marriage and Divorce) 209
Scriptures Permitting Marriage 209
Scriptures Not Favoring Marriage 210
Unequally Yoked 210
Marriage is Binding 210
Marriage a Type 211
Relative Position of Husbands and Wives 211
Obligations in Marriage 211
Remarriage 212
Divorce 212

THE MASS 213
Scripture Proofs of Error of The Mass 213
The Mass is Not the Eucharist 213
The Mass, Doctrine of Roman Catholicism 213
Transubstantiation 214
Christ Not Sacrificed Afresh, Daily 214
Fulfillment of Daniel, The Abomination of Desolation . . . 214
The Continual Sacrifice 214
When Set Up 214
Recognized in Time of The End 214
Not Fulfilled in Reformation 214
Typical & Antitypical Fulfillment of The Abomination of Desolation 214

MEDIATOR 215
None in Abrahamic Covenant 215
Moses as Mediator 215
Mediator Versus Advocate 215
Jesus—Mediator 215
New Covenant Made During Millennium 215
Need for Mediator 215
The Christ—The Millennial Mediator 215
New Covenant to be Made with Mediator 216
Old Law Covenant made with Mediator 216

THE MEMORIAL SUPPER 217
Israel's Passover 217
Through the Red Sea 217
The Antitype 217
The Passover Picture 217
The Passover 217
Our Lord's Memorial 217
Our Common Participation 218
The Cup Also 218
For His Body's Sake 218
Love Revealed by Sacrifice 218
Still Appropriate 218

Who May Partake? 218
Partaking Unworthily 219
Who May Serve It 219
Assembling to Partake 219
Suggested Order of Service 219

MIRACLES 220
Old Testament Miracles 220
Aaron's Rod That Budded 220
The Brazen Serpent 220
Daniel Delivered From Lions 220
Deadly Pottage Corrected 220
Death of Korah, Dathan, Abiram 220
Death of Nadab and Abihu 221
Death of Uzzah 221
Elijah Fed by Ravens 221
Elijah and the Prophets of Baal 221
The Antitype 221
Elijah Taken Up 221
Fall of Jericho 221
The Fiery Furnace 221
Jordan Divided by Elijah 221
Jordan Divided by Elisha 221
Jordan Stopped 221
Manna 221
Red Sea Divided 222
Water From the Smitten Rock 222
Significance of the Rock 222
Sun and Moon Stayed 222
Syrian Army Temporarily Blinded 222
Egyptian Plagues 222
Widow's Meal and Cruse of Oil 222
Her Son Raised 223
Elijah Fed By An Angel 223
Wind, Earthquake, Fire 223
Wall Falls on Israel's Enemies 223
Soldiers Sent After Elijah Killed 223
Jordan Divided; Elijah Taken Up 223
Waters Healed 223
Mocking Youths Torn by Bears 223
Water and Victory Given 223
Widow's Oil Multiplied 223
Shunamite's Son Born and Restored 223
Hundred Fed with Twenty Loaves 223
Naaman Cured; Gehazi Smitten 223
Iron Made to Swim 223
Young Man's Eyes Opened; Army Blinded 223
Touching Elisha's Bones Revives Dead Man 223
Angel Destroys Army 224
Shadow Goes Back on Dial 224
Uzziah's Leprosy 224
Nebuchadnezzar's Reason Lost 224
Handwriting on the Wall 224
Daniel in the Lion's Den 224
Jonah, The Fish, The Gourd 224
New Testament Miracles 224
Joseph's Dream 224
The Star of Bethlehem 224
Wise Men and Joseph Warned 224
The Spirit as a Dove 224
Leper Healed 224
Palsy Cured 224
Peter's Mother-in-law Cured 224
The Tempest Calmed 224
Demons Cast out into Swine 224
Forgiving & Curing a Man of Palsy 224
Woman Healed by Touching Garment 225
Jairus's Daughter Raised 225
Blind Given Sight 225
Dumb and Possessed Speaks 225
Disciples Given Power to Work Miracles 225
Jesus' Miracles 225
Withered Hand Restored 225
Blind, Dumb, Possessed Restored 225
Feeding Multitude (1) 225
Walking on Sea 225
Spirit Cast Out of Syrophenician Woman's Daughter . . 225
Feeding Multitude (2) 225
Casting out a Demon 225
Transfiguration 225
Tribute Money in Fish 225
Eyes of Blind Opened 225
Fig Tree Curses 225
Unclean Spirit Cast Out 225
Spirits Cast out & Healing by Touch 226
Healing Deaf and Tongue-tied 226
Blind Given Sight 226
Birth of John Foretold 226
Zacharias' Dumbness 226
Jesus' Birth Foretold 226
Zacharias' Dumbness Departs 226
Angel Announces Jesus' Birth 226
Angel's Song 226
Simeon's and Anna's Testimony 226
Miraculous Catch of Fish 226
Raising the Widow's Son 226
Woman Made Straight 226
Dropsied Man Healed 226
Ten Lepers Cleansed 226
High Priest's Servant's Ear Healed 226
Water Turned into Wine 226
Nobleman's Son Healed 226
Impotent Man at Pool Healed 226
Man Blind from Birth Given Sight 226
Lazarus Raised 227
Coming of the Holy Spirit 227
Lame Man Made to Walk 227
Ananias and Sapphira Stricken 227
Healing Powers 227
Prison Doors Opened 227
Stephen's Vision 227

Philip's Miracles 227
Jesus' Appearance to Saul 227
Ananias Restored Saul's Sight 227
Aeneas Healed 227
Raising of Dorcas 227
Peter Sent to Cornelius—Gentiles Accepted 227
Peter Delivered from Prison 227
Elymas Stricken Blind 227
Lame Man Healed 227
The Macedonian Call 227
Casting Out an Evil Spirit 227
Earthquake Releases Prisoners 228
Paul's Miracles vs. Man's Attempt To Cast out Spirits . 228
The Dead Raised 228
Paul Sent to the Gentiles 228
Paul Encouraged by Jesus 228
Also on the Ship 228
Paul Unharmed by Viper 228
Publius' Father Healed 228
Paul's Signs and Wonders 228
Miraculous Gifts 228
Miraculous Gifts to Cease 228
Misuse of Tongues 228
Resurrection & Appearances of Christ 228
Paul's Visions 228
Miracles Through the Spirit 228
A Witness to Preaching 228
The Revelation of John 228

MORMONISM 229
What Mormons Believe (22 Beliefs) 229
Mormonism Answered 230

NATURES DISTINCT 233
Human Perfection 233
Jesus Also Perfect 233
Chart: Perfection on Different Planes 233
Man Not a Spirit Being 233
Our Lord's Changes of Nature 233
Jesus Was a Perfect Man 234
Jesus Not a Mixture of Two Natures 234
Light an Illustration 234
Jesus an Illustration 234
Two Salvations 234
Different Resurrections 234
The Spiritual Resurrection 234
The First Resurrection 234
The Natural Versus Spiritual 234
Spirit Beings Described 234
Invisibly Present 234
Appearing as Men 235
Not Injustice in Variety of Creation 235
Human Restitution 235
Close Your Eyes 235
Restitution 235
Begotten of the Spirit 236
Development of the Saints 236
The Change to the Divine Nature 236
Memory and Personality Continue 236
Glory in Variety to Eternity 236

ORGANIZATION OF THE NEW CREATION 237
The Foundation 237
Apostles 237
The Apostle Paul 237
Inspiration of the Apostles 238
Objections to Infallibility Answered 238
Binding and Loosing 239
Upon This Rock Will I Build My Church 239
Keys of the Kingdom 239
Not Lords of God's Heritage 239
Elders 240
Bishops 240
Prophets 240
Not Selfishly Ambitious 240
Qualifications for Eldership 240
Duties of Elders 240
Pastors 240
Teachers 241
Evangelists 241
Ordination 241
Election of Elders and Deacons 241
Deacons 241
Deacons of the Church 241
Qualifications for Deacons 242
Sisters Not to Teach in the Church 242
But Anointed to Preach the Gospel Otherwise 242
Let Her be Covered 242
Assembling 242
Object of Assembling 242
Not Worldly Assemblies 242
The Interested Not Excluded 242
No Schisms 243
Not Bondage Either 243
Simplicity of Organization 243

PARABLES 244
New Testament Parables 244
Bread of Life 244
The Bridegroom 244
The Dragnet 244
The Eleventh Hour 244
The Barren Fig Tree 244
The Fig Tree Putteth Forth Leaves 244
Gehenna—Fire and Worms 245
The Good Samaritan 245
The Good Shepherd 245
The Great Supper 246
Honored Seat at Feast 246
Householder Returning From Wedding Feast 246
House Broken Into 247
A House on a Rock 248
Leaven 248
The Lost Coin 248

Lost Sheep 248
Many Mansions 248
Master and Servant 249
Mustard Seed 249
New Cloth, Old Garment 249
New Wine, Old Bottles 249
Pharisee and Publican 249
The Pounds 249
The Unfaithful Servant 250
Slaying the King's Enemies 250
Prodigal Son 250
Rich Fool 251
Rich Man and Lazarus 251
Five Brethren 252
Sheep and Goats 252
Sower and Seed 253
Steward, Faithful and Wise 253
Strait Gate 254
Talents 254
Ten Virgins 254
Tower, Proposal to Build 255
Two Debtors Forgiven 255
Two Kinds of Creditors 255
Unjust Judge 256
Unjust Steward 256
The Vine 256
Vineyard and Wicked Husbandmen 257
Water of Life 258
The Wedding Garment 258
Wheat and Tares 259
Old Testament Parables 259
Amos 7-9 259
Zech. 1:7-6:15 259
The Trees Make a King 259
Samson's Riddle 260
Poor Man's Ewe Lamb 260
Widow's Two Sons 260
Escaped Prisoner 260
Micaiah's Vision 260
Thistle and Cedar 260
The Drunkard 260
The Sluggard and His Vineyard 260
Unfruitful Vineyard 260
The Plowman 261
Eagles and Vine 261
Lion's Whelps 261
Two Harlots 261
Boiling Pot 261
Cedar in Lebanon 261
Sea Monster 261
Shepherds and Flock 262
Valley of Dry Bones 262
Living Waters 262
True and false Shepherds 262

PARENTAL OBLIGATIONS 262
Consecrated Planning 262
Prenatal Conditions 262
Child Training 263
Justification of Children 263
Consecration of Children 264
Discipline 264
Explaining Authority 265
Sense of Justice in Children 265
Building Character 265
Training from Infancy 265
Cleanliness 265
Bad Training 265
Mixed Marriages 265
Rectifying Past Mistakes 265
Older Children 265
Obligations to Parents 266
Higher Education 266
Education 266
Useful Play 266
Exercise of the Child Mind 266
Evil Suggestions 266
Scriptural Instruction 266
Primary Duty 266
Nominal Sunday Schools 267
Ecclesia Sunday Schools 267
Service of Children 267
Children at Meetings 267
Confidence of Children 267
Obedience 267
The Power of Suggestion 268
Mother's Role 268
Disobedience 268
Good Suggestions in Mottos 268
Parental Example 268
In The Time of Trouble 268
Amusements 269
Duty 269
Marriage of Children 269
Children's Health 269
Spoiling 270
Fallen Angels 270
Family Order 270
Providing for Children 270
Teaching Our Children 270
Correction of Children 271
Promises and Assurance 271
Children of Consecrated Specially Blessed 271
Examples of Parental Concern and Affection 271

PRAYER 272
Grace to Help 272
A Privilege 272
Requirements 272
Believing 273
Whole-Heartedly 273
Condition 273

Reconciliation with Thy Brother 273
Obedience 273
Purpose of Prayer 273
Proper Approach 273
Proper Requests 273
Persistence in Prayer 273
Effectiveness of Prayer 273
Brevity 273
Waiting Patiently for Answers 273
Model Prayers 274
Our Lord's Model Prayer 276

THE GREAT PYRAMID 277
Its General Description 277
Its Astronomical Features 277
Its Peculiar Location 277
Its Scientific Lessons 277
Its Testimony to the Plan of Redemption 277
Outline of the Plan 277
The Ante-Chamber 277
Pyramid and Tabernacle Compared 278
Progressive Steps to Glory 278
Spirit vs. Human Nature Shown 278
The Bottomless Pit 278
The Well, The Key to the Pyramid 278
The Ransom the Only Hope 278
Chronological Features 278
The Grand Gallery 279
The Overhead Passage 279
Distinction of Natures 279
The Time of Trouble 279
The First Ascending Passage 279
The Queen's Chamber 279
The Ventilating Tubes 279

RANSOM 280
Significance—A Corresponding Price 280
Redemption 280
What Ransom Was Paid for Man? 280
Bought With a Price 280
The Purpose 280
How We are Redeemed 280
Love Does Not Set Aside Justice 281
The Price Not Taken Back 281
The Ransom Deposited 281
The Imputation of the Merit 281
The Final Application 281
Adam Redeemed 281
Ransom Not Pardon 281

REINCARNATION AND TRANSMIGRATION 282
Definition 282
History 282
In Heathen Religion and Philosophies 282
Druids 282
Tibet 282
India 282
Later Hinduism 282
Buddhism 282
Brahmanism 282
Greece 282
Jewish Literature 282
Christian Development 282
Theosophy 282
Arguments Against... 283
Animals Existed before Man 283
They are Inferior to Man 283
Animals — 283
(1) Receive No Resurrection 283
(2) Are Given as Food to Man 283
(3) Animals Inferior 284
Souls Reproduce after Their Own Kind 284
Transmigration Denies Universal Laws 284
Denies Ransom and Resurrection 284

RESPONSIBILITY TO THE TRUTH 284
Effect of Truths Now Due 284
A Test 284

RESTITUTION 285
Restitution of All Things 285
Pictured by Israel's Jubilee 285
Stages of Inauguration 286
Evidences of Times of Restitution 286
Israel's Restoration a Sign 286
Proclaiming Restitution 286
Restitution Promises 286
Restitution Spoke by All Holy Prophets 288
Restoration of Sodom and Samaria 288
The Kingdom 288
The Spirit Upon All Flesh 288
Universal Peace 288
Serving with One Accord 288
Great Joy to All People 288
All To Be Raised 288
Satan Bound 289
Hell Destroyed 289
God's Tabernacle with Men 289
The Water of Life 289
No More Curse—No Night 289
The Lost Heritage Restored 289

RESURRECTION 290
Resurrection Necessary 290
Death Called Sleep 290
Awakenings by Jesus 290
All Counted as Dead 290
Anastasis—Restanding—Resurrection 290
The First Resurrection 291
Not All Sleep 291
The Celestial Glory 291
Differences in Glory 291
No Jealousy 291
Resurrection Change 291

The Great Multitude 291
The Ancient Worthies 292
The World's Anastasis 292
The World's Resurrection 292
Obey and Live 292
They That Have Done Good 292
They That Have Done Evil 292
A Pure Language 292
Not a Trial for Past Sins 292
Accounted Worthy to Attain Resurrection 293
Advantage of Gradual Resurrection 293
Imperfect, But Whole 293
To Life vs. To Shame 293
Sins of the Present Life 293
The Rest of the Dead 293

RETURN OF CHRIST 294
The World Not Converted Before Return 294
Sitting at God's Right Hand When Coming 294
Work Between First and Second Advents 294
Nations Angry—Not Converted 294
Comes To Reign a Thousand Years 294
Prophecy Covers Period of Presence 294
Our Lord a Spirit Being 294
How Manifested After Resurrection 294
Entered With Doors Shut 295
Vanished at Emmaus 295
Thus Jesus Was Born of the Spirit 295
Spirit, Not Flesh and Bones 295
Jesus Now a Spirit Being 295
Invisible to Man 295
Ransom Not Taken Back 296
Flesh and Blood Not to Inherit the Kingdom 296
Invisibly Present 296
How Revealed 296
Not Literal Fire 296
Thief-like Presence 296
In Like Manner 296
The Bright Shining 296
Parousia 296
The Feet on the Mount of Olives 296
Other Figures of Speech 296
With a Shout 297
Voice of the Archangel 297
The Trump of God 297
The Harvest 297
The Final Conflict 297
Every Eye to See Him 297
Other Objectives 297
Restitution 297
To Reward 297
To Receive His Faithful 297
To Exalt, Judge and Reward Them 297
To Bless all Nations 297
With Restitution 298
Including the Dead 298
To Teach 298
To Judge 298
To Destroy the Incorrigible 298
To Destroy the Antichrist 298

SABBATH 298
Jesus' Sabbath Keeping 298
Gentiles Not Under Law 298
Why Apostles Preached on Sabbath 298
The Church Not Under The Law 299
The Sabbath a Shadow 299
The First Day 299
First Day Replacing Seventh 299
False Conception Leads to Bondage 299
Advantage of General Sabbath Observance 299
Advantage as a Rest Day 299
Period of Seven Days a Law of Nature 299
Not Good to be Abandoned 299
Proper Observance 299
Children of the Family 299
Sabbath a Shadow of Good Things to Come 300
The Seventh Day 300
The New Creation's Sabbath Rest 300
How We Enter This Rest 300
Length of Waiting Time...Apostles 300
Our Sabbath Keeping 300

SALVATION BY WORKS 301
Not by Our Works 301
Not by Evolving 301
Progress in Good Works 301
Faith Manifested by Works 302
Justification by Works 302
Not Works of the Law 302
Justified by Works 302
Our Judgment by Faith 302
Not All Works Acceptable 302
World to be Judged by Works 302

TWO SALVATIONS 303
Salvation of the Church 303
Like Jesus 303
Divine Beings 303
Precious Promises 304
So Great Salvation 304
Life and Immortality 304
Our Call Vs. The World's Salvation 304
The Earthly Salvation 304
Great Company Spiritual but Not Divine 304
Earthly Promise 304

SANCTIFICATION 305
Sanctified by the Spirit 305
Order in Procedure 305
Two Consecrations 305
Progression 305
Differences in Experience 306
Not Human Perfection 306

Sanctified to the Truth 306
Emotion not Sanctification 306
Help for Soul-Sickness 307
Justification Should Merge into Sanctification 308
Erroneous Views of Sanctification 308

SATAN 308
Some Texts About Satan 308
As a Roaring Lion 309
Prince of This World 309
A Malevolent Foe 309
From the Beginning 309
Originally Perfect 309
Free Moral Agency 309
Binding and Destruction 310
Delusions 310
His Associates—Demons 310
Their Fall 310
Not with Flesh and Blood 310
Ministry of Evil to the World 310
To the Saints 311
Satan's Besetments 311
Satan's House Divided 311
Current Deceptions 311
How to Test Delusions 311
Eternal Torment Blasphemy 311
Working in the Pulpits 311
New Delusions 311
Our Protection 311

SECOND DEATH 312
Not for Adamic Sin 312
Who Shall be Cut Off 312
Destruction—Not Torture 312
Second Death in Gospel Age 313
Wilful Sinners 313
Forgivable Sins 313
Gehenna 313
Undying Worms; Quenchless Fires 314
Set on Fire of Gehenna 314
Lake of Fire 314

"THAT WISE AND FAITHFUL SERVANT" 314
That Servant not a Class but an Individual 314
Served by the Lord 315
A Channel to be Used 315
Not a Lord Over God's Heritage 315
Ruler over All His Goods 315
Use of a Servant the Lord's Method 315
To Be Removed if Unfaithful 316
Not Inspired nor Infallible 316
Other Titles 316
Man on the Watch Tower 316
Man with the Writer's Inkhorn 316
The Angel of Church of the Laodiceans 316
Angel Showing John These Things 317

SIN 317
Why Permitted 317
God Not Its Author 317
The Moral Sense 317
Violation of Conscience—Sin 317
Avoid Stumbling Others 317
Original Sin 317
Of The Devil 317
All Have Sinned 318
By Inheritance 318
Sin's Penalty 318
The Sting of Death 318
The Law 318
Sin in the Heart 318
Jesus was Sinless 319
Man's Penalty Paid by Jesus 319
Trespasses 319
Sin Against the Holy Spirit 319
Hope For The Penitent 320
Lay Aside Sin 320
Falling Away 320
Jealousy 320
Let Us Cleanse Ourselves 320
Judging Others 320
Covered Sins to be Blotted Out 321
Church Shares in Sin Offering 321
Sins Borne by Scapegoat Class 321
A Lesson to Us Still in the Flesh 321

SIN OFFERING 322
The Bullock 322
An Exact Equivalent 322
The New Nature—The Priest 322
The Bullock Slain 322
In the Court and the Holy 322
How Fulfilled 322
The Incense 322
Three Burnings 322
End of These Burnings 323
The Lord's Goat 323
The Cost of Sacrifice 323
Not the Priest's Choice 323
Sacrifice of the Goat 323
We Share in the Sin Offering 323
Outside the Camp 323
Differing Views of Our Sacrifices 323
Sacrifices of all Completed before Blood 323
The Sign of a Cross 323
How Applied 323
The Apostle Paul, An Example 324
Purpose of Our Sacrifice 324
Passing the Second Veil 324
Acceptance Manifested 324
Full Satisfaction 324

SOUL 325
Man is a Soul 325
What is a Soul? 325

A Soul May be a Beast 325
Nephesh (Soul) Translated Life 325
Nephesh Translated Creature 325
Nephesh Translated Persons 325
Beasts Not Necessarily Created to Live Forever 325
Difference is in Body 325
Human Souls Not Immortal 325
Some Other Translations 326
Translations of Psuche 326
Resurrection of Soul 326
Destruction Vs. Salvation 326
Sacrificing the Soul 326
Psuche Translated Life 326
What is Death? 327
Candle Illustration 327
Souls Resurrected or Revived 327
A Soul's Return? 327
The Soul, Not The Body Resurrected 327
We Seek for Immortality 327

SPIRITISM 328
The Dead are Dead 328
Source of Communications 328
Scriptural Accounts 328
Their Punishment 328
Explanation 328
Jesus' Preaching to Them 328
Spiritism a Snare 328
Method of Attraction 328
The Influence Demoralizing 329
Spiritism Valueless 329
Spiritism in Times Past 329
King Saul and the Witch 329
Obsession and Resistance 329
An Example of Obsession 329

SUNDRY EARTHLY OBLIGATIONS 330
Rights 330
Stewards 330
Seek First the Kingdom of Heaven 330
Wealth 330
Debt 331
Hospitality 332
Given To Hospitality 332
Receiving 332
Insurance 332
Agreements; Contracts 333
Unions 333
Organizations 333
Business 333
Busybodying 333
Blessing God and Cursing Men 333
Social Obligation 334
Honor All Men 334
Politics 334
Military 335
Court 335
Moral Reforms 335
Clothing 336

SYMBOLS See TYPES AND SYMBOLS: SYMBOLS . . . 336

TABERNACLE TYPES AND SHADOWS 336
Types of Good Things To Come 336
Object of Studying The Tabernacle Types 336
The Camp 336
The Court 337
The Holy 337
The Most Holy 337
The Veils 337
Israelites, Levites, and the Priesthood 337
The Anointing 337
The Garments 337
The Underpriests 338
The Anointing 338
Consecrating The Priesthood 338
Atonement Day Sacrifices 338
The First...Sacrifice, The Bullock 338
The Second...Sacrifice, The Lord's Goat 338
The Church Shares 338
The Burnt Offering... 339
Another Type of the Atonement Sac.—Lev. 9 339
Jesus' Merit Sufficient 339
Peace Offerings 339
The Blessing 339
The Glory Revealed 339
Sacrifices Subsequent to the Day of Atonement 340
The People's Burnt Offerings 340
The People's Peace Offerings 340
The People's Meat Offerings 340
The People's Trespass or Sin Offering 340
The Ashes of a Heifer... 340
Other Significant Types 340
Charts: 341
The Three Fires of Lev. 16 341
Sacrificing of Animals Were Types 341
The Tabernacle in Israel 341
Steps to Glory 343
Princes and Kings 342
Conditions 354
Comparative Study 342

THREE SOURCES OF TEMPTATIONS 343
Our Lord and The New Creation 343
The Flesh 343
The World 343
The Devil 343

THREE WAYS 344
The Broad Road to Destruction 344
Mankind in General Does Not Heed 344
The Narrow Way 344
The Reward 344
Few Obtain it 344
Like Him 344

The Glory to Follow . . . 344
The Only Way Now Open . . . 345
Life Through Death . . . 345
End of the Narrow Way . . . 345
The Flesh Dies; The New Creature Lives . . . 345
Result of Compromise . . . 345
Seek Honor From God Only . . . 345
Destruction of Unsacrificed Flesh . . . 345
Encouraging Words . . . 345
Purpose of Difficulties . . . 345
Grace to Help . . . 345
The Fight of Faith . . . 345
The Highway of Holiness . . . 345
The Way Made Plain . . . 346
Evil Suppressed . . . 346
Summary . . . 346

TITHING . . . 347
Before the Law Covenant . . . 347
Under the Law . . . 347
Aaron's Portion . . . 347
Tithes to be Brought to Jerusalem . . . 347
Levites to be Remembered . . . 347
Also the Poor . . . 347
In Modern Times . . . 347
Is Tithing Still Necessary? . . . 347
All Given in Consecration . . . 347
Jesus and the Widow Our Examples . . . 347
Other Means of Giving . . . 348
Jesus' Admonition . . . 348

GIFT OF TONGUES . . . 348
Try the Spirits . . . 348
Manifestations in Previous Ages . . . 348
Given by Laying On of the Apostles' Hands . . . 348
Not Possessed by All in Early Church . . . 348
Gift of Tongues Abused in Early Church . . . 348
Tongues to Cease . . . 349
Since Only Twelve Apostles . . . 349

TRINITY . . . 349
Jesus' Accepting Worship Supposed by Some to be Proof That He is Jehovah . . . 349
Examples . . . 349
Names and Titles... . . . 350
Elohim Translated Angels . . . 350
Elohim Translated Gods . . . 350
Jehovah The Elohim Contrasted with Others . . . 350
Elohim Applies to Men . . . 350
Elohim, Other Translations . . . 350
In the New Testament . . . 350
Use of the Word Lord in the New Test. . . . 350
The Godhead . . . 350
Texts Thought to Support the Trinity Explained, Showing the Truth in the Light of the Word of God . . . 351
Unity of Spirit Does not Mean Being The same person . . . 351

TYPES AND SYMBOLS . . . 354

SYMBOLS . . . 354
Symbols . . . 354
Air . . . 354
Arm . . . 354
Babylon . . . 354
Baptism . . . 354
Beast . . . 354
Papacy . . . 354
Universal Empires . . . 355
Holy Roman Empire . . . 355
Beheaded . . . 355
Blood . . . 355
Blue . . . 355
Bonnet . . . 356
Brimstone . . . 356
City . . . 356
Clay . . . 356
Copper (Brass) . . . 356
Crown . . . 357
Cup . . . 357
Dance . . . 357
Day . . . 357
Dogs . . . 358
Door . . . 358
The First Veil . . . 358
Christ the Door . . . 358
Dove . . . 358
Earth . . . 358
Earthquake . . . 359
Egypt . . . 359
Eye . . . 360
False Prophet . . . 360
Fat . . . 361
Feet . . . 361
Feet-Washing . . . 361
Field . . . 362
Fig Tree . . . 362
Fir . . . 362
Fire . . . 362
Flesh and Blood . . . 362
Flood . . . 363
Forty . . . 363
Gate . . . 363
Girdle . . . 363
Gold . . . 363
Grass . . . 363
Hail . . . 363
Hand . . . 363
Uplifted . . . 363
Right Hand . . . 363
Laying On of Hands . . . 364
Stretching Out the Hand . . . 364
Heavens . . . 364
Hills . . . 364
Highest Peaks . . . 364

Smaller Governments . . . 365
Horn . . . 365
Power . . . 365
King . . . 366
Horses . . . 366
Image of the Beast . . . 366
Jewels . . . 366
Key . . . 366
Lake of Fire . . . 367
Lamp . . . 367
Leaven . . . 368
Leaves . . . 368
Leprosy . . . 368
Light . . . 368
Linen . . . 368
Lord's Supper . . . 369
Mammon . . . 369
Mantle . . . 369
Meat in Due Season . . . 369
Milk . . . 370
Moon . . . 370
Morning . . . 371
Mountains . . . 371
Night . . . 371
Oil . . . 371
Olive . . . 371
Rain . . . 372
Rock . . . 372
Rod . . . 372
Salt . . . 372
Scarlet . . . 373
The Ransom . . . 373
Sins . . . 373
Scepter . . . 373
Sea . . . 373
Seed . . . 374
The Word of God . . . 374
Error . . . 374
Serpent . . . 374
Sin... . . . 374
Satan . . . 374
Civil power . . . 375
Seven . . . 375
Shekinah Light . . . 375
Silver . . . 375
Truth . . . 375
Great Company . . . 375
Six . . . 375
Smoke . . . 376
Remembrance . . . 376
From the Glory of God . . . 376
Stars . . . 376
The Twelve Apostles . . . 376
Wandering Stars... . . . 376
Seven Stars . . . 376
Ancient Worthies . . . 376
Stone . . . 377
Of Stumbling . . . 377
Kingdom of God . . . 377
Living Stones . . . 377
Sun . . . 377
Sun of Righteousness . . . 377
Sword . . . 378
Tares . . . 378
Throne . . . 378
Veil . . . 378
Flesh . . . 378
First Veil . . . 378
Second Veil . . . 379
Moses' Veil . . . 379
Prejudice . . . 379
Valley . . . 379
The Meek and Humble . . . 379
Place of Blessing . . . 380
Vessels . . . 380
The Lord's Consecrated People . . . 380
Their Natural Body . . . 380
Vine . . . 380
True Vine . . . 380
Vine of the Earth . . . 380
Vineyard . . . 380
Virgin . . . 381
Water . . . 381
Truth . . . 381
Restitution Blessings . . . 381
Waters . . . 382
Wheat . . . 382
Winds . . . 382
Winds, Four . . . 382
Wine . . . 382
Women . . . 383
In the Church . . . 384
Head Covering . . . 384
Symbolic...of Protestant Sects . . . 384
...Defiled by Babylon . . . 384
Woman with Leaven . . . 384
Clothed with the Sun . . . 385
Wood, Hay, Stubble . . . 385
Yoke . . . 385

TYPES . . . 386
Law Shadows (and Substance) . . . 386
Aaron . . . 386
Aaron's Rod . . . 386
Aaron's Sons . . . 386
Abel . . . 387
Abraham . . . 387
Adam . . . 387
Altar—Brazen . . . 388
Altar—Christ (?) . . . 388
Ark of the Covenant . . . 388

The Christ... 388
Jehovah's Divine Presence 388
The Lord Himself... 389
Ark—Noah's 389
Balaam 389
Body 389
Brazen Serpent 389
Bullock 390
Perfect Sacrifice — Of Christ 390
Of Restored Humanity 390
Cain 390
Canaan 390
Millennial Kingdom (New Earth) 391
Newness of Life of...Consecrated 391
Candlestick (Lampstand) 391
Cherubim 391
Circumcision 391
Cities of Refuge 391
Cyrus 391
David 392
Day of Atonement 392
Days of Noah (and Lot) 392
Dead Sea 393
Egypt 393
Egyptian Plagues 393
Eliezer (Abraham's Servant) 393
Elijah 393
Elijah and Elisha 394
Ephod 395
Ephraim 395
Esau (Edom) 395
Eve 395
Fiery Serpents 396
Gideon 396
Girdle 396
Golden Calf 396
Hagar 396
Herod 397
Herodias 397
Husband and Wife 397
Isaac 398
Ishmael 398
Israel 398
World of Mankind 398
The Church, Spiritual Israel 398
Israel Passing Through the Sea 399
Jacob 399
Jacob, Twelve Sons of 400
Jerusalem 400
The Heavenly City — Gov't 400
Abrahamic (Sarah) Covenant 400
Jezebel 400
John the Baptist 400
Jonah 401
Jordan 401
Death,... Penalty, Condemnation 401
Consecration unto Death 401
Waters of: Peoples Judged Down 401
Joseph 402
Joshua 402
Jubilee 402
Keturah 403
Kings of the East 403
Lamb 403
Levites 403
Justified Believers 403
The Whole Church 404
The Great Company 405
Four Classes of the Saved 406
Ancient Worthies 406
Lord's Goat 406
Manna 407
Manna, Hidden Manna 407
Melchizedec 407
Mercy Seat 407
God's Justice 407
Jesus — Propitiatory 407
Moses 408
The Christ, Head and Body 408
The Law 408
Priesthood 408
Rebecca 409
Red Heifer 409
Scapegoat 410
Shekinah Glory 411
Shew Bread 411
Bread of Presence 411
Spiritual Food 411
Sodom and Gomorrah 411
Sin 411
Their Destruction,...Second Death 411
Solomon 411
Tabernacle (in the Wilderness) 412
Tabernacle of David 412
Table of Shew-Bread 413
Tables of Stone 413
Temple 413
The Church in Glory 413
The Temple...Now... 414
Nominal Church 414
Cleansing 415
God and the Lamb 415

Vails of Tabernacle 415
First — Will of the Flesh 415
Christ the Door 415
Second — Body of Flesh 415

Vails of Moses 415

Zerubbabel 415

Zion 415
Spiritual Israel 415
Glorified Church 416
Nominal Church 416

UNITY OF THE FAITH 416
Our Aim 416
Liberty in Unity 416
Fundamentals 416
Divisions 416

UNIVERSAL SALVATION 417
Not Universalism 417
Universalism...Belief 417
A Ransom for All 417
Not Universal Eternal Salvation 418

WALKING IN THE LIGHT 418
From Whence The Light Comes 418
How the Light Increased 418
A Falling Away 419
The Reformation 419
Going Out of the Light 419
Standing Steadfastly 420
A Warning 420

INDEX 421

ADVOCATE

Definition: Greek: *Parakletos*: "**Intercessor**," "**Consoler**" — *Strong*. One "**called alongside**" ("**to help**") — *Young*. "Summoned, called to one's side, esp. called to one's aid; hence one who pleads another's cause before a judge, a pleader, counsel or defense, legal assistant; an advocate...." *Thayer*

1 JOHN 2:1: "...these things write I unto you, that ye sin not. And if any man sin, we have an advocate with the Father, Jesus Christ the righteous."

"Jesus laid down his life to absolve us from sin and to restore us to the Father, and he has appeared in the presence of God as the Advocate for all those who, during this Gospel age, turn away from sin and consecrate their lives to his service." *R5491:3*

"...it is necessary for our Lord Jesus Christ to become the Advocate for those who desire to become members of the royal priesthood, before they can be acceptable to the Father." *R5881:1*

ADVOCATE VERSUS MEDIATOR

"As the great Priest after the order of Melchizedek He will then reign over the world for a thousand years — not as Advocate, but as Mediator between God and fallen man." *R5492:5*

"As for the word Mediator, it is indeed a glorious name and title possessed by our Lord, but it is not the proper label or name to be associated with his service in our justification. It is not Scripturally applicable to the church at all, except that we are associates with the Mediator of the New Covenant as 'his members' in the sufferings of this present time, and as joint-heirs with him in the glorious prospects of the Millennium. It will help us greatly to remember that while the word mediator is very loosely used in general conversation today it is quite particularly and carefully and exclusively used in the Bible — only in connection with a covenant." *R4560:6*

NOT ADVOCATE FOR DELIBERATE SIN

"But the new creature sinneth not — he 'does not practice sin' — as the Emphatic Diaglott translates this passage. He who loves sin will sin; he who does not love sin will not sin wilfully. He might be entrapped through his weak flesh, or fall into a snare of the adversary, but this would be unintentional on his part. And Jesus, our Advocate, will intercede for such sins, but not for deliberate sin." *R5491:6*

"Jesus as our Advocate, imputes to us, or endorses us to the full extent of our contract with the Father. Our contract is

that, like Jesus, we will surrender our earthly rights." *R5973:4*

"Jesus does not advocate for others than the people of God." *R5491:3*

"But the flesh might have certain desires and temptations, and there might occur a partially wilful sin. In such a case stripes would be administered in proportion to the wilfulness." *R5492:1*

AGES AND DISPENSATIONS

God's plan for man's recovery is divided into three great epochs or dispensations called "worlds" in the Common Version — in the Greek, *kosmos*, meaning "**arrangement**." — *Strong* and *Young*

The last two of these are divided further into ages. 2 Peter 3:5-13 divides each of these three worlds into "heavens" (the powers of spiritual control) and "earth" (human society). See also Index: **chart** under **DIVINE PLAN**. Compare *A65-75*.

2 PET. 3:5-7,13: "...the heavens were of old, and the earth standing out of the water and in the water: Whereby the world that then was, being overflowed with water, perished: But the heavens and the earth, which are now, by the same word are kept in store, reserved unto fire against the day of judgment and perdition of ungodly men....Nevertheless we, according to his promise, look for new heavens and a new earth, wherein dwelleth righteousness."

THIRD HEAVEN ASSOCIATED WITH PARADISE

2 COR. 12:2,4: "I knew a man...caught up [in vision] to the third heaven....into paradise..."

"The word 'paradise' is of Arabic origin, and signifies **a garden**. The Septuagint renders Gen. 2:8 thus: 'God planted a **paradise** in Eden.'" *F668*

SATAN AS RULER OF SECOND "WORLD"

JOHN 12:31: "Now is the judgment of this world: now shall **the prince of this world** be cast out."

JOHN 14:30: "Hereafter I will not talk much with you: for the prince of this world cometh, and hath nothing in me."

JOHN 16:11: "Of judgment, because the prince of this world is judged."

EPH. 2:2: "...the prince of the power of the air..."

2 COR. 4:4: "...the god of this world..."

SATAN'S ASSOCIATE RULERS

EPH. 6:12: "For we wrestle not against flesh and blood, but against principalities, against powers, against the rulers of the darkness of this world, against spiritual wickedness [Margin, wicked spirits] in high [margin, heavenly] places.

SECOND AND THIRD "WORLD" DIFFERENCES

JOHN 18:36: "Jesus answered, My kingdom is not of this world..."

MAL. 3:18: "Then shall ye return, and discern between the righteous and the wicked, between him that serveth God and him that serveth him not."

PSA. 37:9: "For evildoers shall be cut off: but those that wait upon the LORD, they shall inherit the earth."

PSA. 72:7: "In his days shall the righteous flourish; and abundance of peace so long as the moon endureth."

AGES

"The first age in the 'world that now is' we call the PATRIARCHAL AGE, or dispensation, because during that period

God's dealings and favors were with a few individuals only, the remainder of mankind being almost ignored. Such favored ones were the patriarchs Noah, Abraham, Isaac and Jacob...." *A71* Gal. 3:6,8,16

HEB. 11:7-9: "By faith Noah, being warned of God...prepared an ark to the saving of his house...Abraham, when he was called...went out...He sojourned in the land of promise,... with Isaac and Jacob, the heirs with him of the same promise."

"At Jacob's death, his descendants were first called 'the twelve tribes of Israel,' and were together recognized of God as his 'peculiar people;' and through typical sacrifices they were typically 'a holy nation,' separated from other nations for a particular purpose, and therefore to enjoy certain special favors. The time allotted to this feature of the divine plan, beginning here and ending at the death of Christ, we designate the **JEWISH AGE** , or the Law dispensation." *A71*

AMOS 3:2: "You only have I known of all the families of the earth..."

MATT. 10:5,6: "These twelve Jesus sent forth, and commanded them, saying, Go not into the way of the Gentiles, and into any city of the Samaritans enter ye not: But go rather to the lost sheep of the house of Israel." Cf. Matt. 15:24.

"That this national favor ended with their rejection and crucifixion of Jesus is shown by Jesus' words when, five days before his crucifixion, he declared, 'Your house is left unto you desolate.' — Matt. 23:38.

"There, at Jesus death a new age began — the **Christian Age** or **Gospel Dispensation**, wherein should be heralded good tidings of justification, not to the Jew only, but to all nations; for Jesus Christ, by the grace of God, tasted death for every man." *A72*

MATT. 24:14: "And this gospel of the kingdom shall be preached in all the world for a witness unto all nations; and then shall the end come."

"Millennium, signifying a thousand years, is by common consent used as the name for the period mentioned in Rev. 20:4 — the thousand years of Christ's reign, the first age in the 'world to come.' During the Millennial age, there will be a restitution of all things lost by the fall of Adam (Acts 3:19-21), and before its close all tears shall have been wiped away." *A73*

ACTS 3:19-21: "...times of refreshing shall come from the presence of the Lord. And he shall send Jesus Christ, which before was preached unto you: Whom the heaven must receive until the times of restitution of all things, which God hath spoken by the mouth of all his holy prophets since the world began."

REV. 20:4: "...the souls of them that were beheaded for the witness of Jesus, and for the word of God,...and they lived and reigned with Christ a thousand years."

"Beyond its [the Millennium's] boundary, in the ages of blessedness to follow, there shall be no more death, neither sorrow nor crying; neither shall there be any more pain. The former things will have passed away. (Rev. 21:4)." *A73*

REV. 21:4: "And God shall wipe away all tears from their eyes; and there shall be no more death, neither sorrow, nor crying, neither shall there be any more pain: for the former things are passed away."

See also Index: **Harvest**.

ANCIENT WORTHIES

WHO THEY ARE

These are "a class of God's people not of the 'Royal Priesthood' who 'did suffer for righteousness' sake,' proving their faith under adverse conditions." (*T106*) Their reward will be "a better resurrection" to human perfection and the privilege of constituting the earthly phase of Christ's Kingdom.

PROPHETS

2 PET.1:21: "For the prophecy came not in old time by the will of man: but holy men of God spake as they were moved by the Holy Spirit."

AN EXAMPLE TO US

JAS. 5:10: "Take, my brethren, the prophets, who have spoken in the name of the Lord, for an example of suffering affliction, and of patience."

See also verses 11 and 17.

OBTAINED A GOOD REPORT THROUGH FAITH

HEB. 11:1,2,39: "Now faith is the substance of things hoped for, the evidence of things not seen. For by it the elders obtained a good report....And these all, having obtained a good report through faith, received not the promise."

THEIR JUSTIFICATION

"All do not see distinctly the difference there was between the justification of Abraham and others of the past **to fellowship** with God before God had completed the ground of that fellowship in the sacrifice of Christ and the justification **to life** during this Gospel age. There is quite a difference, however, between these blessings, though faith is necessary to both. All were under sentence of death justly, and, hence, none could be counted free from that sentence, 'justified to life' (Rom. 5:18), until after the great sacrifice for sins had been made by our Redeemer; as the Apostle declares, that sacrifice was necessary **first** in order 'that God might be **just'** in the matter. (Rom. 3:26) But Justice, foreseeing the execution of the redemptive plan, could make no objection to its announcement in advance merely, as an evidence of divine favor, to those possessing the requisite faith — justifying such to this degree and evidence of fellowship with God." *F111*

See also Index: **Justification**.

THEIR TRIAL

"These have had to withstand Satan....These have suffered persecution for righteousness' sake..." *A146*

"The Apostle suggests that it was not possible that God should give to our fallen race a law of life. They were justly sentenced, and so long as that **sentence** remained no law could be given them the keeping of which would secure them release from death. Before any such law of life could be given to the human family, the sentence of the first law must be met, and its curse or condemnation must be lifted..." *F352*

"Moreover we have the apostle's assurance that no Jew except our Lord Jesus ever did keep the law, and that only Jesus, therefore, has gained, or could have gained, the rewards of that Law Covenant made with Israel." F354

"Our Lord had the knowledge that enabled him to see and understand in a manner impossible to Adam. In his case we see that the testing through the adversary during the forty days of fasting in the wilderness was not counted of the Father as sufficient proof of his character-perfection, but, rather, we find that 'he was tempted in all points like as we are' — that for three and a half years **this testing work** continued....

"If, therefore, it was appropriate that our Lord should be tested after he was begotten, as a new creature, after he had consecrated his life even unto death, and if it is appropriate that we also should be fully tested after we become new creatures, begotten of the holy Spirit, then we might wonder in what manner the ancient worthies received any testing which would constitute a full proof of character...." *R4612:1* See also *R5613:4,5*

"The ancient worthies were not on trial for life or death; they were never brought to that condition of intelligent opportunity of eternal life which would make them amenable to a sentence of death....

"...since human perfection will come only under the mediatorial reign of Christ, the ancient worthies will not be introduced to the Father in the complete sense until the close of the Millennium.

"Hence, they will not have life, in this fullest sense, until that time, when, at the close of the Millennial age, the kingdom shall be delivered over to the Father...." *R4598:2,3,5,6*

"We understand the Scriptures to teach that the ancient worthies will come forth from the tomb perfect, lacking nothing...." *R5073:5*

"...the ancient worthies — will be awakened from death fully restored to human perfection; and will not require a

'resurrection by judgment,' a thousand years long, as will the residue of mankind." *R5074:1*

"If perfection of organism makes character, then Adam was perfect in this respect....

"In another sense, Adam never had perfect character; that is, he had no character developed, tested and proved....So we might wonder in what manner the ancient worthies received the testing which would constitute a full proof of character. When we examine the records of these men we find that they manifested great faith, and that they endured some severe ordeals and testing of their loyalty to God and their confidence in him. It does not surprise us, then that the testimony that they pleased God was given respecting them; This assures us that they had considerable character development. God must have seen their hearts to be very loyal, else he never would have considered them worthy of a better resurrection. Yet we believe they will have need of further experience and testing." *R5074:3*

See also entire article and *R5317:2,4* ("The 'Better Resurrection'").

CALLED "THE FATHERS"

ROM. 9:4,5: "...Israelites...Whose are the fathers..."

PSA. 45:16: "Instead of thy fathers shall be thy children, whom thou mayest make princes in all the earth."

EARTHLY PHASE OF THE KINGDOM

LUKE 13:28: "...ye shall see Abraham, and Isaac, and Jacob, and all the prophets, in the kingdom of God..."

THEIR PREPARATION

"God has been selecting two special classes from among men, and specially trying, disciplining, and training them to be his honored instruments during the period or day of the world's judgment.

"These two classes are...the house of sons and the house of servants,...the latter being composed of the faithful overcomers who preceded the Christian dispensation...." *A145*

"After being first justified by faith in God's promises, and having then fulfilled the subsequent conditions...they are accounted worthy of high exaltation..." *A146*

"...the earthly phase of the kingdom of God will be confined to this world and to humanity. And those so highly honored as to have a share in it will be the most exalted and honored of God among men. These are the class referred to...whose judgment day was previous to the Gospel age. Having been tried and found faithful, in the awakening they will not be brought forth to judgment again, but will at

once receive the reward of their faithfulness — an instantaneous resurrection to perfection as **men**....These will minister among and be seen of men, while the glory of their perfection will be a constant example and an incentive to other men to strive to attain the same perfection...." *A289*

"The work of the coming age comprises the awakening of all the dead and the restoration of the **obedient** to perfection. This work will necessitate the establishment of a perfect government among men, with perfect men in positions of control, that they may rightly order the affairs of state. It will necessitate the appointment of proper educational facilities of every character, as well as philanthropic measures of various kinds. And this noble work of thus elevating the race by sure and steady steps (under the direction of the unseen spiritual members of the same kingdom) is the high honor to which the ancient worthies are appointed...

"To gain a place in the earthly phase of the kingdom...will be a glorious and satisfying portion from the first entrance into it, and yet the glory will accumulate as time advances and the blessed work progresses. And when, at the end of a thousand years, the great work of restitution is accomplished by the Christ (in great measure through the agency of these noble human co-workers); when the whole human race (except the incorrigible — Matt. 25:46; Rev. 20:9) stands approved,...these who were instrumental in the work will shine among their fellow-men and before God and Christ and the angels, as 'the stars forever and ever.' (Dan. 12:3) Their work and labor of love will never be forgotten by their grateful fellow-men. They will be held in everlasting remembrance. Psa. 112:6." *A291*

TWO SEEDS

"It is through these two phases of the kingdom that the promise to Abraham is to be verified... [Gen. 28:14] '...in thy seed shall all the families of the earth be blessed.' [Gen. 22:17] '...thy seed as the stars of the heaven, and as the sand which is upon the sea...' an earthly and a heavenly seed, both God's instruments of blessing to the world....

"Paul (Rom. 11:17) speaks of the Abrahamic covenant as a root...This root-covenant bears these two distinct kinds of branches, each of which in the resurrection will bear its own distinct kind of perfect fruitage — the human and spiritual classes

in kingdom power. In order of development it was first the natural (earthly), afterward the heavenly rulers; but in order of grandeur of position and time of installment, it will be first the spiritual, afterward the natural..." *A292*

"The Apostle, writing of this same class of ancient worthies...says of them: These all died in faith, not [i.e. without] having received [the fulfillment of] the promise,

God having provided some better thing for us [the Christ], that **they** without **us** should not be made perfect. (Heb. 11:13, 39, 40)...." *A293*

ISA. 1:26: "And I will restore thy judges as at the first, and thy counselors as at the beginning: afterward thou shalt be called, The city of righteousness, the faithful city."

Jerusalem will again be the city of the great King. (Psa. 48:2; Matt. 5:35)

"At first it will consist of only the spiritual class,...it will gradually come into power as the present empires break in pieces, during the Day of the Lord. In due time, however, the earthly phase of this city or government will be established, parts or members of which will be the ancient worthies. There will not be two cities (governments), but one city, one heavenly government..." *A295*

ISA. 2:3: "And many people shall go and say, Come ye, and let us go up to the mountain [kingdom] of the LORD, to the house of the God of Jacob; and he will teach us of his ways, and we will walk in his paths: for out of Zion [the spiritual phase] shall go forth the law, and the word of the LORD from Jerusalem [the earthly phase]."

NOT OF THE HEAVENLY

MATT. 11:11: "Verily I say unto you, Among them that are born of women there hath not risen a greater than John the Baptist: notwithstanding he that is least in the kingdom of heaven is greater than he."

THEIR RESURRECTION

HEB. 11:35: "...they might obtain a better resurrection..."

HEB. 12:23: "...spirits of just men made perfect."

"...after...the church of the first-borns, St. Paul tells of...'the spirits of just men made perfect'...Neither the church nor the great company will be 'men made perfect'...The church...give up the human nature.

"'We are coming to the perfect men whose spirits are just.' And the ancient worthies were just, although they had fleshly imperfections. The Apostle has referred to this class and told us that they will have a better resurrection....As they were just in spirit, so they will be perfect men in the beginning of the restitution...." *R5294:6*

See also Index: **Covenants (New); Divine Plan — Chart; Israel; Resurrection; Tabernacle Types and Shadows.**

ANGELS

The word **angel** is the translation of words meaning "**messenger**" or "**agent**" (*Young's*); "**messenger**" (*Strong's*). These may be spirit or human creatures. The former had the power to materialize in human form (Gen. 18:2; Heb. 13:2), a privilege denied to those who fell. (2 Pet. 2:4) Michael, the archangel (**chief messenger**) (Dan. 10:13, margin; 12:1; Jude 9; Zech.3:2), has been identified as our Lord Jesus, The Word (**Logos**) of God. Rev.19:13

SPIRIT BEINGS CALLED ANGELS

HEB. 1:7: "And of the angels he saith, Who maketh his angels spirits, and his ministers a flame of fire."

HIGHER THAN MAN

PSA. 8:4,5: "What is man...and the son of man...? For thou hast made him a little lower than the angels...." Cf. Heb. 2:6,7.

OUR LORD PASSED BY THE NATURE OF ANGELS TO REDEEM US

HEB. 2:16: "For verily he took not on *him the nature of* angels...."

SEEN BY MATERIALIZATION AS MAN

GEN. 19:1-5: "And there came two **angels** to Sodom...and Lot...said,...turn in...into your servant's house,...and they...entered into his house....But...the men of the city...said unto him, Where *are* the men which came in to thee...?"

GEN. 18:1,2: "And the Lord appeared unto him [Abraham]...and he...looked, and, lo, three men stood by him...."

It was thus that he—

HEB. 13:2: "...entertained angels unawares."

JUDG. 13:3,6: "And the angel of the Lord appeared unto the woman....the woman...told her husband....A man of God came unto me, and his countenance *was* like the countenance of an angel of God, very terrible...."

JUDG. 13:11,16,20: "And Manoah...came to the man, and said unto him, *art* thou the man...?....Manoah knew not that he *was* an angel....it came to pass, when the flame went up...from off the altar, that the angel...ascended in the flame of the altar...."

JOSH. 5:13,14: "...there stood a man...he said...*as* captain of the host of the LORD am I now come."

ANGELS SOMETIMES INVISIBLE TO SOME WHILE SEEN MIRACULOUSLY BY OTHERS

2 KINGS 6:17: "And Elisha prayed....And the LORD opened the eyes of the young man...and...the mountain *was* full of horses and chariots of fire round about Elisha."

DAN. 10:5-9: "Then I...looked, and behold, a certain man clothed in linen, whose loins *were* girded with fine gold of Uphaz: His body also *was* like the beryl, and his face as the appearance of lightning, and his eyes as lamps of fire, and his arms and his feet like in color to polished brass, and the voice of his words like the voice of a multitude....the men that were with me saw not the vision....there remained no strength in me....and when I heard the voice...then was I in a deep sleep...."

SOMETIMES THEY APPEARED IN DREAMS

MATT. 1:20: "...the angel of the Lord appeared unto him in a

dream...."

GEN. 28:12: "And he dreamed, and behold a ladder...and behold the angels of God ascending and descending on it."

ANGELS SEEN AS MEN

MATT. 28:2-4: "...the angel of the Lord descended from heaven....His countenance was like lightning, and his raiment white as snow: And for fear of him the keepers did shake, and became as dead men."

MARK 16:5: "And entering into the sepulchre, they saw a young man sitting on the right side, clothed in a long white garment; and they were affrighted."

THEIR MINISTRY

HEB. 1:14: "Are they not all ministering spirits, sent forth to minister for them who shall be heirs of salvation?"

MATT. 18:10: "...despise not one of these little ones; for...in heaven their angels do always behold the face of my Father...."

PSA. 34:7: "The angel of the LORD encampeth round about them that fear him, and delivereth them." Cf. 2 Kings 6:17

ISA. 63:9: "...the angel of his presence saved them...."

DAN. 6:22: "My God hath sent his angel, and hath shut the lions' mouths...."

ACTS 5:19: "But the angel of the Lord by night opened the prison doors...."

ACTS 12:7-10,15: "...the angel...came....And he saith....follow me....the iron gate...opened...of his own accord....And they said unto her, Thou art mad. But she constantly affirmed that it was even so. Then said they, It is his angel."

PSA. 91:11,12: "For he shall give his angels charge over thee, to keep thee in all thy ways. They shall bear thee up in *their* hands, lest thou dash thy foot against a stone."

2 KINGS 19:35: "...that night...the angel of the Lord...smote...an hundred fourscore and five thousand: and...in the morning...they *were* all dead corpses."

NEITHER DYING NOR MARRYING

LUKE 20:35,36; **MARK 12:25**: "...they... neither marry, nor...die...but are as the angels... in heaven."

MICHAEL THE ARCHANGEL

DAN. 10:13: "But the prince of the kingdom of Persia withstood me...but, lo, Michael, one [margin, the first] of the chief princes, came to help me...."

DAN. 10:21: "...none...holdeth with me in these things, but Michael **your** prince." Compare—

JOHN 1:11: "He came unto **his own**, and **his own** received him not."

DAN. 12:1: "And at that time shall Michael stand up, the great prince which standeth for the children of thy people: and there shall be a time of trouble, such as never was since there was a nation...."

1 THESS. 4:16: "For the Lord himself shall descend from heaven...with the voice of the archangel...."

JUDE 9: "Yet Michael the archangel, when contending with the devil....durst not bring against him a railing accusation, but said, the Lord rebuke thee."

ZECH. 3:2: "And the LORD [called 'the angel of the LORD' in verse 1] said unto Satan, The LORD rebuke thee...."

It seems evident from these texts that Michael, whose name means "**Who is like God?**" (*Young's*); "**who** (is) **like God?**" (*Strong's*), is to be identified with the Lord's spokesman, or "Word," who represented the Father on many occasions, as Chief Messenger. Cf. John 1:1; Gen. 3:8.

GABRIEL

DAN. 8:16; 9:21: "And I heard a man's voice between *the banks of* Ulai, which called, and said, Gabriel, make this *man* to understand the vision. Yea, whiles I *was* speaking in prayer, even the man Gabriel, whom I had seen in the vision at the beginning, being caused to fly swiftly, touched me about the time of the evening oblation."

LUKE 1:19,26: "And the angel answering said unto him, I am Gabriel, that stand in the presence of God; and am sent to speak unto thee, and to show thee these glad tidings. And in the sixth month the angel Gabriel was sent from God unto a city of Galilee, named Nazareth."

The Bible also speaks of

THRONES, DOMINIONS, PRINCIPALITIES, POWERS, AND AUTHORITIES

EPH. 3:10: "To the intent that now unto the principalities and powers in heavenly *places* might be known by the church the manifold wisdom of God..."

COL. 1:16: "For by him were all things created, that are in heaven, and that are in earth, visible and invisible, whether *they* be thrones, or dominions, or principalities, or powers: all things were created by him, and for him..."

1 PET. 3:22: "Who is gone into heaven, and is on the right hand of God; angels and authorities and powers being made subject unto him."

CHERUBIM

GEN. 3:24: "So he drove out the man; and he placed at the east of the garden of Eden Cherubims, and a flaming sword which turned every way, to keep the way of the tree of life."

EXOD. 25:18; 37:7: "And thou shalt make two cherubims of gold, of beaten work shalt thou make them, in the two ends of the mercy seat. And he made two cherubims *of* gold, beaten out of one piece made he them, on the two ends of the mercy seat."

1 KINGS 6:23: "And within the oracle he made two cherubims of olive tree, *each* ten cubits high."

EZEK. 1:4-25: "And I looked, and, behold, a whirlwind came out of the north, a great cloud, and a fire infolding itself, and a brightness *was* about it, and out of the midst thereof as the color of amber, out of the midst of the fire. Also out of the midst thereof *came* the likeness of four living creatures. And this *was* their appearance; they had the likeness of a man. And every one had four faces, and every one had four wings. And their feet *were* straight feet; and the sole of their feet *was* like the sole of a calf's foot: and they sparkled like the color of burnished brass. And *they had* the hands of a man under their wings on their four sides; and they four had their faces and their wings. Their wings *were* joined

one to another; they turned not when they went; they went every one straight forward. As for the likeness of their faces, they four had the face of a man, and the face of a lion, on the right side: and they four had the face of an ox on the left side; they four also had the face of an eagle. Thus *were* their faces: and their wings were stretched upward; *two* wings of every one *were* joined one to another, and two covered their bodies. And they went every one straight forward: whither the spirit was to go, they went; *and* they turned not when they went. As for the likeness of the living creatures, their appearance *was* like burning coals of fire, *and* like the appearance of lamps: it

went up and down among the living creatures; and the fire was bright, and out of the fire went forth lightning. And the living creatures ran and returned as the appearance of a flash of lightning. Now as I beheld the living creatures, behold one wheel upon the earth by the living creatures, with his four faces. The appearance of the wheels and their work *was* like unto the color of a beryl: and they four had one likeness: and their appearance and their work *was* as it were a wheel in the middle of a wheel. When they went, they went upon their four sides: *and* they turned not when they went. As for their rings, they were so high that they were dreadful; and their rings were full of eyes round about them four. And when the living creatures went, the wheels went by them: and when the living creatures were lifted up from the earth, the wheels were lifted up. Whithersoever the spirit was to go, they went, thither *was their* spirit to go; and the wheels were lifted up over against them: for the spirit of the living creature *was* in the wheels. When those went, *these* went; and when those stood, *these* stood; and when those were lifted up from the earth, the wheels were lifted up over against them: for the spirit of the living creature *was* in the wheels. And the likeness of the firmament upon the heads of the living creature *was* as the color of the terrible crystal, stretched forth over their heads above. And under the firmament *were* their wings straight, the one toward the other: every one had two, which covered on this side, and every one had two, which covered on that side, their bodies. And when they went, I heard the noise of their wings, like the noise of great waters, as the voice of the Almighty, the voice of speech, as the noise of an host: when they stood, they let down their wings. And there was a voice from the firmament that *was* over their heads, when they stood, *and* had let down their wings."

EZEK. 28:14: "Thou *art* the anointed cherub that covereth; and I have set thee *so* thou wast upon the holy mountain of God; thou hast walked up and down in the midst of the stones of fire."

OTHER TRANSLATIONS OF THIS VERSE

LEESER: " Thou wast a cherub with outspread covering (wings); and I had set thee upon the holy mountain of God (as) thou wast; in the midst of the stones of fire didst thou wander."

ROTHERHAM: "Thou wast the anointed cherub that covered, — when I appointed thee in the holy mount of God thou wast, amid stones of fire thou didst walk to and fro."

SATAN'S FALL

EZEK. 28:15-20: "Thou *wast* perfect in thy ways...till iniquity was found in thee....thou hast sinned:...I will cast thee...out of the mountain of God: and I will destroy thee, O

covering cherub, from the midst of the stones of fire. Thine heart was lifted up because of thy beauty, thou hast corrupted thy wisdom by reason of thy brightness: I will cast thee to the ground....Thou hast defiled thy sanctuaries... therefore will I bring forth a fire from the midst of thee, it shall devour thee, and I will bring thee to ashes....and never *shalt* thou *be* any more." Cf. Mal. 4:1,3

MAL. 4:1,3: "For, behold, the day cometh, that shall burn as an oven; and all the proud, yea, and all that do wickedly, shall be stubble: and the day that cometh shall burn them up, saith the LORD of hosts, that it shall leave them neither root nor branch. And ye shall tread down the wicked; for they shall be ashes under the soles of your feet in the day that I shall do *this*, saith the LORD of hosts."

LUKE 10:18: "...I beheld Satan as lightning fall from heaven."

ISA. 14:12-15: "How art thou fallen from heaven, O Lucifer, son of the morning! *how* art thou cut down to the ground, which didst weaken the nations! For thou hast said in thine heart, I will ascend into heaven, I will exalt my throne above the stars of God: I will sit also upon the mount of the congregation, in the sides of the north: I will ascend above the heights of the clouds; I will be like the most High. Yet thou shalt be brought down to hell, to the sides of the pit." (see also Index: **Hell**)

Contrast Phil. 2:5-11, *Diag.*

PHIL: 2:5-11: *Diag.* "Let this disposition be in you, which was also in Christ Jesus, who, though being in God's Form, yet did not meditate a Usurpation to BE like God, but divested Himself, taking a Bondman's Form, having been made in the Likeness of Men; and being in condition as a Man, he humbled himself, becoming obedient unto Death, even the Death of the Cross. And therefore God supremely exalted Him and freely granted to him THAT Name which is above Every Name; in order that in the NAME of Jesus Every Knee should bend, of those in heaven, and of those on earth, and of those beneath; and Every Tongue confess that Jesus Christ is Lord, for the Glory of God the Father."

ANGELS CALLED SONS OF GOD

JOB 38:7: "...the morning stars [Cf. Rev. 2:28; 22:16] sang together, and all the sons of God shouted for joy?"

REV. 2:28; 22:16: "And I will give him the morning star. I Jesus have sent mine angel to testify unto you these things in the churches. I am the root and the offspring of David, *and* the bright and morning star." Cf. Job 1:6; 2:1.

JOB 1:6; 2:1: "Now there was a day when the sons of God came to present themselves before the LORD, and Satan came also among them.... Again there was a day when the

sons of God came to present themselves before the LORD, and Satan came also among them to present himself before the LORD."

GEN. 6:2,4: "That the sons of God saw the daughters of men that they were fair; and they took them wives of all which they chose."

[Cf. vs. 4.] "There were giants in the earth in those days; and also after that, when the sons of God came in unto the daughters of men, and they bare *children* to them, the same became mighty men which *were* of old, men of renown."

THESE BECAME FALLEN ANGELS, FOLLOWING SATAN

EPH. 2:2: "...the prince of the power of the air...."

EPH. 6:12: "For we wrestle not against flesh and blood, but against principalities, against powers, against the rulers of the darkness of this world, against spiritual wickedness in high [heavenly — margin] *places*."

HOW CHRIST PREACHED TO THESE

1 PET. 3:18-20: "For Christ also hath once suffered for sins, the just for the unjust...being put to death in the flesh, but quickened by [in *] the spirit, by [Greek, ***en*, in — not between**] which also he went and [see Diag. footnote] preached unto the spirits in prison; which... were disobedient...in the days of Noah...."

* "There is no preposition 'in' nor 'by' in the Greek of vs.18; but it must be supplied to express the meaning of the case of the Greek nouns translated 'flesh' and 'spirit.' As the two words are in contrast but in the same case in the Greek, it is appropriate to use the same preposition to express the meaning of that case in English." See also *R.V., R.S.V., Rotherham, Weymouth, Diag.* interlineary, *Moffatt, Englishman's Gr. N.T.* footnote, and *Phillips.*

THEIR IMPRISONMENT

2 PET. 2:4: "...God spared not the angels that sinned, but *cast them down to hell** and delivered *them* into chains of darkness, to be reserved unto judgment...."

*The words "cast them down to hell" in the King James Version are a translation of the Greek, **tartarosas**, from **tartaroo**, "**send into Tartarus**" (*Young*) — (a dark abyss — *Liddell and Scott.*) Cf. Luke 8:31, *Diag*.

LUKE 8:31, *Diag.*: "And he besought him that he would not command them to go out into the ABYSS."

JUDE 6: "And the angels which kept not their first estate, but left their own habitation, he hath reserved in everlasting [Greek: ***aidios*** , **perpetual** [*Young*] **ever** —

during [*Strong*] chains under darkness unto the judgment of the great day."

THEIR JUDGES

1 COR. 6:3: "Know ye not that we shall judge angels?...."

See also Index: **Spiritism**

"ANGELS" APPLIED TO MESSENGERS OF THE CHURCH IN THE FLESH

1 COR. 11:10: "For this cause ought the woman to have power [the head covering — see *Diag. footnote*] on *her* head because of the angels [messengers]."

REV. 2:1,8,12,18; 3:1,7,14: "Unto the angel of the church of Ephesus write; These things saith he that holdeth the seven stars in his right hand, who walketh in the midst of the seven golden candlesticks; And unto the angel of the church in Smyrna write; These things saith the first and the last, which was dead, and is alive; And to the angel of the church in Pergamos write; These things saith he which hath the sharp sword with two edges; And unto the angel of the church in Thyatira write; These things saith the Son of God, who hath his eyes like unto a flame of fire, and his feet *are* like fine brass; And unto the angel of the church in Sardis write; These things saith he that hath the seven Spirits of God, and the seven stars; I know thy works, that thou hast a name that thou livest, and art dead. And to the angel of the church in Philadelphia write; These things saith he that is holy, he that is true, he that hath the key of David, he that openeth, and no man shutteth; and shutteth, and no man openeth; And unto the angel of the church of the Laodiceans write; These things saith the Amen, the faithful and true witness, the beginning of the creation of God."

Strong: "...By implication a **pastor**...."

ANTICHRIST

DEFINITION: From Greek "*antichristos*," an opponent of Christ *(Young)*. The word "antichrist" as such is used only four times in the New Testament, all in John's epistles (1 John 2:18,22; 4:3; 2 John 7). While any individual who claims to be Christ or who misrepresents his teachings could be considered "an antichrist," there is a special sense in which this and related titles are used in Bible prophecy.

1 JOHN 2:18,22; 4:3: "Little children, it is the last time: and as ye have heard that antichrist shall come, even now are there many antichrists; whereby we know that it is the last time. Who is a liar but he that denieth that Jesus is the Christ? He is antichrist, that denieth the Father and the Son....And every spirit that confesseth not that Jesus Christ is come in the flesh is not of God: and this is that *spirit* of antichrist, whereof ye have heard that it should come; and even now already is it in the world."

2 JOHN 7: "For many deceivers are entered into the world, who confess not that Jesus Christ is come in the flesh. This is a deceiver and an antichrist."

"'The Antichrist' refers to a great church-state system which was established deceitfully in the place of the true church and which ruled in the name of Christ. It was not an opposition to the **name** of Christ, but an enemy or opponent of Christ in that it falsely bears his name, counterfeits his kingdom and authority, and misrepresents his character and plans and doctrines before the world." *B282*. "History has identified it as the system of Papacy in which every prediction concerning the Antichrist has been fulfilled...in a manner and to an extent which...all must admit could never be repeated." *B282* "But when we state that the one and only system whose history fits these prophecies is Papacy, let no one misunderstand us to mean that every Roman Catholic is a man of sin; nor that the priests, nor even the popes...are, or have been the Antichrist....Notice, further, that the Church of Rome as an ecclesiastical system only is not the '**Man** of Sin,' a **woman** is always the symbol used for a church separate from its head and lord.....the apostate church was not the Antichrist, or Man of Sin, until she united with her lord and head, the pope, the claimed vicegerent of Christ, and became a religious **empire**, falsely styled Christendom...." *B277*

"...the Scriptures...apply the term **Antichrist** as **against**, in the sense of misrepresenting, counterfeiting, **taking the place of** the true Christ....a certain class...still professing to be of the Christ body, the Church, had left the foundation principles...and were...taking the place and name of the true Church — hence really counterfeiting the true saints...." *B281*

1 JOHN 2:18,19: "...as ye have heard that antichrist shall come, even now are there many antichrists;....They went out from us, but they were not of us...."

BIBLICAL SYNONYMS AND RELATED TITLES

"That man of sin" and "the son of perdition" (2 Thes. 2:3)

"The mystery of iniquity" and "that Wicked" (2 Thes. 2:7,8)

"The abomination of desolation" (Matt. 24:15; Dan. 11:31)

"The Mother of Harlots," "Mystery," "Babylon the Great," "Abominations of the Earth" (Rev. 17:5)

"The beast" (Rev. 13:1-8,18)

CHARACTERISTICS AND HISTORICAL DEVELOPMENT

(a) **In the early church.**

2 THESS. 2:7: "For the mystery of iniquity doth already work."

2 JOHN 7: "For many deceivers...confess not that Jesus Christ is come in the flesh. This is...an antichrist."

2 THESS. 2:3,4: "...there [shall] come a falling away first, and that man of sin be revealed; the son of perdition, Who opposeth and exalteth himself above all that is called God...[and] as God sitteth in the temple of God...."

"Historians have traced 'the falling away' of the Church from its original simplicity and purity, step by step, down to its deep degradation which culminated in the development of the 'Man of Sin'....All historians bear witness to...the great falling away from the faith, predicted by the Apostle Paul...even those who approve the assumption of power." *B283,287*

(b) **During the period of supremacy.**

"The thing which hindered a rapid development of Antichrist was...that the emperor was...**Pontifex Maximus** — i.e., Chief Priest or Greatest Religious Ruler...." *B288*

1 JOHN 4:3: "...every spirit that confesseth not that Jesus Christ is come in the flesh is not of God: and this is that *spirit* of antichrist...."

"The heathen philosophies....denied our Lord's pre-human existence — denied that he *came* in the flesh — denied that he was anything else than a member of the fallen race...." *E296*

"...the other extreme error...is that Messiah was not a man at all — that he was the very God, the Father, who merely pretended to be flesh...using the....flesh...to permit him to appear to weep and hunger and thirst and die. This view also denies that...'he was **made flesh**.' John 1:14." *E296*

JOHN 1:14: "And the Word was made flesh, and dwelt among us, (and we beheld his glory, the glory as of the only begotten of the Father,) full of grace and truth."

"...all who fail to see clearly that 'the Word [**Logos**] was **made flesh**,' became 'the man Christ Jesus,' are as unable to see the ransom [**corresponding price**] as are those who see Jesus as an imperfect man, begotten...by an earthly father. Thus...the simple test set forth...through the Apostle is still a test of doctrines — whether they be of God...or....antichrist." *E297*

2 THESS. 2:8-10: "...that Wicked [One]...whose coming is after the working of Satan with all power and signs and lying wonders, And with all deceivableness of unrighteousness."

DAN. 11:31,36: "...they shall pollute the sanctuary...and shall take away the daily *sacrifice*, and they shall place the abomination that maketh desolate...he shall exalt himself, and magnify himself above every god, and shall speak marvelous things against the God of gods and shall prosper till the indignation be accomplished..."

"The one special false doctrine, or fundamental error, which led to the full rejection of that (the antichrist) system by our Lord, and made it in his sight the desolating **abomination**,...is known as the Mass, or Sacrifice of the Mass. (This) doctrine...set aside the merit of Christ's sacrifice as a **continual** and ever-efficacious one....Each

time the Mass is offered in sacrifice, it is they claim, a **fresh** sacrifice of Christ for the particular persons and sins to which the priest offering it mentally applies it." *C95, 98, 99*

REV. 13:1,2,5-7: "AND I...saw a beast rise up out of the sea...and the dragon gave him his power, and his seat, and great authority...And there was given unto him a mouth speaking great things and blasphemies; and power was given unto him to continue forty *and* two months. And he opened his mouth in blasphemy against God, to blaspheme his name, and his tabernacle...And it was given unto him to make war with the saints and to overcome them: and power was given him over all kindreds, and tongues, and nations."

The beast pictured "Papal Rome [as] the triumphant successor" to the dragon, or pagan Rome, from which Antichrist obtained the power and seat and great authority. *B288*

"Hence this...ambition...worked secretly...until... after the nominal Church had become large and influential and the imperial power was shattered by political dissensions and was beginning to decay." *B289*

"The power of Rome was rapidly failing, and its strength and unity were divided among six claimants to the imperial honors, when Constantine became emperor." *B289*

"...under Constantine's reign, the opposition of the empire to Christianity gave way to favor, and the Imperial Pontifex Maximus became the patron of the **professed** but really apostate Church...; and...he assisted her to a place of popularity and splendor from which she was able afterward, as the imperial power grew weak, to put her own representatives upon the religious throne of the world as Chief Religious Ruler — **Pontifex Maximus**." *B290*

"'Contemporaneously with the establishment [of Christianity as the religion of the empire in the fourth century] was the progress of **a great and general corruption which had arisen two centuries before**. Superstition and ignorance invested the ecclesiastics with a power which they exerted to their own aggrandizement.'" *[White's Universal History, Pg. 156] B283*

"Rapin observes that, 'In the fifth century Christianity was debased by a vast number of human inventions;' the simplicity of its government and discipline was reduced to a system of clerical power; and its worship was polluted with ceremonies borrowed from the heathen." *B283*

"Antichrist's great swelling words or blasphemies, cover the whole period of his long career...The establishment of a counterfeit Kingdom of God was a libel upon God's government, a gross blasphemy...God's character, i.e., his **name**, was blasphemed in the thousand monstrous edicts, bulls and decretals issued in his name...." *B305, 306*

"The Antichrist, whose gradual **development** and **organization** from secretly working ambition are a fitting prelude to the terrible character displayed after the coveted power had been grasped — from 539 A.D. to 1799 A.D., 1260 years." *B296* [The Biblical prophetic lengths, "42 months," "3 years," and "1260 days," are all equivalent expressions, and represent a period of 1260 actual years.] "The intermediate period of seven centuries embraces Papacy's glory-time and the 'dark ages' of the world, full of frauds and deception in the name of Christ." *B296*

"The persecutions of the Christians...under the popes (were) reduced to a regular system, animated by religious fanaticism, and scheming ambition — and inspired with a Satanic zeal, energy, and cruelty unparalleled in the annals of history...It would be impossible briefly to convey any adequate conception of the horrors of the Inquisition...persecution extended to every country where Papacy had a footing...awful, sickening, soul-harrowing tortures (were) inflicted upon some of the Lord's jewels because of faithfulness to their convictions. It is estimated...that Papacy, during the past thirteen hundred

years, has...caused the death of **fifty millions of people**." *B330, 331, 343, 346*

REV. 17:1,2,18: "...I will show unto thee...the great whore that sitteth upon many waters: With whom the kings of the earth have committed fornication, and the inhabitants of the earth have been made drunk with the wine of her fornication...And the Woman which thou sawest is that great city, which reigneth over the kings of the earth."

"...union between the church and civil power is out of order, being in the Scriptures termed harlotry." *B261* "...to justify her course, (Papacy) first deceiving herself, and then the nations, into the belief that the promised millennial reign of Christ **had come**, and that Christ the King was represented by her popes, who reigned over the kings of the earth as his vicegerents. Her claims were successful in deceiving the whole world." *A268*

"The nations were **drunk** (stupefied), they lost their senses in drinking the **mixed wine** (doctrine, false, and true mixed) given them by the apostate church." *B348*

(c) **During the Reformation and thereafter.**

REV. 13:3: "And I saw one of his [the beast's] heads as it were wounded to death; and his deadly wound was healed: and all the world wondered after the beast."

"Napoleon's work, together with the French Revolution, broke the...Papal dominion against which the religious Reformation had previously struck a death-blow, but which its after course had healed. (Rev. 13:3) The era closing with A.D.1799...defined the limit of Papal dominion over the nations." *C50*

"Reformation and cleansing for a time ceased, and instead of progressing with the cleansing, the reformers gave attention to organizing themselves, and to revamping and repolishing many of the old papal dogmas, at first so loudly condemned. Thus did Satan decoy the reformers into the very 'harlotry' (union of church and state) which they had denounced in the Church of Rome. And thus the deadly wound which Papacy had received was for a time healed." *C111, 112*

REV. 13:11,14-17: "And I beheld another beast...saying to them that dwell on the earth, that they should make an image to the beast, which had the wound by a sword, and did live. And he had power to give life unto the image of the beast, that...[it] should both speak, and cause that as many as would not worship the image...[to] be killed. And he causeth all,...to receive a mark in their right hand, or in their foreheads: And that no man might buy or sell, save he that had the mark..."

(d) **Final Overthrow**

2 THESS. 2:8: "And then shall that Wicked [One] be revealed, whom the Lord shall consume with the spirit of his mouth, and shall destroy with the brightness of his coming..."

"It is to be by the **bright shining** (*epiphania*) of the Lord's **presence** (*parousia*) at his second advent that this Man of Sin shall

be utterly destroyed." *B268*

"This Man of Sin...has been smitten with the sword of the Spirit — the Word of God. The spirit of Christ's mouth has rendered him **powerless** to persecute the saints openly and generally..." *B358*

"The final extinction of this counterfeit hierarchy (will be) near the close of the 'Day of wrath' and judgment already begun...." *B356*

REV. 17:16: ***Diag***.: "And the TEN HORNS [kings] which thou sawest, and the BEAST, these will hate the HARLOT, and will make her desolate and naked, and will eat her FLESH, and burn Her with Fire."

REV. 18:2,5,8,9,21,23: "...Babylon the great is fallen,...For her sins have reached unto heaven, and God hath remembered her iniquities. Therefore shall her plagues come in one day, death, and mourning, and famine; and she shall be utterly burned with fire: for strong *is* the Lord God who judgeth her. And the kings of the earth, who have committed fornication and lived deliciously with her, shall bewail her, and lament for her, And a mighty angel took up a stone like a great millstone, and cast *it* into the sea, saying, Thus with violence shall that great city Babylon be thrown down, and shall be found no more at all....and the voice of the bridegroom and of the bride shall be heard no more at all in thee:...for by thy sorceries were all nations deceived."

THE BEAST LIKE UNTO A LEOPARD

REV. 13:2,5-7: "And the beast which I saw was like unto a leopard...there was given unto him a mouth speaking great things and blasphemies; and power was given unto him to continue [to do what he will] forty-two months. And he opened his mouth in blasphemies against God, to blaspheme his name, and his tabernacle,... them that dwell in heaven. And it was given unto him to make war with the saints, and to overcome them: and power was given him over all kindreds, [and people,] and tongues, and nations." *[Abridged and corrected from Siniatic MS.)*

"...'blasphemy' is applicable to any indignity offered to God. *Bouvier* defines it thus: '**Blasphemy** is to attribute to God that which is contrary to his nature, and does not belong to him, — and to deny what does.' See *Webster's Unabridged Dictionary*....In evidence that this is the sense...used in the Scriptures, notice....

JOHN 10:33,36: "...For a good work we stone thee not; but for **blasphemy**; and because that thou, being a man, makest thyself God." [As a false accusation against Jesus.] "Say ye of him, whom the Father hath sanctified, and sent into the world, Thou blasphemest; because I said, I am the Son of God?" *B306*

MARK 14:61-64: "But he held his peace, and answered nothing. Again the high priest asked him, and said unto him, Art thou the Christ, the Son of the Blessed? And Jesus said, I am: and ye shall see the Son of man sitting on the right hand of power, and coming in the clouds of heaven. Then the high priest rent his clothes, and saith, What need we any further witnesses? Ye have heard the blasphemy: what think ye? And they all condemned him to be guilty of death."

"SHOWING HIMSELF THAT HE IS GOD" 2 THESS. 2:4 "HE OPENED HIS MOUTH IN BLASPHEMIES" REV. 13:6

"In a work...by...Monsignor Capel, is a list of not less than sixty-two blasphemous titles applied to the pope...We quote from the list as follows: "'Christ by Unction'

'Key-bearer of the Kingdom of Heaven'

'Vicar of Christ'

'Head of all the Holy Churches'

'Apostolic Lord and Father of Fathers'

'Infallible Pope'

'Head of all the Holy Priests of God'"

B306, 307

THE CHURCH OF GOD, THE ROYAL

PRIESTHOOD (The following Chart is from *C303*)

THE REALITY During the

Millennium CHRIST JESUS,

Our Lord and Head and representative; the High Priest of our profession or order.

COUNTERFEIT

THE POPES

High Priests of the Papal Hierarchy; its lord, head, and mouthpiece.

The Church glorified, the Body of Christ, sharers of his glory, majesty, and office of ruler: whose office will differ, as star differeth from star in glory.

The Church of Rome consists of the bishops and prelates, who share the dignities of the hierarchy, though differing in degrees of honor — cardinals, bishops, etc.

SUBJECT TO THE HIERARCHY ARE

ASSISTANTS, AS FOLLOWS:

The earthly phase of the Kingdom of God; through whom the glorified Church will have more direct contact with the world, in teaching, governing, etc., and who also will have closest communion with the spiritual Church in glory.

The World will be taught, directed, ruled, and helped by the above described Kingdom of God and its earthly representatives, which will have all power, and must be obeyed; and all who obey not will be "cut off." Acts 3:23 (destroyed)

The under-priests of Papacy, not parts or members of the church or hierarchy, but called "Brothers" and "Sisters." Of these are the teachers, nurses, etc., in direct contact with the people as well as with the hierarchy.

Papacy claims to obedience of the World to its rule and teachings — as being the Kingdom of God. The lower priesthood is its agent. When in power, it attempted to enforce its laws, and to "cut off" those who obeyed not. B303

THE "LITTLE HORN" OF DANIEL

DAN. 7:7,8,24-26: "...I saw...a fourth beast,... and...it had ten horns....There came up among them another little horn....and...in this horn *were* eyes like the eyes of man, and a mouth speaking great things....the ten horns...*are* ten kings...and another shall rise after them....And he shall speak *great* words against the most High, and shall wear out the saints of the most High, and think to change times and laws: and they shall be given into his hand until a time and times and the dividing of time. But the judgment shall sit, and they shall take away his dominion, to consume and to destroy *it* unto the end."

(See also Index: **Days of Daniel**)

WEARING OUT THE SAINTS, ETC.

"It is estimated....that Papacy....has, directly or indirectly, caused the death of **fifty millions of people**....human and Satanic ingenuity were taxed...to invent...horrible tortures, for... political and religious opponents,...the latter... being pursued with tenfold fury." *B346*

"THE ABOMINATION OF DESOLATION"

DAN. 8:9,11,13: "And out of one of them came forth a little horn....and by him the daily [continual] *sacrifice* was taken

away....How long *shall be* the vision *concerning* the daily [continual] *sacrifice*, and the transgression of desolation...?"

DAN. 11:31: "...They...shall take away the daily [continual] *sacrifice*, and they shall place the abomination that maketh desolate."

MATT. 24:15: "...Ye...shall see the abomination of desolation, spoken of by Daniel the prophet, stand in the holy place...."

"The prophecy [Dan. 8:10-26...deals with... Christ's meritorious sacrifice...a **continual**, ever-efficacious sacrifice....

"Christ's **continual** sacrifice was not actually...abolished by Papacy, but it was set aside by a false doctrine...**as a continual** and ever-efficacious one....This false doctrine is known as the Mass...." *C98*

DAN. 8:10-26: "And it waxed great, *even* to the host of heaven; and it cast down *some* of the host and of the stars to the ground, and stamped upon them. Yea, he magnified *himself* even to the prince of the host, and by him the daily *sacrifice* was taken away, and the place of his sanctuary was cast down. And an host was given *him* against the daily *sacrifice* by reason of transgression, and it cast down the truth to the ground; and it practiced, and prospered. Then I heard one saint speaking, and another saint said unto that certain *saint* which spake, How long *shall* be the vision *concerning* the daily *sacrifice*, and the transgression of desolation, to give both the sanctuary and the host to be trodden under foot? And he said unto me, Unto two thousand and three hundred days; then shall the sanctuary be cleansed. And it came to pass, when I, *even* I Daniel, had seen the vision, and sought for the meaning, then, behold, there stood before me as the appearance of a man.

"And I heard a man's voice between *the banks* of Ulai, which called, and said, Gabriel, make this *man* to understand the vision. So he came near where I stood: and when he came, I was afraid, and fell upon my face: but he said unto me, Understand, O son of man: for at the time of the end *shall be* the vision. Now as he was speaking with me, I was in a deep sleep on my face toward the ground: but he touched me, and set me upright. And he said, Behold, I will make thee know what shall be in the last end of the indignation: for at the time appointed the end *shall be.* The ram which thou sawest having *two* horns *are* the kings of Media and Persia. And the rough goat is the king of Grecia: and the great horn that *is* between his eyes *is* the first king. Now that being broken, whereas four stood up for it, four kingdoms shall stand up out of the nation, but not in his power. And in the latter time of their kingdom, when the transgressors are come to the full, a king of fierce countenance, and understanding dark sentences, shall

stand up. And his power shall be mighty, but not by his own power: and he shall destroy wonderfully, and shall prosper, and practice, and shall destroy the mighty and the holy people. And through his policy also he shall cause craft to prosper in his hand; and he shall magnify *himself* in his heart, and by peace shall destroy many: he shall also stand up against the Prince of princes; but he shall be broken without hand. And the vision of the evening and the morning which was told *is* true: wherefore shut thou up the vision; for it *shall be* for many days."

See also Index: **The Mass**

OTHER FALSE DOCTRINES

"Passing over the worshiping of saints and of Mary, we note some of the...grievous errors.

"**Church infallibility**...placed the decrees of church councils beyond contradiction or questioning, either by reason or Scripture....

"...while professing to reverence the Bible...it has kept...its own **infallible words** in the front." *B319*

"The doctrine of the natural, inherent immortality of man....led...to the conclusion that if existence **must continue** forever,....to the wicked it must be a life of suffering...." *B323*

See also Index: **Immortality Versus Mortality**

"**Purgatory** was brought in to relieve...this terrible dose of doctrine...Antichrist....claimed to hold the keys of heaven and hell and to have power to remit the pains of purgatory...." *B323*

"**Masses for the dead** followed; and rich and poor alike felt it a duty to pay...to have these.... This became a source of great income...." *B324*

"**Indulgences** came in...before the 'Crusades:' we know that indulgences were offered...to secure volunteers for these 'Crusades.'...These... **cancel**...days or years of purgatorial anguish...." *B324*

"...'**plenary**...indulgences' are certainly understood to cover all sins, past and future....those who say the **'Hail, Holy Queen'** are granted forty days of indulgence,...the '**Litany of the Blessed Virgin**'...two hundred days; and for those who say the '**Blessed Be the Holy, Immaculate, and Most Pure Conception of the Virgin Mary**' one hundred years indulgence is granted...." *B324, 325*

"Protestants...support the theory of Antichrist, that Christ's Kingdom **has been set up**. Some have endeavored to do as Papacy did — to organize their church under some one person as its head — while others supply the place of this

head with a council or synod...under the delusion...that now...is the **reign of Christ's kingdom**...." *B301*

ANTICHRIST'S END

DAN. 7:26: "But the judgment shall sit, and they shall take away his dominion, to consume and to destroy *it* unto the end."

REV. 19:20: "And the beast was taken, and with him the false prophet....These both were cast alive into a lake of fire burning with brimstone."

"...the Apostle Paul declares concerning Antichrist..." *B358*

2 THESS. 2:8: "...Whom the Lord Jesus will consume with the spirit of his mouth, and annihilate with the **bright shining of his presence**." *B358*

"...this sunlight from the Lord's presence...will produce the 'day of trouble,'...in which Antichrist, with every other evil system, will be destroyed.

"Whose presence is with [accompanied by or during] an energetic operation of Satan [Satanic energy and action] with all power, and signs, and lying delusions, and with every iniquitous deception for those perishing; because they did not receive the love of the truth, that they might be preserved." *B358,359*

"The Papal **dominion** (and much of the abject reverence of the people for ecclesiasticism in general)...was broken down at the beginning of the Time of the End — 1799; and, though the subsequent process of consumption has been slow, and there have been occasional signs of apparent recovery,...the assurance of Papacy's final destruction is positive, and its death-struggle will be violent. First, however, she must attain more of her old-time prestige, which will be shared with a confederated association of her daughters. Together they will be lifted up, that together they may be violently thrown down." *D37*

See also Index: **Time of the End**.

"Papacy is the Antichrist, not because of its moral obliquity, but because it is the **counterfeit** of the true Christ and the true Kingdom. It is because of a failure to realize this fact that many Protestants will be deceived into co-operation with Papacy in opposition to the true King of Glory." *B361*

See also Index: **Apostolic Succession; Babylon; Church Federation; Churchianity; Creeds; Day of Vengeance; Days Of Daniel; Hell and Purgatory; Immortality Verses Mortality; The Mass; Organization of the New Creation; Trinity**.

REFERENCES

A. "The Man of Sin — Antichrist," **Studies in the Scriptures**, *B267-361*

B. "The Cleansing of the Sanctuary," **Studies in the Scriptures**, *C95-120*

C. "The Rise and Fall of the Antichrist," **Dawn Magazine, July, Aug. 1958**

APOSTOLIC SUCCESSION

"The Apostle declares that other foundation can no man lay than that is laid — Jesus Christ. (1 Cor. 3:11) Upon this foundation our Lord, as the Father's representative, began to rear his Church, and in so doing he called twelve apostles — not by accident, but by design, just as the twelve tribes of Israel were not twelve by accident, but in conformity to the divine plan." *F208*

1 COR. 3:11: "For other foundation can no man lay than that is laid, which is Jesus Christ."

ONLY TWELVE APOSTLES

REV. 21:14: "And the wall of the city had twelve foundations, and in them the names of the twelve apostles of the Lamb."

"What better proof could we have that there were never more than twelve of these apostles of the Lamb, and that any others were, as the Apostle Paul suggests, 'false apostles.'" *F209*

2 COR. 11:13: "For such are false apostles, deceitful workers, transforming themselves into the apostles of Christ."

WE DISAGREE WITH THOSE CLAIMING IT

"...we are entirely out of accord with the views of Papacy and of the Protestant Episcopal Church, and of the Catholic-Apostolic Church, and of the Mormons, all of whom claim that the number of the apostles was not limited to twelve, and that there have been successors since their day who spoke and wrote with equal authority with the original twelve." *F209*

THE TWELVE STARS

REV. 12:1: "And there appeared a great wonder in heaven; a woman clothed with the sun, and the moon under her feet, and upon her head a crown of twelve stars."

"The **stars** as symbols represent the inspired teachers of the church — the apostles...." *D590*

NO MORE NEEDED

"Nor can we imagine any need of more apostles; for we still have these twelve with us — their testimony and the fruit of their labors....The records of their ministries are with us; their records of the Lord's words, miracles, etc. Their discourses on the various topics of Christian doctrine in their epistles are in our hands today in a most satisfactory manner. These things are **sufficient**...." *F209*

2 TIM. 3:16,17: *(Cf. Diag)* "All Scripture, divinely inspired, is indeed profitable...so that the man of God may be complete, thoroughly fitted for Every good Work."

ACTS 20:27: "...I have not shunned to declare unto you all the counsel of God."

See also Index: **Antichrist: Other False Doctrines: Church Infallibility.**

ATHEISM

DEFINITION: Greek: **atheos** (**Godless**). A disbelief in the existence of God. Synonymous words which have a similar meaning are as follows:

AGNOSTIC: The belief that the existence of any ultimate reality (as God) is unknown and probably unknowable.

DEISM: System of thought advocating natural religion based on human reason rather than revelation, emphasizing morality, and in the 18th century denying the interference of the Creator with the laws of the universe.

FREE THINKER: One that forms opinions on the basis of reason independently of authority. One who doubts or denies religious dogma. One who suggests loss of faith and a belief only in the rational and credible.

UNBELIEVER, DOUBTER, SKEPTIC: One that does not believe in a particular religious faith.

INFIDEL: Usually applies to one belonging to a faith (as the Mohammedan) other than Christian or Jewish and commonly connotes an enemy of the true faith.

"The denial of or disbelief in the existence of God." *Funk and Wagnalls Dictionary*

THE EXISTENCE OF A SUPREME INTELLIGENT CREATOR ESTABLISHED

"He who can look into the sky with a telescope, or even with his natural eye alone, and see there the immensity of creation, its symmetry, beauty, order, harmony, and diversity, and yet doubt that the Creator of these is vastly his superior both in wisdom and power, or who can suppose for a moment that such order came by chance, without a Creator, has so far lost or ignored the faculty of reason as to be properly considered what the Bible terms him, a fool (one who ignores or lacks reason): 'the fool hath said in his heart, **There is** no God.' Psa. 14:1; 53:1." *A29*

"...it is a self-evident truth that effects must be produced by competent causes. Every plant and every flower, even, speaks volumes of testimony on this subject. Intricate in construction, exquisitely beautiful in form and texture, each speaks of a wisdom and skill above the human. How short sighted the absurdity which boasts of human skill and ingenuity, and attributes to mere chance the regularity, uniformity, and harmony of nature; which acknowledges the laws of nature, while denying that nature has an intelligent Lawgiver." *A29*

"When Columbus discovered the Orinoco river, someone said he had found an island. He replied: 'No such river as

that flows from an island. That mighty torrent must drain the waters of a continent.'" *A63*

HOW NATURE DENIES

"Some who deny the existence of an intelligent Creator claim that nature is the only God, and that from nature all forms of animal and vegetable developments proceeded without the ordering of intelligence, but governed, they say, by 'the law of the survival of the fittest' in a process of evolution.

"This theory lacks proof, for all about us we see that various creatures are of fixed natures which do not evolve to higher natures; and though those who hold to this theory have made repeated endeavors, they have never succeeded either in blending different species or in producing a new fixed variety. No instance is known where one kind has changed to another kind.

"Surely if unintelligent nature were the creator or evolver she would continue the process, and there would be no such thing as fixed species, since without intelligence nothing would arrive at fixed conditions....This theory we conclude to be as contrary to human reason as to the Bible, when it claims that intelligent beings were created by a power lacking intelligence." *A30*

*(*Also see *R1150,* bottom article)

A REASONABLE CONCLUSION

"...the existence of an Intelligent Creator is a clearly demonstrated truth, the proof which lies all around us.....He is...the Designer and Creator of what we term nature....He ordered and established the laws of nature, the beauty and harmony of whose operation we see and admire....Not only are we forced to the conclusion that there is a God, and that his power and wisdom are immeasurably beyond our own, but we are forced by reason to the conclusion that the grandest thing created is **not** superior to its Creator...." *A32*

Think now of all the planning, the timing and all the intelligent supervision, that was needed to Create all that exists on the planet Earth. It has been called to our attention that of the insect, reptile, and fish, fowl, and animal, there is estimated to be well over three million species. In every one of these are hidden marvels of creative invention. We are told that the common housefly has 4,000 lenses. Take the bumblebee. The size, weight and shape of this husky bee's body — in relation to its total wing-spread — indicate that it should never get off the ground. According to the applied laws of aerodynamics, it should not be able to fly. Extensive laboratory tests and wind tunnel experiments by experts confirm this conclusion. However, the bumblebee, unaware of these findings, continues to zoom through the air whenever and wherever it pleases.

The National Geographic tells us that there are about 2,500 different types of minerals. Could we honestly say that all this happened by chance without intelligence? Notice the millions of varieties of vegetable life. Every variety is a fixed species. Did it all just happen? We must conclude that the existence of an intelligent Creator is a clearly demonstrated truth. To realize this we acknowledge that the Creator is wise, just, loving, and powerful; and the scope of his attributes is, of necessity immeasurably wider than that of his grandest creation.

PSA. 90:2: "Before the mountains were brought forth, or ever thou hadst formed the earth and the world, even from everlasting to everlasting, **thou *art* God**."

"What '**beginning'** is here referred to? Surely not the beginning of the existence of Jehovah, the God, the Father; because he is 'from everlasting to everlasting,' and never had a beginning. (Psa. 41:13; 90:2; 106:48) But Jehovah's work had a beginning and it is to this that reference is here made — the beginning of creation. The statement, thus understood, implies that our Lord Jesus, in his pre-human existence, as the **Logos**, was with the Father in the very beginning of creation. This confirms the inspired statement that the **Logos** himself was 'the beginning of the creation of God:' this is

the precise statement of the apostle, who assures us that our Lord is not only 'the Head of the body, the Church,' and 'the first-born from the dead,' but also the **beginning** of all creation — '**that in all things he might have the pre-eminence.**' His words are: 'He is the image of the invisible God — **first-born of all creation**; because by him were all things created by him and for him, and he precedes all things, and in him all things have been permanently placed." (Col.1:15-18) Hear also the word of prophecy concerning the Only Begotten not only declaring his coming exaltation as King of earthly kings, but describing him as already being Jehovah's first-born, saying, I will make him, my first-born, higher than the kings of the earth." (Psa. 89:27) Note also that our Lord (referring to his own origin), declares himself to be, 'The faithful and true witness, **the beginning of the creation of God**.' Rev. 3:14" *E86*

"'Bethlehem Ephratah...out of thee shall he come forth unto me that is to be ruler in Israel, whose goings forth have been **of old, from everlasting**.' (Micah 5:2) These words we are asked to accept as proofs that Jesus was Jehovah — from everlasting to everlasting — because Moses declared, '**Jehovah**...from everlasting to everlasting, thou art God.'" *E45*

PSA. 83:18: "That *men* may know that thou, whose name alone *is* JEHOVAH, *art* the most high over all the earth."

"The name Jehovah is properly rendered only four times, where it seemed impossible to do otherwise (Exod.6:3; Psa.

83:18; Isa. 12:2; 26:4); it is rendered **God** 298 times, and **Lord** over 5,000 times." *E65*

ISA. 42:8: "I am the LORD: that *is* my name: and my glory will I not give to another, neither my praise to graven images."

"Beyond all question, Jehovah himself is the Supreme Judge, and his Law the supreme standard, according to which all decisions must be made respecting life eternal. Thus the Apostle refers to 'God the Judge of all,' and indicates that the Father is meant by referring in the same sentence to Jesus as the Mediator. (Heb. 12:23,24) Again he says, 'The Lord will judge his people,' and 'Vengeance is mine, I will repay, saith the Lord.' (Rom. 12:19; Heb. 10:30) In these quotations from the Old Testament (Psa. 50:4; Deut. 32:35,36), the Lord referred to is Jehovah. Again, the Apostle says, 'God shall judge the secrets of men ["the world"] by Jesus Christ.' (Rom. 2:16; 3:6) Jehovah was the original Lawgiver and Judge, and will forever maintain this position and relationship to all of his creatures. His honor he will not give unto another. (Isa. 42:8) Likewise he points out to us in the Scriptures that he is the Shepherd of his people. 'Jehovah is my Shepherd; I shall not want.' (Psa. 23:1) Again he designates himself the Redeemer of his people: 'All flesh shall know that I, Jehovah, am thy Savior and thy Redeemer.' (Isa. 49:26) In the highest sense of the word Jehovah himself is the center of the entire plan of salvation and of its every feature; and any other view of the matter is a defective one." *F396*

"THE SELF-EXISTING ONE"

"The Almighty God has appropriated to himself and declared his name to be Jehovah, which signifies the 'Self-Existing One' or 'The Immortal One.' Thus we read his declaration to Moses, saying: 'I appeared unto Abraham, unto Isaac and unto Jacob by the name of God Almighty [the superior or most mighty God], but by my name Jehovah was I not known to them.' (Exod. 6:3) By this name, Jehovah, God was thereafter recognized amongst his people. The name is used hundreds of times throughout the Old Testament, but is covered, in a large degree, from the English reader, through an error of the translators, who have rendered it 'LORD.' It can, however, be recognized readily, being always printed in small capitals when used to translate their sacred name, Jehovah. Thus in the first Commandment given to Israel the Lord said, 'I am Jehovah, thy God...thou shalt have no other gods [mighty ones] before me [my equals]...for I Jehovah thy God am a jealous God.' Exod. 20:2-5

"Again Moses declares, 'Hear, O Israel, Jehovah our God is **one** — Jehovah; and thou shalt love Jehovah thy God with all thine heart and with all thy soul and with all thy might.'

(Deut. 6:4,5) And this is the very passage of scripture which our Lord Jesus himself commended as the very essence of truth. When inquired of respecting the greatest commandment, he said, quoting this scripture, 'Thou shalt love the Lord [Jehovah] thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy mind; this is the primary and great commandment.' (Matt. 22:37,38) Again we read, 'I am Jehovah; that is my name: and my glory [honor] will I not give to another.' (Isa. 42:8) And let not the context escape our notice, for this positive declaration that the name Jehovah is exclusively that of 'the Father of Lights with whom is no variableness' immediately follows his prophetic proclamation of Messiah as Jehovah's honored and elect Son-servant, saying: 'Behold my servant, whom **I uphold**; mine elect in whom my soul delighteth: I have put my spirit upon him. He shall bring forth judgment to the Gentiles....He shall not fail nor be discouraged until he have set judgment in the earth: and the isles shall wait for his law. Thus saith God, Jehovah, I Jehovah have called thee in righteousness and will hold thine hand and will keep thee, and will give thee for a covenant of the people, for a light of the Gentiles; to open the blind eyes, to bring out the prisoners from the prison [death], and them that sit in darkness out of the prison-house. I am Jehovah: THAT IS MY NAME.' Isa. 42:1-8" *E40, 41*

DEUT. 6:4,5: "Hear, O Israel: The LORD our God *is* one LORD: And thou shalt love the LORD thy God with all thine heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy might."

MARK 12:32,33: "And the scribe said unto him, Well, Master, thou hast said the truth: for there is one God; and there is none other but he: And to love him with all the heart, and with all the understanding, and with all the soul, and with all the strength, and to love *his* neighbour as himself, is more than all whole burnt offerings and sacrifices."

"In this respect our Lord's words are a lesson to his people today, to the effect that they should keep their religious affairs, which are of God and toward God, separate and distinct from worldly politics, which are of the Gentiles, during this period of the 'Times of the Gentiles.' 'Ye are not of this world, even as I am not of this world.' On the other hand, the Lord's people are to remember that, as originally created, man bore *God's image* stamped upon his very nature; and the persons addressed should have remembered also that God's superscription was upon them, that he had accepted them as his people, — Israel. The thought is that the heart, the life, the affections, belong to God, and should be rendered to him, and this being done the rendering of a little tribute-money to some earthly prince would be of comparative insignificance, and the will of God recognized in the heart would cause all things to work

together for their good." *R2756:3*

1 COR. 8:5,6: "For though there be that are called gods, whether in heaven or in earth, (as there be gods many, and lords many,) But to us *there is* but one God, the Father, of whom are all things, and we in him; and one Lord Jesus Christ, **by** whom *are* all things, and we **by** him."

"The Apostle Paul presents the matter of the relationship between the Father and the Son in respect to our redemption most clearly and most forcefully, saying: 'There is no other God but One...to us there is but One God, the Father of whom are all things, and we in him; and one Lord, Jesus Christ, by whom are all things, and we by him.' (1 Cor. 8:4,6) That is to say, there is only the one eternal and Almighty God, the Author and Source of all things, to whom we belong, and there is only the one Lord, Jesus Christ, through whom the Heavenly Father operates in respect to all the various features of his plan, and by and through whom alone we have had remission of sins, through faith in his blood, and access to the Father, and to the grace wherein we stand, rejoicing in hope of the glory of God. — Rom. 5:1." *E54*

"MANKIND'S HOPE FOR EVERLASTING LIFE"

"The boldest and ablest scientists and evolutionists have attempted to show that man's life was not a gift from the Creator. Theoretically they have brought man and all the lower animals up, by evolution process, from a microscopic germ; yea, from protoplasm, which Prof. Huxley called 'The physical basis of life;' and they fain would in some way ignore the Creator and Life-giver entirely: but, as a matter of fact, they have been unable to suggest any way that even protoplasm could get life from inert matter. To this extent, therefore, they are obliged to recognize a first great cause of life. But the reverent Bible student should not have the slightest difficulty in accepting the statement of the Scriptures that God himself alone is the First Great Cause, the fountain of life, from whom has proceeded all life on every plane; as says the Apostle, All things are of the Father, and all things are by the Son, and we by him. (1 Cor. 8:6) The Christian not only finds the evidences of a Creator in the book of Nature, but he finds in the Bible the express and particular revelation of that Creator, and of that creation. He accepts as a fact the statement that God created our first parents, and bestowed life upon them, and provided for their propagation of a race of sentient beings, souls, of their own kind, just as he provided for similar process in the brute creation." *E398*

CLAIMING THE BIBLE'S SUPPORT FOR MEN'S CREEDS, ANOTHER CAUSE OF UNBELIEF

"The Bible....is unintentionally but woefully misrepresented by its friends...by claiming its support to their long-revered misconceptions of its truth, received through the traditions of their fathers." *A37*

See also Index: **The Bible; Creation and Fall; The Creator; Creeds; Permission of Evil; Evolution; Faith; Hell and Purgatory; Miracles; Pyramid.**

WORLD CONDITIONS A CAUSE OF DOUBT

LUKE 18:8: "...When the Son of Man comes, will he find the faith on the earth?" *Cf. Diag.*

"...the condition of the world today...is such as to awaken serious doubts....either the church has made a great mistake in supposing that in the present age, and in her present condition, her office has been to convert the world, or else God's plan has been a miserable failure....Many have accepted, and many more doubtless will accept the latter, and swell the ranks of infidelity...." *A14*

The spread of Atheism among Communists is too well known to need comment.

BABYLON

"The various prophecies..concerning Babylon...manifestly refer to the same great city. And since these prophecies had but a very limited fulfilment upon the ancient, literal city, and those of the Apocalypse were written centuries after the literal Babylon was laid in ruins, it is clear that the *special* reference of all the prophets is to something of which the ancient literal Babylon was an illustration." *D22*

"It has been...properly claimed by Protestants that the name 'Babylon' and the prophetic description are applicable to Papacy, though recently a more compromising disposition is less inclined so to apply it....effort is now made on the part of...sects of Protestantism to conciliate and imitate the Church of Rome, and to affiliate and cooperate with her. In so doing they become part and parcel with her...." *D26*

HISTORY

Hebrew: **confusion, gate of Bel**. When Nimrod founded the city he gave it the name **Bab-il**, "gate of Il" or "gate of God." After the "confusion" of tongues, the name was connected by the Hebrews with the root **balal**, "to confound." It was latterly the capital of the country called in Genesis **Shinar**, and in the later Scriptures " **Chaldea**," or the "Land of the Chaldeans." From these origins Babylon comes into scriptural prominence as the first universal empire under Nebuchadnezzar and the country who ended the independence of Judah, bringing the Israelites captive into Babylon while the land lay desolate for 70 years. It is in this significant role that Babylon became typical and prophetic. As the capital, it was built upon the great river Euphrates.

THE REVELATION

Babylon symbolic — "The book of Revelation contains predictions recorded long after literal Babylon was in ruins, and hence evidently applicable only to symbolic Babylon....Babylon represents the nominal Church, called Christendom...." *A313*

"The Revelator...shows that all who would get a true view of Babylon must...take their position...'in the wilderness' — ...separation from the world and worldly ideas and mere forms of godliness, and in the condition of entire consecration and faithfulness to and dependence upon God alone." *D27*

REV. 17:3,5: "...he carried me away in...spirit **into the wilderness** ; and I saw a woman.... BABYLON..."

"The name originated with the frustrating of the plan for the great tower, called Babel (confusion) [Gen. 11:1-9],

because there God confounded human speech; but the native etymology made the name Babil, which... signified...'the gate of God.'" *D24*

GEN. 11:1-9: "And the whole earth was of one language, and of one speech. And it came to pass, as they journeyed from the east, that they found a plain in the land of Shinar; and they dwelt there. And they said one to another, Go to, let us make brick, and burn them thoroughly. And they had brick for stone, and slime had they for mortar. And they said, Go to, let us build us a city and a tower, whose top *may reach* unto heaven; and let us make us a name, lest we be scattered abroad upon the face of the whole earth. And the LORD came down to see the city and the tower, which the children of men builded. And the LORD said, Behold, the people is one, and they have all one language; and this they begin to do: and now nothing will be restrained from them, which they have imagined to do. Go to, let us go down, and there confound their language, that they may not understand one another's speech. So the LORD scattered them abroad from thence upon the face of all the earth: and they left off to build the city. Therefore is the name of it called Babel; because the LORD did there confound the language of all the earth: and from thence did the LORD scatter them abroad upon the face of all the earth."

SYMBOLS: CITY AND WOMAN

"In symbolic prophecy a 'city' signifies a religious government backed by power and influence. Thus...the 'holy city' 'the new Jerusalem,' is the symbol used to represent the established Kingdom of God, the overcomers of the Gospel Church exalted and reigning in glory. The Church is...in the same connection, represented as a woman, 'the bride, the Lamb's wife,' in power and glory, and backed by the power and authority of Christ, her husband...." *D25*

REV. 21:9,10: "And there came...one of the seven angels...saying, Come hither, **I will show thee the bride**, the Lamb's wife. And he... **showed me that great city, the holy Jerusalem**..."

"This same method of interpretation applies to mystical Babylon, the great ecclesiastical kingdom, 'that great city' (Rev. 17:1-6), which is described as a harlot, a fallen woman (an apostate church for the true church is a virgin), exalted to power and dominion, and backed, to a considerable degree, by the kings of the earth, the civil powers, which are all more or less intoxicated with her spirit and doctrine.... Instead of waiting, as an espoused and chaste virgin, for exaltation with the heavenly Bridegroom, she associated herself with the kings of the earth and prostituted her virgin purity — both of doctrine and character — to suit the world's ideas; and in return she

received...a present dominion, in large measure by their support, direct and indirect...." *D25*

REV. 17:1-6: "And there came one of the seven angels which had the seven vials, and talked with me, saying unto me, Come hither; I will show unto thee the judgment of the great whore that sitteth upon many waters: With whom the kings of the earth have committed fornication, and the inhabitants of the earth have been made drunk with the wine of her fornication. So he carried me away in the spirit into the wilderness: and I saw a woman sit upon a scarlet coloured beast, full of names of blasphemy, having seven heads and ten horns. And the woman was arrayed in purple and scarlet colour, and decked with gold and precious stones and pearls, having a golden cup in her hand full of abominations and filthiness of her fornication: And upon her forehead was a name written, **MYSTERY, BABYLON THE GREAT, THE MOTHER OF HARLOTS AND ABOMINATIONS OF THE EARTH**. And I saw the woman drunken with the blood of the saints, and with the blood of the martyrs of Jesus: and when I saw her, I wondered with great admiration."

BABYLON — MOTHER AND DAUGHTERS

"Protestantism, as it exists today, is not the result of the Great Reformation, but of its decline; and it now partakes to a large

degree of the disposition and character of the Church of Rome...." *D28*

"Protestants of today are not only willing, but anxious, to make almost any compromise to secure the favor and assistance of the old 'mother' from whose tyranny and villainy their fathers fled three centuries ago." *D33*

"'The **ism** is still with us, but what has become of the **protest**?' Protestants seem to have forgotten....the very grounds of the original protest, and, as systems, they are fast drifting back toward the open arms of the 'Holy (?) Mother Church,' where they are freely invited and assured of a cordial reception." *D34*

"...the various reform movements, as predicted by the prophet (Dan. 11:32-35), were 'overcome by flatteries:' each one, after accomplishing a measure of cleansing, stopped short; and, so far as they found it practicable, they imitated the example of the Church of Rome in courting and receiving the favor of the world at the expense of their virtue, their fidelity to Christ, the true Head of the Church." *D31*

DAN. 11:32-35: "...the people that do know their God shall be strong,...And they that understand...shall instruct many: yet they shall fall by the sword, and by flame, by captivity, and by spoil....Now when they shall fall, they shall be holpen with a little help: but many shall cleave to them

with flatteries. And *some* of them of understanding shall fall...."

"**We would have healed Babylon**, but she is not healed: forsake her, and let us go every one into his own country [to the true Church, or to the world, as the case may be, according as each is thus proved to be of the wheat or the tares]:...Unhealed Babylon is now sentenced to destruction..." *C156*

"The parallel point of time in the present harvest, i.e., 1878, mystic Babylon, otherwise called Christendom, the antitype of Judaism, was cut off; and there went forth the message, 'Babylon the great is fallen, is fallen, and is become the habitation of devils, and the hold of every foul spirit, and a cage of every unclean and hateful bird.' Rev. 18:2" *C152*

"With the declaration that Babylon is fallen comes also the command to all of God's people still in her, to come out! 'And I heard another voice from heaven saying, Come out of her, **my people**, that ye be not partakers of her sins, and that ye receive not of her plagues.'...at one time Babylon was not fallen from divine favor; that for a time she retained a measure of favor,...It indicates that at some time a sudden and utter rejection is to come upon Babylon, when all favor will forever cease, and when judgments will follow — just such a rejection as we have shown was due in 1878." *C155, 156*

"Babylon, Christendom, has had a long probation of power, and has had many opportunities both to learn and to practice righteousness,...and by her authority the true embryo kingdom of heaven (composed only of the saints, whose names are written in heaven) has suffered violence. She has hated them and persecuted them...they were hated without a cause;...and she and her daughters, still blind, are ready still to persecute...all who are loyal to God..." *D51, 52*

"...the doom of Babylon, Christendom;...will be sudden, violent and complete is thus forcibly stated: 'And a mighty angel took up a stone like a great millstone, and cast it into the sea, saying, Thus, with violence, shall that great city Babylon be thrown down, and shall be found no more at all.' (Rev. 18:8,21; Jer. 51:63,64,42, 24-26)" *D37*

REV. 18:8: "Therefore shall her plagues come in one day, death, and mourning, and famine; and she shall be utterly burned with fire: for strong *is* the Lord God who judgeth her."

JER. 51:63,64,42,24-26: "And it shall be, when thou hast made an end of reading this book, *that* thou shalt bind a stone to it, and cast it into the midst of Euphrates: And thou shalt say, Thus shall Babylon sink, and shall not rise from the evil that I will bring upon her: and they shall be weary. Thus far *are* the words of Jeremiah. The sea is come

up upon Babylon: she is covered with the multitude of the waves thereof. And I will render unto Babylon and to all the inhabitants of Chaldea all their evil that they have done in Zion in your sight, saith the LORD. Behold, I *am* against thee, O destroying mountain, saith the LORD, which destroyest all the earth: and I will stretch out mine hand upon thee, and roll thee down from the rocks, and will make thee a burnt mountain. And they shall not take of thee a stone for a corner, nor a stone for foundations; but thou shalt be desolate for ever, saith the LORD."

"Some of the reformed churches were even admitted to share in authority and power with earthly rulers; as, for instance, the Church of England, and the Lutheran Church in Germany. And those who have not succeeded to that extent have...made many compromising overtures to the world for smaller favors. It is also true that while the world powers have advanced the worldly ambitions of the unfaithful church, the church has also freely admitted the world to her communion and fellowship; and so freely, that the baptized worldlings now form the large majority of her membership, filling nearly every important position, and thus dominating her.

"This was the disposition...which brought about the great falling away (2 Thes. 2:3,7-10) and...developed the Papal system." *D31*

2 THES. 2:3,7-10: "...There [shall] come a falling away....For the mystery of iniquity doth already work: only he who now letteth *will let*, until he be taken out of the way. And then shall that Wicked be revealed, whom the Lord shall consume with the spirit of his mouth, and shall destroy with the brightness of his coming: *Even him*, whose coming is after the working of Satan with all power and signs and lying wonders, And with all deceivableness of unrighteousness in them that perish; because they received not the love of the truth, that they might be saved."

See also Index: **Antichrist**.

"The various Protestant sects...are the true daughters of...the Papacy, to which the Revelator makes reference in applying to her the name 'Mother of harlots.' (Rev. 17:5)... Romanists and Protestants now freely own the relationship of mother and daughters...." *D28*

BABYLON: CITY AND EMPIRE — NOMINAL CHURCH AND CHRISTENDOM

"...the name Babylon, which, in its widest sense, as symbolized by the Babylonian empire, we promptly recognize to be Christendom...in its more restricted sense, as symbolized by the ancient city Babylon, we recognize to be the **nominal** Christian church." *D26*

BABYLON'S FALL

REV. 17:3,5,16: "...I saw a woman sitting upon a scarlet colored beast...having seven heads and ten horns....And upon her forehead...a name written, **MYSTERY, BABYLON THE GREAT, THE MOTHER OF THE HARLOTS AND OF THE ABOMINATIONS OF THE EARTH**....And the ten horns which thou sawest and the beast, these shall hate the harlot, and shall make her desolate....and shall eat her flesh, and burn her with fire." (Corrected translation — see *Tischendorf and Emphatic Diaglott*.)

"...prior to the year 800, Papacy was rising, supported by the Roman 'beast' (people)...." *B354*

"The final extinction of this counterfeit hierarchy is near the close of the 'Day of wrath'...." *B356*

"That her destruction will be sudden, violent, and complete is thus forcibly stated..." *D37*

REV. 18:21 ***Diag.***: "And one strong Angel took up a Stone like a great Millstone, and threw it into the sea, saying, 'Thus with Violence shall Babylon, the Great City, be thrown down, and shall by no means be found any more.'"

"First, however, she must attain more of her old-time prestige, which will be shared with a confederated association of her daughters. Together they will be lifted up, that together they may be violently thrown down." *D37*

See also Index: **Antichrist; Day of Vengeance**

BAPTISM

"Baptism means immersion." *Smith's Bible Dictionary*

"*Baptizo*, to dip in or under water." *Liddell and Scott's Greek Lexicon*

"Baptism, that is, to dip, or immersion." *Encyclopedia Americana*

Brenner, Roman Catholic: "Thirteen hundred years was baptism generally and regularly in immersion of the person under water." *Historical Exhibition of the Administration of Baptism pg 306*

Dean Stanley, Episcopalian: "For the first thirteen centuries the almost universal practice of Baptism was that of which we read in the New Testament, and which is the very meaning of the word 'baptize' — that those who were baptized were plunged, submerged, immersed into the water." *Christian Institutions pg 17*

"Baptism is a Greek word, and may be translated '**immersion**.'" "I would have those who are to be baptized to be altogether dipped into the water." *Luther's Works Vol.1 pg 336*

John Calvin, Presbyterian: "The very word '***baptizo'*** signifies to immerse. It is certain that immersion was the practice of the primitive church." *Institutes, Book IV, Chap. xv, 19*

John Wesley, Methodist: "'Buried with Him by baptism' — alluding to the ancient method of immersion."

BAPTIZED UNTO MOSES

1 COR. 10:1,2: "MOREOVER, brethren, I would not that ye should be ignorant, how that all our fathers were under the cloud, and all passed through the sea; And were all baptized unto Moses in the cloud and in the sea..."

"Every Jew under the Law Covenant was counted a member of the house of Moses... whoever would be faithful as a member of the typical...*house*...under Moses...would thus be in such a condition...that when...Christ, appeared, they would be ready to receive him as the antitypical Moses. As they were baptized into Moses...the acceptance of Christ as instead of Moses would imply that they were in Christ as members of his body..." *F432*

JOHN'S BAPTISM

"Hence, John did not baptize his believers into Christ, but merely unto repentance, bringing them back to a condition of harmony with Moses, etc., in which condition...Christ would to them take the place of Moses..." *F432*

BAPTISM OF GENTILES

"With the Gentiles...baptism meant...a complete transformation." *F434*

BAPTISM INTO CHRIST'S DEATH

ROM. 6:3-5: "Know ye not, that so many of us as were baptized into Jesus Christ were baptized into his death? Therefore we are buried with him by baptism into death: that like as Christ was raised up from the dead by the glory of the Father, even so we also should walk in newness of life. For if we have been planted together in the likeness of his death, we shall be also *in the likeness* of *his* resurrection..."

"...this baptism into death with the Lord, this overwhelming, or burial of ourselves, our flesh, which resulted in our incorporation by him as members of his body...took place at the moment when

we made the full surrender of our wills to him — consecrating our all, to follow and obey him, even unto death." *F436*

"The will represents the entire person, and all that he possesses. It controls our time, our talent, our influence. There is not a thing of value that we possess which does not properly come under the control of the will; and, hence, when we surrender our wills to the Lord,...we give him our all, and this burial of our human will into the will of Christ is our death as human beings." *F436*

COL. 3:3: "...ye are dead, and your life is hid with Christ in God."

"This...is our baptism into his death." *F436*

"...this burial or immersion of our wills into the will of Christ is followed by our begetting to newness of life, to a new nature. As our Lord...was raised from the dead to a newness of nature, so we who thus in consecration become '**dead with him**'...may instantly rise through faith to a realization of our kinship to the Lord as New Creatures." *F436*

ROM. 8:9: "...ye are not in the flesh, but in the Spirit, if so be that the Spirit of God dwell in you."

"To the world all this is a 'hidden mystery.' They do not...appreciate our figurative resurrection to newness of life, newness of hopes, newness of ambitions, newness of relationship to God through Christ." *F436*

LUKE 12:50: "...I have a baptism to be baptized with; and how am I straitened till it be accomplished!"

"Here our Lord shows that his baptism was not the water baptism, but the death baptism..." *F438*

"Coming to the fifth verse, (Romans 6:5), the Apostle still makes not the slightest reference to water baptism,...Is it not that we may share in the Lord's resurrection..." *F440*

ROM. 6:5: "For if we have been planted together in the likeness of his death, we shall be also in the likeness of *his* resurrection."

PHIL. 3:10,11: "That I may know him, and the power of **his resurrection**, and the fellowship of his sufferings, being made conformable unto his death: If by any means I might attain unto **the** resurrection of **the** dead."

"...when we understand this verse (Rom.6:5), in harmony with the two preceding it, to refer to baptism **into death**, to planting in...the likeness of **Christ's death**, then all is plain...

"Baptism into death is the real baptism...This is...shown by our Lord's words..." *F441*

MARK 10:38,39: "...can ye...be baptized with the baptism that I am baptized with?...with the baptism that I am baptized withal shall ye be baptized..."

BAPTISM OF THE SPIRIT

1 COR. 12:13: "...by one Spirit are we all baptized into one body..."

"The baptism into death is an individual matter...The baptism of the holy Spirit was one baptism for the entire Church. It took place...on...Pentecost, and has needed no repetition, because it has not ceased to abide with the Church...A repetition of some of the outward manifestations was given in the case of Cornelius; but merely as an evidence...that God makes no distinction...between Jews and Gentiles..." *F442*

"This anointing...corresponded to the anointing of Israel's high priests and kings...The oil was poured upon the head and ran down over the body. The antitype...upon the head was the impartation of the holy Spirit to our Lord...when the Father gave him the Spirit 'without measure.' (John 3:34) When...our glorified Head had...made propitiation for the sins of his people, he was permitted to 'shed forth'...the...holy Spirit immersing his Church; thus signifying their acceptance by him and by the Father, as members of...his body..." *F443*

BEGOTTEN AND BORN OF THE SPIRIT

Begotten: Beget — lit. to become the Father of; — **Born**: be truly born.

1 PET. 1:3: "...Blessed *be* the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, which according to his abundant mercy hath begotten us again unto a lively hope by the resurrection of Jesus Christ from the dead."

HEB. 5:5: "...Christ glorified not himself to be made an high priest; but he that said unto him, Thou art my Son, to day have I begotten thee."

"The Church, like its Head, experiences a beginning of the 'honor' when **begotten** of God to spiritual nature through the word of truth (James 1:18), and will be fully ushered into...when **born** of the Spirit, spiritual beings — in the image of the glorified Head...." *A194*

JAS. 1:18: "Of his own will begat he us with the word of truth, that we should be a kind of firstfruits of his creatures."

"There is...a likeness between such an earthly birth and the new birth necessary to a share in the kingdom. There must be a begetting, 'not of blood, nor of the will of the flesh, nor of the will of man, but of God.' (John 1:13) There must also be a period of gestation for this spiritual new creature that will precede its resurrection birth. Thus all who will share in the spiritual kingdom as spirit beings must first be begotten of the spirit and subsequently be developed of the spirit, growing in all of its fruits and graces, and ultimately be born of the spirit, born from the dead a spiritual being like the Lord and a sharer in his glory, honor and immortality. That which is begotten and born of the spirit is spirit, is not flesh — flesh and blood cannot inherit the kingdom of heaven." *R3486:1*

1 JOHN 3:9 ***Diag.***: "...No ONE who has been BEGOTTEN by God practices Sin."

1 JOHN 3:2: "...we shall be like him; for we shall see him as he is."

JESUS FIRST BEGOTTEN, THEN BORN OF THE SPIRIT

"From the moment of his consecration to sacrifice, at the time of his baptism, the human had been reckoned dead — and there the new nature was reckoned begun, which was completed at the resurrection, when he reached the perfect spirit plane...was raised a spiritual body." *A231*

THE CHURCH ALSO BEGOTTEN

ROM. 12:1: "...present your bodies a living sacrifice..."

"As many as...obey this call,...are no longer reckoned as men, but as having been begotten of God through the word of truth — no longer human, but thenceforth spiritual children." *A226*

SIGNIFICANCE OF GREEK WORD GENNAO

"The Greek word *gennao* and its derivatives, sometimes translated *begotten* and sometimes *born*, really contains both ideas, and should be translated by either...according to the sense of the passage....When the active agent with which *gennao* is associated is a male, it should be translated *begotten*; when a female, born. Thus in 1 John 2:29; 3:9; 4:7; 5:1,18, *gennao* should be *begotten*, because God (masculine) is the active agent. [So also in John 1:13; 3:3,4 (first time 'born' is used) and John 3:7.]..." *A278*

1 JOHN 2:29: "If ye know that he is righteous, ye know that every one that doeth righteousness is born of him."

1 JOHN 3:9: "Whosoever is born of God doth not commit sin; for his seed remaineth in him: and he cannot sin, because he is born of God."

1 JOHN 4:7: "Beloved, let us love one another: for love is of God; and every one that loveth is born of God, and knoweth God."

1 JOHN 5:1,18: "WHOSOEVER believeth that Jesus is the Christ is born of God: and every one that loveth him that begat loveth him also that is begotten of him. We know that whosoever is born of God sinneth not; but he that is begotten of God keepeth himself, and that wicked one toucheth him not."

JOHN 1:13: "Which were born, not of blood, nor of the will of the flesh, nor of the will of man, but of God."

JOHN 3:3,4,7: "Jesus answered and said unto him, Verily, verily, I say unto thee, Except a man be born again, he cannot see the kingdom of God. Nicodemus saith unto him, How can a man be born when he is old? can he enter the second time into his mother's womb, and be born? Marvel not that I said unto thee, Ye must be born again."

"...in conjunction with *ek*, signifying **from** or **out of**; it...should be translated **born** as indicated by the word *ek* — '**out of** water,' '**out of** flesh,' '**out of** spirit'..." *A278*

1 JOHN 3:9: "...No ONE who has been BEGOTTEN by God practices Sin..." *Diag.*

"He who loves sin will sin; he who does not love sin will not sin **willfully**. He might be entrapped through his weak flesh, or fall into a snare of the adversary, but this would be unintentional on his part." *R5491:6*

1 JOHN 4:7: "...everyone that loveth [compare 1 John 3:14] is born [begotten] of God, and knoweth God."

"The new creature is to mortify, put to death, the flesh. To whatever extent he is slack in this matter, to that extent it is sin." *R5492:1*

1 JOHN 5:1,18: "WHOSOEVER believeth that Jesus is the Christ is born [begotten] of God:....Whosoever is born [begotten] of God sinneth not..."

BORN OF THE SPIRIT IN THE RESURRECTION

JOHN 3:5,6: "...Except a man be born of water and *of* the Spirit, he cannot enter into the kingdom of God. That which is born of the flesh is flesh; and that which is born of the Spirit is spirit."

JOHN 3:8: "The wind bloweth where it listeth, and thou hearest the sound thereof, but canst not tell whence it cometh, and whither it goeth: so is every one that is born of the Spirit."

"As the wind blows here and there, you cannot see it, though it exerts an influence all about you. You know not whence it comes nor where it goes. This is...an illustration...of those born of the Spirit in the resurrection....They will all be as invisible as the wind, and men, not born of the Spirit, will neither know whence they came nor whither they go." *A280*

LUKE 24:31: "And their eyes were opened, and they knew him; and he vanished out of their sight."

LUKE 24:36,37: "And as they thus spake, Jesus himself stood in the midst of them, and saith unto them, Peace *be* unto you. But they were terrified and affrighted..."

JOHN 20:19,26: "Then the same day at evening,...when the doors were shut where the disciples were assembled for fear of the Jews, came Jesus and stood in the midst, and saith unto them, Peace *be* unto you....And after eight days again his disciples were within, and Thomas with them: *then* came Jesus, the doors being shut, and stood in the midst, and said, Peace *be* unto you."

THE FAITHFUL CHURCH LIKEWISE BORN OF THE SPIRIT IN THE RESURRECTION

"Those of this overcoming class who 'sleep' will be raised spirit beings...and those of the same class who are alive and remain unto the coming [presence] of the Lord will be 'changed' to the same plane of spirit being, and will not 'sleep' for a moment, though the 'change' will necessitate the dissolution of the earthen vessel. No longer weak, earthly, mortal, corruptible beings, these will then be fully born of the Spirit — heavenly, spiritual, incorruptible, immortal beings." *A234*

1 COR. 15:44,50-52: "It is sown a natural body; it is raised a spiritual body....flesh and blood cannot inherit the kingdom of God; neither doth corruption inherit incorruption. Behold, I show you a mystery; We shall not all sleep, but we shall all be changed, In a moment, in the twinkling of an eye, at the last trump: for the trumpet shall sound, and the dead shall be raised incorruptible, and we shall be changed."

OTHER EXAMPLES OF THE USE OF THE WORD GENNAO

BARE

LUKE 23:29: "For, behold, the days are coming, in the which they shall say, Blessed *are* the barren, and the wombs that never bare, and the paps which never gave suck."

BEAR

LUKE 1:13: "But the angel said unto him, Fear not, Zacharias: for thy prayer is heard; and thy wife Elisabeth shall bear thee a son and thou shalt call his name John."

BEGOTTEN

ACTS 13:33: "God hath fulfilled the same unto us their children, in that he hath raised up Jesus again; as it is also written in the second psalm, Thou art my Son, this day have I begotten thee."

1 COR. 4:15: "For though ye have ten thousand instructors in Christ, yet *have* ye not many fathers: for in Christ Jesus I have begotten you through the gospel."

PHILE. 10: "I beseech thee for my son Onesimus, whom I have begotten in my bonds."

HEB. 1:5; 5:5: "For unto which of the angels said he at any time, Thou art my Son, this day have I begotten thee? And again, I will be to him a Father, and he shall be to me a Son? So also Christ glorified not himself to be made an high priest; but he that said unto him, Thou art my Son, to day have I begotten thee."

BORN

MATT. 1:16: "And Jacob begat Joseph the husband of Mary, of whom was born Jesus, who is called Christ."

MATT. 2:1,4: "NOW when Jesus was born in Bethlehem of Judaea in the days of Herod the king, behold, there came wise men from the east to Jerusalem,...And when he had gathered all the chief priests and scribes of the people together, he demanded of them where Christ should be born."

MATT. 19:12: "For there are come eunuchs, which were so born from *their* mother's womb: and there are some

eunuchs, which were made eunuchs of men: and there be eunuchs, which have made themselves eunuchs for the kingdom of heaven's sake. He that is able to receive *it*, let him receive *it*."

MATT. 26:24: "The Son of man goeth as it is written of him: but woe unto that man by whom the Son of man is betrayed! it had been good for that man if he had not been born."

MARK 14:21: "The Son of man indeed goeth, as it is written of him: but woe to that man by whom the Son of man is betrayed! good were it for that man if he had never been born."

LUKE 1:35; 2:11; 7:28: "And the angel answered and said unto her, The Holy Spirit shall come upon thee, and the power of the Highest shall overshadow thee: therefore also that holy thing which shall be born of thee shall be called the Son of God....For unto you is born this day in the city of David a Saviour, which is Christ the Lord....For I say unto you, Among those that are born of women there is not a greater prophet than John the Baptist: but he that is least in the kingdom of God is greater than he."

JOHN 3:4,5; 8:41; 9:2,19,20,32,34; 16:21; 18:37: "Nicodemus saith unto him, How can a man be born when he is old? can he enter the second time into his mother's womb and be born? Jesus answered, Verily, verily, I say unto thee, Except a man be born of water and *of* the Spirit,...he cannot enter into the kingdom of God. Ye do the deeds of your father. Then said they to him, We be not born of fornication; we have one Father, *even* God....And his disciples asked him, saying Master, who did sin, this man, or his parents, that he was born blind? And they asked them, saying, Is this your son, who ye say was born blind?...how then doth he now see? His parents answered them and said, we know that this is our son, and that he was born blind:...Since the world began was it not heard that any man opened the eyes of one that was born blind. They answered and said unto him, Thou wast altogether born in sins, and dost thou teach us? and they cast him out....A woman when she is in travail hath sorrow, because her hour is come: but as soon as she is delivered of the child, she remembereth no more the anguish, for joy that a man is born into the world....Pilate therefore said unto him, Art thou a king then? Jesus answered, Thou sayest that I am a king. To this end was I born, and for this cause came I into the world, that I should bear witness unto the truth. Every one that is of the truth heareth my voice."

ACTS 2:8; 7:20; 22:3,28: "And how hear we every man in our own tongue, wherein we were born?...In which time Moses was born, and was exceeding fair, and nourished up in his father's house three months:...I am verily a man *which am* a Jew, born in Tarsus, *a city* in Cilicia, yet

brought up in this city at the feet of Gamaliel, *and* taught according to the perfect manner of the law of the fathers, and was zealous toward God, as ye all are this day.... And the chief captain answered, With a great sum obtained I this freedom. And Paul said, But I was *free* born."

ROM. 9:11: "(For *the children* being not yet born, neither having done any good or evil, that the purpose of God according to election might stand, not of works, but of him that calleth;)"

GAL. 4:23,29: "But he *who was* of the bondwoman was born after the flesh; but he of the freewoman *was* by promise. But as then he that was born after the flesh persecuted him *that was born* after the Spirit, even so *it is* now."

HEB. 11:23: "By faith Moses, when he was born, was hid three months of his parents, because they saw *he was* a proper child; and they were not afraid of the king's commandment."

FROM THE SAME ROOT GENNETOS

LUKE 7:28: "For I say unto you, Among those that are born of women there is not a greater prophet than John the Baptist: but he that is least in the kingdom of God is greater than he."

Conversation between our Lord and Nicodemus.

JOHN 3:1-10: "There was a man of the Pharisees, named Nicodemus, a ruler of the Jews: The same came to Jesus by night, and said unto him, Rabbi, we know that thou art a teacher come from God: for no man can do these miracles that thou doest, except God be with him. Jesus answered and said unto him, Verily, verily, I say unto thee, Except a man be born again, he cannot see the kingdom of God. Nicodemus saith unto him, How can a man be born when he is old? can he enter the second time into his mother's womb, and be born?

"Jesus answered, Verily, verily, I say unto thee, Except a man be born of water and *of* the Spirit, he cannot enter into the kingdom of God. That which is born of the flesh is flesh; and that which is born of the Spirit is spirit. Marvel not that I said unto thee, Ye must be born again. The wind bloweth where it listeth, and thou hearest the sound thereof, but canst not tell whence it cometh and whither it goeth: so is every one that is born of the Spirit. Nicodemus answered and said unto him, How can these things be? Jesus answered and said unto him, Art thou a master of Israel, and knowest not these things?"

"Our Lord promptly put the matter in a very plain light, assuring his visitor that no one could have the kingdom unless born again. A little later in the conversation he added that no one could enter into the kingdom except by

being born again. The word 'born' is properly enough used in both these instances, and thus we learn that the Lord had reference to the future — reference to the resurrection birth described by the Apostle in 1 Cor. 15:42-44 — born from the dead to glory, honor and immortality, and a share in the kingdom, assured to those who have part in the first resurrection." *R3485:6 & R3486:1*

1 COR. 15:42-44: "So also *is* the resurrection of the dead. It is sown in corruption; it is raised in incorruption: It is sown in dishonour; it is raised in glory: it is sown in weakness; it is raised in power: It is sown a natural body; it is raised a spiritual body. There is a natural body, and there is a spiritual body."

1 JOHN 2:29: "...every one that doeth righteousness is born [begotten] of him."

1 JOHN 3:9: "Whosoever is born [begotten] of God doth not commit sin;...and he cannot sin, because he is born [begotten] of God."

THE BIBLE

"THE Bible is the torch of civilization and liberty. Its influence for good in society has been recognized by the greatest statesmen, even though they for the most part have looked at it through...conflicting creeds, which...grievously misrepresent its teachings....

"...the light of nature leads us to expect a fuller revelation of God than...nature supplies....The Bible claims to be such...,and it does come to us with...evidence as to the probable correctness of its claims, and gives...hope that closer investigation will disclose more...positive evidence that it is indeed the Word of God." *A37*

The Bible is the record of God's sacred writings handed down to mankind through divinely inspired writers of old. The most common version in use, the King James Version, was revised and published by a commission of scholars working under the authority of parliament during the reign of James l (1604-1611), i.e., God's law given to man in scripture.

IT'S ANTIQUITY AND PRESERVATION

"The Bible is the oldest book in existence; it has outlived the storms of thirty centuries. Men have...burned it, made it a crime punishable with death, to have it in possession, and the most bitter and relentless persecutions have been waged against those who had faith in it,...Today, while...volumes written to discredit it,...are... forgotten, the Bible has found its way in every nation and language...." *A38*

IT'S INFLUENCE AND BENEFITS

"The moral influence of the Bible is uniformly good. Those who become careful students of its pages are...lifted to a purer life....all other books combined have failed to bring the joy, peace and blessing to the groaning creation that the Bible has brought....The Bible...is a book to be studied with care and thought; for God's thoughts are higher than our thoughts, and his ways than our ways." *A38*

IT'S THEME

"This book throughout constantly points...to,... Jesus of Nazareth, who it claims, was the Son of God....His name, and office, and work, are made prominent. That...Jesus...lived,...about the time indicated by...the Bible, is a fact of history,...fully corroborated. That this Jesus was crucified because...offensive to the Jews and their priesthood is...established by history....The writers of the New Testament (except Paul and Luke) were the personal acquaintances and disciples of Jesus...." *A39*

MOTIVE OF ITS WRITERS

"What motives could have inspired these men to espouse the cause of this person? He was condemned to death...by the Jews, the most religious among them assenting to and demanding his death,...in espousing his cause, and promulgating his doctrines, these men braved contempt, deprivation and bitter persecution,...and in some cases even

suffered martyrdom....If we suppose that these writers invented their narratives,...how absurd...to suppose that sane men, after claiming that he was the Son of God,...begotten in a supernatural way,...had healed lepers, restored sight to those born blind, caused the deaf to hear, and even raised the dead...would wind up the

story...by stating that a little band of his enemies executed him as a felon, while...friends and disciples,... forsook him...?" *A39*

"Could they reasonably have hope...for...any earthly advantage?...,if such had been the object of those who preached Jesus, would they not speedily have given it up when they found that it brought disgrace, persecution, imprisonment, stripes, and even death?...men who sacrificed home, reputation, honor and life; who lived not for present gratification; but whose central aim was to elevate their fellow-men, and who inculcated morals of the highest type, were not only possessed of a motive, but further that their motive must have been pure and their object grandly sublime...the testimony of such men..., is worthy of ten times the weight...of ordinary writers...: they were men of...reasonable mind, and furnished...a reason for their faith and hope..." *A40*

"And what we have here noticed is likewise applicable to the various writers of the Old Testament. They were, in the main, men notable for their fidelity to the Lord; and this history as impartially records and reproves their weaknesses and shortcomings as it commends their virtues and faithfulness....There is a straightforwardness about the Bible that stamps it as truth. Knaves, desirous of representing a man as great, and especially if desirous of presenting some of his writings as inspired of God, would undoubtedly paint such a one's character blameless....that such a course has not been pursued...is reasonable evidence that it was not...gotten up to deceive." *A41*

"...it did not require a special revelation...to tell the truth with reference to matters with which they were...fully acquainted. Yet,...the fact that these histories...have a bearing...would be a sufficient ground to make the inference a reasonable one, that God would...arrange, that the honest writer...should be brought in contact with the needful facts....Good men will not utter falsehoods. A pure fountain will not give forth bitter waters. And the united testimony of these writings silences any suspicion that their authors would say or do evil, that good might follow." *A41*

THE LAWS GIVEN THROUGH MOSES

"The Decalogue is a brief synopsis of the whole law. Those Ten Commandments enjoin a code of worship and morals that must strike every student as remarkable;...the substance of those commandments was grandly epitomized...,in the words:

DEUT. 6:5: "Thou shalt love the LORD thy God with all thine heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy might."

LEV. 19:18: "...thou shalt love thy neighbor as thyself..."

MOSES' INTEGRITY AND HUMILITY

"...circumstances had...made the meek Moses an autocrat in...authority, though from...meekness ...he was in fact the overworked servant of the people....Moses...says..." *A46*

DEUT. 1:15: "So I took the chief of your tribes, wise men, and known, and made them heads over you...."

NUM. 11:27-29: "...a young man...told Moses,...Edad and Medad do prophesy in the camp. And Joshua...said, My lord Moses, forbid them. And Moses said...Enviest thou for my sake? would...that all the LORD'S people were prophets..."

"...this distinguished lawgiver, so far from seeking to perpetuate...his own power... introduced to the people a form of government calculated to cultivate the spirit of liberty. any...man...attempting to perpetuate a fraud...,would have worked for greater centralization of power in himself and his family,...an easy task from the religious authority...in that tribe...." *A47*

JUSTICE OF THE MOSAIC LAW

"...the laws of...,this twentieth century, do not more carefully provide that rich and poor shall stand on a common level...before the civil law....for the protection...from the dangers incident to some becoming very poor and others excessively wealthy....Moses' law provided for a restitution every fiftieth year...." *A49*

LEV. 25:10: "And ye shall hallow the fiftieth year, and proclaim liberty throughout *all* the land unto all the inhabitants thereof:...and ye shall return every man unto his possession, and...unto his family."

OTHER WELFARE LAWS

EXOD. 22:25: "If thou lend money to *any of* my people *that is* poor by thee, thou shalt not be to him as an usurer, neither shalt thou lay upon him usury."

EXOD. 12:49: "One law shall be to him that is homeborn, and unto the stranger that sojourneth among you."

EXOD. 23:4,5: "If thou meet thine enemy's ox or his ass going astray, thou shalt surely bring it back to him again. If thou see the ass of him that hateth thee lying under his burden, and *wouldest cease to leave* thy business *for him; thou shalt surely leave* it to join *with him.* [margin assist]"

EXOD. 22:21,22: "Thou shalt neither vex a stranger, nor oppress him:...Ye shall not afflict any widow, or fatherless child."

LEV. 19:13,14,32,34: "Thou shalt not defraud thy neighbour, neither rob *him*: the wages of him that is hired shall not abide with thee all night....Thou shalt not curse the deaf, nor put a stumblingblock before the blind,...Thou shall rise up before the hoary head; and honor the face of the old man,...the stranger that dwelleth with you shall be unto you as one born among you, and thou shalt love him as thyself..."

LEV. 23:22: "...thou shalt not make clean riddance of the corners of thy field when thou reapest, neither shalt thou gather any gleaning of thy harvest: thou shalt leave them unto the poor, and to the stranger..."

DEUT. 22:10: "Thou shalt not plow with an ox and an ass together."

DEUT. 24:14,15: "Thou shalt not oppress an hired servant *that is* poor,...of thy brethren, or of thy strangers: At his day thou shalt give him his hire, neither shall the sun go down upon it..."

DEUT. 25:4: "Thou shalt not muzzle the ox when he treadeth out *the corn*."

THE TITHE A JUST DEBT

"...the tribe of Levites was supported by the annual tenth, or tithe....It was, in fact, founded upon the strictest equity...the Levites certainly had as much right to a share of the land as the other tribes; yet..., they got none of it, except certain cities or villages for residence,...among the various tribes, whom they were to serve.... the tithe..., was not enforced as a tax..." *A51*

ADMONITION — NOT TAX DECREE

DEUT. 14:27: "And the Levite...thou shalt not forsake him; for he hath no...inheritance with thee" [in the land].

"Is it, reasonable to suppose that this...would have been thus arranged by selfish and ambitious priests?...to disinherit themselves and to make them dependent...?" *A52*

THE PROPHETS

"The burden of their messages...was generally reproof for sin, coupled with warnings of coming punishments, intertwined with which we find occasional promises of future blessings, after they should be cleansed....Their experiences, for the most part, were far from enviable: they were generally reviled, many of them being imprisoned and put to violent deaths. In some instances it was years after their death before their true character as God's prophets was recognized..." *A54*

1 KINGS 18:4,10,17,18; 19:10: "For it was *so*, when Jezebel cut off the prophets of the LORD, that Obadiah took an

hundred prophets, and hid them by fifty in a cave, and fed them with bread and water.)...*As* the LORD thy God liveth, there is no nation or kingdom, whither my lord hath not sent to seek thee; and when they said, *He is* not *there*; he took an oath of the kingdom and nation, that they found thee not....And it came to pass, when Ahab saw Elijah, that Ahab said unto him, Art thou he that troubleth Israel? And he answered. I have not troubled Israel; but thou, and thy father's house, in that ye have forsaken the commandments of the LORD, and thou has followed Baalim....And he said, I have been very jealous for the LORD God of hosts: for the children of Israel have forsaken thy covenant, thrown down thine altars, and slain thy prophets with the sword; and I, even I only, am left; and they seek my life, to take it away."

JER. 38:6: "Then took they Jeremiah, and cast him into the dungeon of Malchiah the son of Hammelech, that was in the court of the prison: and they let down Jeremiah with cords. And in the dungeon there was no water, but mire: so Jeremiah sunk in the mire."

HEB. 11:32-35: "And what shall I more say? for the time would fail me to tell of Gedeon, and of Barak, and of Samson, and of Jephthae; of David also Samuel, and of the prophets: Who through faith subdued kingdoms, wrought righteousness, obtained promises, stopped the mouths of lions, Quenched the violence of fire, escaped the edge of the sword, out of weakness were made strong, waxed valiant in fight, turned to flight the armies of the aliens. Women received their dead raised to life again: and others were tortured, not accepting deliverance; that they might obtain a better resurrection..."

HEB. 11:36-38: "...others were tortured, not accepting deliverance,....And others had trial of...mockings and scourgings, yea, moreover of bonds and imprisonment: They were stoned, they were sawn asunder, were tempted, were slain with the sword: they wandered about in sheepskins and goatskins; being destitute, afflicted, tormented; Of whom the world was not worthy:) they wandered...in mountains, and in dens and caves of the earth."

"...these prophets were mainly laymen, drawing no support from the tithes...reprovers of kings and judges,...also of priests (...not the office, but the personal sins of the men who filled it)..." A55

UNITY OF THEME

"One plan, spirit, aim, and purpose pervade the entire book. Its opening pages record the creation and fall of man; its closing pages tell of man's recovery from that fall; and its intervening pages show the successive steps of the plan of God for the accomplishment of this purpose. The harmony, yet contrast, of the first three and the last three chapters of the Bible is striking. The one describes the first creation,

the other the...restored creation;...the one shows Satan and evil entering the world to deceive and destroy, the other shows his work undone, the destroyed ones restored, evil extinguished and Satan destroyed; the one shows the dominion lost by Adam, the other shows it restored and forever established by Christ, and God's will done in earth as in heaven; the one shows sin the producing cause of degradation, shame and death, the other shows the reward of righteousness to be glory, honor, and life." A56

SUMMARY OF THE BIBLE'S THEME

"...the Bible is not merely a collection of moral precepts, wise maxims and words of comfort.... It is...a reasonable, philosophical and harmonious statement of the causes of present evil in the world, its only remedy and the final results as seen by divine wisdom, which saw the end...from before its beginning, marking...the pathway of God's people, and upholding and strengthening them with exceeding great and precious promises to be realized in due time." A57

"The teaching of Genesis, that man was tried in...original perfection in one representative, that he failed, and that the present imperfection, sickness and death are the results, but that God has not forsaken him, and will ultimately recover him through a Redeemer, born of a woman (Gen.3:15), is kept up and elaborated all the way through. The necessity for the death of a redeemer...for sins,...is pointed out in the clothing of skins for Adam and Eve; in...Abel's offering; in Isaac on the altar; in...the various sacrifices....The prophets,...mention the laying of the sins upon a person...led...

ISA. 53:7: "'...as a lamb to the slaughter'...

ISA. 53:5: "'...the chastisement of our peace was upon him; and with his stripes we are healed.'...

"They pictured him as...

ISA.53:3: "'...despised and rejected of men; a man of sorrows, and acquainted with grief.'...

"And declared that...

ISA. 53:6: "'...the LORD hat laid on him the iniquity of us all.'...

"They told where this deliverer would be born..., and when he should die,...that it would be 'not for himself'...

DAN. 9:26: "'And after threescore and two weeks shall Messiah be cut off, but not for himself.'...

MICAH 5:2: "'But thou, Bethlehem...out of thee shall he come...that is to be ruler in Israel; whose goings forth have been from of old.'...

"They mention...that he would be righteous, 'and free from deceit, violence,' or any just cause of death.

ISA. 53:9,11: "'...he had done no violence, neither was any deceit in his mouth....: by his knowledge shall my righteous servant justify many.'...

"That he would be betrayed for...

ZECH. 11:12: "'...thirty pieces of silver.'...

"...that he would be numbered among transgressors in his death....

ISA. 53:12: "'...he hath poured out his soul unto death: and he was

numbered with the transgressors.'...

"...that not a bone of him should be broken...

PSA.34:20: "'He keepeth all his bones: not one of them is broken.'

JOHN 19:36: "'For these things were done, that the scripture should be fulfilled, A bone of him shall not be broken.'...

"...and that though he should die and be buried, his flesh would not corrupt, neither would he remain in the grave." A57

"The New Testament writers,...record the fulfilment of all these predictions in Jesus of Nazareth, and...show that, such a **ransom price** as he gave was needful..., before the sins of the world could be blotted out. (Isa. 1:18) They trace the entire plan in a most logical...manner, appealing,...to...enlightened reason alone...." A58

ISA. 1:18: "Come now, and let us reason together, saith the LORD: though your sins be as scarlet, they shall be as white as snow; though they be red like crimson, they shall be as wool."

REDEMPTION FOR ALL

"Moses,...pointed not alone to a sacrifice, but also to a blotting out of sins and a blessing of the people under this great deliverer,...not only Israel, but through Israel 'all the families of the earth.'" A58

DEUT. 18:15: "The LORD thy God will raise up unto thee a Prophet from the midst of thee, of thy brethren, like unto me; unto him ye shall hearken."

GEN. 12:3: "...in thee ['and in thy seed'] shall all families of the earth be blessed."

"...the prophets continue the same strain declaring that Messiah shall be also..."

ISA. 49:6: "...for a light to the Gentiles..."

JER. 16:19: "...the Gentiles shall come unto thee from ends of the earth..." A58

"The New Testament written...saw also that, before the blessing of either Israel or the world, a selection would be made of a 'little flock' from both Jews and Gentiles, who...would be found worthy to be made joint-heirs of the glory and honor of the Great Deliverer, and sharers...of the honor of blessing Israel and all the nations...." A59

ROM. 8:17: "And if children, then heirs; heirs of God, and joint-heirs with Christ; if so be that we suffer with him, that we may be also glorified together."

"These writers point out the harmony of this view with what is written in the Law and the Prophets; and the grandeur and breadth of the plan...more than meets the most exalted conception of..." A59

LUKE 2:10: "...good tidings of great joy, which shall be to all people."

FUTURE LIFE DEPENDENT UPON RESURRECTION

"The Bible...holds out a doctrine found nowhere else... — that a future life...will come through a **resurrection**..." A60

1 COR. 15:12,17,18: "Now if Christ be preached that he rose from the dead, how say some among you that there is no resurrection of the dead? And if Christ be not raised, your faith is vain; ye are yet in your sins. Then they also which are fallen asleep in Christ are perished."

"Like a watch, whose many wheels might at first seem superfluous, but whose slowest moving wheels are essential, so the Bible, composed of many parts, and prepared by many pens, is one complete and harmonious whole." A60

"When Columbus discovered the Orinoco river, someone said he had found an island. He replied: 'No such river as that flows from an island. That mighty torrent must drain the waters of a continent.' So the depth and power and wisdom and scope of the Bible's testimony convince us that not man, but the Almighty God, is the author of its plans and revelations...." A63

"Such wisdom,...such purity of motive, was not the...device of crafty men,...such righteous and benevolent sentiments and laws must be of God....a scheme so grand and comprehensive,... must be the plan of God...." A62

"RIGHTLY DIVIDING THE WORD OF TRUTH"

2 TIM. 2:15: "Study [**be diligent**, Diag.] to show thyself approved unto God, a workman that needeth not to be ashamed, rightly dividing [**cutting straight**, Diag. interlineary] the word of truth."

TOPICALLY

"The study on the subject brings together the teachings of the Bible from every part and sets these in orderly array...." R5919:1

DISPENSATIONALLY

"A statement of the Word which belongs to one epoch, or dispensation should not be applied to another. For instance, it would be an untruth to say of the present time that the knowledge of the Lord fills the whole earth or that there is no need to say to your neighbor, Know the Lord...." A74

MAL. 3:15: "And now we call the proud happy; yea, they that work wickedness are set up; yea, they that tempt God are even delivered."

MAL. 3:18: "Then shall ye return, and discern between the righteous and the wicked, between him that serveth God and him that serveth him not."

See also Index: **Ages and Dispensations**.

CLASSES INVOLVED

"The failure to recognize that God...has a plan of salvation for the whole world, and a somewhat different plan of special salvation for the church of this Gospel age, has led to a confusion of mind amongst commentators, who do not discern the difference between the elect class and its blessings, and the much larger non-elect class and the blessings to come to it in due time through the very elect." F67

LITERAL VS. FIGURATIVE LANGUAGE

"The symbolic must always bend in interpretation to the plainer, more literal statements, as soon as their symbolic character is recognized. Whenever a literal interpretation would do violence to reason, and also place the passage in direct antagonism to **plain statements** of Scripture, such passage should be considered figurative, and its interpretation as a symbol should be sought in harmony with obviously plain and literal passages, and with the general character and object of the revealed plan...." B144

PSA. 46:6,9,10: "...The earth melted....He maketh wars to cease unto the end of the earth....I will be exalted in the earth."

GRADUAL FULFILLMENTS

"We must not...expect all prophecies to mark one particular

eventful moment of our Lord's arrival and to call the attention of all men to the fact of his presence. The first advent of Messiah was not marked by any sudden or surprising demonstration, out of the usual order of things, but it was manifested and proven by the gradual fulfilment of prophecy showing to thoughtful observers that the events

which should be expected were being accomplished on time." B106

2 PET. 3:10,13: "But the day of the Lord will come as a thief...; in the which the heavens shall pass away...Nevertheless we, according to his promise look for new heavens...."

CONTEXT

"A reckless application of Scripture without due consideration of the context has ever been a fruitful source of error....A single expression of any writer or speaker, when isolated from his line of thought as argument, might be construed to prove the very opposite of what he intended." R614:1

SPURIOUS PASSAGES

"We must remember that many passages found in the modern copies are **additions** which do not properly belong to the Bible....At the time of the...'King James' Bible,' the translation had the advantage of some eight Greek Mss. and none of these were of earlier date than the tenth century. Who will say how many errors large and small crept into the text during that thousand years....Between 600 and 700 Greek Mss. are now known, some of which are quite ancient...." R71:3

TRANSLATIONS

"God has provided some very valuable aids to the study of his Word in the original languages for persons of even ordinary common-school education. These are found in Young's Greek, Hebrew, and English Concordance and other similar works...." R1241:3

See also Strong's Exhaustive Concordance, Thayer's, and Arnot and Gingrich's Lexicons, etc.

CHRISTIAN SCIENCE

"This so-called 'Christian Science' is of itself unworthy of so much attention as we have given it, but the fact that some of our readers have been deluded by it, is our justification." R895:4

NOTE: In that Christian Science is not a scriptural subject, but rather an unscriptural one, one can approach this topic only by considering scriptures which nullify Christian Science doctrines or those which demonstrate truths inconsistent with Christian Science philosophy.

"In examining Mrs. Eddy's teachings, we do not follow the order of her books, but take up the essential truths she perverts, as seems best." *R3185:5*

FOUNDER:

Mary Baker Eddy (1821-1910)

Ill after birth of her first child, she sought relief constantly. She was "restored" to health temporarily by Dr. Phineas P. Quimby, a magnetic healer. She was impressed by his methods. In 1866 she "discovered" Christian Science by being healed instantly from effects of a bad fall. She attributed recovery to "Spiritual illumination" of Matthew 9:2. She founded the Massachusetts Metaphysical College which trained healers. Later she closed the college and reorganized in Boston centralizing control of the "Mother Church, The First Church of Christ, Scientist," in her own hands. — From information in *The New Funk & Wagnalls Encyclopedia (1952)*

DEFINITION:

CHRISTIAN SCIENCE — "A religion and system of healing founded by Mary Baker Eddy in 1866, based on an interpretation of the scriptures as upholding the idea that disease, sin, etc., are caused by mental error and may be eliminated by spiritual treatment without medical aid." — *Webster's New World Dictionary of the American Language, College Edition.*

FOUNDER A WOMAN

1 TIM. 2:11,12: "Let the woman learn in silence with all subjection. But I suffer not a woman to teach, nor to usurp authority over the man, but to be in silence."

"The type, the figure, the lesson, must be continued, and hence the distinctions (of sex) so rigidly maintained in the special and more important parts of the service of the Church of Christ....the Adversary has always sought to control man religiously through...the esteem men bear toward women...the Virgin Mary... amongst Catholics,...with the...Egyptians, Isis was the goddess,...in

the...times of...Paul, Diana was goddess of the Ephesians. And does not Satan still seek to deal with and through woman,...? Are not women his chief mediums in Spiritism and his chief apostles and prophets in Theosophy and Christian Science?" *T103*

["The names of persons which have only one form for the Masculine and Feminine are of common gender....

"...here belong...the Masculine names of persons in the plural, which includes the Feminine, e.g. *hoi gonees*, the parents; *hoi poides*,...the children (sons and daughters)." *Kuehner's Greek Grammar Sec. 40:4, Rem. 4,5*

The word "male" does not appear in the Greek in Eph. 4:11,12, and use of the plural masculine article might also indicate common

gender as in the foregoing examples. Similarly the masculine article is used before "brethren" in Heb. 2:12, though it includes the sisters. For this reason would suggest omitting Eph. 4:11,12; *See T102* as proof in case it might be called in question by a Greek.]

EPH. 4:11,12: "And he gave some, apostles; and some, prophets; and some, evangelists; and some, pastors and teachers; For the perfecting of the saints, for the work of the ministry, for the edifying of the body of Christ..."

HEB. 2:12: "Saying, I will declare thy name unto my brethren, in the midst of the church will I sing praise unto thee."

PAUL WARNED OF FALSE SCIENCE

1 TIM. 6:20,21: "O Timothy, keep that which is committed to thy trust, avoiding profane *and* vain babblings, and oppositions of science falsely so called: Which some professing have erred concerning the faith."

"In our day Christian Science is false to both the word Christian and the word Science because of its *private meaning put upon words* in common use." *R3185:5*

"Science, as we have to do with it in connection with Christianity, deals with matters of fact, — God, the soul, sin, redemption, all the great essential things found in the Bible and in our religion, are matters of fact. The science that deals with them, in order to be true science, must, therefore, conform to the principles or processes of the inductive method. As it departs from these, or fails to come up to them, it ceases to be science." *R3420:3*

PHYSICAL WELL-BEING NOT AIM OF CHRISTIANS

PHIL. 3:18,19: "For many walk of whom I have told you often, and now tell you even weeping, *that they are*...enemies of the cross of Christ; Whose end *is*

destruction, whose God *is their* belly, and *whose* glory *is* in their shame, who mind earthly things."

"Of those who make the earthly interests the chief concern of life, physical health and prosperity the chief aim, the Apostle says, 'Whose god is their belly'..." *S329, "The Science of Health"*

2 COR. 12:7-10: "...there was given to me a thorn in the flesh,...For this thing I besought the Lord thrice, that it might depart from me. And he said unto me, My grace is sufficient for thee: for my strength is made perfect in weakness. Most gladly therefore will I rather glory in my infirmities, that the power of Christ may rest upon me. Therefore I take pleasure in infirmities,...in distresses for Christ' sake: for when I am weak, then am I strong."

"Paul's paradox signifies that when he realized his own weakness, then through this realization he was led to rely upon the Lord and the power of his might, and thus was stronger than he could otherwise have been, strong in the Lord and not in his own strength. This principle is still applicable to us." *R3667:5*

"The difficulties of this way (narrow way) are to act as a separating principle to sanctify...a 'peculiar people' to be 'heirs of God and joint-heirs with Jesus Christ.'" *A214*

1 COR. 10:13: "There hath no temptation taken you but such as is common to man: but God *is* faithful, who will not suffer you to be tempted above that ye are able..."

"Permitting us to stumble may be his means at times for teaching us valuable lessons respecting our own weaknesses...,that thereby we may become strong in the Lord and...the power of His might." *F161*

"1 COR. 12:30: '...Have all the gifts of healing?'...has not this gift been in possession of the Church ever since Pentecost? No;...We do not think that after a careful scrutiny of the subject, anyone today would claim to possess this ***gift***. The gifts described by Paul were given only to the early church, as a means for its introduction to the attention of both Jews and Gentiles....Today we possess the spirit, but certainly not all of those miraculous gifts....The power of conferring those gifts was vested in the apostles, and in them only; none others in their day or since have been able to confer those gifts — which Paul describes; hence they did 'vanish away' when the apostles died." *R1998:1,2,3*

GIFTS CONFERRED BY APOSTLES

ROM. 1:11: "For I long to see you, that I may impart unto you some spiritual gift, to the end that ye may be established."

ACTS 8:14-18: "Now when the apostles which were at Jerusalem heard that Samaria had received the word of God, they sent unto them Peter and John: Who, when they were come down, prayed for them, that they might receive the Holy Spirit:...Then laid they *their* hands on them, and they received the Holy Spirit.... Simon saw that through laying on of the apostles' hands the Holy Spirit was given..."

1 TIM. 4:14: "Neglect not the gift that....was given...with the laying on of the hands of the presbytery."

MIRACLES CEASED

1 COR. 13:8: "Charity never faileth: but whether *there be* prophecies, they shall fail; whether *there be* tongues, they shall cease: whether *there be* knowledge, it shall vanish away."

GOOD WORKS — A DECEPTION

2 COR. 11:14,15: "...Satan himself is transformed into an angel of light. Therefore *it is* no great thing if his ministers also be transformed as the ministers of righteousness..."

"Christian Science, pretending a reverence for the divine Word, and taking the name of Christ in vain, without having faith in him as the Redeemer, is used as a decoy for Christians who are getting awake in the present time — to satisfy their cravings for something new and better than the husks of human tradition, upon which they have fed so long. These profess to feed their followers upon scientific truth while ignoring truth,...science, in every sense of the word." *F624*

"I call your attention to Mrs. Eddy's latest published statement...In it she says, 'If there had existed such a person as the Galilean Prophet, it would make no difference to me.'" *S328, "The Science of Healing"*

ISA. 8:20: "To the law and to the testimony: [that man fell and must be redeemed] if they speak not according to this word, *it is* because *there is* no light in them."

"Mrs. Eddy says, 'Jehovah is not a person. God is principle.' How elusive and vague this is!" *R3185:6*

"Salvation from the present 'evil world' Mrs. Eddy thus makes a matter of works, and is not through faith in Jesus, as taught by the apostles." *R3186:6*

SABBATH FOR HEALING

MARK 2:27: "...The Sabbath was made for man, and not man for the sabbath..."

LUKE 13:16: "And ought not this woman, being a daughter of Abraham, whom Satan hath bound..., be loosed from this bond on the sabbath day?"

LUKE 14:3,5: "...Is it lawful to heal on the sabbath day?...Which of you shall have an ass or an ox fallen into a pit, and will not straightway pull him out on the sabbath day?"

"Jesus did many of his miracles on the Sabbath days, partly no doubt to emphasize the fact that the great Sabbath, the thousand-year day, the seventh thousand-year day of earth's history, will be the time of his kingdom, in which all mankind will be privileged to be healed from sin and sickness, sorrow and pain..." *R5405:6*

MISINTERPRETED TEXTS

ROM. 12:2: "...be ye transformed by the renewing of your mind..."

"The transforming influences lead to present sacrifice and suffering, but the end is glorious." *A203*

PROV. 23:7: "For as he thinketh in his heart, so is he: Eat and drink, saith he to thee; but his heart is not with thee."

"This admonition means that we should guard all actions of life, as well as all our words; for these are a source of either blessing or ill to others and to ourselves." *R5124:1*

See also Index: **Spiritism; Divine Healing; Apostolic Succession** (Healing cannot be transferred); **Creation and Fall; Permission of Evil; Miracles**

CHRONOLOGY

"While the first glimpse of God's gracious plan for blessing the whole world through the Church during the Millennial age, fills the hearts and enlists the zeal of his faithful children to the utmost, yet as their efforts to enlighten others are coldly received...the tendency is to settle down to the quiet enjoyment of the precious knowledge, in such a manner as will bring the least reproach....

"The Lord has provided time prophecies as a spur,...to keep us active in his service. Being already in the 'harvest' time, harvest work should engage the time,...of the Lord's servants...." *B364, 365*

"If our chronology is not reliable we have no idea where we are nor when the morning will come." *R5368:2*

THE MILLENNIUM HERE

"Six-thousand years from the creation of Adam were complete with A.D. 1872; and...we are...entered upon the seventh thousand or the Millennium — the forepart of which...is to witness the breaking into pieces of the kingdoms of this world and the establishment of the Kingdom of God under the whole heavens." *B33*

From the Creation of Adam

(From *B43*)

To the end of the flood..... 1656 Years

Thence to the covenant with Abraham..... 427 "

Thence to the Exodus and the giving of the Law..... 430 "

Thence to the division of Canaan..... 46 "

The period of the Judges ..... 450 "

The period of the Kings ..... 513 "

The period of the desolation..... 70 "

Thence to A.D. 1 ..... 536 "

Thence to A.D. 1873 ..... 1872 "

Total 6000 Years

SCRIPTURES FOR THE ABOVE CHART — YEARS SINCE ADAM'S CREATION

"To the end of the flood — 1656 years"

GEN. 5:3,6,9,12,15,18,21,25,28; 7:6: "And Adam lived an hundred and thirty years, and begat a *son* in his own likeness, after his image; and called his name Seth: And Seth lived an hundred and five years, and begat Enos: And

Enos lived ninety years, and begat Cainan: And Cainan lived seventy years, and begat Mahalaleel: And Mahalaleel lived sixty and five years, and begat Jared: And Jared lived an hundred sixty and two years, and he begat Enoch: And Enoch lived sixty and five years, and begat Methuselah: And Methuselah lived an hundred eighty and seven years and begat Lamech: And Lamech lived an hundred eighty and two years and begat a son: And Noah *was* six hundred years old when the flood of waters was upon the earth."

"Thence to the covenant with Abraham — 427 years"

GEN 11:10,12,14,16,18,20,22,24,32: "These *are* the generations of Shem: Shem *was* an hundred years old, and begat Arphaxad two

years after the flood: And Arphaxad lived five and thirty years, and begat Salah: And Salah lived thirty years, and begat Eber: And Eber lived four and thirty years, and begat Peleg: And Peleg lived thirty years and begat Reu: And Reu lived two and thirty years, and begat Serug: And Serug lived thirty years, and begat Nahor: And Nahor lived nine and twenty years, and begat Terah: And the days of Terah were two hundred and five years: and Terah died in Haran."

"Thence to the Exodus and giving of the Law — 430 years"

GAL 3:17: "And this I say, *that* the covenant, that was confirmed before of God in Christ, the Law, which was four hundred and thirty years after, cannot disannul, that it should make the promise of none effect."

"Thence to the division of Canaan — 46 years"

DEUT. 8:2: "And thou shalt remember all the way which the LORD thy God led thee these forty years in the wilderness, to humble thee *and* to prove thee, to know what *was* in thine heart, whether thou wouldest keep his commandments, or no."

PSA. 95: 8-10: "Harden not your heart, as in the provocation *and* as *in* the day of temptation in the wilderness: When your fathers tempted me, proved me, and saw my work. Forty years long was I grieved with *this* generation, and said, It *is* a people that do err in their heart, and they have not known my ways."

ACTS 7:36: "He brought them out, after that he had shewed wonders and signs in the land of Egypt, and in the Red sea, and in the wilderness forty years."

HEB. 3:8,9: "Harden not your hearts, as in the provocation, in the day of temptation in the wilderness: When your fathers tempted me, proved me, and saw my works forty years."

NUM 33:3: "And they departed from Rameses in the first month, on the fifteenth day of the first month; on the morrow after the passover the children of Israel went out with an high hand in the sight of all the Egyptians..."

NUM. 10:11-13: "And it came to pass on the twentieth *day* of the second month, in the second year, that the cloud was taken up from off the tabernacle of the testimony. And the children of Israel took their journeys out of the wilderness of Sinai; and the cloud rested in the wilderness of Paran. And they first took their journey according to the commandment of the LORD by the hand of Moses."

NUM.13:3-26: "And Moses by the commandment of the LORD sent them from the wilderness of Paran: all those men *were* heads of the children of Israel. And these *were* their names: of the tribe of Reuben, Shammua the son of Zaccur. Of the tribe of Simeon, Shaphat the son of Hori. Of the tribe of Judah, Caleb the son of Jephunneh. Of the tribe of Issachar, Igal the son of Joseph. Of the tribe of Ephraim, Oshea the son of Nun. Of the tribe of Benjamin, Palti the son of Raphu. Of the tribe of Zebulun, Gaddiel the son of Sodi. Of the tribe of Joseph, *namely*, of the tribe of Manasseh, Gaddi the son of Susi. Of the tribe of Dan, Ammiel the son of Gemalli. Of the tribe of Asher, Sethur the son of Michael. Of the tribe of Naphtali, Nahbi the son of Vophsi.

"Of the tribe of Gad, Geuel the son of Machi. These *are* the names of the men which Moses sent to spy out the land. And Moses called Oshea the son of Nun Jehoshua.

"And Moses sent them to spy out the land of Canaan, and said unto them, Get you up this *way* southward, and go up into the mountain: And see the land, what it *is*; and the people that dwelleth therein, whether they *be* strong or weak, few or many;

"And what the land *is* that they dwell in, whether it *be* good or bad; and what cities *they be* that they dwell in, whether in tents, or in strong holds; And what the land *is*, whether it be fat or lean, whether there be wood therein, or not. And be ye of good courage, and bring of the fruit of the land. Now the time *was* the time of the first ripe grapes.

"So they went up, and searched the land from the wilderness of Zin unto Rehob, as men come to Hamath. And they ascended by the south, and came unto Hebron; where Ahiman, Sheshai, and Talmai, the children of Anak, *were*. (Now Hebron was built seven years before Zoan in Egypt.) And they came unto the brook of Eshcol, and cut down from thence a branch with one cluster of grapes, and they bare it between two upon a staff; and *they brought* of the pomegranates, and of the figs. The place was called the brook Eshcol, because of the cluster of grapes which the children of Israel cut down from thence. And they returned from searching of the land after forty days. And they went and came to Moses, and to Aaron, and to all the congregation of the children of Israel, unto the wilderness of Paran, to Kadesh; and brought back word unto them, and

unto all the congregation, and showed them the fruit of the land."

NUM: 32:8-13: "Thus did your fathers, when I sent them from Kadeshbarnea to see the land. For when they went up unto the valley of Eshcol, and saw the land, they discouraged the heart of the children of Israel, that they should not go into the land which the LORD had given them. And the LORD'S anger was kindled the same time, and he sware, saying, Surely none of the men that came up out of Egypt, from twenty years old and upward, shall see the land which I sware unto Abraham, unto Isaac, and unto Jacob; because they have not wholly followed me: Save Caleb the son of Jephunneh the Kenezite, and Joshua the son of Nun: for they have wholly followed the LORD. And the LORD'S anger was kindled against Israel, and he made them wander in the wilderness forty years, until all the generation, that had done evil in the sight of the LORD, was consumed."

JOSH. 11:23: "So Joshua took the whole land, according to all that the LORD said unto Moses; and Joshua gave it for an inheritance unto Israel according to their divisions by their tribes. And the land rested from war."

JOSH; 10:42; 14:7,10: "And all these kings and their land did Joshua take at one time, because the LORD God of Israel fought for Israel. Forty years old *was* I when Moses the servant of the LORD sent me from Kadeshbarnea to espy out the land; and I brought him word again as *it was* in mine heart. And now, behold the LORD hath kept me alive, as he said, these forty and five years, even since the LORD spake this word unto Moses, while *the children of* Israel wandered in the wilderness: and now, lo I *am* this day fourscore and five years old."

The period of the Judges — 450 years

ACTS 13:19-21: "And when he had destroyed seven nations in the land of Chanaan, he divided their land to them by lot. And after that he gave *unto them* judges the space of four hundred and fifty years, until Samuel the prophet. And afterward they desired a king: and God gave unto them Saul the son of Cis, a man of the tribe of Benjamin, by the space of forty years."

[1 Kings 6:1 "...should read five hundred and eighty"]

1 KINGS 6:1: "AND it came to pass in the four hundred and eightieth year after the children of Israel were come out of the land of Egypt, in the fourth year of Solomon's reign over Israel, in the month Zif, which *is* the second month, that he began to build the house of the LORD."

The period of the Kings — 513 years

ACTS 13:21: "And afterward they desired a king: and God gave unto them Saul the son of Cis, a man of the tribe of Benjamin, by the space of forty years."

1 CHR. 29:27: "And the time that he reigned over Israel *was* forty years; seven years reigned he in Hebron, and thirty and three *years* reigned he in Jerusalem."

2 CHR. 9:30: "And Solomon reigned in Jerusalem over all Israel forty years."

2 CHR. 12:13: "So king Rehoboam strengthened himself in Jerusalem, and reigned: for Rehoboam *was* one and forty years old when he began to reign, and he reigned seventeen years in Jerusalem, the city which the LORD had chosen out of all the tribes of Israel, to put his name there. And his mother's name *was* Naamah an Ammonitess."

2 CHR. 13:2: "He reigned three years in Jerusalem. His mother's name also *was* Michaiah the daughter of Uriel of Gibeah. And there was war between Abijah and Jeroboam."

2 CHR. 16:13: "And Asa slept with his fathers, and died in the one and fortieth year of his reign."

2 CHR. 20:31: "And Jehoshaphat reigned over Judah: *he was* thirty and five years old when he began to reign, and he reigned twenty and five years in Jerusalem. And his mother's name *was* Azubah the daughter of Shilhi."

2 CHR. 21:20: "Thirty and two years old was he when he began to reign, and he reigned in Jerusalem eight years, and departed without being desired. Howbeit they buried him in the city of David, but not in the sepulchres of the kings."

2 CHR. 22:2,12: "Forty and two years old *was* Ahaziah when he began to reign, and he reigned one year in Jerusalem. His mother's name also *was* Athaliah the daughter of Omri. And he was with them hid in the house of God six years: and Athaliah reigned over the land."

2 CHR. 24:1: "Joash *was* seven years old when he began to reign, and he reigned forty years in Jerusalem. His mother's name also *was* Zibiah of Beersheba."

2 CHR. 25:1: "Amaziah *was* twenty and five years old *when* he began to reign, and he reigned twenty and nine years in Jerusalem. And his mother's name *was* Jehoaddan of Jerusalem."

2 CHR. 26:3: "Sixteen years old *was* Uzziah when he began to reign, and he reigned fifty and two years in Jerusalem. His mother's name also *was* Jecoliah of Jerusalem."

2 CHR. 27:1: "Jotham was twenty and five years old when he began to reign, and he reigned sixteen years in

Jerusalem. His mother's name also was Jerushah, the daughter of Zadok."

2 CHR. 28:1: "Ahaz *was* twenty years old when he began to reign, and he reigned sixteen years in Jerusalem: but he did not *that which* was right in the sight of the LORD, like David his father..."

2 CHR. 29:1: "Hezekiah began to reign *when he was* five and twenty years old, and he reigned nine and twenty years in Jerusalem. And his mother's name *was* Abijah, the daughter of Zechariah."

2 CHR. 33:1,21: "Manasseh *was* twelve years old when he began to reign, and he reigned fifty and five years in Jerusalem: Amon *was* two and twenty years old when he began to reign, and reigned two years in Jerusalem."

2 CHR. 34:1: "Josiah *was* eight years old when he began to reign, and he reigned in Jerusalem one and thirty years."

2 CHR. 36:5,11: "Jehoiakim *was* twenty and five years old when he began to reign, and he reigned eleven years in Jerusalem: and he did *that which was* evil in the sight of the LORD his God. Zedekiah *was* one and twenty years old when he began to reign, and reigned eleven years in Jerusalem."

"The period of the desolation — 70 years"

2 CHR. 36:20, 23: "And them that had escaped from the sword carried he away to Babylon; where they were servants to him and his sons until the reign of the kingdom of Persia: Thus saith Cyrus king of Persia, All the kingdoms of the earth hath the LORD God of heaven given me; and he hath charged me to build him an house in Jerusalem, which is in Judah. Who *is there* among you of all his people? The LORD his God be with him, and let him go up."

LEV. 26:33-35,43: "And I will scatter you among the heathen, and will draw out a sword after you: and your land shall be desolate, and your cities waste. Then shall the land enjoy her sabbaths, as long as it lieth desolate, and *ye be* in your enemies' land; *even* then shall the land rest, and enjoy her sabbaths. As long as it lieth desolate it shall rest; because it did not rest in your sabbaths, when ye dwelt upon it The land also shall be left of them, and shall enjoy her sabbaths, while she lieth desolate without them: and they shall accept of the punishment of their iniquity: because, even because they despised my judgments, and because their soul abhorred my statutes."

DAN. 9:2: "In the first year of his reign I Daniel understood by books the number of the years, whereof the word of the LORD came to Jeremiah the prophet, that he would accomplish seventy years in the desolations of Jerusalem."

JER. 25: 8-12: "Therefore thus saith the LORD of hosts; Because ye have not heard my words, Behold, I will send and take all the families of the north, saith the LORD, and Nebuchadrezzar the king of Babylon, my servant, and will bring them against this land, and against the inhabitants thereof, and against all these nations round about, and will utterly destroy them, and make them an astonishment, and an hissing, and perpetual desolations. Moreover I will take from them the voice of mirth, and the voice of gladness, the voice of the bridegroom, and the voice of the bride, the sound of the millstones, and the light of the candle. And this whole land shall be a desolation, *and* an astonishment; and these nations shall serve the king of Babylon seventy years. And it shall come to pass, when seventy years are accomplished, that I will punish the king of Babylon, and that nation, saith the LORD, for their iniquity, and the land of the Chaldeans, and will make it perpetual desolations."

Thence to A.D. 1 536 years Thence to A. D. 1873 1872 years Total 6000 years *B42*

TIMES OF THE GENTILES

THEIR BEGINNING

EZEK. 21:25-27: "And thou, profane wicked prince of Israel,

[Zedekiah] whose day is come, when iniquity *shall have* an end, Thus saith the Lord GOD; Remove the diadem, and take off the crown:...exalt *him* that *is* low, and abase *him* that *is* high. I will overturn, overturn, overturn, it: and it shall be no *more*, until he come whose right it is; and I will give it *him*."

LUKE 21:24: "...Jerusalem shall be trodden down of the Gentiles, until the times of the Gentiles be fulfilled."

"The term 'Times of the Gentiles' was applied...to that interval of earth's history between the removal of the typical kingdom of God...and the introduction and establishment of its antitype, the true Kingdom of God..." *B73*

"During this interval, the dominion of earth was to be exercised by Gentile governments..." *B73*

"Jerusalem was...laid in ruins...until...the first year of Cyrus." *B79*

2 CHR. 36:20-23: "And them that had escaped from the sword carried he away to Babylon; where they were servants to him and his sons until the reign of the kingdom of Persia: To fulfil the word of the LORD by the mouth of Jeremiah, until the land had enjoyed her sabbaths: *for* as long as she lay desolate she kept sabbath, to fulfil threescore and ten years. Now in the first year of Cyrus king of Persia, that the word of the LORD *spoken* by the

mouth of Jeremiah might be accomplished, the LORD stirred up the spirit of Cyrus king of Persia, that he made a proclamation throughout all his kingdom, and *put* it also in writing, saying," Thus saith Cyrus king of Persia, All the kingdoms of the earth hath the LORD God of heaven given me; and he hath charged me to build him an house in Jerusalem, which *is* in Judah. Who *is there* among you of all his people? The LORD his God *be* with him, and let him go up."

"Israel has never had another king from that to the present day." *B79*

"The first year of...Cyrus is a very clearly fixed date — both secular and religious histories...agreeing with Ptolemy's Canon, which places it B.C.536. And if B.C.536 was the year in which the seventy years...ended...their kingdom was overthrown just seventy years before B.C.536, i.e.,...B.C.606. This gives us the date of the beginning of the Times of the Gentiles — B.C.606." *B79*

LENGTH OF GENTILE TIMES

LEV. 26:18,21,24,28: "...I will punish you seven times more for your sins."

"In the Bible a '**Time'** is used in the sense of a year....A **symbolic** year as used in prophecy is reckoned on the basis of...twelve months of thirty days each, or three hundred and sixty days — each day representing a year." *B89*

NUM. 14:34: "...each day for a year..."

EZEK. 4:6: "...I have appointed thee each day for a year." "'Seven times' represent twenty-five hundred and twenty (7 x 360 equals 2520)...literal years." *B89*

"They cannot be understood as seven literal years; for Israel had many captivities of long duration (Judges 3:8,14; 4:2,3; 10:7,8; 13:1), besides their seventy years in Babylon....these periods being...longer than 'seven times'... literal,...the last, greatest, and final punishment, proves that symbolic...time is meant...." *B89*

JUDG. 3:8,14; 4:2,3; 10:7,8; 13:1: "Therefore the anger of the LORD was hot against Israel, and he sold them into the hand of Chushanrishathaim king of Mesopotamia: and the children of Israel served Chushanrishathaim eight years. So the children of Israel served Eglon the king of Moab eighteen years. And the LORD sold them into the hand of Jabin king of Canaan, that reigned in Hazor; the captain of whose host *was* Sisera, which dwelt in Harosheth of the Gentiles. And the children of Israel cried unto the LORD: for he had nine hundred chariots of iron; and twenty years he mightily oppressed the children of Israel. And the anger of the LORD was hot against Israel, and he sold them into the hands of the Philistines, and into the hands of the children of Ammon. And that year they vexed and

oppressed the children of Israel: eighteen years, all the children of Israel that *were* on the other side Jordan in the land of the Amorites, which is in Gilead. And the children of Israel did evil again in the sight of the LORD; and the LORD delivered them into the hand of the Philistines forty years."

END OF GENTILE TIMES

"This long period...of Israel's punishment is the period of the Gentile dominion — the 'Times of the Gentiles.' Since...'Gentile Times' began B.C. 606, and were to continue twenty-five hundred and twenty years, they...end A.D. 1914 (2520 — 606 equals 1914)...." *B90*

DATE OF JESUS' BIRTH

See also Index: **Days Of Daniel**

DAN. 9:24-27: "Seventy weeks are determined upon thy people and upon thy holy city, to finish the transgression, and to make an end of sins, and **to make reconciliation for iniquity**, and to bring in everlasting righteousness, and to seal up the vision and prophecy, and to anoint the most Holy. Know therefore and understand, *that* from the going forth of the commandment to restore and to build Jerusalem unto **the Messiah the Prince *shall be* seven weeks, and threescore and two weeks**: the street shall be built again, and the wall, even in troublous times. And after threescore and two weeks **shall Messiah be cut off, but not for himself**: and the people of the prince that shall come shall destroy the city and the sanctuary; and the end thereof *shall be* with a flood, and unto the end of the war desolations are determined. And he shall confirm the covenant with many for one week: and **in the midst of the week he shall cause the sacrifice** and the oblation to cease, and for the overspreading of abominations he shall make it desolate, even until the consummation, and that determined shall be poured upon the desolate."

"There was another decree granted to Nehemiah...**to rebuild the walls of Jerusalem**...." *B66*

"Dr. Hale's work on Chronology (pages 449 and 531) and Dr. Priestlie's treatise on the 'harmony of the Evangelists' (pages 24-38) show...B.C.454 as the true date of Nehemiah's commission...." *B67*

"Our Lord's ministry lasted three and a half years. The sixty-nine symbolic weeks of years (Dan 9:24-27) reached to his baptism and anointing as Messiah,...He was cut off (in death) in the middle of that seventieth week...." *B58*

"John the Baptist was six months older than our Lord (Luke 1:26,36)...and began to preach six months before our Lord became of age and began his ministry. The date...is clearly stated to have been the 'fifteenth year of the reign of Tiberius Caesar'...A.D.14." *B58*

LUKE 1:26,27,36: "And in the sixth month the angel Gabriel was

sent from God...a virgin...and the virgin's name *was* Mary. And, behold, thy cousin Elisabeth, she hath also conceived a son in her old age: and this is the sixth month with her...."

See also Index: **Days Of Daniel**

EARTH'S JUBILEE YEAR

MATT. 5:18: "For verily I say unto you, Till heaven and earth pass, one jot or one tittle shall in no wise pass from the law, till all be fulfilled."

"When our Lord said that not one jot or tittle of the Law should pass away until fulfilled, he referred not only to the fulfilling of its covenant obligation for all under that Law covenant...by meeting its demands against them in full with his own life, but...further, that all the blessings expressed in it typically would also be sure of fulfillment upon an antitypical scale....God caused no type to be made which will...pass unfulfilled;...until their fulfillment (**at least began**)....The keeping of a type is not the fulfilling of it. The fulfilling is reached where the type ceases, being displaced by...the antitype." *B174*

"Since the Jubilee was a part of the Law, and since repeating it does not fulfill it, and since our Lord declared that the type could not pass away without fulfillment; and moreover, since we know that no such restitution of all things as that foretold 'by all the holy prophets since the world began,' and prefigured in this type, has ever yet occurred, we know that it must be **fulfilled** in the future." *B175*

"The sabbath **year** occurred every seventh year. In it the land was allowed to rest....A climax of these Sabbath (rest) years was reached in the same manner as the Pentecost or fiftieth day — Sabbath. Seven of the Sabbath years...seven times seven years...constituted a cycle...; and... the...**Fiftieth Year, was the...Jubilee**." *B176*

LEV. 25:8-10: "And thou shalt number seven sabbaths of years unto thee, seven times seven years; and the space of the seven sabbaths of years shall be unto thee forty and nine years. Then shalt thou cause the trumpet of the jubilee to sound on the tenth *day* of the seventh month, in the day of atonement shall ye make the trumpet sound throughout all your land. And ye shall hallow the fiftieth year, and proclaim liberty throughout *all* the land unto all the inhabitants thereof: it shall be a jubilee unto you; and ye shall return every man unto his possession, and ye shall return every man unto his family."

"The multiplying of Sabbath or seventh day by seven...pointed out Pentecost, the Jubilee Day which followed; and the multiplying of the seventh year by

seven...made the cycle which... led to the fiftieth or Jubilee Year. And the same system...would indicate that to reach the great antitype...we should...multiply the fiftieth year by fifty...." *B180*

"An antitype never **follows** its type but takes its place upon the same date...the Pentecostal outpouring of the Holy Spirit came upon the typical day of Pentecost....Christ, our Passover sacrifice, died in the same night [day]...in which the typical lamb was...to be killed....So here, not the year after nor the year before...would do." *B180*

"The observance of the type could not cease until the great cycle (50x50) began to count...." *B181*

"The real Jubilee or Restitution...instead of being a year, as in the type,...will be larger;...the great thousand-year Jubilee — the Millennium.... that...year, beginning October 1874 must have begun the antitype or Restitution times." *B180*

"But we must look for the beginnings only of this...work of restoring all things....The first work of the typical Jubilee Year would naturally be a searching out of former rights and possessions and the ascertaining of present lacks....we should expect in the antitype just what we now see going on...investigation on the part of the people of their original, God-given inheritance, and their present lacks, rights, etc., many in ignorance and selfishness claiming what others have; and the attempt to hold on to as much as possible on the part of those who have possession — causing disputes,... strikes, and lock-outs, with more or less justice and injustice on both sides...." *B182*

"...We fix upon the date for the Jubilee... preceding the...seventy years desolation of their land, as the last one....it could not have been this side of that desolation, because there, surely, the **type** ceased, 'passed away;' for the land being desolate seventy years and the people...in a foreign land, a Jubilee must have been due somewhere in...those seventy years and...provisions relative to the Jubilee Year could not be complied with....And...the cycle of the great antitype must have begun to count...." *B182*

"Their previous captivities...never lasted longer than forty years...." *B183*

"969 years elapsed between the entering of Canaan and the seventy years desolation."

To the division of the land..... 6 years

Period of the Judges ..... 450 "

Period of the Kings..... 513 "

Total 969 "

"There are 19 fifties in 969, showing that number of Jubilees, and the remaining 19 years show that their nineteenth,...the last..., occurred just nineteen years before the beginning of the seventy years of desolation...." *B185*

"From the last or nineteenth jubilee To the beginning of the desolation of the land. 19 years

Period of the desolation..... 70 "

From the restoration...by Cyrus...A.D. ..... 536 "

Hence, from their last Jubilee to A.D.1 ..... 625 "

The number of years since A.D. 1, ...to complete the cycle of 2500 years ..... 1875 "

From last observed Jubilee — Total ..... 2500 "

B185

"...this...was not a **Jubilee Year**, but the antitypical **Thousand years of Restitution of all things**, which commenced October A.D. 1874." *B187*

"...when the 'Times of Restitution'...begin, the presence of the **Great Restorer** is also due." *B187*

ACTS 3:19-21: "...when the [appointed] times of refreshing shall come from the presence of the Lord...he shall send Jesus Christ,...whom the heaven must receive until the times of restitution of all things...."

2 CHR. 36:20-23: "And them that had escaped from the sword carried he away to Babylon; where they were servants to him and his sons until the reign of the kingdom of Persia: To fulfil the word

of the LORD by the mouth of Jeremiah, until the land had enjoyed her sabbaths: *for* as long as she lay desolate she kept sabbath, to fulfil threescore and ten years. Now in the first year of Cyrus king of Persia, that the word of the LORD *spoken by* the mouth of Jeremiah might be accomplished, the LORD stirred up the spirit of Cyrus king of Persia, that he made a proclamation throughout all his kingdom, and *put it* also in writing, saying, Thus saith Cyrus king of Persia, All the kingdoms of the earth hath the LORD God of heaven given me; and he hath charged me to build him an house in Jerusalem, which *is* in Judah. Who *is there* among you of all his people? The LORD his God *be* with him, and let him go up."

"To fulfill the word of the Lord...**the land...enjoyed her sabbaths: *for* as long as she lay desolate she kept sabbath, to fulfil three score and ten [70] years.**

"...Israel had failed to observe properly the Sabbatic years, of which the jubilees were the chief...." *B192*

LEV. 26:33-35,43: "...your land shall be desolate, and your cities waste. Then shall the land enjoy her sabbaths, as long

as it lieth desolate, and ye *be* in your enemies' land; *even* then shall the land rest, and enjoy her sabbaths. As long as it lieth desolate it shall rest; because it did not rest in your sabbaths, when ye dwelt upon it. The land also shall be left of them, and shall enjoy her sabbaths, while she lieth desolate without them: and they shall accept of the punishment of their iniquity: because, even because they despised my judgments, and because their soul abhorred my statutes."

"God permitted for a while their half-hearted and halfway obedience, but finally removed them entirely from the land, made it desolate, without an inhabitant, and gave it the full number of its Jubilee Years — not only for those they had imperfectly observed, but also for the entire future number which would elapse...before the antitypical Jubilee, the Restitution or Millennial age, would be due." *B192*

"The first nineteen cycles had Jubilee Years, but the fiftyone cycles of forty-nine years each,...(49x51 equals 2499), from the last typical Jubilee observed by Israel to the antitype. This...ends exactly as...the Law method... previously examined — October A.D.1874." *B193*

19 cycles with Jubilees added (50 years each)950 Years

51 cycles without Jubilees (49 years each) .. 2499 "

70 cycles..... 3449 "

. . . .

From entering Canaan to division of the land... 6 "

Period of the Judges ..... 450 "

Period of the kings..... 513 "

Period of the desolation..... 70 "

From the restoration to A.D.,..... 536 "

Total...before...A.D. 1575 "

Years since A.D. to complete above period of 3449 are 1874...which would end (Jewish time) October,..... 1874 "

...70 cycles...until...the Great Jubilee, or Times of Restitution began, October A.D. 1874..... 3449 Years *B194*

"...the Trumpet of Jubilee was to be sounded when the Jubilee Year began, to...

LEV. 25:10: "'...Proclaim liberty throughout *all* the land unto all the inhabitants thereof.'...

"The antitype is ushered in with the sounding of the (symbolic) 'seventh Trumpet,' the 'Trump of God,' the 'Last Trump.'...it announces liberty to every captive; and while at first it means the surrender of many expired...privileges,

and a general time of disturbance and unsettling of usages, habits, etc., its full import...is — **LUKE 2:10: "...good tidings of great joy, which shall be unto all people."** *B197*

"...the first work of Restitution is...a breaking down of the old and decaying structure which stands in the place which the new is to occupy." *B197*

THE SEVENTH OR LAST TRUMPET

RESURRECTION CHANGE OF SAINTS

1 COR. 15:51,52: "...We shall not all sleep, but we shall all be changed, In a moment, in the twinkling of an eye, at the last trump: for the trumpet shall sound, and the dead shall be raised incorruptible, and we shall be changed."

1 THES. 4:16: "For the Lord himself shall descend from heaven with a shout, with the voice of the archangel, and with the trump of God: and the dead in Christ shall rise first:"

REV. 8:2; 11:15,18; *Diag.:* "And I saw the SEVEN ANGELS who stand in the presence of God....And the SEVENTH ANGEL sounded his Trumpet: and there were loud Voices in HEAVEN, saying, 'The KINGDOM of the WORLD has become [or became] our LORD's and his CHRIST's, and he shall reign for the AGES of the AGES....And the NATIONS were enraged, and thy WRATH came, and the APPOINTED TIME of the DEAD to be judged, and to give the REWARD to thy SERVANTS the PROPHETS, and to the SAINTS, and to THOSE who FEAR thy NAME, the LITTLE and the GREAT, and to destroy THOSE who DESTROY [or destroying] the EARTH."

PARALLEL DISPENSATIONS

"Fleshly Israel...was called of God to be his peculiar people,...they were the recipients of special favor from God for...(1845) years. This period began with the...death of Jacob,...when they were first...called 'The Twelve Tribes of Israel,' a national name." *B213*

GEN. 46:3: "...fear not to go down into Egypt; for I will there make of thee a great nation."

GEN. 49:28,29,33: "All these *are* the twelve tribes of Israel: and...their father...charged them,...I am to be gathered unto my people: bury me....And when Jacob had made an end of commanding his sons, he...was gathered unto his people."

DEUT. 26:5: "And thou shalt...say...my father...went down into Egypt and became there a nation...."

THEIR REJECTIONS

"These eighteen hundred and forty-five years of national life and favor ended with their rejection of Messiah — A.D. 33 — when, five days before his crucifixion, he presented

himself to them as their king, and, not being received declared..." *B213*

MATT. 23:38: "...your house is left unto you desolate."

ZECH. 9:9,12: "Rejoice greatly, O daughter of Zion; shout, O daughter of Jerusalem: behold, thy King cometh unto thee: he *is* just, and having salvation; lowly, and riding upon an ass, and upon

a colt the foal of an ass....Turn you to the strong hold, ye prisoners of hope: **even to day** do I declare *that* I will render **double** unto thee."

"The Hebrew word...rendered 'Double'... **mishneh**,...signifies a second portion, a repetition....the time of their being cast off from all favor until the time of their return to favor would be a repetition or **duplication of time**, of their previous history, during which time they had enjoyed divine favor." *B217*

"...the period of their favor, from the commencement of their national existence at the death of Jacob, down to the end of that favor at the death of Christ, A.D. 33, was...(1845) years; and there their 'Double'...of...(1845) years, **without favor** — began. Eighteen hundred and forty-five years since A.D. 33 shows A.D. 1878 to be the end of their period of disfavor...." *B218*

"Zechariah's prophecy...was, fulfilled, even to the shouting....Mark the clear fulfilment...." *B224*

JOHN 12:12-16: "...much people...cried, Hosanna: Blessed is the King of Israel that cometh in the name of the Lord. And Jesus, when he had found a young ass, sat thereon; as it is written, Fear not, daughter of Sion: behold, thy King cometh, sitting on an ass's colt. These things understood not his disciples at the first: but when Jesus was glorified, then remembered they that *these* things were written of him, and *that* they had done these things unto him."

LUKE 19:39,40: "And some of the Pharisees from among the multitude said...Master, rebuke thy disciples. And he answered,...if these should hold their peace, the stones would immediately cry out."

RESTORATION FORETOLD

JER. 16:13-15,18: "Therefore will I cast you out of this land into a land that ye know not, *neither ye* nor your fathers; and there shall ye serve other gods day and night; where I will not show you favour. Therefore, behold, the days come, saith the LORD, that it shall no more be said, The LORD liveth, that brought up the children of Israel out of the land of Egypt; But, The LORD liveth, that brought up the children of Israel from the land of the north, and from all the lands whither he had driven them: and I will bring them again into their land that I gave unto their fathers. And first I will recompense their iniquity and their sin **double**; [***mishneh***] because they have defiled my land,

they have filled mine inheritance with the carcasses of their detestable and abominable things."

See *Biblical Comments* on Zech. 9:9,12

ISA. 40:1,2: "Comfort ye, comfort ye my people, saith your God. Speak ye comfortably to Jerusalem, and cry unto her, that her warfare [**appointed time, margin**] **is accomplished**, that her iniquity is pardoned: for she hath received of the Lord's hand double for all her sins."

"The Hebrew word here translated 'Double' is **kephel**, which signifies **double**, in the sense of a thing having been folded in the middle." *B227, footnote*

"This prophet takes his standpoint...at the time when the 'Double' (**mishneh**) has been fulfilled — A.D. 1878...." *B226*

TIME PERIODS OF THE "DOUBLE"

"Abraham was...75 years old when the Covenant was made... — [**GEN. 12:4; 21:4**: 'So Abram departed, as the LORD had spoken unto him; and Lot went with him: and Abram *was* seventy and five years old when he departed out of Haran.'], and Isaac was born...25 years after. **GEN. 21:5**: 'And Abraham was an hundred years old, when his son Isaac was born unto him.'] Hence — ..." *B231*

From the Covenant to the birth of Isaac,..... 25 years

From Isaac's to Jacob's birth (Gen. 25:26) ..... 60 "

From Jacob's birth to his death (Gen. 47:28). 147 "

Total 232 "

From the covenant to the day Israel left Egypt (Gen. 12:41)..... 430 years

...deduct the period from the Covenant to Jacob's death ..... 232 years

...from Jacob's death to the Exodus,..... 198 years *B231*

Scriptures cited in chart above:

GEN. 25:26: "And after that came his brother out, and his hand took hold on Esau's heel; and his name was called Jacob: and Isaac *was* threescore years old when she bare them."

GEN. 47:28: "And Jacob lived in the land of Egypt seventeen years: so the whole age of Jacob was an hundred forty and seven years."

EXOD. 12:41: "And it came to pass at the end of the four hundred and thirty years, even the selfsame day it came to pass, that all the hosts of the LORD went out from the land of Egypt."

"To this we now add the periods presented in the Chronological Table, as follows: — " B231

Period from Jacob's death to the Exodus:..... 198 years

Israel in the wilderness..... 40 "

To the division of Canaan..... 6 "

Period of the Judges ..... 450 "

Period of the Kings..... 513 "

Period of the Desolation ..... 70 "

...first year of Cyrus to A.D. 1 ..... 536 "

...From A.D. 1 to the crucifixion..... 32 "

Total...under divine favor 1845 "

"To find...when favor was due...toward them, and when therefore it began to depart from the **nominal Spiritual** Israel, we count...(1845) years from the spring of A.D. 33, and obtain the date of the passover, A.D. 1878." *B232*

HARVEST PARALLELS

"The fall of 1874, where the Jubilee cycles point out that our Lord was due to be present, corresponds to the time of his baptism and anointing by the Holy Spirit when he became Messiah the Prince (Dan. 9:25),...the spring of A.D. 1878...corresponds to the date at which our Lord assumed the office of King, (Zech. 9:9) ...cleansed the temple...and gave up to desolation that nominal church or kingdom; and it marks the date when the nominal church systems were 'spewed out' (Rev. 3:16), and from which time (A.D. 1878) they are not the mouthpieces of God, nor...recognized by him....

"...three and a half years following the Spring of A.D. 1878, which ended October A.D. 1881, correspond to the three and a half years of continued favor to individual Jews in the last half of their seventieth week....As...three and a half years after the death of Christ — marked the end of all special favor to the Jew and the

beginning of favor to the Gentiles, [Acts 10], so...1881...marks a great movement among the Jewish people toward Christianity, known as the 'Kishenev Movement.'" *B235*

DAN. 9:25: "Know therefore and understand, *that* from the going forth of the commandment to restore and to build Jerusalem unto the Messiah the Prince *shall be* seven weeks, and threescore and two weeks: the street shall be built again, and the wall, even in troublous times."

ZECH. 9:9: "Rejoice greatly, O daughter of Zion; shout, O daughter of Jerusalem: behold, thy King cometh unto thee: he is just, and having salvation; lowly, and riding upon an ass, and upon a colt the foal of an ass."

REV. 3:16: "So then because thou art lukewarm, and neither cold nor hot, I will spue thee out of my mouth."

"...during the last six months of...1881...**FOOD FOR THINKING CHRISTIANS**...was distributed at the church doors...and through the mails....it pointed out...October 1881." *C369, footnote*

"...these parallels follow the nominal systems to destruction in both cases, and do not indicate the time of the glorification of the New Creation." *Bxi, 1959 edition*

"Evidently the 'Door' is not yet shut." *Cii*

MATT. 25:10: "And while they went to buy, the bridegroom came; and they that were ready went in with him to the marriage: and the door was shut."

See also Index: **Days Of Daniel**

A PARALLEL PRECEDING THE HARVEST

"...there was a going forth...to meet the Lord...(Luke 3:15), at the time of his birth, thirty years before his anointing as Messiah [Luke 3:22,23]...so there was a...movement on the part of many (afterward called Adventists) ....This culminated in...1844, just thirty years before A.D. 1874, when Christ...actually came...." *B240*

LUKE 3:15,22,23: "And as the people were in expectation, and all men mused in their hearts of John, whether he were the Christ, or not; And the Holy Ghost [Spirit] descended in a bodily shape like a dove upon him, and a voice came from heaven, which said, Thou art my beloved Son; in thee I am well pleased. And Jesus himself began to be about thirty years of age, being (as was supposed) the son of Joseph, which *was* the son of Heli..."

PERIODS MUTUALLY CORROBORATIVE

"These time-correspondencies...are not accidental:...the same all-wise One who taught us through the Chronology that six thousand years from Adam's creation ended with A.D. 1872, and that the seventh thousand, the Millennial age, began there; who through the Jubilee cycles taught us that the Lord would be present and the Times of Restitution begin in the fall of 1874; and who through the Times of the Gentiles showed us that we must not expect these things to be done in haste,...has in these Parallel Dispensations marked by Israel's 'Double' given us evidence which not only itself teaches clearly the Lord's presence, the harvest and the restitution (beginning with favor to fleshly Israel), but...furnishes a **proof** of the correctness of the other prophetic evidences and of the Chronology....if the Chronology, or any of these time-periods be changed but one year, the beauty and force of this parallelism are destroyed." *B242*

"Bible Chronology points to October 1872 as the beginning of the seventh thousand year, or Millennium, while the Jubilee Cycles show October 1874 to be the date of our Lord's return and the beginning of restitution times....

"...the reckoning of Chronology began with the creation of Adam, and...some time was spent by Adam and Eve before sin entered....two years would not be an improbable estimate...." *C127*

FROM 1916 FOREWORD — VOLUME TWO

"Six...thousand-years Days beginning with Adam are ended, and...the great Seventh Day, the thousand years of Christ's Reign, began in 1873." *Bviii, 1959 edition*

"...the 'Times of the Gentiles' Chronologically ended in...A.D.1914...We could not, of course, know in 1889, whether the date 1914, so clearly marked in the Bible...would mean that they would be fully out of power at that time or whether, their lease expiring, their eviction would begin. The latter we perceive to be the Lord's program,...promptly in August 1914, the Gentile Kingdoms referred to in the prophecy began the...great struggle, which, according to the Bible, will culminate in complete overthrow....opening the way for the full establishment of the Kingdom of God's dear Son." *Bix*

FURTHER EVIDENCE

"The seventh day, the seventh month, and the seventh year were all prominent under the Law. The seventh day as a period of cessation from toil,...the seventh month...in which the atonement for sin was effected, that they might have rest from sin; and the seventh year...in which came release from bondage....the seventh year multiplied by itself...led up to the fiftieth or Jubilee Year, in which...every family was permitted to return to its own estate....the antitype...will be the Millennial Kingdom, and its...'Times of restitution.'..." *F391*

GOD'S 7000-YEAR REST DAY

GEN. 2:2: "And on the seventh day God ended his work **which he had made**; and he rested on the seventh day from all his work **which he had made**."

HEB. 4:3: "For we which have believed do enter into rest, as he said, As I have sworn in my wrath, if they shall enter into my rest: although the **works were finished from the foundation of the world**."

"It is the **length** of this Seventh Epoch-Day...that furnishes us the clue to the length of all the other epoch-days of the creative Week. And the whole period of seven times seven thousand years...when complete, will...introduce the great Fiftieth...ushering in the grand epoch when there shall be

no more sighing, no more crying, no more pain, and no more dying...." *F50*

CHURCH FEDERATION

"The Bible points out that about this time the Nominal Church systems of the world will rise to great prominence again in connection with the Civil powers. We can readily see the grounds for this. All the kingdoms, financially weakened, will realize the necessity, for keeping a dominating grip upon the public and preventing anything akin to Socialism and Anarchy. They will naturally look to the great religious institutions called churches to support them,....and in general to help keep the Ship of State from being overturned....The churches will be ready and glad for such an opportunity...the one side, Catholic, the other Protestant...united and federated to the best of its ability." *D1916 foreword iii*

"A CONFEDERACY"

ISA. 34:4: "And all the host of heaven shall be dissolved, and the heavens shall be rolled together as a scroll: and all their host shall fall down, as the leaf falleth off from the vine, and as a falling *fig* from the fig tree."

REV. 6:14: "And the heaven departed as a scroll when it is rolled together; and every mountain and island were moved out of their places."

NAHUM 1:10: "For while *they* be folden together *as* thorns, and while they are drunken *as* drunkards, they shall be devoured as stubble fully dry."

ISA. 8:12: "Say ye not, A confederacy, to all *them* to whom this people shall say, A confederacy; neither fear ye their fear, nor be afraid."

OBAD. 1,7: "Thus saith the Lord GOD concerning Edom; [Christendom]...All the men of thy confederacy have brought thee *even* to the border: the men that were at peace with thee have deceived thee, and prevailed against thee...."

REV. 13:11,12,14: "And I beheld another beast coming up out of the earth; and he had two horns like a lamb, and he spake as a dragon. And he exerciseth all the power of the first beast before him, and causeth the earth and them which dwell therein to worship the first beast, whose deadly wound was healed....And deceiveth them that dwell on the earth by *the means of* those miracles which he had power to do in the sight of the beast; saying to them that dwell on the earth, that they should make an image to the beast, which had the wound by a sword, and did live."

REV. 16:13,14: "And I saw three unclean spirits like frogs *come* out of the mouth of the dragon, and out of the mouth of the beast, and out of the mouth of the false prophet. For they are the spirits of devils, working miracles, *which* go forth unto the kings of the earth and of the whole world, to

gather them to the battle of that great day of God Almighty."

"In harmony with this we find in Revelation (13:14-18) a prophecy of a special combination of influence by which Protestant denominations will be unified and, though separate, yet brought into cooperation with Papacy, in a manner that will give both increased powers, and deceive many into supposing that the new combination will be God's instrumentality for doing the work predicted of Messiah — and that it is thus his representative." *D581*

REV. 13:14-18: "And deceiveth them that dwell on the earth by *the means of* those miracles which he had power to do in the sight of the beast; saying to them that dwell on the earth, that they should make an image to the beast, which had the wound by a sword, and did live. And he had power to give life unto the image of the beast, that the image of the beast should both speak, and cause that as many as would not worship the image of the beast should be killed. And he causeth all, both small and great, rich and poor, free and bond, to receive a mark in their right hand, or in their foreheads: And that no man might buy or sell, save he that had the mark, or the name of the beast, or the number of his name. Here is wisdom. Let him that hath understanding count the number of the beast: for it is the number of a man; and his number *is* Six hundred threescore and six."

"As we have heretofore stated, the Scriptures indicate the formation of a great religious combination, which will exercise a measure of political power throughout the world, and especially in these United States, and which will forcibly restrain public expression on religious subjects when contrary to its standards...When the suppression comes, we shall be fully resigned to it, and accept it as a sign that the membership of the elect church, the bride or body of Christ, has been completed. When this occurs, we shall understand it to be the shutting of the door of opportunity to membership in the elect church, mentioned by our Lord in Matthew 25:10." *R1448:1,4*

MATT. 25:10: "And while they went to buy, the bridegroom came; and they that were ready went in with him to the marriage: and the door was shut."

"We showed that the coming Protestant organization would, according to Scripture, become the friend and associate of Papacy, and not its antagonist. We pointed out the prophecy that the life of the new organization or federation would come from the Episcopal church, which amongst Protestants has long stood as the 'eldest' and as possessed of 'Apostolic succession' and supposed consequent 'Authority.' We have for years looked earnestly for such a Protestant Federation as would include the Episcopal church and give its sanction to the Protestant system...woe

will betide all the 'little independents" when the great system shall throb with life and become a living image of Papacy and cooperate with it." *R4523:2*

"Upon the prophetic page we may clearly read the doom of Babylon, Christendom; and it is none the less clearly expressed in the signs of the times. That her destruction will be sudden, violent and complete is thus forcibly stated: — 'And a mighty angel took up a stone like a great millstone, and cast it into the sea, saying, Thus, with violence, shall that great city Babylon be thrown down, and shall be found no more at all.' (Rev. 18:8,21; Jer. 51:63,64,42, 24-26.) And yet that it was to undergo a gradual consuming process is shown by Daniel (7:26) — 'But the judgment shall sit, and they shall take away his dominion, to consume and to destroy it unto the end.' The Papal dominion (and much of the abject reverence of the people for ecclesiasticism in general), as already shown, was broken down at the beginning of the Time of the End — 1799; and though the subsequent process of consumption has been slow, and there have been occasional signs of apparent recovery, which never seemed more flattering than at present, the assurance of Papacy's final destruction is positive, and it death-struggle will be violent. First, however, she must attain more

of her old-time prestige, which will be shared with a confederated association of her daughters. Together they will be lifted up, that together they may be violently thrown down." *D37*

JER. 51:63,64,42,24-26: "And it shall be, when thou hast made an end of reading this book, *that* thou shalt bind a stone to it, and cast it into the midst of Euphrates: And thou shalt say, Thus shall Babylon sink, and shall not rise from the evil that I will bring upon her: and they shall be weary. Thus far *are* the words of Jeremiah....The sea is come up upon Babylon: she is covered with the multitude of the waves thereof....And I will render unto Babylon and to all the inhabitants of Chaldea all their evil that they have done in Zion in your sight, saith the LORD. Behold, I *am* against thee, O destroying mountain, saith the LORD, which destroyest all the earth: and I will stretch out mine hand upon thee, and roll thee down from the rocks, and will make thee a burnt mountain. And they shall not take of thee a stone for a corner, nor a stone for foundations; but thou shalt be desolate for ever, saith the LORD."

TEMPORARY EXALTATION AND PERSECUTING POWER

Illustrated by Jezebel:

1 KINGS 18:4; 19:2; 21:25: "For it was *so*, when Jezebel cut off the prophets of the LORD, that Obadiah took an hundred prophets, and hid them by fifty in a cave, and fed them with bread and water....Then Jezebel sent a

messenger unto Elijah, saying, So let the gods do *to me*, and more also, if I make not thy life as the life of one of them by to morrow about this time...But there was none like unto Ahab, which did sell himself to work wickedness in the sight of the LORD, whom Jezebel his wife stirred up."

REV. 2:20: "Notwithstanding I have a few things against thee, because thou sufferest that woman Jezebel, which calleth herself a prophetess, to teach and to seduce my servants to commit fornication, and to eat things sacrificed unto idols."

Illustrated by Herod and Salome:

MATT. 14:6-11: "But when Herod's birthday was kept, the daughter of Herodias danced before them, and pleased Herod. Whereupon he promised with an oath to give her whatsoever she would ask. And she, being before instructed of her mother, said, Give me here John Baptist's head in a charger. And the king was sorry: nevertheless for the oath's sake, and them which sat with him at meat, he commanded it to be given *her*. And he sent, and beheaded John in the prison. And his head was brought in a charger, and given to the damsel: and she brought *it* to her mother."

JOHN 9:4: "...the night cometh when no man can work."

REV. 13:15-17: "And he [the two-horned beast] had power to give life unto the image of the beast, that the image of the beast should both speak, and cause that as many as would not worship the image of the beast should be killed. And he causeth all, both small and great, rich and poor, free and bond, to receive a mark in their right hand, or in their foreheads: And that no man might buy or sell, save he that had the mark, or the name of the beast, or the number of his name."

REV. 17:12-14: "And the ten horns which thou sawest are ten kings, which have received no kingdom as yet; but receive power as kings one hour with the beast. These have one mind, and shall give their power and strength unto the beast. These shall make war with the Lamb, and the Lamb shall overcome them: for he is Lord of lords, and King of kings: and they that are with him *are* called, and chosen, and faithful."

REV. 19:19; 20:4: "And I saw the beast, and the kings of the earth, and their armies, gathered together to make war against him that sat on the horse, and against his army.

"...*I saw* the souls of them that were beheaded for the witness of Jesus, and for the word of God, and which had not worshipped the beast, neither his image, neither had received *his* mark upon their foreheads, or in their hands..."

PSA. 2:2: "The kings of the earth set themselves, and the rulers take counsel together, against the LORD, and against his anointed..."

"The Bible points out that about this time the Nominal Church systems of the world will rise to great prominence again in connection with the civil powers....It will be during the power of this so-called 'queen' for a little season, that the world will be under a great strain as respects any presentation of the Truth, and those found loyal to God and to principle will doubtless suffer therefor." *D1916 foreword, iii*

"While it is true now, to a large extent, that none are permitted to buy or sell (trade in the truth) in the common marts or synagogues, except those who have the mark of the beast or the number of his name, yet the fully consecrated have learned that magnificent temples of fashion, called churches, are no more necessary to the preaching of the gospel now than they were in the days of the Apostles...The question is, may not this statement of the Revelator mean still more than is at present experienced? and, like the Apostle Paul's statement, may it not imply that a time will come, in the last days, when sound doctrine will not be **endured at all**? May not ours in this respect correspond somewhat to the experience of John the Baptist (the type) who was shut up in prison? In other words, what may we expect between the present comparatively favorable time — though it is not without its difficulties — and the coming blessed time of unhindered righteousness?" *B259*

"As we understand this chapter of Revelation, the Image, as soon as vitalized, will very promptly use its influence, prestige, power, in every way to 'make fire come down from heaven' (Rev. 13:13): that is, to punish in the name of the Lord, those who in any sense of the word it shall consider to be its opponents. Speedily none will be allowed to buy or sell, in the spiritual marts, except those who have either the mark or the number of the beast, or of the image, either in the right hand of cooperation or in the forehead of public confession. This will mean the International Bible Students Association and all others not in affiliation with the Alliance will be subjected to radically coercive measures. Truth shall fall in the streets." *R5349:4*

REV. 13:13: "And he doeth great wonders, so that he maketh fire come down from heaven on the earth in the sight of men..."

REV. 18:21, *Diag.*: "...Thus with Violence shall Babylon, the GREAT City, be thrown down and shall by no means be found any more."

THE IMAGE OF THE BEAST

"The Evangelical Alliance, an organization of...different Protestant

denominations, was formed in 1846 for the very purpose of doing in their own way the same thing that Catholicism would do in its own way.... Protestantism said,

'We are divided. We have no power. We will organize.' then and there, according to the Scriptures, they made an image of the Beast.

"The Bible says, however, that before the Image can do any particular harm it must receive life from the two-horned Beast...." *D, old foreword ix*

REV. 13:15, *Diag.*: "And it was given him to give Breath [pneuma, spirit of life] to the IMAGE of the BEAST..."

"This two-horned Beast with horns like a lamb, but a voice like a dragon, we believe represents the church of England, which is not a party to the Evangelical Alliance. The Church of England makes the claim that the Church of Rome makes — that...she has the original apostolic succession; and that no one is commissioned to preach unless he has had divine, apostolic hands laid upon him...." *D, old foreword, ix*

"Gentile times have still two years to run. The Image of the Beast must yet receive life-power. It must be transformed from a mere mechanism to a living force....Its organization will continue to be futile unless it receives vitalization — unless its clergy shall be recognized as possessed of apostolic ordination and authority to teach. This, the prophecy indicates will come from the two-horned Beast, which we believe symbolically represents the Church of England. High-handed activities of Protestantism and Catholicism, operating in conjunction for the suppression of human liberties, await this vivifying of the Image.

"Armageddon cannot precede it, but must follow...." *D, old foreword, xv*

1916 PREDICTION

"After the war, the church systems will have a great deal of prosperity for a while. The depleted kingdoms of the earth will feel the need of these denominational supports, and they will get it....

"The church and the state are getting pretty well welded together. They depend upon each other, and will get pretty closely united in the time of need. Then these nominal churches will become quite prominent and churchianity will be given great power. At that time one who does not go in with them will be considered an anarchist. They will inquire, 'Why do you not get into the ranks as others do?' and their conclusion will be, 'Oh, you are an anarchist!' Then they will be disposed to look with disfavor upon every one who will not go in with the general run, and will be inclined to regard him as an enemy. As the education of the people along the lines of Truth increases, the people will see the Truth more and more. Consequently, and eventually, there will come a division of the people and the fall of great Babylon. The people will come to see that it represents

mere morality and not real Christianity. One can see this going on now in the world to some extent.

"Real Christianity is not being rightly appreciated except by a few. But through the spread of the truth and the consequent division of the waters, churchianity will collapse. A little later on we may expect a separation of the two classes in the Church. This will mean persecution. Then the Great Company, not willing to share the persecution, will, because of it, fall away; but the Little Flock Class will not be ashamed of persecution. After the Church has thus been separated by persecution, the Little Flock will, by and by, be taken away entirely by the whirlwind. It might be through anarchy about the time when Great Babylon will collapse. The division of the people will come first, followed by the persecution of the Church. Then comes the fall of Babylon, after which the great anarchy and trouble will come on the world...." *Q626*

PROGRESSING TOWARDS UNION

The Sun, Springfield, Ohio, Thursday January 8, 1970 by George W. Cornell of New York (AP) — "That was the legacy of the 1960's — a watershed in religious history. Other major religious events of the decade included: — The proposal by Dr. Blake in San Francisco in 1960 of a broad union of Protestant denominations, a project still being pursued through the nine-denomination Consultation on Church Union, with a specific plan to be ready this spring."

COMING SOON

From an associated Press Dispatch: "St. Louis, Mo....— Representatives of nine denominations Friday [March 13, 1970} approved a plan to unite before the end of this decade and create the biggest Protestant church in the world."

"The vote was unanimous and the plan now goes to the individual denominations for reaction. The new church would be called 'The Church of Christ Uniting.'

"The united church will include 'all that is indispensable to each of us' and yet be 'unlike the churches any of us has known in our past separateness,' declares the 145-page plan of union.

"After completing a week of revision, the Consultation on Church Union now forwards the plan to the participating groups, totaling 25 million Christians.

"Their reaction will be considered in final revisions before the plan is submitted for ratification, expected by the mid-1970's. Final implementation of the union would create the biggest Protestant church in the world.

"Envisaged as a church 'Truly catholic, truly evangelical, truly reformed,' the plan calls for the new church to press on toward ultimate reunion of all Christians, asserting:

"'Our Lord Jesus Christ prayed: "That they may all be one..." John 17:21...This oneness in the church is required for the credibility and effectiveness of Christ's mission.'

"Denominations involved include three Negro Methodist bodies and six mainly white communions, the Episcopal, United Methodists, United Presbyterians, Presbyterian U. S. Southern, Disciples, and United Church of Christ."

FROM CHICAGO TRIBUNE

"March 13, (1970)...

****

"The plan is to be submitted to members of the nine churches for their study and evaluation. Their responses are to be sent to the agency's headquarters by Jan. 15, 1972."

****

ORDINATION

March 10 (1970)....

****

"At the core of the ministry issue....is the fear of clerics that...the validity of their ordinations will be questioned.

"The plan proposes to eliminate this fear by establishing the ministry without a service of ordination or conditional ordination."

See also Index: **BABYLON**

VIOLENT OVERTHROW

ISA. 34:4,6: (after rolling together of vs. 4) — "The sword of the LORD is filled with blood, it is made fat with fatness, *and* with the blood of lambs and goats,...for the LORD hath a sacrifice in Bozrah, and a great slaughter in the land of Idumea."

ISA. 63:1-6: "Who is this that cometh from Edom, with dyed garments from Bozrah? I have trodden the winepress alone; and of the people *there was* none with me: for I will tread them in mine anger, and trample them in my fury; and their blood shall be sprinkled upon my garments, and I will stain all my raiment."

JER. 25:29-32: "For lo, I begin to bring evil on the city which is called by my name...I will call for a sword upon all the inhabitants of the earth, saith the LORD of hosts...The LORD shall roar from on high, and utter his voice from his holy habitation; he shall mightily roar...he shall give a shout, as they that tread *the grapes* ...."

JER. 50:14-16: "Put yourselves in array against Babylon round about:...her foundations are fallen her walls are

thrown down: for it *is* the vengeance of the LORD: take vengeance upon her; as she has done, do unto her. Cut off the sower from Babylon, and him that handleth the sickle in the time of harvest..."

JER. 51:8,9,63,64: (see entire chapter) "Babylon is suddenly fallen and destroyed:...forsake her...And it shall be, when thou hast made an end of reading this book, *that* thou shalt bind a stone to it, and cast it into the midst of Euphrates: And thou shalt say, Thus shall Babylon sink, and shall not rise from the evil that I will bring upon her..."

REV. 14:9-14: "If any man worship the beast and his image, and receive *his* mark in his forehead, or in his hand, The same shall drink of the wine of the wrath of God, which is poured out without mixture..."

REV. 14:18,19: "And the angel thrust in his sickle into the earth, and gathered the vine of the earth, and cast *it* into the great winepress of the wrath of God."

REV. 18:8: "Therefore shall her plagues come in one day, death, and mourning, and famine; and she shall be utterly burned with fire: for strong *is* the Lord God who judgeth her."

ISA. 47:9,11: "But these two *things* shall come to thee in a moment in one day, the loss of children, and widowhood:...Therefore shall evil come upon thee; thou shalt not know from whence it riseth: and mischief shall fall upon thee; thou shalt not be able to put it off: and desolation shall come upon thee suddenly, *which* thou shalt not know."

REV. 18:21: "And a mighty angel took up a stone like a great millstone, and cast it into the sea, saying, Thus with violence shall that great city Babylon be thrown down, and shall be found no more at all."

REV. 19:20: "And the beast was taken, and with him the false prophet that wrought miracles before him,...These both were cast alive into a lake of fire burning with brimstone."

REV. 20:10,14: "And the devil that deceived them was cast into the lake of fire and brimstone, where the beast and the false prophet *are*, and shall be tormented day and night for ever and ever. And death and hell were cast into the lake of fire. This is the second death."

"More evident does it become daily, that our Lord's declaration, 'Babylon is fallen' does not signify the outward collapse of 'Churchianity' but that nominal 'Christendom' has fallen from divine favor — just as the fall of national Judaism from divine favor at the rejection and crucifixion of Messiah at his first *presence*, meant not the collapse at the moment of that religio-political system....The collapse will *be* sudden and awful when it does come: and while only few

realize the *fallen-from grace* condition of Babylon in the present, none will be ignorant of her collapse when it comes." *R2553*

CHURCHIANITY

"A popularized religion — which costs nothing and is worth nothing-is readily accepted....There is **religion** enough, and **Churchianity** enough, **but a great famine for real Christianity** ....Thousands....assume that the church is an ark of safety; and...anxiety ends....There is a difference...between the **real** and the **nominal** Church of Christ...." *R533:2*

CHRIST VS. NOMINAL CHURCH

"A man may be saved without the Church, but he cannot be saved without Christ. A man may be in the church and *not* be saved; but he cannot be in *Christ* without salvation. *Sinners* sometimes become members of the Church; but only *saints* are members of Christ. A person may live in the Church for years, with...carnality and selfishness; but..." *R533:3*

2 COR. 5:17: "...If any man be in Christ, he is a new creature...."

NOT DIVIDED

"The Church may be rent with divisions; but Jesus Christ is not divided...." R533:3

1 COR. 3:3,4: "...For whereas there is among you envying, and strife, and divisions, are ye not carnal...? For...one saith, 'I am of Paul;' and another, 'I am of Apollos.'..."

1 COR. 12:25: "...There should be no schism in the body; but...the members should have the same care for one another."

CHRISTIAN, AND CHURCH WORSHIP DIFFER

"Multitudes...bow...to...priestly and official mandates, and imagine that the blind servility... will be...acceptable service...to Christ. The simplicity of the Gospel is lost in the imposing forms....splendid church edifices....prayers... addressed *to the* CONGREGATION....bells,... organs, ostentatious dressing, theatrical singing, rhetorical preaching, careless hearing, and unscriptural practicing!" *R533:3*

1 COR. 3:16: "...Ye are the temple of God, and...the Spirit of God dwelleth in you."

JOHN 4:21,23: "...ye shall neither in this mountain, nor yet at Jerusalem, worship the Father....the true worshippers shall worship the Father in spirit and in truth: for the Father seeketh such to worship him."

"Lazy religionists....take it for granted that the preacher is on the right track, and...swallow whatever may be doled out...without using their own brains in searching for the

hidden treasures of truth....Tradition exerts a more powerful influence than the Bible....A certain stereotyped circle of doctrinal views entitles a man to the claim of 'orthodoxy'....Few have...courage to question...." *R533:5*

TRUE CHRISTIAN FELLOWSHIP

1 JOHN 3:14: "We know that we have passed from death unto life, because we love the brethren...."

1 PET. 1:22: "...love one another with a pure heart fervently..."

HEB. 10:24: "...consider one another to provoke unto love and to good works."

ROM.12:10: "*Be* kindly affectioned one to another with brotherly love; in honour preferring one another..."

PHIL. 2:1-4, *Diag.*: "If, therefore, there be Any Comfort in Christ, if Any Soothing of Love, if Any Participation of Spirit, if Any Sympathies and Compassions, complete My Joy, that you may think the SAME thing, have the SAME Love, united in soul, minding the ONE thing; doing nothing from Party-spirit, or Vain-glory; but in HUMILITY esteeming others as excelling yourselves; not each one regarding HIS OWN interests, but each one also those of OTHERS."

GAL. 6:2: "Bear ye one another's burdens...."

EPH. 4:32: "And be ye kind one to another, tenderhearted, forgiving one another, even as God for Christ's sake hath forgiven you."

HEB. 13:1: "Let brotherly love continue."

EPH. 4:2,3: "With all lowliness and meekness, with longsuffering, forbearing one another in love; Endeavouring to keep the unity of the Spirit in the bond of peace."

See also Index: **Babylon**

CHURCH FEDERATION

2 COR. 6:17: "Wherefore come out from among them, and be ye separate,...and touch not the unclean...and I will receive you."

CONSCIENTIOUS OBJECTION TO WAR

"What should be the attitude of God's fully consecrated saints upon this subject? Should we favor war and bloodshed in a good cause...? What would our Lord do or say on the question? We believe that he would repeat his former words — 'They that take to the sword shall perish by the sword.' 'Do good to them that hate you and persecute you.' 'If ye suffer for well doing, happy are ye; for the spirit of glory and of God resteth on you.' 'My kingdom is not of this world, else would my servants fight.' These instructions, however, are not for the world individually or nationally, but for the saints who would walk in their Lord's footsteps." *R1912:5*

JESUS AN EXAMPLE TO US

LUKE 9:56: "For the Son of man is not come to destroy men's lives, but to save them...."

MATT. 26:52: "Then said Jesus unto him, Put up again thy sword into his place: for all they that take the sword shall perish with the sword."

MATT. 19:18: "...Thou shalt do no murder..."

LOVE YOUR ENEMIES

MATT. 5:43-46: "Ye have heard that it hath been said, Thou shalt love thy neighbour, and hate thine enemy. But I say unto you, Love your enemies, bless them that curse you, do good to them that hate you, and pray for them which despitefully use you, and persecute you; That ye may be the children of your Father which is in heaven: for he maketh his sun to rise on the evil and on the good, and sendeth rain on the just and on the unjust. For if ye love them which love you, what reward have ye? do not even the publicans the same?"

CHRISTIAN NOT TO RENDER EVIL FOR EVIL

1 THES. 5:15: "See that none render evil for evil unto any *man*; but ever follow that which is good, both among yourselves, and to all *men*."

GAL. 6:10: "As we have therefore opportunity, let us do good unto all men, especially unto them who are of the household of faith."

A MATTER OF CONSCIENCE

ACTS 24:16: "And herein do I exercise myself, to have always a conscience void of offense toward God, and *toward* men."

"Of course, no country forces aliens into the army; and were it recognized that true Christians are aliens as respects earthly governments, the whole question might solve itself. The Bible Students' claim is that the followers of Jesus have their citizenship in heaven, and that by giving their obedience to the heavenly Lord they renounce in a degree their allegiance to earthly kings — governments. It is for this reason that we have long advocated that the fully consecrated abstain from voting on political issues. if they so vote, they are identifying themselves with the earthly kingdoms, and might properly enough be called upon to shoot as they vote — to support the government which they helped to create.

"On the other hand, the Scriptural proposition is that while our citizenship is in heaven and we are aliens, strangers and foreigners in the world, with allegiance to the heavenly King, nevertheless, like all other foreigners, we are to be subject to the powers that be — subject to the laws of the country in which we may be living. But if obedience to the laws does not imply military service on the part of the foreigner, so obedience to the laws on the part of Bible Students does not imply military duty. Similarly with the oath of allegiance required by those who enter the Army — they are required to swear allegiance to the king and obedience to the officers of the king in all things. This oath is not required of aliens, foreigners, and is objected to by Bible Students, not because they are opposed to law and order or unwilling to be regulated by the government under which they live, but because they have already given allegiance to the higher power — the heavenly Lord. To them his words, his commands, etc., are paramount." *R5928:2,3*

THE GOLDEN RULE

MATT. 7:12: "Therefore all things whatsoever ye would that men should do to you, do ye even so to them: for this is the law and the prophets."

MICAH 4:3: "And he shall judge among many people, and rebuke strong nations afar off; and they shall beat their swords into plowshares, and their spears into pruninghooks: nation shall not lift up a sword against nation, neither shall they learn war any more."

OUR HISTORIC POSITION

Resolution passed in 1948 at Bible Students General convention in Chautauqua, Ohio, and affirmed August 4, 1965, at Bible Students General Convention held in Indiana University, Bloomington, Indiana:

BOOKLETS AVAILABLE FOR BRETHREN OF OUR FAITH AND FELLOWSHIP WHO ARE CONSCIENTIOUS OBJECTORS TO WAR.

1. "*The Association of Bible Students — Its Historic Position Toward War.*"

2. "*Bible Students Handbook for Conscientious Objectors.*" (A general outline of the necessary steps in securing the desired C.O. classification.)

3. "*Early Christian View of War and Military Service.*"

For any of the above booklets or copies of our resolution regarding participation in military service or training in times of peace or war, contact publishers of the book.

"Are not we subjects of the great King? And are not all the kingdoms of this world more or less identified with 'the prince of this world,' and his law of selfishness? Are not we, therefore, strangers and pilgrims here, and to some extent aliens and foreigners? It is eminently proper that we should love and appreciate every good law and all the servants of the earthly laws, and rejoice that quite the majority of the New Creation live under the highest forms of civil government to be found in the world today, and appreciate this as a divine favor and blessing. Hence, we neither traduce our native country, its rulers, nor its laws: but this does not mean that we must fight for these with carnal weapons....

"True, government may not always exempt those opposed to war from participating in it, although...provision...has in the past been made for some who...believe war to be unrighteous;...exempted

from military duty....” *F594*

Article entitled: CHRISTIAN DUTY AND THE WAR:

“We reflect that to become a member of the army and to put on the military uniform implies the duties and obligations of a soldier as recognized and accepted. A protest made to an officer would be insignificant—the public in general would know of it. Would not the Christian be really out of his place under such conditions? ‘But,’ some one replies, ‘If one were to refuse the uniform and the military service he would be shot.’

“We reply that if the presentation were properly made there might be some kind of exoneration; but if not, would it be any worse to be shot because of loyalty to the Prince of Peace and refusal to disobey his order than to be shot while under the banner of these earthly kings and apparently giving them support and, in appearance at least, compromising the teachings of our heavenly King? Of the two deaths, we would prefer the former — prefer to die because of faithfulness to our heavenly King. Certainly the one dying for his loyalty to the principles of the Lord’s teachings would accomplish far more by his death than

would the one dying in the trenches. We cannot tell how great the influence would be for peace, for righteousness, for God, if a few hundred of the Lord’s faithful were to follow the course of Shadrach, Meshach and Abednego, and refuse to bow down to the god of war. Like those noble men they might say, — ‘Our God is able to deliver us, if he chooses so to do; but if he does not choose to deliver us, that will not alter our course. We will serve him and follow his direction, come what may.’” *R5755:4,5*

Article entitled: CONSCIENCE AND THE WAR:

“Of course, no country forces aliens into the army; and were it recognized that true Christians are aliens as respects earthly governments, the whole question might solve itself. The Bible Students claim is that the followers of Jesus have their citizenship in heaven, and that by giving their obedience to the heavenly Lord they renounce in a degree their allegiance to earthly kings — governments.

“The Scriptural proposition is that while our citizenship is in heaven and we are aliens, strangers and foreigners in the world, with allegiance to the heavenly King, nevertheless, like all other foreigners, we are to be subject to the powers that be — subject to the laws of the country in which we may be living. But if obedience to the laws does not imply military service on the part of the foreigners, so obedience to the laws on the part of Bible Students does not imply military duty....Those who enter the Army...are required to swear allegiance to the king and obedience to the officers of the king in all things. This oath is not required of aliens, foreigners, and is objected to by Bible Students, not because they are opposed to law and order or unwilling to be regulated by the government under which they live, but because they have already given allegiance to the higher power — the heavenly Lord. To them his words, his commands, etc., are paramount.” *R5928:2,3*

August 1948, BIBLE STUDENTS GENERAL CONVENTION RESOLUTION

“WHEREAS the Congress of the United States has enacted a conscription law and this law affects the young men of our fellowship, we in General Convention assembled at Chautauqua, Ohio, as representatives of the various Bible Students congregations of the United States, take this opportunity to clearly state our position regarding participation in military service and training in time of peace or time of war.

“For the past sixty years the teachings of Pastor Russell in the Six Volumes of Studies in the Scriptures, Tabernacle Shadows, and other writings, have and still do represent the convictions of all those in our fellowship and service.

“Our convictions are the same today as theywere during World War 1 and World War 2. We believe that we as

Christians should not engage in military service and training. This conviction is based upon our belief that we are children of God, whose laws forbid participation in war.

“Further, we recognize the individuality of every Christian in the exercising of his conscience in harmony with the obligations or vows he has made to his Creator.

“It is moved that we, The Bible Student General Convention, assembled at the Miami Valley Chautauqua [Concention], Chautauqua, Ohio, August 1-8, 1948, declare the above statement is a proper expression of our conscientious convictions.”

WOULD NOT JOIN THE ASSOCIATION OF BIBLE STUDENTS TO EVADE MILITARY SERVICE

One would be unlikely to join our Fellowship as a means to evade military service because the standards of accepted conduct and the rigors of adherence thereto would be too great.

The rank and file members of our Fellowship give far more of their time, energies, and money, than do the rank and file of other groups. The livelihood of Bible Students becomes their avocation and their religious activities become their vocation.

The movement is highly evangelistic with each member actively engaged; it is profoundly studious, every member of the congregation being a Bible student in his own right. At the meetings of the Association of Bible Students intense study, analysis, and research of the Bible is pursued. In this analytical approach to the Bible, the study of its contents is conducted along various general lines: its doctrines, precepts, promises, exhortations.

CONSECRATION

"...a complete turning away from sin and the world; a thorough turning of every sentiment, hope, ambition and desire 'unto the Lord,' and into harmony with his divine plan." *R2134:1*

DEFINITION

PSA. 40:8: "I delight to do thy will, O my God: yea, thy law *is* within my heart."

PSA. 50:5: "Gather my saints together unto me; those that have made a covenant with me by sacrifice."

PROV. 23:26: "My son, give me thine heart, and let thine eyes observe my ways."

MATT. 10:38,39: "And he that taketh not his cross, and followeth after me, is not worthy of me. He that findeth his life shall lose it: and he that loseth his life for my sake shall find it."

MATT: 16:24: "Then said Jesus unto his disciples, If any *man* will come after me, let him deny himself, and take up his cross, and follow me."

COUNTING THE COST

MATT. 8:21,22: "And another of his disciples said unto him, Lord, suffer me first to go and bury my father. But Jesus said unto him, Follow me; and let the dead bury their dead."

LUKE 9:61,62: "And another also said, Lord, I will follow thee; but let me first go bid them farewell, which are at home at my house. And Jesus said unto him, No man, having put his hand to the plow, and looking back, is fit for the kingdom of God."

LUKE 14:28: "For which of you, intending to build a tower, sitteth not down first, and counteth the cost, whether he have *sufficient* to finish *it*?"

"The Lord would not have anyone take upon himself the responsibilities of this relationship without due deliberation and forethought." *R2072:2*

MOTIVATION

PSA. 116:12-14: "What shall I render unto the LORD *for* all his benefits toward me? I will take the cup of salvation, and call upon the name of the LORD. I will pay my vows unto the LORD now in the presence of all his people."

"Such find themselves at once thinking and acting as the new [transformed] mind prompts, even to the crucifixion of the human desires." *A196*

MATT 11:29: "Take my yoke upon you, and learn of me; for I am meek and lowly in heart: and ye shall find rest unto your souls."

JOHN 6:38: "For I came down from heaven, not to do mine own will, but the will of him that sent me."

JOHN 17:1: "THESE words spake Jesus, and lifted up his eyes to heaven, and said, Father, the hour is come; glorify thy Son, that thy Son also may glorify thee..."

CALL TO CONSECRATION

MATT. 11:28,29: "Come unto me, all *ye* that labour and are heavy laden, and I will give you rest. Take my yoke upon you, and learn of me; for I am meek and lowly in heart: and ye shall find rest unto your souls."

ROM. 12:1: "I BESEECH you therefore, brethren, by the mercies of God, that ye present your bodies a living sacrifice, holy, acceptable unto God, *which is* your reasonable service."

"...an exhortation, not to the world, but to believers." *R5422:2*

EPH. 4:4: "*There is* one body, and one Spirit, even as ye are called in one hope of your calling."

PSA. 51:17: "The sacrifices of God *are* a broken spirit: a broken and a contrite heart, O God, thou wilt not despise."

MATT. 5:23,24: "Therefore if thou bring thy gift to the altar, and there rememberest that thy brother hath ought against thee; Leave there thy gift before the altar, and go thy way; first be reconciled to thy brother, and then come and offer thy gift."

"...do not think it will be acceptable to God while in your heart or outwardly you are practicing injustice toward others." *R4077:6*

MATT. 10:37,38: "He that loveth father or mother more than me is not worthy of me: and he that loveth son or daughter more than me is not worthy of me. And he that taketh not his cross, and followeth after me, is not worthy of me."

MARK 12:30: "And thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy mind, and with all thy strength: this is the first commandment."

JAS. 4:6: "But he giveth more grace. Wherefore he saith, God resisteth the proud, but giveth grace unto the humble."

DISCIPLINE IN CONSECRATION

ROM. 8:13: "For if ye live after the flesh, ye shall die: but if ye through the Spirit do mortify the deeds of the body, ye shall live."

1 COR. 9:27: "But I keep under my body, and bring *it* into subjection: lest that by any means, when I have preached to others, I myself should be a castaway."

1 COR. 11:31: "For if we would judge ourselves, we should not be judged."

"In these words the Apostle seems to be saying that if we as Christians should properly criticize ourselves, the Lord would not find it necessary to take us in hand and give us judgments, or criticism." *R5519:2*

GAL. 5:24: "And they that are Christ's have crucified the flesh with the affections and lusts."

JAS. 1:26: "If any man among you seem to be religious, and bridleth not his tongue, but deceiveth his own heart, this man's religion is vain."

SHOULD IT BE URGED UPON ANY?

JOSH. 24:15: "...choose you this day whom ye will serve...as for me and my house, we will serve the LORD."

1 KINGS 18:21: "...How long halt ye between two opinions? if the *LORD be* God, follow him: but if Baal, *then* follow him....."

MATT. 11:29: "Take my yoke upon you, and learn of me; for I am meek and lowly in heart: and ye shall find rest unto your souls."

LUKE 14:28: "For which of you, intending to build a tower, sitteth not down first, and counteth the cost, whether he have *sufficient* to finish *it*?"

"We recommend that none be urged unduly to make a full consecration of their hearts, their lives, their all, to the Lord and to his service." *R5571:6*

ROM. 12:1: "I BESEECH you therefore, brethren, by the mercies of God, that ye present your bodies a living sacrifice, holy, acceptable unto God, *which is* your reasonable service."

"Urge them to promptness,...to a full confession of the Lord and of the Truth." *R2825:4*

2 COR. 6:1: "We then, as workers together *with him*, beseech *you* also that ye receive not the grace of God in vain."

AID IN FULFILLING OUR CONSECRATIONS

DEUT. 31:6: "Be strong and of a good courage, fear not, nor be afraid of them: for the LORD thy God, he *it is* that doth go with thee; he will not fail thee, nor forsake thee."

PSA. 46:1: "To the chief Musician for the sons of Korah, A Song upon Alamoth. God is our refuge and strength, a very present help in trouble."

PSA. 91:11: "For he shall give his angels charge over thee, to keep thee in all thy ways."

2 COR. 12:9: "And he said unto me, My grace is sufficient for thee: for my strength is made perfect in weakness. Most gladly therefore will I rather glory in my infirmities, that the power of Christ may rest upon me."

HEB. 4:16: "Let us therefore come boldly unto the throne of grace, that we may obtain mercy, and find grace to help in time of need."

HEB. 13:5: "...for he hath said, I will never leave thee nor forsake thee."

"The Lord's grace is sufficient for all and for every time of need." *R5942:4*

REWARDS OF CONSECRATION

MATT. 25:21: "His lord said unto him, Well done, thou good and faithful servant: *thou* hast been faithful over a few things, I will make thee ruler over many things: enter thou into the joy of thy lord."

JAS. 1:12: "Blessed *is* the man that endureth temptation: for when he is tried, he shall receive the crown of life, which the Lord hath promised to them that love him."

1 JOHN 3:2: "Beloved, now are we the sons of God, and it doth not yet appear what we shall be: but we know that, when he shall appear, we shall be like him; for we shall see him as he is."

REV. 2:10: "...be thou faithful unto death, and I will give thee a crown of life."

"The expression, 'the crown of life,' is another way of saying the reward of life: and this life is on the highest plane." *R5499:3*

REV. 14:1: "And I looked, and, lo, a Lamb stood on the mount Sion, and with him an hundred forty *and* four thousand, having his Father's name written in their foreheads."

FAMILY OBLIGATIONS

1 COR. 7:20,24: "Let every man abide in the same calling wherein he was called. Brethren, let every man, wherein he is called, therein abide with God."

1 TIM. 5:8: "But if any provide not for his own, and specially for those of his own house, he hath denied the faith, and is worse than an infidel."

"Not only are we not to rob our families of things needful for their proper care, but the scriptures instruct us that it is part of our duty to make provision for them, looking down to some extent to the future." *F577*

EXPERIENCES TO BE EXPECTED

MATT. 10:25: "It is enough for the disciple that he be as his master, and the servant as his lord. If they have called the master of the house Beelzebub, how much more shall they call them of his household?"

JOHN 15:18: "If the world hate you, ye know that it hated me before *it hated* you."

JOHN 17:14: "...the world hath hated them, because they are not of the world, even as I am not of the world."

ACTS 14:22: "...we must through much tribulation enter into the kingdom of God."

ROM. 8:36: "As it is written, For thy sake we are killed all the day long; we are accounted as sheep for the slaughter."

2 TIM. 3:12: "Yea, and all that will live godly in Christ Jesus shall suffer persecution."

"The Lord's followers in the present time are called upon to suffer persecution for righteousness' sake." *R2415:3*

1 JOHN 3:13: "Marvel not, my brethren, if the world hate you."

GIVING UP RESTITUTION RIGHTS

DEUT. 18:1,2: "The priests the Levites, *and* all the tribe of Levi, shall have no part nor inheritance with Israel: they shall eat the offerings of the LORD made by fire, and his inheritance. Therefore shall they have no inheritance among their brethren: the *LORD is* their inheritance, as he hath said unto them."

"God thus typified the fact that the antitypical Levites would not have an earthly inheritance, but rather the spiritual or heavenly inheritance." *R5023:2*

MATT. 13:44,46: "Again, the kingdom of heaven is like unto treasure hid in a field; the which when a man hath found, he hideth, and for joy thereof goeth and selleth all that he hath, and buyeth that field....Who, when he had found one pearl of great price, went and sold all that he had, and bought it."

MATT. 19:21: "Jesus said unto him, If thou wilt be perfect, go *and* sell that thou hast, and give to the poor, and thou shalt have treasure in heaven: and come *and* follow me."

LUKE 14:33: "So likewise, whosoever he be of you that forsaketh not all that he hath, he cannot be my disciple."

JOYS OF CONSECRATION

PSA. 40:8: "I delight to do thy will, O my God: yea, thy law *is* within my heart."

MARK 10:29,30: "...Verily I say unto you, There is no man that hath left house, or brethren, or sisters, or father, or

mother, or wife, or children, or lands, for my sake, and the gospel's, But he shall receive an hundredfold now in this time, houses, and brethren, and sisters, and mothers, and children, and lands, with persecutions; and in the world to come eternal life."

JOHN 15:11: "These things have I spoken unto you, that my joy

may remain in you, and *that* your joy might be full."

"Whoever knows nothing of the joys of the Lord in the present time will evidently not be prepared for the joys of the Lord in the kingdom...." *R3270:4*

ROM. 14:17: "For the kingdom of God is not meat and drink; but righteousness, and peace, and joy in the Holy Ghost [Spirit]."

ROM. 15:13: "Now the God of hope fill you with all joy and peace in believing, that ye may abound in hope, through the power of the Holy Ghost [Spirit]."

GAL. 5:22: "But the fruit of the Spirit is love, joy, peace, longsuffering, gentleness, goodness, faith."

HEB. 12:2: "Looking unto Jesus the author and finisher of *our* faith; who for the joy that was set before him endured the cross, despising the shame, and is set down at the right hand of the throne of God."

CONSECRATION IN TYPE

EXOD. 28:41: "And thou shalt put them upon Aaron thy brother, and his sons with him; and shalt anoint them, and consecrate them, and sanctify them, that they may minister unto me in the priest's office."

EXOD. 30:30: "And thou shalt anoint Aaron and his sons, and consecrate them, that *they* may minister unto me in the priest's office."

LEV. 8:12: "And he poured of the anointing oil upon Aaron's head, and anointed him, to sanctify him."

"The sign or mark of consecration or sanctification was the anointing with the holy oil, which symbolized the holy Spirit." *R3280:4*

EZEK. 43:26: "Seven days shall they purge the altar and purify it; and they shall consecrate themselves."

LIABILITY TO SECOND DEATH

MATT. 12:32: "And whosoever speaketh a word against the Son of man, it shall be forgiven him: but whosoever speaketh against the Holy Ghost [Spirit], it shall not be forgiven him, neither in this world, neither in the *world* to come."

1 COR. 3:17: "If any man defile the temple of God, him shall God destroy; for the temple of God is holy, which *temple* ye are."

2 TIM. 2:12: "If we suffer, we shall also reign *with* him: if we deny *him*, he also will deny us."

HEB. 6:6: (it is impossible), "If they shall fall away, to renew them again unto repentance; seeing they crucify to themselves the Son of God afresh, and put *him* to an open shame."

HEB. 10:26,38: "For if we sin wilfully after that we have received the knowledge of the truth, there remaineth no more sacrifice for sins, Now the just shall live by faith: but *if any man* draw back, my soul shall have no pleasure in him."

2 PET. 2:12: "But these, as natural brute beasts, made to be taken and destroyed, speak evil of the things that they understand not; and shall utterly perish in their own corruption..."

1 JOHN 5:16: "...There is a sin unto death: I do not say that he shall pray for it."

SINGLENESS OF PURPOSE

MATT. 6:24: "No man can serve two masters: for either he will hate the one, and love the other; or else he will hold to the one, and despise the other. Ye cannot serve God and mammon."

JOHN 4:34: "Jesus saith unto them, My meat is to do the will of him that sent me, and to finish his work."

GAL. 1:10: "For do I now persuade men, or God? or do I seek to please men? for if I yet pleased men, I should not be the servant of Christ."

GAL. 6:14: "But God forbid that I should glory, save in the cross of our Lord Jesus Christ, by whom the world is crucified unto me, and I unto the world."

PHIL 3:13: "Brethren, I count not myself to have apprehended: but *this* one thing *I do*, forgetting those things which are behind, and reaching forth unto those things which are before..."

"We observe the Apostle's singleness of purpose — 'This *one thing* I do.' He did not try to do several things: if he had, he would surely have failed." *R1885:3*

JAS. 4.4: "...whosoever therefore will be a friend of the world is the enemy of God."

WHAT AGE FOR CONSECRATION

1 TIM. 4:12: "Let no man despise thy youth; but be thou an example of the believers, in word, in conversation, in charity, in spirit, in faith, in purity."

"A child bred to and reared in such an atmosphere of love may be expected to desire to please the Lord and to obey him from the earliest moments of his consciousness; and from the time he reaches ten to twelve years of age he should be encouraged to consider the propriety of a full consecration to the Lord." *F529*

IN THE DAYS OF THY YOUTH R1671

"Only believers have ever been amenable to the high calling of joint-heirship with Christ, and to suffering with him. The innocency of childhood is in the Scriptures set forth as a beautiful picture, and one that it to be emulated by all of the Lord's people in spiritual matters—they are to be children as respects malice; they are to be simple in their faith and love, not given to duplicity, misrepresentation, deep scheming, etc. In this sense of the word the Lord assures us that we must all become as little children, else we cannot enter the kingdom of Heaven. But to be as a little child in these respects, and to be a little child, are two different matters. The Lord did not accept any of the infants of Palestine to be his disciples, nor has he called infants to be his disciples since.

"However, the age at which an intelligent faith in the Lord might be exercised and the time, therefore, at which, after the exercise of that faith, a covenant of full consecration to the Lord's service could be intelligently entered into, must vary with the individuality of the children. We have known some that we considered quite competent both to believe and to consecrate at as early an age as fourteen, and all we should ask of any would be an evidence of their faith and an evidence of appreciation of consecration.

"We have a duty to our children, even tho they be too young to appreciate matters for themselves. They are our children, and under our care, and for us to deliberately lead their young feet into the snares of the Adversary, we know how much evil it has done us, would be a crime on our part against them and against the truth. Every parent should recognize himself as having incurred grave responsibilities toward his children, not only for their temporal necessities, but equally for their mental and moral training; and the

parents who are most faithful in the discharge of this Godappointed responsibility are sure to be the ones who are running the race themselves most successfully: for they will find that every effort to make clear the divine plan to the child will bring clearness and force to the parent's mind, and every attempt to inculcate the spirit of the Lord, the spirit of holiness, the spirit of truth, will be sure to bring

with it a blessing, not only upon the heart of the child, but upon the heart of the parent. And years will show that the faithful parents will have reward through their children, of joy and peace and comfort, while those parents who neglect their children, or who trust them to those who are likely to mislead them in spiritual things, are pretty sure eventually to reap according as thy have sown — poor or meager results." *R2766:2*

"Neither should we understand that because Jesus' ministry began at thirty, and because those whom he called to be his disciples were of mature years, that this would limit the age of any who might become the followers of Christ during this Gospel age. Quite to the contrary, we believe that some of very tender years have reached a sufficiency of information respecting our Lord and his work of redemption and his invitation to followers to intelligently take their stand with Jesus' disciples by full consecration of heart and life and every interest, with apparently quite a clear conception of what they were doing. Indeed, we feel like encouraging those of the young who are disposed to make a full consecration of their lives to the Lord to believe that in so doing they are not only acceptable, but that additionally they the sooner enter into the rest of faith, and are spared many of the unfavorable experiences which come to those who first seek the world and the pleasures thereof." *R3796:3*

"In respect to your little son: If I were you, I would not press consecration upon him, but I would hold it up before his mind as the only proper course for all intelligent people who have come to a knowledge of God and his gracious purposes — 'your reasonable service' — everybody's reasonable service. Nothing else is reasonable when once we see the truth. The whole world will be given the opportunity of consecration eventually. Without consecration none will ever gain everlasting life on any plane.

"Your son cannot be injured by consecration, but may be greatly helped. If the Lord sees him incompetent in any sense or manner for the high calling he will not accept him to that, but to the earthly favor in due time. But who shall say that a child of ten may not very fully and completely come to an appreciation of full consecration in thought and word and act? Looking back I can see that my whole consecration was first made a little advance — beyond twelve years of age...." *R5477:3*

CONSECRATION BETWEEN AGES

"...consecration is the only reasonable, proper course for the Lord's people anyway - full consecration will be required of those who will live and enjoy the blessings of the Millennial age — nothing short of it." *F156*

"After Close of High Calling" *Q152*

"Reward for Those Not Begotten." *Q152*

"Since consecration is the only reasonable attitude...." *R5134:4*

"Those Consecrating Between the Ages" *R5761:4*

JOHN 6:37: "All that the Father giveth me shall come to me; and him that cometh to me I will in no wise cast out."

CONSECRATING CHILDREN

1 SAM. 1:11: "And she vowed a vow, and said, O LORD of hosts, if thou wilt indeed look on the affliction of thine handmaid, and remember me, and not forget thine handmaid, but wilt give unto thine handmaid a man child, then I will give him unto the LORD all the days of his life, and there shall no razor come upon his head."

"The Scriptures make very plain the fact that children may and should be consecrated to the Lord by their parents before their birth or even their begetting." *R1671:3*

MATT. 19:14: "But Jesus said, Suffer little children, and forbid them not, to come unto me: for of such is the kingdom of heaven."

MARK 10:13: "And they brought young children to him, that he should touch them: and his disciples rebuked those that brought them."

LUKE 18:15: "And they brought unto him also infants, that he would touch them: but when his disciples saw it, they rebuked them."

WHAT IT MEANS

"Henceforth, I shall have no will of my own. Whatever is your will, Father, shall be my will. I shall do anything you will have me to do....I have given up my life. Direct me through your providences and through your words that I may see your will and do it." *R5085:3*

"God first, self last...." *R5958:5*

"Consecration to God will insure a searching of his plan revealed in his Word, that we may be able to spend and be spent for him and in his service, in harmony with his arranged and revealed plan." *T119*

TYPICAL (LEVITICUS 16)

"The sin offerings of this Day of Atonement were two — a bullock and...the 'Lord's Goat.'" *R4034:5*

See *Tabernacle Shadows*, Pages 39 - 48.

ANTITYPICAL

"Jesus reached the age of 30 and...was permitted to offer himself without spot to God as the World's sin offering...'Lo,

I come to do thy will, O God.'...There the Redeemer became the antitypical...bullock....He...completed (his consecration) at Calvary, crying, 'It is finished.'" *R4969:3,6*

"The Lord's goat represented all the Lord's 'little flock' of faithful followers." *T63*

"...all that was done with the bullock was repeated with the 'Lord's Goat.'" *T61*

CONSECRATION VERSUS SANCTIFICATION

Consecration is a definite step taken at a definite moment; the yielding up of the will and all to God.

Sanctification contains this thought plus the process of the development of character to full maturity. This must then be maintained to the end of our course."

VOLUNTARY

"God does not demand that we shall *sacrifice* our lives in his

service, nor for any other cause. Sacrifice, therefore is set forth in the Scriptures as a voluntary act...” *F151*

“The Father seeketh such to worship him as worship him in spirit and in truth. (John 4:23)...Never did Jesus or the apostles urge worldly people to become disciples of Christ. They merely preached...and accepted those... influenced by the great facts set forth. ‘sit down and count the cost.’ (Luke 14:28)” *R5454:4*

TO BE FOLLOWED BY PERFORMANCE

“It is not all over when we consecrate....’For the bodies of those beasts whose blood is brought into the Most Holy by the high priest, wherewith to make atonement for sin, are burned outside the camp’ (Heb. 13:11). When we sacrifice our will we should not entertain the thought, Now I have done my part, let the High Priest do the rest!....we are to continue to fill up the sufferings of Christ.” *R4900:5*

“For one to make a consecration of his time and his talents and then to withhold his offerings...will lose them their place in the throne, their privilege of being a part of the bride class. The bride will be made up of those who not only have presented their bodies in the beginning, but who have faithfully continued...unto death.” *R5423:6*

JUSTIFICATION VITALIZED

“The consecration of the individual to do the Lord’s will, the full surrender of his own will,...precedes justification.” *R5881:1*

“Consecration opens the door and gives us the standing...relationship...backing and encouragement of the divine promises, and puts us in the way....” *F78*

HOW WE COME

“While we present ourselves to God, we do not come to him directly with our presentation. We come through the great High Priest...the Redeemer....” *R5423:6*

COVENANTS

“A covenant is a ratified; unalterable agreement....Three stand out very prominently, as in them have been bound up all the best interests of mankind.” *R4370:2*

“**First**: the covenant of God to Abraham....” *R4370:3*

“**Second**: The Law....” *R4370:6*

“**Third**:...the new covenant....” *R4370*

“A clear appreciation of the divine covenants is important and valuable to the Christian. In the knowledge of these he possesses the key to the understanding of the entire plan of God.” *R2120:1*

THE ABRAHAMIC COVENANT

GEN. 12:1-3: “...Get thee out of thy country, and from thy kindred, and from thy father’s house, unto a land that I will show thee: And I will make of thee a great nation, and I will bless thee, and make thy name great; and thou shalt be a blessing: And I will bless them that bless thee, and curse him that curseth thee**: and in thee shall all families of the earth be blessed**.”

TWO SEEDS PROMISED

GEN. 22:16-18: “...By myself have I sworn, for because thou hast...not withheld thy son, thine only *son*: That in blessing I will bless thee, and in multiplying I will multiply thy seed as the stars of the heaven, and as the sand which is upon the sea shore; and thy seed shall possess the gate of his enemies; And in thy seed shall all the nations of the earth be blessed; because thou hast obeyed my voice.”

ROM. 4:16: “...it is of faith, that *it might* be by grace; to the end the promise might be sure to all the seed; not to that only which is of the law, but to that also which is of the faith of Abraham; who is the father of us all.”

“Since God’s favors are...marked out for the heavenly and earthly Seeds of Abraham—the earthly through the heavenly — it follows that the blessing of the other nations will come about through their affiliation with these.” *R4320:6*

CONFIRMED WITH AN OATH

HEB. 6:17,18: “...God, willing more abundantly to show unto the heirs of promise the immutability of his counsel, confirmed *it* by an oath: That by two immutable things, in which *it was* impossible for God to lie, we might have a strong consolation, who have fled for refuge to lay hold upon the hope set before us.”

THE UNCONDITIONAL OATHBOUND COVENANT

(Sub-heading, *R2120*)

“The...comprehensive statement of the divine plan, the ‘Covenant with Abraham,’...was an advance declaration of the whole *Gospel* ....” *R2122:4*

GAL. 3:8: “And the scripture, foreseeing that God would justify the heathen through faith, preached before the gospel unto Abraham, *saying*, In thee shall all nations be blessed.”

SELECTION OF THE CHURCH

“The selection...of the church is along lines of severe testing; for God has predestinated that all who will constitute members of the multitudinous seed must be...” *R2122:4*

ROM. 8:29: “...conformed to the image of his Son, that he might be the firstborn among many brethren.”

"According to the original divine plan a *multitudinous* 'Seed' was contemplated from the beginning (Gal. 3:29; Eph. 1:4) — the fullness, power and authority of which should always reside in Christ Jesus, our Lord and Redeemer. The next step in the divine plan has been the *selection* from among men of this special class, — called the church of Christ — of which Jesus is the Lord and Head (Eph. 1:22,23); called the bride, the Lamb's wife and joint-heir (Rev. 19:7); called also 'members of his body.' controlled by him as the Head (1 Cor. 12:27); called also his 'brethren' (Heb. 2:11); called also the 'royal priesthood,' under him as the High Priest or Chief Priest, and sharers of his glory, honor and immortality, and joint-heirs in his kingdom and in his inheritance in the Abrahamic Covenant as the 'seed' to whom belongs the promise. — See Rev. 20:4; Gal. 3:29.

"This selection of the church is along lines of severe testing; for God has *predestinated* that all who will constitute members of the multitudinous seed must 'be conformed to the image of his Son, that he might be the first born among *many brethren*.' (Rom. 8:27) And since none are 'called' to this high honor except the 'justified,' and none justified except through faith..., it follows that, since the vast majority thus far are blinded by the prince of this world so that they cannot believe (2 Cor. 4:4), and since even after believing and being called many fail to make their 'calling and election *sure;'* therefore this elect church, when completed and perfected and glorified at the end of the 'narrow way' which few find (Matt. 7:14), will be a 'little flock,' — containing 'not many great,' rich or wise, according to the estimate of this world. 1 Cor. 1:26-28; Jas. 2:5." *R2122:4,5*

"When the elect number has been selected, and been glorified with their Head, Christ Jesus, as associates and

joint-heirs in his Millennial kingdom-then, and not till then, will the 'seed of Abraham,' have fully come...." *R2122:6*

THE SPIRITUAL SEED

GAL. 3:29: "And if ye *be* Christ's, then are ye Abraham's seed, and heirs according to the promise."

THE LAND PROMISED TO ABRAM

GEN. 13:14-17: "And the LORD said unto Abram,...Lift up now thine eyes, and look from the place where thou art northward, and southward, and eastward, and westward: For all the land which thou seest, to thee will I give it, and to thy seed for ever. And I will make thy seed as the dust of the earth: so that if a man can number the dust of the earth, *then* shall thy seed also be numbered. Arise, walk through the land in the length of it and in the breadth of it; for I will give it unto thee."

NOT YET FULFILLED

ACTS 7:5: "And he gave him none inheritance in it, no, not *so much as* to set his foot on: yet he promised that he would give it to him for a possession, and to his seed after him, when *as yet* he had no child."

SPIRITUAL SEED RAISED FIRST BEFORE ANCIENT WORTHIES

HEB. 11:39,40: "And these all, having obtained a good report through faith, received not the promise: God having provided some better thing for us, that they without us should not be made perfect."

ISRAEL'S LAW COVENANT AS AN ADDITION

"The Law covenant...was an addition to a previous Covenant...the Abrahamic covenant was the original one,...it had stood for four hundred and thirty years before the Law covenant was **added**...." *F360*

GAL. 3:19,17: "...It was added because of transgressions, till the seed should come to whom the promise was made;....the covenant, that was confirmed before of God in Christ, the law, which was four hundred and thirty years after, cannot disannul, that it should make the promise of none effect."

"It was during the barrenness of this, the original covenant, that another was *added*, viz., the Sinaitic or Jewish...or Law covenant. It brought forth...a fleshly seed, not according to the promise, not suitable to fulfill the original promise....this Law covenant was typified by Sarah's maid, Hagar, and...the Jews under that Law covenant were typified by Ishmael, her son; and...as God said that the son of the bondwoman (Hagar) should not be heir with the son of the freewoman (Sarah) it meant...that the Jew under the

Law Covenant would not inherit the original Abrahamic promise, which must go to the spiritual Seed...." *F361*

THE ALLEGORY: CHURCH DEVELOPED UNDER SARAH COVENANT

GAL. 4:22-31: "...Abraham had two sons, the one by a bondmaid, the other by a freewoman. But he *who was* of the bondwoman was born after the flesh; but he of the freewoman was by promise. Which things are an allegory: for these are the two covenants; the one from the mount Sinai, which gendereth to bondage, which is Agar. For this Agar is mount Sinai in Arabia, and answereth to Jerusalem which now is, and is in bondage with her children. But Jerusalem which is above is free, which is the mother of us all. For it is written, Rejoice, *thou* barren that bearest not; break forth and cry, thou that travailest not: for the desolate hath many more children than she which hath an husband. Now we, brethren, as Isaac was, are the children of promise. But as then he *that was born* after the flesh persecuted him that was born after the Spirit, even so *it is* now. Nevertheless what saith the scripture? Cast out the bondwoman and her son: for the son of the bondwoman shall not be heir with the son of the freewoman. So then, brethren, we are not children of the bondwoman, but of the free."

EXPLANATION

"Abraham typified the Heavenly Father;... Sarah, his wife, typified this original Covenant, from which so much blessings ultimately is to proceed....as Sarah was barren for a time, and failed to bring forth the seed of promise, just so God's Covenant was barren for nearly two thousand years, and only began to bring forth the Seed of promise in our Lord's resurrection from the dead. There the Head of the Seed of Abraham was born and ultimately the entire body of Christ, the antitypical Isaac, will be *delivered* ('born from the dead') into the spiritual condition. Then the Seed having come, the promise, or Covenant, will have its fulfillment — all the families of the earth will be blessed." *F361*

THE DECALOGUE

DEUT. 5:1-3: "And Moses called all Israel, and said...The LORD our God made a covenant with us in Horeb. The LORD made not this **covenant with our fathers, but with us**...."

See Deut. 5:6-21 or Exod. 20:1-17 for this summary of the law.

DEUT. 5:6-21: "I *am* the LORD thy God, which brought thee out of the land of Egypt, from the house of bondage. Thou shalt have none other gods before me. Thou shalt not make thee *any* graven image, or any likeness of *any thing*

that is in heaven above, or that *is* in the earth beneath, or that is in the waters beneath the earth: Thou shalt not bow down thyself unto them, nor serve them: for I the LORD thy God am a jealous God, visiting the iniquity of the fathers upon the children unto the third and fourth *generation* of them that hate me, And showing mercy unto thousands of them that love me and keep my commandments. Thou shalt not take the name of the LORD thy God in vain: for the LORD will not hold *him* guiltless that taketh his name in vain. Keep the sabbath day to sanctify it, as the LORD thy God hath commanded thee. Six days thou shalt labour, and do all thy work But the seventh day *is* the sabbath of the LORD thy God: *in it* thou shalt not do any work, thou, nor thy son, nor thy daughter, nor thy manservant, nor thy maidservant, nor thine ox, nor thine ass, nor any of thy cattle, nor thy stranger that *is* within thy gates; that thy manservant and thy maidservant may rest as well as thou. And remember that thou wast a servant in the land of Egypt, and *that* the LORD thy God brought thee out thence through a mighty hand and by a stretched out arm: therefore the LORD thy God commanded thee to keep the sabbath day. Honour thy father and thy mother, as the LORD thy God hath commanded thee; that thy days may be prolonged, and that it may go well with thee, in the land which the LORD thy God giveth thee.

"Thou shalt not kill. Neither shalt thou commit adultery. Neither shalt thou steal. Neither shalt thou bear false witness against thy neighbour. Neither shalt thou desire thy neighbour's wife, neither shalt thou covet thy neighbour's house, his field, or his manservant, or his maidservant, his ox, or his ass, or any *thing* that *is* thy neighbour's."

EXOD. 20:1-17: "And God spake all these words, saying, I am the LORD thy God, which have brought thee out of the land of Egypt, out of the house of bondage. Thou shalt have no other gods before me. Thou shalt not make unto thee any graven image, or any likeness of any thing that is in heaven above, or that is in the earth beneath, or that is in the water under the earth. Thou shalt not bow down thyself to them, nor serve them: for I the LORD thy God am a jealous God, visiting the iniquity of the fathers upon the children unto the third and fourth generation of them that hate me; And shewing mercy unto thousands of them that love me, and keep my commandments. Thou shalt not take the name of the LORD thy God in vain; for the LORD will not hold him guiltless that taketh his name in vain. Remember the sabbath day, to keep it holy. Six days shalt thou labour, and do all thy work: But the seventh day is the sabbath of the LORD thy God: in it thou shalt not do any work, thou, nor thy son, nor thy daughter, thy manservant, nor thy maidservant, nor thy cattle, nor thy stranger that is within thy gates: For in six days the LORD made heaven and

earth, the sea, and all that in them is, and rested the seventh day: wherefore the LORD blessed the sabbath day, and hallowed it. Honour thy father and thy mother: that thy days may be long upon the land which the LORD thy God giveth thee. Thou shalt not kill. Thou shalt not commit adultery. Thou shalt not steal. Thou shalt not bear false witness against thy neighbour. Thou shalt not covet thy neighbour's house, thou shalt not covet thy neighbour's wife, nor his manservant, nor his maidservant, nor his ox, nor his ass, nor any thing that is thy neighbour's."

THE LAW EPITOMIZED BY JESUS

MATT. 22:37-40: "...Thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy mind. This is the first and great commandment. And the second is like unto it, Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself. On these two commandments hang all the law and the prophets."

COVENANT EXCLUSIVELY WITH ISRAEL

"With them and with no other nation it was his agreement that by keeping the law they would abide in his favor and have divine blessing upon flocks and herds, land and people, instead of sickness, pain, drought and dearth...." *R3752:3*

AMOS 3:2: "You only have I known of all the families of the earth...."

MOSES THE MEDIATOR

DEUT. 5:5: "I stood between the Lord and you...to show you the word of the Lord..."

GAL. 3:19: "...The law...[was] ordained...in the hand of a mediator."

EXOD. 24:8: "And Moses took the blood and sprinkled *it* on the people, and said, Behold the blood of the Covenant, which the Lord hath made with you...."

HEB. 9:19-21: "For when Moses had spoken every precept to all the people according to the law, he took the blood...and sprinkled...all the people...."

OBEDIENCE REQUIRED

"There was more done at Mt. Sinai than is generally supposed. Not only was a law written upon tables of stone given there, but a Covenant based upon that law was there entered into between God on the one part, represented by that Law, and Israel on the other part, — Moses being the mediator of the *Law Covenant.*" *R1724:3*

"...every blessing under that covenant was made dependent upon absolute obedience to that law...." *R1724:4*

EXOD. 19:7,8: "And Moses came and called for the elders of the people, and laid before their faces all these words which

the LORD commanded him. And all the people answered together, and said, All that the LORD hath spoken we will do. And Moses returned the words of the people unto the LORD."

EXOD. 19:5,6: "Now therefore, if ye will obey my voice indeed, and keep my covenant, then ye shall be a peculiar treasure unto me above all people: for all the earth is mine: And ye shall be unto me a kingdom of priests, and an holy nation...."

EARTHLY BLESSINGS AND ETERNAL LIFE PROMISED TO THOSE KEEPING THE LETTER AND SPIRIT OF THE LAW OF LOVE

DEUT. 28:1,2,4,5: "....if thou shalt hearken diligently unto the voice of the LORD thy God, to observe and to do all his commandments which I command thee this day, that the LORD thy God will set thee on high above all nations of the earth: And all these blessings shall come on thee, and overtake thee,....Blessed shall be the fruit of thy body, and the fruit of thy ground, and the fruit of thy cattle, the increase of thy kine, and the flocks of thy sheep. Blessed shall be thy basket and thy store. [*margin,* **dough**, or **kneading trough**.]"

LEV. 18:5: "Ye shall therefore keep my statutes, and my judgments: which if a man do, he shall live in them: I *am* the

LORD."

GAL. 3:12: "And the law is not of faith: but, The man that doeth them shall live in them." *Cf. Rom. 10:5*

OBJECT OF THE LAW COVENANT

GAL. 3:24: "...The law was our schoolmaster [*Diag.*, pedagogue] *to bring us* unto Christ...."

ISRAEL COULD NOT KEEP IT

"That law was recognized as being perfect, just, and good in all of its particulars; but because the Israelites were fallen,...it was... necessary...that a mediator should be appointed, ...and...that a means should be found by which the transgressions...against the Law could be typically remitted once every year, and they be thus permitted to continue in their efforts to keep the Law from generation to generation. The institution of this mediatorship of Moses and of the typical sacrifices for sins, etc., all show that the people to whom this covenant and Law were given were recognized as being incapable of absolute obedience to it...." *F354*

"Israel's covenant called for perfect works, and being unable through inherited weakness of the flesh to render perfect works, Israel fell under the 'curse' or death-sentence of their own Covenant. Thus that covenant which was

ordained to **life** (which purported to give life everlasting) was...." *E417*

ROM. 7:10: "...found *to be* unto **death**."

OUR LORD FULFILLED IT

GAL. 4:4,5: "...God sent forth his Son,...made under the law to redeem them that were under the law...."

"Thus by fulfilling its conditions — by obeying the Law perfectly, as none of the imperfect human family **could do** — our Lord Jesus **became heir of all the blessings promised in that Law Covenant....; and thus also he was proved to be The Seed Of Abraham to whom the entire Abrahamic promise now applied** ." *B85*

HE MADE AN END OF IT

COL. 2:14: "Blotting out the handwriting of ordinances that was against us, which was contrary to us, and took it out of the way, nailing it to his cross."

FREED FROM THE LAW

ROM. 7:1,2,4: "...the law hath dominion over a man as long as he liveth? For the woman which hath an husband is bound by the law to *her* husband so long as he liveth; but if the husband be dead, she is loosed from the law of *her* husband....ye also are become dead to the law by the body of Christ; that ye should be married to...him who is raised from the dead..."

UNBELIEVING JEWS STILL UNDER IT

"The apostle....represents the Law Covenant as a husband, and Israelites bound to it as a wife to a husband. He shows that as it would be a sin for a woman to unite with another man while her husband lives, so it would be wrong for Israel to leave Moses and his Covenant of the law, and to unite with Christ and his...Covenant of grace, unless released by death — either the death of the Law Covenant or their death to the Law Covenant." *R1729:5*

For details concerning its provision for judging, for the needy, foreigners, enemies, animals, the aged, servants, see:

EXOD. 12:49: "One law shall be to him that is homeborn, and unto the stranger that sojourneth among you."

EXOD. 18:13-26: "And it came to pass on the morrow, that Moses sat to judge the people: and the people stood by Moses from the morning unto the evening. And when Moses' father in law saw all that he did to the people, he said, What is this thing that thou doest to the people? why sittest thou thyself alone, and all the people stand by thee from morning unto even? And Moses said unto his father in law, Because the people come unto me to inquire of God: When they have a matter, they come unto me; and I judge

between one and another, and I do make *them* know the statutes of God, and his laws.

"And Moses' father in law said unto him, The thing that thou doest is not good. Thou wilt surely wear away, both thou, and this people that *is* with thee: for this thing *is* too heavy for thee; thou art not able to perform it thyself alone. Hearken now unto my voice, I will give thee counsel, and God shall be with thee: Be thou for the people to God-ward, that thou mayest bring the causes unto God: And thou shalt teach them ordinances and laws, and shalt show them the way wherein they must walk, and the work that they must do.

"Moreover thou shalt provide out of all the people able men, such as fear God, men of truth, hating covetousness; and place *such* over them, *to be* rulers of thousands, and rulers of hundreds, rulers of fifties, and rulers of tens: And let them judge the people at all seasons: and it shall be, *that* every great matter they shall bring unto thee, but every small matter they shall judge: so shall it be easier for thyself, and they shall bear *the burden* with thee. If thou shalt do this thing, and God command thee so, then thou shalt be able to endure, and all this people shall also go to their place in peace. So Moses hearkened to the voice of his father in law, and did all that he had said. And Moses chose able men out of all Israel, and made them heads over the people, rulers of thousands, rulers of hundreds, rulers of fifties, and rulers of tens. And they judged the people at all seasons: the hard causes they brought unto Moses, but every small matter they judged themselves."

EXOD. 21:26,27: "And if a man smite the eye of his servant, or the eye of his maid, that it perish; he shall let him go free for his eye's sake. And if he smite out his manservant's tooth, or his maidservant's tooth; he shall let him go free for his tooth's sake."

EXOD. 22:21-25: "Thou shalt neither vex a stranger, nor oppress him: for ye were strangers in the land of Egypt. Ye shall not afflict any widow, or fatherless child. If thou afflict them in any wise, and they cry at all unto me, I will surely hear their cry; And my wrath shall wax hot, and I will kill you with the sword; and your wives shall be widows, and your children fatherless. If thou lend money to *any* of my people *that is* poor by thee, thou shalt not be to him as an usurer, neither shalt thou lay upon him usury."

EXOD. 23:4,5: "If thou meet thine enemy's ox or his ass going astray, thou shalt surely bring it back to him again. If thou see the ass of him that hateth thee lying under his burden, and wouldest forbear to help him, thou shalt surely help with him." (*margin* — "Wilt thou cease to help him or, and wouldest cease to leave thy business for him; thou shalt surely leave it to join with him.")

EXOD. 23:9,12: "Also thou shalt not oppress a stranger: for ye know the heart of a stranger, seeing ye were strangers in the land of Egypt. ...Six days thou shalt do thy work, and on the seventh day thou shalt rest: that thine ox and thine ass may rest, and the son

of thy handmaid, and the stranger, may be refreshed."

LEV. 19:13,14, 32-34: "Thou shalt not defraud thy neighbour, neither rob *him*: the wages of him that is hired shall not abide with thee all night until the morning. Thou shalt not curse the deaf, nor put a stumblingblock before the blind, but shalt fear thy God: I *am* the LORD. ...Thou shalt rise up before the hoary head, and honour the face of the old man, and fear thy God: I *am* the LORD. And if a stranger sojourn with thee in your land, ye shall not vex him. But the stranger that dwelleth with you shall be unto you as one born among you, and thou shalt love him as thyself; for ye were strangers in the land of Egypt: I *am* the LORD your God."

LEV. 24:22: "Ye shall have one manner of law, as well for the stranger, as for one of your own country: for I *am* the LORD your God."

See **LEV. 25.**

NUM. 11:16,17: "And the LORD said unto Moses, Gather unto me seventy men of the elders of Israel, whom thou knowest to be the elders of the people, and officers over them; and bring them unto the tabernacle of the congregation, that they may stand there with thee. And I will come down and talk with thee there: and I will take of the spirit which *is* upon thee, and will put *it* upon them; and they shall bear the burden of the people with thee, that thou bear *it* not thyself alone."

DEUT. 1:15-17; 14:27; 22:10; 24:14,15; 25:4: "So I took the chief of your tribes, wise men, and known, and made them heads over you, captains over thousands, and captains over hundreds, and captains over fifties, and captains over tens, and officers among your tribes. And I charged your judges at that time, saying, Hear *the causes* between your brethren, and judge righteously between every man and his brother, and the stranger *that is* with him. Ye shall not respect persons in judgment; *but* ye shall hear the small as well as the great; ye shall not be afraid of the face of man; for the judgment *is* God's: and the cause that is too hard for you, bring *it* unto me, and I will hear it."

"And the Levite that *is* within thy gates; thou shalt not forsake him; for he hath no part nor inheritance with thee."

"Thou shalt not plow with an ox and an ass together."

"Thou shalt not oppress an hired servant *that is* poor and needy, *whether he be* of thy brethren, or of thy strangers that *are* in thy land within thy gates: At his day thou shalt

give *him* his hire, neither shall the sun go down upon it; for he *is* poor, and setteth his heart upon it: lest he cry against thee unto the LORD, and it be sin unto thee."

"Thou shalt not muzzle the ox when he treadeth out *the corn*."

THE BOOKS OF MOSES AND THE LAWS THEREIN PROMULGATED

"The first five books of the Bible are known as the Five Books of Moses, though they nowhere mention his name as their author. That they were written by Moses, or under his supervision, is a reasonable inference; the account of his death and burial being properly added by his secretary. The omission of the positive statement that these books were written by Moses is no proof against the thought; for had another written them to deceive and commit a fraud, he would surely have claimed that they were written by the great leader and statesman of Israel, in order to make good his imposition. (See Deut. 31:9-27) Of one thing we are certain, Moses did lead out of Egypt the Hebrew nation. He did organize them as a nation under the laws set forth in these books; and the Hebrew nation by common consent, for over three thousand years, has claimed these books as a gift to them from Moses, and has held them so sacred that a jot or tittle must not be altered — thus giving assurance of the purity of the text." *A43*

"The sanitary arrangements of the law, so needful to a poor and long-oppressed people, together with the arrangements and limitations respecting clean and unclean animals which might or might not be eaten, are remarkable, and would, with other features, be of interest if space permitted their examination, as showing that law to have been abreast with, if not in advance of, the latest conclusions of medical science on the subject. The law of Moses had also a typical character, which we must leave for future consideration; but even our hasty glance has furnished overwhelming evidence that this law, which constitutes the very framework of the entire system of revealed religion, which the remainder of the Bible elaborates, is truly a marvelous display of wisdom and justice, especially when its date is taken into consideration." *A53*

See: *B173-200; F354-358, par. 1; 457-460*

For some of the typical features see Index**: Memorial Supper; Tabernacle Types and Shadows**.

THE NEW COVENANT

JER. 31:31-34: "Behold, the days come, saith the LORD, that I will make a new covenant with the house of Israel, and with the house of Judah: Not according to the covenant that I made with their fathers in the day *that* I took them by the hand to bring them out of the land of Egypt; which

my covenant they brake, although I was an husband unto them, saith the LORD: But this *shall be* the covenant that I will make with the house of Israel; After those days, saith the LORD, I will put my law in their inward parts, and write it in their hearts; and will be their God, and they shall be my people. And they shall teach no more every man his neighbour, and every man his brother, saying, Know the LORD: for they shall all know me, from the least of them unto the greatest of them, saith the LORD: for I will forgive their iniquity, and I will remember their sin no more."

"This New Covenant is to be made with Israel alone; for God never purposed to make a covenant with the Gentiles....After Israel shall have been fully established under their New Covenant, all other nations will be privileged to come into this relationship after the manner set forth in the Law. All the world will eventually be blessed thereby.

"The New Covenant, then, is to be made with such of Abraham's descendants as are able to receive it. Since the people are not worthy to enter directly into relationship with God, that covenant must have a Mediator....Christ and the church....

"A covenant does not go into operation until it has been fully mediated....

"...our Lord has been offering the great antitypical sacrifices of himself and his church. As soon as he will have finished making application of the blood, he will have made satisfaction for the sins of the world. This act will correspond to the sprinkling of the book by Moses. Divine justice having accepted this arrangement, the Mediator will antitypically sprinkle the people; that is, he will show them how to come back into full accord with God." *R5163:6-5164:1,2*

"The *Abrahamic Covenant* (which needed no mediator because it was God's *unconditional* promise, confirmed by his oath) is the full, broad statement of the divine plan, and...as the Law Covenant was *added* (to illustrate the inability of sinners to help themselves and) to manifest Christ Jesus as the Seed of Promise, so the New Covenant is *added* (to the Abrahamic Covenant) also — not to hinder the *blessing* of every creature, but to make that '*blessing* '...of knowledge and the Millennial kingdom opportunities more effective — even unto everlasting life — to those approved under it." *R2122:3*

"The New Covenant...was represented in Abraham's family by a woman, for after the death of Sarah, Abraham married again, his wife's name being Keturah; and by her we are told that he had...sons...., whereas there was but one son by Hagar, and...one by Sarah. The intimation thus clearly is that under the New Covenant God will bring many into the

relationship of sons, as it is written of Abraham, who typified God, 'I have constituted thee a father of many nations.' Gen. 17:4" *R3916:3*

"In the 'time of Jacob's trouble,' now near at hand, Israel will come to see and recognize their King, whom they refused when he offered himself to them at his first advent....He will then receive them back to favor under the terms of the New Law Covenant....They shall then be used of Messiah as a blessing to all the world." *R5442:6*

"With the second presentation of the blood of atonement in the Most Holy, at the end of this age, the New Covenant with Israel will be sealed and the blessing of the Lord will begin to Israel. 'For this is my covenant with *them*, when I shall take away their sins.' Rom. 11:27" *R4320:4*

"God's Covenant will be made with the Mediator for Israel, guaranteeing forgiveness and reconciliation to all of Abraham's natural seed who will exercise the faith and obedience of Abraham...." *R4555:1*

"...the divine government established in Israel in the hands of the ancient worthies will be the center of divine favor, and the people of other nationalities must come to this center for their supplies of truth and grace...." *R4320:6*

"These 'princes' of the new earth (the new order of society) will be fully qualified for the honorable position assigned to them....They... will have direct communion with the spiritual Kingdom (Christ and the Church) as our Lord had with the angels, and as Adam enjoyed similar personal communion before he came under divine sentence as a transgressor...." *D626*

"As soon as God will have made the New Covenant with them, these Ancient Worthies will form, the nucleus of the earthly phase of the kingdom. The earthly seed of Abraham will be added to, from all the different families, or nations, of the world." *R5293:6*

"The nations are to be blessed...under this new Covenant by becoming 'daughters' to Israel...." *R4371:3*

"...those who would get God's blessing, his uplifting influence, must become Israelites-that is,...believers in God, by believing in the Mediator, who will be God's representatives...." *R5293:1*

"The spirit of the Lord....is the spirit of the truth, and when the truth shall be made known to Israel and mankind, with that truth will go its spirit, its influence, its power to correct the heart and life, and to bring it into accord with God. For then, in the light of the truth, many will see God's character and plan in Christ as 'the desire of all nations,' and the great King himself as the one 'altogether lovely.'..." *R2504:6*

"...under the conditions of the new covenant, the great Mediator of that covenant will rewrite the law of God in the hearts of the repentant ones, as it was originally in the...very organism of Adam before his transgression; as it is written, 'I will put my law in their inward parts, and write it in their hearts; I will be their God, and they shall be my people.'" *R2195:6*

"When will the New Covenant go into effect?....

"Answer. — ...Very shortly after the last member of the church shall have finished his share in the sacrificing, and is glorified with his Redeemer.

"And when will it end?

"Answer. — The New Covenant will end in one sense of the word, with the close of the Millennial age....The Father has agreed to accept them under this New Covenant arrangement, he does accept them, and that is the end of the New Covenant — so far as this New Covenant arrangement is concerned. But, in another sense,...there is another covenant that will continue after that throughout eternity. God's covenant with all mankind and with the angels is that if they will be obedient to him they will enjoy everlasting life and have all the blessings he has provided. So, just as soon as Jesus turns over the world to the Father, it is because this special covenant of mercy is ended and it ends because it will have accomplished its work." *Q186*

"The New Covenant will begin to swallow up the old Law Covenant as soon as the kingdom is established. The Scriptures indicate that the first to receive it will be the ancient worthies. Raised from the dead to human perfection, they will form the nucleus of the new arrangement in the earth. Next in order will be those who have been known as Christians, but who have not been consecrated to death, and Jews who have been consecrated to the Law, but who have been blinded. Gradually the light will come to all who love righteousness and hate iniquity. Sprinkled from all sympathy with evil, they will make their declaration of full loyalty to God. In due time this light will spread to all kindreds and tongues and nations." *R5163-5164:2*

See also subheading "**Covenant Exclusively with Israel" under COVENANTS, page 75**.

CREATION AND FALL

"The teaching of Genesis, that man was tried in a state of original perfection in one representative, that he failed, and that the present imperfection, sickness and death are the results, but that God...will ultimately recover him through a redeemer,...is kept up and elaborated all the way...." *A57*

THE EARTHLY CREATION

"In the Beginning"

GEN. 1:1: "In the beginning God created the heaven and the earth."

"...a distinction is made between the creation of the heaven and the earth...and the subsequent...ordering of these, and the... creations of vegetable and animal life. It is these...that are described as the divine work of six epochal days." *F18*

GEN. 1:2: "And the earth was without form, and void; and darkness *was* upon the face of the deep...."

"...in the very beginning of the first day...the earth **was**...waste, empty, and dark....The Bible does not say how long a period elapsed between the **beginning** when God created the heaven and the earth, and the **beginning** of the creative week used in perfecting it for man...." *F18*

LENGTH OF "DAYS"

"...these 'days' are nowhere declared to be twenty-four-hour days....We have...'the day of temptation in the wilderness....forty years' (Psa. 95:8-10), and sometimes a 'day'...representing a year period (Num. 14:33, 34; Ezek. 4:1-8) and also the Apostle's statement..." *F19*

2 PET. 3:8: "...one day *is* with the Lord as a thousand years..."

"Most assuredly these epoch-days were not sun days; for the record is that the sun was not visible until the fourth day — the fourth epoch." *F19*

"We do,...find satisfactory evidence that one of these...'days' was a period of seven thousand years and, hence, that the entire creative week would be 7,000 x 7 equals 49,000 years...." *F19*

MATTER THROWN OFF BY THE EARTH

"...scientists generally agree that not a great way below the 'crust' the earth is still hot and molten." *F23*

"...we are safe in concluding that....when the whole earth was at a white heat...water and minerals....must have been driven off as gases; and...constituted an impenetrable canopy... around the earth...." *F23*

"As the cooling process advanced these...rings would...gravitate closer....One after another.... deluges from descending 'rings' would...reach the earth...." *F24*

THE CREATIVE DAYS

DAY 1

GEN. 1:2,3: "...And the spirit of God moved [was brooding, *Rotherham*] upon the face of the waters. And God said, Let there be light: and there was light."

DAY 2

GEN. 1:6-8: "And God said, Let there be a firmament [expanse, *Rotherham*] in the midst of the waters, and let it divide the waters from the waters. And God made the firmament, and divided the waters which *were* under the firmament from the waters which *were* above the firmament:...And God called the firmament [expanse or atmosphere,] Heaven...." *F31*

DAY 3

GEN. 1:9-11: "And God said, Let the waters under the heaven be gathered together unto one place, and let the dry land appear: and it was so. And God called the dry *land* Earth; and the gathering together of the waters called he Seas: and God saw that *it was* good. And God said, Let the earth bring forth grass, the herb yielding seed, *and* the fruit tree yielding fruit after his kind, whose seed *is* in itself, upon the earth: and it was so."

"As the waters drained off into the seas, vegetation sprang forth — each after its own...kind, with seed in itself to reproduce its **own kind** only....The different families of vegetables...will no more unite and blend than will the various animal families. This shows design — not a Creator only, but an intelligent one." *F32*

"Geology agrees...that in this early period vegetation was extremely rank....Plants, which now grow only a few inches or a few feet high..., then attained a growth of forty to eighty feet...as is demonstrated by fossil remains." *F33*

"At this period, geologists claim, our coal beds were formed: plants and mosses,...stored up...carbon, forming coal,...while purifying the atmosphere for the animal life of the later epoch-days...." *F33*

DAY 4

GEN. 1:14-16: "And God said, Let there be lights in the firmament [expanse, atmosphere] of the heaven to divide the day from the night; and let them be for signs, and for seasons, and for days, and years: And let them be for lights in the firmament [expanse, atmosphere] of the heaven to give light upon the earth: and it was so. And God made [or caused to shine] [*F33*, cf. Gen.2:3, where 'created' and

'made' both occur] two great lights; the greater light to rule the day, and the lesser light to rule the night:...the stars also."

"...we are justified in supposing that the light of the first day became...more distinct during the next two, as ring after ring came down from the waters above the firmament to the waters below it, until by the fourth epoch-day the sun,...moon, and stars could be seen..." *F34*

DAY 5

GEN. 1:20,21: "And God said, Let the waters bring forth abundantly the moving creature that hath life, and fowl *that* may fly above the earth in the open firmament of heaven. And God created great whales [monsters, Strong], and every living creature that moveth, which the waters brought forth abundantly after their kind; and every winged fowl after his kind: and God saw that *it was* good."

"...they were brought to the condition...where the lines of species cannot be overridden." *F36*

DAY 6

GEN. 1:24,25: "And God said, Let the earth bring forth the living creature after his kind, cattle, and creeping thing, and beast of the

earth after his kind: and it was so. And God made the beast of the earth after his kind, and cattle after their kind, and every thing that creepeth upon the earth after his kind: and God saw that *it was* good."

"...he has **fixed** animal species, each 'after his kind' in such a manner that they do not change;....Here is the stamp of the intelligent Creator upon his handiwork; for had...'blind force' been the creator, we would still see it plodding...on, at times evoluting and at times retrograding; we would see no such fixity of species...." *F37*

GEN. 1:26-28: "And God said, Let us make man in our image, after our likeness: and let them have dominion over the fish of the sea, and over the fowl of the air, and over the cattle, and over all the earth, and over every creeping thing that creepeth upon the earth.

"So God created man in his *own* image, in the image of God created he him; male and female created he them. And God blessed them, and God said unto them, Be fruitful, and multiply, and replenish [fill, *Young*] the earth, and subdue it: and have dominion over the fish of the sea, and over the fowl of the air, and over every living thing that moveth upon the earth."

MAN CREATED — NOT EVOLVED

"...note the wide difference in the language used when referring to man's creation. The latter is a specific declaration of the direct exercise of divine creative power,

while the others are not, but rather imply a development..." *F37*

"It is not said of man as of the...lower earthly animals, 'Let the earth bring forth;' but...he was a special creation by his Maker...'in his own image.'" *F39*

GEN. 2:7: "And the Lord God formed man of the dust of the ground, and breathed into his nostrils the breath of life [*Heb*. lives] and man became a living soul [being, *R.S.V.*]."

See Index: **Soul**

IN GOD'S IMAGE AND LIKENESS

"We are not to understand this '**image'** to be one of physical shape; but, rather, a moral and intellectual image...fashioned appropriately to his earthly conditions and nature....the 'likeness' ...doubtless relates to man's dominion —...king of earth and its...creatures,...as God is the King of the entire universe...." *F39*

"...if man was created otherwise than pure and perfect and mentally well endowed, he could not,...have been called an 'image of' God; nor could his Creator have placed him on **trial**....for everlasting life..." *F40*

1 TIM. 2:5,6: "...the man Christ Jesus....gave himself a ransom [Greek, ***anti-lutron***, **corresponding price**, *Young*] for all...."

"...he must, therefore, be considered a sample... of what the first man was...." *F40*

"And the outcome...must be a **resurrection**, or **restitution**, to perfection ere any can be...entirely satisfactory to the Creator....who communed with Adam..." *F40*

"If by blind force or other evolutionary processes, man has been climbing up...from protoplasm to...lowest man...to what we are — then it would be a fearful injury to the race...to **restore** it to what Adam was, or possibly to force the restitution further — back to protoplasm." *F40*

ACTS 17:24-26: "God...hath made of one blood all nations...."

1 COR. 15:45: "...The first man Adam was made a living soul." [**being**, *20th Century New Testament, and Beck;* **creature**, *Goodspeed]*

See also Index: **Soul**

NO MISSING LINK

"'We have found no link of derivation connecting man with the lower animals....He appears...as a new departure in creation, without any direct relation to the instinctive life of the lower animals. The earliest men are no less men than

their descendants, and up to the extent of their means, inventors, innovators, and introducers of new modes of life....

"'He is...separated by a great gap from all the animals nearest to him;....No fact of science is more certainly established than the recency of man in geological time....we find no trace of his remains in the older geological formations...and the conditions of the world in those periods seem to unfit it for the residence of man....Genesis...is in every way trustworthy, and as remote as possible from the myths and legends of ancient heathenism.' Sir J. W. Dawson,L.L.D., F.R.S." *F43*

MAN A DISTINCT CREATION

"There is a vast difference between the size and development in the brain in man and that in the lower members of the order 'primates.'...

"He has the power of grammatical speech. He can arrange his thoughts in sentences, which can be represented by...marks on paper....Man has an ear for harmony in music, which no animal has.

"In his great work on 'Mental Evolution,' Romanes....By collecting all the manifestations of intelligence in animals...finds that they all together manifest as much intelligence as a child...15 months old. But this intelligence is not in any single species, one species being advanced to that degree in one line, and another in another...." *F55*

RELIGION

"In nothing does this superiority of the human mind appear more striking than in its capacity to gain religious ideas through literature....no animal can be taught to talk intelligibly....the parrot even is not an exception,....Much less can an animal be taught to read or to listen intelligently to an oration or a sermon." *F55*

TOOLS

"'No animal has ever been known to fashion a tool; whereas there is no tribe of man so low in intelligence that it does not fashion most curious and complicated tools.' — Prof. G. Frederick Wright, D.D., L.L.D." *F56*

MAN CREATED PERFECT

DEUT. 32:3,4: "...the LORD....is the Rock, his work *is* perfect...."

PSA. 18:30: "As *for* God his way *is* perfect...."

"...even under the curse, and...unfavorable conditions in which man lived after being thrust out of the Garden of Eden — ...so grandly perfect was this human organism that

the father of humanity was sustained for...nine hundred...thirty years." *E406*

GEN. 5:5: "And all the days that Adam lived were nine hundred and thirty years: and he died."

"And this creature which God 'had **made**,' **completed**, and declared to be a copy, an image of himself, a manifestation of himself in flesh, he was also pleased to own as his son...." *R1266:1*

LUKE 3:38: "...Adam...was *the son* of God."

"And as Paul says:

GAL. 4:7: "'...If a son, than an heir...'

"For God brings no son into existence for whom he has not made ample provision." *R1266:1*

PSA. 8:5,6: "For thou hast made him a little lower than the angels, and hast crowned him with glory and honour. Thou madest him to have dominion over the works of thy hands; thou hast put all *things* under his feet:"

ECCL. 7:29: "...God hath made man upright...."

1 COR. 11:7: "...man...is the image and glory of God..."

JAS. 3:9: "...men...are made after the similitude of God."

GEN. 5:1,2: "...In the day that God created man, in the likeness of God made he him. Male and female created he them; and blessed them, and called their name Adam in the day when they were created."

A TEST REQUIRED

"This Godlike endowment of a free will constituted the crowning glory of God's human creature. Had he been left without this one,...he would have been a mere machine, without character, either meritorious or blameworthy. So, then, the perfect man was this free moral and intellectual creature, with a perfect physical organism, giving full and free exercise to, and in no way interfering with, his noble powers; with surroundings which continually stimulated and rewarded their cultivation and use; and with the promise of lasting continuance of these favors on condition of the right course of his will — his choice of righteousness as manifested in the expressed will of God. To prove his worthiness of lasting life, a test of character must of necessity be applied. The first test was a very simple one, merely the prohibition of the fruit of a single tree in the....But under this first simple test, though knowing the Creator's will and perfectly able to obey it, he willed to...disobey God, and hence brought upon himself the just penalty, death." *R1266:4*

GEN. 2:17: "But of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil, thou shalt not eat of it: for in the day that thou eatest thereof thou shalt surely die."

A TEST FAILED

"But,...does not the fact that Adam fell under the very first test prove that he was not perfect, and, therefore, could not stand? By no means; it simply proves that his will was not fixed, was not settled in its determination to do right, to do the will of God, as it might and should have been. Being perfect, in the image of God, and free to act out his own will, he had power to obey or disobey, and in his choice...of disobedience he was therefore culpable...God was in no sense responsible. God had richly endowed him with every blessing, both personal and in his surroundings, had forewarned him of the sure rewards of righteousness and sin, and in his command of obedience to him as to a wise and loving Father. God had provided his wisdom and care as their protection and safeguard in lieu of their inexperience. And the testing of their obedience was his righteous act to prove their worthiness ...of eternal life. Consequently, the responsibility was all on man's part, and...God was just in condemning him to death." *R1266:5*

ADAM FULLY RESPONSIBLE

"Thus...man was originally perfect, an image or copy of God in flesh. Of the fall from that original perfection and the results to the entire race of Adam, we also have the clear testimony of the Scriptures, showing just how it came about — that it was a wilful transgression of known righteous law, in the face of a distinct warning of the penalty of such a course. It was a sin on man's part only, and from which God is fully exonerated in that man was left under no necessity of want and with full instruction as to the right course and as to the results of a wrong course of action....And so it was the lack of appreciation, and an abuse of God's abounding favor and goodness,...and not any lack on God's part, which led to the fall." *R1266:6*

GEN. 3:4: "And the serpent said unto the woman, Ye shall not surely die..."

2 COR. 11:3: "...the serpent beguiled Eve through his subtilty...."

1 TIM. 2:14: "And Adam was not deceived, but the woman being deceived was in the transgression."

WAGES OF SIN IS DEATH

"...it is a present curse, viz., death, which will be lifted in the future. Nor are we to think of this death-curse... — as affecting a dying moment...at the time we expire...to realize what this death-curse is, we would require to have before the mind's eye the first perfect man, with all his powers of

mind and body — the image of his Creator in his mental qualities, and physically, as well as mentally and morally, 'very good;' so pronounced by the very highest authority on the subject.— Gen. 1:31." *E405*

"The death sentence,...was not merely against his...physical frame — it included the entire man, the mental as well as the physical; and this also included the moral qualities, because they are a part of the mental." *E407*

ROM. 6:23: "For the wages of sin is death...."

GEN. 2:17, margin: "...dying thou shalt die."

THE BURDEN OF HEREDITY

"As a consequence,...the law of heredity — has brought upon all Adam's posterity its entailment of imperfection and proneness to evil. And thus all the race is in the same wretched plight. An evil tree cannot bring forth good fruit, nor a bitter fountain send forth sweet waters. The present state, therefore, of the entire race is a degenerate and dying one." *R1266:6*

"...today...man is a fallen being in every sense of the word; physically he is degenerated,... mentally and morally...he is very deficient, yet possessing organs capable of much higher development than his short life will permit...." *E407*

ROM. 3:10,23: "...There is none righteous, no, not one:...all have sinned, and come short of the glory of God."

"All are sharers of the original sin and its consequences." *E407*

"...when we compare this physical vitality, unaided by large experience in the development of medicines and sanitary

arrangements, with present conditions,...we may judge how much...the 'curse' has affected us physically. And since...the sounder the physical organism, all things being equal, the stronger and the truer should be the mental power and faculties, we may from this gain quite a respectful view of the mental caliber of father Adam, whom the great Creator pronounced very good, and considered worthy to recognize as his son, his mental and moral likeness. — Luke 3:38" *E406*

LUKE 3:38: "Which was the son of Enos, which was the son of Seth, which was the son of Adam, which was the son of God."

"Viewing man as a whole,....we find that in some the greatest loss:...has been mental, with others moral, with others physical, yet all are blemished in all respects; all were hopelessly 'lost' under this curse. There can be no hope to any that he ever could recover himself out of these bonds of corruption in which we are born, as it is written,...

PSA. 51:5: "I was shapen in iniquity, and in sin did my mother conceive me."

"This death-curse rests upon us from the moment of birth, and hence demonstrates the fact that it is not the result of our individual sins, but of inherited sins — a curse or blight which has reached us from...Adam by heredity." *E408*

1 COR. 15:21,22: "...by man *came* death,...in Adam all die...."

ROM. 5:12-19: "...by one man sin entered into the world, and death by sin; and so death passed upon all men, for that all have sinned: (For until the law sin was in the world: but sin is not imputed when there is no law. Nevertheless death reigned from Adam to Moses, even over them that had not sinned after the similitude of Adam's transgression.... through the offense of one many be dead,....the judgment *was* by one to condemnation....by one man's offense death reigned by one....by the offense of one *judgment came* upon all men to condemnation;....by one man's disobedience many were made sinners..."

THE FUTURE

"The future condition of man...would have been everlasting extinction of being, had not the mercy, wisdom and love of God provided another opportunity for the race, in which the bitter experience gained during the six thousand years of the reign of sin and death will furnish a valuable lesson,...that obedience to God is the only right and safe course....This second trial of the race, under conditions which were impossible in the first trial,...is another favor of God,...which could never be claimed on the score of justice. Though man was justly condemned as unworthy of life, God saw in his inexperience and youth an extenuating circumstance, though not a release from moral obligation; and, therefore,...with the enunciation of the penalty, came the merciful promise of final deliverance from it. The sacrifice by our Lord, the man Christ Jesus, as the *ransom* for all, to satisfy the claims of justice against all, makes manifest both to angels and to men that this salvation,...out of sin and its penalty, death, could not be hoped for on the score of justice, but only on the score of pity and love. The atoning sacrifice for sins...was furnished by Jehovah, that he might be just, and yet the justifier of men already justly condemned to death." *R1267:1*

ROM. 3:26: "To declare...at this time his righteousness: that he might be just, and the justifier of him which believeth in Jesus."

LUKE 19:10: "For the Son of man is come to seek and to save that which was lost."

THE CREATOR

"JEHOVAH, our God, is the Great Emperor of the whole universe, and his wisdom, power, goodness, and benevolence are abundantly equal to all the responsibilities of so exalted an office. The human mind staggers in its efforts to comprehend the mental resources of a Being who is able to assume and to bear such responsibility. Think for a moment of the memory that never fails; of the judgment that never errs; of the wisdom that plans for eternity without the possibility of failure, and that times that plan with unerring precision for the ages to come; of the power and skill which can harness even every opposing element, animate or inanimate, and make them all work together for the accomplishment of his grand designs; of the tireless vigilance that never ceases, nor seeks relief from the pressing cares of universal dominion — whose eye never sleeps, whose ear is ever open and who is ever cognizant of all the necessities, and active in all the interests of his broad domains." *R1560:2*

HIS EXISTENCE ESTABLISHED

PSA. 14:1; 53:1: "The fool hath said in his heart, *There is* no God..."

"Effects must be produced by competent causes....How short-sighted the absurdity which boasts of human skill and ingenuity, and attributes to mere chance the regularity, uniformity, and harmony of nature; which acknowledges the laws of nature while denying that nature has an intelligent Lawgiver." *A29* (See *A29-35*)

THE DIVINE NATURE

"The divine is the highest order of the spiritual nature..." *A201*

HIS NAME

PSA. 83:18: "...Thou, whose name alone *is* JEHOVAH, *art* the most high over all the earth."

"God has...declared his name to be Jehovah [Heb. *JHVH* or *YHWH*]...the 'Self-existing One' or 'the Immortal One.'...The name is used hundreds of times throughout the Old Testament, but is covered, in a large degree...through...the translators, who have rendered it 'LORD'...in small capitals...." E40

EXOD. 3:13,14: "And Moses said unto God, Behold, *when* I come unto the children of Israel, and shall say unto them, The God of your fathers hath sent me unto you; and they shall say to me, What *is* his name? what shall I say unto them? And God said unto Moses, **I AM THAT I AM**: and he

said, Thus shalt thou say unto the children of Israel, I AM hath sent me unto you."

See also Index: **Trinity**

PSA. 90:2: "Before the mountains were brought forth, or ever thou hadst formed the earth and the world, even from everlasting to everlasting, thou *art* God."

"Immortality is ascribed only to the divine nature — originally to Jehovah only...." *A186* See also 1 Tim 6:16 and John 5:26.

See also Index: **Immortality verses Mortality**

HOW THE LORD REPENTED

GEN. 6:6: "And it repented the LORD that he had made man...."

MAL. 3:6: "...I *am* the LORD, I change not...."

"The word repent means: 'To change the MIND, or, COURSE OF CONDUCT on account of regret or dissatisfaction with what has occurred.' — *Webster*....knowing the end from the beginning, God's **mind** could not change, hence it must signify **change of conduct**." *R2026:3*

GOD'S ATTRIBUTES: WISDOM, JUSTICE, LOVE, AND POWER

WISDOM

ISA. 46:9,10: "...I *am* God,...Declaring the end from the beginning, and from ancient times *the things* that are not *yet* done, saying, My counsel shall stand, and I will do all my pleasure..."

ACTS 15:18: "Known unto God are all his works from the beginning of the world."

ISA. 40:13: "Who hath directed the Spirit of the LORD, or *being* his counsellor hath taught him?"

ROM. 11:33,34: "O the depth of the riches both of the wisdom and knowledge of God! how unsearchable *are* his judgments, and his ways past finding out! For who hath known the mind of the Lord? or who hath been his counseller?"

EPH. 3:10,11 *Diag.*: "...now may be made known...the MUCH DIVERSIFIED Wisdom of God, according to a Plan of the AGES, which he formed for the ANOINTED Jesus our Lord."

"By this plan all the condemned ones might be relieved from the sentence without any violation of Justice, and with such a display of divine love and wisdom and power as would honor the Almighty, and prove a blessing to all his creatures, human and angelic — by revealing to all more

fully than ever before seen, the much diversified wisdom and grace of God." *E17*

See also Job 23:10; 42:1,2; Psa. 139:1-7,14-18; Eph. 1:8,9; 1 John 3:20.

JUSTICE

DEUT. 32:4: "*He is* the Rock, his work *is* perfect: for all his ways *are* judgment: a God of truth and without iniquity, just and right *is* he."

PSA. 89:14: "Justice and judgment *are* the habitation [**base** — *Young*] of Thy throne...."

"This very principle of justice which underlies all of our Father's doings, is the ground of our strong confidence in all his promises....He is the same yesterday, today, and forever, that [**JAS. 1:17**] 'with whom is no variableness, neither shadow of turning.'" E463

ABSOLUTE JUSTICE OF GOD'S LAW

EXOD. 21:23: "...Thou shalt give life for life." Cf. verses 24-27; Lev. 24:19-21; Deut. 19:21.

EQUALITY UNDER THE LAW

LEV. 24:22: "Ye shall have one manner of law, as well for the stranger, as for one of your own country..." Cf. Exod. 12:49

Enemies, widows, orphans, servants, the aged, the poor, and domestic animals were protected. See Exod. 23:4,5, margin; 23:12;

Deut. 25:4; 22:10; 14:27; 24:14,15; Exod. 22:21-25; 23:9; Lev. 19:13, 14, 32-34; 25:9, 13-23,27-30, 36,37; Num. 26:52-56; *A49-52*.

THE LAW EPITOMIZED

MATT. 22:37: "...Thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy mind." Cf. Deut. 6:5; 10:12; 30:6

MATT. 22:39: "...Thou shalt love thy neighbor as thyself." Cf. Lev. 19:18

GOD'S JUSTICE NOT VIOLATED BY HIS MERCY

ROM. 3:21,22,24-26: "But now the righteousness of God without the law is manifested, being witnessed by the law...Even the righteousness of God *which is* by faith of Jesus Christ unto all and upon all them that believe: Being justified...through the redemption that is in Christ Jesus: Whom God hath set forth *to be* a propitiation through faith in his blood, to declare his righteousness for the remission of sins that are past,...that he might be just, and the justifier of him which believeth in Jesus."

"The remission of the death penalty is not a violation of God's justice but its satisfaction by his love. It also assures us of the **unchangeableness** of divine law, which could not

be broken, but instead provided redemption at so great a cost. This...gives us confidence that the same principles will continue to rule the universe forever — ...that...the 'curse' will be lifted from all who come into harmony with God through Jesus...and that all who do not avail themselves of this grace will be swallowed up of the Second Death...." *E439*

"...if God could deal with the sinners, and, condoning their sins, accept their best endeavors, though imperfect, there would have been no necessity for a Redeemer." *E472*

LOVE

JOHN 3:16,17: "For God so loved the world, that he gave his only begotten Son, that whosoever believeth in him should not perish, but have everlasting life. For God sent not his Son into the world to condemn the world; but that the world through him might be saved."

ROM. 5:6-11: "For when we were yet without strength, in due time Christ died for the ungodly. For scarcely for a righteous man will one die: yet peradventure for a good man some would even dare to die. But God commendeth his love toward us, in that, while we were yet sinners, Christ died for us. Much more then, being now justified by his blood, we shall be saved from wrath through him. For if, when we were enemies, we were reconciled to God by the death of his Son, much more, being reconciled, we shall be saved by his life. And not only *so*, but we also joy in God through our Lord Jesus Christ, by whom we have now received the atonement."

1 JOHN 4:7-10,16,19: "....love is of God;....He that loveth not knoweth not God; for God is love. In this was manifested the love of God toward us, because that God sent his only begotten Son into the world, that we might live through him. Herein is love, not that we loved God, but that he loved us, and sent his Son *to be* the propitiation for our sins....And we have known and believed the love that God hath to us. God is love; and he that dwelleth in love dwelleth in God, and God in him. We love him, because he first loved us."

PSA. 103:2-4, 8-14,17,18: "Bless the LORD, O my soul, and forget not all his benefits: Who forgiveth all thine iniquities; who healeth all thy diseases; Who redeemeth thy life from destruction; who crowneth thee with lovingkindness and tender mercies; The LORD is merciful and gracious, slow to anger, and plenteous in mercy. He will not always chide: neither will he keep *his anger* for ever. He hath not dealt with us after our sins; nor rewarded us according to our iniquities. For as the heaven is high above the earth, *so* great is his mercy toward them that fear him. As far as the east is from the west, *so* far hath he removed our transgressions from us. Like as a father pitieth *his*

children, *so* the LORD pitieth them that fear him. For he knoweth our frame; he remembereth that we *are* dust....the mercy of the LORD *is* from everlasting to everlasting upon them that fear him, and his righteousness unto children's children; To such as keep his covenant, and...remember his commandments."

HIS KINDNESS TO ISRAEL

ISA. 63:7-9: "I will mention the lovingkindnesses of the LORD, *and* the praises of the LORD, according to all that the LORD hath bestowed on us, and the great goodness toward the house of Israel, which he hath bestowed on them according to his mercies, and according to the multitude of his lovingkindnesses....he was their Saviour. In all their affliction he was afflicted, and the angel of his presence saved them: in his love and in his pity he redeemed them; and he bare them, and carried them all the days of old."

NUM. 14:18: "The LORD *is* longsuffering, and of great mercy, forgiving iniquity and transgression...."

DAN. 9:9: "To the Lord our God *belong* mercies and forgivenesses, though we have rebelled against him..."

HIS MERCY REVEALED TO MOSES

EXOD. 34:6,7: "...The LORD, The LORD God, merciful and gracious, longsuffering, and abundant in goodness and truth, Keeping mercy for thousands, forgiving iniquity and transgression and sin..."

HIS LOVE REVEALED IN THE PSALMS

PSA. 23: "A Psalm of David. The LORD *is* my shepherd; I shall not want. He maketh me to lie down in green pastures: he leadeth me beside the still waters. He restoreth my soul: he leadeth me in the paths of righteousness for his name's sake. Yea, though I walk through the valley of the shadow of death, I will fear no evil: for thou *art* with me; thy rod and thy staff they comfort me. Thou preparest a table before me in the presence of mine enemies: thou anointest my head with oil; my cup runneth over. Surely goodness and mercy shall follow me all the days of my life: and I will dwell in the house of the LORD for ever."

PSA. 63:3: "Because thy lovingkindness *is* better than life, my lips shall praise thee."

PSA. 145:8: "The LORD *is* gracious, and full of compassion; slow to anger, and of great mercy."

LOVE SHOWN IN THE NEW COVENANT

JER. 31:34: "...I will forgive their iniquity, and I will remember their sin no more."

LOVE SHOWN TO THE NEW CREATION

1 JOHN 3:1: "BEHOLD, what manner of love the Father hath bestowed upon us, that we should be called the sons of God..."

JOHN 14:21,23: "He that hath my commandments, and keepeth them, he it is that loveth me: and he that loveth me shall be loved

of my Father, and I will love him, and will manifest myself to him. If a man love me, he will keep my words: and my Father will love him, and we will come unto him, and make our abode with him."

JOHN 17:22-24: "And the glory which thou gavest me I have given them; that they may be one, even as we are one: I in them, and thou in me, that they may be made perfect in one; and that the world may know that thou hast sent me, and hast loved them, as thou hast loved me. Father, I will that they also, whom thou hast given me, be with me where I am; that they may behold my glory, which thou hast given me: for thou lovest me before the foundation of the world."

2 COR. 1:3,4: "Blessed *be* God, even the Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, the Father of mercies, and the God of all comfort; Who comforteth us in all our tribulation, that we may be able to comfort them which are in any trouble, by the comfort wherewith we ourselves are comforted of God."

2 COR. 13:11: "Be perfect, be of good comfort, be of one mind, live in peace; and the God of love and peace shall be with you."

1 PET. 1:3,4: "Blessed *be* the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, which according to his abundant mercy hath begotten us again unto a lively hope by the resurrection of Jesus Christ from the dead, To an inheritance incorruptible, and undefiled, and that fadeth not away, reserved in heaven for you."

* * * *

1 CHRON. 16:34: "O give thanks unto the LORD; for *he* is good; for his mercy *endureth* for ever."

POWER

ISA. 26:4: "...In the Lord JEHOVAH *is* everlasting strength."

ISA. 14:24,27: "The LORD of hosts hath sworn, saying, Surely as I have thought, so shall it come to pass; and as I have purposed, *so* shall it stand:....For the LORD of hosts hath purposed, and who shall disannul *it*? and his hand *is* stretched out, and who shall turn it back?"

ISA. 46:9-11: "...I am God, and *there is* none else; I *am* God, and *there is* none like me,...saying, My counsel shall stand, and I will do all my pleasure:...yea, I have spoken it, I will also bring it to pass; I have purposed *it*, I will also do it."

ISA. 55:10,11: "For as the rain cometh down, and the snow from heaven, and returneth not thither, but watereth the earth, and maketh it bring forth and bud, that it may give seed to the sower, and bread to the eater: So shall my word be that goeth forth out of my mouth: it shall not return unto me void, but it shall accomplish that which I please, and it shall prosper *in the thing* whereto I sent it."

POWER MANIFESTED IN CREATION

GEN. 1:1: "In the beginning God created the heaven and the earth."

JOB 38:4-8: "Where wast thou when I laid the foundations of the earth?....Who hath laid the measures thereof,...or who hath stretched the line upon it? Whereupon are the foundations thereof fastened? or who laid the corner stone thereof; When the morning stars sang together, and all the sons of God shouted for joy? Or who shut up the sea with doors, when it brake forth, as if it had issued out of the womb?"

PSA. 19:1,2: "...The heavens declare the glory of God; and the firmament showeth his handiwork. Day unto day uttereth speech, and night unto night showeth knowledge."

ISA. 40:12,15,17,22,26,28: "Who hath measured the waters in the hollow of his hand, and meted out heaven with the span, and comprehended the dust of the earth in a measure, and weighed the mountains in scales, and the hills in a balance?...Behold, the nations *are* as a drop of a bucket, and are counted as the small dust of the balance: behold, he taketh up the isles as a very little thing. All nations before him *are* as nothing; and they are counted to him less than nothing, and vanity. *It is* he that sitteth upon the circle of the earth, and the inhabitants thereof *are* as grasshoppers; that stretcheth out the heavens as a curtain, and spreadeth them out as a tent to dwell in: Lift up your eyes on high, and behold who hath created *these* things, that bringeth out their host by number: he calleth them all by names by the greatness of his might, for that *he is* strong in power; not one faileth. Hast thou not known? hast thou not heard, *that* the everlasting God, the LORD, the Creator of the ends of the earth, fainteth not, neither is weary?...."

PSA. 8:1,3,4: "O LORD our Lord, how excellent *is* thy name in all the earth! who hast set thy glory above the heavens....When I consider thy heavens, the work of thy fingers, the moon and the stars, which thou hast ordained; What is man, that thou art mindful of him? and the son of man, that thou visitest him?"

PSA. 90:1,2: "...LORD, thou hast been our dwelling place in all generations. Before the mountains were brought forth, or ever thou hadst formed the earth and the world, even from everlasting to everlasting, thou *art* God."

HIS POWER ON BEHALF OF HIS PEOPLE

PSA. 121:1-8: "I WILL lift up mine eyes unto the hills, from whence cometh my help. My help *cometh* from the LORD, which made heaven and earth. He will not suffer thy foot to be moved: he that keepeth thee will not slumber. Behold, he that keepeth Israel shall neither slumber nor sleep. The LORD is thy keeper: the LORD *is* thy shade upon thy right hand. The sun shall not smite thee by day, nor the moon by night. The LORD shall preserve thee from all evil: he shall preserve thy soul. The LORD shall preserve thy going out and thy coming in from this time forth, and even for evermore."

ISA. 50:2: "...Is my hand shortened at all, that it cannot redeem? or have I no power to deliver?...."

HIS OMNIPOTENCE

LUKE 18:27: "...The things which are impossible with men are possible with God."

LUKE 1:37: "For with God nothing shall be impossible."

"In their very nature, some things are impossible even with God, as the Scriptures state. It is..." *A117*

HEB. 6:18: "...impossible for God to lie."

JAS. 1:13: "...God cannot be tempted with evil,...."

HAB. 1:13: "*Thou art* of purer eyes than to behold evil, and canst not look on iniquity..."

GOD NOT THE AUTHOR OF SIN

ISA. 45:7: "...I make peace and create evil; I the LORD do all these *things*."

AMOS 3:6: "Shall there be evil in a city, and the LORD hath not done *it*?"

"Sin is always an evil, but an evil is not always a sin. An

earthquake, a conflagration, a flood, or a pestilence would be a calamity, and **evil**; but none of these things would be sins. The word **evil** in the texts cited signifies **calamities**. The same Hebrew word is translated affliction in...PSA. 34:19; 107:39; Jer. 48:16; Zech. 1:15. It is translated **trouble** in Psa. 27:5; 41:1; 88:3; 107:26; Jer. 51:2; Lam. 1:21. It is translated **calamities**, **adversity**, and **distress** in 1 Sam. 10:19; Psa. 10:6; 94:13; 141:5; Eccl. 7:14; Neh. 2:17, and the same word is...rendered **harm, mischief, sore, hurt, misery, grief** and **sorrow**.

"...the Lord would remind Israel...that if they would forsake him he would bring calamities (evils) upon them as chastisement." *A124-125*

See also Index: **Day of Vengeance; Permission of Evil**

GOD IS UNCHANGEABLE

MAL. 3:6: "...I *am* the LORD, I change not..."

JAS. 1:17: "Every good gift and every perfect gift is from above, and cometh down from the Father of lights, with whom is no variableness, neither shadow of turning."

CREEDS

"Latin AS: *credo*: **I believe**. A formal summary of religious belief; an authoritative statement of doctrine; a confession of faith. Also an accepted system of religious belief; hence any system of belief or opinion e.g. *the Apostles' Creed, the Nicene Creed, the Athanasian Creed." Funk & Wagnalls Dictionary*

TRADITIONS OF MEN

MATT. 15:1-3,7-9: "Then came to Jesus scribes and Pharisees,...saying, Why do thy disciples transgress the tradition of the elders?...But he answered...them, Why do ye also transgress the commandment of God by your tradition?...*Ye* hypocrites, well did Esaias prophesy of you, saying, This people draweth nigh unto me with their mouth,...but their heart is far from me. But in vain they do worship me, teaching *for* doctrines the commandments of men."

ISA. 29:13: "...and their fear toward me is taught by the precept of men."

ISA. 8:20: "To the law and to the testimony: if they speak not according to this word, *it is* because *there is* no light in them."

"Christians...are called upon to do homage to idols — the work of men's hands. We refer to the...creeds of Christendom, the traditions which men have set up to intercept the worship of the true and living God...." *R1408:6*

CREEDS MISREPRESENT GOD'S CHARACTER AND PLAN

"At the making of the creeds, during the dark ages,...(Satan) was present,...framing their... blasphemous misstatements of the divine character and plan, and deluding the people into thinking... these were the teachings of the divine Word." *R2770:2*

"The doctrines of men are represented in the creeds of men, many of which are grossly...at variance with the doctrines of the Lord, and all of them in disagreement with each other." *F316*

CREEDS LEAD TO REJECTION OF THE BIBLE, SUPPOSED TO SUPPORT THEM

"Thousands of the most generous minds have been turned away from the Bible by the mistaken supposition that the creeds properly represent its teachings." *R4923:1*

"Truth-seekers should empty their vessels of the muddy water of tradition and fill them at the fountain of truth —

God's Word. And no religious teaching should have weight except as it guides the truth seeker to that fountain." *A12*

"Because the nominal church...falsely presents its own error as the teaching of the Bible, the Word of God, though...nominally reverenced, is being...repudiated." *R2613:6*

"The general effect,...will be, first open infidelity, then anarchy." *R2614:1*

See also Index: **Walking in the Light**

APOSTLES CREED

"I believe in God the Father Almighty, Maker of heaven and earth, and in Jesus Christ his **only son**" —

only begotten Son

JOHN 3:18: "...in the name of the only begotten Son of God."

HEB. 1:5: "For unto which of the angels said he at any time, Thou art my Son, this day have I begotten thee?"

Adam was a son of God.

LUKE 3:38: "...the son of Adam, which was the son of God."

The faithful angels are sons of God.

Compare **GEN. 6:2**: "...the sons of God saw the daughters of men..."with **2 PET. 2:4,5**: "For if God spared not the angels that sinned, but cast them down to hell, and delivered them into chains of darkness, to be reserved unto judgment; And spared not the old world, but saved Noah the eighth person, a preacher of righteousness, bringing in the flood upon the world of the ungodly..."

"Our Lord, who was conceived by the Holy **Ghost**" —

Greek - pneuma - Spirit *(Strong's 4151)*

"born of the Virgin Mary: **suffered under Pontius Pilate**" —

Pilate sought to release Jesus.

JOHN 19:12: "And from thenceforth Pilate sought to release him: but the Jews cried out..."

Jews accepted responsibility for crucifixion.

MATT. 27:24,25: "When Pilate saw that he could prevail nothing, but *that* rather a tumult was made, he took water, and washed *his* hands before the multitude, saying, I am innocent of the blood of this just person: see ye *to it.* Then answered all the

people, and said, His blood *be* on us, and on our children."

"was crucified, dead, and buried; he descended into **hell**" —

Phrase "descended into" in

EPH. 4:9: "...he also descended first into the lower parts of the earth [the grave]..." *R.1829:4*

ACTS: 2:27: "Because thou wilt not leave my soul in *hell [hades, oblivion]*." *E377*

"The third day he rose from the dead; He ascended into heaven, and sitteth on the right hand of God the Father Almighty; from thence he shall come to judge the quick and the dead. I believe in the Holy **Ghost**." —

Spirit - *Strong's 4151*

"the holy **Catholic Church**" —

"We belong to NO *earthly organization;* hence, if you should name the entire list of sects, we should answer, No, to each and to all. We adhere only to that *heavenly organization* — 'whose names are written in heaven.' (Heb. 12:23; Luke 10:20),...any earthly organization which in the least interferes with this union of saints is contrary to the teachings of Scripture and opposed to the Lord's will — 'that they may be ONE.' (John 17:11)." *R584:3*

"The communion of saints; the forgiveness of sins; the **resurrection of the body**" —

"Resurrection of the soul" — "'Thou sowest not that body which shall be, but bare grain, it may chance of wheat or some other grain: but God giveth it a body as it hath pleased him; and to every seed his own kind of body.' 1 Cor. 15:37,38. The being — the individuality sown in death thus, is raised from it thus....It is not the corrupted body, but the *being*, which God will raise up in a new appropriate body..." *R666:4,5*

"the life everlasting. Amen.

THE DAY OF VENGEANCE

ISA. 63:4; 34:8: "...the day of vengeance *is* in mine heart, and the year of my redeemed is come....*it is* the day of the LORD'S vengeance, *and* the year of recompenses for the controversy of Zion."

"**THE** 'Day of Jehovah' is the name of that period of time in which God's kingdom, under Christ, is to be gradually 'set up' in the earth, while the kingdoms of this world are passing away and Satan's power and influence over men are being bound. It is everywhere described as a dark day of intense trouble and distress and perplexity upon mankind." *A307*

CHARACTERISTICS

ISA. 34:2-4,5-10: "The indignation of the LORD *is* upon all nations, and his fury upon all their armies: he hath utterly destroyed them, he hath delivered them to the slaughter. Their slain also shall be cast out,...and the mountains shall be melted with their blood. And all the host of heaven shall be dissolved,...For my sword shall be bathed in heaven: behold, it shall come down upon Idumea, and upon the people of my curse, to judgment. The sword of the LORD is filled with blood, it is made fat with fatness, and with the blood of lambs and goats, with the fat of the kidneys of rams: for the LORD hath a sacrifice in Bozrah, and a great slaughter in the land of Idumea. And the unicorns shall come down with them, and the bullocks with the bulls; and their land shall be soaked with blood, and their dust made fat with fatness. For *it is* the day of the Lord's vengeance, *and* the year of recompenses for the controversy of Zion. And the streams thereof shall be turned into pitch, and the dust thereof into brimstone, and the land thereof shall become burning pitch. It shall not be quenched night nor day; the smoke thereof shall go up for ever: from generation to generation it shall lie waste; none shall pass through it for ever and ever."

REV. 11:15,18: *Diag.* "...The KINGDOM of the WORLD has become our LORD'S and his CHRIST'S,...And the NATIONS were enraged, and thy WRATH came..."

DAN. 12:1: "AND at that time shall Michael stand up, [see **Michael the ARCHANGEL** under **ANGELS**], the great prince which standeth for the children of thy people: and there shall be a time of trouble, such as never was since there was a nation...."

MATT. 24:21: "...then shall be great tribulation, such as was not since the beginning of the world to this time, no, nor ever shall be."

JOEL 2:1,2: "The LORD cometh,...A day of darkness and of gloominess, a day of clouds and of thick darkness, as the

morning spread upon the mountains: a great people and a strong; **there hath not been ever the like, neither shall be any more after it**...."

"...armies...,are the armies of the common people: these millions of disciplined warriors have wives and sons and daughters...and friends in the ranks of the common people, with whose interests their own are linked....these armed hosts are less and less infatuated with the 'glory' of war, more keenly alive to its sufferings...,and less and less devoted to the sovereign powers that command their services, while the armies of toilers, of the common people...are becoming more and more... dissatisfied...." *D545*

"...these things are indications...that...the mighty armed...hosts...may turn...against the authorities. ..." *D546*

JER. 25:29,31-33: "...I will call for a sword upon all the inhabitants of the earth,...A noise shall come *even* to the ends of the earth; for the LORD hath a controversy with the nations, he will plead with all flesh; he will give them that are wicked to the sword,...evil shall go forth from nation to nation, and a great whirlwind shall be raised up from the coasts of the earth. And the slain of the LORD shall be at that day from *one* end of the earth even unto the *other* end of the earth..."

EZEK. 7:17-19: "All hands shall be feeble, and all knees shall be weak *as* water. They shall also gird *themselves* with sackcloth, and horror shall cover them; and shame *shall be* upon all faces....their silver and their gold shall not be able to deliver them...it is the stumblingblock of their iniquity."

NAH. 1:9,10: "...he will make an utter end: affliction shall not rise up the second time. For while *they be* folden together *as* thorns, and while they are drunken *as* drunkards, they shall be devoured as stubble fully dry."

ZEPH. 1:14-18: "The great day of the LORD *is* near, it is near,...:the mighty man shall cry there bitterly. That day *is* a day of wrath, a day of trouble and distress, a day of wasteness and desolation, a day of darkness and gloominess, a day of clouds and thick darkness, A day of the trumpet and alarm against the fenced cities, and against the high towers. And I will bring distress upon men, that they shall walk like blind men, because they have sinned against the LORD: and their blood shall be poured out as dust,....Neither their silver nor their gold shall be able to deliver them in the day of the LORD'S wrath; but the whole land shall be devoured by the fire **of his jealousy**: for he shall make even a speedy riddance of all them that dwell in the land."

IT COMES AS A THIEF

2 PET. 3:8,10: "...one day *is* with the Lord as a thousand years, and a thousand years as one day....But the day of the

Lord will come as a thief...; in the which the heavens shall pass away with a great noise, [rushing sound, *Diag*.] and the elements shall melt with fervent heat...."

1 THES. 5:2,3: "The day of the Lord so cometh as a thief in the night. For when they shall say, Peace and safety; then sudden destruction cometh upon them, as travail upon a woman with child; and they shall not escape."

"...its approach will be stealthy and unobserved by the world in general....It will be a series of convulsions more frequent and severe as the day draws on, until the final one....The relief will come only with the birth of the NEW ORDER... — a new heavens (the spiritual control of Christ) and a new earth (reorganized society) wherein dwelleth righteousness...." *A334*

2 PET. 3:13: "Nevertheless we, according to his promise, look for new heavens and a new earth, wherein dwelleth righteousness."

RECOMPENSE FOR PERSECUTION OF THE FAITHFUL

REV. 6:9-11: "...how long...,dost thou not judge and avenge our blood on them that dwell on the earth?"

"...the same idea respecting the divine requirements in the end of the Gospel age is given to us that Jesus specified in regard to the Jews in the end of their age. He said that..." *R5874:3*

MATT. 23:35,36: "...all the righteous blood shed upon the earth, from the blood of righteous Abel...shall come upon this generation."

ROM. 12:19: "...Vengeance *is* mine; I will repay, saith the Lord."

THE DAY OF JUDGMENT

"...the dark and gloomy day...described by the prophets is a day of judgment...socially and nationally — a day of national recompenses.... bear in mind the difference between national judgment and individual judgment....,the judgment of the world as individuals will be distinct from its judgment as nations." *D11*

"The civil institutions of the world have had a long lease of power; and now, as the 'Times of the Gentiles' come to a close, they must render up their accounts..." *D12*

ISA. 34:1-10: "...the indignation of the LORD *is* upon all nations, and *his* fury upon all their armies: he hath utterly destroyed them....And all the host of heaven shall be dissolved....For *it is* the day of the LORD'S vengeance, *and* the year of recompenses for the controversy of Zion...."

CHRISTENDOM'S RESPONSIBILITY

"We may...regard that visitation of wrath upon fleshly Israel [Matt. 23:34-36] as a foreshadowing of the greater...wrath...upon Christendom in the end of this age...." *D49*

"Before...Christendom lies the open history of all past time, as well as the...inspired revelation. ...But the...lessons which men ought also to have been...learning have been very generally disregarded...men of the present day have more such lessons than...any previous generation...." *D50*

"...the seeds of past sowing must...bring forth fruitage; and a harvest...is...inevitable....

"Babylon, Christendom, has had a long probation...and...many opportunities both to learn and to practice righteousness, as well as many warnings of a coming judgment....she has had...the saints... — Christlike men and women — 'The salt of the earth.'...But she has disregarded these living epistles....so-called Christian nations..., have brought reproach upon the name of Christ..., following the...missionary with the...rum traffic and other 'civilized' evils;...and by her authority...the saints,...suffered violence...." *D51*

THE HEATHEN ALSO

"While the fierce anger of the Lord is to be visited upon... Christendom specially, because they have sinned against much light and privilege,...the heathen...have not been without responsibility, and shall not go unpunished." *D68*

ROM. 1:18-23: *Diag.*: "...the Wrath of God is revealed from Heaven in regard to All Impiety and Injustice of THOSE MEN, who through Injustice SUPPRESS the TRUTH. Because the KNOWLEDGE of GOD is apparent among them; for GOD disclosed it to Them; for his INVISIBLE things, even His ETERNAL Power and Deity, since the Creation of the World are clearly seen, being perceived by the THINGS which are MADE; so that they are inexcusable. Because, though they knew GOD, they did not glorify or thank him as God, but became vain in their REASONINGS, and their PERVERSE Heart was darkened; assuming to be Wise men, they became foolish; and they changed the GLORY of the INCORRUPTIBLE God into an Image-likeness of Corruptible Man, and of Birds, and Quadrupeds, and of

Reptiles."

BY WHOM ACCOMPLISHED — THE WINEPRESS

ISA. 63:1,3: "WHO *is* this that cometh from Edom, with dyed garments from Bozrah? this *that is* glorious in his apparel, travelling in the greatness of his strength? I that speak in righteousness, mighty to save. I have trodden the

winepress alone; and of the people *there was* none with me..."

REV. 19:14,15: "And the armies...in heaven followed him...: and he treadeth the winepress...."

"The treading of the winepress is the last feature of harvest work. The reaping and gathering is all done first. So this treading of the winepress of the wrath of God into which 'the vine of the **earth**' (the false vine which has misappropriated the name Christian and Christ's Kingdom) is cast when its iniquitous clusters are fully ripe...represents the last work of this eventful 'harvest' period...." *D18*

REV. 14:16-20: *Diag.*: "..., and the EARTH was reaped. And Another Angel came forth out of THAT TEMPLE which is in HEAVEN; he also having a sharp Sickle, And Another Angel came forth out of the ALTAR, having Authority over the FIRE, and he called with a loud cry to the one HAVING the SHARP SICKLE, saying, Send thy sharp SYCLE and cut off the CLUSTERS of the VINE of the EARTH; Because her GRAPES are fully ripe. And the Angel cast his SICKLE to [into, interlineary] the EARTH, and gathered the fruit of the VINE of the EARTH, and cast it unto [interlineary] the GREAT WINEPRESS of the WRATH OF GOD. And the WINEPRESS was trodden outside of the CITY; and Blood came forth out of the WINEPRESS, even to the BRIDLES of the HORSES, a thousand six hundred Furlongs off." [Slight variations occur in various MSS.]

"Wild will be the conflict of the angry nations, and worldwide will be the battlefield and the distress of nations; and no human Alexander, Caesar, or Napoleon will be found to bring order out of the dreadful confusion. But in the end it will be known that the grand victory of justice and truth, and the punishment of iniquity with its just deserts, was brought about by the mighty power of the King of kings and Lord of lords.

"All of these things are to be accomplished in the closing days of the Gospel Age....All through the Gospel age the Lord has taken cognizance of the controversy, the strife and contention, in nominal Zion. He has observed how his faithful saints have had to contend for truth and righteousness, and even to suffer persecution for righteousness' sake at the hands of those who opposed them in the name of the Lord: and for wise purposes the Lord has hitherto refrained from interfering; but now the day of recompenses has come, and the Lord hath a controversy with them, as it is written..." *D19*

HOS. 4:1-3: "...the LORD hath a controversy with the inhabitants of the land....By swearing, and lying, and killing, and stealing, and committing adultery, they break out, and blood toucheth blood. Therefore shall the land

mourn, and every one that dwelleth therein shall languish...."

BROKEN BY GOD'S KINGDOM

DAN. 2:44: "In the days of these kings shall the God of heaven set up a kingdom, which shall never be destroyed: and the kingdom shall not be left to other people, *but* it shall break in pieces and consume all these kingdoms, and it shall stand for ever."

PSA. 149:5-9: "Let the saints be joyful in glory: let them sing aloud upon their beds. *Let* the high *praises* of God *be* in their mouth, and a two-edged sword in their hand; To execute vengeance upon the heathen, *and* punishments upon the people; To bind their kings with chains, and their nobles with fetters of iron; To execute upon them the judgment written: this honour have all his saints...."

"If we interpret the statement, 'let them sing aloud upon their beds,' in harmony with the significance of similar statements elsewhere..., the expression would signify that the saints in glory will be telling the good tidings... — singing, presenting in melodious cadences the messages which none can learn except the one hundred and forty-four thousand. But the word beds here...,would signify a rest of faith...in the midst of conditions to the contrary. This could hardly be the case with reference to those who have experienced the first resurrection change. Theirs will...be...an absolute entering into rest....This 'two-edged sword' is evidently...,the Word of God. We can scarcely imagine the saints beyond the veil as handling the Word of God...., that these saints will use the 'sword' to execute vengeance...and punishments..., seems to imply that these saints...,will be in authority,....

"Just how the kings and nobles — financial, political and social — will be bound, and just what kinds of fetters of strength will be used, we may not know until qualified....Whether we participate...on this side of the veil or on the other side makes no difference to us...." *R5451:1,2,4*

ISA. 13:4: "...the Lord of hosts himself mustereth the host of the battle."

"Where...is there...such an army before which the earth (society) shall quake and the heavens (ecclesiasticism) shall tremble...that...will dare deny Christendom's time-honored doctrines, its statecraft, and priestcraft?" *D545*

JOEL 2:10,11: "The earth shall quake before them; the heavens shall tremble: the sun and the moon shall be dark, and the stars shall withdraw their shining: And the LORD shall utter his voice before his army:...for *he is* strong that executeth his word: for the day of the LORD is great and very terrible; and who can abide it?"

"The Lord, by his overruling providence, will take a general charge of this great army of discontents — patriots, reformers, socialists, moralists, anarchists, ignorants and hopeless — and use their hopes, fears, follies and selfishness, according to his divine wisdom, to work out his own grand purposes in the overthrow of present institutions, and for the preparation of man for the Kingdom of Righteousness. For this reason only it is termed 'The **Lord's** great army.' None of his saints, — none who are led by the spirit of God as sons of God are to have anything to do with that part of the 'battle.'" *D550*

MAL. 4:1: "**FOR**, behold, the day cometh, that shall burn as an oven; and all the proud, yea, and all that do wickedly, shall be stubble: and the day that cometh shall burn them up, saith the LORD of hosts, that it shall leave them neither root nor branch."

THE TROUBLE IN SPASMS

1 THES. 5:2,3: *Diag.*: "...the Lord's Day is coming like a Thief at Night. When they may say,'Peace and Safety,' then sudden Destruction impends over them, just as LABOR-PANGS on HER

who is pregnant, and they shall by no means escape."

"...this trouble...will be as travail upon a woman..., in spasms...of trouble, with shortening intervals between. It has been just so thus far; and each future spasm will be more severe, until the final ordeal in which the new order will be born in the death-agonies of present institutions." *D548*

TYPES ILLUSTRATING THE DAY OF VENGEANCE

"...great tribulation...came upon fleshly Israel in the end of the Jewish age; and now, having come to the parallel period..., we see all the indications of a similar, though much greater trouble, upon 'Christendom,' its antitype." *D529*

"...the French Revolution seems referred to... in...Revelation...as...an illustration of, the great crisis now approaching." *D531*

REV. 16:12-16: "And the sixth angel poured out his vial upon the great river Euphrates; and the water thereof was dried up, that the way of the kings of the east might be prepared.

"And I saw three unclean spirits like frogs come out of the mouth of the dragon, and out of the mouth of the beast, and out of the mouth of the false prophet. For they are the spirits of devils, working miracles, **which** go forth unto the kings of the earth and of the whole world, to gather them to the battle of that great day of God Almighty. Behold, I come

as a thief. Blessed is he that watcheth, and keepeth his garments, lest he walk naked, and they see his shame. And he gathered them together into a place called in the Hebrew tongue Armageddon." See *D1912 forward,*

page i

"It is the '**Battle of that Great Day of God Almighty**,' when he shall gather the nations and assemble the kingdoms to pour upon them his indignation, even all his fierce anger; for the Lord of hosts himself mustereth the hosts of the battle. Rev. 16:14; Zeph. 3:8; Isa. 13:4

"It is '**A Great Earthquake** such as was not since men were upon the earth, so mighty an earthquake and so great,' which shall 'shake, not the earth only, but also heaven.' Rev. 16:18; Heb. 12:26

"It is '**The Fire of Jehovah's Jealousy**, which shall devour all the earth.' Both the present heavens (the ecclesiastical powers of Christendom) and the earth (the social organization under both church and state influence) are reserved unto fire against this day of judgment. 'The heavens shall pass away with a great noise, and the elements [of present ecclesiasticism] shall melt with fervent heat; the earth [society] also and the works that are therein shall be burned up...The heavens, being on fire, shall be dissolved.' All the proud and all that do wickedly shall be stubble, and this fire shall burn them up. It shall leave them neither root nor branch. Zeph. 3:8; 2 Pet. 3:10,12; Mal. 4:1 'His way is in the Whirlwind and in the Storm.' 'Who can stand before his indignation? and who can abide in the fierceness of his anger?' Nahum 1:3,6,7

"'Behold, it cometh mighty and strong from the Lord, as a **Tempest of Hail** and a **Destroying Storm**, as a **Flood of Mighty Waters** overflowing, and shall cast down to the earth with power the crown of pride.' 'He rebuketh the sea and maketh it dry, and drieth up all the rivers...The mountains quake at him, and the hills melt, and the earth [symbols of the entire present order of things] is burned at his presence; yea, the world and all that dwell therein...With an overrunning flood will he make an utter end of the place thereof, and darkness shall pursue his enemies.' Isa. 28:2; Nahum 1:4,5,8." *D528*

BABYLON

ISA. 47: "Come down, and sit in the dust, O virgin daughter of Babylon, sit on the ground: there is no throne, O daughter of the Chaldeans: for thou shalt no more be called tender and delicate. Take the millstones, and grind meal: uncover thy locks, make bare the leg, uncover the thigh, pass over the rivers. Thy nakedness shall be uncovered, yea, thy shame shall be seen: I will take vengeance, and I will not meet *thee as* a man. As for our redeemer, the LORD

of hosts is his name, the Holy One of Israel. Sit thou silent, and get thee into darkness, O daughter of the Chaldeans: for thou shalt no more be called, The lady of kingdoms. I was wroth with my people, I have polluted mine inheritance, and given them into thine hand: thou didst show them no mercy; upon the ancient hast thou very heavily laid thy yoke. And thou saidst, I shall be a lady for ever: so that thou didst not lay these *things* to thy heart, neither didst remember the latter end of it. Therefore hear now this, *thou that art* given to pleasures, that dwellest carelessly, that sayest in thine heart, I *am*, and none else beside me; I shall not sit *as* a widow, neither shall I know the loss of children: But these two *things* shall come to thee in a moment in one day, the loss of children, and widowhood: they shall come upon thee in their perfection for the multitude of thy sorceries, *and* for the great abundance of thine enchantments. For thou hast trusted in thy wickedness: thou hast said, None seeth me. Thy wisdom and thy knowledge, it hath perverted thee; and thou hast said in thine heart, I *am*, and none else beside me. Therefore shall evil come upon thee; thou shalt not know from whence it riseth: and mischief shall fall upon thee; thou shalt not be able to put it off: and desolation shall come upon thee suddenly, *which* thou shalt not know. Stand now with thine enchantments, and with the multitude of thy sorceries, wherein thou hast laboured from thy youth; if so be thou shalt be able to profit, if so be thou mayest prevail. Thou art wearied in the multitude of thy counsels. Let now the astrologers, the stargazers, the monthly prognosticators, stand up, and save thee from *these things* that shall come upon thee. Behold, they shall be as stubble; the fire shall burn them; they shall not deliver themselves from the power of the flame: *there shall* not *be* a coal to warm at, nor fire to sit before it. Thus shall they be unto thee with whom thou hast laboured, *even* thy merchants, from thy youth: they shall wander every one to his quarter; none shall save thee."

JER. 50: "The word that the LORD spake against Babylon *and* against the land of the Chaldeans by Jeremiah the prophet. Declare ye among the nations, and publish, and set up a standard; publish, *and* conceal not: say, Babylon is taken, Bel is confounded, Merodach is broken in pieces; her idols are confounded, her images are broken in pieces. For out of the north there cometh up a nation against her, which shall make her land desolate, and none shall dwell therein: they shall remove, they shall depart, both man and beast. In those days, and in that time, saith the LORD, the children of Israel shall come, they and the children of Judah together, going and weeping: they shall go, and seek the LORD

their God. They shall ask the way to Zion with their faces thitherward, *saying*, Come, and let us join ourselves to the LORD in a perpetual covenant *that* shall not be

forgotten. My people hath been lost sheep: their shepherds have caused them to go astray, they have turned them away *on* the mountains: they have gone from mountain to hill, they have forgotten their restingplace. All that found them have devoured them: and their adversaries said, We offend not, because they have sinned against the LORD, the habitation of justice, even the LORD, the hope of their fathers. Remove out of the midst of Babylon, and go forth out of the land of the Chaldeans, and be as the he goats before the flocks. For, lo, I will raise and cause to come up against Babylon an assembly of great nations from the north country: and they shall set themselves in array against her; from thence she shall be taken: their arrows *shall be* as of a mighty expert man; none shall return in vain. And Chaldea shall be a spoil: all that spoil her shall be satisfied, saith the LORD. Because ye were glad, because ye rejoiced, O ye destroyers of mine heritage, because ye are grown fat as the heifer at grass, and bellow as bulls; Your mother shall be sore confounded; she that bare you shall be ashamed: behold, the hindermost of the nations *shall be* a wilderness, a dry land, and a desert. Because of the wrath of the LORD it shall not be inhabited, but it shall be wholly desolate: every one that goeth by Babylon shall be astonished, and hiss at all her plagues. Put yourselves in array against Babylon round about: all ye that bend the bow, shoot at her, spare no arrows: for she hath sinned against the LORD. Shout against her round about: she hath given her hand: her foundations are fallen, her walls are thrown down: for it is the vengeance of the LORD: take vengeance upon her; as she hath done, do unto her. Cut off the sower from Babylon, and him that handleth the sickle in the time of harvest: for fear of the oppressing sword they shall turn every one to his people, and they shall flee every one to his own land. Israel is a scattered sheep; the lions have driven him away: first the king of Assyria hath devoured him; and last this Nebuchadrezzar king of Babylon hath broken his bones. Therefore thus saith the LORD of hosts, the God of Israel; Behold, I will punish the king of Babylon and his land, as I have punished the king of Assyria. And I will bring Israel again to his habitation, and he shall feed on Carmel and Bashan, and his soul shall be satisfied upon mount Ephraim and Gilead. In those days, and in that time, saith the LORD, the iniquity of Israel shall be sought for, and *there shall be* none; and the sins of Judah, and they shall not be found: for I will pardon them whom I reserve. Go up against the land of Merathaim, *even* against it, and against the inhabitants of Pekod: waste and utterly destroy after them, saith the LORD, and do according to all that I have commanded thee. A sound of battle *is* in the land, and of great destruction. How is the hammer of the whole earth cut asunder and broken! how is Babylon become a desolation among the nations! have laid a snare for thee, and thou art also taken, O Babylon, and

thou wast not aware: thou art found, and also caught, because thou hast striven against the LORD. The LORD hath opened his armoury, and hath brought forth the weapons of his indignation: for this is the work of the Lord GOD of hosts in the land of the Chaldeans. Come against her from the utmost border, open her storehouses: cast her up as heaps, and destroy her utterly: let nothing of her be left. Slay all her bullocks; let them go down to the slaughter: woe unto them! for their day is come, the time of their visitation. The voice of them that flee and escape out of the land of Babylon, to declare in Zion the vengeance of the LORD our God, the vengeance of his temple. Call together the archers against Babylon: all ye that bend the bow, camp against it round about; let none thereof escape: recompense her according to her work; according to all that she hath done, do unto her: for she hath been proud against the LORD, against the Holy One of Israel. Therefore shall her young men fall in the streets, and all her men of war shall be cut off in that day, saith the LORD. Behold, I *am* against thee, O *thou* most proud, saith the Lord GOD of hosts: for thy day is come, the time *that* I will visit thee. And the most proud shall stumble and fall, and none shall raise him up: and I will kindle a fire in his cities, and it shall devour all round about him. Thus saith the LORD of hosts; The children of Israel and the children of Judah were oppressed together: and all that took them captives held them fast; they refused to let them go. Their Redeemer *is* strong; the LORD of hosts *is* his name: he shall thoroughly plead their cause, that he may give rest to the land, and disquiet the inhabitants of Babylon. A sword *is* upon the Chaldeans, saith the LORD, and upon the inhabitants of Babylon, and upon her princes, and upon her wise *men*. A sword *is* upon the liars; and they shall dote: a sword *is* upon her mighty men; and they shall be dismayed. A sword *is* upon their horses, and upon their chariots, and upon all the mingled people that *are* in the midst of her; and they shall become as women: a sword *is* upon her treasures; and they shall be robbed. A drought is upon her waters; and they shall be dried up: for it *is* the land of graven images, and they are mad upon *their* idols. Therefore the wild beasts of the desert with the wild beasts of the islands shall dwell *there*, and the owls shall dwell therein: and it shall be no more inhabited for ever; neither shall it be dwelt in from generation to generation. As God overthrew Sodom and Gomorrah and the neighbour *cities* thereof, saith the LORD; so shall no man abide there, neither shall any son of man dwell therein. Behold, a people shall come from the north, and a great nation, and many kings shall be raised up from the coasts of the earth. They shall hold the bow and the lance: they *are* cruel, and will not show mercy: their voice shall roar like the sea, and they shall ride upon horses, *every one* put in array, like a man to the battle, against thee, O daughter of Babylon. The king of Babylon

hath heard the report of them, and his hands waxed feeble: anguish took hold of him, *and* pangs as of a woman in travail. Behold, he shall come up like a lion from the swelling of Jordan unto the habitation of the strong: but I will make them suddenly run away from her: and who *is* a chosen *man*, *that* I may appoint over her? for who *is* like me? and who will appoint me the time? and who *is* that shepherd that will stand before me? Therefore hear ye the counsel of the LORD, that he hath taken against Babylon; and his purposes, that he hath purposed against the land of the Chaldeans: Surely the least of the flock shall draw them out: surely he shall make *their* habitation desolate with them. At the noise of the taking of Babylon the earth is moved, and the cry is heard among the nations."

JER. 51: "Thus saith the LORD; Behold, I will raise up against Babylon, and against them that dwell in the midst of them that rise up against me, a destroying wind; And will send unto Babylon fanners, that shall fan her, and shall empty her land: for in the day of trouble they shall be against her round about. Against *him* that bendeth let the archer bend his bow, and against *him that* lifteth himself up in his brigandine: and spare ye not her young men; destroy ye utterly all her host. Thus the slain shall fall in the land of the Chaldeans, and *they that* are thrust through in her streets. For

Israel *hath* not *been* forsaken, nor Judah of his God, of the LORD of hosts; though their land was filled with sin against the Holy One of Israel. Flee out of the midst of Babylon, and deliver every man his soul: be not cut off in her iniquity; for this *is* the time of the LORD'S vengeance; he will render unto her a recompense. Babylon *hath been* a golden cup in the LORD'S hand, that made all the earth drunken: the nations have drunken of her wine; therefore the nations are mad. Babylon is suddenly fallen and destroyed: howl for her; take balm for her pain, if so be she may be healed. We would have healed Babylon, but she is not healed: forsake her, and let us go every one into his own country: for her judgment reacheth unto heaven, and is lifted up *even* to the skies. The LORD hath brought forth our righteousness: come, and let us declare in Zion the work of the LORD our God. Make bright the arrows; gather the shields: the LORD hath raised up the spirit of the kings of the Medes: for his device *is* against Babylon, to destroy it; because it *is* the vengeance of the LORD, the vengeance of his temple. Set up the standard upon the walls of Babylon, make the watch strong, set up the watchmen, prepare the ambushes: for the LORD hath both devised and done that which he spake against the inhabitants of Babylon. O thou that dwellest upon many waters, abundant in treasures, thine end is come, *and* the measure of thy covetousness. The LORD of hosts hath sworn by himself, *saying*, Surely I will fill thee with men, as with caterpillars; and they shall lift up a shout against thee. He hath made the earth by his

power, he hath established the world by his wisdom, and hath stretched out the heaven by his understanding. When he uttereth *his* voice, *there is* a multitude of waters in the heavens; and he causeth the vapours to ascend from the ends of the earth: he maketh lightnings with rain, and bringeth forth the wind out of his treasures.

"Every man is brutish by *his* knowledge; every founder is confounded by the graven image: for his molten image *is* falsehood, and *there is* no breath in them. They *are* vanity, the work of errors: in the time of their visitation they shall perish. The portion of Jacob *is* not like them; for he is the former of all things: and *Israel is* the rod of his inheritance: the LORD of hosts *is* his name. Thou *art* my battle ax and weapons of war: for with thee will I break in pieces the nations, and with thee will I destroy kingdoms; And with thee will I break in pieces the horse and his rider; and with thee will I break in pieces the chariot and his rider; With thee also will I break in pieces man and woman; and with thee will I break in pieces old and young; and with thee will I break in pieces the young man and the maid; I will also break in pieces with thee the shepherd and his flock; and with thee will I break in pieces the husbandman and his yoke of oxen; and with thee will I break in pieces captains and rulers. And I will render unto Babylon and to all the inhabitants of Chaldea all their evil that they have done in Zion in your sight, saith the LORD. Behold, I *am* against thee, O destroying mountain, saith the LORD, which destroyest all the earth: and I will stretch out mine hand upon thee, and roll thee down from the rocks, and will make thee a burnt mountain. And they shall not take of thee a stone for a corner, nor a stone for foundations; but thou shalt be desolate for ever, saith the LORD. Set ye up a standard in the land, blow the trumpet among the nations, prepare the nations against her, call together against her the kingdoms of Ararat, Minni, and Ashchenaz; appoint a captain against her; cause the horses to come up as the rough caterpillars. Prepare against her the nations with the kings of the Medes, the captains thereof, and all the rulers thereof, and all the land of his dominion. And the land shall tremble and sorrow: for every purpose of the LORD shall be performed against Babylon, to make the land of Babylon a desolation without an inhabitant. The mighty men of Babylon have forborn to fight, they have remained in *their* holds: their might hath failed; they became as women: they have burned her dwellingplaces; her bars are broken.

"One post shall run to meet another, and one messenger to meet another, to show the king of Babylon that his city is taken at *one* end, And that the passages are stopped, and the reeds they have burned with fire, and the men of war are affrighted. For thus saith the LORD of hosts, the God of Israel; The daughter of Babylon is like a threshingfloor, *it is* time to thresh her: yet a little while, and the time of her

harvest shall come. Nebuchadrezzar the king of Babylon hath devoured me, he hath crushed me, he hath made me an empty vessel, he hath swallowed me up like a dragon, he hath filled his belly with my delicates, he hath cast me out. The violence done to me and to my flesh *be* upon Babylon, shall the inhabitant of Zion say; and my blood upon the inhabitants of Chaldea, shall Jerusalem say. Therefore thus saith the LORD; Behold, I will plead thy cause, and take vengeance for thee; and I will dry up her sea, and make her springs dry. And Babylon shall become heaps, a dwellingplace for dragons, an astonishment, and an hissing, without an inhabitant. They shall roar together like lions: they shall yell as lions" whelps. In their heat I will make their feasts, and I will make them drunken, that they may rejoice, and sleep a perpetual sleep, and not wake, saith the LORD. I will bring them down like lambs to the slaughter, like rams with he goats. How is Sheshach taken! and how is the praise of the whole earth surprised! how is Babylon become an astonishment among the nations! The sea is come up upon Babylon: she is covered with the multitude of the waves thereof. Her cities are a desolation, a dry land, and a wilderness, a land wherein no man dwelleth, neither doth *any* son of man pass thereby. And I will punish Bel in Babylon, and I will bring forth out of his mouth that which he hath swallowed up: and the nations shall not flow together any more unto him: yea, the wall of Babylon shall fall. My people, go ye out of the midst of her, and deliver ye every man his soul from the fierce anger of the LORD. And lest your heart faint, and ye fear for the rumour that shall be heard in the land; a rumour shall both come *one* year, and after that in *another* year *shall come* a rumour, and violence in the land, ruler against ruler. Therefore, behold, the days come, that I will do judgment upon the graven images of Babylon: and her whole land shall be confounded, and all her slain shall fall in the midst of her. Then the heaven and the earth, and all that is therein, shall sing for Babylon: for the spoilers shall come unto her from the north, saith the LORD. As Babylon *hath caused* the slain of Israel to fall, so at Babylon shall fall the slain of all the earth. Ye that have escaped the sword, go away, stand not still: remember the LORD afar off, and let Jerusalem come into your mind. We are confounded, because we have heard reproach: shame hath covered our faces: for strangers are come into the sanctuaries of the LORD'S house. Wherefore, behold, the days come, saith the LORD, that I will do judgment upon her graven images: and through all her land the wounded shall groan. Though Babylon should mount up to heaven, and though she should fortify the height of her strength, *yet* from me shall spoilers come unto her, saith the LORD. A sound of a cry *cometh* from Babylon, and great destruction from the land of the Chaldeans: Because the LORD hath spoiled Babylon, and destroyed out of her the great voice; when her waves do roar like

great waters, a

noise of their voice is uttered: Because the spoiler is come upon her, *even* upon Babylon, and her mighty men are taken, every one of their bows is broken: for the LORD God of recompenses shall surely requite. And I will make drunk her princes, and her wise *men*, her captains, and her rulers, and her mighty men: and they shall sleep a perpetual sleep, and not wake, saith the King, whose name *is* the LORD of hosts. Thus saith the LORD of hosts; The broad walls of Babylon shall be utterly broken, and her high gates shall be burned with fire; and the people shall labour in vain, and the folk in the fire, and they shall be weary. The word which Jeremiah the prophet commanded Seraiah the son of Neriah, the son of Maaseiah, when he went with Zedekiah the king of Judah into Babylon in the fourth year of his reign. And *this* Seraiah was a quiet prince. So Jeremiah wrote in a book all the evil that should come upon Babylon, even all these words that are written against Babylon. And Jeremiah said to Seraiah, When thou comest to Babylon, and shalt see, and shalt read all these words; Then shalt thou say, O LORD, thou hast spoken against this place, to cut it off, that none shall remain in it, neither man nor beast, but that it shall be desolate for ever. And it shall be, when thou hast made an end of reading this book, *that* thou shalt bind a stone to it, and cast it into the midst of Euphrates: And thou shalt say, Thus shall Babylon sink, and shall not rise from the evil that I will bring upon her: and they shall be weary. Thus far *are* the words of Jeremiah."

REV. 17: "And there came one of the seven angels which had the seven vials, and talked with me, saying unto me, Come hither; I will show unto thee the judgment of the great whore that sitteth upon many waters: With whom the kings of the earth have committed fornication, and the inhabitants of the earth have been made drunk with the wine of her fornication. So he carried me away in the spirit into the wilderness: and I saw a woman sit upon a scarlet coloured beast, full of names of blasphemy, having seven heads and ten horns. And the woman was arrayed in purple and scarlet colour, and decked with gold and precious stones and pearls, having a golden cup in her hand full of abominations and filthiness of her fornication: And upon her forehead was a name written, **MYSTERY, BABYLON THE GREAT, THE MOTHER OF HARLOTS AND ABOMINATIONS OF THE EARTH**. And I saw the woman drunken with the blood of the saints, and with the blood of the martyrs of Jesus: and when I saw her, I wondered with great admiration.

"And the angel said unto me, Wherefore didst thou marvel? I will tell thee the mystery of the woman, and of the beast that carrieth her, which hath the seven heads and ten horns. The beast that thou sawest was, and is not; and shall ascend out of the bottomless pit, and go into perdition: and

they that dwell on the earth shall wonder, whose names were not written in the book of life from the foundation of the world, when they behold the beast that was, and is not, and yet is. And here is the mind which hath wisdom. The seven heads are seven mountains, on which the woman sitteth. And there are seven kings: five are fallen, and one is, and the other is not yet come; and when he cometh, he must continue a short space. And the beast that was, and is not, even he is the eighth, and is of the seven, and goeth into perdition. And the ten horns which thou sawest are ten kings, which have received no kingdom as yet; but receive power as kings one hour with the beast. These have one mind, and shall give their power and strength unto the beast. These shall make war with the Lamb, and the Lamb shall overcome them: for he is Lord of lords, and King of kings: and they that are with him are called, and chosen, and faithful. And he saith unto me, The waters which thou sawest, where the whore sitteth, are peoples, and multitudes, and nations, and tongues. And the ten horns which thou sawest upon the beast, these shall hate the whore, and shall make her desolate and naked, and shall eat her flesh, and burn her with fire. For God hath put in their hearts to fulfil his will, and to agree, and give their kingdom unto the beast, until the words of God shall be fulfilled. And the woman which thou sawest is that great city, which reigneth over the kings of the earth."

REV. 18: "And after these things I saw another angel come down from heaven, having great power; and the earth was lightened with his glory. And he cried mightily with a strong voice, saying, Babylon the great is fallen, is fallen, and is become the habitation of devils, and the hold of every foul spirit, and a cage of every unclean and hateful bird. For all nations have drunk of the wine of the wrath of her fornication, and the kings of the earth have committed fornication with her, and the merchants of the earth are waxed rich through the abundance of her delicacies. And I heard another voice from heaven, saying, Come out of her, my people, that ye be not partakers of her sins, and that ye receive not of her plagues. For her sins have reached unto heaven, and God hath remembered her iniquities. Reward her even as she rewarded you, and double unto her double according to her works: in the cup which she hath filled fill to her double. How much she hath glorified herself, and lived deliciously, so much torment and sorrow give her: for she saith in her heart, I sit a queen, and am no widow, and shall see no sorrow. Therefore shall her plagues come in one day, death, and mourning, and famine; and she shall be utterly burned with fire: for strong is the Lord God who judgeth her. And the kings of the earth, who have committed fornication and lived deliciously with her, shall bewail her, and lament for her, when they shall see the smoke of her burning, Standing afar off for the fear of her

torment, saying, Alas, alas that great city Babylon, that mighty city! for in one hour is thy judgment come. And the merchants of the earth shall weep and mourn over her; for no man buyeth their merchandise any more: The merchandise of gold, and silver, and precious stones, and of pearls, and fine linen, and purple, and silk, and scarlet, and all thyine wood, and all manner vessels of ivory, and all manner vessels of most precious wood, and of brass, and iron, and marble, And cinnamon, and odours, and ointments, and frankincense, and wine, and oil, and fine flour, and wheat, and beasts, and sheep, and horses, and chariots, and slaves, and souls of men. And the fruits that thy soul lusted after are departed from thee, and all things which were dainty and goodly are departed from thee, and thou shalt find them no more at all. The merchants of these things, which were made rich by her, shall stand afar off for the fear of her torment, weeping and wailing, And saying, Alas, alas, that great city, that was clothed in fine linen, and purple, and scarlet, and decked with gold, and precious stones, and pearls! For in one hour so great riches is come to nought. And every shipmaster, and all the company in ships, and sailors, and as many as trade by sea, stood afar off, And cried when they saw the smoke of her burning, saying, What *city* is like unto this great city! And they cast dust on their heads, and cried, weeping and wailing, saying, Alas, alas, that great city, wherein were made rich all that had ships in the sea by reason of her costliness! for in one hour is she made desolate. Rejoice over her, *thou* heaven, and *ye* holy

apostles and prophets; for God hath avenged you on her. And a mighty angel took up a stone like a great millstone, and cast *it* into the sea, saying, Thus with violence shall that great city Babylon be thrown down, and shall be found no more at all. And the voice of harpers, and musicians, and of pipers, and trumpeters, shall be heard no more at all in thee; and no craftsman, of whatsoever craft he be, shall be found any more in thee; and the sound of a millstone shall be heard no more at all in thee; And the light of a candle shall shine no more at all in thee; and the voice of the bridegroom and of the bride shall be heard no more at all in thee: for thy merchants were the great men of the earth; for by thy sorceries were all nations deceived. And in her was found the blood of prophets, and of saints, and of all that were slain upon the earth."

See also Index: **Antichrist; Babylon**

"BABYLON'S DOOM"

"Upon the prophetic page we may clearly read the doom of Babylon, Christendom; and it is none the less clearly expressed in the signs of the times. That her destruction will be sudden, violent and complete is thus forcibly stated: 'And a mighty angel took up a stone like a great millstone, and cast it into the sea, saying, Thus, with violence, shall

that great city Babylon be thrown down, and shall be found no more at all.' (Rev. 18:1,21; Jer. 51:63,64,42,24-26) And yet that it was to undergo a gradual consuming process is shown by Daniel (7:26) — 'But the judgment shall sit, and they shall take away his dominion, to consume and to destroy it unto the end.' The Papal **dominion** (and much of the abject reverence of the people for ecclesiasticism in general), as already shown, [*C40*] was broken down at the beginning of the Time of the End — 1799; and, though the subsequent process of consumption has been slow, and there have been occasional signs of apparent recovery, which never seemed more flattering than at present, the assurance of Papacy's final destruction is positive, and its death-struggle will be violent. First, however, she must attain more of her old-time prestige, which will be shared with a confederated association of her daughters. Together they will be lifted up, that together they may be violently thrown down.

"That the punishment of Babylon will be great is assured. It is written prophetically that, 'Great Babylon came in remembrance before God, to give unto her the cup of the wine of the fierceness of his wrath.' 'And he hath avenged the blood of his servants at her hand.' 'Her sins have reached unto heaven, and God hath remembered her iniquities. Reward her, even as she rewarded you, and double unto her double according to her works. In the cup which she hath filled, fill to her double. How much she hath glorified herself and lived deliciously, so much torment and sorrow give her; for she saith in her heart, I sit a queen, and am no widow, and shall see no sorrow' (Rev. 16:19; 19:2; 18:5-7) While the broadest application of this language is, of course, to Papacy, it also involves all who are in any degree in confederation or sympathy with her. All such will be sharers in her plagues. (Rev. 18:4) Although the kings of the earth have hated the harlot and cast her off (Rev. 17:16), still she says, 'I sit a queen, and am no widow,' loudly boasts of her right to rule the nations, and claims that her former power will soon be regained.

"Of her boastings and threats the following from a Catholic journal of recent date is a fair sample:

"The Papacy will regain its temporal sovereignty, because it is useful and convenient to the Church. It gives the head executive of the church a fuller liberty and a fuller sway. The Pope can be no king's subject long. It is not in keeping with the divine office to be so. It cramps him and narrows his influence for good. Europe has acknowledged this influence, and will be forced to bow to it in greater times of need than this. Social upheavals, and the red hand of anarchy, will yet crown Leo or his successor with the reality of power which the third circle symbolizes, and which was once recognized universally.

"Yes, as the day of trouble draws on, ecclesiasticism will endeavor to use its power and influence more and more to secure its own political welfare, by its control of the turbulent elements of society; but in the crisis of the near future the lawless element will spurn all conservative influence and break over all restraints, the red hand of Anarchy will do its dreadful work, and Babylon, Christendom, social, political and ecclesiastical, shall fall.

"'Therefore,' says the inspired writer — i.e., because she will violently struggle for life and power — 'shall her plagues come in one day [suddenly], death and mourning and famine, and she shall be utterly burned with fire [symbolic fire — destructive calamities], for strong is the Lord God who judgeth her.' Rev. 18:8

"'Thus saith the Lord, Behold I will raise up against Babylon, and against them that dwell in the midst of them that rise up against me [all in sympathy with Babylon], a destroying wind; and I will send into Babylon, fanners that shall fan her, and shall empty her land: for in the day of trouble they shall be against her round about...Destroy ye utterly all her host.' Jer. 51:1-3

"'And I will render unto Babylon [to the Papacy specially], and to all the inhabitants of Chaldea [or Babylonia — Christendom — to all the nations of the so-called Christian world] all their evil that they have done in Zion in your sight, saith the Lord.' (Jer. 51:24) As we call to mind the long train of evils by which Babylon has oppressed and worn out the saints of the most High (the true Zion), and how it is written that God will avenge his own elect, and that speedily; that, according to their deeds, he will repay recompense to his enemies; that he will render unto Babylon a recompense (Luke 18:7,8; Isa. 59:18; Jer. 51:6), we begin to realize that some fearful calamity awaits her. The horrible decrees of Papacy — the reproach and reward of which Protestantism also is incurring by her present compromising association with her — for the burning, butchering, banishing, imprisoning and torturing of the saints in every conceivable way, executed with such fiendish cruelty in the days of her power by the arm of the State, whose power she demanded and received, await the full measure of just retribution; for she is to receive 'double for all her sins.' And the nations (of Christendom) which have participated in her crimes and guilt must drink with her to the dregs that bitter cup.

"'And I will punish Bel in Babylon [the god of Babylon — the Pope]; and I will bring forth out of his mouth that which he hath swallowed up [He shall repudiate in his extremity the "great swelling words" and blasphemous titles which he has long appropriated to himself — that he is the infallible vicar, "vice-gerent of Christ" "Another God on earth," etc.], and the nations shall not flow together any more unto him.

Yea, the wall of Babylon [the civil power that once defended it, and that in a measure does so still] shall fall...Thus saith the Lord of hosts: the broad walls of Babylon shall be utterly broken, and

her high gates shall be burned with fire [shall be destroyed]; and the people shall labor in vain, and the folk in the fire [to prop and save the walls of Babylon], and they shall be weary' (Jer. 51:44,58) This shows the blindness of the people, and the hold Babylon has on them, that they will labor to uphold her against her own best interests; but notwithstanding her desperate struggle for life and to conserve her prestige and influence, like a great millstone cast into the sea, Babylon shall go down, never again to rise; 'For strong is the Lord God that judgeth her.' Only then will the people realize their wonderful deliverance, and that her overthrow was by the hand of God. Rev. 19:1,2

"Such is the doom of Babylon, Christendom, which Isaiah and other prophets foresaw and foretold. And it is in view of the fact that within her borders are many of his own dear people that the Lord, through his prophet (Isa. 13:1,2), commands his sanctified ones, saying, 'Lift ye up a standard [the standard of the blessed gospel of truth, divested of the traditional errors that have long beclouded it] upon the high mountain [among those who constitute the true embryo Kingdom of God]; raise high your voice unto them [earnestly and widely proclaim this truth unto the bewildered sheep of the Lord's flock who are still in Babylon]; motion with the hand [let them see the power of the truth exemplified, as well as hear its proclamation], that they [the willing and obedient, the true sheep] may go into the gates of the nobles [that they may realize the blessings of the truly consecrated and heirs of the heavenly Kingdom].'

"So the warning voice goes forth to 'him that hath an ear to hear.' We are in the time of the last or Laodicean stage of the great nominal gospel church of wheat and tares. (Rev. 3:14-22) She is upbraided for her lukewarmness, pride, spiritual poverty, blindness and nakedness, and counseled to forsake quickly her evil ways before it is too late. But the Lord knew that only a few would hearken to the warning and call; and so the promise of reward is given, not to the whole mass of those addressed, but to the few who still have an ear for the truth, and who overcome the general disposition and spirit of Babylon — '**To him that overcometh** will I grant to sit with me in my throne, even as I also overcame, and am set down with my Father in his throne. He that hath an ear [a disposition to hearken to and heed the word of the Lord], let him hear what the Spirit saith unto the churches.' But upon those who have no ear, no disposition to hear, the Lord will pour his indignation.

"That, with few individual exceptions, the attitude of all Christendom is that of pride, self-righteousness and self-complacency is manifest to the most casual observer. She still saith in her heart, 'I sit a queen, and am no widow, and shall see no sorrow.' She still glorifies herself and lives deliciously. She says, 'I am rich and increased in goods, and have need of nothing,' and does not realize that she is 'Wretched and miserable, and poor, and blind, and naked.' Nor does she heed the counsel of the Lord to buy of him (at cost of self-sacrifice) gold tried in the fire (the true riches, the heavenly riches, 'The divine nature'), and white raiment (the robe of Christ's imputed righteousness, which so many are now discarding, to appear before God in their own unrighteousness), and to anoint her eyes with eyesalve (complete consecration and submission to the divine will as expressed in the Scriptures), that she might see and be healed. Rev. 3:18

"The spirit of the world has so fully taken possession of the ecclesiastical powers of Christendom, that reformation of the systems is impossible; and individuals can escape their fate only by a prompt and timely withdrawal from them. The hour of judgment is come, and even now upon her walls the warning hand of divine providence is tracing the mysterious words, 'Mene, Mene, Tekel, Upharsin' **— GOD HATH NUMBERED THY KINGDOM AND FINISHED IT! THOU ART WEIGHED IN THE BALANCES AND FOUND WANTING!** And the Prophet (Isaiah 47) now speaks, saying —

"'Come down, and sit in the dust, O virgin daughter of Babylon [said in derision of her claim to purity]; sit on the ground: there is no throne, O daughter of the Chaldeans; for thou shalt no more be called tender and delicate...Thy nakedness shall be uncovered; yea, thy shame shall be seen: I will take vengeance, and I will not meet thee as a man...Sit thou silent, and get thee into darkness, O daughter of the Chaldeans; for thou shalt no more be called, The lady of kingdoms...Thou saidst, I shall be a lady forever, so that thou didst not lay these things to thy heart, neither didst remember the latter end of it.

"'Therefore hear now this, thou that art given to pleasures; that dwellest carelessly; that sayest in thine heart, I am, and none else beside me; I shall not sit as a widow, neither shall I know the loss of children. But these two things shall come to thee in a moment in one day, the loss of children and widowhood [compare Rev. 18:8]: in their full measure shall they come upon thee despite of the multitude of thy sorceries, despite of the very great abundance of thy enchantments; for thou hast trusted in thy wickedness: thou hast said, None seeth me. Thy [worldly] wisdom and thy knowledge, it hath perverted thee: and thou has said in thy heart, I am, and none else beside me. Therefore shall

evil come upon thee; thou shalt not know from whence it riseth: and mischief shall fall upon thee; thou shalt not be able to put it off: and desolation shall come upon thee suddenly, which thou shalt not [previously] know.' Compare Verse 9 and Rev. 18:7.

"Such being the solemn declarations against Babylon, well will it be for all who heed the warning voice and the instruction of the Lord to his people yet within her borders; for 'Thus saith the Lord:...Flee out of the midst of Babylon, and deliver every man his soul: be not cut off in her iniquity; for this is the time of the Lord's vengeance; he will render unto her a recompense...Babylon is suddenly fallen and destroyed...We would have healed Babylon, but she is not healed. Forsake her;...for her judgment reacheth unto heaven, and is lifted up even to the skies...My people, go ye out of the midst of her, and deliver ye every man his soul from the fierce anger of the Lord.' Jer. 51:1,6,8,9,45. Compare Rev. 17:3-6; 18:1-5.

"For those who would obey this command to come out of Babylon, there is but one place of refuge; and that is, not in a new sect and bondage, but in 'The secret place of the Most High' — the place or condition of entire consecration, typified by the Most Holy of the Tabernacle and Temple. (Psa. 91) 'He that dwelleth in the secret place of the Most High shall abide under the shadow of the Almighty.' And such may truly say in the midst of all the calamities of this evil day, 'The Lord is my refuge and my fortress, my God: in him will I trust.'" *D37-43*

EDOM

JER. 49:7-22: "Concerning Edom, thus saith the LORD of hosts; *Is* wisdom no more in Teman? is counsel perished from the prudent? is their wisdom vanished? Flee ye, turn back, dwell deep,

O inhabitants of Dedan; for I will bring the calamity of Esau upon him, the time that I will visit him. If grapegatherers come to thee, would they not leave *some* gleaning grapes? if thieves by night, they will destroy till they have enough. But I have made Esau bare, I have uncovered his secret places, and he shall not be able to hide himself: his seed is spoiled, and his brethren, and his neighbours, and he is not. Leave thy fatherless children, I will preserve *them* alive; and let thy widows trust in me. For thus saith the LORD; Behold, they whose judgment was not to drink of the cup have assuredly drunken; and *art* thou he *that* shall altogether go unpunished? thou shalt not go unpunished, but thou shalt surely drink *of it*. For I have sworn by myself, saith the LORD, that Bozrah shall become a desolation, a reproach, a waste, and a curse; and all the cities thereof shall be perpetual wastes. I have heard a rumour from the LORD, and an ambassador is sent unto the heathen, saying, Gather ye together, and come against her, and rise up to the battle. For, lo, I will make thee small

among the heathen, *and* despised among men. Thy terribleness hath deceived thee, *and* the pride of thine heart, O thou that dwellest in the clefts of the rock, that holdest the height of the hill: though thou shouldest make thy nest as high as the eagle, I will bring thee down from thence, saith the LORD.

"Also Edom shall be a desolation: every one that goeth by it shall be astonished, and shall hiss at all the plagues thereof. As in the overthrow of Sodom and Gomorrah and the neighbour *cities* thereof, saith the LORD, no man shall abide there, neither shall a son of man dwell in it. Behold, he shall come up like a lion from the swelling of Jordan against the habitation of the strong: but I will suddenly make him run away from her: and who is a chosen *man, that* I may appoint over her? for who is like me? and who will appoint me the time? and who *is* that shepherd that will stand before me? Therefore hear the counsel of the LORD, that he hath taken against Edom; and his purposes, that he hath purposed against the inhabitants of Teman: Surely the least of the flock shall draw them out: surely he shall make their habitations desolate with them. The earth is moved at the noise of their fall, at the cry the noise thereof was heard in the Red sea. Behold, he shall come up and fly as the eagle, and spread his wings over Bozrah: and at that day shall the heart of the mighty men of Edom be as the heart of a woman in her pangs."

EZEK. 25:12-14: "Thus saith the Lord GOD; Because that Edom hath dealt against the house of Judah by taking vengeance, and hath greatly offended, and revenged himself upon them; Therefore thus saith the Lord GOD; I will also stretch out mine hand upon Edom, and will cut off man and beast from it; and I will make it desolate from Teman; and they of Dedan shall fall by the sword. And I will lay my vengeance upon Edom by the hand of my people Israel: and they shall do in Edom according to mine anger and according to my fury; and they shall know my vengeance, saith the Lord GOD."

"The Prophet Isaiah (63:1-6), taking his standpoint down at the end of the harvest of the Gospel age, beholds a mighty Conqueror, glorious in his apparel (clothed with authority and power), and riding forth victoriously over all his enemies, with whose blood all his garments are stained. He inquires who the wonderful stranger is, saying, 'who is this that cometh from Edom, with dyed garments from Bozrah? this that is glorious in his apparel, traveling in the greatness of his strength?'

"Edom, it will be remembered, was the name given to Esau, the twin brother of Jacob, after he sold his birthright. (Gen. 25:30-34) The name was also subsequently applied both to the people descended from him and to the country in which they settled. (See Gen. 25:30; 36:1; Num. 20:18,20,21; Jer.

49:17.) Consequently, the name Edom is an appropriate symbol of a class who, in this age, have similarly sold their birthright; and that, too, for a consideration as trifling as the mess of pottage which influenced Esau. The name is frequently so used by the prophets in reference to that great company of professed Christians which is sometimes called 'The Christian World,' and 'Christendom' (i.e., Christ's Kingdom), which names the thoughtful should readily recognize as misnomers, betraying a great lack of understanding of the true object and character of Christ's Kingdom, and also of the appointed time and manner of its establishment. They are simply boastful appellations which misrepresent the truth. Is the world indeed yet Christian? or is even that part of it that claims the name? — the nations of Europe and America? Hear the thunder of cannon, the tread of marshalled hosts, the scream of bursting shells, the groans of the oppressed and the mutterings of the angry nations with deafening emphasis answer, No! Do these constitute Christ's Kingdom — a true Christendom? Who indeed will take upon himself the burden of proof of such a monstrous proposition? The fallacy of the boastful claim is so palpable that any attempt at proof would so thoroughly dissolve the delusion that none who wish to perpetuate it would presume to undertake it.

"The fitness of the symbolic name 'Edom' in its application to Christendom is very marked. The nations of so-called Christendom have had privileges above all the other nations, in that, to them, as to the Israelites of the previous age, have been committed the oracles of God. As a result of the enlightening influences of the Word of God, both directly and indirectly, have come to these nations all the blessings of civilization; and the presence in their midst of a few saints (a 'Little flock'), developed under its influence, has been as 'The salt of the earth,' preserving it to some extent from utter moral corruption. And these, by their godly examples, and by their energy in holding forth the Word of life, have been 'The light of the world,' showing men the way back to God and righteousness. But only a few in all these favored nations have made proper use of their advantages, which have come to them as an inheritance by reason of their birth in the lands so blessed with the influences of the Word of God, direct and indirect.

"Like Esau, the masses of Christendom have sold their birthright of special and peculiar advantage. By the masses, we mean not only the agnostic portion of it, but also the great majority of worldly professors of the religion of Christ, who are Christians only in name, but who lack the life of Christ in them. These have preferred the mean morsels of present earthly advantage to all the blessings of communion and fellowship with God and Christ, and to the glorious inheritance with Christ promised to those who faithfully follow in his footsteps of sacrifice. These, though

they are **nominally** God's people — the nominal spiritual Israel of the Gospel age, of which 'Israel after the flesh' in the Jewish age was a type — really have little or no respect for the promises of God. These, although they are indeed a mighty host, bearing the name of Christ, and posing before the world as the Church of Christ; although they have built up great organizations representing various schisms in the professed body of Christ; although they have written massive volumes of **un**-'systematic theology,' and

founded numerous colleges and seminaries for the teaching of these; and although they have done 'many wonderful works' in the name of Christ, which were often, nevertheless, contrary to the teachings of his Word; these constitute the Edom class who have sold their birthright. The class includes almost all 'Christendom' — all reared in the so-called Christian lands, who have not availed themselves of the privileges and blessings of the gospel of Christ and conformed their lives thereto. The remainder are the few justified, consecrated and faithful individuals who are joined to Christ by a living faith, and who, as 'Branches,' abide in Christ, the True Vine. These constitute the true Israel of God — Israelites indeed, in whom is no guile.

"The symbolic Edom of Isaiah's prophecy corresponds to the symbolic Babylon of Revelation, and of the prophecies of Isaiah, Jeremiah and Ezekiel. Thus the Lord designates and describes that great system to which men ascribe the misleading name, Christendom — Christ's Kingdom. As all of the land of Edom symbolizes all of 'Christendom,' so its capital city, Bozrah, represented Ecclesiasticism, the chief citadel of Christendom. The prophet represents the Lord as a victorious warrior who makes a great slaughter in Edom, and specially in Bozrah. The name Bozrah signifies 'sheepfold.' Bozrah is even yet noted for its goats, and the slaughter of this day of vengeance is said to be of the 'Lambs and goats.' (Isa. 34:6) The goats would correspond to the 'Tares,' while the lambs would represent the tribulation saints (Rev. 7:14; 1 Cor. 3:1) who neglected to use the opportunities granted them, and did not so run as to obtain the prize of their high calling; and who therefore, although not rejected of the Lord, were not accounted worthy to escape the trouble as matured 'sheep' — called, chosen and faithful.

"The reply to the Prophet's inquiry — 'Who is this that cometh from Edom, with dyed garments from Bozrah?' is, 'I that speak in righteousness, mighty to save.' It is the same mighty one described by the Revelator (Rev. 19:11-16), the 'King of kings and Lord of lords,' Jehovah's Anointed, our blessed Redeemer and Lord Jesus.

"For our information the Prophet inquires further, saying, 'Wherefore art thou red in thine apparel, and thy garments like him that treadeth in the winepress?' Hear the reply: 'I

have trodden the winepress alone; and of the nations there was none with me: and I trod them down in mine anger, and I trampled on them in my fury; and their blood was sprinkled on my garments, and all my raiment have I stained; for the day of vengeance was in my heart, and the year of my redeemed was come. And I looked, and there was no one to help, and I was astonished; and there was no one to support; and then my own arm [power] aided me; and my fury, this it was that upheld me. And I stamped down nations in my anger,...brought down to the earth their victorious strength.' And the Revelator adds, 'He treadeth the winepress of the fierceness and wrath of Almighty God.' Rev. 19:15

"The treading of the winepress is the last feature of harvest work. The reaping and gathering is all done first. So this treading of the winepress of the wrath of God into which 'The vine of the **earth**' (the false vine which has misappropriated the name Christian and Christ's Kingdom) is cast when its iniquitous clusters are fully ripe (Rev. 14:18-20), represents the last work of this eventful 'harvest' period. It pictures to our minds the last features of the great time of trouble which shall involve all nations, and of which we are so abundantly forewarned in the Scriptures.

"The fact that the King of kings is represented as treading the winepress '**Alone**' indicates that the power exerted for the overthrow of the nations will be divine power, and not mere human energy. It will be God's power that will punish the nations, and that will eventually 'Bring forth judgment [justice, righteousness, truth] unto victory.' 'He shall smite the earth with the rod of his mouth; and with the breath of his lips [the force and spirit of his truth] shall he slay the wicked.' (Isa. 11:4; Rev. 19:15; Psa. 98:1) To no human generalship can the honors of the coming victory for truth and righteousness be ascribed. Wild will be the conflict of the angry nations, and world-wide will be the battlefield and the distress of nations; and no human Alexander, Caesar or Napoleon will be found to bring order out of the dreadful confusion. But in the end it will be known that the grand victory of justice and truth, and the punishment of iniquity with its just deserts, was brought about by the mighty power of the King of kings and Lord of lords." *D14-18*

EGYPT

See **EXOD. 7-11th Chapters**

EXOD. 12:29-36: "And it came to pass, that at midnight the LORD smote all the firstborn in the land of Egypt, from the firstborn of Pharaoh that sat on his throne unto the firstborn of the captive that was in the dungeon; and all the firstborn of cattle. And Pharaoh rose up in the night, he, and all his servants, and all the Egyptians; and there was a

great cry in Egypt; for *there was* not a house where *there was* not one dead. And he called for Moses and Aaron by night, and said, Rise up, *and* get you forth from among my people, both ye and the children of Israel; and go, serve the LORD, as ye have said. Also take your flocks and your herds, as ye have said, and be gone; and bless me also. And the Egyptians were urgent upon the people, that they might send them out of the land in haste; for they said, We be all dead *men.* And the people took their dough before it was leavened, their kneadingtroughs being bound up in their clothes upon their shoulders. And the children of Israel did according to the word of Moses; and they borrowed of the Egyptians jewels of silver, and jewels of gold, and raiment: And the LORD gave the people favour in the sight of the Egyptians, so that they lent unto them *such things as they required*. And they spoiled the Egyptians."

"'Christ our Passover is sacrificed for us; therefore let us keep the feast, not with old leaven, neither with the leaven of malice and wickedness; but with the unleavened bread of sincerity and truth.' 1 Cor. 5:7,8 NOTABLE amongst the experiences of typical Israel was the Passover. The Feast of the Passover, celebrated every year for seven days, began with the fifteenth day of the first month. It celebrated in a general way the deliverance of the people of Israel from the bondage of Egypt — but particularly the passing over, or sparing alive, of the first-born of that nation during the plague of death which came upon the Egyptians, and which, as the last of the plagues, finally compelled them to release the Israelites from their compulsory servitude. The passing over of the first-born of Israel became the precursor of the liberation of the whole nation of Israel, and their passing in safety over the Red Sea into freedom from the bondage of Egypt. We can readily see that so portentous an event would properly be commemorated by the Israelites as intimately identified with the birth of their nation; and thus it is celebrated by Jews to this day. The members of the New Creation are interested

in those events, as they are interested in all the doings and arrangements of their Heavenly Father, both in respect to his typical people, Israel after the flesh, and in respect to the whole world of mankind. But the New Creation has a still deeper interest in those matters which occurred in Egypt, in view of the fact that the Lord has revealed to them the 'mystery' that those things which happened unto natural Israel were intended to typify and foreshadow still grander things in the divine plan respecting antitypical Spiritual Israel—the New Creation.

"In reference to these spiritual things, the Apostle declares that the 'Natural man receiveth them not, neither can he know them, because they are spiritually discerned; but God hath revealed them unto us [the New Creation] by his Spirit.' (1 Cor. 2:14,10) God used the apostles as his

mouthpieces to give us certain clues whereby, under the guidance of his Spirit, we may understand the deep things of God. One of these clues is found in the text heading this chapter. Following the Apostle's indication, we see clearly that Israel according to the flesh typified the whole people of God — all who shall ultimately become his people, down to the close of the Millennial age; that the Egyptians represented the opponents of the people of God, Pharaoh, their ruler, representing Satan, the prince of evil and darkness; and Pharaoh's servants and horsemen representing fallen angels and men who have associated or who will associate themselves with Satan as opponents to the Lord and his people — the New Creation, and in general the household of faith. As the people of Israel longed for deliverance, and groaned under their taskmasters, yet were weak and unable to deliver themselves, and could never have freed themselves from the yoke of Egypt had it not been for the Lord's intervention on their behalf, and his appointment and sending of Moses to be their deliverer, so we see the world of mankind at the present time and throughout the past groaning and travailing in pain together under the exactions of 'The prince of this world' and his minions, Sin and Death. These hundreds of millions of humanity have a craving for liberty from bondage to their own sins and weaknesses, as well as for release from the penalties of these — pain and death. But without divine aid, mankind is powerless. A few make a vigorous struggle, and accomplish something; but none get free. The entire race of Adam is in bondage to sin and death, and their only hope is in God and in the antitypical Moses, who he has promised shall deliver his people in his appointed time — bringing them across the Red Sea — representing the Second Death, in which Satan and all who affiliate or sympathize with him and his evil course shall be everlastingly destroyed, as was typified in the overwhelming of Pharaoh and his hosts in the literal Red Sea. But the Lord's people 'shall not be hurt of the Second Death.'" *F457-458*

JERUSALEM

LUKE 21:20-24: "And when ye shall see Jerusalem compassed with armies, then know that the desolation thereof is nigh. Then let them which are in Judaea flee to the mountains; and let them which are in the midst of it depart out; and let not them that are in the countries enter thereinto. For these be the days of vengeance, that all things which are written may be fulfilled. But woe unto them that are with child, and to them that give suck, in those days! for there shall be great distress in the land, and wrath upon this people. And they shall fall by the edge of the sword, and shall be led away captive into all nations: and Jerusalem shall be trodden down of the Gentiles, until the times of the Gentiles be fulfilled."

"Two Remarkable Types of the Impending Catastrophe"

"But let no one conclude because these various descriptions are not literal, but symbolic, that they may therefore represent merely a battle of words, a quaking of fear, or a trivial storm of human passion. For though controversy, and words of passion and arguments will be and are among the weapons used in this battle, especially in the beginning of it, yet it will not end with these. Every prophetic detail indicates that before it ends it will be a most sanguinary conflict, a fierce and terrible storm. We have already observed the typical character of the great tribulation which came upon fleshly Israel in the end of the Jewish age; and now, having come to the parallel period — the harvest of the Gospel age, we see all the indications of a similar, though much greater trouble, upon 'Christendom,' its antitype. While the judgments visited upon Judea and Jerusalem were terrible in the extreme, they were only on a small scale as compared with the great tribulation, now fast approaching, upon Christendom, and involving the whole world.

"The Roman army and regular warfare caused but a small portion of the trouble in the end of the Jewish age, noted as the most terrible on the pages of history, and approached only by the French Revolution. It sprang mainly from national disintegration, the overthrow of lawand order — anarchy. Selfishness apparently took complete control and arrayed every man against his neighbor — just as is predicted of the coming trouble upon Christendom (in the midst of which the great spiritual temple, God's elect Church, will be completed and glorified). 'Before those days there was no hire for man, nor any hire for beast [see margin]; neither was there any peace to him that went out or came in, because of the affliction: for I set all men every one against his neighbor.' Zech. 8:9-11" *D529,530*

MANY NATIONS

JER: 25:15,13: "For thus saith the LORD God of Israel unto me; Take the wine cup of this fury at my hand, and cause all the nations, to whom I send thee, to drink it. And I will bring upon that land all my words which I have pronounced against it, even all that is written in this book, which Jeremiah hath prophesied against all the nations."

"That times have not so changed as to make such a calamity either impossible or improbable in our day is too manifest to require proof. But if any should be inclined to doubt it, let them call to mind the great Revolution that only a little over a century ago brought France to the verge of social ruin and threatened the peace of the world.

"Some have the erroneous idea that the world has outgrown the barbarities of earlier days, and they rest in fancied security and assume that such calamities as have occurred

in the past could not befall the world again; but the fact is that our twentieth century refinement is a very thin veneer, easily peeled off: sound judgment and an acquaintance with the facts of even recent history and with the present feverish pulse of humanity are sufficient to guarantee the possibility of a duplication of the past, even without the sure word of prophecy, which foretells a time of trouble such as never was since there was a nation.

"In the symbolic language of Revelation, the French Revolution was indeed a 'great earthquake' — a social shock so great that all 'Christendom' trembled until it was over; and that terrible and

sudden outburst of a single nation's wrath, only a century ago, may give some idea of the fury of the coming storm, when the wrath of all the angry nations will burst the bands of law and order and cause a reign of universal anarchy. It should be remembered, too, that calamity occurred in what was then the very heart of Christendom, in the midst of what was regarded as one of the most thoroughly Christian nations in the world, the nation which for a thousand years had been the chief support of Papacy. A nation intoxicated with Babylon's wine of false doctrines in church and state, and long bound by priestcraft and superstition, there vomited forth its pollution and spent the force of its maddened rage. In fact, the French Revolution seems referred to by our Lord in his Revelation to John on Patmos as a prelude to, and an illustration of, the great crisis now approaching.

"It should be observed also that the same causes which operated to bring about that great calamity, are now operating to produce a similar, but far more extensive revolution, a revolution which will be world-wide. The causes of that terrible convulsion have been briefly summed up by the historian as follows:*

***Campaigns of Napoleon, p.12.**

"The immediate and most effective cause of the French Revolution must be referred to the distresses of the people and the embarrassments of the government occasioned by the enormous expenses of the war in which France supported the independence of the American colonies. The profligacy of the court, the dissensions of the clergy, the gradual progress of general intelligence, the dissemination of revolutionary principles occasioned by the American contest, and the long established oppressions to which the masses of the people were subjected, all contributed to the same effect...Exhausted by oppression, irritated by the continual presence of insulting tyranny, excited to resentment of their wrongs, and instructed in the **knowledge** of their rights, the people of France awakened to one universal spirit of complaint and resentment. The cry of Liberty! resounded from the capital to the frontiers, and was reverberated from the Alps to the Pyrenees, the shores

of the Mediterranean and the Atlantic. Like all sudden and violent alterations in corrupt states, the explosion was accompanied by evils and atrocities, before which the crimes and the miseries of the ancient despotism faded into insignificance."

"Says another historian:*

*[*Universal History (by Prof. Fisher, of Yale College), p. 497.]*

"First among the causes of the revolution in France was the hostility felt toward the privileged classes — the king, the nobles and the clergy — on account of the disabilities and burdens which law and custom imposed on the classes beneath them.

"**The Land** — Nearly two-thirds of the land in France was in the hands of the nobles and of the clergy. A great part of it was illy cultivated by its indolent owners. The nobles preferred the gayeties of Paris to a residence on their estates. There were many small land-owners, but they had individually too little land to furnish them with subsistence. The treatment of the peasant was often such that when he looked upon the towers of his lord's castle, the dearest wish of his heart was to burn it down with all its registers of debts [mortgages]. The clergy held an immense amount of land, seigniorial control over thousands of peasants, and a vast income from tithes and other sources. In some provinces there was a better state of things than in others; but in general, the rich had the enjoyments, the poor carried the burdens.

"**Monopolies** — Manufactures and trades, although encouraged, were fettered by oppressive monopolies and a strict organization of guilds.

"**Corrupt government** — The administration of government was both arbitrary and corrupt.

"**Loss of respect for royalty** — Respect for the throne was lost.

"**Abortive Essays at Reform** — The efforts at political and social reform in France and in other countries, emanating from sovereigns after the great wars, produced a restless feeling without effecting their purpose of social reorganization.

"**Political Speculation** — The current of thought was in a revolutionary direction. Traditional beliefs in religion were boldly questioned. Political speculation was rife. Montesquieu had drawn attention to the liberty secured by the English constitution. Voltaire had dwelt on human rights. Rosseau had expatiated on the sovereign right of the majority.

"**Example of America** — Add to these agencies the influence of the American Revolution, and of the American Declaration of Independence, with its proclamation of human rights, and of the foundation of government in contract and the consent of the people.

"In all those leading causes which culminated in the terrors of the French Revolution we see a strong resemblance to similar conditions today which are rapidly and surely leading to the foretold similar results on a world-wide scale. Mark the growing animosity between the privileged classes (royalty and aristocracy) and the working classes, the discussions of the rights and wrongs of the people, and the decline of respect for both civil and ecclesiastical authority. Note also the revolutionary current of popular thought and expression — the increasing dissatisfaction of the masses of the people with the ruling powers and the institutions of government. And if the American Declaration of Independence with its proclamation of human rights and of the foundation of government in contract and the consent of the people, inspired the masses of the French with a desire for liberty and independence, it is not surprising that the successful experiment of this government of the people and by the people, for a century past, and the measure of liberty and prosperity here enjoyed, are having their effect upon the peoples of the old world. The ever-continuous tide of emigration from other countries to this country is another evidence of the impression which this experiment has made upon the peoples of other nations. And yet, the liberty and prosperity here enjoyed are far from satisfactory to the people here. They crave a still better condition and are seeking measures to attain it. Nowhere throughout Christendom does this determination assert itself more positively and boldly than here. Every man is on the qui vive to assert his real or fancied rights. The trend of thought here, as elsewhere, is in the current of revolution, and is daily becoming more so.

"The French Revolution was a struggle of a measure of light against gross darkness; of the awakening spirit of liberty against long established oppression; and of a measure of truth against old errors and superstitions, long encouraged and fostered by civil and ecclesiastical powers for their own aggrandizement and the people's oppression. And yet, it exhibited the danger of liberty unguided by righteousness and the spirit of a sound mind. (2 Tim. 1:7) A little learning is indeed a dangerous thing.

"One of Charles Dickens' stories, the scene of which is laid in the troublous times of the French Revolution, begins thus, and aptly fits the present time, as he suggests:

"'It was the best of times, it was the worst of times; it was the age of wisdom, it was the age of foolishness; it was the epoch of belief, it was the epoch of incredulity; it was the

season of light, it was the season of darkness; it was the spring of hope, it was the winter of despair; we had everything before us, we had nothing before us; we were all going direct to heaven, we were all going direct the other way; in short, the period was so far like the present period that some of its noisiest authorities insisted on its being received for good or for evil, in the superlative degree of comparison only.'

"While we see the same causes operating throughout the world today, to produce similar results on a more extended scale, we cannot console ourselves with ideas of fancied security, and proclaim Peace! Peace! when there is no peace; especially in view of the warnings of prophecy. In the light of the foretold character of coming events of this battle, we may regard the French Revolution as only the rumbling of distant thunder, giving warning of an approaching storm; as a slight tremor preceding the general earthquake shock; as the premonitory click of the great clock of the ages, which gives notice to those already awake that the wheels are in motion, and that shortly it will strike the midnight hour which will end the present order of affairs and usher in a new order — the Year of Jubilee, with its attendant commotion and changes of possession. It did arouse the whole world and set in operation the mighty forces which will eventually utterly overthrow the old order of things.

"When the conditions are fully ripe for the great Revolution a most trivial circumstance may serve as a match to set on fire the present social structure throughout the whole world; just, for instance, as in the case of the French Revolution, the first overt act, it is said, was the beating on a tin pan by a woman whose children were hungry. Soon an army of mothers was marching to the royal palace to ask for bread. Being refused, they were joined by the men, and soon the wrath of the nation was kindled and the flames of revolution swept the whole land.

"And yet, so oblivious was royalty to the conditions of the people, and so surrounded with plenty and luxury, that, even when these outbreaks came, the queen could not comprehend the situation. Hearing from her palace the commotion of the mob, she inquired what it meant, and being told that the people were clamoring for bread, she replied, 'It is foolish for them to make such an ado about **bread**: if bread is scarce, let them get **cake**, it is cheap now.'

"So striking is the similarity of the present to those times, that the alarm is being sounded by many thoughtful discerners of the signs of the times, while others cannot realize the situation. The cries which preceded the French Revolution were as nothing in comparison to the appeals

now going up from the masses all over the world to those in power and influence.

"Said Prof. G. D. Herron, of Iowa College, some years ago:

"'Everywhere are the signs of universal change. The race is in attitude of expectancy, straitened until its new baptism is accomplished. Every nerve of society is feeling the first agonies of a great trial that is to try all that dwell upon the earth, and that is to issue in a divine deliverance [though he fails to see **what** the deliverance will be, and **how** it will be brought about]. We are in the beginning of a revolution that will strain all existing religious and political institutions, and test the wisdom and heroism of earth's purest and bravest souls...The social revolution, making the closing years of our century and the dawning years of the next **the most crucial and formative since the crucifixion of the Son of Man**, is the call and opportunity of Christendom to become Christian.'

"But, alas! the call is not heeded; indeed is not really **heard** by any but a helpless minority in power, so great is the din of selfishness and so strong are the bonds of custom. Only the agonies of the coming great social earthquake — revolution — will effect the change; and in its dread course nothing will be more manifest than the signs of the just retribution which will reveal to all men the fact that the just Judge of all the earth is laying 'Judgment to the line and righteousness to the plummet.' Isa. 28:17

"The retributive character of the great tribulation upon fleshly Israel in the harvest of the Jewish age was very marked; so also was that of the French Revolution; and so it will be manifest in the present distress when the climax is reached. The remarks of Mr. Thomas H. Gill, in his work, referring to the retributive character of the French Revolution, suggest also the retributive character of the coming trouble upon Christendom as a whole. He says:

"The more deeply the French Revolution is considered, the more manifest is its pre-eminence above all the strange and terrible things that have come to pass on this earth...Never has the world witnessed so exact and sublime a piece of **retribution**...If it inflicted enormous evil, it presupposed and overthrew enormous evil...In a country where every ancient institution and every time-honored custom disappeared in a moment; where the whole social and political system went down before the first stroke; where monarchy, nobility and church were swept away almost without resistance, the whole framework of the state must have been rotten: royalty, aristocracy and priesthood must have grievously sinned. Where the good things of this world — birth, rank, wealth, fine clothes and elegant manners — became worldly perils, and worldly disadvantages for a time, rank, birth and riches must have been frightfully abused.

"The nation which abolished and proscribed Christianity, which dethroned religion in favor of reason, and enthroned the new goddess at Notre Dame in the person of a harlot, must needs have been afflicted by a very unreasonable and very corrupt form of Christianity. The people that waged a war of such utter extermination with everything established, as to abolish the common forms of address and salutation, and the common mode of reckoning time, that abhorred 'you' as a sin, and shrank from 'monsieur' as an abomination, that turned the weeks into decades, and would know the old months no more, must surely have had good reason to hate those old ways from which it pushed its departure into such minute and absurd extravagance.

"The demolished halls of the aristocracy, the rifled sepulchres of royalty, the decapitated king and queen, the little dauphin so sadly done to death, the beggared princes, the slaughtered priests and nobles, the sovereign guillotine, the republican marriages, the Meudon tannery, the couples tied together and thrown into the Loire, and the gloves made of men's and women's skins: these things are most horrible; but they are withal eloquent of **retribution**: they bespeak the solemn presence of Nemesis, the awful hand of an avenging power. They bring to mind the horrible

sins of that old France; the wretched peasants ground beneath the weight of imposts from which the rich and noble were free; visited ever and anon by cruel famines by reason of crushing taxes, unjust wars, and monstrous misgovernment, and then hung up or shot down by twenties or fifties for just complaining of starvation: and all this for centuries! They call to remembrance the Protestants murdered by millions in the streets of Paris, tormented for years by military dragoons in Poitou and Bearn, and hunted like wild beasts in the Cevennes; slaughtered and done to death by thousands and tens of thousands in many painful ways and through many painful years...

"In no work of the French Revolution is this, its retributive character, more strikingly or solemnly apparent than in its dealings with the Roman Church and Papal power. It especially became France, which after so fierce a struggle had rejected the Reformation, and perpetuated such enormous crimes in the process of rejection, to turn its fury against that very Roman Church on whose behalf it had been so wrathful,...to abolish Roman Catholic worship, to massacre multitudes of priests in the streets of her great towns, to hunt them down through her length and breadth, and to cast them by thousands upon a foreign shore, just as she had slaughtered, hunted down and driven into exile hundreds of thousands of Protestants;...to carry the war into the Papal territories, and to heap all sorts of woes and shames upon the defenseless Popedom...The excesses of revolutionary France were not more the punishment than

the direct result of the excesses of feudal, regal, and Papal France...

"In one of its aspects the Revolution may be described as a reaction against the excesses, spiritual and religious, of the Roman Catholic persecution of Protestantism. No sooner had the torrent burst forth than it dashed right against the Roman Church and Popedom...The property of the Church was made over to the state; the French clergy sank from a proprietary to a salaried body; monks and nuns were restored to the world, the property of their orders being confiscated; Protestants were raised to full religious freedom and political equality...The Roman Catholic religion was soon afterwards formally abolished.

"Bonaparte unsheathed the sword of France against the helpless Pius VI...The Pontiff sank into a dependent...Berthier marched upon Rome, set up a Roman Republic, and laid hands upon the Pope. The sovereign pontiff was borne away to the camp of infidels...from prison to prison, and was finally carried captive into France. Here...he breathed his last, at Valence, where his priests had been slain, where his power was broken, and his name and office were a mockery and a byword, and in the keeping of the rude soldiers of the commonwealth, which had for ten years held to his lips a cup of such manifest and exceeding bitterness....It was a sublime and perfect piece of **retribution**, which so amazed the world at the end of the eighteenth century; this proscription of the Romish Church by that very French nation that slaughtered myriads of Protestants at her bidding; this mournful end of the sovereign pontiff, in that very Dauphine so consecrated by the struggles of the Protestants, and near those Alpine valleys where the Waldenses had been so ruthlessly hunted down by French soldiers; this transformation of the 'States of the Church' into the 'Roman Republic;' and this overthrow of territorial Popedom by that very French nation, which, just one thousand years ago, had, under Pepin and Charlemagne, conferred these territories.

"Multitudes imagined that the Papacy was at the point of death, and asked, would Pius VI be the last pontiff, and if the close of the eighteenth century would be signalized by the fall of the Papal dynasty. But the French Revolution was the beginning, and not the end of the judgment; France had but **begun** to execute the doom, a doom sure and inevitable, but long and lingering, to be diversified by many strange incidents, and now and then by a semblance of escape, a doom to be protracted through much pain and much ignominy.

"We must expect that the approaching trouble will be no less bitter and severe than these two illustrations, but rather more terrible as well as more general; because (1) present day conditions render each member of the social

structure more dependent than ever before, not only for new and increased comforts and luxuries, but also for the very necessities of life. The stoppage of the railroad traffic alone would mean starvation within a week in our large cities; and general anarchy would mean the paralysis of every industry dependent on commerce and confidence. (2) The Lord specially declares that the coming trouble will be '**such** as was not since there was a nation' — nor ever shall be hereafter. — Dan. 12:1; Joel 2:2; Matt. 24:21." *D530-539*

JACOB'S TROUBLE

JER. 30:7: "Alas! for that day *is* great, so that none *is* like it: it *is* even the time of Jacob's trouble; but he shall be saved out of it."

"...yet one more wave of anguish must pass over that chastened people; for..., the final conflict of the battle of the great day will be in the land of Palestine. The comparative quiet and prosperity of regathered Israel near the end of this day of trouble, as well as their apparent defenseless condition, will by and by stimulate the jealousies of and invite their plunder by other peoples.

"As one man the hosts of Gog...are represented as saying..." *D554*

EZEK. 38:11,12,15,16: "And thou shalt say, I will go up to the land of unwalled villages; I will go to them that are at rest, that dwell safely, all of them dwelling without walls, and having neither bars nor gates,...to take a prey; to turn thine hand upon the desolate places *that are now* inhabited, and upon the people *that are* gathered out of the nations, which have gotten cattle and goods, that dwell in the midst of the land....And thou shalt come from thy place out of the north parts, thou, and many people with thee, all of them riding upon horses, a great company, and...army: And thou shalt come up against my people of Israel, as a cloud to cover the land; it shall be in the latter days, and I will bring thee against my land, that the heathen may know me, when I shall be sanctified in thee, O Gog, before their eyes."

"The Lord...declares his purposed destruction of the wicked host; and the description seems to indicate that it will be accomplished by an outbreak of jealousy, revolution and anarchy amongst the various elements composing the great mixed army: a revolution and strife which will involve whatever may still remain of the home governments of the various peoples, and complete the universal insurrection and anarchy — the great earthquake of Revelation 16:18-21." *D556*

REV. 16:18-21: *Diag.* "And there were Lightnings, and Voices, and Thunders,...[King James] and there was a great earthquake, such as was not since men were upon the earth, so mighty an earthquake,...so great. [*Diag*] And the

GREAT CITY became Three Parts, and the CITIES of the

NATIONS fell...; and Babylon the GREAT was remembered before God, to have given her the CUP of the WINE of the INDIGNATION OF his WRATH. [King James] And every island fled away, and... mountains were not found. [Diag.] And a great Hail, as if weighing a talent, comes down from HEAVEN on [the] MEN; and [the] MEN blasphemed GOD on account of the PLAGUE of the HAIL, Because the PLAGUE of it is exceeding great."

EZEK. 38:19-22: "For in my jealousy and in the fire of my wrath have I spoken, Surely in that day there shall be a great shaking in the land of Israel; So that the fishes of the sea, and the fowls of the heaven, and the beasts of the field, and all creeping things that creep upon the earth, and all the men that *are* upon the face of the earth, shall shake at my presence, and the mountains shall be thrown down, and the steep places shall fall, and every wall shall fall to the ground. And I will call for a sword against him throughout all my mountains, saith the Lord GOD: every man's sword shall be against his brother. And I will plead against him with pestilence and with blood; and I will rain upon him, and upon his bands, and upon the many people that *are* with him, an overflowing rain, and great hailstones, fire, and brimstone."

ZECH. 14:2,3,13: "For I will gather all nations against Jerusalem to battle; and the city shall be taken...; and half of the city shall go forth into captivity, and the residue of the people shall not be cut off from the city. Then shall the LORD go forth, and fight against those nations, as when he fought in the day of battle....And it shall come to pass in that day, *that* a great tumult from the LORD shall be among them; and they shall lay hold every one on the hand of his neighbour, and his hand shall rise up against the hand of his neighbour."

JOEL 3:1,2: "For, behold, in those days, and in that time, when I shall bring again the captivity of Judah and Jerusalem, I will also gather all nations, and will bring them down into the valley of Jehoshaphat, and will plead with them there for my people and *for* my heritage Israel, whom they have scattered among the nations, and parted my land."

THE BATTLE OF ARMAGEDDON

REV. 16:13,14,16: *Diag.*: "And I saw out of the MOUTH of the DRAGON, and out of the MOUTH of the FALSE PROPHET, three impure Spirits, as Frogs. For they are Spirits, as Frogs. For they are Spirits of Demons, working Signs, which go forth to the KINGS of the whole HABITABLE, to gather them together for [to] the WAR of that [the] GREAT DAY of the OMNIPOTENT GOD....And

he gathered them together into THAT PLACE...called in Hebrew Armageddon [Harmagedon]."

REV. 19:19-21: *Diag.*: "And I saw the BEAST, and the KINGS of the EARTH, and their ARMIES, assembled together to make War with HIM WHO SITS on the HORSE, and with his ARMY. And the BEAST was captured, and...with him,...[the] FALSE PROPHET who PERFORMED the SIGNS in his presence, with which he deceived THOSE who received the MARK of the BEAST, and THOSE who WORSHIP his IMAGE; these TWO were cast alive into THAT [the] LAKE of FIRE which BURNS with Sulphur. And the REST were killed with THAT [the] BROADSWORD of HIM who SITS on the HORSE, which WENT FORTH out of his MOUTH, and All the FOWLS were satiated with their FLESH." [Cf. vss. 17,18]

PRELIMINARY FEATURES

"...the Image of the Beast must yet receive life-power. It must be transformed from a mere mechanism to a living force. Protestant Federation...will continue to be futile unless it receives vitalization — unless its clergy directly or indirectly shall be recognized as possessed of apostolic ordination and authority to teach. This...,will come from the two-horned Beast, which we believe symbolically represents the Church of England. High-handed activities of Protestantism and Catholicism, operating in conjunction for the suppression of human liberties, await this vivifying of the Image....Armageddon cannot precede it..." *Dxviii*

OUR POSITION IN THE TROUBLE

"We are in the time of the last or Laodicean stage of the nominal gospel church of wheat and tares. (Rev. 3:14-22) She is upbraided for her lukewarmness, pride, spiritual poverty, blindness, and nakedness, and counseled to forsake...her evil ways...." *D41*

JER. 51:6: "Flee out of the midst of Babylon, and deliver every man his soul: be not cut off in her iniquity; for this *is* the time of the LORD'S vengeance; he will render unto her a recompense."

"For those who...obey this command to come out of Babylon; there is but one place of refuge; and that is, not in a new sect and bondage, but in 'The secret place of the Most High' — the place or condition of entire consecration, typified by the Most Holy of the Tabernacle...." *D43*

"The idea of the command is a separation from all the binding yokes of Christendom — to have no part nor lot in her civil, social, or religious organizations...." *D44*

"That some of the saints will still be in the flesh during at least part of this burning time seems possible. Their position in it, however, will differ from that of

others...in...that, being instructed from God's Word, they will not feel the same anxiety and hopeless dread that will overspread the world. They will recognize the trouble as the preparation..., for blessing the whole world, and they will be cheered and comforted through it all." *A338*

1 TIM. 6:6: "...godliness with contentment is great gain."

"Selfishness has so taken possession of all, that..., we see the whole world madly... clutching after wealth. A few only being successful, the remainder are envious..., and all are discontented...more so than in any former time. But the saint should take no part in that struggle. His consecration vow was that he would strive...for...a heavenly prize....Therefore they have **contentment** with their godliness,... because their ambition is turned heavenward..." *A339*

"...the counsel of the saints to those about them should be in harmony with their faith. It should be of the nature of ointment and healing balm. Advantage should be taken of circumstances to point the world to the good time coming, to preach to them the coming kingdom of God, and to show the real cause of present troubles, and the only remedy." *A341*

LUKE 3:14: "And the soldiers likewise demanded of him, saying, And what shall we do? And he said unto them, Do violence to no man, neither accuse *any* falsely; and be content with your wages."

HEB. 13:5: "*Let your* conversation be without covetousness; *and be* content with such things as ye have: for he hath said, I will never leave thee, nor forsake thee."

PHIL. 4:11: "Not that I speak in respect of want: for I have learned, in whatsoever state I am, *therewith* to be content."

"By probing and inflaming either real or fancied...wrongs, we would do injury to those we should be helping and blessing, thus spreading their discontent, and hence their trouble. But by..., preaching the good tidings of the **ransom** given for ALL, and the consequent **blessings** to come to ALL, we shall be true heralds of the kingdom — its ambassadors of peace...." *A341*

ISA. 52:7: "How beautiful upon the mountains are the feet of him that bringeth good tidings, that publisheth peace; that bringeth good tidings of good, that publisheth salvation; that saith unto Zion, Thy God reigneth!"

"The Lord's children should have no sympathy with the arrogant, insatiate desires and endeavors of any class. Their utterances should be calm and moderate, and always for peace where principle is not at stake....this is the Lord's battle, and...so far as politics or social questions are concerned, they have no real solution other than that predicted in the Word of God....it is no part of their work to share in the struggle....it is the Lord's doing, through other

agencies....they should press along the line of their own mission, proclaiming the heavenly kingdom at hand as the only remedy for all classes, and their only hope." *A342*

PSA. 149:5-9: "Let the saints be joyful in glory: let them sing aloud upon their beds. Let the high *praises* of God be in their mouth, and a twoedged sword in their hand; To execute vengeance upon the heathen, *and* punishments upon the people; To bind their kings with chains, and their nobles with fetters of iron; To execute upon them the judgment written: this honour have all his saints. Praise ye the LORD."

OUR DELIVERANCE

"(1) The faithful...Church are promised deliverance before the full force of the storm breaks. (2) All who love justice and pursue peace should diligently set their house in order...." *D540*

ZEPH. 2:2,3: "Before the decree bring forth, *before* the day pass as the chaff, before the fierce anger of the LORD come upon you, before the day of the LORD'S anger come upon you. Seek ye the LORD, all ye meek of the earth, which have wrought his judgment; seek righteousness, seek meekness: it may be ye shall be hid in the day of the LORD'S anger."

PSA. 46:4,5: "*There is* a river, the streams whereof shall make glad the city of God, the holy...of the tabernacles of the most High. God *is* in the midst of her; she shall not be moved: God shall help her, and that right early ['when the morning appeareth' *Margin*]."

HEB. 12:28: *Diag.:* "Therefore, receiving an unshaken Kingdom, may we hold fast the Favor, through which we may serve GOD acceptably with Reverence and Piety."

LUKE 21:36: "Watch ye therefore, and pray always, that ye may be accounted worthy to escape all these things that shall come to pass, and to stand before the Son of man."

HOW THE TROUBLE WILL BE ENDED

MATT. 24:21,22: "For then shall be great tribulation, such as was not since the beginning of the world to this time, [cf. Dan.12:1] no, nor ever shall be. [Cf. Joel 2:2]. And except those days should be shortened, there should no flesh be saved: but **through** [Greek word, *Dia**] for the elect...those days shall be shortened."

*See *Strong's Concordance; Thayer's Lexicon, p. 134, B, II, 1, b; Arndt cf. Gingrich, p.180, II, 4, b; Young's Concordance,* under "Through."

"So great will this trouble be that without some intervening power to cut it short the entire race would eventually be exterminated. But God has prepared the intervening power

— His Kingdom, Christ and his Church — 'The elect.' The elect will intervene at the proper time and bring order out of earth's confusion." *D579*

THE OUTCOME

HAG. 2:6,7: "For thus saith the LORD of hosts; Yet once, it *is* a little while, and I will shake the heavens, and the earth, and the sea, and the dry *land*; And I will shake all nations, and the desire [*Leeser*, precious things] of all nations shall come: and I will fill this house with glory, saith the LORD of hosts."

[Cf. **HEB. 12:26,27**:] "Whose voice then shook the earth: but now he hath promised, saying, Yet once more I shake not the earth only, but also heaven. And this *word*, Yet once more, signifieth the removing of those things that are shaken, as of things that are made, that those things which cannot be shaken may remain."

[Cf. **REV. 21:24**:] "And the nations of them which are saved shall walk in the light of it: and the kings of the earth do bring their glory and honour into it."

ZEPH. 3:8,9: "Therefore wait ye upon me, saith the LORD, until the day that I rise up to the prey: for my determination *is* to gather the nations, that I may assemble the kingdoms, to pour upon them mine indignation, *even* all my fierce anger: for all the earth shall be devoured with the fire of my jealousy. For then will I turn to the people a pure language, that they may all call upon the name of the LORD, to serve him with one consent."

PSA. 46:8-10: "Come, behold the works of the LORD, what desolations he hath made in the earth. He maketh wars to cease unto the end of the earth; he breaketh the bow, and cutteth the spear in sunder; he burneth the chariot in the fire. Be still, and know that I *am* God: I will be exalted among the heathen, I will be exalted in the earth."

"This fire of God's zeal is a symbol, and a forcible one, representing the intensity of the trouble and the destruction which will envelop the whole earth. That it is not a literal fire, as some suppose, is evident from the fact the **people** remain after it, and are blessed. That the people who remain are not saints...is evident from the fact that they are then **turned** to serve the Lord, whereas the saints are turned (converted) already." *A317*

2 PET. 3:13: "Nevertheless we, according to his promise, look for new heavens and a new earth, wherein dwelleth righteousness."

ZECH. 14:16-21: "And it shall come to pass, that every one that is left of all the nations which came against Jerusalem shall even go up from year to year to worship the King, the LORD of hosts, and to keep the feast of tabernacles. And it

shall be, that whoso will not come up of all the families of the earth unto Jerusalem to worship the King, the LORD of hosts, even upon them shall be no rain. And if the family of Egypt go not up, and come not, that *have* no *rain*; there shall be the plague, wherewith the LORD will smite the heathen that come not up to keep the feast of tabernacles. This shall be the punishment of Egypt, and the punishment of all nations that come not up to keep

the feast of tabernacles. In that day shall there be upon the bells of the horses, **HOLINESS UNTO THE LORD**; and the pots in the LORD'S house shall be like the bowls before the altar. Yea, every pot in Jerusalem and in Judah shall be holiness unto the LORD of hosts: and all they that sacrifice shall come and take of them, and seethe therein: and in that day there shall be no more the Canaanite in the house of the LORD of hosts."

See also REV. 20-22 CHAPTERS

SUMMARY

"...according to the Bible our world is never to be burned up — except in a figurative, symbolic sense.

"Now, as the Gospel age is closing and the Messianic age is dawning,...Knowledge is filling the earth....

"But this knowledge is coming to people who at heart are unprepared for it. The hands of the ignorant...are stretched forth to grasp the throttle of power — political, social, religious, and financial. Wrongs are recognized; but those who seek to remedy them will only make a bad matter worse. All must yet learn that the world's only hope is in God's provision — Messiah's kingdom." *R5363:3,6*

"But before this lesson is learned, the spirit of discontent stirred up by knowledge...will cause the great wreck of our...institutions....Dan. 12:1; Matt. 24:21...

DAN. 12:1: "And at that time shall Michael stand up, the great prince which standeth for the children of thy people: and there shall be a time of trouble, such as never was since there was a nation *even* to that same time: and at that time thy people shall be delivered, every one that shall be found written in the book."

MATT. 24:21: "For then shall be great tribulation, such as was not since the beginning of the world to this time, no, nor ever shall be."

"...then the Lord will turn to the people a pure language, a pure message, that they may all call upon the name of the Lord to serve him with one consent. (Zeph. 3:9)" *R5364:1*

ZEPH. 3:9: "For then will I turn to the people a pure language, that they may all call upon the name of the LORD, to serve him with one consent."

THE BENEVOLENT OBJECT OF THE DAY OF VENGEANCE

"The benevolent object of its divine permission...is the overthrow of the entire present order...preparatory to the permanent establishment of the Kingdom of God...under Christ, the Prince of Peace." *D14*

"In that day of terror and darkness men shall come to learn their need of a strong arm to deliver them. Their pride and self sufficiency will be humbled into the dust. But out of that awful trouble mankind will come forth chastened and broken, and will be ready to be led out of the ruin and defeat of their own schemes and hopes, out of the darkness and chaos...they precipitated upon themselves, out of the power of evil angels, into the light and blessing and deliverance then brought to them by the establishment of the kingdom of God's dear Son, long promised for the blessing of all the families of the earth." *R5537:6*

DAYS OF DANIEL

DAN. 12:6: "And *one* said...How long *shall it be to* the end of these wonders? And...the man clothed in linen...sware...that *it shall be* for a time, times, and an half; and when he shall have accomplished to scatter the power of the holy people, all these *things* shall be finished."

"The matter of...inquiry was the 'abomination of desolation,' of chapter 11:31-33...the... character seen...in chapters 7:8-11, 21, 24-26 and 8:10-12, 24-26." *C64*

DAN. 11:31-33: "And arms shall stand on his part, and they shall pollute the sanctuary of strength, and shall take away the daily *sacrifice*, and they shall place the abomination that maketh desolate. And such as do wickedly against the covenant shall he corrupt by flatteries: but the people that do know their God shall be strong, and do *exploits*. And they that understand among the people shall instruct many: yet they shall fall by the sword, and by flame, by captivity, and by spoil, *many* days."

DAN. 7:8-11; 21, 24-26: **"**I considered the horns, and, behold, there came up among them another little horn, before whom there were three of the first horns plucked up by the roots: and, behold, in this horn were eyes like the eyes of man, and a mouth speaking great things. I beheld till the thrones were cast down, and the Ancient of days did sit, *whose* garment was white as snow, and the hair of his head like the pure wool: his throne *was like* the fiery flame, *and* his wheels as burning fire. A fiery stream issued and came forth from before him: thousand thousands ministered unto him, and ten thousand times ten thousand stood before him: the judgment was set, and the books were opened. I beheld then because of the voice of the great words which the horn spake: I beheld *even* till the beast was slain, and his body destroyed, and given to the burning flame....I beheld, and the same horn made war with the saints, and prevailed against them;....And the ten horns out of this kingdom *are* ten kings *that* shall arise: and another shall rise after them; and he shall be diverse from the first, and he shall subdue three kings. And he shall speak *great* words against the most High, and shall wear out the saints of the most High, and think to change times and laws: and they shall be given into his hand until a time and times and the dividing of time. But the judgment shall sit, and they shall take away his dominion, to consume and to destroy *it* unto the end."

DAN 8:10-12, 24-26: "And it waxed great, *even* to the host of heaven; and it cast down *some* of the host and of the stars to the ground, and stamped upon them. Yea, he magnified *himself* even to the prince of the host, and by him the daily *sacrifice* was taken away, and the place of his sanctuary

was cast down. And an host was given *him* against the daily *sacrifice* by reason of transgression, and it cast down the truth to the ground; and it practiced, and prospered.....And his power shall be mighty, but not by his own power: and he shall destroy wonderfully, and shall prosper, and practice, and shall destroy the mighty and the holy people. And through his policy also he shall cause craft to prosper in his hand; and he shall magnify *himself* in his heart, and by peace shall destroy many: he shall also stand up against the Prince of princes; but he shall be broken without hand. And the vision of the evening and the morning which was told *is* true: wherefore shut thou up the vision; for it *shall be* for many days."

"The...three and a half times or years (360 x 32 equals 1260 days symbolic time C 1260 literal years)....are...the period of Papacy's power. Compare Dan. 7:25; 12:7 and Rev. 12:14 with Rev. 12:6; 13:5." *C64*

DAN 7:25; 12:7: "And he shall speak *great* words against the most High, and shall wear out the saints of the most High, and think to change times and laws: and they shall be given into his hand until a time and times and the dividing of time....And I heard the man clothed in linen, which *was* upon the waters of the river, when he held up his right hand and his left hand unto heaven, and sware by him that liveth for ever that *it shall be* for a time, times, and an half; and when he shall have accomplished to scatter the power of the holy people, all these *things* shall be finished."

REV. 12:6: "And the woman fled into the wilderness, where she hath a place prepared of God, that they should feed her there a thousand two hundred and threescore days."

REV. 12:14: "And to the woman were given two wings of a great eagle, that she might fly into the wilderness...where she is nourished for a time, and times, and half a time...."

REV. 13:5: "And there was given unto him a mouth speaking great things and blasphemies; and power was given unto him to continue forty *and* two months."

NUM. 14:34: "After the number of the days in which ye searched the land, even forty days, **each day for a year**, shall ye bear your iniquities, even forty years, and ye shall know my breach of promise."

EZEK. 4:6: "And when thou hast accomplished them, lie again on thy right side, and thou shalt bear the iniquity of the house of Judah forty days: I have appointed thee **each day for a year**."

NAPOLEON DESCRIBED

DAN. 11:36-39: "And the king shall do according to his will; and he shall exalt himself, and magnify himself above every

god, and shall speak marvelous things against the God of gods, and shall prosper till the indignation be accomplished: for that is determined shall be done. Neither shall he regard the God of his fathers, nor the desire of women, nor regard any god: for he shall magnify himself above all. But in his estate shall he honour the God of forces...and [he] shall divide the land...."

"Napoleon was...a powerful ruler. He did, perhaps, as nearly ' **according to his will'** as any man that ever lived....the word '**god** 'signifies **a mighty one**; and...is frequently used in Scripture in referring to...rulers....Here...'**god** of gods,' or ruler of rulers, refers to the pope....Even...the pope he addressed in a marvelous way; commanding his obedience as his servant...." *C40*

"Not only did Napoleon not respect the god of his fathers, Papacy, but neither did he regard... the Protestant sects, here represented as women....

"...instead of any of these gods...

DAN. 11:38: "'...shall he honour the God of forces'...

"...military power." *C42*

THE TIME OF THE END

DAN. 11:40: "And at the time of the end shall the king of the south [Egypt] push at him: and the king of the north [England] shall come against him like a whirlwind, with...horsemen, and with many ships...."

"The Egyptian Mamelukes, etc....and....the English...navy...." *C44*

DAN. 11:29: "At the time appointed ['prefixed' *Douay*]"

DAN. 11:40: "...the time of the end...."

DAN. 11:29: "...he shall return, and come toward the south; but it shall not be as the former, or as the latter."

"Napoleon's invasion of Egypt...either like that in the days of Cleopatra, or....Zenobia...." *C47*

DAN. 11:30: "For the ships of Chittim ['of the Romans' *Douay]* shall come against him...."

"The English navy...hindered his conquest.... England as well as France had been part of the old Roman Empire, and since France was at war with the remainder of that empire,...we see the propriety of these being called Roman ships." *C47*

DAN. 11:30: "...therefore he shall be grieved, and return, and have indignation against the holy covenant...."

"On his return from Egypt, Napoleon...signed a **Concordat** with the pope, by which the Roman Catholic religion was re-established in France. This was an action **against** the

truth; but...by this policy he could...succeed...in establishing himself...as Emperor. And he **did** 'succeed.' But...he soon began...to work against that system...as the prophecy describes...." *C47*

DAN. 11:30: "...he shall even return [change about], and have intelligence with them [devise **against them**] that forsake the holy covenant."

"...he began to...operate against the apostate church.

"Thus...does Daniel xi trace the world's history....marking the very year of the beginning of the Time of the End — 1799, with

that year terminated...Papacy's 1260 years of power to oppress....the last year of Papacy's millennium...which began...with the year 800...." *C47*

"Napoleon...defied the anathemas of Pope Pius VI...and finally compelled him to cede back...the papal territories granted a thousand years before by Charlemagne...." *C54*

THE THREE AND A HALF "TIMES"

DAN. 12:7: "And...the man clothed in linen...sware...that it *shall be* for a time, times, and an half; and when he shall have accomplished to scatter the power of the holy people, all these *things* shall be finished."

"The time, times and half a time, or three and a half times or years (360 x 3 equals 1260 days, symbolic time — 1260 literal years), here mentioned, are elsewhere shown to be the period of Papacy's power. Compare Daniel 7:25: 12:7 and Rev. 12:14 with Rev. 12:6; 13:5...." *C64*

"Measuring back 1260 years from 1799 would bring us to A.D. 539, where...the Papal power began...." *C69*

"From the time of Constantine, the bishops of Rome had held a most prominent position..., and they began ere long to claim an authority over all others....

"These pleas for supremacy were not readily conceded, however....It was not until A.D. 533 that the bishop of Rome was thus recognized by the emperor, Justinian I...." *C70*

"But even after being recognized as a ruler, a sacerdotal emperor, for the time it was of no special advantage to Papacy, beyond the

empty name; for Justinian was far from Rome....Rome, and Italy in general, was under the sway of...the Ostrogoths — who did not recognize the bishops of Rome as supreme pontiff....Papacy, therefore, was exalted...in name only..., until the fall of the Ostrogothic Monarchy, when its exaltation became an actual fact. Indeed...the emperor at once (A.D. 534) sent...an army...and in six years after the pope's recognition by the emperor, the Ostrogothic power was vanquished....This was in A.D.

539...the...time from which we should reckon the 'Desolating Abomination **set up**.'" *C75*

THE 1290 DAYS

DAN. 12:11: "And from the time *that* the daily [continual] *sacrifice* shall be taken away, and the abomination that maketh desolate set up, *there shall be* a thousand two hundred and ninety days."

"...in thirty years after the beginning of the Time of the End (1260 + 30 = 1290), a purifying, cleansing, refining work would begin among the holy people, in connection with which an understanding of the prophecy would be granted to the wise among this tried, cleansed, separated class...." *C83*

DAN. 12:10: "Many shall be purified, and made white, and tried; but the wicked shall do wickedly: and none of the wicked shall understand...."

"Reckoning from A.D. 539, the 1290 symbolic days ended in 1829...."

"A religious movement...known as 'Second Adventists.'...began about 1829...." *C84*

"The Lord did not come in 1844,...as... expected....But, notwithstanding the disappointment, the movement had its...effects — of awakening an interest in...the Lord's coming, and of casting reproach upon the subject by reason of mistaken expectations.... It...did a work corresponding to that... when...wise men came from the East...thirty years before the anointing of our Lord...." *C85*

THE 1335 DAYS

DAN. 12:12: "Blessed *is* he that waiteth, and cometh to the thousand three hundred and five and thirty days."

"It was at and since the ending of those 1335...days that the precious views of the Lord's **presence**, living....in the time of the setting up of Michael's (Christ's) Kingdom, came to be known." *C88*

"...fulfillment came exactly at the close of the 1335...days....just following the close of the 1335 years...that the fact of our Lord's presence... began to be recognized...." *C92*

DIVINE HEALING

"The healing of the sick (by our Lord) was merely incidental, to attract the attention, to assist the faith, to point him out as the finger of God....Our Lord's miracles not only served as an instruction to the people but also typified or illustrated the power which he ultimately will use on a higher and grander scale in the blessing of all the families of the earth." *R3728:2,4*

MIRACULOUS HEALINGS IN THE BIBLE

GEN. 20:17: (Abimelech) "So Abraham prayed unto God: and God healed Abimelech, and his wife, and his maidservants; and they bare *children*."

NUM.12:13: (Miriam) "And Moses cried unto the LORD, saying, Heal her now, O God, I beseech thee."

2 KINGS 20:5: (Hezekiah) "Turn again, and tell Hezekiah the captain of my people, Thus saith the LORD, the God of David thy father, I have heard thy prayer, I have seen thy tears: behold, I will heal thee: on the third day thou shalt go up unto the house of the LORD."

MATT. 8:13: (Centurion's servant) "And Jesus said unto the centurion, Go thy way; and as thou hast believed, so be it done unto thee. And his servant was healed in the selfsame hour."

MATT. 12:13: (Man with withered hand) "Then saith he to the man, Stretch forth thine hand. And he stretched *it* forth; and it was restored whole, like as the other."

MATT. 12:15: (Many people) "But when Jesus knew it, he withdrew himself from thence: and great multitudes followed him, and he healed them all..."

MATT. 14:14: (Many people) "And Jesus went forth, and saw a great multitude, and was moved with compassion toward them, and he healed their sick."

MARK 1:34: (Many that were sick) "And he healed many that were sick of divers diseases, and cast out many devils; and suffered not the devils to speak, because they knew him."

MARK 5:29: (Woman with issue) "And straightway the fountain of her blood was dried up; and she felt in *her* body that she was healed of that plague."

LUKE 5:24,25: (Man with palsy) "But that ye may know that the Son of man hath power upon earth to forgive sins, (he said unto the sick of the palsy,) I say unto thee, Arise, and take up thy couch, and go into thine house. And immediately he rose up before them, and took up that whereon he lay, and departed to his own house, glorifying God."

LUKE 13:13: (Woman with infirmity) "And he laid *his* hands on her: and immediately she was made straight, and glorified God."

LUKE 17:14: (Ten lepers) "And when he saw *them*, he said unto them, Go show yourselves unto the priests. And it came to pass, that, as they went, they were cleansed."

LUKE 22:51: (Servant's ear) "And Jesus answered and said, Suffer ye thus far. And he touched his ear, and healed him."

JOHN 4:50: (Nobleman's son) "Jesus saith unto him, Go thy way; thy son liveth. And the man believed the word that Jesus had spoken unto him, and he went his way."

JOHN 5:9: (Man at Pool of Bethesda) "And immediately the man was made whole, and took up his bed, and walked: and on the

same day was the sabbath."

JOHN 9:6,7: (Man blind from birth) "When he had thus spoken, he spat on the ground, and made clay of the spittle, and he anointed the eyes of the blind man with the clay, And said unto him, Go, wash in the pool of Siloam, (which is by interpretation, Sent.) He went his way therefore, and washed, and came seeing."

"...all the healings performed by our Lord were both instantaneous and complete...In all these respects they differ from the healings we hear of today..." *R1921:6*

ACTS 3:7: (Lame man by Peter) "And he took him by the right hand, and lifted *him* up: and immediately his feet and ankle bones received strength."

ACTS 5:16: (Many people) "There came also a multitude *out* of the cities round about unto Jerusalem, bringing sick folks, and them which were vexed with unclean spirits: and they were healed every one."

ACTS 14:10: (Cripple) "Said with a loud voice, Stand upright on thy feet. And he leaped and walked."

ACTS 28:8,9: (Publius' father and others) "And it came to pass, that the father of Publius lay sick of a fever and of a bloody flux: to whom Paul entered in, and prayed, and laid his hands on him, and healed him. So when this was done, others also, which had diseases in the island, came, and were healed..."

"The miracles which Jesus and the apostles wrought were merely with a view to the establishment of the early church." *R4979:3*

RESURRECTIONS IN THE BIBLE

1 KINGS 17:17-23: (Widow's son) "And it came to pass after these things, *that* the son of the woman, the mistress of the house, fell sick; and his sickness was so sore, that there was no breath left in him. And she said unto Elijah,

What have I to do with thee, O thou man of God? art thou come unto me to call my sin to remembrance, and to slay my son? And he said unto her, Give me thy son. And he took him out of her bosom, and carried him up into a loft, where he abode, and laid him upon his own bed. And he cried unto the LORD, and said, O LORD my God, hast thou also brought evil upon the widow with whom I sojourn, by slaying her son? And he stretched himself upon the child three times, and cried unto the LORD, and said, O LORD my God, I pray thee, let this child's soul come into him again. And the LORD heard the voice of Elijah; and the soul of the child came into him again, and he revived. And Elijah took the child, and brought him down out of the chamber into the house, and delivered him unto his mother: and Elijah said, See, thy son liveth."

2 KINGS 4:20-37: (Shunammite's son) "And when he had taken him, and brought him to his mother, he sat on her knees till noon, and *then* died. And she went up, and laid him on the bed of the man of God, and shut *the door* upon him, and went out. And she called unto her husband, and said, Send me, I pray thee, one of the young men, and one of the asses, that I may run to the man of God, and come again. And he said, Wherefore wilt thou go to him to day? *it is* neither new moon, nor sabbath. And she said, *It shall be* well. Then she saddled an ass, and said to her servant, Drive, and go forward; slack not *thy* riding for me, except I bid thee. So she went and came unto the man of God to mount Carmel. And it came to pass, when the man of God saw her afar off, that he said to Gehazi his servant, Behold, *yonder* is that Shunammite: Run now, I pray thee, to meet her, and say unto her, *Is it* well with thee? *is it* well with thy husband? *is it* well with the child? And she answered, *It is* well. And when she came to the man of God to the hill, she caught him by the feet: but Gehazi came near to thrust her away. And the man of God said, Let her alone; for her soul *is* vexed within her: and the LORD hath hid *it* from me, and hath not told me. Then she said, Did I desire a son of my lord? did I not say, Do not deceive me? Then he said to Gehazi, Gird up thy loins, and take my staff in thine hand, and go thy way: if thou meet any man, salute him not; and if any salute thee, answer him not again: and lay my staff upon the face of the child. And the mother of the child said, *As* the LORD liveth, and *as* thy soul liveth, I will not leave thee. And he arose, and followed her. And Gehazi passed on before them, and laid the staff upon the face of the child; but *there was* neither voice, nor hearing. Wherefore he went again to meet him, and told him, saying, The child is not awaked. And when Elisha was come into the house, behold, the child was dead, *and* laid upon his bed. He went in therefore, and shut the door upon them twain, and prayed unto the LORD. And he went up, and lay upon the child, and put his mouth upon his mouth, and his

eyes upon his eyes, and his hands upon his hands: and he stretched himself upon the child; and the flesh of the child waxed warm. Then he returned, and walked in the house to and fro; and went up, and stretched himself upon him: and the child sneezed seven times, and the child opened his eyes. And he called Gehazi, and said, Call this Shunammite. So he called her. And when she was come in unto him, he said, Take up thy son. Then she went in, and fell at his feet, and bowed herself to the ground, and took up her son, and went out."

2 KINGS 13:21: (A dead man) "And it came to pass, as they were burying a man, that, behold, they spied a band *of men*; and they cast the man into the sepulchre of Elisha: and when the man was let down, and touched the bones of Elisha, he revived, and stood up on his feet."

MARK 5:41,42: (Ruler of synagogue's daughter) "And he took the damsel by the hand, and said unto her, Talitha cumi; which is, being interpreted, Damsel, I say unto thee, arise. And straightway the damsel arose, and walked; for she was *of the age* of twelve years. And they were astonished with a great astonishment."

LUKE 7:12-15: (Widow of Nain's son) "Now when he came nigh to the gate of the city, behold, there was a dead man carried out, the only son of his mother, and she was a widow: and much people of the city was with her. And when the Lord saw her, he had compassion on her, and said unto her, Weep not. And he came and touched the bier: and they that bare *him* stood still. And he said, Young man, I say unto thee, Arise. And he that was dead sat up, and began to speak. And he delivered him to his mother."

JOHN 11:43,44: (Lazarus) "And when he thus had spoken, he cried with a loud voice, Lazarus, come forth. And he that was dead came forth, bound hand and foot with graveclothes: and his face was bound about with a napkin. Jesus saith unto them, Loose him, and let him go."

ACTS 9:36-41: (Dorcas) "Now there was at Joppa a certain disciple named Tabitha, which by interpretation is called Dorcas: this woman was full of good works and almsdeeds which she did. And it came to pass in those days, that she was sick, and died: whom when they had washed, they laid her in an upper chamber. And forasmuch as Lydda was nigh to Joppa, and the disciples had

heard that Peter was there, they sent unto him two men, desiring him that he would not delay to come to them. Then Peter arose and went with them. When he was come, they brought him into the upper chamber: and all the widows stood by him weeping, and showing the coats and garments which Dorcas made, while she was with them. But Peter put them all forth, and kneeled down, and prayed; and turning him to the body said, Tabitha, arise. And she opened her eyes: and when she saw Peter, she sat up. And he gave her his hand,

and lifted her up, and when he had called the saints and widows, presented her alive."

ACTS 20:9-12: (Eutychus) "And there sat in a window a certain young man named Eutychus, being fallen into a deep sleep: and as Paul was long preaching, he sunk down with sleep, and fell down from the third loft, and was taken up dead. And Paul went down, and fell on him, and embracing *him* said, Trouble not yourselves; for his life is in him. When he therefore was come up again, and had broken bread, and eaten, and talked a long while, even till break of day, so he departed. And they brought the young man alive, and were not a little comforted."

WHO WERE HEALED

MATT. 12:15: "...and great multitudes followed him, and he healed them all."

"...there is no record that Jesus or the apostles ever healed any of the Church." *F636*

"He did not use his power, so far as the record shows, upon any of his followers, his disciples." *R3728:4*

MATT. 14:14: "And Jesus went forth, and saw a great multitude, and was moved with compassion toward them, and he healed their sick."

"In all the records we find no instance of the exercise of the gift of healing on behalf...of the apostles or any of the church...." *R2006:6*

REASON FOR MIRACULOUS HEALINGS

MATT. 11:4,5: (To convince the brethren) "Jesus answered and said unto them, Go and show John again those things which ye do hear and see: The blind receive their sight, and the lame walk, the lepers are cleansed, and the deaf hear, the dead are raised up, and the poor have the gospel preached to them."

JOHN 2:11: (To manifest his glory) "This beginning of miracles did Jesus in Cana of Galilee, and manifested forth his glory; and his disciples believed on him."

JOHN 3:2: (To prove he was from God) "The same came to Jesus by night, and said unto him, Rabbi, we know that thou art a teacher come from God: for no man can do these miracles that thou doest, except God be with him."

JOHN 5:36: (To prove he did God's work) "But I have greater witness than *that* of John: for the works which the Father hath given me to finish, the same works that I do, bear witness of me, that the Father hath sent me."

JOHN 7:31: (To prove his Messiahship) "And many of the people believed on him, and said, When Christ cometh, will he do more miracles than these which this *man* hath done?"

JOHN 9:3,33: (To manifest God's works) "Jesus answered, Neither hath this man sinned, nor his parents: but that the works of God should be made manifest in him. If this man were not of God, he could do nothing."

JOHN 10:25,38: (To convince doubters) "Jesus answered them, I told you, and ye believed not: the works that I do in my Father's name, they bear witness of me. But if I do, though ye believe not me, believe the works: that ye may know, and believe, that the Father *is* in me, and I in him."

JOHN 14:11: (To convince his disciples) "Believe me that I *am* in the Father, and the Father in me: or else believe me for the very works' sake."

JOHN 15:22: (To convict the hypocrites) "If I had not come and spoken unto them, they had not had sin: but now they have no cloak for their sin."

"The healing of the sick...(1)...foreshadowed the great work of the Millennial reign,...(2)... attracted wide attention...and established his authority as a teacher sent from God, (3)... manifested his love and sympathy for the afflicted and suffering." *R1722:1*

"They were for the establishment of the church — as a testimony to the Lord." *R4314:1*

WHO COULD BESTOW THE GIFT OF HEALING

ACTS 8:17: "Then laid they [Peter and John] *their* hands on them, and they received the Holy Ghost [Spirit]."

ACTS 19:6: "...when Paul had laid *his* hands on them, the Holy Spirit came on them; and they spake with tongues and prophesied."

"The power of conferring these gifts was vested in the apostles, and in them only: none others in their day or since have been able to confer those gifts which Paul describes; hence they did 'vanish away' when the apostles died." *R1998:3*

1 COR. 12:30: "Have all the gifts of healing?..."

"...the *gift* of healing possessed by some members of the early church was totally different from the healings of today. The Apostles in exercising this *gift* did not practice 'mental healing,' nor even 'prayer healing.'" *R1998:1*

HEALINGS NOT OF GOD

MATT. 7:22: "...and in thy name have cast out devils? and in thy name does many wonderful works?"

"The doing of many wonderful works is one of the tricks of Satan and his evil hosts." *R5801:6*

MATT. 12:25,26: "Every kingdom divided against itself is brought to desolation; and every city or house divided

against itself shall not stand: And if Satan cast out Satan, he is divided against himself; how shall then his kingdom stand?"

"We are living in a time when, apparently in order to hold his dominion, the great adversary is going into the healing business in a wholesale manner." *R3495:4*

MATT. 24:24: "For there shall arise false Christs, and false prophets, and shall show great signs and wonders; insomuch that, if *it were* possible, they shall deceive the very elect."

"Satan's power of death makes quite possible his relief from sickness, etc., through agencies of his choice, — for the purpose of enforcing their false teachings." *R1685:6*

2 COR. 11:14,15: "...Satan himself is transformed into an angel of light. Therefore *it is* no great thing if his ministers also be transformed as the ministers of righteousness; whose end shall be according to their works."

"Satan in the role of faith healer is a novelty belonging chiefly to our day..." *R3120:2*

TRUE DIVINE HEALING

PSA. 103:3: "Who forgiveth all thine iniquities; who healeth all thy diseases..."

"...it is the new creature that now has the privilege of experiencing healing at the Lord's hands, forgiveness of sins, etc..." *R3310:2*

ISA. 25:8: "He will swallow up death in victory; and the Lord GOD will wipe away tears from off all faces..."

ISA. 29:18: "And in that day shall the deaf hear the words of the book, and the eyes of the blind shall see out of obscurity, and out of darkness."

ISA. 33:24: "And the inhabitant shall not say, I am sick..."

ISA. 35:5,6,10: "Then the eyes of the blind shall be opened, and the ears of the deaf shall be unstopped. Then shall the lame *man* leap as an hart, and the tongue of the dumb sing...And the ransomed of the LORD shall return, and come to Zion with songs and everlasting joy upon their heads: they shall obtain joy and gladness, and sorrow and sighing shall flee away."

MAL. 4:2: "...unto you that fear my name shall the Sun of righteousness arise with healing in his wings..."

JOHN 14:12: "...He that believeth on me, the works that I do shall he do also; and greater *works* than these shall he do..."

"...it is a greater work to open the eyes of the understanding than to recover sight to the natural eyes; it is a greater work to open the ears of the understanding than to recover

the natural hearing; it is a greater work to heal from sin than to heal from its type, leprosy..." *R3501:5*

ACTS 3:21: "Whom the heaven must receive until the times of restitution of all things..."

"The Lord's great healing time is designated in the Scriptures, 'times of restitution.' When those times shall come...the healing of the nations will be the great work; and it will not merely be a physical but also a mental and moral healing..." *R3495:5*

REV. 7:17: "For the Lamb which is in the midst of the throne shall feed them, and shall lead them unto living fountains of waters: and God shall wipe away all tears from their eyes."

REV. 21:4: "And God shall wipe away all tears from their eyes; and there shall be no more death, neither sorrow, nor crying, neither shall there be any more pain: for the former things are passed away."

REV. 22:3: "And there shall be no more curse..."

RESURRECTION: COMPLETE DIVINE HEALING

JOHN 22:25: "...I am the resurrection, and the life..."

Anastasis: A making to stand or rise up; awakening, resurrection. *Lidell & Scott*

"The **resurrection** (*anastasis*) secured for mankind by their Redeemer is a full and complete raising *up* (restoration) to **all that was lost**..." *R1509:4*

2 COR. 12:8-10: "For this thing I besought the Lord thrice, that it might depart from me. And he said unto me, My grace is sufficient for thee: for my strength is made perfect in weakness. Most gladly therefore will I rather glory in my infirmities, that the power of Christ may rest upon me. Therefore I take pleasure in infirmities..."

1 TIM. 5:23: "Drink no longer water, but use a little wine for thy stomach's sake and thine often infirmities."

"For us to appeal for divine aid for our mortal bodies, which we have consecrated to death, would be in derogation of our covenant..." *F637*

MISUNDERSTOOD TEXTS ON HEALING

PSA. 103:3: "...who healeth all thy diseases."

"Those who have received, physical healing either by 'gifts' or 'prayers of faith' have never yet been completely healed of all their diseases. At the very most they received a temporary blessing and must wait until the 'morning,' when the Redeemer shall heal all the diseases of all his people...." *R2028:3*

MARK 16:9-18: Spurious

JAS. 5:13-16: "Is any among you afflicted? let him pray...Is any sick among you? let him call for the elders of the church; and let them pray over him, anointing him with oil in the name of the Lord: And the prayer of faith shall save the sick, and the Lord shall raise him up; and if he have committed sins, they shall be forgiven him. Confess your faults one to another, and pray one for another, that ye may be healed...."

"...these words are understood especially to apply to spiritual healing..." *R5234:4*

"HE HEALED MANY"

MARK 1:34: *Phil. trans.* "And he healed great numbers of people who were suffering from various forms of disease. In many cases he expelled evil spirits."

JOHN 5:1-9: "After this there was a feast of the Jews; and Jesus went up to Jerusalem. Now there is at Jerusalem by the sheep *market* a pool, which is called in the Hebrew tongue Bethesda, having five porches. In these lay a great multitude of impotent folk, of blind, halt, withered, waiting for the moving of the water. For an angel went down at a certain season into the pool, and troubled the water: whosoever then first after the troubling of the water stepped in was made whole of whatsoever disease he had. And a certain man was there, which had an infirmity thirty and eight years. When Jesus saw him lie, and knew that he had been now a long time *in that case*, he saith unto him, Wilt thou be made whole? The impotent man answered him, Sir, I have no man, when the water is troubled, to put me into the pool: but while I am coming, another steppeth down before me. Jesus saith unto him, Rise, take up thy bed, and walk. And immediately the man was made whole, and took up his bed, and walked: and on the same day was the sabbath."

JOHN 9:1-7: "And as *Jesus* passed by, he saw a man which was blind from *his* birth. And his disciples asked him, saying, Master, who did sin, this man, or his parents, that he was born blind? Jesus answered, Neither hath this man sinned, nor his parents: but that the works of God should be made manifest in him. I must work the works of him that sent me, while it is day: the night cometh, when no man can work. As long as I am in the world, I am the light of the world. When he had thus spoken, he spat on the ground, and made clay of the spittle, and he anointed the eyes of the blind man with the clay, And said unto him, Go, wash in the pool of Siloam, (which is by interpretation, Sent.) He went his way therefore, and washed, and came seeing."

MARK 5:35-43: "While he yet spake, there came from the ruler of the synagogue's *house certain* which said, Thy

daughter is dead: why troublest thou the Master any further? As soon as Jesus heard the word that was spoken, he saith unto the ruler of the synagogue, Be not afraid, only believe. And he suffered no man to follow him, save Peter, and James, and John the brother of James. And he cometh to the house of the ruler of the synagogue, and seeth the tumult, and them that wept and wailed greatly. And when he was come in, he saith unto them, Why make ye this ado, and weep? the damsel is not dead, but sleepeth. And they laughed him to scorn. But when he had put them all out, he taketh the father and the mother of the damsel, and them that were with him, and entereth in where the damsel was lying. And he took the damsel by the hand, and said unto her, Talitha cumi; which is, being interpreted, Damsel, I say unto thee, arise. And straightway the damsel arose, and walked; for she was *of the age* of twelve years. And they were astonished with a great astonishment. And he charged them straitly that no man should know it; and commanded that something should be given her to eat."

JOHN 11:39-44: "Jesus said, Take ye away the stone. Martha, the sister of him that was dead, saith unto him, Lord, by this time he stinketh: for he hath been *dead* four days. Jesus saith unto her, Said I not unto thee, that, if thou wouldest believe, thou shouldest see the glory of God? Then they took away the stone *from the place* where the dead was laid. And Jesus lifted up his eyes, and said, Father, I thank thee that thou hast heard me. And I knew that thou hearest me always: but because of the people which stand by I said *it*, that they may believe that thou hast sent me. And when he thus had spoken, he cried with a loud voice, Lazarus, come forth. And he that was dead came forth, bound hand and foot with graveclothes: and his face was bound about with a napkin. Jesus saith unto them, Loose him, and let him go."

MOSTLY SINNERS WERE HEALED

"So far as the records show all, or nearly all, who were healed by Jesus and the Apostles were 'sinners.'

"...let us remember that the miracles performed by Jesus and the Apostles were not attempts to heal all sickness, to banish pain and sorrow. They were merely intended to attract attention to the Gospel message. The time when God shall wipe away all tears....and dying, will be....as a result of Messiah's reign...Rev. 21:4." *R4980:1*

REV. 21:4: "And God shall wipe away all tears from their eyes; and there shall be no more death, neither sorrow, nor crying, neither shall there be any more pain: for the former things are passed away."

"HIMSELF TOOK OUR INFIRMITIES"

"...it is directly stated in connection with one of his healings that 'virtue (vitality, power, strength) went out of him and healed them all.' (Matt.8:17; Luke 6:19)...The using of strength for the assisting of others continued to the end of his ministry,....he permitted himself to be crucified for sinners, the just for the unjust, that he might redeem us with his blood, his sacrificed life." *R3727:5*

MATT. 8:17: "That it might be fulfilled which was spoken by Esaias the prophet, saying, Himself took our infirmities, and bare *our* sicknesses."

LUKE 6:19: "And the whole multitude sought to touch him: for there went virtue out of him, and healed *them* all."

PROOFS OF OUR LORD'S FIRST AND SECOND ADVENTS

"The signs by which the Gospel age was introduced to fleshly Israel were such as would appeal to sincere natural men, — physical blessings typical of greater things in the kingdom. The signs with which the new dispensation now appeals to spiritual Israelites are spiritual signs, or proofs — the opening of the eyes and ears of our hearts to discern in God's plan wonderful things which the natural man can not appreciate..." *R3120:6*

MARK 3:23-26: "And he called them *unto him*, and said unto them in parables, How can Satan cast out Satan? And if a kingdom be divided against itself, that kingdom cannot stand. And if a house be divided against itself, that house cannot stand. And if Satan rise up against himself, and be divided, he cannot stand, but hath an end."

MATT. 12:26: "And if Satan cast out Satan, he is divided against himself; how shall then his kingdom stand?"

TYPE OF SIN

LUKE 17:11-19: "And it came to pass, as he went to Jerusalem, that he passed through the midst of Samaria and Galilee. And as he entered into a certain village, there met him ten men that were lepers, which stood afar off: And they lifted up *their* voices, and said, Jesus, Master, have mercy on us. And when he saw *them*, he said unto them, Go show yourselves unto the priests. And it came to pass, that, as they went, they were cleansed. And one of them, when he saw that he was healed, turned back, and with a loud voice glorified God, And fell down on *his* face at his feet, giving him thanks: and he was a Samaritan. And Jesus answering said, Were there not ten cleansed? but where are the nine? There are not found that returned to give glory to God, save this stranger. And he said unto him, Arise, go thy way: thy faith hath made thee whole."

"Leprosy is used in the Scriptures to symbolize sin...Sin is an incurable disease, and therefore well represented by leprosy; like leprosy it doth eat like a canker and all having it are 'unclean'! The Word of God has pointed out to us the only cure for this malady of sin,...by...Jesus." *R3439:3*

See also Index: **Holy Spirit**

DIVINE PLAN — CHART

EPH. 3:11, *Diag*: "...a Plan of the AGES, which he [God] formed for the ANOINTED, Jesus our LORD."

HAB. 2:2,3, *Leeser*: "Write down the vision, and make it plain upon the tables, that everyone may read it fluently. For there is yet a vision for the appointed time, and it speaketh of the end, and it will not deceive: though it tarry, wait for it; because it will surely come, it will not be delayed."

"God's plan of the ages is the vision seen by the Prophet Habakkuk, who was told to write it and to 'make it plain upon tables, that every one may read it fluently' (*Leeser's* translation); that in the end the vision should 'speak and not lie;' though it would seem to tarry, yet it would not tarry. It would seem to all that the great plan of God was long delayed. The groaning creation would think the heavenly Father was very slack. Many would be inclined to lose their faith in respect to the seed of Abraham. We know that disappointments have come to God's people along this line. The Jews were disappointed in their expectations. Christians in this Laodicean period were disappointed at first, not clearly understanding what to expect....The Lord tells us that although the vision may seem to tarry, yet we are to exercise faith, because in the end it will speak; it will make itself heard, and will not lie. It will then be seen to be the truth. The divine plan of the ages is to be made plain upon tables. It will be made so very plain to us that he who runs may read. He who is asleep may not read; he who is drunken with the wine of false doctrine may not read; he who is standing in the way of sinners may not read. But he who runs may read, if his heart is teachable and pure.

"This vision is to be made clear at the appointed time. We may not read the time features with the same absolute certainty as doctrinal features; for time is not so definitely stated in the Scriptures as are the basic doctrines. We are still walking by faith and not by sight....

"The fact that the vision is now speaking, and is made plain upon tables, is very convincing. We believe truly that 'the days are at hand, and the effect [matter or thing as spoken] of every vision.' Ezek. 12:21-23" *R5374:1,2,3; R5375:4*

"'Write the vision [what you have seen of divine truth] and make it plain upon tablets.' That is, set it out in an orderly, systematic manner, 'that he may run that readeth it' — that we may run for the prize. Observe that it is not every man that is called to make the truth plain, but that some of the class specified are called to do so for the benefit of all the rest. In the Scriptures there are many surface truths which all may see and appreciate, but the systematic ordering of the divine plan, much of which was purposely

hidden and obscurely expressed, and the bringing out of its wonderful details, was left for an appointed time. And when the appointed time has come and the faithful watcher is let to see the systematic harmony of divine truth — not to guess at it, or to surmise about it, but to see it, so plainly that he can clearly, logically and Scripturally demonstrate it to others — then it becomes the privilege of such a one to make plain to others what the Lord has made plain to him. And such a one may consider his ability to this direction (together with a possible opportunity and a strong love for the saints, which longs to bless them with a fuller knowledge of God and to exhort and stimulate them to greater faithfulness) as the Lord's call to him to make it plain." *R1475:5*

Beside the Chart of the Ages, "...we know of nothing which would give you so clear a conception of the plan of God,..." and therefore, "...we again direct your attention to it, and suggest that you study it three, four or ten times until you get every point clearly and indelibly fixed on your mind and heart, and it cannot fail to be a great blessing to you." *R294:2*

EXPLANATION OF CHART

DISPENSATIONS

"First, we have an outline of the three great dispensations, **A, B, C** — the first....**A**,...from man's creation to the flood; the second**, B**, from the flood to the commencement of the Millennial reign of Christ, at his second advent; and the third, or 'Dispensation of the Fullness of times,' **C**, lasting from the beginning of Christ's reign for 'ages to come.'" *A219*

EPH. 1:10: "That in the dispensation of the Fullness of times he might gather together in one all things in Christ, both which are in heaven, and which are on earth; *even* in him..."

EPH. 2:7: "That in the ages to come he might show the exceeding riches of his grace in *his* kindness toward us through Christ Jesus."

"**A** is called 'the world that was;' **B** by our Lord Jesus is called 'this world [John 18:36] by Peter 'the world that now is.' 2 Pet. 3:7,13:...new heavens and a new earth, wherein dwelleth righteousness." *A219*

JOHN 18:36: "Jesus answered, My kingdom is not of this world: if my kingdom were of this world, then would my servants fight, that I should not be delivered to the Jews: but now is my kingdom not from hence."

2 PET. 3:7: "But the heavens and the earth, which are now, by the same word are kept in store, reserved unto fire against the day of judgment and perdition of ungodly men."

2 PET. 3:13: "...new heavens and a new earth, wherein dwelleth righteousness."

AGES

"The second of these great dispensations, **B**, is composed of three...ages...." *A221*

PATRIARCHAL AGE

"Age **D** was the one during which God's special dealings were with such patriarchs as Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob." *A221* [See 1 Chron. 16:16,17.]

JEWISH AGE

"Age **E** is the Jewish Age, or the period following the death of Jacob, during which all of his posterity were treated by God as...'his people.'..." *A221*

AMOS 3:2: "*You only* have I known [recognized with favor] of all the families of the earth: therefore I will punish you for all your iniquities." *A221*

GOSPEL AGE

"The Gospel age, **F**, is the period during which the body of Christ is called out of the world, and shown by faith the crown of life, the...

2 PET. 1:4: "'...exceeding great and precious promises....'

"...whereby (by obedience to the call and its requirements) they may become...

2 PET. 1:4: "'...partakers of the divine nature....'

"Evil is still permitted to reign over...the world, in order that by contact with it these may be tried to see whether they are willing to give up the human nature with its privileges and blessings, a living sacrifice, being made conformable to Jesus' death, that they may be accounted worthy to be in his likeness in the resurrection...." *A222*

MILLENNIAL AGE

"The third great dispensation, **C**, is to be composed of many ages — 'The Ages to Come.' The first of these, the Millennial age, **G** ,...is the thousand years during which Christ will reign over and thereby bless all the families of the earth, accomplishing the...

ACTS 3:21: "'...restitution of all things...spoken by the mouth of all the holy prophets....'

"During that age, sin and death shall be forever blotted out: for Christ...

1 COR. 15:25,26: "'...must reign till he hath put all enemies under his feet. The last enemy *that* shall be destroyed *is* death.'

"Adamic death...Associated with Christ Jesus in that reign will be the Church, his bride, his body..." *A222*

REV. 3:21 *Diag*.: "The CONQUEROR I will give to him to sit down with me in my THRONE as I also conquered, and sat down with my FATHER in His THRONE."

"AGES TO COME"

"'The Ages to Come,' **H**, following the great reconstruction period, are to be ages of perfection, blessedness and happiness....

EPH. 2:7: "'That in the ages to come he might shew the exceeding riches of his grace in his kindness toward us through Christ Jesus.'" *A223*

ENDS OF AGES — HARVESTS

"The Jewish age ended in a measure when, at the end of his three and one-half years' ministry, the Lord rejected that nation, saying,...

MATT. 23:38: "'...Your house is left unto you desolate.'

"Yet there was favor shown them for three and one-half years after this,...in harmony with..." *A223*

DAN. 9:24-27: "Seventy weeks are determined upon thy people....from the going forth of the commandment...to build Jerusalem unto...Messiah ...*shall be* seven weeks, and threescore and two weeks:....And after threescore and two weeks shall Messiah be cut off, but not for himself:....in the midst of the week he shall cause the sacrifice to cease...."

"There was, then a fuller sense in which that Jewish age closed with the end of the seventieth week, or three and one-half years after the cross — after which the gospel was preached to the Gentiles also....

ACTS 10:45: "'...on the Gentiles also was poured out the gift of the Holy Ghost.'

"Their national existence terminated in the great time of trouble which followed." *A223*

OVERLAPPING OF AGES

"In that period of the Jewish harvest the Gospel age had its beginning."

"A 'harvest' constitutes the closing period of the Gospel age also, during which there is again a lapping of two ages — the Gospel age ending, and the Restitution or Millennial age beginning. The Gospel age closes by stages, as did...the Jewish age. As there the first seven years...were devoted in a special sense to a work in and for Israel after the flesh, and were years of favor, so here we find a similar seven years...having the same bearing upon the Gospel Church, to be followed by a period of trouble ('fire') upon the world, as

a punishment...and as a preparation for the reign of righteousness...." *A224*

DIFFERENT PLANES

"**K, L, M, N, P, R,** each represents a different plane. **N** is the plane of *perfect human* nature. Adam was on this plane before he sinned; but...fell to the depraved or sinful plane, **R**, on which all his posterity are born. This corresponds to the 'Broad Way' which leads to destruction. **P** represents the plane of typical justification, reckoned as effected by the sacrifices of the Law....not actual perfection." *A224*

HEB. 7:19: "For the law made nothing perfect...."

"**N** represents not only the plane of human perfection, as once occupied by the perfect man Adam, but also...standing of all justified persons....

1 COR. 15:3: "'...Christ died for our sins according to the Scriptures.'

"...in consequence all...who accept of his perfect...work as their justifier — are, through faith, reckoned...as justified, as though perfect men....on the plane...**N**. This is the only standpoint from which man may approach God....Adam was thus a son...before he became disobedient. All who accept of our Lord Jesus' finished ransom work are...*reckoned* as restored to primitive purity; and in consequence they have fellowship...with God." *A224*

"During the Gospel age...on certain conditions they may...become...spiritual beings, like Christ.... Paul says,...

ROM. 12:1: "'I beseech you therefore, brethren, by the mercies of God, that ye present your bodies a living sacrifice, holy, acceptable unto God, *which is* your reasonable service.'

"...presentation of ourselves as living sacrifices...means that we...consecrate to God's service every power and talent...that...we may live not for self,...friends,...family,...the world, nor for anything else but for, and in the obedient service of, him who bought us...." *A225*

"...our holiness, and our acceptableness to God as sacrifices, come from the fact that God has justified us...through our faith in Christ's sacrifice....

"As many as...obey this call....are...reckoned...as having been begotten of God...embryo spiritual children, on plane **M** — the plane of spirit begetting." *A226*

"Plane **L** represents the condition of *perfect spiritual* being; but before Plane **L** can be reached, the conditions of our covenant must be carried out....The entrance upon plane **L** is...the full entrance into life as a spirit being.

"But there is a still further step...to 'the glory that shall follow' — plane **K**...not...a glory of person, but...of power or office.

1 PET. 1:11: "'...the spirit...testified beforehand the

sufferings...and the glory that should follow.'

"The reaching of Plane **L** brings full personal glory: i.e., glorious being, like unto Christ. But after we are thus perfected, and made entirely like our Lord and Head, we are to be associated...with him in his throne, even as he, after being perfected at his resurrection, was exalted to the right hand of the Majesty on high. Thus shall we enter everlasting glory, plane **K**." *A225-227*

SIGNIFICANCE OF PLANES L AND K ON CHART

"*Question*, — In describing the Chart you say, Vol. 1 page 211, 'These, when born from the dead in the resurrection, will have the divine nature and form.' Please harmonize this statement with another found on page 235, which reads thus: 'We know not how long it will be after their change, or perfecting, as spirit beings (plane **L**), before they as a full and complete company will be glorified (plane **K**) with the Lord, united with him in power and great glory.'

"*Answer*. — The two quotations are in perfect accord. The questioner's difficulty is in resect to what is signified by Plane '**L**' and Plane '**K**' on the Chart. Plane '**L**' represents the personal glory of our Lord and the church by the power of the first resurrection, from human nature to divine nature. We understand that all the members of the elect church will experience such a change, from mortal to immortal conditions, from human to divine nature, from weakness to power, from dishonor to glory, from animal to spirit conditions (1 Cor. 15:44), before being ushered into the glory of power and dominion represented by plane '**K**.' In other words, the first quotation refers to the personal exaltation of all the spirit-begotten, overcoming class in the first resurrection, to Plane '**L**' and the second to their exaltation to plane '**K**,' which will come when the Heavenly Bridegroom shall present his bride complete, without fault or blame, before the Heavenly Father, as pictured in the 45th Psalm." *R5060*

1 COR. 15:44: "It is sown a natural body; it is raised a spiritual body. There is a natural body, and there is a spiritual body."

EXPLANATION OF LETTERS "a-z"

"Adam was a perfect being, pyramid **a**....on plane **N**....On plane **R** ,...the depraved plane, the topless pyramid, **b**,...represents fallen Adam and his posterity....

"Abraham and others of that day, justified to fellowship with God on account of faith, are represented by a pyramid

(**c**) on plane **N**. Abraham was a member of the depraved human family and by nature belonged...on plane **R**; but... was justified by faith;...reckoned...perfect...because of his faith. This...lifted him up...to plane **N**; and though...imperfect, he was received into the favor that Adam had lost, viz., communion with God as a 'friend.'

JAS. 2:23: "'...Abraham believed God, and it was imputed unto him for righteousness: and he was called the Friend of God.'

"The world of mankind after the flood,...figure **d**, was still on plane **R**..." *A228*

"'Israel after the flesh,' during the Jewish age, when the typical sacrifices...cleansed them (not really...), but typically...

HEB. 7:19: "'For the law made nothing perfect....'

"Were typically justified...(**e**) on plane **P**, the plane of typical justification....

HEB. 10:1: "'For the law...can never with those sacrifices which they offered year by year continually make the comers thereunto perfect.'

"The fire of trial and trouble through which fleshly Israel passes, when Jesus was present, sifting them and taking out...the wheat, the 'Israelites indeed,' and especially when...he 'burned up the chaff [the refuse part of that *system*] with unquenchable fire.' is illustrated by figure **f**.

"Jesus, at the age of thirty years, was a perfect, mature man (**g**), having left the glory of the spiritual condition and become a *man* in order...

HEB. 2:9: "'...that he by the grace of God should taste death for every man.'

"It was necessary that a perfect *man* should die for mankind, because the claims of justice could be met in no other way....Therefore, he who is termed...

REV. 3:14: "'...the beginning of the creation of God.'

"Became a *man*...

JOHN 1:14: "'...was made flesh....'

"...that he might give that ransom (corresponding price) which could redeem mankind....He was...

HEB. 7:26: "'...holy, harmless, undefiled, [and] separate from sinners....'

"He took...

ROM. 8:3: "'...the likeness of sinful flesh....'

"...the human likeness. But he took that likeness in its perfection: he did not partake of its sin

nor...imperfection...he voluntarily shared the sorrows...of some...as..." *A229*

MATT. 8:16,17: "...he...healed all that were sick: That it might be fulfilled which was spoken by Esaias [Isa. 53:4], Himself *took* our infirmities, and bare our sicknesses."

ISA. 53:4: "Surely he hath borne our griefs, and carried our sorrows: yet we did esteem him stricken, smitten of God, and afflicted."

LUKE 6:19: "...there went virtue out of him, and healed *them* all."

MARK 5:30: "And Jesus, immediately knowing in himself that virtue had gone out of him, turned him about in the press, and said, Who touched my clothes?"

PHIL. 2:8: "Being found in fashion as a man, he humbled himself, and became obedient unto death...."

"He presented himself to God, saying,...

HEB. 10:7: "'...Lo, I come (in the volume of the book it is written of me,) to do thy will, O God.'

PSA. 40:7,8: "'Then said I, Lo, I come: in the volume of the book *it is* written of me, I delight to do thy will, O my God: yea, thy law *is* within my heart.'

"God...showed his acceptance by filling him with his Spirit....

"This...was the begetting to a new nature...which should be...born when he had fully accomplished ...the sacrifice of the human nature. This begetting ...is shown by pyramid **h**, on plane **M**, the plane of spirit begetting. On this plane Jesus spent three and one-half years of his life — until his human existence ended on the cross. then, after being dead three days, he was raised...to the perfection of spirit being (**i**, plane **L**), born of the Spirit...

COL. 1:18: "'...the firstborn from the dead...'

JOHN 3:6: "'...That which is *born* of the Spirit is *spirit*.'

"Jesus, therefore, at and after his resurrection, was...a spirit being, and no longer a human...." *A230*

"True, after his resurrection he had power to appear...as a man...but he was not a man...but could go and come as the wind (even when the doors were shut), and none could tell whence he came or whither he went....

JOHN 3:8: "'The wind bloweth where it listeth, and thou hearest the sound thereof, but canst not tell whence it cometh, and whither it goeth: so is every one that is born of the Spirit.'

JOHN 20:19,26: "'When the doors were shut where the disciples were assembled...came Jesus and stood in the

midst,.....then came Jesus, the doors being shut, and stood in the midst....'

"From...consecration...at the time of his baptism, the human had been reckoned dead — and there the new nature was reckoned begun, which was completed at the resurrection, when he reached the perfect spirit plane, **L** — was raised a spiritual body....

"Forty days after his resurrection, Jesus ascended to the majesty on high — the plane of...glory, **K** (pyramid **k**). During the Gospel age he has been in glory (**l**), 'set down with the Father on his throne,' and Head over his Church on earth.... During this...age the Church has been in process of development, discipline and trial....she has fellowship in his sufferings [Phil. 3:10], that she...

ROM. 8:17: "'...may be also glorified together.'

PHIL. 3:10: "'That I may know him, and the power of his resurrection, and the fellowship of his sufferings, being made conformable unto his death'

"...with him (plane **K**)....The steps of the church to glory are the same as those of her...Lord, who hath set...

1 PET. 2:21: "'...us an example...'

"...that we should walk in his footsteps — except that the Church starts from a lower plane. Our Lord...came into the world on the plane of human perfection, **N**, while all we of the Adamic race are on a lower plane, **R** — the plane of sin, imperfection, and enmity against God. The first thing necessary for us, then, is to be justified, and thus to reach plane **N**....We could not commend ourselves to God, so...

ROM. 5:8: "'...God commendeth his love toward us, in that, while we were yet sinners, Christ died for us.'

"...the condition upon which we come to the justified or perfect human plane is that...

1 COR. 15:3: "'...Christ died for our sins...'

"And lifted us up,...to the perfect plane, from which, in Adam, we fell....[lifted to plane **N**]....

ROM. 5:1: "'...being justified by faith, we have peace with God.'..." *A231*

"During the Gospel age he has been calling for the 'little flock' [Luke 12:32] of 'joint-heirs:' [Rom. 8:17], saying....

LUKE 12:32: "'Fear not, little flock; for it is your Father's good pleasure to give you the kingdom.'

See ROM. 8:17

PROV. 23:26: "'My son, give me thine heart....'

"...that is, give yourself, all your earthly powers, your will, your talents, your all, to me...and I will make you....a spiritual son, with a spirit body like the risen Jesus...

HEB. 1:3: "'The express image of...[the Father's] person....'

"If you will give up all of the earthly hopes, ambitions, aims, etc., consecrate the human nature entirely, and use it up in my service, I will...make you a 'partaker'...

2 PET. 1:4: "'...of the divine nature....'

"...an 'heir of God and a joint-heir with Jesus Christ, if so be that you suffer with him, that you'...

ROM. 8:17: "'...may be also *glorified* together.'" *A232*

"Those who rightly value this prize...gladly...

HEB. 12:1: "'...lay aside every weight, and run with patience the [appointed] race...'" *A233*

"Those of this overcoming class who 'sleep' [1 Cor. 15:51] will be raised spirit beings, plane **L**, and those of the same class who are alive and remain [1 Thes. 4:17] unto the coming of the Lord will be 'changed' to the same plane of spirit being, and will not 'sleep' for a moment, though the 'change' will necessitate the dissolution of the earthen vessel. No longer weak, earthly, mortal, corruptible beings, these will then be fully born of the Spirit — heavenly spiritual, incorruptible, immortal beings....

1 COR. 15:42-44, 51,52: "'...it is raised in incorruption: It is sown in dishonour; it is raised in glory: it is sown in weakness; it is raised in power: It is sown a natural body; it is raised a spiritual body....We shall not all sleep, but we shall all be changed, In a moment, in the twinkling of an eye, at the last trump....'

"...after their 'change,' or perfecting as spirit beings (plane **L**),...they...will be glorified (plane **K**) with the Lord, united with him in power and great glory." *A234*

"We are not able to see behind the veil; we are not able to know the things progressing under the direction of our glorious Lord and the members of His Church already glorified..." *Bix*

"...**n, m, p, q** are four distinct classes which unitedly represent the nominal Gospel Church....the **n** and **m** classes are on the spirit-begotten plane, **M**. These...have existed together throughout the Gospel age; both covenanted...to become living sacrifices; both were 'accepted in the beloved' [Eph. 1:6] and begotten by the Spirit as 'new creatures' [2 Cor. 5:17] The difference between them is this: n represents those who are fulfilling their covenant and are dead with Christ to earthly will, aims, and ambitions, while m represents the larger company of the spirit begotten...who...shrink back from the performance of their

covenant. The n class consists of the overcomers who...will sit with the Lord in his throne in glory — plane **K**. This is the 'little flock.'..." *A235*

EPH. 1:6: "To the praise of the glory of his grace, wherein he hath made us accepted in the beloved."

2 COR. 5:17: "Therefore if any man be in Christ, *he is* a new creature: old things are passed away; behold, all things are become new."

LUKE 12:32: "Fear not, little flock; for it is your Father's good pleasure to give you the kingdom."

"Those of the **m** class shrink from the death of the human will, but God...will bring them by the way of adversity...to plane **L**, the perfect spiritual plane. But they will have lost the right to plane **K**, the throne of glory...." *A235*

"The majority of the nominal Church is represented by section **p** ....on plane **N**....They have not accepted the highcalling...to become part of the spiritual family of God....Class p receive the favor of God....'in vain'...

2 COR. 6:1: "'We...beseech *you* also that ye receive not the grace of God in vain.'

"...they fail to...present themselves acceptable sacrifices, during this time in which sacrifices are acceptable...." *A236*

"Another class connected with the nominal Church, which never did believe in Jesus as the sacrifice for its sins, and which consequently is not justified — not on plane **N** — is represented below plane **N**, by section **q**. These are 'wolves in sheep's clothing;' yet they call themselves Christians, and are recognized as members of the nominal Church....they belong to plane **R**; they are part of the world, and are out of place in the Church and a great injury to it...." *A237*

"The Christ (**x**) will be the head of all things — of the great company, of angels, and of men — next to the Father; next in order or rank will be the great company, spirit beings (**y**), and next, angels; then Israel after the flesh (**z**), including only Israelites indeed, at the head of earthly nations; then the world of men (**w**), restored to perfection of being, like the head of the human race, Adam, before he sinned...." *A241*

THE INCORRIGIBLE DESTROYED

"Some, however, will be destroyed from among the people: first, all who, under full light and opportunity, for one hundred years refuse to make progress toward righteousness and perfection...." *A241*

ISA. 65:20: *Leeser*: "There shall no more come thence an infant of few days, nor an old man that shall not have the full length of his days; for as a lad shall one die a hundred

years old; and as a sinner shall be accursed he who [dieth] at a hundred years old."

"...and second, those who, having progressed to perfection, in a final testing at the close of the Millennium prove unfaithful....

REV. 20:9: "'And they went up on the breadth of the earth, and compassed the camp of the saints...and the beloved city: and fire came down from God out of heaven, and devoured them.'" *A241*

"The universe will then be clean; for....

ACTS 3:23: "'It shall come to pass, *that* every soul, which will not hear that prophet, shall be destroyed from among the people.'" *A243*

THE FINAL UNITY OF THE UNIVERSE

"The figure of a pyramid not only serves well the purpose of illustrating perfect beings, but...in representing the oneness of the whole creation... when the harmony and perfection of all things will be attained under the headship of Christ...." *A242*

EPH. 1:10: "That in the dispensation of the Fullness of times he might gather together in one all things in Christ, both which are in heaven, and which are on earth; *even* in him..."

THE TABERNACLE PARALLEL

"The same lesson shown in the Chart of the Ages is...taught in this divinely arranged type....Outside the court of the tabernacle lies the whole world in sin, on...plane **R**. Entering...into the 'court,' we become...*justified* persons, on plane **N**. Those who go forward in consecration press to the door of the Tabernacle, and, entering in (plane **M**), become priests. They are strengthened by the 'shew bread,' enlightened by the 'candlestick' and enabled to offer acceptable incense to God by Jesus Christ at the 'Golden Altar.' Finally, in the first resurrection, they enter the perfect spiritual condition, or 'Most Holy' (plane **L**), and are then associated with Jesus in the glory of the kingdom, plane **K**." *A244*

DOCTRINE

Doctrine: Greek, ***didaskalia***; "**Instruction**" — *Strong;* "Teaching" — Young.

"All Scripture...given by inspiration of God...is profitable for doctrine...." 2 Tim.3:16

"It will be well for us all to remember that all the graces of the spirit, all the progress in the knowledge of divine things to which we already have attained, that may have really helped us nearer to God and to holiness, have come to us through the Scriptures of the Old Testament, and through the words of our Lord and his inspired apostles: nor will it ever be necessary to go to other channels for the true wisdom which would prepare us for the salvation promised." *R2166:1*

JESUS' DOCTRINE FROM GOD

JOHN 7:16,17: "Jesus answered them, and said, My doctrine is not mine, but his that sent me. If any man will do his will, he shall know of the doctrine, whether it be of God, or *whether* I speak of myself."

"Whoever, therefore, loses the doctrines of Christ after once having had them, has surely done more than get his head confused. His heart must have been separated from the Lord previously; for so long as we abide in him, it will not be possible for any of the snares of this 'evil day,' this 'hour of temptation,' to entrap us; none shall pluck us out of the Father's hand...." *R5948:3*

HEB. 10:23: "...(he *is* faithful that promised...)"

"Is it any wonder that the Bible sets forth the importance of doctrine? Whoever is well indoctrinated from the real Bible viewpoint is strong in the Lord. Whoever is without this knowledge of the kingdom and without this spiritual sight and hearing will necessarily be weak, and will lack the evidence of being a new creature in Christ Jesus." *R5952:4*

"The doctrines of Christ mean those doctrines presented in the Bible by Jesus and His mouthpieces, the Apostles...." *R5137:2*

DOCTRINES OF MEN

"...the doctrines of men are represented in the creeds of men, many of which are grossly...at variance with the doctrines of the Lord, and...in disagreement with each other...." *F315*

PAUL'S DOCTRINE

2 TIM. 3:10: "But thou hast fully known my doctrine, manner of life...."

"The Apostle Paul in his writings lays special emphasis upon the fundamental importance of correct doctrinal teaching. It made no difference whether Paul or Apollos or even an angel from heaven taught anything, it must be in harmony with the foundation doctrines which had been given them by the Lord....He assured the church that what he had taught them was from God, and that even if an angel should bring them another Gospel, it would be a proof that such an angel had deflected from...the Lord. That Jesus Christ died to secure the redemption-price for Adam and his race is the foundation doctrine of the church..." *R5916:4*

GAL.1:6-12: "I marvel that ye are so soon removed from him that called you into the grace of Christ unto another gospel: Which is not another; but there be some that trouble you, and would pervert the gospel of Christ. But though we, or an angel from heaven, preach any other gospel unto you than that which we have preached unto you, let him be accursed. As we said before, so say I now again, If any man preach any other gospel unto you than that ye have received, let him be accursed. For do I now persuade men, or God?...for if I yet pleased men, I should not be the servant of Christ. But I certify you, brethren, that the gospel which was preached of me is not after man....neither received *it* of man, neither was I taught it, but by the revelation of Jesus Christ."

CONTINUE IN THE DOCTRINE

1 TIM. 4:16: "Take heed unto thyself, and unto the doctrine; continue in them: for in doing this thou shalt both save thyself, and them that hear thee."

"...it is not sufficient that we be indoctrinated once; for...we receive the treasures of God's grace into poor earthen vessels which are very leaky: and hence, if we cease to receive we will cease to have; for...it is necessary that we have...

2 TIM. 3:10,13,14: "'But thou hast fully known my doctrine, manner of life, purpose, faith, longsuffering, charity, patience,....But evil men and seducers shall wax worse and worse, deceiving, and being deceived. But continue thou in the things which thou hast learned and hast been assured of, knowing of whom thou hast learned *them*...'

ISA. 28:10,13: "'...precept upon precept, line upon line....'

"...and that we continually renew and review our study of the divine plan of the ages, using whatever helps and assistances divine providence supplies...." *F315*

"Those who have real and sincere faith in God are willing to take him at his word; and with these the first principles of the doctrine should long ago have been established; much of the superstructure of gold and silver and precious stones

should already be erected, and the work be steadily progressing. Such are able, if they are loyal and true to God, to discern between truth and error....We ought to *know* what we believe and why we believe it, and then should be bold and uncompromising in declaring it...." *R3200:5*

1 COR. 14:8: "For if the trumpet give an uncertain sound, who shall prepare himself to the battle?"

2 TIM. 4:3: "For the time will come when they will not endure sound doctrine...."

"When once we have seen the plan of God revealed in Jesus, and have given ourselves to God and the study of his Word, the only way to retain our spiritual life is to continue in this doctrine, to root ourselves in this soil and remain there....No theories will mix with the Lord's plan. It is complete....Any attempt to incorporate with it theories and ideas of men will only destroy its value. We can never become rooted and built up in Christ by such a course; our spiritual decay, and finally...death, would be the result. No child of God can be carried about by every wind of doctrine; nor can he indulge a morbid curiosity as to what this or that new theory may teach. To do so is very dangerous to the spirituality of a Christian...." *R5558:1*

ATTITUDE TOWARD FALSE DOCTRINE

2 JOHN 9-11: "Whosoever transgresseth, and abideth not in the doctrine of Christ, hath not God. He that abideth in the doctrine of Christ, he hath both the Father and the Son. If there come any unto you, and bring not this doctrine, receive him not into *your* house, neither bid him God speed: For he that biddeth him God speed is partaker of his evil deeds."

"Here is a responsibility with reference to our endorsement of another which we cannot ignore and still be faithful; and except we judge on one's course by his fidelity or infidelity to the truth, we shall be endorsing error quite as often as truth...." *R1362:5*

PRESENT DISREGARD OF DOCTRINE

"We are living in a day when the very word doctrine seems to be offensive to the majority of Christian people..." *R5136:3*

"...when doctrines in general are being sneered at, and when quite a good many claim that doctrine and faith are of no value in comparison to works and morals. We cannot agree with this, because we find it entirely out of accord with the divine Word, in which faith is placed first and works second. It is our faith that is accepted of the Lord, and according to our faith he will reward us, though he will properly expect that a good faith will bring forth as many

good works as the weaknesses of the earthen vessel will permit...." *F315*

HOSEA 4:6: "My people are destroyed for lack of knowledge: because thou hast rejected knowledge, I will also reject thee, that thou shalt be no priest to me: seeing thou hast forgotten the law of thy God, I will also forget thy children."

ISA. 33:6: "And wisdom and knowledge shall be the stability of thy times, *and* strength of salvation: the fear of the LORD *is* his treasure."

2 TIM. 2:15: "Study to show thyself approved unto God, a workman that needeth not to be ashamed, rightly dividing the word of truth."

"We hold...that doctrine is all important both to faith and works. If it were not so the Lord would not have given his doctrines so important a place in his teachings and in his parables....No man can build a proper life unless he have some foundation, some doctrine, some faith....We believe that the important thing is that we should have a proper foundation, a proper faith, a proper doctrine upon which to build character and good works." *R3318:3*

"Instead of shunning doctrines, we should realize that they are the very things needed to cause the scattering of our darkness and superstitions, and to draw all of God's people nearer together." *R5136:6*

ESTABLISHED IN THE FAITH

COL. 2:6,7: "As ye have therefore received Christ Jesus the Lord, *so* walk ye in him: Rooted and built up in him, and stablished in the faith, as ye have been taught, abounding therein with thanksgiving."

"...the general sentiment among the teachers of false doctrine — who think that it is not either necessary or advisable to be established in the faith [is...that] to be established is to be a bigot....And so it is, if one is so unfair in mind as to accept and tenaciously hold that which he has never proved either by sound logic or Bible authority. But he is not an unreasoning bigot who, in simple faith, on the authority of God, accepts the Word of God. And such, and only such,...are established in the truth. The difference between the strong and steadfast Christian and a bigot is that the one is established in the truth, while the other is established in error." *R3215:2*

A PURIFYING INFLUENCE

"He who would endeavor to purify himself, to cleanse his conduct, must, to be successful, begin as the Scriptures begin, with the heart, and must progress, using for a cleansing, the inspired promises. And this means a knowledge of the doctrines of Christ." *F315*

AN AID IN TESTS

"Sometimes the tests come in the way of trials of faith, and we are called upon to prove ourselves whether we be in the faith (2 Cor. 13:5) when some subtle errors are presented to us as advanced truth...to the law and the testimony we go, and relying implicitly upon this as the infallible teaching of the Spirit of God,...are enabled to arrive at definite, clear and positive doctrine. We are not left in doubt as to what is truth, but are enabled to give a solid Scriptural reason for the hope that is in us, on which hope we dare implicitly to rest...and with humble boldness to successfully with-stand the assaults of error...." *R3104:2*

2 COR. 13:5: "Examine yourselves, whether ye be in the faith; prove your own selves. Know ye not your own selves, how that Jesus Christ is in you, except ye be reprobates?"

INSPIRES HOPE AND FAITH

"...here is the advantage of doctrinal knowledge; it inspires hope; it gives a foundation for hope. Knowledge cannot bring us to the kingdom; but it may be a great help in building us up and preparing us for it, by constantly holding before us the *hopes* which God designs should stimulate and encourage us while running for the race for the great prize." *R2213:5*

1 JOHN 5:4: "...this is the victory that overcometh the world, *even* our faith."

HEB. 11:6: "But without faith *it is* impossible to please *him*...."

1 JOHN 3:3: "And every man that hath this hope in him purifieth himself, even as he is pure."

"No man can properly be an overcomer, therefore, unless he exercise faith in God and in his promises; and in order to exercise faith in the promises of God he must understand them; and this opportunity and ability to grow strong in faith will be in proportion to his understanding the divine plan of the ages, and the exceeding great and precious promises connected therewith.

"Hence, doctrine — instruction — is important, not merely for the knowledge which God's people are to have and to enjoy above and beyond the knowledge of the world in things pertaining to God, but especially because of the influence which this knowledge will exercise upon all hopes and aims and conduct." *F315*

"Let us, therefore, look well to the foundations of our faith — study the doctrine and get a clear intellectual conception of every element of divine truth which the inspired Word presents to the people of God; let us become rooted, grounded, settled, established in the faith, the doctrines of God, and hold them fast; they are the divine credentials;

and let us give earnest heed to them, lest at any time we should let them slip." *R1823:1*

HEB. 2:1: "**THEREFORE** we ought to give the more earnest heed to the things which we have heard, lest at any time we should let *them* slip."

PERMISSION OF EVIL

"When his plan is fully accomplished, all will be able to read clearly his wisdom, justice, love and power, they will see the justice which could not violate the divine decree....They will see the love which provided this noble sacrifice...the Redeemer....They will also see the power and wisdom which were able to work out a glorious destiny for his creatures....had evil not been permitted and thus over-ruled by divine providence, we cannot see how these results could have been attained. The permission of evil for a time among men thus displays a far-seeing wisdom, which grasped all the attendant circumstances, devised the remedy, and marked the final outcome through his power and grace." *A135*

"EVIL is that which produces unhappiness; anything which either directly or remotely causes suffering of any kind — *Webster*. This subject, therefore, not only inquires regarding human ailments, sorrow, pains, weaknesses and death, but goes back of all these to consider their primary cause — sin — and its remedy. Since sin is the cause of evil, its removal is the only method of permanently curing the malady." *A117*

A FREE MORAL AGENT

"God could have made mankind devoid of ability to discern between right and wrong, or able only to discern and to do right; but to have made him so would have been to make merely a living machine, and certainly not a mental image of his Creator...." *A119*

"The moral sense, or judgment of right and wrong, and the liberty to use it, which Adam possessed, were important features of his likeness to God....Ability to love implies ability to hate: hence...the Creator could not make man in his own likeness, with power to love and to do right, without the corresponding ability to hate and to do wrong...." *A120*

MAN NOT FORCED INTO SIN

"...reasoning that God...caused....sin, and that none could resist him,....man's...liberty of...*choice* ...is...set aside; and man...degraded to a mere machine....If this were the case, man...would be inferior even to insects....Even the...ant has... a...will which man, though...he may...thwart, cannot destroy." *A124*

GOD NOT THE AUTHOR OF SIN

ISA. 45:7: "...I make peace, and create evil...."

AMOS 3:6: "...Shall there be evil in a city, and the Lord hath not done *it*?"

"...the word *evil* in the texts, cited signifies *calamities*. the same Hebrew word is translated in Psalm 34:19; 141:5; Eccl 7:14; Neh.2:17...

"God sent them word...that their calamities were from him...for their correction...." *A124 Footnote*

PSA. 34:19; 141:5: "Many *are* the afflictions of the righteous: but the LORD delivereth him out of them all....Let the righteous smite me; *it shall be* a kindness: and let him reprove me; *it shall be* an excellent oil, *which* shall not break my head: for yet my prayer also *shall be* in their calamities."

HOW WE LEARN

"There are four ways of knowing things,...by intuition, by

observation, by experience, and by information...intuitive knowledge...without the process of reasoning...belongs... to...Jehovah. ...Man's knowledge might have come by observation, but in that event there must needs have been some exhibition of evil...to serve....why not...among men...as among others....?" *A121*

"Why should not man be the illustration, and get his knowledge by...experience?...being...

1 COR. 4:9: "'...made a spectacle...to angels...'

"Adam already had a knowledge of evil by information, but that was insufficient to restrain him from trying the experiment...." *A122*

"God...foresaw that...he would, through lack of full appreciation of sin and its results, accept it, but...that...he would still choose it, because that acquaintance would so impair his moral nature that evil would...become more agreeable...than good. Still, God designed to permit evil, because, having the remedy...for man's release...he saw that the result would be to lead him, through experience, to a full appreciation of 'the exceeding sinfulness of sin' and of the matchless brilliance of virtue in contrast with it — thus teaching him... forever to shun that which brought so much woe and misery...." *A124*

PSA. 119:67,68,71: "Before I was afflicted I went astray: but now have I kept thy word. Thou *art* good, and doest good; teach me thy statutes. *It is* good for me that I have been afflicted; that I might learn thy statutes."

ECCL. 1:13; 3:10: "And I gave my heart to seek and search out by wisdom concerning all *things* that are done under heaven: this sore travail hath God given to the sons of man to be exercised therewith....I have seen the travail, which God hath given to the sons of men to be exercised in it."

FAITH

HEB. 11:1, *Diaglott:* "...Faith is a basis of things hoped for, a conviction of things unseen."

"Hope finds a foundation — finds in faith a substance, because the faith rests upon a divine promise...." *R4385:5*

"Belief, in the ordinary sense...is not sufficient as a foundation for our trust and onward progress, unless that belief be...solidified into a substantial faith...." *R5188:3*

"The Bible puts faith before works, because no works can be acceptable to God unless inspired by faith." *R5859:1*

FAITH VS. CREDULITY

1 COR. 2:4,5: "And my speech and my preaching was not with enticing words of man's wisdom, but in demonstration of the Spirit and of power: That your faith should not stand in the wisdom of men, but in the power of God."

"We should recognize a wide difference between faith and credulity. Millions of people are credulous and superstitious, and believe a thousand and one unreasonable things for which they have no adequate evidences.... Superstition and credulity are to be condemned, reproved, avoided, overcome. The true faith is to be encouraged, built up, strengthened, caused to grow. The faith of God is the faith, confidence, trust, which builds upon the divine promises and not upon human traditions, philosophies, or imaginings." *F689*

"Credulity is the acceptance of a thing without good reason, without sure evidence. Faith on the contrary, is the acceptance of a thing because we have indisputable evidence of its reality, its truthfulness and its reliability. As we exercise faith in God, we come nearer and nearer to him." *R5717:5*

"The Bible would have us know definitely the things that God has promised, and exercise a definite faith in those things and give no heed whatever to the seductive vagaries of Satan, of our fellow men, or of our imagination." *R5244:5*

IMPORTANCE OF FAITH

"We have heard through the word of God that he has provided a Savior, but we see things continue much as they were....Our faith, however, assures us that God...in due time...will establish righteousness in the earth." *R5115:3*

HEB. 11:6: "But without faith it is impossible to please him: for he that cometh to God must believe that he is and that he is a rewarder of them that diligently seek him."

"On the basis of this statement we may say, then, that a person is pleasing to God in proportion as he has faith...." *R5188:6*

"If a follower of the Lord...lose confidence, lose faith, he will easily be overcome by the Adversary.

"The very ones whom God will approve are those who walk by faith..." *R5095:2*

See also entire article.

HEB. 10:21,22,35: "And having an high priest over the house of God; Let us draw near with a true heart in full assurance of faith....Cast not away therefore your confidence, which hath great recompense of reward."

"A full assurance of faith is that faith which, if retained, will bring

us off 'more than conquerors,' and make us at last members in full of the royal priesthood." *R5424:6*

MATT. 9:29: "According to your faith be it unto you."

1 JOHN 5:4: "This is the victory that overcometh the world, [even] our faith."

"It is during the present time of darkness as respects the fulfillment of the divine plan, when sin abounds, and Satan is the prince of this world, that the Lord puts the premium upon faith...." *F113*

FAITH THE GIFT OF GOD

EPH. 2:8: "...By grace are ye saved through faith; and that not of yourselves: it is the gift of God."

"In this text, we are told that our faith is of God....it is of God in the sense that he supplies the necessary elements from which that faith is to be compounded." *R4696:6, 4697:1*

JAS. 1:17: "Every good gift and every perfect gift...cometh down from the Father of lights...."

"Our faith must have...a basis. We must have knowledge of a matter...to have faith in it....The knowledge shows us God's character; the divine Revelation makes known certain facts respecting God's purposes, and we see the purposes...in harmony with the character..., and this enables one to believe the promises; and believing them we are enabled to act upon them; and this is faith." *R4697:1*

JUSTIFICATION BY FAITH

"The posts which stood in the 'court,' and upheld the white curtains, represented **justified believers** — the 'Court,'...represented the justified condition. The posts were of wood, a corruptible material, thus implying that the class typified are not actually perfect as human beings; for since human perfection was typically represented by copper,

those posts should either have been made of copper, or covered with copper, to represent actually perfect human beings. But although made of wood they were set in sockets of copper, which teaches us that though actually imperfect their standing is that of perfect human beings. It would be impossible to more clearly represent justification by faith." *T113*

FAITH OF THE ANCIENT WORTHIES

"Though even the type had not yet come in his day, Abraham, as a justified believer, was a member of the 'household of faith,' typified by the Levites...." *T27*

"Before the precious blood had been given for our justification, there were ancient worthies... who were justified by faith. Since they could not have had faith in the precious blood, what faith was it...that justified them?..." *F110*

ROM. 4:3: "For what saith the scripture? Abraham believed God, and it was counted unto him for righteousness."

GAL. 3:6: "Abraham believed God, and it was accounted unto him for righteousness." [justification]" *F110*

FAITH DURING GOSPEL AGE

"Now the Lord is seeking for a special class...such as have been brought to a knowledge of God's grace in Christ, and been able...to so fully trust...that their faith... will...cause them to esteem the life to come as of such...value that...the present life...would appear to be but as loss and dross...reckoned...as though they had...experienced...restitution to human perfection...that they may present...that human perfection...and all their restitution privileges, earthly hopes and aims and interests, a living sacrifice — exchanging heavenly hopes...." *F108*

"Now the new creation must walk by faith...; and their faith is required to endure...as believing things that, so far as outward evidences go, are improbable....And this faith, backed by our **imperfect** works, has the backing of our Lord's **perfect** works, on our behalf, and is acceptable to God, on the principle that if under such imperfect conditions we strive, to the extent of our ability, to please the Lord, and so partake of the Spirit of Christ that we rejoice to suffer that under favorable conditions we would be surely no less loyal to principle....The faith which God now seeks...is precious...and marks a small, peculiar class; therefore he has placed such a premium, or reward, upon it...." *F112*

FAITH DURING RESTITUTION

"Christ and the church in glory will perform a justifying (restoring) work upon the world during the Millennial age,

and that it will not be justification by faith...but...an **actual** justification — by works in the sense that although mixed with faith the final testing will be 'according to their works.' (Rev. 20:12).... When the **knowledge** of the Lord shall fill the whole earth [Isa. 11:9; Heb. 2:14]... — when men see the evidences of God's favor and love and reconciliation through Christ in the gradual uplift which will come to all those who then seek harmony with him — when mental, physical, and moral restitution will be manifest — then faith will be to a considerable extent different from the blind faith necessary now...." *F112*

"While men will then believe God and have faith in him, there will be wide difference between thus believing the evidences of their senses and the faith which the New Creation must exercise now....When the Millennial age shall have been fully ushered in, it will be impossible to doubt the general facts...." *F112*

"True, **faith** may even then be said to be essential to restitution progress..., for 'without faith it is impossible to please God,' and... restitution blessings...will be bestowed along lines that will demand faith; but the faith that will be required for progress in restitution will differ very much from the faith now required.... When the kingdom...shall be in control and Satan bound and the knowledge of the Lord caused to fill the earth,...**sight** and **knowledge** will grasp...much that is now recognizable only by...faith. But faith will be needed...that they may go on unto perfection...." *F106*

"All will be judged 'according to their works' — backed by **faith** ...." *F113*

GROWTH AND DEVELOPMENT

"Faith must be ours before we can become children of God at all — yea, before our justification — for we are 'justified by faith' ere we receive peace with God and forgiveness of sins. The faith which we had before we received the Holy Spirit cannot, therefore be the faith which is the fruit of the Spirit — the gift of the Spirit." *F688*

"Faith may be said to have in it...intellectual assurance and heart reliance. Both the...intellect and the affections are necessary to the faith without which it is impossible to please God....Neither of

these...alone can withstand the fiery tests to which faith is subjected....” *R5114:6*

JAS. 1:5-8: “If any of you lack wisdom, let him ask of God, that giveth to all...liberally, and upbraideth not;...But let him ask in faith, nothing wavering. For he that wavereth is like a wave of the sea driven with the wind and tossed. For let not that man think that he shall receive anything of the Lord. A double minded man *is* unstable in all his ways.”

“The apostle thus shows how impossible it would be for anyone to become an overcomer without becoming strong in faith....” *F691*

“Even with our hearts turned to the Lord, and with the best of intentions, we cannot do the things that we would; but as to those who can exercise faith and who do exercise it in harmony with divine righteousness to the best of their ability, God will count their efforts as though they were perfect....” *R3944:6*

TESTS OF FAITH

“Our daily experiences since we became the Lord’s followers have been guided and guarded apparently by the power unseen,...that as pupils in the school of Christ, we may all be taught of him and develop more and more faith. How important this item of faith is we probably cannot fully appreciate now. It seems to be one thing that the Lord specially seeks for in those now called to be followers....” *R3324:2*

HEB. 11:6: “Without faith it is impossible to please...God....”

MATT. 19:26: “With God all things are possible.”

“It must not surprise us...if a dark hour is before us...when the stormy winds will be so fierce that many will cry out in fear and trembling. Let us learn well the precious experiences of the present time, so that then our faith shall not fail us....” *R3325:1*

HOLDING FAST TO THE FAITH

“Saint Paul had kept the faith — the true faith once delivered unto the saints — faith in the Redeemer’s sacrifice;...faith in our justification by the Father on that account;...faith in the Lord and...the brethren....It means something to keep the faith...when...Satan is...alert...to take it from us or to...twist it....” *R4527:1*

“He had kept the faith and the faith had kept him. Many do not realize how important are knowledge and a correct faith. ‘My people perish for lack of knowledge,’ is the Lord’s testimony. And their faith [must] keep pace with their knowledge. A correct life depends greatly upon a correct faith....” *R4527:1*

2 TIM. 4:7, *Diag*.: “I have maintained the good contest. I have finished the race, I have guarded the faith.”

HEB. 10:23: “Let us hold fast the profession of our faith without wavering (for he is faithful that promised).”

EPH. 6:10: “Finally, my brethren, be strong in the Lord, and in the power of his might.”

“We shall never lose our courage if we keep our eyes continually fixed on him, and our hand closely clasped in his. God’s eternal promises are the foundation upon which all that we hope, either of character or of coming glory is built. And what a strong foundation! Let us be faithful to him who hath called us. Let us hold the glorious truth not only in the letter, but also in the spirit. Let us hold it in the love of it, because it is the truth, as well as because of its matchless beauty and grandeur.” (Reference unknown.)

HEB. 3:6: “...hold fast the confidence and the rejoicing of the hope firm unto the end.”

HEB. 6:11: “And we desire that every one of you do show the same diligence to the full assurance of hope unto the end.”

“There is nothing that puts the Christian at greater disadvantage in the presence of his foes than for him to let go, even temporarily, his grip upon the anchor of faith. Let him do so for a moment, and of necessity darkness begins to gather round him: he cannot see the brightness of his Father’s face, for ‘without faith it is impossible to please God;’ and while he grapples again for the anchor, the powers of darkness fiercely assail him with doubts and fears, based generally upon his human imperfections, which he should ever bear in mind are covered by the robe of Christ’s righteousness. If we would have the peace of God reign in our hearts, we must never let go our anchor, ‘nor suffer Satan’s deadliest strife to beat our courage down.’ The language of our hearts should always be, though he slay me yet will I trust him. [Job 13:15]” *Manna, June 5; R1835:1*

“With some...there is a tendency to...think that they may have been unfaithful....In some instances...the second death is apprehended....

“The fact that they have received this divine favor is an indication that their offering has had divine acceptance. Faith...in God and...the... promises is the very basis of all Christian endeavor....In proportion as the promises are before our minds,...we have...courage to run the narrow way.

“If a follower of the Lord has been thus discouraged....he should...renew his... consecration....and endeavor to walk on a higher plane....If he lose...faith, he will easily be overcome by the adversary.

“The very ones whom God will approve are those who walk by faith. The rewards are for those who hold the faith even unto death....The Lord wants us to have a faith...that will trust where it cannot see....”*R5095:1,4,5*

LOSING FAITH

“We all know from experience how things that are brought before our minds may....become dim....When...we cannot grasp spiritual verities as once we could, when we are fearful and our joy...is fading, we are....losing our faith. So let us...hold fast to this anchor...lest we drift and be dashed upon the rocks. Unless we do hold fast...we shall lose everything; for ‘without faith it is impossible to please God....

“If we...waver we are...losing our faith or losing the spirit of obedience and love. If...we realize that either of these conditions exists, we should go at once to the Word...and to prayer, that our faith, love and zeal may be renewed.” *R5698:2,5*

THE FIGHT OF FAITH

1 TIM. 6:12: “Fight the good fight of faith...”

“For whom do we fight?....We fight for ourselves....God...is fighting for us, and assisting and encouraging us to fight the good fight of faith, on our own behalf....

“Our battle is not against our fellow creatures....We are to seek to do them good.” *R2309:2*

2 TIM. 2:25: “In meekness instructing those that oppose themselves...”

"We return good for evil, gentleness for rudeness, kindness for discourtesy....

"Our fight is to be against sin....

"Satan is...endeavoring to bring us back again under the dominion of Sin,...Our battle is not directly with Satan....We are to resist his influence and deceptions, and endeavors to mislead us into error and into sin.

****

"'The spirit of the world,' its influence,...is to be fought against and resisted — the world's disposition,...motives,...ambitions,...the pride of life and the deceitfulness of riches....

"Finally, our battle is with...our own flesh....Its only tendency is toward evil...continually, and only as we get rid of the blinding influences and perverted tastes and desires, ambitions and hopes and loves which sin cultivates...do we... see matters in their true light...." *R2309:2-5*

"(1) It is a fight of faith under an *unseen* leader, and against an *unseen* foe....

"(2)...By faith we accept the Word of God,...we learn that certain courses...are right...;...we accept these conclusions by *faith*....

"(3) We fight for a liberty and a glory of the verity of which we have no knowledge except...by *faith*.

"(4)...We see the crown of life and...the Lord...with the *eye of faith*....

"(5) The things...seen with the natural eye, are seeking to influence us...not to lay down our lives, not to cultivate the spirit of meekness, gentleness, patience, love....Only...as we are ableto have the faith...shall we be able to fight the good fight." *R2312:1,2*

See also Index: **Three Sources of Temptations**

CONTENDING FOR THE FAITH

JUDE 3: "...Ye should earnestly contend for the faith which was once delivered unto the saints."

Wrong Spirit of Contention

"The Scriptures reprobate...contending for place, for power, for our friends against someone else's friends, for our ideas against those of others...." *R5056:3*

****

Proper Contending

"But while all...should be on guard against the spirit of contention, watching closely lest anything be done in a biting and devouring manner, instead of manifesting patience and longsuffering, brotherly kindness, love, yet they...must...keep watch that they are always walking in line with the spirit of truth....They are to, 'earnestly contend for the faith....'

****

"In contending for his own ideas one might be cultivating pride. The contention which God would approve is that earnest desire to have whatever God's Word teaches. We must not contend...improperly, nor speak slanderously. In all of our contentions we should manifest... gentleness, brotherly kindness, love. Thus the proper contention would not partake of anger, hatred, malice or strife." *R:5057:4*

FIVE WORLD EMPIRES

"When God removed his typical kingdom from the earth, the message to that last king, Zedekiah, was, 'This shall not be the same....I will overturn, overturn, overturn, it; and it shall be no more until He comes whose right it is and I will give it unto him.' (**Ezek. 21:26,27**) Thus was intimated an interregnum, as far as divine rulership in the world was concerned, from Zedekiah's time until Messiah's, Millennial kingdom. Meantime...God did give the Gentiles an opportunity to show what kind of kingdom they would be able to establish in the world. From the days of Zedekiah, 606 B.C., to the present time, we have had four distinct kinds of government....(1) Babylonia, (2) Medo-Persia, (3) Greece, and (4) Rome...." *R5673:4*

NEBUCHADNEZZAR'S DREAM

DAN. 2:31-35: "Thou, O King, sawest, and behold a great image. This great image, whose brightness *was* excellent, stood before thee; and the form thereof *was* terrible. This image's head was of fine gold, his breast and his arms of silver, his belly and his thighs of brass, His legs of iron, his feet part of iron and part of clay. Thou sawest till that a stone was cut out without hands, which smote the image upon his feet *that were* of iron and clay, and brake them to pieces. Then was the iron, the clay, the brass, the silver, and the gold, broken to pieces together, and became like the chaff of the summer threshing floors; and the wind carried away, that no place was found for them: and the stone that smote the image, became a great mountain, and filled the whole earth."

DANIEL'S INTERPRETATION

DAN. 2:37-44: "Thou O King, *art* a king of kings: for the God of heaven hath given thee a kingdom, power, and strength, and glory....*Thou art* this head of gold. And after thee shall arise another kingdom inferior to thee, and another third kingdom of brass, which shall bear rule over all the earth. And the fourth kingdom shall be strong as iron: forasmuch as iron breaketh in pieces and subdueth all *things:* and as iron that breaketh all these, shall it break in pieces and bruise. And whereas thou sawest the feet and toes, part of potter's clay, and part of iron, the kingdom shall be divided; but there shall be in it of the strength of the iron....And *as* the toes of the feet *were* part of iron, and part of clay, so the kingdom shall be partly strong and partly brittle [margin]. And whereas thou sawest iron mixed with miry clay, they shall mingle themselves with the seed of men: but they shall not cleave one to another, even as iron is not mixed with clay. And in the days of these kings shall the God of heaven set up a kingdom which shall

never be destroyed: *but* it shall break in pieces and consume all these kingdoms, and it shall stand forever."

BABYLON AND MEDO-PERSIA

DAN. 5:18,28: "The most high God gave Nebuchadnezzar thy father a kingdom, and majesty, and glory, and honor:....Thy kingdom is divided, and given to the Medes and the Persians."

MEDO-PERSIA AND GREECE

DAN. 8:5-7: "...An he goat came from the west....And he came to the ram...and smote the ram, and...cast him down to the ground, and stamped upon him...."

DAN. 8:20,21: "The ram which thou sawest having two horns are the kings of Media and Persia. And the rough goat is the king of Grecia..."

FOURTH WORLD EMPIRE — ROME

LUKE 2:1: "...There went out a decree from Caesar Augustus, that all the world should be taxed [margin, **enrolled** (**for taxation**)]."

THE CLAY MIXED WITH THE IRON

"The clay element blended with the iron in the feet represents the mixture of church and state....Stone is the symbol of the true kingdom of God, and Babylon substituted an imitation of stone — clay — which it has united with the fragmentary remains of the [iron] Roman empire....

"The Papal system has long claimed that it is the kingdom which the God of heaven... promised to set up, and that...it did break in pieces and consume all other kingdoms....The nominal church merely united with earthly empires as the clay with the iron, and...Papacy never was the true Kingdom of God, but merely a counterfeit of it. One of the best evidences that Papacy did not...destroy these earthly kingdoms is that they still exist. And now that the miry clay has become dry and 'brittle,' it is losing its adhesive power, and the iron and clay show signs of dissolution...." *A253-255*

FIFTH UNIVERSAL EMPIRE

PSA. 2:6-8: "Yet have I set my king upon my holy hill of Zion. I will declare the decree: the LORD hath said unto me, Thou *art* my Son: this day have I begotten thee. Ask of me and I shall give *thee* the heathen *for* thine inheritance, and the uttermost parts of the earth *for* thy possession. Thou shalt break them with a rod of iron; thou shalt dash them in pieces like a potter's vessel."

THE CHURCH INCLUDED

REV. 2:26,27: "And he that overcometh, and keepeth my works unto the end, to him will I give power over the nations: and he shall rule [tend (as a shepherd), *Strong's Concordance*] them with a rod of iron; as the vessels of a potter shall they be [vessels of earthenware are, *Rotherham*] broken to shivers [together, *Diaglott*]; even as I received of my Father."

THE STONE — GOD'S KINGDOM

"The stone cut out of the mountain without hands,...represents the true church, the Kingdom of God. During the Gospel age this 'stone' kingdom is being formed, 'cut out'... — not by human hands, but by the power or spirit of the truth, the invisible power of Jehovah....

"The stone....does not become the mountain until it has smitten the image, and so the church, in the full sense, will become the Kingdom to fill the whole earth when...the 'time of trouble' will be over, and when it will be established and all other dominions have become subservient to it." *A253-255*

REV. 3:21, *Diag.*: "The conqueror, I will give to him to sit down with me in my THRONE, as I also conquered, and sat down with my FATHER in his THRONE."

DANIEL'S VISION OF THESE EMPIRES

DAN. 7:2-7: "...Behold....four great beasts came up from the sea....The first *was* like a lion,...a second like to a bear,....another, like a leopard....a fourth beast, dreadful and terrible, and strong exceedingly; and it had great iron teeth: it devoured and brake in pieces, and stamped the residue with the feet of it: and it *was* diverse from all the beasts that *were* before it; and it had ten horns."

THE FOURTH BEAST

"Here the Roman Empire is shown; and the divisions of its power are shown in the ten horns, a horn being a symbol of power." *A258*

THE LITTLE HORN

"The little horn...represents the small beginning and gradual rise to power of the Church of Rome....This...horn, Papacy, is remarkable for its eyes, representing intelligence, and for its mouth—its utterances, its claims, etc." *A258* [DAN. 7:8]

ITS END

"The prophet states that judgment against this horn would be rendered, and it would begin to lose its dominion, which would be **consumed** by a gradual process until the **beast** should be destroyed.

"This beast or Roman Empire in its horns or divisions still exists, and will be slain by the rising of the masses of the people, and the overthrow of governments in the 'Day of the Lord,' preparatory to the recognition of the heavenly rulership." *A259*

EXISTENCE OF FOURTH BEAST NOT PROLONGED

DAN. 7:12: "As concerning the rest of the beasts, they had their dominion taken away: yet their lives were prolonged for a season and a time."

"The prophet notes a difference between the end of this fourth beast and its predecessors. They three successively (Babylon, Persia, and Greece) had their **dominion** taken from them; they ceased to hold the ruling power of earth; but their lives as nations did not cease immediately....Not so...with the Roman Empire ...It will lose dominion and life...and go into utter destruction; and with it the others will pass away also." *A260*

DAN. 2:35: "Then was the iron, the clay, the brass, the silver, and the gold, broken to pieces together, and became like the chaff of the summer threshingfloors; and the wind carried them away, that no place was found for them: and the stone that smote the image became a great mountain, and filled the whole earth."

THE CAUSE OF THE OVERTHROW

"The **cause** of this fall will be the establishment of the Fifth Universal Empire of earth, the Kingdom of God, under Christ, whose right it is to take dominion." *A260*

DAN. 7:13,14,27: "...One like the Son of man came with the clouds of heaven, and came to the Ancient of days, and they brought him near before him. And there was given him [the Christ — Head and body complete] dominion, and glory, and a kingdom, that all people, nations, and languages, should serve him: his dominion *is* an everlasting dominion, which shall not pass away, and his kingdom *that* which shall not be destroyed....And the kingdom and dominion, and the greatness of the kingdom under the whole heaven, shall be given to the people of the saints of the most High, whose kingdom *is* an everlasting kingdom, and all dominions shall serve and obey him."

"The dominion of earth is...placed in the hands of Christ by Jehovah ('the Ancient of days'), who shall '...put all things under his feet.' [1 Cor. 15:27] Thus enthroned over God's kingdom, he must reign until [1 Cor. 15:25] he shall have put down all rule and all authority and power [1 Cor. 15:24] in conflict with the will and law of Jehovah. To the accomplishment of this...the overthrow of these Gentile governments is first necessary; for the 'kingdoms of this

world'...will not surrender peaceably, but must be bound and restrained by force..." [REV. 11:15] *A261*

PSALM 149:8,9: "To bind their kings with chains, and their nobles with fetters of iron; To execute upon them the judgment written: this honor have all his saints...."

EMBRYO KINGDOM BEFORE RECEIVING POWER

"Each of these governments represented in the image [**Dan. 2**] and by the beasts [**Dan. 7**] existed before it came into power as the universal empire. So, too, with the true Kingdom of God: it has long existed separate from the world, but awaiting its time — the time appointed by the 'Ancient of days.' And, like others, it must receive its appointment and must come into authority or be 'set up' before it can exercise its power in the smiting and slaying of the beast or kingdom preceding it. Hence...

"[**DAN. 2:44**:] '...it shall break in pieces and consume all these kingdoms, and it shall stand forever.'

"Hence...we must expect God's kingdom to be inaugurated **before** the fall of the kingdoms of this world, and that its power and smiting will bring their overthrow." *A261*

"Both the King and the kingdom are not only coming, but are here; and the present troubles and shakings in church and state, and the general awakening of the people are the results of influences emanating from that King and kingdom. Though men know it not, it is the smiting of the kingdom of God that is even now preparing for the wreck of all the kingdoms of the earth, that the way may be opened for the establishment of righteousness in the world, that men's hearts may be humbled and prepared for the righteous government which is to take control of earth." *R5916:6*

"Bible chronology...shows that the six great thousand-year Days beginning with Adam are ended, and that the great Seventh Day, the thousand years of Christ's Reign, began in 1873...." *Bviii*

"The 'times of the Gentiles' chronologically ended in...1914...." *Bix*

"Promptly in August 1914 the Gentile Kingdoms...began the...great struggle, which...will culminate in the complete overthrow of all human government, opening the way for the full establishment of the Kingdom of God's dear Son." *Bix*

"We are not able to know the things progressing under the direction of our glorious Lord and the members of his church already glorified....The Lord Himself informs us that, at the time He shall take to Himself His great power and reign, the nations will be mad and the Divine wrath

will come. A little later on the time will come for the judging of the dead...." *B:ix*

REV. 11:15,18 ***Diag***.: "And the SEVENTH Angel sounded his Trumpet; and there were loud [great] Voices in HEAVEN, saying, 'The KINGDOM of the WORLD has become our LORD'S and his CHRIST'S, and he shall reign for the AGES of the AGES....and the NATIONS were enraged, and thy WRATH came, and the APPOINTED TIME of the DEAD **to be** judged, and to give the REWARD to thy SERVANTS the PROPHETS, and to the SAINTS, and to THOSE who FEAR thy NAME, the LITTLE and the GREAT, and to destroy THOSE who DESTROY [destroying, interlineary] the EARTH.'"

A REMARKABLE CONFIRMATION

DAN. 5:5,25-28,30,31: "In the same hour came forth fingers of a man's hand, and wrote over against the candlestick upon the plaster of the wall of the king's palace....And this *is* the writing that was written, **MENE, MENE, TEKEL, UPHARSIN**. This *is* the interpretation of the thing: **MENE**; God hath numbered thy kingdom; and finished it. **TEKEL**; Thou are weighed in the balances, and found wanting. **PERES**; Thy kingdom is divided, and given to the Medes and the Persians....In that night was Belshazzar the king of the Chaldeans slain. And Darius the Median took the kingdom...."

"In a recent magazine article concerning the overthrow of the ancient Babylonian empire I note a very interesting fact which confirms the length of the 'times of the Gentiles' as given in *STUDIES IN THE SCRIPTURES, Volume 2*...'Mene, Mene, Tekel, Upharsin,' are Chaldaic terms taken from the Babylonian table of weights, and being translated from the ancient cuneiform in which they were written, would read: A mina, a mina, a shekel, a half-mina. The table of weights is as follows:

" 20 gerah = 1 shekel 50 shekels = 1 mina.

"A mina, therefore, equals 1000 gerahs. Hence 'a mina, a mina, a shekel, and a half mina,' or two and a half minas plus a shekel reduced to gerahs, yields the number 2,520....Daniel...said unto the Gentile monarch, [Dan. 5:26-28:] 'God hath numbered thy kingdom, and finished it....Thou art weighed in the balances, and art found wanting....Thy kingdom is divided, and given to the Medes and Persians.'

"Prophetically...'After 2520 years of supremacy the Gentile lease of power will expire, and the rulership of earth will then be divided and broken up and given to a two-fold empire' — the heavenly and the earthly phase of the Messianic kingdom. Gentile supremacy began...with the

overthrow of Israel's last king, in 606 B.C. Just 2,520 years later, or in 1914 A.D. the process of dividing began in exact accordance with the handwriting on the wall.

"...this number 2520 is distinctive in that it is the least common multiple of all the digits in our system of numbers; that is, it is the least possible number into which 1, 2, 3, 4, 5, 6, 7, 8, 9 may each...be divided. Thus in a special sense it is an all-comprehensive number. No other number could be more appropriate for spanning the whole period of Gentile lease of power; and it is, at the same time, exactly seven symbolic years in duration. Who...could doubt...that our chronology is correct! And do not present world events corroborate it in every sense? We now behold the dividing of earth's kingdoms. It began exactly on time....W. F. H." *R6377:5**

FULFILLED TO THE DAY

2 KINGS 25:8-11: "And in the fifth month, on the seventh day of the month,...came Nebuzaradan, captain of the guard, a servant of

the king of Babylon, unto Jerusalem: And he burnt the house of the LORD, and the king's house, and all the houses of Jerusalem, and every great *man's* house burnt he with fire. And all the army of the Chaldees, that *were with* the captain of the guard, brake down the walls of Jerusalem round about. Now the rest of the people *that were* left in the city, and the fugitives that fell away to the king of Babylon, with the remnant of the multitude, did Nebuzaradan the captain of the guard carry away."

LENGTH OF MONTHS l to 4

Nisan 30 days

Yiar 29 days

Sivan 30 days

Tamuz 29 days

Total 118 days = 118 days

To 7th day of Ab, the 5th month 6 days

Total = 124 days

Nisan 14 beginning April 9 (evening) in 1914, Nisan 1 would start in the evening of March 27.

From evening of March 27

To evening of March 31 4 days

To evening of April 30 30 days

To evening of May 31 31 days

To evening of June 30 30 days

To evening of July 29 29 days

124 days

"The seventh day of the fifth month would be from the evening of July 29 to the evening of July 30. July 29 was the day when World War 1 started in 1914, 2520 years to the day after this date in 2 Kings 25:8. 'And in the fifth month, on the seventh *day* of the month, which *is* the nineteenth year of king Nebuchadnezzar king of Babylon, came Nebuzaradan, captain of the guard, a servant of the king of Babylon, unto Jerusalem.'" *R4127:3*

GENTILE GOVERNMENTS BETTER THAN ANARCHY

[Editors Note: The following excerpts of the article from *R6408* by R. N. Clemons has been included for confirmation of the 1914 date.]

"These governments...have been...much better than lawlessness and anarchy.

"The ostensible object of all governments...has been to promote justice and the well being of all the people.

"The years of the kings of Judah began in the spring...2 Chron. 36:10, margin:...at the return of the year...R. N. Clemons." *R6408:3**

JER. 52:12-15: "Now in the fifth month, in the tenth day of the month,...came Nebuzaradan,...*which* served the king of Babylon, into Jerusalem, And burned the house of the LORD, and the king's house; and all the houses of Jerusalem, and all the houses of the great *men*, burned he with fire: And all the army of the Chaldeans...brake down all the walls of Jerusalem....Then Nebuzaradan...carried away captive *certain* of the poor of the people, that remained in the city, and those that fell away,...and the rest of the multitude."

"This destruction of Jerusalem...would seem to mark the beginning of the 2520 years of the Gentiles, even as the Lord said: 'Jerusalem shall be trodden down of the Gentiles, until the times of the Gentiles be fulfilled.' Luke 21:24

"If therefore the times of the Gentiles began on the tenth day of the fifth month of the Jewish religious year (which began in the spring), they would likewise end on the tenth day of the fifth month, 2520 years later. By consulting the 1914 Almanac we find that the fifth new moon from the spring equinox occurred at 9:38 p.m. July 22 — which would be July 23, Jewish time, as their day begins at sundown. Thus the beginning of the fifth Jewish month in A.D. 1914 would be July 23; and the tenth day of that fifth month would be August 1, 1914. It was on that very day that Germany declared war on Russia, followed immediately by a break with England and France; and the great time of trouble began! R. N. Clemons." *R6408:3**

[Note that "on the **seventh** day" (2 Kings 25:8) Nebuzaradan came "**unto** Jerusalem" and "in the **tenth** day" he came "**into** Jerusalem." (Jer. 52:12) Thus the war began in one sense, on the seventh day, when Austria-Hungary and Serbia began their conflict; but it really became a World War on the tenth day, when the great powers became involved.]

The apparent discrepancy in Jeremiah's account may be reconciled by *Rotherham's* translation:

2 KINGS 25:8: "...On the **seventh** of the month...Nebuzaradan... **unto** Jerusalem...."

JER. 52:12: "...On the **tenth** of the month...came Nebuzaradan... **into** Jerusalem...."

On August 2, 1914, the latter date in the Hebrew calendar, the great powers began to be involved enlarging the conflict which started three days previously into the beginning of World War I.

"To what extent that object has been attained is another question; but such has been the claim...and such the object of the people...in...supporting them. And where the ends of justice have been greatly ignored,...the masses have been blinded...or wars, commotions, and revolutions have been the result." *A262, 263*

NOT CHRIST'S KINGDOM

"The claim that these imperfect kingdoms, with their imperfect laws and often selfish and vicious rulers, are the 'kingdoms of our Lord and his Anointed' is a gross libel upon the true kingdom of Christ, before which they must shortly fall, and upon its 'Prince of Peace' and righteous rulers." *A269*

ISA. 32:1: "Behold, a king shall reign in righteousness, and princes shall rule in judgment."

RESISTING CHRIST'S KINGDOM

"Of those who will be vainly trying to hold to a dominion...when the dominion is given to him whose right it is, the Lord speaks, urging that they are fighting against him — a conflict in which they are sure to fail. He says:

PSA. 2:1-6,10-12: "Why do the nations tumultously assemble, and the people meditate a vain thing? The kings of the earth set themselves, and the rulers take counsel together against the LORD; and against his Anointed, *saying*, Let us break their bands asunder, and cast away their cords from us. He that sitteth in the heavens shall laugh: the Lord shall have them in derision. Then shall he speak unto them in his wrath, and vex them in his sore displeasure

[saying], **I have anointed my King** upon my holy hill of Zion....Be wise now, therefore, O ye kings: be

instructed, ye judges of the earth. Serve the Lord with fear and rejoice with trembling. Kiss [make friends with] the Son [God's Anointed] lest he be angry, and ye perish in the way; for his wrath may soon be kindled. Blessed are all they that take refuge in him."

NO KINGDOM WITHOUT THE KING

"Jesus and the apostles....taught that there can be no kingdom until the King comes.... Consequently the kingdom of heaven must suffer violence **until** that time when it shall be set up in glory and power." *A287*

"But, after a great deal of persecution..., theories began to spread to the effect that the mission of the church was to conquer the world, establish the kingdom of heaven on earth and reign over the nations **before** the Lord's second advent ...Papacy for a time crowned and uncrowned the kings of Europe....

"The same idea...has come down to Protestantism, which also claims, though more vaguely, that somehow the **reign** of the Church is in progress; and like the Corinthians its adherents are 'full' and 'rich' and reign 'as kings,' as graphically described by our Lord." *A287*

1 COR. 4:8: ***Diag***. "You are already filled! You are already enriched! You have reigned without us! and I wish, indeed, you did reign, that **we** also might reign with you."

REV. 3:17: "Because thou sayest I am rich, and have become wealthy [***Diag***.] and have need of nothing; and knowest not that thou art [the] wretched, and miserable, and poor, and blind, and naked..."

"The stone struck when there were feet and toes to be struck. There were no feet in the Babylonian day, none in the Medo-Persian, none in the Greco-Macedonian, and none in the Roman when....there were no feet and toes of ten kingdoms to strike." *R3359:4*

"It is evident, therefore, the Stone cannot have struck at the birth of Christ, nor at Pentecost, nor at the destruction of Jerusalem, nor at the edict of Constantine...." *R3359:5*

LUKE 21:24: "...Jerusalem shall be trodden down of the Gentiles, until the times of the Gentiles be fulfilled."

"Consequently we are guarded...against the false idea that the kingdom of God was **set up** at Pentecost, and more fully established when, as it is claimed, the Roman empire was converted to Christianity (to Papacy), and it attained both temporal and spiritual empires in the world....We see that those nations which both Papacy and Protestantism designate Christian Nations...are not such." *Reference unknown*

NEBUCHADNEZZAR A TYPE

"Another view of Gentile Times is presented by Daniel...." *B93*

DAN. 4:4,5,10,12-16: "...Nebuchadnezzar...saw a dream...and behold a tree...and the height thereof *was* great....The beasts of the field had shadow under it, and the fowls of the heaven dwelt in the boughs thereof, and all flesh was fed of it....And...an holy one came down from heaven; He cried...Hew down the tree, and cut off his branches,...Nevertheless leave the stump of his roots in the earth...in the tender grass of the field; and let it be wet with the dew of heaven, and *let* his portion be with the beasts of the earth: Let his heart be changed from man's and let a beast's heart be given unto him; and let **seven times** pass over him."

"The dream in its fulfillment upon Nebuchadnezzar is...noteworthy when we remember that he was made the...**head** of human dominion (**Dan. 2:38**), and...was addressed...in almost the same words...addressed to Adam."

DAN. 2:37,38: "...God of...hath given thee a kingdom, power, and strength, and glory. And wheresoever the children of men dwell, the beasts of the field and fowls of the heaven hath he given into thine hand, and hath made thee ruler over them all...."

GEN. 1:28: "...God said...Have dominion over the fish of the sea, and over the fowl of the air, and over every living thing that moveth upon the earth."

"The degradation of Nebuchadnezzar was typical of human degradation under beastly governments during seven symbolic times or years....This corresponds exactly with the seven times foretold upon Israel, which...end A.D. 1914. For it was under this Nebuchadnezzar that Israel was carried away captive to Babylon, when the crown of God's kingdom was removed, and the seven times began." *B96*

TWO PHASES OF GOD'S KINGDOM HOW MANIFESTED

LUKE 17:20, margin: "...The kingdom of God cometh not with outward show."

"...in due time it is to be made manifest...by outward...signs....The kingdom of God will be of two parts, a spiritual or heavenly phase and an earthly or human phase. The spiritual will always be invisible to men, as those composing it will be of the divine, spiritual nature, which no man hath seen nor can see (1 Tim. 6:16; John 1:18); yet its presence and power will be mightily manifested, chiefly through its human representatives,...the earthly phase of the kingdom...." *A288*

THE SPIRITUAL PHASE

"Those who will constitute the spiritual phase of the kingdom are the overcoming saints of the Gospel age — the Christ, head and body — glorified....Theirs is the **first resurrection**." *A288*

REV. 20:6: "Blessed and holy *is* he that hath part in the first resurrection...."

THE EARTHLY PHASE

"The earthly phase....are the class...whose judgment day was previous to the Gospel age. Having been tried and found faithful...they... will receive an instantaneous resurrection to perfection as **men**....These ancient worthies will be in the human phase of the kingdom and seen of mankind...." *A289, 290*

LUKE 13:28: "...Ye shall see Abraham, and Isaac, and Jacob, and all the prophets, in the kingdom of God...."

THE KINGDOM EVERLASTING

"The kingdom, when delivered up to the Father will still be the kingdom of God, and the laws will always be the same." *A304*

"When, in the end of the Millennial age, Christ delivers up the dominion of earth to the Father, he does so by delivering it to mankind as the Father's representatives, who were designed from the first to have this honor....Thus the kingdom of God lasts forever." *A305*

1 COR. 15:24: "Then ***cometh*** the end, when he shall have delivered up the kingdom to God, even the Father...."

MATT. 25:34: "Then shall the King say unto them on his right hand [those, who, during the Millennial reign, will have attained the position of favor by harmony and obedience], Come ye blessed of my Father, [you whom my Father designs thus to bless], inherit the kingdom **prepared for you** from the foundation of the world."

See also:

B:Chapter 4*: Chronology (Times of the Gentiles)*;

A:Chapter 13*: Kingdoms of this World;*

A:Chapter 14*: Salvation, Two (Kingdom of God)*

GRACE

FREE GRACE (Including Election and Predestination)

"Two lines of thought...have divided Christians for centuries, namely Election and Free Grace....Both of these doctrines, notwithstanding their apparent oppositeness, have Scriptural support....both must be true; but in no way can they be reconciled except by...'rightly dividing the word of truth.'...While an Election has been in progress during the present and past ages, what is by way of distinction designated Free Grace is God's gracious provision for the world in general during the Millennial Age....all the passages...which treat of Election apply to the present and past ages, while those which teach Free Grace are fully applicable to the next age." *A96*

ELECTION NOT ARBITRARY COERCION

SCOPE OF FREE GRACE

"Election, as taught in the Bible, is not the arbitrary coercion, or fatalism usually believed...but a selection according to fitness and adaptability to the end God has in view, during the period appointed for that purpose.

"The doctrine of Free Grace...is also a much grander display of God's abounding favor than its...advocates have...taught. God's grace or favor in Christ is ever free, in the sense of being unmerited; but since the fall of man into sin, to the present time, certain of God's favor have been restricted to special individuals, nations, and classes, while in the next age all the world will be united to share the favors then offered, on the conditions then made known to all, and whosoever will may come and drink at life's fountain freely." *A96*

REV. 22:17: "And the Spirit and the bride say, Come. And let him that heareth say, Come. And let him that is athirst come. And whosoever will, let him take the water of life freely."

ELECTION IN PREVIOUS AGES

"...we notice the selection or election of Abraham and certain of his offspring as the channels through which the promised Seed, the blesser of all the families of the earth, should come...." *A97*

GAL. 3:8,16,29: "And the scripture, foreseeing that God would justify, the heathen through faith, preached before the gospel unto Abraham *saying*, In thee shall all nations be blessed.... Now to Abraham and his seed were the promises made. He saith not, And to seeds, as of many; but as of one, And to thy seed, which is Christ....And if ye *be*

Christ's, than are *ye* Abraham's seed and heirs according to the promise."

"...the elections of the preceding time were for various purposes....Abraham was elected to be a type of Jehovah, and his wife Sarah to be a type of the Abrahamic Covenant....Hagar was elected to be a type of the Law Covenant, and her son Ishmael a type of the natural Israelites, who...should not be a joint-heir with Isaac, the son of promise. Isaac was elected to be a type of Christ, and his wife Rebecca, a type of the Church. Eliezer was elected to be a type of the Holy Spirit, whose mission it should be to invite the Church, and to assist her and ultimately to bring her and the virgins, her companions, to Isaac." *F170*

ETERNAL DESTINY NOT INVOLVED

"These elections did not involve...the everlasting future of any of these individuals...." *F171*

GOD'S JUSTICE IN ELECTION

ROM. 9:14-17: "Is *there* unrighteousness with God? God forbid. For he saith to Moses, I will have mercy on whom I will have mercy, and I will have compassion....[Exod. 33:19] So then *it is* not of him that willeth, nor of him that runneth, but of God that showeth mercy. For the scripture saith unto Pharaoh, Even for this same purpose have I raised thee up, that I might show my power in thee, and that my name might be declared throughout all the earth." [Exod. 9:16]

EXOD. 33:19: "And he said, I will make all my goodness pass before thee, and I will proclaim the name of the LORD before thee; and will be gracious to whom I will be gracious, and will show mercy on whom I will show mercy."

HOW GOD RAISED UP PHARAOH

"We are not...to understand...that he had 'raised him up' in the sense of compelling him to be a bad character. We are to understand that amongst the various heirs to the throne...,God so ordered, through the death of some of the intervening members of the royal family, that this particular Pharaoh should come to the throne because he possessed such an obstinate character that his fight against God and Israel would justly call for the plagues — which God had foreordained not only as a mark of his favor toward Israel and of his faithfulness to the promises...,but...because these plagues...were intended in some measure...to illustrate the plagues with which this Gospel Age will end...." *F175*

HOW GOD HARDENED HIS HEART

EXOD. 10:27: "...The LORD hardened Pharaoh's heart, and he would not let them go."

"It was God's goodness that hardened Pharaoh — God's willingness to hear his prayer for relief and to accept his promise in respect to letting Israel go — God's mercy....With this view of the matter, the freedom of Pharaoh's will is thoroughly evidenced, and the Lord is cleared of any cooperation with evil....the goodness of God, which should lead men to repentance, may sometimes, because of imperfect conditions, exercise an opposite influence upon them." *F175*

ROM. 9:22: "[*What*] if God, willing to show *his* wrath, and to make his power known, endured with much longsuffering the vessels of wrath fitted to destruction."

EXOD. 9:34: "...when Pharaoh saw that the rain and the hail and the thunders were ceased, he sinned yet more, and hardened his heart, he and his servants."

ISRAEL AN ELECT NATION

ISA. 45:4: "For Jacob my servant's sake, and Israel mine elect, I have even called thee by thy name...."

"The fact that we may see in this statement a certain typical application to Christ, and the deliverance...from mystic Babylon, does not interfere with the fact that typical Israel is here spoken of as 'elect.' The apostle...ROM 9:11 ['For *the children* being not yet born, neither having done any good or evil, that the purpose of God according to election might stand, not of works, but of him that calleth;']...shows that divine favor was granted to natural Israel for a time as God's typically elect people...." *F176*

"We note...the selection of Israel from among all nations, as the one in whom typically God illustrated how the great work for the world should be accomplished — their deliverance from Egypt, their Canaan, their covenants, their laws, their sacrifices for sins, for the blotting out of guilt and for the sprinkling of the people, and their priesthood for the accomplishment of all this, being a miniature and typical representation of the real priesthood and sacrifices for the purifying of the world of mankind. God...said...

AMOS 3:2: "'You only have I known of all the families of the earth.'

"This people alone was recognized until Christ came; yes, and afterwards, for his ministry was confined to them, and he would not permit his disciples to go to others — saying, as he sent them out." *A97*

MATT. 10:5: "These twelve Jesus sent forth, and commanded them, saying, Go not into the way of the Gentiles, and into *any* city of the Samaritans enter ye not."

MATT. 10:6: "But go rather to the lost sheep of the house of Israel."

MATT. 15:24: "...I am not sent but unto the lost sheep of the house of Israel."

"All his time was devoted to them until his death, and there was done his first work for the world, the first display of his free and all — abounding grace, which in 'due time' shall indeed be a blessing to all." *A97*

FREE GRACE FIRST MANIFESTED

"This, God's grandest gift, was not limited to nation or class. It was not for Israel only, but for all the world...." *A97*

HEB. 2:9: "...We see Jesus, who was made a little lower than the angels for the suffering of death, crowned with glory and honor; that he by the grace of God should taste death for **every man**."

ELECTION IN THE GOSPEL AGE

"...in the Gospel age, a certain sort of election obtains. Some parts of the world are more favored with the gospel (which is free to all who hear) than others...." *A97*

NO INJUSTICE DONE TO ISRAEL

"The apostle...attempting to show that no injustice had been done to Israel after the flesh by God's turning to the Gentiles to complete from them the elect New Creation, points to the fact that the Almighty has favors to dispense, and it is a matter purely of his own business to whom he shall give them....God gave to...Israel certain favors...but...would in no sense of the word be obligated to continue his preferential blessings to them....it would be entirely proper...to discontinue his favors to those who would not use them, and to turn them to others, — Romans, Chapters 9; 10; 11" *F171*

"The Lord foreknew...that after enjoying his blessings they would not (except a small 'remnant' — ROM 9:27-32) be in proper condition to receive...'the prize of the high calling....he calls attention to the two sons of Isaac, and shows us that in order to make an illustration of what God foreknew would be the condition hundreds of years later. God made an arbitrary selection as between Rebecca's two sons, Jacob and Esau....to be a type of the natural-minded class, who would prefer earthly things...was nothing to his disadvantage....he was blessed — even as worldly, natural men have blessings today of a kind which the Lord graciously withholds from the elect 'New Creatures,' as being less favorable to their spiritual interests." *F171*

JACOB ELECTED

ROM. 9:10-13: "...when Rebecca also had conceived...(For the children being not yet born, neither having done any good or evil, that the purpose of God according to election might stand, not of works, but of him that calleth;) It was

said unto her, The elder shall serve the younger. As it is written, Jacob have I loved, but Esau have I hated."

"The word 'hated' evidently signified to **love less**....The thought is that Jacob was favored of the Lord and Esau was favored less; and these two, as the Apostle shows, were types of Israel, natural and spiritual. God's favor to natural Israel, represented by Esau, was less than his favor to spiritual Israel, later born, represented by Jacob...." *F172*

ROM. 9:27-33: "Esaias also crieth concerning Israel, Though the number of the children of Israel be as the sand of the sea, a remnant shall be saved: For he will finish the work, and cut it short in righteousness: because a short work will the Lord make upon the earth. [ISA.: 10:22 'For though thy people Israel be as the sand of the sea, yet a remnant of them shall return: the consumption decreed shall overflow with righteousness.'] And as Esaias said before, Except the Lord of Sabaoth had left us a seed, we had been as Sodom, and been made like unto Gomorrah. [ISA. 1:9 'Except the LORD of hosts had left unto us a very small remnant, we should have been as Sodom, and we should have been like unto Gomorrah.'] What shall we say then? That the Gentiles, which followed not after righteousness, have attained to righteousness, even the righteousness which is of faith. But Israel, which followed after the law of righteousness, hath not attained to the law of righteousness. Wherefore? Because *they sought it* not by faith, but as it were by the works of the law. For they stumbled at that stumblingstone; As it is written, Behold, I lay in Sion a stumblingstone and rock of offense: and whosoever believeth on him shall not be ashamed." [Psalm 118:22; Isa. 8:14; Matt. 21:42; 1 Pet. 2:6, 8]

PSA. 118:22: "The stone which the builders refused is become the head stone of the corner."

ISA. 8:14: "And he shall be for a sanctuary; but for a stone of stumbling and for a rock of offense to both the houses of Israel, for a gin and for a snare to the inhabitants of Jerusalem."

MATT. 21:42: "Jesus saith unto them, Did ye never read in the scriptures, The stone which the builders rejected, the same is become the head of the corner: this is the Lord's doing, and it is marvelous in our eyes?"

1 PET. 2:6,8: "Wherefore also it is contained in the scripture, Behold, I lay in Sion a chief corner stone, elect, precious: and he that believeth on him shall not be confounded....And a stone of stumbling, and a rock of offense, *even to them* which stumble at the word, being disobedient: whereunto also they were appointed."

THE ELECT NEW CREATION FOREKNOWN

1 PET. 1:2: "Elect according to the foreknowledge of God the Father, through sanctification of the Spirit, unto obedience and sprinkling of the blood of Jesus Christ: Grace unto you, and peace, be multiplied."

EPH. 1:4,5,11: "...he hath chosen us in Him before the foundation of the world, that we should be holy and without blame before him in love: Having predestinated us unto the adoption of children by Jesus Christ to himself, according to the good pleasure of his will,...In whom also we have obtained an inheritance, being predestinated according to the purpose of him who worketh all things after the counsel of his own will..."

HOW FOREKNOWN

"This signifies that God foreknew the New Creation as a class — that he foreknew his intention to justify them by faith, through the blood of Christ....that he foreknew that enough such to complete this class would be obedient, and attain to sanctification through the truth. Nothing in any Scripture implies a divine foreknowledge of the **individuals** composing the elect class, except in respect to the Head of the Church. We are told that God foreknew Jesus as his elect one....He ordained that Christ should be the world's Redeemer, and that his reward should be exaltation as the first member — Head, Lord, Chief of the New Creation. He ordained also that a certain specific number should be chosen from amongst men to be his joint-heirs in the Kingdom...." *F179*

REV. 7:4; 14:1,4: **"...144,000....redeemed from among men."**

REV. 7:4: "And I heard the number of them which were sealed: and there were sealed an hundred and forty and four thousand of all the tribes of the children of Israel."

REV. 14:1,4: "And I looked, and, lo, a Lamb stood on the mount Sion, and with him an hundred forty and four thousand, having his Father's name written in their foreheads....These are they which were not defiled with women; for they are virgins. These are they which follow the Lamb whithersoever he goeth. These were redeemed from among men, being the firstfruits unto God and to the Lamb."

TO WHAT PREDESTINATED

ROM. 8:28-30: "And we know that all things work together for good to them that love God, to them who are the called according to *his* purpose. For whom he did foreknow, he also did predestinate *to be* conformed to the image of his Son, that he might be the first-born among many brethren. Moreover whom he did predestinate, them he also called:

and whom he called, them he also justified: and whom he justified, them he also glorified."

"God predestinated that his Only Begotten One should be the Head of this New Creation, and he determined...that none should be members of the New Creation except as they should become copies of his Son." *F180*

DILIGENCE REQUIRED OF THOSE PREDESTINATED

2 PET. 1:10,11: "Wherefore the rather, brethren, give diligence to make your calling and election sure: for if ye do these things [enumerated in verses 5-9], ye shall never fall: For so an entrance shall be ministered unto you abundantly into the everlasting kingdom of our Lord and Savior Jesus Christ." [See also 1 Thes. 1:4; Col. 3:12]

2 PET. 1:5-9: "And beside this, giving all diligence, add to your faith virtue; and to virtue knowledge; And to knowledge temperance; and to temperance patience; and to patience godliness; And to godliness brotherly kindness; and to brotherly kindness charity. For if these things be in you, and abound, they make you that ye shall neither be barren nor unfruitful in the knowledge of our Lord Jesus Christ. But he that lacketh these things is blind, and cannot see afar off, and hath forgotten that he was purged from his old sins."

1 THES. 1:4: "Knowing, brethren beloved, your election of God."

COL. 3:12: "Put on therefore, as the elect of God, holy and beloved, bowels of mercies, kindness, humbleness of mind, meekness, longsuffering."

"It is for the called ones,...to accept the call — making a full consecration....They must become so imbued with the spirit of their calling and so appreciative of their blessings that they will with zeal conform to the conditions and limitations attaching thereto." *F185*

FREE GRACE

"In the next dispensation, the new heaven and the new earth, the Church will be...'the bride,' and then shall..." *A98*

REV. 22:17:..."the Spirit and the bride say, Come. And let him that is athirst come.... Whosoever will [the willing], let him take the water of life freely."

See also Index: **Grace: Once in Grace, Always in Grace; Two Salvation; Three Ways.**

ONCE IN GRACE, ALWAYS IN GRACE

"These words represent the Calvinistic sentiment that whoever the Lord accepts into his family and begets of the

Holy Spirit will somehow or other, sometime, in some way, gain the heavenly estate." *R4036:6*

"Those who become thoroughly infatuated with the theory that God's grace, having reached them, must abide with them through all eternity, entirely lose sight of the numerous texts which declare that all who would be permanent and everlasting objects of divine grace and love must abide in Christ, and as the Apostle says, 'keep yourselves in the love of God.'" *R2286:3*

"This view is an outgrowth of false views of election and predestination...." *R2286:3*

TEXTS REFUTING THIS VIEW

JOHN 15:5,4,2,6: "...I am the vine, ye *are* the branches: he that abideth in me, and I in him, the same bringeth forth much fruit: for without me ye can do nothing....Abide in me, and I in you. As the branch cannot bear fruit of itself, except it abide in the vine; no more can ye, except ye abide in me....Every branch in me that beareth not fruit he taketh away....If a man abide not in me, he is cast forth as a branch, and is withered; and men gather them, and cast *them* into the fire, and they are burned."

1 COR. 9:24: "Know ye not that they which run in a race run all, but one receiveth the prize? So run, that ye may obtain."

MAKE CALLING AND ELECTION SURE

"...none could be of the elect kingdom class... unless they made their calling and election sure by cultivating the graces of the Spirit and thus coming into heart likeness of our Lord Jesus Christ — copies of him who set us an example, that we should walk in his steps." *R3586:1*

"...when we were accepted in the Beloved, having made full consecration of our mortal bodies, and every interest pertaining thereto, then the works began, the sacrificing began, the self-denials began, the overcoming of the world began, the battle with the world, the flesh and the devil began.

"This battle must be won in our hearts (even though we will not attain perfection in the flesh) else we will not make our election sure and receive the crown of glory...." *R3586:2*

2 PET. 1:10,11,9: "...give diligence to make your calling and election sure: for if ye do these things, ye shall never fall: For so an entrance shall be ministered unto you abundantly into the everlasting kingdom of our Lord and Savior Jesus Christ....But he that lacketh these things is blind, and cannot see afar off, and hath forgotten that he was purged from his old sins."

"The apostle has been mentioning the various graces of the Lord's Spirit which those who are seeking to be of his royal and priestly class must develop....He shows us that...we put on one grace and add...another,...and do this...in respect to all the graces, which keep growing...and rounding out...and broadening us as spiritual new creatures...those who do not have such...growth in grace and in knowledge... cannot hope to make their calling and election sure." *R3587:2*

GRACE OF JUSTIFICATION MAY BE LOST

2 COR. 6:1: "...receive not the grace of God in vain."

"This exhortation is addressed to such as have already recognized God's gracious character and the gift of his grace... — the redemption which is in Christ Jesus....He...exhorts...additionally that they...should become fully reconciled...by full consecration to him and his service...." *R2285:5*

ROM. 5:1,2: "...Being justified by faith, we have peace with God through our Lord Jesus Christ: By whom also we have access by faith into this grace wherein we stand, and rejoice in hope of the glory of God."

"We see...that he refers to the grace of God in justification, the forgiveness of our sins, and not to the second step of grace,...our begetting of the Spirit. This implies...that the only object of justification by faith in this...age, is to give us...acceptableness with God, from which we may...take the...step of self-sacrifice....This first step...would be *'in vain'*...if we fail to take the second....

"...those who fail to take the second step will have no particular benefit...from the first step, which would thus have been...in vain...." *R2286:1*

"None even become candidates for the New Creation unless they enter the low gate of self-sacrifice....in neglecting to enter it they virtually confess that they have 'received the grace of God (the forgiveness of sins and leading up to this gate) in vain;' because, having come to this condition, they refuse or neglect to avail themselves of the 'one hope of our calling.'" *F154*

LOSING SECOND STEP OF GRACE

"Quite a large number...rest...upon the fallacy that if they have once been made the object of divine grace, it means perpetual grace, to all eternity and insures their salvation despite anything they may afterward do or leave undone." *R2286:2*

HEB. 6:4-6: "For ***it is*** impossible for those who were once enlightened, and have tasted of the heavenly gift, and were made partakers of the Holy Spirit, And have tasted the good word of God, and the powers of the world [Greek, age] to come, If they shall fall away, to renew them again unto

repentance; seeing they crucify to themselves the Son of God afresh, and put *him* to an open shame."

HEB. 10:26-29: "For if we sin wilfully after that we have received the knowledge of the truth, there remaineth no more sacrifice for sins, But...of judgment and fiery indignation, which shall devour the adversaries. He that despised Moses' law died without mercy

under two or three witnesses. Of how much sorer punishment, suppose ye, shall he be thought worthy, who hath trodden under foot the Son of God, and hath counted the blood of the covenant, wherewith he was sanctified, an unholy thing, and hath done despite unto the Spirit of grace?"

1 JOHN 5:16: "...There is a sin unto death: I do not say that he shall pray for it."

"It will be useless to pray...for those who commit the sin unto death. That sin is described...as being...against the **Holy Spirit**... not undesignedly nor ignorantly, but the result of persistence in that which in the beginning, at least, was clearly recognized as wrong; but which, through self-will persisted in...became a gross deception — the Lord giving over the wilful ones to the error which they preferred to the truth." *F165*

2 THES. 2:10-12: "And with all deceivableness of unrighteousness in them that perish; because they received not the love of the truth, that they might be saved. And for this cause God shall send them strong delusion, that they should believe a lie: That they all might be damned [judged — *Diag*.] who believe not the truth, but had pleasure in unrighteousness."

See also Index: **Second Death.**

"The sin unto death in the present time could be committed only by those who have tasted of divine grace...." *R2286:6*

"Mark our Lord's words....Speaking to those who had already received the grace of God and had already become...,branches in the true vine...." *R2286:6*

JOHN 15:1,2,6: "I am the true vine, and my Father is the husbandman. Every branch in me that beareth not fruit, he taketh away....If a man abide not in me, he is cast forth as a branch, and is withered; and men gather them and cast *them* into the fire, and they are burned."

ACCORDING TO OUR WILL

"As by our own will...we placed our hands in the hand of our Lord for guidance, and submitted our wills to his will, to be dead to ourselves and alive to our God, so by the same will...we may withdraw ourselves and break our covenant and do despite to the spirit of grace, and bring upon ourselves all the loss which this would entail...." *R2287:2*

"Once in grace under divine protection...means *always in grace until we shall have done despite to the spirit of favor,* by sinning deliberately, repudiating either the Lord or his Word or its Spirit...." *R2287:1*

2 PET. 2:20-22: "For if after they have escaped the pollutions of the world through the knowledge of the Lord and Savior Jesus Christ, they are again entangled therein, and overcome, the latter end is worse with them than the beginning. For it had been better for them not to have known the way of righteousness, than, after they have known *it*, to turn from the holy commandment delivered unto them. But it is happened unto them according to the true proverb, The dog is turned to his own vomit again; and the sow that was washed to her wallowing in the mire."

2 PET. 3:17: "Ye therefore beloved, seeing ye know *these things* before, beware lest ye also, being led away with the error of the wicked, fall from your own steadfastness."

1 COR. 9:24,27: "Know ye not that theywhich run in a race run all, but one receiveth the prize? So run, that ye may obtain. But I keep under my body, and bring it into subjection: lest that by any means, when I have preached to others, I myself should be a castaway."

REV. 2:10: "Fear none of those things which thou shalt suffer: behold the devil shall cast *some* of you in prison, that ye may be tried; and ye shall have tribulation ten days: be thou faithful unto death, and I will give thee a crown of life."

MATT. 10:22: "And ye shall be hated of all men for my name's sake: but he that endureth to the end shall be saved."

JUDE 21: "Keep yourselves in the love of God, looking for the mercy of our Lord Jesus Christ unto eternal life."

REV. 20:6: "Blessed and holy *is* he that hath part in the first resurrection: on such the second death hath no power, but they shall be priests of God and of Christ, and shall reign with him a thousand years."

PHIL. 2:12: "Wherefore, my beloved, as ye have always obeyed, not as in my presence only, but now much more in my absence, work out your own salvation with fear and trembling."

2 TIM. 2:11-13: "*It is* a faithful saying: For if we be dead with *him*, we shall also live with *him*: If we suffer, we shall also reign with *him*: if we deny *him*, he also will deny us: If we believe not, *yet* he abideth faithful: he cannot deny himself."

See also Index: **Grace, Free**; *F302; 165, par. 2 - 168 par. 1*

"...aside from those who,...go into the Second Death, there is yet another class...failing to make their calling and election sure....the 'Great Company.'..." *F168*

See also Index: **Great Company.**

GREAT COMPANY OR MULTITUDE

DEFINITION: Greek: *polus*: Multitude: many, numerous — *Young's*

Great: "Large in number, quantity, etc.; numerous: as, a great company" — *Webster's New World Dictionary.*

Company: "A group of people" — *Webster's New World Dictionary*

REV. 7:9-17: "After this I beheld, and, lo, a great multitude, which no man could number, of all nations, and kindreds, and people, and tongues, stood before the throne, and before the Lamb clothed with white robes, and palms in their hands; And cried with a loud voice, saying, Salvation to our God which sitteth upon the throne, and unto the Lamb. And all the angels stood round about the throne, and about the elders and the four beasts, and fell before the throne on their faces, and worshipped God, Saying, Amen: Blessing, and glory, and wisdom, and thanksgiving, and honour, and power, and might, be unto our God for ever and ever. Amen. And one of the elders answered, saying unto me, What are these which are arrayed in white robes? and whence came they? And I said unto him, Sir, thou knowest. And he said to me, These are they which came out of great tribulation, and have washed their robes, and made them white in the blood of the Lamb. Therefore, are they before the throne of God, and serve him day and night in his TEMPLE: and he that sitteth on the throne shall dwell among them. They shall hunger no more, neither thirst any more; neither shall the sun light on them, nor any heat. For the Lamb which is in the midst of the throne shall feed them, and shall lead them unto living fountains of waters: and God shall wipe away all tears from their eyes."

[Please note the contrast of the above with **REV. 21:3**: "And I heard a great voice out of heaven saying, Behold, the *tabernacle* of God is with men, and he will dwell with *them*, and they shall be his people, and God himself shall be with them, and be their God." *Diaglott*:"And I heard a loud Voice out of the THRONE, saying, 'Behold! the TABERNACLE of God is with MEN, and he will tabernacle with them, and they shall be his People, and GOD himself will be with them — their GOD.'" This text has to do with the world of mankind.]

"These, who love the present world, but who have not wholly forsaken the Lord and despised their covenant, receive a scourging and purifying by the fire of affliction. As the Apostle expresses it, 'they are delivered over to Satan for the destruction of the flesh, that the spirit (the newly begotten nature) may be saved in the day of the Lord

Jesus.' (1 Cor. 5:5) And if rightly exercised by the discipline, they will finally be received into the spiritual condition. They will have everlasting spiritual life as angels have it, but will lose the prize of immortality. They will serve God in his temple, and stand **before** the throne, having palms in their hands (Rev. 7:9-17); but though that will be glorious, it will not be so glorious as the position of the 'little flock' of overcomers, who will be kings and priests unto God, seated with Jesus **in the throne** as his bride and joint-heir, and with him crowned with immortality." *A214; F93*

HAVE AN ADVOCATE

"Question — Is Christ the Advocate for the 'great company,' as well as for the 'little flock?'

"Answer — Yes, The 'great company' is part of the church of the first-born." *R4761:1; R4601:6*

RESURRECTION OF GREAT COMPANY BEFORE THE ANCIENT WORTHIES

"Question — Will the ancient worthies have precedence of resurrection over the 'great company' class of the Gospel age?

"Answer — The merit of Christ is applied on behalf of....the 'great company' as...the 'little flock.'

"The 'great company' class will be resurrected before the ancient worthies will be brought forth." *R4667:4*

FOOLISH VIRGINS; PICTURE OF THE GREAT COMPANY

MATT. 25:1-13: "Then shall the kingdom of heaven be likened unto ten virgins, which took their lamps, and went forth to meet the bridegroom. And five of them were wise, and five were foolish. They that were foolish took their lamps, and took no oil with them: But the wise took oil in their vessels with their lamps. While the bridegroom tarried, they all slumbered and slept. And at midnight there was a cry made. Behold, the bridegroom **cometh** [omitted in *Vat.* and *Siniatic MSS.*]; go ye out to meet him. Then all those virgins arose, and trimmed their lamps. And the foolish said unto the wise, Give us of your oil; for our lamps are gone out. But the wise answered, saying, Not so; lest there be not enough for us and you: but go ye rather to them that sell, and buy for yourselves. And while they went to buy, the bridegroom came; and they that were ready went in with him to the marriage: and the door was shut. Afterward came also the other virgins, saying Lord, Lord, open to us. But he answered and said, Verily I say unto you, I know you not. Watch therefore, for ye know neither the day nor the hour wherein the Son of man cometh."

"In the parable the Lord does not tell what may happen to the foolish virgins; but other Scriptures show that they pass through a portion, at least, of the great time of trouble coming upon the world; and that when finally they are received of the Lord, it will not be as joint-heirs in the throne, but as honored servants of the bride." *R5523:5; F75; C91-94*

PSA. 45:14,15: "She shall be brought unto the king in raiment of needlework: the virgins her companions that follow her shall be brought unto thee. With gladness and rejoicing shall they be brought: they shall enter into the king's palace."

DESTRUCTION OF THE FLESH

1 COR. 5:5: "To deliver such a one unto Satan for the destruction of the flesh, that the spirit may be saved in the day of the Lord Jesus."

"Other Scriptures (Rev. 7:9, 13-17 and 1 Cor. 3:15) show us that there will be a 'great company' who during this age have entered the race for the grand prize of joint-heirship with Jesus, and who fail to 'so run' as to obtain it. These, though 'castaways,' as regards the prize (1 Cor. 9:27), are nevertheless objects of the Lord's love; for at heart they are friends of righteousness and not of sin. Hence, by his providences through the circumstances of life, the Lord will cause them to come through 'great tribulation,' thus accomplishing for them 'the destruction' of the flesh, that 'the

spirit may be saved in the day of the Lord Jesus.' (1 Cor. 5:5) They consecrated their justified human life, and God accepted that consecration and **reckoned** them, according to their covenant, dead as human beings and alive as **new** — spiritual — creatures. But, by their failure to carry out the contract of self-sacrifice, they cut themselves off from the 'Royal Priesthood' — from membership in the **Body** of Christ. 'Every branch **in me** that beareth not fruit, he taketh it away.' John 15:2." *T69*

"Not only will this be markedly accomplished shortly, with the last members of the 'scape-goat' class, but the same has been fulfilled to some extent throughout the entire Gospel age; for there has always been a class, and a large one, which yielded self-will to death only by **compulsion**; and, instead of willingly sacrificing, suffered '**destruction** of the flesh.' (1 Cor. 5:5) The classes represented by both goats have been developing side by side throughout the age." *T71*

1 COR. 3:15: "If any man's work shall be burned, he shall suffer loss: but he himself shall be saved; yet so as by fire."

"Those who made a covenant to sacrifice their lives in the service of the Lord, the truth and the brethren, and who on the strength of this were begotten of the Spirit to a spirit nature, and who subsequently neglected to fulfill their

covenant or vow, would be liable to the second death on this account; but in great mercy the Lord purposes to pass them through a 'great tribulation' and to accept as 'conquerors' those who will stand the tests of that time of trouble loyally." *R4273:6*

"Those who, though loving the Lord and righteousness, cling to the desires of the world and the flesh, and endeavor to drag these along in the race, are never satisfactory to the Lord nor to themselves. And they find 'the destruction of the flesh' a much more severe ordeal than its 'sacrifice' would have been; for the Lord's smile is upon those who joyfully sacrifice what they can in his service." *R1789:6*

SCAPE GOAT

LEV. 16:20-22: "And when he hath made an end of reconciling the holy *place*, and the tabernacle of the congregation, and the altar, he shall bring the live goat: And Aaron shall lay both hands upon the head of the live goat, and confess over him all the iniquities of the children of Israel, and all their transgressions in all their sins, putting them upon the head of the goat, and shall send *him* away by the hand of a fit man into the wilderness. And the goat shall bear upon him all their iniquities unto a land not inhabited: and he shall let go the goat in the wilderness."

"There we see in type how the 'great company' will be caused to pass through tribulation, which will have a good effect upon themselves and which will, at the same time, be the means of squaring up accounts for gross violations of Justice outside of Adamic sin." *R4856:2; R5462:5,6; T68-72; R4921:1*

"The one class follows precisely the experiences of the Lord, as the goat's experiences corresponded to those of the bullock; but the other class, typified by the scape-goat, is the great company, who, while making a full consecration of self-sacrifice in the same manner as do the little flock, hold back, neglect to lay down their lives sacrificially and experience therefore the destruction of the flesh, that the spirit may be saved in the day of the Lord Jesus." *R4035:6; R4036; R80:5,6*

SACRIFICE UNWILLING

"Those who hold back from such suffering, and who endure persecution unwillingly, and merely rather than deny the Lord, are the ones whom we may expect to find will pass through the great time of trouble, and be of the great company, who will wash their robes in the blood of the Lamb." *R3599:6*

REV 7:14 ***Diag.:*** "And I said to him, 'My Lord, thou knowest.' And he said to me, 'These are THOSE COMING out of the GREAT AFFLICTION, and they washed their ROBES, and whitened them in the BLOOD of the LAMB.'"

LACK OF LOVE AND ZEAL

"The difference between the two classes on account of which the one class gets the prize and the other class is 'saved as by fire' is that the overcomers have more zeal; they pay their consecration vows gladly. The tribulation saints fail to get the prize, because although consecrated lovers of the Lord, their love lacks the proper fervency to hold their lives constantly up to the point of self-sacrifice, where their own preferences would be yielded always and promptly to the Lord's." *R1669:2; R5532:6; R5532:3*

HEB. 2:15: "And deliver them who through fear of death were all their lifetime subject to bondage."

SPOTTED ROBES

JUDE 23: "And others save with fear, pulling *them* out of the fire; hating even the garment spotted by the flesh."

"Those not thus faithful are in a wrong condition, and spot after spot, wrinkle after wrinkle, coming to their robes, they become more or less careless, and especially as they see so many others in a similar condition." *R2783:1*

"This is the class which will be obligated to go through the great tribulation with which this age will close, to the intent that in that tribulation they may learn lessons which will be valuable to them to all eternity, and this learning of lessons is scripturally called 'washing their robes, and making them white in the blood of the Lamb.'" *R2962:1; R5669:5,6; R4615:6; R4616:1; R2783:1*

NO EARTHLY INHERITANCE

PSA. 45:14: "She shall be brought unto the king in raiment of needlework: the virgins her companions that follow her shall be brought unto thee."

"Thus, though the 'great company' will be the companions of the Bride, spiritual beings, (Psa. 45:14; Rev. 7:15) there will be a very great difference in the degrees of glory." *R458:1*

ISA. 66:7,8: "Before she travailed, she brought forth; before her pain came, she was delivered of a man child. Who hath heard such a thing? who hath seen such things? Shall the earth be made to bring forth in one day? *or* shall a nation be born at once? for as soon as Zion travailed, she brought forth her children."

"The after-born children of Zion constitute the 'great multitude that no man can number,' who 'wash their robes' and 'come up out of great tribulation,' who with palms stand 'before the throne,' in which the first-born, overcomers sit crowned....

"These two companies, as heretofore shown, are the only ones to whom the high calling of becoming sons of God on the spiritual plane is offered; the only ones begotten of the

Spirit, consequently, the only ones who could be born of the

Spirit." *R184:1,4*

See also *C191, 192; F121*

NOT TO SHARE IN THE FIRST RESURRECTION

"Those in the first resurrection will live and reign with Christ a thousand years. (Rev. 20:4-6) Therefore those of the great company will have no part whatever in the first resurrection." *R5105:2*

REV. 20:4-6: "And I saw thrones, and they sat upon them, and judgment was given unto them: and I *saw* the souls of them that were beheaded for the witness of Jesus, and for the word of God and which had not worshiped the beast, neither his image, neither had received *his* mark upon their foreheads, or in their hands; and they lived and reigned with Christ a thousand years. [The rest of verse 5 is omitted in the oldest manuscripts.] This is the first resurrection. Blessed and holy *is* he that hath part in the first resurrection: on such the second death hath no power, but they shall be priests of God and of Christ, and shall reign with him a thousand years."

NO CALL TO GREAT COMPANY

EPH. 4:4: "...Ye are all called in one hope of your calling."

"God has not during the Gospel age called some to the human plane and others to the 'little flock or crown wearers,' and others to the second class or 'great company of palm bearers.'" *R1046:4; R5924:5,6*

"All who have...accepted the invitation can if they will, make their calling and election sure, by...full, complete self-sacrifice in the service of the Lord and under his direction....The great company... **have not done what they could**,...are unwilling to sacrifice present comforts and interests by an open warfare on behalf of the truth....It is in vain that any profess great love, if when the Master and the truth are assailed... the...ambassadors shall keep quiet...for fear of some earthly disadvantage.

"Whoever then is begotten of the Spirit...if willingly he shall sacrifice his all,...may be as sure of the prize as any other one....

REV. 3:11: "...Hold that fast which thou hast, that no man take thy crown." *R1046:5*

PICTURED BY THE LEVITES

"Another class of believers...consecrate their all to the Lord...and thus demonstrate their worthiness to be of the antitypical Levites. But, alas, although they...come into the 'one hope of our calling,' and into all the privileges of the

elect, yet their love and zeal are not such as impel them to perform the sacrificing....These, because their love and faith are not intense enough, fail to put or to keep, their sacrifices on the altar; hence they cannot be counted full copies of our great High Priest,...thus fail to make their calling and election sure....

"However...it must be **demonstrated** that they at heart love the Lord and would not **deny him at any cost**, even though not faithful enough to court sacrifice in his service." *F126, 127*

See remainder of *Pages 127-129.*

"**Merari** signifies **bitterness**; hence, the **Merari** family of Levites would seem to represent the 'great company' of spirit-begotten ones who fail to win the prize...and are 'saved so as by fire,' coming up through 'great tribulation' and **bitter** experiences to the position...which they will occupy...." *F128*

ELISHA A POSSIBLE PICTURE

"While we are certain that Elijah typed the church of God in the flesh, we may not be quite so positive that Elisha was also a type and represented a secondary class of God's people, referred to in the Bible sometimes as the 'foolish virgin' class, sometimes, as the servants of the bride class, who will follow her, sometimes as a great company whose number no man knows, who will come through great tribulation and attain a place before the throne, failing to attain with the Elijah class a place in the throne as joint heirs with Christ. MATT. 25:1-13; PSA. 45:14,15; REV. 7:9-17.

"The sons of the prophets may also be types. If so they would seem to represent a third class, acquainted with Elijah and Elisha, yet not particularly associated with them...." *R5771:6; R5772:1*

"The Lord did not say that the church would be glorified before the conclusion of the Gentile times....not disconcerted. Bible students are going on even as Elijah and Elisha went on after crossing the Jordan. They are not, however, headed for any particular date, even as Elijah was not directed to go to any other place....

"As they two went on, behold, a chariot of fire parted them asunder...." *R5772:6*

"Of late we have been thinking considerably of what took place when Elijah and Elisha came to the river Jordan. They stopped there and stood....Then Elijah took his mantle.....and smote the waters of Jordan. The waters divided...and the prophets went over....After they had crossed, they went on, talking together. They had received no further instruction from the Lord. They simply walked

on. Suddenly the chariot of fire appeared and separated them and Elijah was taken away...by a whirlwind.

CHARIOT OF FIRE TO MAKE SEPARATION

"What does this signify...? We think that it signifies a division between the little flock and the great company." *R5845:3*

See also *Q626 (Page 625, ques. 2)*

[The Great Company] "are of the class 'called to be saints,' but who fail to make their calling and election to joint-heirship with the Lord, as members of the kingdom 'little flock.'" *R2481:1*

SCRIPTURES REFERRING TO GREAT COMPANY

PSA. 45:14: "the virgins her companions that follow her shall be brought unto thee."

ISA. 66:8: "as soon as Zion travailed she brought forth her children."

"The after-born children of Zion constitute the 'great multitude that no man can number.'" *R184:1*

JER. 8:20: "The harvest is past, the summer is ended, and we are not saved."

EZEK. 44:10: "The Levites that are gone away from me."

EZEK. 44:14: "I will make them keepers of the charge of the house, for all the service thereof, and for all that shall be done therein."

MATT. 25:2,3: "Five of them were wise and five were foolish. They that were foolish took their lamps, and took no oil with them."

"In the parable the Lord does not tell what may happen to the foolish virgins; but other scriptures show that they pass through a portion, at least, of the great time of trouble coming upon the world; and that when finally they are received of the Lord it will not be as his joint-heirs in the throne, but as honored servants." *R5523:5*

LUKE 19:22: "Out of thine own mouth will I judge thee, thou wicked servant."

"They will ultimately gain everlasting life on the spirit plane, but will be quite inferior to the bride class." *R5493:2*

1 COR. 3:12: "...if any man build upon this foundation... wood, hay, stubble..."

1 COR. 3:15: "If any man's work shall be burned, he shall suffer loss: but he himself shall be saved; yet so by fire."

"They will indeed lose the great prize — the highest blessing — the kingdom; but because they still remain

servants and have a love for righteousness they will be saved so as by fire." *R5493:2*

1 COR. 5:5: "To deliver such an one to Satan for the destruction of the flesh, that the spirit may be saved in the day of the Lord Jesus."

"In great mercy the Lord purposes to pass them through a 'great tribulation' and to accept as 'conquerors' those who will stand the tests of that time of trouble loyally." *R4274:1*

2 TIM. 2:20: "...some to honor and some to dishonor."

"There are many vessels in the house of the King — some to more honor and some to less honor." *R5493:3*

HEB. 2:15: "And deliver them who through fear of death were all their lifetime subject to bondage."

JUDE 23: "And others save with fear, pulling them out of the fire; hating even the garment spotted by the flesh."

"They are not divested of that robe of justification." *R5669:6*

REV. 7:9: "and, lo, a great multitude, which no man could number, of all nations, and kindreds, and people, and tongues, stood before the throne, and before the Lamb, clothed with white robes, and palms in their hands."

"They receive palm branches, signifying victory." *R5533:4*

REV. 7:14,15: "These are they which came out of great tribulation, and have washed their robes, and made them white in the blood of the Lamb. Therefore are they before the throne of God, and serve him day and night in his temple."

"Their robes will not be taken from them, but they will be obliged to suffer great tribulations, with the view to making them ready to wash and make their robes white in the blood of cleansing, so that they, also, will be clothed in white and in their resurrection bodies will be pure." *R5669:6*

GREAT COMPANY A SPIRIT CLASS

PSA. 45:14: "...the virgins her companions that follow her shall be brought unto thee."

"For the 'Great Company' the perfection on a plane somewhat corresponding to that of angels." *F121*

ISA. 66:8: "...as soon as Zion travailed, she brought forth her children."

"The 'great multitude' of Zion's children will be born after her travail — come up to glory through great tribulation." *R184:1*

EPH. 4:4: "...one body, and one Spirit, even as ye are called in one hope of your calling."

"The only class into which these (consecrated ones) can come for future life is that of spirit or heavenly beings." *R5138:1*

HEB. 12:23: "To the general assembly and church of the firstborn, which are written in heaven."

"Thus we see that the church of the firstborns includes the 'Great Company' of Levites as thoroughly as it includes the smaller company of the Priests." *R4823:5*

JAS. 1:18: "Of his own will begat he us with the word of truth, that we should be a kind of firstfruits of his creatures."

"There will be a large company of saintly people who will come through 'great tribulation,' 'will wash their robes and make them white in the blood of the Lamb,' and attain the spirit nature. These also will be a part of the first-fruits of God to the spirit nature — all on the spirit plane." *R4999:1*

REV. 7:9: "After this I beheld, and, lo, a great multitude, which no man could number, of all nations, and kindreds, and people, and tongues, stood before the throne and before the Lamb."

"The 'great company' of Rev. 7:9 will be spiritual, heavenly, and not an earthly or restitution class." *R2067:4*

REV. 7:15: "Therefore are they before the throne of God."

"They, begotten of the holy Spirit like the church, will also be spirit beings if found worthy of life." *R5232:6*

TYPES AND FIGURES OF THE GREAT COMPANY

GEN. 15:5: "Look now toward heaven, and tell the stars, if thou be able to number them: and he said unto him, So shall thy seed be."

"Since the 'great company' will be spiritual, heavenly, and not an earthly or restitution class, it would properly be included in the star figure." *R2067:4*

GEN. 19:15: "And when the morning arose, then the angels hastened Lot."

"Lot seems to represent a class in the end of the present age...who seek not chiefly the kingdom and its righteousness; but who for the sake of earthly advantages are quite willing to risk their spiritual interests...by choosing fellowship with the world." *R2857:6*

GEN. 24:61: "And Rebekah arose, and her damsels...and followed the man."

"This is the class which follows the Bride company as Rebekah's maids followed her." *R428:4*

GEN. 27:34: "And when Esau heard the words of his father, he cried with a great and exceeding bitter cry."

"They are like Esau of old, selling their birthright (as new creatures in Christ Jesus) for a mess of pottage." *R2160:5*

GEN. 35:18: "...his father called him Benjamin."

"According to this picture Benjamin, the son of pain, would represent the great company of the Lord's people, who will come up out of great tribulation to a higher plane, to a higher condition, to a higher blessing than the remainder of the world." *R5232:6*

LEV. 10:1: "And Nadab and Abihu, the sons of Aaron, took either of them his censer, and put fire therein, and put incense thereon, and offered strange fire before the Lord."

"Abihu signifies Son of God. The Great Company, like the Little Flock, are begotten of the holy Spirit — sons of God on a spirit plane, though not on the divine plane." *R4031:2*

LEV. 16:10: "But the goat, on which the lot fell to be the scapegoat, shall be presented alive before the Lord, to make an atonement with him."

"The scape-goat represents the less faithful of the Church, the 'great company,' the antitypical Levites." *R4427:5*

LEV. 16:21: "And Aaron shall lay both his hands upon the head of the live goat, and confess over him all the iniquities of the children of Israel, and all their transgressions in all their sins, putting them upon the head of the goat, and shall send him away by the hand of a fit man into the wilderness."

"This class, represented in the scape-goat, will be sent into the wilderness condition of separation from the world, forced there by the 'man of opportunity' — unfavorable circumstances." *T70*

"What they shall suffer of the iniquities of the world will mean that much less for others in that day of trouble." *R4428:6*

LEV. 23:17: "Ye shall bring out of your habitations two wave loaves of two tenth deals...."

"The two loaves represented, therefore, the two classes of the consecrated...the overcoming 'little flock' and the 'great company.'" *R2271:1*

NUM. 3:6: "Bring the tribe of Levi near, and present them before Aaron the priest, that they may minister unto him."

"...the 'great company,' typed in the ordinary Levites, will not be in the throne, but serve before the throne." *R4677:6*

NUM. 13:31: "But the men that went up with him said, We be not able to go up against the people; for they are stronger than we."

"The majority, the great company, hold back, fail to appropriate the promises, fail to trust the Lord." *R4046:4*

1 KINGS 18:3: "Now Obadiah feared the Lord greatly."

"We rejoice also with the believers, the partially consecrated ones, represented by Obadiah." *R3401:5*

2 KINGS 2:1: "And it came to pass, when the Lord would take up Elijah into heaven by a whirlwind, that Elijah went with Elisha from Gilgal."

"Apparently Elisha would represent a consecrated class of this time, in some respects inferior (to the Elijah class)." *R3416:4*

PSA. 45:14: "...the virgins her companions that follow her."

ISA. 66:8: "...as soon as Zion travailed she brought forth her children."

EZEK. 44:10,11: "And the Levites that are gone away far from me when Israel went astray, away from me after their idols; they shall even bear their iniquity. Yet they shall be ministers in my sanctuary, having charge at the gates of the house and ministering to the house: they shall slay the burnt offering and the sacrifice for the people, and they shall stand before them to minister unto them."

DAN. 5:2: "Belshazzar, whiles he tasted the wine, commanded to bring the golden and silver vessels which his father Nebuchadnezzar had taken out of the temple which was in Jerusalem."

"The golden vessels representing the 'little flock' and the more numerous silver vessels representing the 'great company.'" *R2498:6*

ZECH. 13:8: "And it shall come to pass, that in all the land, saith the Lord, two parts therein shall be cut off and die."

"The little flock of self-sacrificers and the 'great company' of Rev. 7:14." *R3776:2*

MAL. 3:3: "And he shall sit as a refiner and purifier of silver: and he shall purify the sons of Levi, and purge them as gold and silver."

"All of the silver class will be purified, the great company." *R3684:5*

MATT. 25:3: "They that were foolish took their lamps, and took no oil with them."

"When finally they are received of the Lord, it will not be as his joint-heirs in the throne, but as honored servants of the bride." *R5523:5*

HEB. 12:23: "To the general assembly and church of the first-born, which are written in heaven."

"'The church of the first-borns' will consist of two classes, a 'little flock' of priests and a 'great company' of the 'household of faith' and typical Levites who will serve." *R4677:6*

SUFFERINGS OF THE GREAT COMPANY

LEV. 16:21: "And Aaron shall lay both his hands upon the head of the live goat, and confess over him all the iniquities of the children of Israel, and all their transgressions in all their sins, putting them upon the head of the goat, and shall send him away by the hand of a fit man into the wilderness."

"God has made provision...so far as all the other sins of the world are concerned, through the great company class." *R5256:5*

"The putting of the hands of the high priest upon the head of the scapegoat pictures the placing of these sins upon the 'great company' class and the sending of them into tribulation." *R4856:2*

LUKE 11:50: "That the blood of all the prophets, which was shed from the foundation of the world, may be required of this generation."

"They will suffer for the sins of others." *R4274:1*

"The arrangement seems to be that these will go into death in a kind of substitutionary way, as an offset to some of the trespasses of those who did violence to the members of the body of Christ throughout the age." *R4652:2*

LUKE 12:47: "And that servant, which knew his lord's will, and prepared not himself, neither did according to his will, shall be beaten with many stripes."

"The intimation is that those who are not faithful enough to get into the little flock will come into this condemnation with the world. So the Lord tells us of some who will get their portion with the hypocrites." *R5256:4* **MATT. 24:51**: "And shall cut him asunder, and appoint him his portion with the hypocrites: there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth." GREAT COMPANY WILL BE OVERCOMERS **REV. 3:5**: "He that overcometh, the same shall be clothed in white raiment; and I will not blot out his name out of the book of life." "The Great Company described in our lesson will be overcomers; else they would never get any part in the everlasting blessings which the Lord is about to dispense now, at his second advent, when all of his faithful will be received

to the heavenly home, the Father's House." *R5865:1* CAUSES OF FALLING INTO GREAT COMPANY

ECCL. 5:4: "When thou vowest a vow unto God, defer not to pay it." "That which they refused to give voluntarily will be taken away from them." *R5056:2* **MATT. 6:24**: "Ye cannot serve God and Mammon." "There can be no middle course so far as God is concerned...our service must be undivided." *R5344:6* **MARK 4:19** : "And the cares of this world, and the deceitfulness of riches, and the lusts of other things entering in, choke the word, and it becometh unfruitful." **LUKE 14:33**: "So likewise, whosoever he be of you that forsaketh not all that he hath, he cannot be my disciple." **LUKE 21:34**: "Take heed to yourselves, lest at any time your hearts be overcharged with surfeiting and drunkenness and cares of this life." **GAL. 6:8**: "For he that soweth to his flesh shall of the flesh reap corruption." "Whoever, therefore, sows a little to the flesh will reap accordingly." *R5665:6* **1 TIM. 6:10**: "For the love of money is the root of all evil: which while some coveted after, they have erred from the faith, and pierced themselves through with many sorrows." "How many have the love of money...the root of all evil, which some coveting after have stumbledand pierced themselves through with many sorrows." *R4022:6* **JAS. 1:8**: "A double-minded man is unstable in all his ways." "The double mind is the compromising disposition." *R2335:6* **JAS. 4:3,4**: "Ye ask, and receive not, because ye ask amiss, that ye may consume it upon your lusts. Ye adulterers and adulteresses, know ye not that the friendship of the world is enmity with God?" "They partially lose sight of the prize set before us, and try to walk upon a middle road." *A214* **HEB. 2:15**: "...who through fear of death were all their lifetime subject to bondage." "They fear that sacrificial death." *R5270:2* **1 JOHN 2:16**: "For all that is in the world, the lust of the flesh, and the lust of the eyes, and the pride of life, is not of the Father, but is of the world." "...the worldly desires." *R2154:1* **1 PET. 2:11**: "Abstain from fleshly lusts, which war against the soul.

HARVEST

"**Harvest**:" Greek, *therismos,* "**reaping**," i.e., "**the crop**;" **harvest** — *Strong's Concordance*; **reaping** — *Young's Concordance* **MATT. 13:39**: "...The harvest is the end of the age...." "This brief period is the most momentous and eventful period of the entire age; for in it all the fruitage of the [entire] age must be gathered and disposed of, and the field, which is the world (Matt. 13:38), must be cleared, plowed, and prepared for another sowing and reaping time — the

Millennial age..." *C121* THE PARABLE **MATT. 13:24-30**: "...The kingdom of heaven is likened unto a man which sowed good seed in his field: but while men slept, his enemy came and sowed tares among the wheat, and went his way. But when the blade was sprung up, and brought forth fruit, then appeared the tares also. So the servants of the householder came and said unto him, Sir, didst not thou sow good seed in thy field? from whence then hath it tares? He said unto them, An enemy hath done this. The servants said unto him, Wilt thou then that we go and gather them up? But he said, Nay; lest while ye gather up the tares, ye root up also the wheat with them. Let both grow together until the harvest: and in the time of harvest I will say to the reapers, Gather ye together first the tares, and bind them in bundles to burn them: but gather the wheat into my barn." THE EXPLANATION **MATT. 13:37-43**: "...He that soweth the good seed is the Son of man; The field is the world; the good seed are the children of the kingdom; but the tares are the children of the wicked *one*; the enemy that sowed them is the devil; the harvest is the end of the world [age]; and the reapers are....angels [messengers]. As therefore the tares are gathered and burned in the fire; so shall it be in the end of this [the] world [age]. The Son of man shall send forth his angels [messengers], and they shall gather out of his kingdom all things that offend [stumbling blocks, *Young*; seducers, *Diag.*], and them which do iniquity; And shall cast them into a furnace of fire: there shall be wailing and gnashing of teeth." A HARVEST OF THE CHURCH "This is...a harvesting of...the true Church of Christ, and such as are more or less associated with it — 'Christendom.'" *C121* THE WORLD IN IGNORANCE: TRUE CHRISTIANS ENLIGHTENED "While the world...will be in total ignorance of its character, yet in...fear of the outcome of its strange events (Isa.28:21: 'For The LORD shall rise up as *in* mount Perazim, he shall be wroth as *in* the valley of Gibeon, that he may do his work; and bring to pass his act, his strange act.'), the Lord's...consecrated followers...enjoy greater enlightenment than was ever the privilege of any of their forerunners; for...all the rays of prophetic testimony reach

a grand focus, illuminating to the eye of faith the plan of God, including its developments, past, present, and future." *C122*

PURPOSE OF THE HARVEST

"...like its Jewish type, the present harvest is a time for reaping the professed church (so-called Christendom), that

the true saints gathered out of it may be exalted and associated with their Lord, not only to preach the truth, but also to put into operation the great work of restitution for the world." *C136*

WHEAT AND TARES

"The wheat are the true children of the kingdom, the truly consecrated...The tares are nominally but not really, Christ's

church....(the tares more numerous)....By attending religious services...,by calling themselves Christians, by following certain rites and ceremonies, and by being identified...with some religious system, the tares...sometimes pass for God's heart- consecrated children....During the Gospel age our Lord's instructions have been not to attempt a separation of the true from the imitation....until the harvest...." *C136; C137*

THE "SICKLE"

"The truth now due is the sickle...." *C139*

BUNDLING — THE TARES

"The wheat was not to be bundled: the grains were...planted separate and independent, to associate only as one kind, under similar conditions. But....one of the effects of the harvest will be to gather and bind the tares in bundles before the 'burning.'..." *C140*

NOT LITERAL BURNING

"It is a mistake...to suppose that the burning of the tares...refers either to a literal fire, or to trouble beyond the present life....This fire...symbolizes the **destruction** of the tares....

"Nor does the destruction of the tares imply the destruction...of all the **individuals**....It signifies rather a destruction of the false pretention of this class....When burned...as tares, they will be recognized...as members of the world, and will no longer imitate Christians, as nominal members of Christ's church." *C145, 146*

TARES — HOW SOWN

"False doctrines begat false aims and ambitions...and led many to Satan's service, to sow errors of doctrine and practice which have brought forth tares abundantly." *C146*

HARVEST PARALLELS

"All the time features connected with the Jewish harvest (though they sometimes indirectly related to the faithful) had their direct bearing upon the great nominal mass, and marked periods of its trial, rejection,...and destruction as a...church-nation. Thus, the Lord, as bridegroom and reaper, came (A.D. 29)...to the entire mass." *C150*

JOHN 1:11: "He came unto his own, and his own received him not."

"...the grains of ripe wheat...were few....three and a half years later (A.D.33), our Lord assumed the office of King, and permitted...that the people should...hail him King,...The parallel,...points to 1874 as the time of our Lord's second presence as Bridegroom and Reaper, and to 1878 as the time when he began to exercise his office of King of kings and Lord of lords in very deed...." *C150*

THE CHAFF REJECTED

"The first work of the typical King was to reject the entire church-nation of Israel...." *C150*

MATT. 23:37-39: "O Jerusalem, Jerusalem, thou that killest the prophets, and stonest them which are sent unto thee, how often would I have gathered thy children together, even as a hen gathereth her chickens under her wings, and ye would not! **Behold, your house is left unto you desolate**. For I say unto you, Ye shall not see me henceforth, till ye shall say, Blessed is he that cometh in the name of the Lord."

GOSPEL HARVEST PARALLELS

"...at the parallel point of time,...1878, mystic Babylon,...Christendom....was cut off; and there went forth the message..." *C152*

REV. 18:2-4: "Babylon the great is fallen.... come out of her **my people**, that ye be not partakers of her sins, and that ye receive not of her plagues."

A SIFTING TIME

MATT. 6:23: "...if...the light that is in thee be [come] darkness, how great is that darkness!"

"'The harvest' is a time for winnowing the wheat — a sifting, a separating time, and it is for each of us to prove our character.

EPH. 6:13: "...'Having done all,...stand.'

"The tests of this 'harvest' must be like those of the Jewish or typical 'harvest.' One of them is *the cross*, another is the *presence of Christ*, another is *humility*, another is *love*. The Jews were reproved because they 'knew not the *time of their visitation.*' (Luke 19:44) The matter is doubly distressing for those who have once seen the light of Present Truth and afterward go into the 'outer darkness.'...It implies unfaithfulness." *Manna, August 9; R3437:4*

THE HARVEST NOT YET ENDED

"The work of harvest has progressed and is still progressing — even though at one time we supposed that the Harvest

work would have been fully accomplished with the ending of the Times of the Gentiles. That was merely a supposition, which proved to be without warrant, for the thrusting in of the sickle of Truth and the gathering in of the ripe grain has been progressing since October 1914 as never before. Indeed the great World War has awakened humanity in a remarkable degree, and more independent thinking is being done than ever before. All this contributes to the breaking of the shackles of ignorance, superstition, and prejudice, and the freeing of those who desire to know and to do the Lord's will and to walk in the footsteps of Jesus.

"We are glad for further opportunities of service to our great King in the gathering of the Elect to Himself, to the Truth. We are glad to see others coming into the Truth and preparing for the 'Wedding.' Evidently the 'door' is not yet shut...." *Ci*

THE REAPED TO BECOME REAPERS

"If you would be one of the overcoming saints, you must now....thrust in the sickle of truth." *C183*

JEWISH AND CHRISTIAN HARVEST PARALLELS

JEWISH— CHRISTIAN— NOMINAL NOMINAL CHURCH CHURCH

A.D. 29-33 A.D. 1874-1878

They knew not the time of their visitation

A.D. 33-36 A.D. 1878-1881

The Most Holy anointed, divine favor prolonged for three and a half years to complete the 70 weeks of favor promised to Israel, their rejection being deferred.

A.D. 36-73 A.D. 1881-1918

"Because of the overspreading of abomination, he shall make it desolate, even until the consummation or utter destruction — until all that God has predetermined shall be accomplished. Dan. 9:24-27.

"No parallels as between the Pentecostal church and the true church now are to be looked for. But the resurrection of Jesus before the church harvesting began may well be considered to have its parallel here in the resurrection of the sleeping members of the church — 1878 A.D.

"We should not have looked for parallelisms between the starting of the Gospel Church and its experiences, and the starting in this harvest time of the heavenly church and its experiences. These are no part to the parallel. The parallel belongs to the nominal Jewish system, which went to

destruction, and to the nominal Gospel church, which is now going to destruction.

"We imagined that the harvest work of gathering the church would be accomplished before the end of the Gentile Times; but nothing in the Bible so said. Our thought was purely an inference, and now we see that it was an unjustified one. This harvest work belongs to the new dispensation and cannot be identified with the old. Anyway, the harvesting of the Jewish age, gathering 'Israelites indeed' into the Gospel church, did not close with A.D. 70, but progressed in various parts of the world thereafter. Quite a good many Jews, doubtless, profiting by their terrible experience, were all the better prepared to be gathered into the Gospel Garner after the destruction of their national polity. Similarly, we may expect that quite a good many will be gathered to the heavenly Garner, and we know of no time limit here." *R5950:5,6*

DAN. 9:24-27: "Seventy weeks are determined upon thy people and upon thy holy city, to finish the transgression, and to make an end of sins, and to make reconciliation for iniquity, and to bring in everlasting righteousness, and to seal up the vision and prophecy, and to anoint the most Holy. Know therefore and understand, that from the going forth of the commandment to restore and to build Jerusalem unto the Messiah the Prince shall be seven weeks, and threescore and two weeks: the street shall be built again, and the wall, even in troublous times. And after threescore and two weeks shall Messiah be cut off, but not for himself: and the people of the prince that shall come shall destroy the city and the sanctuary; and the end thereof shall be with a flood, and unto the end of the war desolations are determined. And he shall confirm the covenant with many for one week: and in the midst of the week he shall cause the sacrifice and the oblation to cease, and for the overspreading of abominations he shall make it desolate, even until the consummation, and that determined shall be poured upon the desolate."

"The three and a half years of Jesus' ministry were more a time of preparation of the apostles to be the instruments of the harvesting and sharpening preparation of the sickle of truth for the later work, which began at Pentecost. There was no 'garner' into which to gather the wheat prior to Pentecost." *R5950:5*

THE BURNING OF THE TARES

"In the parable of 'the Wheat and the Tares,' the Master puts very prominently the gathering of the tares and the binding of them in bundles for burning. We assumed that this burning would not take place until all the wheat had been gathered into the heavenly garner; but apparently this was an incorrect thought...." *R5951:1*

THE REAPING MESSAGE

"...the Lord's servants...should be 'giving meat in due season to the household of faith' scattering...the good tidings of the Kingdom at hand, and of the great joy and blessing it will soon bring to all people."

"...(this message of God's loving provision, in the ransom, for the restitution of all things, ...which should rejoice, refresh, and unite all loving hearts,)...is to develop and draw into heart-union the true class only, to test them and to separate them from the nominal mass." *C215; C216*

HARVEST IN 2 PARTS

REV. 14:14-19: "And I looked, and behold a white cloud, and upon the cloud one sat like unto the Son of man, having on his head a golden crown, and in his hand a sharp sickle. And another angel came out of the temple, crying with a loud voice to him that sat on the cloud, Thrust in thy sickle, and reap: for the time is come for thee to reap; for the harvest of the earth is ripe. And he that sat on the cloud thrust in his sickle on the earth; and the earth was reaped. And another angel came out of the temple which is in heaven, he also having a sharp sickle. And another angel came out from the altar, which had power over fire; and cried with a loud cry to him that had the sharp sickle, saying, Thrust in thy sharp sickle, and gather the clusters of the vine of the earth; for her grapes are fully ripe. And the angel thrust in his sickle into the earth, and gathered the vine of the earth, and cast *it* into the great winepress of the wrath of God."

JOEL 3:10: "Beat your plowshares into swords, and your pruninghooks into spears: let the weak say I *am* strong."

HARVEST OUTLINE

I. WHAT IS THE HARVEST? A. Object of B. Importance of C. Character of

II. THE THREE HARVESTS

A. Jewish Age B. Gospel Age

1. True Church a. Judgment begins at house of God b. Talents and Pounds c. Resurrection of Sleeping Saints d. Wise and Foolish Virgins e. Wedding Garment f. 11th Hour Workers g. Dark Night 2. Great Company 3. Nominal Church C. Millennial Age

III. MESSAGE OF HARVEST A. What Accomplishes the Separation? B. What Message Consists of

IV. TIME OF HARVEST A. Parallels—1st Advent/2nd Advent B. Chronology C. Time Prophecies Converge

I. WHAT IS THE HARVEST?

"Let both grow together until the harvest: and in the time of harvest I will say to the reapers, Gather ye together first the tares, and bind them in bundles to burn them: but gather the wheat into my barn." **MATT. 13:24-30, 36-43** (Quoted at beginning of topic.) (*R2276, 2633, 3769, 4635, C135*)

A. Object of

(a.) True Church

MATT. 13:30: "Gather the wheat into my barn."

MATT. 24:31: "He shall send his angels with a great trumpet, and they shall gather together his elect from the four winds, from one end of heaven to the other."

PSA. 50:5: "Gather my saints together unto me; those that have made a covenant with me by sacrifice." (*B194*)

(b.) Nominal Church

(c.) Tares Fruitage of Age

B. Importance of

"This brief period is the most momentous and eventful period of the entire age; for in it all the fruitage of the age must be gathered and disposed of...the importance of events of this harvest period can scarcely be over estimated." *C121*

"When we consider the great importance of these events, the stupendous dispensational changes which they introduce, the amount and character of the prophetic testimony which marks them...and how carefully we have been instructed...our hearts rejoice with joy unspeakable." *C130*

"We have no time for the ordinary converse. The time is short; the harvest work is great; the laborers are few; our time is consecrated; we must labor while it is called day, knowing that a night cometh wherein no man can work. We have consecrated our lives even unto death; we are commissioned of the great Lord of the harvest to seek for the true 'wheat,' and to gather it into the barn..." *R2675:1*

"This harvest, as illustrated by the natural, is the busiest time of all the age, because the time is short and the 'winter' is fast approaching. What is to be done must be

done quickly, and there is abundant room in the great field for every member of the body of Christ to reap." *R1743:6*

C. Character of

"A time of reaping rather than of sowing, a time of testing, of reckoning, of settlement and of rewarding." *C135*

"Coming out of Babylon is one step...by no means the last one...it will be followed by various other tests and opportunities for overcoming." *C188*

GAL. 5:1: "Be not entangled again with a yoke of bondage."

"Every wise virgin should appreciate this privilege of the present, both for his own intellectual sealing with the present truth, and also for engaging in the harvest work of sealing others of the wheat class and gathering them into the barn of security, before the night cometh and the door of opportunity to labor is shut." *C211*

II. THE THREE HARVESTS

A. Jewish Age — R1742, R2237, R2674

MATT. 3:12: "Whose fan is in his hand, and he will thoroughly purge his floor, and gather his wheat into the garner; but he will burn up the chaff with unquenchable fire."

JOHN 4:35: "Say not ye, There are yet four months, and then cometh harvest? behold, I say unto you, Lift up your eyes and look on the fields; for they are white already to harvest."

JOHN 4:38: "'I sent you to reap that whereon ye bestowed no labor: other men [the patriarchs and prophets and other holy men of old] labored, and ye are entered into their labors' to reap the fruits of those centuries of effort and to test that people by the message, 'the kingdom of heaven is at hand.'" See also MATT. 10:7 *C136*

"The harvest of the Jewish age being a type of the harvest of this age, observation and comparison of the various features of that harvest afford very clear ideas concerning the work to be accomplished in the present harvest. In that harvest, our Lord's special teachings were such as to gather the wheat...and to separate the chaff of the Jewish nation from the wheat." *C135*

"Difference in the two harvests was aptly illustrated by the Lord when he likened the Jewish nation to wheat and chaff, and his work there to a fan for blowing the chaff away — thus indicating the compactness of that people; while here his professed people are likened to wheat and tares, thus indicating their scattered and confused condition and the necessity of careful searching and gathering out." *R1743:3*

B. Gospel Age

1. True Church

(a). "Judgment must begin at the house of God" 1 PET. 4:17

(b). Talents — MATT.25:14-30 &

Pounds — LUKE 19:12-27

See *R1972, 2736, 5492*

MATT. 25:19: "After a long time the lord of those servants cometh, and reckoneth with them."

LUKE 19:15: "And it came to pass, that when he was returned, having received the kingdom, then he commanded these servants to be called unto him..."

"As shown in the parable illustrating it [the harvest] (Matt. 25:14-30) the first thing done by the Lord on his return is to call his servants and reckon with them." *C133*

"After having received the kingdom and returned, the first work of the nobleman (who represented our Lord Jesus) was reckoning with the servants (his Church) to whom his vineyard had been entrusted during his absence, and the rewarding of the faithful. And since...the dead in Christ will be reckoned with first, we may reasonably conclude that the rewarding of these took place as soon as our Lord, after his return, took unto himself his great power." *C233*

(c). Resurrection of Sleeping Saints

1 COR. 15:52: "At the last trump...the dead shall be raised incorruptible, and we shall be changed."

1 THES. 4:16,17: "For the Lord himself shall descend from heaven with a shout, with the voice of the archangel, and with the trump of God: and the dead in Christ shall rise first...then we which are alive and remain shall be caught up...to meet the Lord in the air."

"The Lord's dealings during this harvest will be first with the 'dead in Christ.'" *R2981:6*

(d). Wise and Foolish Virgins — MATT. 25:1-13 *C190-197*

"...testing and sifting...of the sanctuary class — the separation of overcomers from others...A testing and separation to take place in this class also — a separation of wise virgins, full of faith and fervent love and the spirit of prompt obedience, from foolish virgins, who allow their first love and fervency of spirit to cool and their faith and promptness of obedience consequently to abate." *C190*

(e). Wedding Garment — MATT. 22:2-14; *C197-205*

"Further testing of sanctuary class even among those who have heard and recognized the harvest message." (*C197*) "This shows both the character of the readiness required

and also the inspection of each individual." (*C198*) "A test of their

appreciation of the fact...that they are accepted to the feast, not in their own merit, solely, but primarily...by the merit of him who gave his life as their ransom price....” (*C199*) “Taking off the wedding garment by a rejection of the value of Christ’s ransom sacrifice first appeared in summer of 1878.” (*C202*)

(f). 11th Hour Workers — MATT. 20:1-16; *C223-225*

“The door of opportunity for doing and suffering in his service is not yet shut, the close of which will be indicated by the coming of the night in which no man can work.” *C224*

(g). Dark Night

JOHN 9:4: “The night cometh when no man can work.”

REV. 7:2,3: “...and he cried with a loud voice to the four angels, to whom it was given to hurt the earth and the sea, Saying, Hurt not the earth, neither the sea, nor the trees, till we have sealed the servants of God in their foreheads.” *B169; C165; C211; C303*.

AMOS 9:13: “Behold, the days come, saith the Lord, that the plowman shall overtake the reaper, and the treader of grapes him that soweth seed....”

“This time of trouble will overtake the reaping work and bring it to a close. But the time of trouble will go on, the plowman will keep on plowing, after all our efforts have ended in respect to the reaping...meantime, before this dark night fully sets in, we are to go right on with the work which the Lord has put into our hands.” *R5761:2*

See also: *B249-266* **“Elias Shall First Come”**

“The true Church, like its type, John the Baptist, will be unpopular and restrained of liberty, because of faithfulness in opposing and condemning error.” *B261*

“The Church...seems outlined in the closing pages of the lives of Elijah and John the Baptist...The beheading of the one, and the whirlwind and fiery chariot which bore away the other, probably indicate violence to the last members....It will probably be in an effort at self-preservation on the part of ‘Great Babylon’...that the work of truth-spreading will be stopped as detrimental to her system...at this juncture the Elijah class, persisting in declaring the truth to the last, will suffer violence, pass into glory and escape from the severest features of the great time of trouble coming.” *C231*

2. Great Company

REV. 7:14: “These are they which came out of great tribulation.”

“When the little flock shall have passed beyond the vail, there will still be the great company of the Lord’s people left here. Many of these will apparently continue in Babylon until the time of trouble shall cause Babylon to fall. And by the fall of Babylon these will be set free.” *R5383:2*

“We think there is good reason to believe that a considerable number who have made a consecration are still in Babylon...intimated in Rev. 19, where we are told that when Babylon falls the number of those released at that time will be a great multitude, that the voices of these will be ‘as the voice of many waters.’” *R5411:6*

“The earlier part of the judgment upon Christendom will be especially upon the antitypical sons of Levi, the silver class...we understand to be the great company, who are to come up out of the great tribulation....The fire of this great day shall try every man’s work.... 1 Cor. 3:11-15.” *R5442:5*

1 COR. 3:11-15: “For other foundation can no man lay than that is laid, which is Jesus Christ. Now if any man build up on this foundation gold, silver, precious stones, wood, hay, stubble: Every man’s work shall be made manifest: for the day shall declare it, because it shall be revealed by fire; and the fire shall try every man’s work of what sort is. If any man’s work abide which he hath built thereupon, he shall receive a reward. If any man’s work shall be burned, he shall suffer loss: but he himself shall be saved; yet so as by fire.”

Two classes born out of Zion

“In describing the birth of the ‘Man-child,’ The Christ, whose head was born more than eighteen hundred years ago, and the body of whom is now soon to be born, the Prophet Isaiah exclaims (chapter 66:7,8), ‘Before she travailed, she brought forth; before her pain came, she was delivered of a man child. Who hath heard such a thing? who hath seen such things? Shall the earth be made to bring forth in one day? or shall a nation be born at once? for as soon as Zion travailed, she brought forth her children.’ The especially marvelous thing that the Prophet here records is that a ‘man-child’ is to born out of Zion before Zion travails. This is a striking reference to the fact, elsewhere clearly taught, that the ripe ‘wheat’ of the Gospel church are to be separated from the unripe wheat and the ‘tares’ at the end of this age, that they are to be exalted and glorified before the burning, the consuming trouble shall come.

“This ‘man-child,’ then, is the little flock, the body of Christ, the true Zion. Out of nominal Zion will come this first-fruits class, before the nominal system will be overthrown; for she will die in her travail pains, and in dying, will bring forth her later children, the great company. In this great day of the Lord, nominal Zion will bring forth the man-child and these later children.

“‘Shall I bring to the birth and not cause to bring forth? saith the Lord. Shall I cause to bring forth and shut the womb? saith thy God.’ Ah, no! As surely as the Head was brought forth, so surely shall the body also be born. The birth shall certainly be completed. The great composite Christ shall come forth entire, not one member lacking — and before Zion’s travail has begun. But ‘who hath heard such a thing? Who hath seen such a thing?’ And so, after the man-child is delivered, the mother system will give birth, when her travail pains come on, to a great company of children! This great company is described in the Apocalypse as coming up out of ‘the great tribulation,’ and washing their robes, spotted and soiled, and making them white, ‘in the blood of the Lamb.’

“Following the birth of these two classes of the Lord’s people, will come the birth of the Jewish nation. They shall be awakened from the sleep of hades, in which as a nation they have been for over eighteen centuries. All this will take place in the early dawn of the day of Christ. O what rejoicing there will be! Fleshly Zion and spiritual Zion will rejoice together! Then soon the poor, chastened world will begin to join in the songs of praise to the God of all grace. What wonderful times are just before us! Though clouds and darkness for a brief time obscure the bright beams of the blessed Millennial dawning, soon the glorious ‘Sun of righteousness’ shall rise in splendor, and its beams will rapidly spread over all the earth, scattering the darkness of sin, dispelling the fogs of error and superstition and bringing the world in the light of the knowledge of the glory of God.” *R5574:5,6*

ISA. 66:7,8: “Before she travailed, she brought forth; before her pain came, she was delivered of a man child. Who hath heard such

a thing? who hath seen such things? Shall the earth be made to bring forth in one day? or shall a nation be born at once? for as soon as Zion travailed, she brought forth her children."

The church "...will have left such records of that Kingdom and its present and future work as will be most valuable information to the world and to the undeveloped and overcharged children of God, who, though consecrated to God, will have failed to so run as to obtain the prize." *C237*

3. Nominal Church

MATT. 13:30: "Gather ye together first the tares, and bind them into bundles to burn them."

JOEL 3:13: "Put ye in the sickle, for the harvest is ripe: come, get you down; for the press is full, the fats overflow; for their wickedness is great."

REV. 19:15: "And out of his mouth goeth a sharp sword that with it he should smite the nations; and he shall rule

them with a rod of iron; and he treadeth the winepress of the fierceness and wrath of Almighty God."

REV. 3:14-22 (esp. v. 15): "...because thou art lukewarm, and neither cold nor hot, I will spue thee out of my mouth..."

"The rejection of Babylon (Christendom) in 1878 was the rejection of the mass of professors — the host." *C180*

REV. 14:17-20: "...Thrust in thy sharp sickle, and gather the clusters of the vine of the earth; for her grapes are fully ripe. And the angel thrust in his sickle into the earth, and gathered the vine of the earth, and cast *it* into the great winepress of the wrath of God...."

"Divine power, not mere human energy, accomplishes this last work of the harvest, after the reaping and gathering of the wheat. The false vine, which has misappropriated the name Christian, is cast (when its iniquitous clusters are fully ripe) into the winepress of the wrath of God (the great time of trouble)." *D18*

"...burning of the tares has now been going on for some time; that is, some who have professed that they are Christians...will say, 'I am no saint....'" *R5761:5*

"The great fire of trouble with which this present age will end, and into which the 'tare' class of Christendom will be cast...it will completely consume all earthly governments and institutions and will overthrow churchianity. These will be consumed in the fire of anarchy." *R5443:3*

C. Millennial Age

MATT. 25:31-46: "Sheep and Goats"

"At the close of the Millennial Age there will be a 'Harvest' time, for sifting and separating amongst the billions of human beings then living, each of whom will have enjoyed a full opportunity of attaining perfection — the majority being loyal 'sheep' to be ushered into life-everlasting." (Reference unknown)

III. MESSAGE OF HARVEST

A. What Accomplishes the Separation?

"Present truth, harvest truth, is now the Lord's agency for testing and dividing." *C215*

"The truth now due is the sickle in this harvest...they will recognize his voice in the time of harvest, saying, 'Thrust in the sickle' of present truth, and 'gather my saints together unto me, those that have made a covenant with me by sacrifice.'" *C139*

"The scourge of small cords...represented the various truths used in the harvest among the temple class, to correct and prove and separate the unclean. The truths now manifest

reveal so clearly the perfect will of God, the import of full consecration to his service and narrowness of the way." *C189*

"The wise, with lamps (the Word of God) trimmed and burning, and with oil (the holy spirit) in their vessels (hearts)...will sit down with him at the marriage feast." *C191*

ISA. 28:17-19: "Judgment also will I lay to the line, and righteousness to the plummet: and the hail shall sweep away the refuge of lies, and the waters shall overflow the hiding place...."

"'Refuge of lies' swept away...In our Lord's parable of building a house upon the rock or upon the sand, he gives a forceful picture particularly of the tests to come upon Christendom at the close of this age...a fierce storm, a flood, with mighty winds beating upon the faith structure of his professed followers...and so we see it today...The mighty downpour of truth is now in progress throughout Christendom. The great storm is now raging." *R5443:4*

"Symbolic shaking and burning....The masses of Christians of all denominations...will be shaken...in faith...Only the true church...will remain unshaken....Let no one think that the shaking of the ecclesiastical heavens is ended. The Bible pictures the culmination as a sudden catastrophe which will awaken and set free all in Babylon who are the Lord's people..." *R5516,5517*

"Since the reapers are few, how necessary it is that the Lord should provide for the circulation of the harvest message...the Lord times the inventions of our day so as to provide for the necessity of this harvest work....The Lord does not wish his consecrated people...to congregate specially in special cities, states, but rather wills that they be scattered abroad, so that everywhere the truth shall be preached..." *R4337:4*

"There is a special work for the last members of the body to do on this side the veil, as important and as essentially a part of the Kingdom work as that of the glorified members on the other side the veil...the fellow-members who remain in the flesh are the agents of the Kingdom in publishing, by word, by pen, by books, by tracts the 'good tidings of great joy.'" *C236*

B. What Message consists of:

(limited to relation to harvest)

1. REV. 18:4

REV. 18:4: "...Come out of her, my people, that ye be not partakers of her sins, and that ye receive not of her plagues."

R5478 — How this message is to be given.

"The special work since AD 1878 has been the proclamation of the King's command, 'Come out of her...my people'...Rev. 18:4 'Depart ye, depart ye; go ye out from thence, touch no unclean thing; go ye out of the midst of her; be ye (the royal priesthood) clean, that bear the vessels of the LORD.' Isa. 52:11." *B240*

"The classes are to be marked and separated before the plagues come upon rejected, cast off Babylon. This knowledge is to be a sealing and a separating agent. The declaration is first made that 'Babylon is fallen' and plagues or punishments are coming upon her — before the command 'come out' based upon that knowledge." *C166*

"Hail represents truth put in a hard, forcible way; and 'a tempest of hail' indicates the destructive and forceful method which the Lord

will adopt...truth will batter down the old and long-established errors upon which the great systems of 'Christendom' have been built. The Lord has refrained from the separating of the wheat and tares until this time of harvest; now he will separate them...to all such who are still in Babylon as wheat in the midst of tares, he says, Rev. 18:4." *R1357*

"...these are now urged to come out of all these various systems; and the light of present truth is for the purpose of showing them where they are, and permitting them to renounce their allegiance to the human systems, and to declare their allegiance only to the one Head and to the one 'church which is his body' Rev. 18:4." *R2845:3*

"This message, 'come out of her, my people' is not to those who are still blind in Babylon; hence it is not the first message to be given out at the present time. The light, the truth, the divine plan of the ages,...let shine; the errors of Babylon on various points are to be shown, and how these are dishonoring to God...the voice of the truth, the voice of these facts will cry aloud to all who are truly the Lord's sheep, to separate themselves from such misrepresentation of the divine character and plan..." *R3884:4*

"If any, therefore, are in Babylon and do not hear the voice of the Lord now calling them out of this great apostate system, our plain inference is that they are not his true sheep...We who now have the light should hold up the Lord's message and point other Christians to the present condition of things, and let them hear the Lord and then make their decision." *R5697:5*

2. "Behold the Bridegroom"

"This is the announcement which we are now giving — 'Behold the Bridegroom' — present knocking gently with the prophecies to arouse the Virgins, not to arouse the world." *R2878:4*

"...announcing...that the harvest...is upon us, and that the Master is again present as the Chief Reaper — not in the flesh...but in power and great glory....He is inaugurating his reign of righteousness; his sickle of truth is separating; he is gathering together into oneness of heart and mind the ripe first-fruits of spiritual Israel; and soon that elect 'body' complete shall rule and bless the world. This announcement is here made...that the harvest, and all its attendent events, are now chronologically due, and coming to pass as foretold." *B166*

"The presence was one of the main points of testing there, and the cross was the other....So here, likewise, the presence of Christ, the 'harvest' in progress, and the rejection of the nominal mass of professors, stumble many...and again the cross of Christ becomes a test and a stone of stumbling or trial...." *B237, 241*

"...the Church — it does the predicted Elijah work 'in the spirit and power of Elijah' to the world, and announces our Lord's second advent in almost the same words which John used at the first advent: 'There standeth one among you whom ye know not...He it is who, coming after me, is superior to me....' John 1:26, 27." *B253*

"...the faithful children of God have often pointed out that union between the Church and the civil power is out of order...." parallel to John the Baptist's final message. *B261*

"Not only do we hear this testimony from a few of the Elijah class, now, but every one who is of the Elijah class will ere long be found proclaiming this message and engaging in the Elijah work." *B265*

"Our mission — those who see the present one — is to declare Him to the nominal church — the ripe wheat of which, we expect, will hear and recognize...John introduced him...so we announce him now to the Spiritual Israel as the Lord of life and King of Glory....Though you cannot see the 'reaper' you can see his work going on around you in the nominal church... recognition of the Lord's presence we understand to be the sanctifying and essential truth necessary to the perfecting of the saints now living, and ability to perceive it, the test of spiritual sight now, even as at the first advent." *R242:5*

"Here will be a million voices proclaiming throughout the nominal church (symbolic heavens) the great message of this present time; namely, the second presence of our Lord as the reaper of the harvest of the Gospel age, gathering the wheat into the 'garner' and destroying the tares...." *R2994:4*

"...our appointed work, to show forth the praises of our heavenly Bridegroom, to announce him to all, to make known to all the terms and conditions of his favor and to bear witness to his presence now in the harvest time of this age, that his fan is in his hand, that he will thoroughly

purge the threshing-floor of all chaff, that he will gather the wheat into the garner of his kingdom, and that the great majority of Christendom will soon enter the great time of trouble..." *R3713:4*

"...all the members of the body of Christ, the antitypical body of Moses, are permitted to have a share, as the Lord's representatives, in this work of declaring the fall of Babylon, the presence of the king, and the gathering together unto him of all who have made a covenant with him by sacrifice." *R3990:5*

"Message of Truth Making a Separation....the proclamation is now due, Behold, the king is at the door! This message has been going forth from the wise virgins for the last forty years, and has been separating the wise from the foolish. This work is now nearly finished...." *R5980:4*

3. ISA. 52:7

ISA. 52:7: "How beautiful upon the mountains are the feet of him that bringeth good tidings, that publisheth peace; that bringeth good tidings of good, that publisheth salvation; that saith unto Zion, Thy God reigneth!"

"These, the feet of Christ in the flesh — the feet of Elijah — announce the Kingdom. Isa. 52:7 To those who 'can receive it' we announce as at hand, the reign of the Christ glorified and likewise to those who 'can receive it' we have pointed out the foretold antitypical Elijah." *B254*

"These, with their message are clearly pointed out by the prophet Isaiah (52:7) as the 'feet' or last members of the body of Christ in the flesh, when he says:...'how beautiful upon the mountains (kingdoms) are the feet of him that bringeth good tidings of good, that publisheth salvation (deliverance); that saith unto Zion, Thy God reigneth. (The reign of Christ, which shall bring deliverance, first to Zion, and finally to all the groaning creation, is begun.) Thy watchmen shall lift up the voice: with the voice together shall they sing; for they shall see (clearly) eye to eye, when the Lord returneth unto Zion.'...the joy you have in proclaiming present truth, in saying unto Zion that the time is at hand for the setting up of the Kingdom, and in declaring that Immanuel's reign of righteousness, soon to be inaugurated, is to bless all the families of the earth...all who are of the 'feet' will be thus engaged in publishing these good tidings and in saying to Zion, 'Thy God reigneth!' The Kingdom of Christ is begun..." *C236,237*

PSA. 149:1-9: "PRAISE ye the LORD. Sing unto the LORD a new song, *and* his praise in the congregation of saints. Let, Israel rejoice in him that made him: let the children of Zion be joyful in their King. Let them praise his name in the dance: let them sing praises unto him with the timbrel and harp. For the LORD taketh pleasure in his people: he will beautify the meek with salvation. Let the saints be

joyful in glory: let them sing aloud upon their beds. *Let* the high *praises* of God be in their mouth, and a two-edged sword in their hand; To execute vengeance upon the heathen, *and* punishments upon the people; To bind their kings with chains, and their nobles with fetters of iron; To execute upon them the judgment written: this honour have all his saints. Praise ye the LORD." *See R5451*

"God's Message Given us Today. He has given us a message of the utmost importance to deliver to his professed people. We have been informed by the Lord that a great change is impending — that the lease of power to the Gentile nations is about to expire...the present religious systems of Christendom are to go down, that the rule of the present order is about to end, and that the dominion is about to be given 'to him whose right it is' to reign. The kingdoms of this world are about to 'become the kingdom of our Lord and of his Christ, and he shall reign forever and ever.' This message is not to be stated in a rude manner. But it is to be stated, nevertheless....So we are to tell forth this glorious message, we are to tell it in our actions, in our words, by printed page, by pictorial presentations to the eye, and in every way that the Lord shall give us the opportunity....Let us be faithful in proclaiming the message of our Lord, now due...whether others hear or forbear...let us speak his Word in meekness and love, leaving the results with our Great Chief Reaper, 'The day is at hand!'" *R5489,90*

4. Restitution of all Things

"Message of God's loving provision in the ransom for the restitution of all things...that is to develop and draw into heart-union the true class only, to test them and to separate them from the nominal mass." *C216*

5. ZEPH. 2:3

ZEPH. 2:3: "Seek meekness, seek righteousness; it may be that ye shall be hid in the day of the Lord's anger."

"...those who thus seek righteousness...will be the ones most ready to welcome our King, and his kingdom...when in this harvest time some fail to make their calling and election sure...the Lord will be pleased to select from among such penitent seekers of righteousness some as substitutes to complete his elect church." *R2564:5*

"The proclaiming of the day of vengeance belongs specially to this end of the age, and the whole commission applies to the entire church. The message concerning the day of vengeance is now due, and consequently is now being proclaimed by the 'feet' members of the Christ." *R1917:6*

"This latter part of the commission was not due until the harvest...and while the entire commission belongs to the whole body of the Anointed — the Christ, Head and body — the latter part must of necessity be declared by those

members of the body living in the last times — the harvest or end of the age, from AD 1874 to AD 1915." *R1715*

"We are to be comforters...of them that mourn in Zion...this is a work that the saints of today...are eminently qualified to do....

"The entire message as given in our text [Isa. 61:1-3] is now due to be proclaimed....

"Today the passage is due to be given as a whole. We are on the very eve of this great day of vengeance. We are now proclaiming in the words of the Prophet Zephaniah, 'The great day of the Lord is near; it is near and hasteth greatly, even the voice of the day of the Lord; the mighty men shall cry there bitterly. That day is a day of wrath, a day of trouble and distress, a day of wasteness and desolation, a day of darkness and gloominess, a day of clouds and thick darkness, A day of the trumpet and alarm against the fenced cities, and against the high towers. And I will bring distress upon men, that they shall walk like blind men, because they have sinned against the LORD: and their blood shall be poured out as dust, and their flesh as the dung. Neither their silver nor their gold shall be able to deliver them in the day of the LORD'S wrath; but the whole land shall be devoured by the fire of his jealousy.' Zeph. 1:14-18." *R5537:5*

"**ISA. 58:1,2**: 'CRY aloud, spare not, lift up thy voice like a trumpet, and show my people their transgression,...' The Lord's people of the present time...should...point out to Christendom of today, and especially to those who are the professed people of God, their errors; show them where they have deviated from God's Word, where their course is not in harmony with the Golden Rule...not be well to go about berating them...truth itself is to be the sword. It is a sharp two-edged sword, even the Word of God...God's true children should lift up their voice and cry aloud, and tell God's professed people their transgressions. The implication seems to be that there is a very special need of public expression on the matter of calling attention to the fact that there is a great deal of hypocrisy practiced in the name of religion..." *R5630,31*

IV. TIME OF HARVEST C121-134

A. Parallels — 1st Advent/2nd Advent

ISA. 8:14: "And he shall be for a sanctuary; but for a stone of stumbling and for a rock of offense to both the houses of Israel, for a gin and for a snare to the inhabitants of Jerusalem."

"The great nominal mass in both houses fail to recognize the visitation because overcharged and lukewarm, neglecting the command to take heed and watch....The fleshly house stumbled because they had made void the law

of God through giving attention to traditions, and so had not a proper conception of the manner and object of the first advent....The mass of nominal spiritual Israel are now stumbling over the same rock and for the same reason...neither house would stumble or fall over a rock not present. The Rock is now present, and nominal systems are stumbling. falling, and being broken to pieces...." *B241*

See also:

Parallel Dispensations *B201-245*

Chart: "Both the Houses of Israel" "Time Parallels" *B219*

"Review of Harvest Parallels" *B233*

Parallels of Jesus as Bridegroom, Reaper and King *B238*

Chart: "Both the Houses of Israel — Correspondencies of the Mosaic and Christian Dispensations" *B246,7*

Chart: "Both the Houses of Israel — Time Parallels" *C132*

Parallels of Reaping Work *C136*

Parallels of rejection of nominal house *C151-153*

Parallels of King and presence *C150-153*

B. Chronology

Bible Chronology *B33-54*

Jubilees *B173-200*

"End of the High Calling is Not the Closing of the Door...

"The Scriptures do not give the exact date at which the door to the marriage will close...." *C205*

"There are three ways in which the closing of this door might be indicated: first, by a definite Bible statement of the exact date; second, by such a reversal of public sentiment with reference to the truth, that fidelity and zeal in its service would no longer meet with opposition, and when suffering with Christ for the truth's sake would be no longer possible; or third, by such a condition of affairs obtaining in the world that all opportunity for such service would be effectually obstructed, thus leaving no opportunities for candidates to enter into the work and to develop and prove their love and faithfulness by their activity and endurance." *C207*

"We believe that the year 1914 gives evidence of greater possibilities of service for the truth than has any previous year of harvest...the number of these fully consecrated ones increase every day...conditions are favorable to the opening of the eyes of understanding and the unstopping of the deaf ears of our dear brethren of various denominations." *January 1, 1914 — Views... R5373:5*

"Opportunities Never so Great as Now. Every tract and every booklet circulated now is likely to do three or four

times as much good as in times past....Under the law, the Jews were commanded to leave the corners of their fields unreaped...for the gleaners....Perhaps the present work is largely that of gleaning. It would appear so." *January 1, 1915 — Views... R5602:1*

"Glorious Opportunities at Hand. Manifest now, and increasingly so as the days go by, the minds of thinking people will be opening to a realization of the Truth. Now, as never before, they will need the Lord's saints to point them in the right direction....As society and religious systems will be reeling as a drunken man,... these undeveloped saints of God will need the very help we by God's grace are enabled to render them. Surely there never was so favorable a time as the present for rendering assistance to this class! More and more, as these find that they have been misled by the shepherds of the nominal systems, they will be as sheep without a shepherd....It will be seen from this that, so far from thinking our work ended, we have wonderful expectations in respect to the year 1916." *January 1, 1916 — Views... R5824:1*

"Some of us were quite strongly convinced that the harvest would be ended by now, but our expectations must not be allowed to weigh anything against the facts. The fact is that the harvest work is going grandly on; it is not ended by any means. As far as our present judgment goes, it would appear that there is a considerable harvest work yet to be done.

"At first we were inclined to surmise that the harvest proper had closed in October, 1914, and that the work since going on was a gleaning work; but the facts seem not to bear this out. The progress of the work and the numbers who are being brought to a knowledge of the truth and separated to the Lord are far too great to be styled a gleaning. Evidently it is a part of the regular harvest." *"The Harvest Is Not Ended" Sept.1, 1916 R5950*

Also regard to parallels affecting merely nominal Jewish and Christian houses; both rejected to destruction. No true church parallels.

"Chronology based upon faith...in these columns and in the six volumes...we have set forth everything appertaining to the times and seasons in a tentative form...not with positiveness, not with the claim that we know, but merely with the suggestion that 'thus and so' seems to be the teaching of the Bible....We have pointed out that the chronology is the basis of nearly all the suggestions of prophetic interpretations set forth in Studies in the Scriptures...." *R5450:3-6;* similar quotations: *R5375:4; R5374:3; R5449:1-4; R5502:5*

C. Time Prophecies Converge

"'The Time of the End' is very appropriately named since not only does the Gospel age close in it, but in it also all prophecies relating to the close of this age terminate reaching their fulfillments...." *C121*

"While each of the time prophecies accomplishes a separate and distinct purpose, the central object of their united and harmonious testimony has been to mark, with definiteness and precision, by either direct or indirect evidence, or corroborative testimony, the date of our Lord's second advent and of the establishment of his Kingdom in the earth; and also to mark the various stages and means of its establishment, during the harvest period...." *C124*

"The focus of time-prophecy upon the harvest and matters connected with the Lord's presence and the establishment of the Kingdom will be impressed upon the mind by a careful study of the accompanying diagrams...prominent features in this harvest are marked by the great prophecies....Thus all the rays of prophecy converge upon this 'Time of the End' the focal point of which is the 'Harvest' — the time of our Lord's presence and the establishment of his long-promised Kingdom...when we consider the great importance of these events, the stupendous dispensational changes which they introduce, and the amount and character of the prophetic testimony which marks them...fully tenfold greater testimony...than at the first advent...." *C130, 131*

See also Index: **Babylon; Church Federation; Liberty in Christ; Organization of the New Creation; Responsibility to the Truth.**

HELL AND PURGATORY

(SHEOL — HADES — GEHENNA — TARTAROO)

"The word '**hell**' in old English usage...meant to '**conceal**,' to '**hide**,' to '**cover**;' hence the '**concealed**,' '**hidden**' or '**covered place**.' In old English literature records may be found of the **helling** of potatoes — putting potatoes into pits; and of the **helling** of a house — covering or thatching it. The word *hell* was...used synonymously with the words 'grave' and 'pit,' to translate the words *sheol* and *hades* as signifying the secret or hidden condition of death." *R2598:4*

SHEOL

"The Hebrew word sheol occurs sixty-five times in the Old Testament....It is three times translated *pit*, thirty-one...*grave* and thirty-one ...*hell*....

"The meaning of...*sheol* (*hades* is its Greek equivalent) can scarcely be expressed by any one English word: it signifies 'hidden' or 'extinguished,' or 'obscure' — the condition or state of death: it is not a place but a condition, and perhaps the word 'oblivion' would more nearly than any other...correspond with... *sheol*...and *hades*...." *E354*

GEN. 37:35: "I will go down into the **grave** [*sheol*] unto my son, mourning."

"Thus did Jacob mourn for...Joseph...." *E355*

GEN. 42:38: "If mischief shall befall him [Benjamin] by the way in which ye go, then shall ye bring down my gray hairs with sorrow to **the grave** [to *sheol*]."

"These were the words of Jacob when parting with Benjamin...." *E355*

GEN. 44:29: "Thy servants shall bring down the gray hairs of thy servant our father to **the grave** [to *sheol*]."

"The brethren of Joseph are relating...the... injunction of their father respecting Benjamin...." *E354*

NUM. 16:30: "If the Lord make a new thing, and the earth open her mouth, and swallow them up...and they go down quick **into the pit** [into *sheol*]."

NUM. 16:33: "They...went down alive **into the pit** [*sheol*] and the earth closed upon them and they perished from among the congregation."

"These two texts...could not...have been translated 'into **hell**,' for fear of proving that the...place of torture is under the surface of this earth....Rightly understood: the earth... swallowed them up, and they went down from the midst of life's activities into oblivion, unconsciousness." *E356*

DEUT. 32:22: "A fire is kindled in mine anger, and shall burn unto the lowest **hell** [*sheol*], and shall consume the

earth with her increase, and set on fire the foundations of the mountains."

"The...context shows that it is the fire of God's jealousy...." *E357*

DEUT. 32:24,25: "They shall be burnt with hunger, and devoured with burning heat, and with bitter destruction....The sword without, and terror within, shall destroy...."

"The apostle declares that wrath came upon them to the uttermost (1 Thes. 2:16) divine anger burned against them....After divine wrath has burned out their national transgression, even...to the very lowest oblivion (*sheol*).... (Rom. 11:26,27)....See Deut. 32:26-43. (Isa. 40:1,2)" *E357*

1 THES. 2:16: "Forbidding us to speak to the Gentiles that they might be saved, to fill up their sins alway: for the wrath is come upon them to the uttermost."

ROM. 11:26,27: "And so all Israel shall be saved: as it is written, There shall come out of Sion the Deliverer, and shall turn away ungodliness from Jacob: For this is my covenant unto them, when I shall take away their sins."

ISA. 40:1,2: "COMFORT ye, comfort ye my people, saith your God. Speak ye comfortably to Jerusalem, and cry unto her, that her warfare is accomplished, that her iniquity is pardoned: for she hath received of the LORD'S hand double for all her sins."

1 SAM. 2:6: "The Lord killeth and maketh alive: he bringeth down to **the grave** [to *sheol*] and bringeth up [out of *sheol*]."

2 SAM. 22:6: "The sorrows of **hell** [*sheol*] compassed me about."

"David here expressed the fact that his life was in jeopardy but God delivered him from the hand of Saul. The context, however, shows...that the Psalmist speaks prophetically of the Christ, and the...deliverance of...the church from the present evil world...(verses 8-18)...." *E358*

1 KINGS 2:6,9: "Let not his hoar head go down to **the grave** [*sheol*] in peace...but his hoar head bring thou down to 'the grave' [*sheol*...] with blood."

"David was...pointing out...that Joab was... deserving of some retribution before he died. The translators evidently thought...it would not do here to translate...*sheol* by the word '**hell**.'... Their theory asserts that the hairs and all the remainder of the...body are buried, and that the naked soul or spirit goes to hell...'gray hairs' and 'hoar head'...signifying aged." *E358*

JOB 7:9: "As a cloud is consumed and vanisheth away, so he that goeth down to **the grave** [*sheol*] shall come up no more."

"Job here points out the utter destruction of man's soul...in death. Nevertheless in verse 21....death is referred to as a sleep....The Lord...in resurrection power...shall call, and Job...will answer him...." *E358*

JOB 14:14,15: "If a man die shall he live again?....Thou shalt call, and I will answer thee: thou wilt have a desire to the work of thine hands."

JOB 11:8: "It is as high as heaven; what canst thou do? Deeper than **hell** [*sheol*]; what canst thou know?"

"These words are by Zophar, one of Job's mistaken comforters, whom the Lord reproved. ...There is no knowledge in *sheol*....he claims there can be no knowledge of the divine wisdom and plan." *E359*

JOB 14:13: "O that thou wouldst hide me in **the grave** [*sheol*], that thou wouldst keep me in secret until thy wrath be past, that thou wouldst appoint me a set time and remember me."

"...he was quite willing to be hidden in oblivion until the time when...'wrath' shall be lifted from the earth,....but that God in due time...will remember him, and call him out of oblivion....(Acts 3:19-21)." *E359*

JOB 17:13,14: "If I wait, **the grave** [*sheol*] is my house: I shall make my bed in the darkness. I have cried to corruption, Thou art my father; to the worm, Thou art my mother, and my sister."

"Oblivion is the house or...bed, and it is full of darkness — Job's soul, his being, sleeps, waiting for the...resurrection, while his body turns to corruption." *E360*

JOB 17:15,16: "Where is now my hope? They shall go down to **the bars of the pit** [to *sheol*, '**oblivion**,' '**separately**']. Truly in the dust alone there is rest for all."

"He has...expressed the hope that...he shall awake....But although each...goes down to **sheol**,...whether they have this hope or not, all find rest in the dust." *E360*

JOB 21:13: "They spend their days in wealth and in a moment go down into **the grave** [*sheol*]."

JOB 24:19: "Drought and heat consume snow waters: so doth **the grave** [*sheol*] those which have sinned."

"All mankind has sinned,...is subject to death, and goes down to oblivion....Job...is specially referring to evil doers, who hasten their death by an evil course." *E360*

JOB 26:6: "**Hell** [*sheol*] is naked before him, and destruction hath no covering."

"Here Job points out the all-wisdom of the Creator...every secret thing of oblivion is open to his...gaze." *E361*

PSA. 6:5: "For in death there is no remembrance of thee; in the **grave** [*sheol*] who shall give thee thanks?"

"What a clear...statement...proving the unconsciousness of man in death!...The statement is...with reference to God's servants who desire to thank...him....not to the dead 'flesh' which is buried in *qeber*, but to the 'soul' which goes to *sheol*, oblivion." *E361*

"*Qeber* — "sepulchre" — Strong's Concordance — lexicon

PSA. 9:17: "The wicked shall be [re-] turned into **hell** [***sheol***] and all nations that forget God."

"The Hebrew word *shub* in this text is properly translated 'returned.' This gives the thought of one recovered from **sheol**, oblivion...on account of wickedness and forgetfulness of God....'the Second Death.'...It refers to those who forget God after they have been brought to clear knowledge...and...responsibility." *E361*

PSA. 16:10: "Thou wilt not leave my soul in **hell** [*sheol*]; neither wilt thou suffer thine Holy One to see corruption."

"Peter,...on...Pentecost, under the...influence of the Holy Spirit, expounds...the true significance..., pointing out that it could not...be true of David...; because David's soul was left in *sheol*, and his flesh did see corruption." *E362*

ACTS 2:29,34: "...David...is both dead and buried, and his sepulchre is with us unto this day....David is not ascended into the heavens...."

"The soul of David went to *sheol*, oblivion, and still remained there and...had not gone to heaven...the soul of Christ Jesus went to *sheol*...but did not remain because resurrected... — and ascended to heaven." *E362*

"He...arose,...brought out of oblivion to the divine nature, on the third day,...and became." *E362*

1 COR. 15:20: "...the first fruits of them that slept." (Cf. *B108*)

PSA. 18:5, *Leeser*: "The bonds of **hell** [*sheol*, '**oblivion**'] encircle me; the snares of death seize me."

"A figurative expression of deep anguish and fear of death." *E362*

PSA. 30:3: "O Lord, thou hast brought up my soul from **the grave** [*sheol*]; thou hast kept me alive."

"This is a thanksgiving for recovery from severe illness, which threatened death." *E363*

PSA. 31:17,18: "Let the wicked be ashamed, let them be silent in **the grave** [*sheol*]; let the lying lips be put to silence."

PSA. 49:14,15: "Like sheep they are laid in **the grave** [*sheol*]; death shall feed upon them, and the upright shall have dominion over them in the morning; and their strength shall consume, **the grave** [*sheol*] being an habitation to every one of them. But God will redeem my soul from the power of **the grave** [*sheol*]."

"...sheep are not buried in graves, though all sheep go into oblivion, are forgotten." *E363*

OBAD. 1:16: "as though they had not been."

"The prophet is here pointing our his own confidence in the resurrection; that God would redeem his soul from *sheol*, oblivion. This is in full harmony with..." *E363*

ACTS 2:34: "...David is not ascended into the heavens...."

"David's soul went to sheol, to oblivion, and David's only hope is in the redemption of his soul from *sheol*...to life...in the resurrection,... the righteous shall 'have dominion' over these...." *E363*

1 COR. 6:2: "...The saints shall judge the world...."

PSA. 55:15: "Let death seize upon them, *and* let them go down quick into **hell** (*sheol*): for wickedness *is* in their dwellings."

"How could...a good man like David...pray for his enemies to go down into...everlasting torment?....*Sheol* contains no thought...of fire...or torment..., but simply...oblivion, the extinguishment of life....the laws of civilized nations declare that all murderers shall be executed...." *E364*

PSA. 86:13: "Great is thy mercy toward me: thou hast delivered my soul from the lowest **hell** [*sheol*]."

"...'lowest hell' here would signify depth of oblivion. We may not improperly consider that the prophet is here personating...Jesus....In the case of the world...death is but a sleep,...a temporary one....Jesus...took the place of the sinner...death...meant...perpetual oblivion, except as, by the Father's grace...he should be raised...." *E365*

PSA. 88:3: "My soul is full of troubles, and my life draweth nigh unto **the grave** [*sheol*]."

"Here...sorrow nigh unto death is...described."

PSA. 89:48: "What man is he that liveth and shall not see death? Shall he deliver his soul from the hand [power] of **the grave** [*sheol*]?"

"The common thought is...that the soul cannot die...that *sheol* has no power...to touch the soul. How inconsistent...!" *E365*

PSA. 116:3: "The sorrows of death compassed me, and the pains of **hell** [*sheol*] got hold upon me; I found trouble and sorrow."

"Hear again, fear of death is graphically portrayed....

"'The sorrows of death compassed me, and the pains of **hell** [*sheol*, '**oblivion**'] gat hold upon me: I found trouble and sorrow.' Psa. 116:3" *E366*

PSA. 139:7,8: "Whither shall I go from thy spirit? or whither shall I flee from thy presence? If I ascend up into heaven, thou art there: if I make my bed in **hell** [*sheol*], behold, thou art there."

"According to the prevalent idea, this would mean that God is a...resident of the...torture chamber which *sheol* is represented to be. On the contrary the prophet is...telling us...that there is not place...not accessible to divine power...[**REV. 1:18**: (*Diag*.) 'and the LIVING ONE; I was even dead, but, behold, I am living for the AGES of the AGES; and I have the KEYS of DEATH and of HADES.']" *E366*

PSA. 141:7: "Our bones are scattered at the **grave's** [*sheol*] mouth, as when one cutteth and cleaveth upon the earth."

Young's Translation: "As one tilling and ripping up the land, have our bones been scattered at the command of Saul."

"...this passage...has nothing in it favorable to...a hell of torment...." *E366*

PROV. 1:12: "Let us swallow them up alive, as **the grave** [*sheol*]."

"This purports to be the language of murderers, who would destroy their victims quickly, and have them lost from sight and from memory — in oblivion." *E366*

PROV. 5:5: "Her feet go down to death; her steps take hold on **hell** [*sheol*]."

"Here the temptations of an evil woman...are...set forth: her ways lead to destruction, to death, to oblivion." *E367*

PROV. 7:27: "Her house is on the way to **hell** [*sheol*], going down to the chambers of death."

"A similar expression...giving evidence that the hell...is not ablaze; not a place of torment, but the dark chambers of death, nonentity, oblivion." *E367*

PROV. 9:18: "Her guests are in the depths of **hell** [sheol]."

"...the harlot's guests...are in the way of oblivion, not only...physical..., but also in... losing their respect and influence...." *E367*

PROV. 15:11: "**Hell** [*sheol*] and destruction are before the Lord; how much more, then, the hearts of the children of men."

"...there is no intimation here of torment, but...sheol..., is associated with destruction." *E367*

PROV. 15:24: "The way of life is above to the wise, that he may depart from **hell** [*sheol*] beneath."

Revised Version: "To the wise the way of life goeth upward that he may depart from *sheol* [margin, '**the grave**'] beneath."

"...that they may be delivered...from oblivion." *E367*

PROV. 23:14: "Thou shalt beat him with the rod, and shall deliver his soul from **hell** [*sheol*]."

"...the child shall not be spared the rod, if he needs it, for in so doing...its soul (being) shall be kept back from a premature oblivion, and possibly...from the Second Death — from being returned to oblivion." *E368*

PROV. 27:20: "**Hell** [*sheol*] and destruction are never full; so the eyes of man are never satisfied."

"So far from this signifying a burning hell, of so immense proportions that it never can be filled, it merely signifies that there is no limit to the capacity of death — oblivion and destruction cannot be overcrowded." *E368*

PROV. 30:15,16: "There are three things that are never satisfied; yea, four things say not, It is enough: **the grave** [sheol]; the barren womb; the earth that is not filled with water, and the fire that saith not, It is enough."

"In this text, as in the one preceding it, death, oblivion, is said to have no end of capacity, and cannot be over-filled." *E368*

See ***Expanded Biblical Comments*** on **Proverbs 30:15,16**

ECCL. 9:10: "Whatsoever thy hand findeth to do, do it with thy might; for there is no work, nor device, nor knowledge, nor wisdom in **the grave** [*sheol*] whither thou goest."

Song of Solomon 8:6: "Jealousy is cruel as **the grave** [*sheol*]."

"...oblivion is...the very personification of relentlessness...." *E369*

ISA. 5:14: "Therefore **hell** [*sheol*] hath enlarged herself and opened her mouth without measure."

"The Prophet here uses...*sheol*...to describe the loss of prestige, the ignominy, the dishonor upon Israel. They had become as though dead,...passed into oblivion in large numbers. The passage has no reference to a literal grave, nor to a lake of fire." *E369*

ISA. 14:9: "Hell [*sheol*, '**oblivion**'] from beneath is moved for thee to meet thee at thy coming."

"This...symbolic language...is, applied to Babylon....Great Babylon is to be swallowed up...go to oblivion, *sheol*. (Rev. 18:21) This is shown by the context, which declares, 'How

hath the oppressor ceased, the golden city ceased!' See verses 4-8 [of Isa. 14]." *E369*

ISA. 14:4: "That thou shalt take up this proverb against the king of Babylon, and say, How hast the oppressor ceased! the golden city ceased!"

ISA. 14:11: "Thy pomp is brought down to **the grave** [*sheol*]..."

"A continuation of the same symbolic picture of the **destruction** of mystic Babylon...in oblivion, not in a burning hell." *E369*

ISA. 28:15: "...Ye have said, We have made a covenant with death, and with **hell** [*sheol*] we are at agreement...."

"Christians of various denominations have 'made a league with death,' and declare that it is a friend, whereas the Scriptures declare that it is man's greatest enemy...." *E370*

ISA. 28:18: "And your covenant with death shall be disannulled, and your agreement with **hell** [*sheol*] shall not stand...."

"Thus the Lord...will...convince the world...respecting death and the oblivion condition...." *E370*

ISA. 38:10: "I said, in the cutting off of my days I shall go to gates of **the grave** [*sheol*]. I am deprived of the residue of my years."

"Hezekiah, the good king...did not mean that he expected to have gone down to a hell of eternal tormelt....The king simply declares that he felt himself near to death, to oblivion." *E370*

ISA. 38:18: "For **the grave** [*sheol*] cannot praise thee: death cannot celebrate thee...."

"Hezekiah associates the thought of death with **oblivion**, ***sheol***....A living man can praise the Lord, but if a man be dead, if his **soul** be gone to ***sheol***, to oblivion, he cannot...." *E370*

ISA. 57:9: "And thou wentest to the king with ointment...and didst...debase *thyself even* unto **hell** [*sheol*]."

"This...figurative expression...represents Israel...seeking alliance

with the kings of the earth...to the extent of becoming figuratively dead...." *E371*

EZEK. 31:15-17: "...in the day when he went down to **the grave** [*sheol*], I caused a mourning..., I made the nations to shake at the sound of his fall, when I cast him down to hell [*sheol*]....They also went down into hell [*sheol*], unto *them that* be slain with the sword...."

"Here the Lord...is in figurative language describing the fall of Babylon. The old-time...Babylon was overthrown...:

modern mystic Babylon is similarly to fall into oblivion...." *E372*

EZEK. 32:21: "The strong among the mighty shall speak to him, out of the midst of hell [*sheol*], with them that help him...."

"Here...other...nations which went down into oblivion prior to the fall of Egypt, are represented as speaking to Egypt in respect to its fall. Thus we say that history tells us...things...repeats her lessons." *E372*

EZEK. 32:27: "And they shall not lie with the mighty that are fallen of the uncircumcised, which are gone down to **hell** [*sheol*] with their weapons of war...."

"The Prophet is here foretelling...how they also will go down: to oblivion with their weapons of war. The weapons of war can, indeed, go down into oblivion...." *E372*

HOS. 13:14: "I will ransom them from the power of **the grave** [*sheol*]; I will redeem them from death: O death, I will be thy plagues; O **grave** [*sheol*], I will be thy destruction: repentance shall be hid from my eyes."

"Sheol shall be destroyed....

"As soon as the resurrection of the church is complete...." *E373*

"The Adamic death...shall be forever swallowed up, and shall cease in this Second death into which it is to be cast by the great Redeemer who bought the whole world with the sacrifice of himself....(Hos. 13:14) The first or Adamic death shall no longer have liberty or power over men, as it has had for the past six thousand years; no longer shall any die for Adam's sin. (Rom. 5:12; Jer. 31:29,30; Ezek. 18:2.) Thenceforth the New Covenant, sealed with the precious blood, shall be in force, and only **willful** transgressions will be counted as sin and punished with the wages of sin — death — the Second Death. Thus will the Adamic death be cast into and swallowed up by the Second Death." Booklet *Where Are The Dead?:78, 79*

1 COR. 15:54, 55: "...Then shall be brought to pass the saying that is written, Death is swallowed up in victory. O death; where *is* thy sting? O grave, where *is* thy victory?"

"The swallowing up of death...will be... gradual,...as the swallowing up of mankind by death has been a gradual one. Eventually...**sheol**...shall...pass away...." *E373*

AMOS 9:2: "Though they dig into **hell** [*sheol*], thence shall my hand [power] take them...."

"None would think of digging...into a place of eternal torment, but Israel as a nation did dig its way toward national oblivion...." *E374*

JONAH 2:2: "...out of the belly of **hell** [*sheol*] cried I, and thou heardest my voice."

"The belly of hell...was the belly of the great fish...the belly of oblivion, destruction, death,... had he not been delivered." *E374*

HAB. 2:5: "Yea also, because he transgresseth by wine, *he is* a proud man, neither keepeth at home, who enlargeth his desire as **hell** [*sheol*], and is as death, and cannot be satisfied, but gathereth unto him all nations, and heapeth unto him all people..."

"Covetousness is like death (oblivion), in that it never has enough...." *E374*

HADES

"...the apostles, in quotations from the Old Testament, render *sheol* by the word *hades*...." *E375*

MATT. 11:23: "And thou, Capernaum, which art exalted unto heaven, shalt be brought down to **hell** [*hades*]..."

"It...was not true that...Capernaum went into eternal torment, neither...into a grave, in the ordinary sense....Capernaum did go into oblivion, into destruction." *E375*

MATT. 16:18: "And I say unto thee, that, thou are Peter, and upon this rock I will build my church; and the gates of **hell** [*hades*] shall not prevail against it."

"Peter had just made confession of the Lord as being the Anointed, the Son of the living God, the Messiah. This truth is the mighty rock upon which the entire church of Christ, as living stones, must be built....Our Lord declares Peter to be one of these **living stones** and Peter declares...that all consecrated believers are...**living stones**, built upon this great foundation rock, Christ...." *E375*

1 PET. 2:4,5: "To whom coming, as unto a living stone...Ye also, as lively stones, are built up a spiritual house...."

"Notwithstanding this fact...they go down into death (oblivion)....Death shall not prevail against them,...the doors of oblivion shall not forever remain closed;...as he...burst the bars of death, and came forth...so also his Church shall be delivered from...death — from oblivion...." *E375*

LUKE 10:15: "And thou, Capernaum, which art exalted to heaven, shalt be thrust down to **hell** [*hades*]."

See *Bible Students Manual:* Comments on Matthew 11:23.

LUKE 16:23: "And in **hell** [*hades*] he lifted up his eyes being in torment...."

See explanation of this under **Parables**. See **Index**.

"The rich man who...was tortured while in oblivion, is the Jewish nation. Israel...scattered amongst...the nations...has suffered torments...." *E376*

ACTS 2:27: "Because thou wilt not leave my soul in **hell** [*hades*]...."

See *Biblical Comments* on Psalm 16:10.

REV. 1:18: "I am he that liveth, and was dead; and behold I am alive forevermore,...and have the keys of **hell** [*sheol*] and of death."

"Our great Redeemer shall unlock this figurative prison-house of death, and bring forth the captives...from *sheol*, *hades*, **oblivion** ....He has the keys,...the power, the authority, — he can open and...shut...." *E378*

ISA. 61:1: "The Spirit of the Lord God *is* upon me, because the Lord hath anointed me...to proclaim liberty to the captives, and the opening of the prison to *them that* are bound."

LUKE 4:18: "The Spirit of the Lord is upon me, because he hath anointed me to preach the gospel to the poor; he hath sent me to heal the brokenhearted, to preach deliverance to the captives, and

recovering of sight to the blind, to set at liberty them that are bruised."

REV. 6:8: "...and his name that sat on him was Death, and **Hell** [*hades*] followed with him. And power was given unto them over the fourth part of the earth, to kill with the sword, and with hunger, and with death, and with the beasts of the earth."

"It would require a very strong imagination to harmonize this...with the...**view that hades is a place of torment**...capable of receiving... millions...riding on horseback. But the reasonableness of the symbols, death and the state of death, **oblivion, unconsciousness**... sweeping off...is entirely consistent...." *E378*

REV. 20:13: "...death and **hell** [*hades*] delivered up the dead which were in them: and they were judged every man according to their works."

"Millions have gone into **sheol, hades, oblivion**; and...millions whom we still call alive are...nine-tenths dead; under...the death sentence....Not only will the dead (those under the sentence of death, who have not yet gone into the tomb)...but also...those who have gone into **sheol, hades, oblivion**...." *E379*

REV. 20:14: "And death and **hell** [*hades*] were cast into the lake of fire. This is the second death."

"The **lake of fire** (*gehenna*) represents utter destruction, the second death, which shall utterly destroy all evil things....The present state of condemnation...is styled 'death

and hades' — the dying condition of those now called the living and the oblivious sleep of the fully dead.

"Adamic death, and the sleep in oblivion, consequent to it, shall be no more....In the future, no one will die for Adam's sins....The only death thereafter will be the second death...." *E380*

GEHENNA — SECOND DEATH — LAKE OF FIRE

"This word *Gehenna* is the Grecian mode of spelling the Hebrew words which are translated 'Valley of Hinnom.' This valley...outside... Jerusalem...served the purpose of...garbage burner....Fires were...burning to *consume*...all things deposited therein, brimstone being added....No living thing was...cast into *Gehenna*. The Jews were not allowed to *torture* any creature." *R2601:2*

"Christ's government is represented in... Revelation...under the figure of...the New Jerusalem...." *R2601:2*

REV. 21:10-27: "...And there shall in no wise enter into it any thing that defileth, neither whatsoever worketh abomination, or maketh a lie:..."

"This city...was typified in the earthly city, Jerusalem; and...the class unworthy of life everlasting...were represented by the refuse and...lifeless carcasses cast into *Gehenna* outside the city, whose utter destruction was thus symbolized — the second death..." *R2601:3*

REV. 20:15: "And whosoever was not found written in the book of life was cast into the lake of fire."

REV. 20:14: "And death and hell were cast into the lake of fire. This is the second death."

"...fire here, as everywhere being...a symbol of **destruction**, and the symbol, lake of fire, being drawn from...*Gehenna*, or Valley of Hinnom...." *R2601:4*

"...a type...of the second death — final and complete destruction, from which there can be no recovery; for after that..." *R2601:3,4*

HEB. 10:26,27: "...there remaineth no more sacrifice for sins, But...fiery indignation, which shall devour the adversaries."

"How appropriate that we...define...*Gehenna*, a figure of the second death; the utter destruction...of all that is unworthy of preservation; and how aptly, too, is the symbol....[REV. 19:20: 'And the beast was taken, and with him the false prophet that wrought miracles before him, with which he deceived them that had received the mark of the beast, and them that worshipped his image. These both were cast alive into a **lake of fire burning with brimstone**.'] drawn from...**Gehenna** or Valley of Hinnom, burning continually

with brimstone....Burning brimstone is...most deadly...." *R2601:4*

USES OF THE WORD "GEHENNA"

MATT. 5:22: "But I say unto you, That whosoever is angry with his brother without a cause shall be in danger of the judgment: and whosoever shall say to his brother, Raca, shall be in danger of the council: but whosoever shall say, Thou fool, [margin, 'graceless wretch'] shall be in danger of **hell** [*Gehenna*] fire."

"The most serious sentence was *death*; but certain very obnoxious criminals were...cast into *Gehenna*, there to be consumed. This...signified that the culprit was a hopeless case...and...(figuratively) implied the loss of hope of future life by a resurrection....the second death...." *R2601:6*

"...*malicious anger* and vituperation, 'shall be' considered a violation of God's law, under the New Covenant; and...such as...will not reform...will be counted worthy of that *Gehenna* ...typified — the second death." *R2601:6*

RESTRAINING EYES AND HANDS

MATT. 5:29,30: "And if thy right eye offend thee, pluck it out, and cast it from thee: for it is profitable for thee that one of thy members should perish, and not that thy whole body should be cast into **hell** [*Gehenna*]. And if thy right hand offend thee, cut it off, and cast it from thee: for it is profitable for thee that one of thy members should perish, and not that thy whole body should be cast into **hell** [*Gehenna*]."

"...it is far more profitable that man should refuse to gratify depraved desires (though they be dear to them as a right eye, and apparently indispensable as a right hand) than that they should gratify these, and lose in the second death, the future life...." *R2602:1*

"The Jews, whom our Lord addressed, having no conception of a place of everlasting torment, and who knew the word **Gehenna** to refer to the valley outside their city, which was not a place of torment, nor a place where any living thing was cast, but a place of utter destruction; recognizing our Lord's expression regarding limbs and eyes to be figurative, knew that Gehenna also was used in the same figurative sense to symbolize utter destruction." *R2602:6*

SOUL AND BODY DESTROYED

MATT. 10:28: "And fear not them which kill the body, but are not able to kill the soul: but rather fear him which is able to **destroy** both soul and body in **hell** [*Gehenna*]."

"...men are able to kill our bodies, but nothing that they can do will affect our future being (soul),...in the resurrection....Our revived soul will have new bodies." *R2602:1*

1 COR. 15:38: "But God giveth it a body as it hath pleased him, and to every seed his own [kind of] body."

"God alone has power to destroy *utterly* — soul and body." *R2602:4*

See also Index: **Soul**

MATT. 18:8,9: "Wherefore if thy hand or thy foot offend thee, cut them off, and *cast* them from thee: it is better for thee to enter into life halt or maimed, rather than having two hands or two feet to be cast into everlasting fire. And if thine eye offend thee, pluck it out, and cast it from thee: it is better for thee to enter into life with one eye, rather than having two eyes to be cast into hell [*Gehenna*] fire."

For the foregoing see *Berean Comments* on Matt. 5:29, 30.

MARK 9:43-48: "And if thy hand offend thee, cut it off: it is better for thee to enter into life maimed, than having two hands to go into **hell** [*Gehenna*], into the fire that never shall be quenched: [**44**] Where their worm dieth not, and the fire is not quenched. [**45**] And if thy foot offend thee, cut it off: it is better for thee to enter halt into life, than having two feet to be cast into **hell** [*Gehenna*], into the fire that never shall be quenched: [**46**] Where their worm dieth not, and the fire is not quenched. [**47**] And if thine eye offend thee, pluck it out: it is better for thee to enter into the kingdom of God with one eye, than having two eyes to be cast into **hell fire** [*Gehenna*]: [**48**] Where their worm dieth not, and the fire is not quenched."

["...Verses 44 and 46 and part of 45 are not found in the oldest Greek MSS., though verse 48, which reads the same, is in all manuscripts. We quote the text as found in these ancient and reliable MSS."] *R2602:6*

EVERLASTING WORMS — UNQUENCHABLE FIRE

"In the literal *Gehenna*,...bodies of animals, etc., upon ledges of rocks and not the fire kept burning below would breed worms and be destroyed by them as surely as those which burned....The worm and the fire...completed the work of *destruction* — the fire was not quenched and the worms died not. This would not imply a never-ending fire, nor everlasting worms....The thought is that the worms did not die off and leave the carcasses there, but continued and completed the work of destruction....The fire...was not quenched, it burned on until all was consumed....If a house were ablaze and the fire could not be...quenched ...until the building was destroyed, we might...call such an 'unquenchable fire.'" *R2603:1*

ISA. 66:24: "And they shall go forth, and look upon the carcasses of the men that have transgressed against me: for their worm shall not die, neither shall their fire be quenched; and they shall be an abhorring unto all flesh."

"The same valley was used by...Isaiah....though he gives it no name...he speaks, not...of billions alive in flames and torture, but of the **carcasses** of those who transgressed against the Lord, who are thus represented as utterly destroyed in the second death.

"The two preceding verses show this prophecy will be fulfilled...: the new dispensation." *R2603:2*

ISA. 66:22: "For as **the new heavens and the new earth**, which I will make, shall remain before me, saith the LORD, so shall your seed and your name remain."

"Then all the righteous will see the justice as well as the wisdom of the utter destruction of the incorrigible...." *R2603:3*

"HOW CAN YE ESCAPE...?"

MATT. 23:15,33: "Woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! for ye compass sea and land to make one proselyte, and when he is made, ye make him twofold more the child of **hell** [*Gehenna*] than yourselves....Ye serpents, ye generation of vipers, how can ye escape the damnation of **hell** [*Gehenna*]?"

"Abundant testimony of the truth had been borne to them, but they refused to accept it, and endeavored...to discourage the people from accepting it....Such a course, if pursued, must eventually end in condemnation to the second death, **Gehenna**...." *R2603:3*

LUKE 12:5: "But I will forewarn you whom ye shall fear: Fear him, which after he hath killed hath power to cast into hell; yea, I say unto you, Fear him."

See *Berean Comments* on Matt. 10:28.

JAS. 3:6: "And the tongue is a fire, a world of iniquity: so [important] is the tongue among our members, that it defileth the whole body, and setteth on fire the course of nature; and [or when] it is set on fire of **hell** [*Gehenna*]."

"For a tongue to be set on fire of *Gehenna* signifies that it is set going in evil by a perverse disposition which, in spite of knowledge and opportunity, unless controlled and reformed, will be...*destroyed* — the class for whom the 'second death'...is intended. One...may by his tongue kindle...a destructive disturbance, which...will work evil in the entire course of nature...." *R2603:4*

TARTAROO

2 PET. 2:4: "For if God spared not the angels that sinned, but **cast** *them* **down to hell**, and delivered *them* into chains of darkness, to be reserved unto judgment."

"The words 'cast...down to hell' are translated from the one Greek word '*tartarosas*' (*tartaroo*)." *R2603:4,5* and *Diag.*

"***Tartaroo*** — To send into Tartarus" — *Young's Concordance*

"*Tartaros*...— Tartarus, a dark abyss...." *Liddell & Scott*

"Tartarus, a word used in Grecian mythology as the name for a **dark abyss or prison**....The fall of these angels who sinned was from honor and dignity, into dishonor and condemnation....

"These fallen spirits frequented the earth in the days of our Lord....Hence they were not down in some place, but...degraded from former honor and liberty, and restrained under darkness, as by a chain...." *R2603:5*

TORMENT

REV. 20:10: "And the devil that deceived them was cast into the lake of fire and brimstone, where the beast and the false prophet are, and shall be tormented day and night for ever and ever."

"Literally — to put to the touchstone, to put to the proof. To try, prove, examine carefully, investigate carefully, investigate closely. To torture in order to discover the truth.

"The word and its derivatives appear in all 21 times in the New Testament. The most significant one and the one often used to teach that 'torture eternal' is the penalty for sin, refers to Satan who is cast into the lake of fire and brimstone, where the beast and the false prophet are....The last two are patently institutions of error, and therefore could be destroyed but not tormented. It is evident therefore that the passage teaches that they will be the touchstone — the Lydian Stone of mythology by which pure gold

was distinguished from false.

"Lucifer and our Lord Jesus Christ will be the basis of comparison then, the touchstones by which all of God's intelligent Creatures will be tried as to their worthiness of eternal life or eternal death." *Where are the Dead?:82-83*

"Compare Isa. 14:12-15 with Philippians 2:5-11 preferably in the Diaglott." *Where are the Dead?:84*

ISA. 14:12-15: "How art thou fallen from heaven, O Lucifer, son of the morning! how art thou cut down to the ground, which didst weaken the nations! For thou hast said in thine heart, I will ascend into heaven, I will exalt my throne above the stars of God: I will sit also upon the mount of the congregation, in the sides of the north: I will ascend above the heights of the clouds; I will be like the most High. Yet thou shalt be brought down to hell, to the sides of the pit."

PHIL. 2:5-11 ***Diag***.: "Let this disposition be in you, which was also in Christ Jesus, who, though being in God's Form, yet did not meditate a Usurpation to be like God, but divested Himself, taking a Bondman's Form, having been made in the Likeness of Men; and being in condition as a

Man, he humbled himself, becoming obedient unto Death, even the Death of the Cross. And therefore God supremely exalted Him, and freely granted to him THAT Name which is above Every Name: in order that in the NAME of Jesus Every Knee should bend, of those in heaven, and of those beneath; and Every Tongue confess That Jesus Christ is Lord, for the Glory of God the Father."

REV. 14:9-11: "And the third angel followed them, saying with a loud voice, If any man worship the beast and his image, and receive his mark in his forehead, or in his hand, The same shall drink of the wine of the wrath of God, which is poured out without mixture into the cup of his indignation; and he shall be tormented with fire and brimstone in the presence of the holy angels, and in the presence of the Lamb: And the smoke of their torment ascendeth up for ever and ever: and they have no rest day nor night, who worship the beast and his image, and whosoever receiveth the mark of his name."

"...the remembrance ('smoke') of the destruction of these systems of deception and error will be lasting, the lesson will never be forgotten — as smoke, which continues to ascend after a destructive fire, is testimony that the fire has done its work. See also ISA. 34:8-10;" *Where are the Dead?:84*

ISA. 34:8-10: "For it is the day of the LORD'S vengeance, and the year of recompences for the controversy of Zion. And the streams thereof shall be turned into pitch, and the dust thereof into brimstone, and the land thereof shall become burning pitch. It shall not be quenched night nor day; the smoke thereof shall go up for ever: from generation to generation it shall lie waste; none shall pass through it for ever and ever."

"...if the beast and his image and worship and wine and cup are symbols, so also are the **torment** and **smoke** and **fire** and **brimstone**." *Where are the Dead?:85*

See also Index: **Parables: The Rich Man and Lazarus** and **The Sheep and the Goats**; also **Second Death**.

PURGATORY

"The doctrine of...immortality of man...led to the conclusion that...everlasting life....to the wicked...must be a life of suffering; and the torments were frequently pictured upon the wall of the churches as well as by the words of...priests and monks....

"Purgatory was brought in, to relieve and make endurable this terrible dose of doctrine... Antichrist claimed to have power to remit the pains of purgatory." *B323*

A CATHOLIC VIEW

"Purgatory...is...a place of purgation from sin, a place of penances, sorrows, woes...but not hopeless. The period of confinement here may be centuries or thousands of years, according to the deserts of the individuals and the alleviations granted....Dante's poem, 'Inferno,'... describes the tortures of purgatory....Dore... portrayed Dante's poem....The illustrations show...how the demons chase some until they leap over precipices into boiling water. They ply others with fiery darts. Others are burned with heads downward in pits. Some are bitten by serpents. Still others are frozen, etc....Where are the dead? The vast majority are in purgatory....billions of the heathens....millions of Protestants....Nearly all Catholics go to purgatory also, because, notwithstanding...holy water, confessions, masses, holy candles, consecrated burying ground, etc.,...not having attained to saintship...they would be excluded from heaven until...Purgatory would prepare their hearts...." *R4550:4*

THE SCRIPTURAL VIEW

MAL. 3:3: "And he shall sit as a refiner and purifier of silver: and he shall purify the sons of Levi, and purge them as gold and silver, that they may offer unto the LORD an offering in righteousness."

"To the faithful,...the Jewish and Gospel ages have been purgatories or periods of **purgation**...." *R1316:4*

THE WORLD'S PURGATORY

"The next age...will be the purgatory, the day of judgment or trial for the world...

"The world's purgatorial...discipline will in some respects be less severe..., because full, clear knowledge...will remove many of the present obstacles...and...Satan being bound..., every thing will be favorable to the formation of good characters...." *R1316:4*

ITS BEGINNING

"The purgatorial periods will be specially severe at its beginning, particularly upon...so-called Christendom....The judgments of that day of the Lord are symbolically represented...by fire. ...These purgatorial flames of righteous judgment will consume the evil systems and false principles and theories of the world...." *R1469:6*

THE GREAT COMPANY

"This Purgatory will begin in the...'harvest' of the Gospel age — the Millennial or purgatorial age lapping over upon it. Indeed, the first to enter it will be those Christians who are double minded — who seek to serve both God and mammon, and...must come out of great tribulation, washing their robes in the blood of the Lamb. (Rev. 7:14)....

REV. 7:14: "...out of great tribulation...,"

"It might be said that the purgatorial work has to some extent progressed upon the same class throughout the Gospel age...." *R1470:1*

See also Index: **Great Company**.

See MAL. 3:3 previously cited.

"The trouble which will purge the great company...is a part of

that...coming upon the world....They...though not hypocrites, receive a portion with the hypocrites...because they have the spirit of the world...love of the praise of men,...wealth,...power, ease,...self, and...lack of interest in...others....” *R1470:2*

PURGING THE WORLD

“The...world...have...allowed selfishness to rule them...The masses...seek liberty and equality; rich men and corporations seeking...to perpetuate...advantage over others....preparing for...

DAN. 12:1: “‘...trouble such as never was since there was a nation.’

“This trouble is the beginning of the purgatorial fire of the day of the Lord....” *R1470:3*

JAS. 5:1-7: “Go to now, ye rich men, weep and howl for your miseries that shall come upon you. Your riches are corrupted, and your garments are motheaten. Your gold and silver is cankered; and the rust of them shall be a witness against you, and shall eat your flesh as it were fire. Ye have heaped treasure together for the last days. Behold, the hire of the labourers who have reaped down your fields, which is of you kept back by fraud, crieth: and the cries of them which have reaped are entered into the ears of the Lord of sabaoth. Ye have lived in pleasure on the earth, and been wanton; ye have nourished your hearts, as in a day of slaughter....”

See also Index: **Harvest**

MATT. 13:30, 40-42: “...Gather ye together first the tares, and bind them in bundles to burn them: but gather the wheat into my barn....As therefore the tares are gathered and burned in the fire; so shall it be in the end of this world [**age**, *Diag.*]. The Son of man shall send forth his angels [**messengers**, *Diag.*], and they shall gather out of his kingdom all things that offend, and them which do iniquity; And shall cast them into a furnace of fire: there shall be wailing and gnashing of teeth.”

See also Index: **Parables: Wheat and Tares**

DELIVERANCE OF THE RIGHTEOUS

ISA. 33:14,15: “...Who among us shall dwell with the devouring fire? [cf. Heb. 12:29] who among us shall dwell

with everlasting [**lasting** *R1471:1*] burnings? He that walketh righteously, and speaketh uprightly; he that despiseth the gain of oppressions, that shaketh his hands from holding of bribes, that stoppeth his ears from hearing of blood, and shutteth his eyes from seeing evil.”

“Such shall be preserved from the intensity of trouble...fire, and such...who become of this class, shall be delivered from...this Purgatory as they return to the likeness of God.” *R1471:1*

PRESENT PURGATORIAL JUDGMENT

ROM. 2:3-6,8,9: “And thinkest thou this, O man, that judgest them which do such things, and doest the same, that thou shalt escape the judgment of God? Or despisest thou...his... longsuffering;...But after thy hardness and impenitent heart treasurest up unto thyself wrath against the day of wrath and revelation of the righteous judgment of God; Who will render to every man according to his deeds:...But unto them that are contentious, and do not obey the truth, but obey unrighteousness, indignation and wrath, Tribulation and anguish, upon every soul of man that doeth evil...”

2 THES. 1:6-9: “...*it is* a righteous thing with God to recompense tribulation to them that trouble you; And to you who are troubled rest with us, when the Lord Jesus shall be revealed... In flaming fire taking vengeance on them that know not God, and that obey not the gospel of our Lord Jesus Christ: Who shall be punished with everlasting destruction...”

“It will be but a just thing...to render Purgatorial punishment upon...opposers of the truth and of the saints....The...punishment...was not inflicted at their death,...but will be...during the thousand years of the Lord’s second presence — **when** he shall be revealed in flaming fire, etc.

“Those who have sinned against little light shall have the fewer stripes...and those...with more...the greater punishment. Luke 12:47,48.

“The same flaming fire (of...Purgatorial judgment) in which his **presence** will first be revealed to the world, in the great day of trouble...will continue to burn through-out that thousand-year day against all evil doers, finally **consuming** all who, after a clear knowledge and full opportunity...refuse to obey...with lasting destruction....

“The symbolic fires of Purgatory shall... consume evil, and leave the world cleansed....It will first burn against...evil principles and practices....As knowledge is increased and the weaknesses...are removed, all who still love evil...will be destroyed....” *R1471:2,4,5*

See also Index: **Second Death; Immortality vs Mortality; Soul**

HIGH CALLING

A HEAVENLY CALLING

"The calling of the present Gospel age is especially stated to be a 'high calling,' a 'heavenly calling' (Phil. 3:14; Heb. 3:1)." *F67*

PHIL. 3:14: "I press toward the mark for the prize of the **high calling** of God in Christ Jesus."

HEB. 3:1: "...holy brethren, partakers of the **heavenly calling**...."

"We are to recognize a great difference between calling men to repentance and calling them to the high calling of the divine nature...'**to be saints**' — holy ones....**unto the fellowship of his Son**....with a view to finding from amongst men some who shall become one with the Redeemer as New Creatures; joint-heirs with Him of the glory, honor, and immortality accorded him as a reward of his faithfulness....if so be that we suffer with him that we be also glorified together. (Rom 1:7; 1 Cor. 1:2, 9; Rom. 8:17)" *F87*

CALLED TO FELLOWSHIP

1 COR. 1:2: "Unto the church of God which is at Corinth, to them that are sanctified in Christ Jesus, called to be saints, with all that in every place call upon the name of Jesus Christ our Lord, both theirs and ours..."

1 COR. 1:9: "God is faithful, by whom ye were called unto the fellowship of his Son Jesus Christ our Lord."

THE CALL CONDITIONAL

ROM. 8:14, 17: "For as many as are led by the Spirit of God, they are the sons of God....And if children, then heirs; heirs of God, and joint-heirs with Christ; if so be that we suffer with him, that we may be also glorified together."

THE KIND WHO ARE CALLED

1 COR. 1:26-29: "For ye see your calling, brethren, how that not many wise men after the flesh, not many mighty, not many noble, are called: But God hath chosen the foolish things of the world to confound the wise; and God hath chosen the weak things of the world to confound the things which are mighty; And base things of the world, and things which are despised, hath God chosen, yea, and things which are not, to bring to nought things that are: That no flesh should glory in his presence."

JAS. 2:5: "...Hath not God chosen the poor of this world rich in faith..."

WHY SUCH ARE CALLED

"The whole matter is...an illustration of the power of God to transform characters from base and despised to noble and pure...by the...power of the truth — working in the called ones, through the promises and helps set before them, both to will and to do of his good pleasure." *F88*

PHIL. 2:12,13: "...work out your own salvation with fear and trembling. For it is God which worketh in you both to will and to do of his good pleasure."

HUMILITY REQUIRED

"God is evidently putting a premium upon humility in connection with all whom he invites to become members of this New Creation." *F90*

1 PET. 5: 5,6: "...God resisteth the proud, and giveth grace to the humble. Humble yourselves therefore under the mighty hand of God, that he may exalt you in due time."

"The pattern, Christ Jesus...humbled himself." *F90*

PHIL. 2:7-11: "But made himself of no reputation, and took upon him the form of a servant, and was made in the likeness of men: And being found in fashion as a man, he humbled himself, and became obedient unto death, even the death of the cross. Wherefore God also hath highly exalted him, and given him a name which is above every name: That at the name of Jesus every knee should bow, of things in heaven, and things in earth, and things under the earth; And that every tongue should confess that Jesus Christ is Lord, to the glory of God the Father."

CHARACTER A CONDITION OF THE CALL

"We are not to understand that His people are base or ignorant in the sense of being evil or corrupt or debased....The Lord sets the highest possible standard before those whom he calls; they are called to holiness, to purity, to faithfulness and to principles of righteousness — to an appreciation of these things in their own hearts and the showing forth of them in their lives....They may not be more noble or refined than others...but their acceptance...is not according to the flesh, but according to...their 'hearts.'...They are counted as freed from those blemishes which were theirs...as children of Adam;...as...robed in the merits of Christ....It is...the new will that is the 'New Creature!'...

"Gradually it will come more and more to have...control over the flesh..." *F90; F91*

1 THES. 2:12: "...walk worthy of God, who hath **called you** unto his kingdom and glory."

"Those may never get full control over their mortal bodies...although it will surely be their object and effort to glorify God in their bodies...." *F91*

GAL. 5:13: "For, brethren, ye have been called unto liberty; only use not liberty for an occasion to the flesh, but by love serve one another."

1 THES. 4:7: "For God hath not called us unto uncleanness, but unto holiness."

1 PET. 1:15: "But as he which hath called you is holy, so be ye holy..."

CALLED TO SACRIFICE

ROM. 12:1,2: "I beseech you therefore, brethren, by the mercies of God, that ye present your bodies a living sacrifice, holy, acceptable unto God, which is your reasonable service. And be not conformed to this world: but be ye transformed by the renewing of your mind, that ye may prove what is that good, and acceptable, and perfect, will of God."

HOW SHALL WE PRESENT OURSELVES?

"It should be done heartily, reverently in prayer-the contract should be definitely made with the Lord and, if possible, in an audible voice; and divine grace, mercy, and blessing should be requested, as needful assistance...." *F155*

THOSE COUNTING THE COST

"If any are 'feeling after God,' yet do not feel fully ready to make this complete surrender to his will...they should go to the Lord in prayer...and ask his blessing upon the study of the truth, that they might be enabled more and more to realize, first, the reasonableness of the service; secondly, the sureness of the blessing to result; and, thirdly, His faithfulness in keeping all gracious promises of help and strength made to the self-sacrificing class." *F155*

"...the Lord is too loving and too just to authorize in the hearts of any hopes which could never be realized." *C223*

2 COR. 12:9: "...My grace is sufficient for thee: for my strength is made perfect in weakness...."

"They should ask also that the Lord would enable them rightly to weigh...earthly things...to realize and, if necessary, to experience, how transitory and unsatisfactory are all things connected with selfishness of this present time, and those things which the natural mind craves — that they might be able to make a consecration and to appreciate the privilege of setting their affections upon things above and not on things beneath, and of sacrificing the latter for the former." *F155*

BEARING HIS REPROACH

HEB. 13:10-15: "We have an altar, whereof they have no right to eat which serve the tabernacle. For the bodies of those beasts, whose blood is brought into the sanctuary by the high priest for sin, are burned without the camp. [Lev. 6:30; 16:27] Wherefore Jesus also, that he might sanctify the people with his own blood, suffered without the gate. Let us go forth therefore unto him without the camp, bearing his reproach. For here have we no continuing city, but we seek one to come. By him therefore let us offer the sacrifice of praise to God continually, that is, the fruit of our lips giving thanks to his name. [Margin: confessing his name.]"

LEV. 6:30: "And no sin offering, whereof any of the blood is brought into the tabernacle of the congregation to reconcile withal in the holy place, shall be eaten: it shall be burnt in the fire."

LEV. 16:27: "And the bullock for the sin offering, and the goat for the sin offering, whose blood was brought in to make atonement in the holy place, shall one carry forth without the camp; and they shall burn in the fire their skins, and their flesh, and their dung."

SHOWING FORTH HIS PRAISES

1 PET. 2:9, *Diag*.: "But you are a chosen race, a royal priesthood, a holy nation, a people for a purpose; that you may declare the perfections of him who called you from darkness into his marvelous light."

FAITHFULNESS UNTO DEATH REQUIRED

1 TIM. 6:12: "Fight the good fight of faith, lay hold on eternal life, whereunto thou art also called, and hast professed a good profession before many witnesses."

"The way is narrow and difficult because the successful enduring of these tests is indispensable to those whom He would thus honor." *F125*

MATT. 7:14: "Because strait is the gate, and narrow is the way, which leadeth unto life, and few there be that find it."

"Those...who gladly '**lay down** their lives' voluntarily, seeking ways and means for serving the Lord, and counting it a pleasure and honor thus to sacrifice earthly comforts, conveniences, time, influence, means, and all that compose present life....joyful, willing sacrificers....will be...typified by...Melchizedek — a priest upon his throne — distributing to the world, during the Millennium, the blessings secured by the 'better sacrifices' during....this Gospel age." *F126*

2 TIM. 2:11, 12: "...if we be dead with him, we shall also live with him: If we suffer, we shall also reign with him:..."

"Prospective members of the New Creation are assured by the Lord." *F132*

JOHN 17:16: "They are not of the world, even as I am not of the world."

JOHN 15:16, 19: "...I have chosen you [out of the world], and ordained you, that ye should go and bring forth fruit, and that your fruit should remain: that whatsoever ye shall ask of the Father in my name, he may give it you....If ye were of the world, the world would love his own: but because ye are not of the world, but I have chosen you out of the world, therefore the world hateth you."

SACRIFICE VOLUNTARY

"God has a right to demand that all of his creatures shall approve righteousness and hate iniquity, or else consider themselves aliens from him — his enemies. But God does not demand that we shall **sacrifice** our lives in his service, nor for any other cause. Sacrifice...is...a voluntary act and not demanded by the law....

"Under present conditions, those who start to walk the path of...righteousness,...harmony with God, will...encounter opposition, either from within or from the world or from the Adversary. They find the path of righteousness...becoming...more difficult. To continue along the path of righteousness, in the midst of present sinful conditions, will ultimately cost the sacrifice of earthly interests, earthly ambitions, earthly friendships, etc." *F151, 152*

OBEDIENCE LEADS INTO SACRIFICE

"Here the parting of the ways is reached: the one,...leading to glory, honor, immortality, can be entered only by...humility, self-denial, and self-sacrifice....a rugged way, in which, however, the unseen ministering spirits help the pilgrim; and in which the gracious promises of Christ...shine...for their encouragement, assuring of grace sufficient, and help to the end...; and perseverance will show all things conspiring for their highest good, their ultimate membership in the New Creation and participation in the glorious work of the Millennial Kingdom." *F152*

THE REWARD

REV. 2:10: *Diag. Interlineary*: "...Be thou faithful till death, and I will give to thee the crown of the life."

2 PET. 1:3,4: "...his divine power hath given unto us all things that pertain unto life and godliness, through the knowledge of him that hath called us to glory and virtue: Whereby are given unto us exceeding great and precious promises: that by these ye might be partakers of the divine

nature, having escaped the corruption that is in the world through lust."

ROM. 2:5-7: "...God...Who will render...To them who by patient continuance in well doing seek for glory and honour and

immortality, eternal life..."

1 COR. 6:2,3: "Do ye not know that the saints shall judge the world?...Know ye not that we shall judge angels?..."

"Those who...desire to be fully the Lord's and fully to claim his favors...should...make a full consecration of themselves to the Lord, rendering to him their wills in respect to all things - their aims, their prospects, their means, and even their earthly loves should all be surrendered to the Lord; and in exchange they should accept, as the law of their being and the future conduct, the guidance of His Work and Spirit and providences assured that these will work out for them, not only a more glorious result as respects the life to come, but also greater blessings of heart in the present life." *F155*

THE DOOR STILL OPEN

"When the call to the high privilege of becoming members of...the bride...of Christ ceases, it by no means signifies that all of those already called are sure to be counted worthy....It will still be possible...to fall...." *B212*

"Those who will share with the Lord the coming glory must not only be **called** and **accepted** [chosen], but also **faithful**, even unto death. Rev. 17:14." *C210*

"There are three ways in which the closing of this door might be indicated: first, by a definite Bible statement of the exact date; second, by such a reversal of public sentiment with reference to the truth, that fidelity and zeal in its service would no longer meet with opposition, and when suffering with Christ for the truth's sake (Rom. 8:17) would be no longer possible; or third, by such a condition of affairs obtaining in the world that all opportunity for such service would be effectually obstructed, thus leaving no opportunities for candidates to enter into the work and to develop and prove their love and faithfulness by their activity and endurance. [**ROM. 8:17**: 'And if children, then heirs; heirs of God, and joint-heirs with Christ; if so be that we suffer with him, that we may be also glorified together.']

"Though we are definitely informed that the door will be shut sometime within this harvest period or end of the age, the Bible does not give the exact date; and, although after the great time of trouble there will be a grand reversal of public sentiment in favor of truth and justice, we have no intimation whatever that such a condition of affairs will obtain until after the harvest period is fully ended. But we have a clear intimation the **door will be shut** in the manner last named; for, before the Millennial day breaks,

we are forewarned of a dark night wherein no man can labor — 'The morning cometh and also the night.'" *C207, 208*

See also *Vol.2, Chapter 8*

NIGHT COMETH

ISA. 21:12: "...The morning cometh, and also the night:..."

JOHN 9:4: "I must work the works of him that sent me, while it is day: the night cometh, when no man can work."

ENTER IN

"If you see the '**door**' of opportunity for sacrifice and service open before you, enter in. But enter in quickly...." *C225*

SACRIFICE YOUR WILL

"It is not enough that you should sacrifice your will, plans, and arrangements: you might do all that, and then take up the will and plan of another;...you must bow to the divine will, and accept it as instead of your own, and become active in God's service, before you can be counted a new creature and an heir of the divine nature." *C351*

FAITHFUL UNTO DEATH

"And not only the death of the will, but also, actual death must be passed before we enter fully and **actually** the conditions of our 'new,' 'divine nature.'" *C352*

THE CALL

PSA. 45:10,11: "Hearken, O daughter, and consider, and incline thine ear; forget also thine own people, and thy father's house; So shall the king greatly desire thy beauty: for he is thy Lord; and worship thou him."

PROV. 23:26: "My son, give me thine heart, and let thine eyes observe my ways."

See also **ROM. 12:1,2**, previously cited.

A REASONABLE SERVICE

"To render all we have to the Lord's service is not only a reasonable thing, but an offering far to small, far less than we would like to render to him who has manifested such compassion and grace toward us. And we should feel thus, even if there were no rewards and blessings we should feel not only that a refusal to accept would be an indication also of weakness of mind, of judgment, which is unable to balance the trifling and transitory pleasures of self-will for a few short years, with an eternity of joy and blessing and glory, in harmony with the Lord." *Manna, Nov. 6; R2642:5*

See also Index: **Harvest**

THE HOLY SPIRIT

HOLY SPIRIT — DEFINITION

"A broad definition of the words 'Spirit of God,' or 'Holy Spirit,' would be the divine **will**, **influence**, or **power**, exercised...for any purpose...in harmony with holiness...through either mechanical or intelligent agencies,...since all are of his creation...." *E182*

"**Spirit**...is the translation of the Hebrew word ***ruach***...the Greek word ***pneuma***, whose...root-meaning...is **wind**....Because the wind is both **invisible** and **powerful ruach** and **pneuma**....came to represent any **invisible** power or influence....Since divine power is exercised through channels...beyond human sight,...this word 'spirit' came...to be applied to...the Lord's dealings....also...the **breath** of life, the **power** by which man lives, which is **invisible** ,...the **power** of the mind, which is **invisible**....Life itself is a power and is invisible, and hence it also was called spirit...." *E173*

"In the light of the Scriptures we may understand the Holy Spirit to mean—God's power exercised in any manner, but always according to lines of justice and love, and hence always a holy power." *E183*

See also Index: **Trinity**

RUACH

"...is translated '**blast**' 4 times, '**breath**' 28 times, '**mind**' 6 times, '**smell**' 8 times, '**wind**' and '**windy**' 91 times." *E173*

EXOD. 15:8: "...With the **blast** of thy nostrils the waters were gathered together."

GEN. 6:17; 7:15: "...all flesh wherein is the **breath** of life...."

JOB 12:10: "In whose hand is the...**breath** of all mankind."

ECCL. 3:19: "For that which befalleth the sons of men befalleth beasts;...as the one dieth, so dieth the other; yea, they have all one **breath**, so that a man hath no preeminence above a beast...."

GEN. 26:35: "Which were a grief of **mind** unto Isaac...."

GEN. 8:21: "And the Lord **smelled** a sweet savor...."

PSA. 115:6: "...Noses have they, but they **smell** not."

GEN. 8:1: "...God made a **wind** to pass over the earth...."

EXOD. 15:10: "Thou didst blow with thy **wind**...."

PSA. 148:8: "...stormy **wind** fulfilling his word."

ISA. 7:2: "...The trees of the wood are moved with the **wind**."

PNEUMA

REV. 13:15: "...To give **life** unto the image of the beast...."

1 COR. 14:12: "...Ye are zealous of **spiritual** gifts...."

JOHN 3:8: "The **wind** bloweth where it listeth, and thou hearest the sound thereof...."

A SPIRIT BEING

JOHN 4:24: "God is a Spirit...." — "a powerful but invisible being; likewise the angels are called spirits...." *E174*

2 COR. 3:17: "Now the Lord is that Spirit: and where the Spirit of the Lord is, there is liberty."

"Jesus, while...a man, was not designated a spirit being, but since his exaltation...is now a powerful and invisible being." *E175*

1 COR. 15:45: "...The last Adam [was made] a quickening spirit."

"The church...is promised change...to the likeness of her Lord...." *E175*

1 JOHN 3:2: "...We shall be like him; for we shall see him as he is."

JOHN 3:6: "That which is born of the flesh is flesh; and that which is born of the Spirit is spirit."

"The church is spoken of as being spiritual, inasmuch as she is in harmony with the Lord and is...begotten again by the Spirit to a...spirit nature,...that...begotten of the Spirit will, in the resurrection, be born of the Spirit." *E175*

A POWER: NOT A PERSON

PSA. 51:11: "Cast me not away from thy presence; and take not thy holy Spirit from me."

"There is absolutely no ground whatever for thinking of or speaking of the Holy Spirit of God as another God, distinct in personality from the Father and Son." *E169*

ISA. 42:1: "Behold my servant, whom I uphold; mine elect, in whom my soul delighteth; I have put my spirit upon him."

"...the holy spirit is not a separate and distinct person, but it is the divine mind or influence — the motive power of Divinity exercised everywhere and for any purpose, at his pleasure. God exercises his spirit or energy in a great variety of ways, using various agencies, and accomplishing various results." *R370:4*

LUKE 11:13: "If ye then, being evil, know how to give good gifts unto your children: how much more shall your heavenly Father give the Holy Spirit to them that ask him?"

"The holy Spirit is not a person, but the will, mind, energy, power, or disposition of a person. It is the Spirit of the Father. It is the Spirit of the Son." *R4306:6*

JOHN 17:20-22: "Neither pray I for these alone, but for them also which shall believe on me through their word; that they all may be one; as Thou, Father, art in me, and I in Thee, that they also may be one in us: that the world may believe that thou hast sent me. And the glory which thou gavest me I have given them; that they may be one, even as we are one."

"So each member of the church is to come into perfect harmony with the Father, and with the Son, by doing not their own wills, but by setting aside their own wills and accepting the will of Christ, which is the will of the Father. Thus, and thus only, will the Church ever come into the oneness for which our Lord here prayed." *E75*

"As the head of the Church is Christ Jesus, so the head of the entire Christ is God. This is the oneness for which Jesus prayed." *T126*

"This text is one of the best proofs that the Lord Jesus and the Father are not one in person. He could not have prayed for all of the church to be one in person." *R5358:3*

ACTS 1:5: "For John truly baptized with water; but ye shall be baptized with the Holy Spirit not many days hence."

"A baptism with a person is not a conceivable or proper thought; nor could it be a proper thought that the holy Spirit as a person is personally present in each believer's heart!" *R4165:5*

ACTS 1:8: "But ye shall receive power, after that the Holy Spirit

is come upon you."

"This promised power to understand times and seasons, and all things pertaining to a proper witnessing, applies to the whole Church from first to last; and under the guidance of the Holy Spirit, meat in due season concerning every feature of the plan is provided..." *B120*

ACTS 2:4: "And they were all filled with the Holy Spirit, and began to speak with other tongues, as the Spirit gave them utterance."

ACTS 4:31: "And when they had prayed, the place was shaken where they were assembled together; and they were all filled with the Holy Spirit, and they spake the word of God with boldness."

"...the fact that the holy Spirit was received of them all of itself implies that the Holy Spirit is not a person, but an influence, a power exerted by a person — the power or influence of God exerted in and upon his newly adopted children." *E210*

ROM. 15:13: "...that ye may abound in hope through the power of the Holy Spirit."

ROM. 15:19: "Through mighty signs and wonders, by the power of the Spirit of God."

HOW IT OPERATES

(a) Generative Power

GEN. 1:2: "...The **Spirit** of **God** moved upon the face of the waters."

PSA. 104:30: "Thou sendest forth thy spirit, they are created: and thou renewest the face of the earth."

EZEK. 37:9: "Then said he unto me, Prophesy unto the wind, prophesy, son of man, and say to the wind, Thus saith the Lord GOD; Come from the four winds, O breath, and breathe upon these slain, that they may live."

"Another use of the word spirit is in the sense of generative power or fecundity, as in Gen. 1:2, 'And the Spirit of God **moved** upon the face of the waters' — that is to say, the power of God, his vehicle of energy, fecundated waters, or rendered them fruitful, prolific. Similarly, 'Holy men of old spoke as they were **moved** by the Holy Spirit,' the holy influence or power of God, fecundated their minds, causing them to bring forth thoughts such as God wished to have expressed. (2 Pet. 1:21) Similarly, the skilled workmen whom Moses selected to prepare the paraphernalia of the Tabernacle were brought under the influence of the divine power, to the energizing or quickening of their faculties, without affecting them in any moral sense, even as the waters of the great deep were not affected in a moral sense. Thus it is written..." *E175*

GEN 2:4: "These are the generations of the heavens and of the earth when they were created, in the day that the Lord God made the earth and the heavens."

"...when we read 'Jehovah God created the heavens and the earth' we are not to suppose that he personally handled the elements. He used various agencies — 'He spake and it was done [he gave orders and they were promptly executed]; he commanded, and it stood fast.' (Psa. 33:6,9)" *E182*

JOB 26:13: "By his spirit he hath garnished the heavens."

PSA. 104:30: "Thou sendest forth thy spirit, they are created: and thou renewest the face of the earth."

(b) Through the Son (By the Son).

JOHN 1:3: "All things were made by him; and without him was not anything made that was made."

1 COR. 8:6: "But to us [there is but] one God, the Father, of whom are all things, and we in him; and one Lord Jesus Christ, by whom are all things, and we by him."

"...we are distinctly informed that 'All things are of the Father' — by his energy, his will, his Spirit, yet that energy, as we have previously seen, was exercised through his Son, the Logos." *E182*

COL. 1:16: "For by him were all things created, that are in heaven and that are in earth, visible and invisible...all things were created by him, and for him."

"...divine power was exercised through him in the creation of the various orders of angels." *R3921:1*

HEB. 1:2: "Hath in these last days spoken unto us by his Son, whom he hath appointed heir of all things, by whom also he made the worlds."

(c) Through Agencies.

2 KINGS 19:35: "And it came to pass that night, that the angel of the Lord went out, and smote in the camp of the Assyrians an hundred four score and five thousand."

"The word 'angel' here, as often elsewhere in the Scriptures, does not necessarily refer to a member of the angelic order of beings, but simply signifies 'messenger;' and God is as able to use winds or waves, lightnings or sandstorms, or pestilence, as any other agency in the execution of his will." *R2382:2*

PSA. 33:6: "By the word of the Lord were the heavens made; and all of the host of them by the breath of his mouth."

PSA. 33:9: "For he spake, and it was done; he commanded, and it stood fast."

"Whatever is accomplished by the Lord through either mechanical or intelligent agencies is as truly his work as though he were the direct actor, since all these agencies are his creation." *E182*

"Creation did not spring instantly into order;...time was used — six days or epochs...." *E182*

(d) Quickening Natural Faculties. (Given wisdom discretion, confidence.)

EXOD. 28:3: "And thou shalt speak unto all that are wise hearted, whom I have filled with the spirit of wisdom...."

EXOD. 31:3: "And I have filled him with the spirit of God, in wisdom and in understanding, and in knowledge, and in all manner of workmanship."

EXOD. 31:6: "...and in the hearts of all that are wise hearted I have put wisdom, that they may make all that I have commanded thee."

EXOD. 35:30, 31: "And Moses said unto the children of Israel, See, the LORD hath called...Bezaleel...And he hath

filled him with the **spirit** of God, in wisdom, in understanding, and in knowledge, and in all manner of workmanship."

See also verses 32-34

EXOD. 35:35: "Them hath he filled with wisdom of heart, to work all manner of work...even of them that do any work, and of those that devise cunning work."

"...the skilled workmen whom Moses selected to prepare the paraphernalia of the Tabernacle were brought under the influence of the divine power, to the energizing or quickening of their natural faculties, without affecting them in any moral sense." *E175*

ISA. 28:6: "For his God doth instruct him to discretion, and doth teach him."

NUM. 11:17: "...I will take of the Spirit which is upon thee, and will put it upon them; and they shall bear the burden of the people with thee...." [See verses 14, 18-28]

"God put upon Moses and the elders...**his Spirit**...for judging...preserving order, etc." *E176*

1 SAM. 11:6: "The Spirit of God came upon Saul...."

(But the Spirit was taken from some. e.g. The Spirit departed From Saul.)

1 SAM. 16:13,14: "The Spirit...came upon David...departed from Saul, and an evil spirit from the Lord troubled him."

"...a spirit...of dejection, loss of confidence.... This is said to have been from the Lord... removing from Saul his recognition and sustaining power and direction in the affairs of Israel." *E176*

(e) Through Godly Men (Inspiration)

2 SAM. 23:2: "The spirit of the Lord spake by me, and his word was in my tongue."

MATT. 10:1: "And when he had called unto him twelve disciples, he gave them power against unclean spirits, to cast them out, and to heal all manner of sickness and all manner of disease."

"This power was Holy Spirit power, the same and yet different from that which they received later on at Pentecost from the Father. It was the same in that the Holy Spirit or power of God is always the same power even tho it have differences of manifestation." *R2635:6*

MATT. 10:19,20: "But when they deliver you up, take no thought how or what ye shall speak: for it shall be given you in that same hour what ye shall speak. For it is not ye that speak, but the Spirit of your Father that speaketh in you."

"The Father's Spirit had been imparted to the Son, and it was the Son who shared that Spirit with those he sent out to preach in his name." *R5363:1*

LUKE 12:12: "For the Holy Spirit shall teach you in that same hour what ye ought to say."

"...none, even those professing to be teachers and ministers of the gospel, will be able to withstand the 'Sword of the Spirit' with which the knowledge of the truth arms you." *R825:4*

ACTS 1:16: "Men and brethren, this scripture must needs have been fulfilled, which the Holy Spirit by the mouth of David spake before concerning Judas, which was guide to them that took Jesus."

EPH. 4:11-13: "And he gave some apostles, and some prophets; and some evangelists; and some, pastors and teachers; For the work of the ministry, for the edifying of the body of Christ: Till we all come in the unity of the faith, and of the knowledge of the Son of God, unto a perfect man, unto the measure of the stature of the fulness of Christ."

1 PET. 1:10-12: "Of which salvation the prophets have inquired and searched diligently, who prophesied of the grace that should come unto you: searching what or what manner of time the Spirit of Christ which was in them did signify, when it testified beforehand the sufferings of Christ, and the glory that should follow. Unto whom it was revealed, that not unto themselves, but unto us they did minister the things, which are now reported unto you by them that have preached the gospel unto you with the Holy Spirit sent down from heaven."

2 PET. 1:21: "For the prophecy came not in olden time by the will of men: but holy men of God spake as they were moved by the **Holy Spirit**."

"...the holy influence or power of God, fecundated their minds, causing them to bring forth thoughts such as God wished to have expressed." *E175*

(f) Through Angels.

GEN. 22:11: "And the angel of the Lord called to him out of heaven, and said, Abraham, Abraham:"

GEN. 22:15: "And the angel of the Lord called to him out of heaven the second time."

GEN. 24:7: "The Lord God of heaven, which took me from my father's house, and from the land of my kindred, which spake unto me, saying, Unto thy seed will I give this land; he shall send his angel before thee, and thou shalt take a wife unto my son from thence."

2 KINGS 6:17: "And Elisha prayed, and said, Lord, I pray thee, open his eyes, that he may see. And the Lord opened

the eyes of the young man; and he saw: and, behold, the mountain was full of horses and chariots of fire round about Elisha."

"[Elisha] entreated the Lord on behalf of his servant that he might have an opening of the eyes, to see that all the mountains round about them were filled with spirit beings — 'horses and chariots of fire,' or like fire, as all spirit beings are described in Scripture." *R2349:6*

PSA. 34:7: "The angel of the Lord encampeth round about them that fear him, and he delivereth them."

"All the heavenly hosts are subject to the divine will and may be employed for the advancement of the divine cause according to divine wisdom." *R2140:6*

PSA. 91:11: "For he shall give his angels charge over thee, to keep thee in all thy ways."

ISA. 63:9: "...and the angel of his presence saved them."

ACTS 5:19: "But the angel of the Lord by night opened the prison doors, and brought them forth."

"The angel of the Lord delivered the apostles from prison, and yet left the prison doors unmolested; again, an angel delivered Peter from prison, the doors opening of their own accord." *R265:3*

ACTS 2:7,11: "And behold, the angel of the Lord came upon him, and a light shined in the prison: and he smote Peter on the side, and raised him up, saying, Arise up quickly. And his chains fell off his hands. And when Peter was come to himself, he said, Now I know of a surety, that the Lord hath sent his angel, and hath delivered me out of the hand of Herod, and from all the expectation of the people of the Jews."

WITNESS OF THE SPIRIT

"We will...be...only 'babes'..., seeking outward signs, in proof of relationship to the Lord, instead of the inward witness, through the Word...." *E225*

ROM. 8:16: "The Spirit itself beareth witness with our spirit, that we are the children of God."

"Whoever has taken the specified steps has the assurance, the 'witness' of the Word of God, that he is a child of God. To such the Word of God witnesses that they have joined the true Church, which is Christ's body." *E230*

"...if you desire evidences of your acceptableness with God, they are found in what he permits you to suffer for him and for his truth's sake." *R581:3*

"The giving of the Holy Spirit and its begetting to a new nature began at Pentecost, and has continued since." *R5681:5*

HEB. 10:15: "Whereof the Holy Spirit also is a witness to us."

"As soon as he had ascended up on high and presented his sacrifice on our behalf, he sent the Comforter, the holy spirit of adoption, into the hearts of his disciples (on the day of Pentecost)." *R1829:5*

"Again we are informed that the Holy Spirit was not yet given, because Jesus was not yet glorified, (John 7:39) indicating that as soon as Jesus would be glorified the Holy Spirit would be given to the waiting church." *R2075:5*

JOHN 7:39: "(But this spake he of the Spirit, which they that believe on him should receive: for the Holy Spirit was not yet given; because that Jesus was not yet glorified.)"

1 JOHN 5:8: "And there are three that bear witness on earth, the spirit, and the water, and the blood: and these three agree in one."

"And here are the **three** in the type bearing harmonious testimony that these consecrated ones are accepted in the Beloved. Water is the symbol of the 'word' ['washing of water by the word.'] And in the **type** Moses takes the place of water as representing 'The Law,' the oil representing **The Spirit**, and **the blood** representing **the price of our peace**." *R73:5*

ERRONEOUS VIEWS

"Many...know not whether they have it or...not. Others...claim that they have the witness...their happy **feelings**....But...it fails them in the times of greatest need...." *E226*

"Such...feel...happier and...drawing nearer to God...when...going straight into temptations. This accounts for some of the...'falls from grace.'...Trials and disappointments...designed to draw us near to our Father,...are partially lost..., because losing the...feelings...they lose many precious lessons obtainable only when leaning...upon the Lord's bosom...whilst passing through life's Gethsemanes." *E227*

"Others...judge of their sonship by their peace of mind:

ISA. 26:3: "'Thou wilt keep him in perfect peace, whose mind is stayed on thee....'

"but...the heathen and...worldly...apparently have peace of mind too....Then the dark hour comes, and they...are in torment lest they have grieved the Spirit...." *E228*

"Persons of large credulity...imagine they hear the Spirit's 'whisper'...though they...ascertain that the information 'whispered' was untrue. Other Christians...are perplexed that...they... have no such assurance." *E228*

"The difficulty lies largely in the...view that the Spirit is a person." *E228*

HOW TO KNOW THE WITNESS

"We may know God's mind or Spirit by his words and dealings." *E229*

HEB. 7:25: "...He is able also to save them to the uttermost that come unto God by him, seeing he ever liveth to make intercession for them."

"The questions...are:

"Was I ever drawn to Christ? — to recognize him as my Redeemer, through whose righteousness alone I could have access to the...Father, and be acceptable...?" *E229*

"Did I ever fully consecrate myself — my life, my time, my talents, my influence, my all — to God?" *E229*

"If this...also can be answered in the affirmative, the inquirer may rest fully assured that he has been accepted....If...still trusting in the merit of Jesus, and still consecrated to do the Lord's will, he may allow the...peace which this...brings, to fully possess his heart. This conviction...constructed from facts...is not...changeable, as...if built upon...feelings....If we find our faith...or our consecration slipping away, we...can...make...repairs...." *E229*

MARK 4:11: "And he said unto them, Unto you it is given to know the mystery of the kingdom of God; but unto them that are without, all these things are done in parables."

"Nor were they (the mysteries of God's grace) ever intended to be understood except by the elect." *R4053:6*

JOHN 3:33: "He that hath received his testimony hath set to his seal that God is true."

"Our Lord changeth not, but is...

[**HEB. 13:8**:] "'...the same yesterday, and today, and forever.'"

JOHN 15:2: "Every branch in me that beareth not fruit he taketh away: and every branch that beareth fruit, he purgeth it, that it may bring forth more fruit."

"It is possible for...branches...to be cut off...if they fail to bring forth the proper fruits of the Spirit of love....The Spirit...witnesses the rule of our...Father's dealing...chastisements, pruning, taking away of the dross, and a development of the fruit- bearing qualities. Hence, to have these experiences...is to have the witness of the Spirit that we are still in the 'Vine.'...If any one lack these disciplines, prunings, etc.,...he...has reason to doubt his acceptance...." *E230*

HEB. 12:7,8, *Diag.*: "If you endure discipline, God deals with you as with sons; for is there any son whom a father does not discipline? But if you are without discipline, of which all have become partakers, then truly you are spurious and not sons."

PSA. 25:14: "The secret of the Lord is with them that fear him, and he will show them his covenant."

"Even so much of the divine plan as was due to be revealed by the spirit and to be understood step by step during this Gospel age, was intended only for a special class, not for the world in general." *R2208:3*

"The fact that the Lord led into the light of 'present truth' and showed us the 'secret,' the 'mystery,' implies that he would not let us be plucked out of his hand and away from his leading unless the heart was at fault." *R4535:5*

JOHN 15:2: "...and every branch that beareth fruit, he purgeth it, that it may bring forth more fruit."

"If we have the trimmings and prunings that he gives to the fruitbearing branches, let us rejoice that we are in the good Husbandman's care and are in good condition." *R5023:4*

JOHN 15:18: "If the world hate you, ye know that it hated me before it hated you."

"These persecutions and oppositions from the world, the flesh and the devil are the hammer and chisel and polishing implements of the Lord, which he is using in the development of the New Creation." *F628*

"The Lord's followers in the present time are called upon to suffer persecutions for righteousness sake...because the Lord, wishing to test, prove and polish his people, is willing to permit the evil, opposing influences to serve his cause in the preparation of his elect for a future work of service." *R2415:3*

ROM. 8:5: "For they that are after the flesh do mind the things of the flesh; but they that are after the Spirit the things of the Spirit."

"If he is in Christ he has the new ambitions, the new hopes, the new aims, and however short he may at times come of realizing these aims and ambitions, his heart being right it will always revert to the divine standard." *R3202:3*

ROM. 8:9: "But ye are not in the flesh, but in the Spirit, if so be that the Spirit of God dwell in you. Now if any man have not the Spirit of Christ, he is none of his."

"...ye are 'new creatures' in Christ Jesus." *R3050:6*

"...so we who thus in consecration become 'dead with him,' sharing in his consecration, are not left in a death state, but may instantly rise through faith to a realization of our kinship to the Lord as New Creatures." *F436*

ROM. 8:29: (*Diag.*): "Because those whom he foreknew, he also predetermined to be copies of the likeness of his Son, for him to be a firstborn among many brethren."

"...if you are of this class thus conformed to the image of God's dear Son, if like him your will and effort is simply to know and do the will of God, if you are meek and lowly of heart, ready to receive instruction and profit by it at any cost, then take courage: you may thus be sure that you are one of those called to be of this elect class." *R1141:2*

1 COR. 2:14: "But the natural man receiveth not the things of the Spirit of God: for they are foolishness unto him: neither can he know them, because they are spiritually discerned."

"Only those who have come into this special relationship can understand." *R5462:4*

2 TIM 2:12: "If we suffer we shall also reign with him."

"Our willingness to suffer with Christ proves our harmony with the spirit of God, thus proving that we are the children of God." *R581:4*

2 TIM. 3:12: "...all that will live godly in Christ Jesus shall suffer persecution."

"If we have these evidences that we have come into God's family, if we are studying to know and to do his will, if we are having trials and difficulties in the pathway and are being rightly exercised thereby, we may count ourselves as his faithful people." *R5227:5*

HEB. 10:22; 11:6: "Let us draw near with a true heart in full assurance of faith, having our hearts sprinkled from an evil conscience....But without faith it is impossible to please him: for he that cometh to God must believe that he is, and that he is a rewarder of them that diligently seek him."

"The same Spirit assures such that if their hearts continue faithful....if they...gladly take up the cross daily seeking as best they are able to follow in the Master's footsteps, their probationary membership...will...be changed to actual membership...." *E230*

See also Index: **Consecration**

HEB. 12:7,8: "If we endure chastening, God dealeth with you as with sons: for what son is he whom the Father chasteneth not? But if ye be without chastisement, whereof all are partakers, then are ye bastards and not sons."

"All his children will be subjected to just such discipline as they need for the correction of faults, the implanting and developing of virtues, and for their training and establishment in righteousness, so that they cannot be moved." *R1721:2*

(a) World's Hatred a Witness

"If so, the Spirit...is...witnessing with our spirit (mind) that we are His....The spirit of the world in its most antagonistic form, will be manifested...amongst those who profess to be the children of God." *E236*

MATT. 10:25: "...If they have called the Master of the house Beelzebub, how much more [shall they call] them of his household?"

"If, therefore, we have been evilly spoken of, because of our identification with the Truth, and our service of it, we have in this an additional evidence or witness of the Spirit that we are in the right pathway." *E236*

"Had...Jesus...abstained from pointing out the false doctrines...,he would not have been... persecuted....But," *E236*

LUKE 16:15: "...that which is highly esteemed among men is abomination in the sight of God."

"So also it is with his followers: from a similar class, the Truth and those who have the Spirit of the Truth, and who follow the Lord's instruction, letting their light shine, will now incur hatred and persecution." *E236*

1 PET. 3:14: "But and if ye suffer for righteousness sake, happy are ye."

1 PET. 4:14: "If ye be reproached for the name of Christ, happy are ye."

"They have this witness of the Spirit to their faithfulness in the narrow way." *E237*

"The Lord indicates to the church that we may rejoice in any persecution, especially if we are in no way blameworthy." *R5779:4*

1 JOHN 3:13: "Marvel not, my brethren, if the world hate you."

"Such consecrated ones, pure in heart (in will or intention), realizing the object of present trials, glory in tribulations brought upon them by faithfulness to Christ and his Word, realizing that their experiences are similar to those of the Master, and that thus they have evidence that they are walking in the footsteps of his..." *R3281:4*

(b) Separate From the World

JOHN 15:19: "If ye were of the world, the world would love his own: but because ye are not of the world, but I have chosen you out of the world, therefore the world hateth you."

"The Spirit witnesses, through the Word of God, that those who are the Lord's people are separate from the world —

that their hopes and aims and general spirit, dispositions, are different." *E235*

2 TIM. 3:12: "Yea, and all that will live godly in Christ Jesus shall suffer persecution."

"If we have these evidences that we have come into God's family, if we are studying to know and to do his will, if we are having trials and difficulties in the pathway and are being rightly exercised thereby, we may count ourselves as his faithful people." *R5227:5*

(c) Knowledge of God's Plan a Witness

JOHN 14:26: "But the Comforter, which is the Holy Spirit, whom the Father will send in my name, he shall teach you all things, and bring all things to your remembrance, whatsoever I have said unto you."

JOHN 16:13: "Howbeit when he the Spirit of truth is come, he will guide you into all truth...and he will show you things to come."

"Furthermore, the Holy Spirit witnesses to us, through the Word, that if we are the children of God we will not be ignorant of things present nor of 'things to come,' because we will be enlightened and taught of God, through the Word of his grace — the Word of his Spirit." *E238*

1 COR. 2:14: "But the natural man receiveth not the things of the Spirit of God: for they are foolishness unto him: neither can he know them, because they are spiritually discerned."

"They are understood only by those who have the Spirit or mind of God, the Spirit of his plan, the Spirit of the Truth." *E202*

"This means that only the spirit-begotten may understand the deep things of God at all; and that their understanding would be in proportion as they attain more and more a filling, a saturation with the spirit of holiness, the spirit of God, the spirit of Christ, the spirit of the truth." *R5982:4*

HEB. 5:13,14: "...Everyone that useth milk is unskillful in the Word of righteousness: for he is a babe. But strong meat belongeth to them that are of full age, [even] those who by reason of use have their senses exercised to discern good and evil."

"The development in faith, fortitude, knowledge, self-control, patience, piety, brotherly kindness, love, will bring us into closer fellowship with the Father and with the Lord Jesus, so that the Lord will be able...to communicate to his...plans, as well as of his...character." *E238*

2 PET. 1:5-11: "...For if these things be in you and abound they make [you that ye shall] neither be barren nor unfruitful in the **knowledge** of our Lord Jesus Christ. But

he that lacketh these things is blind, **and cannot see afar off**....For if ye do these things, ye shall never fall. For so an entrance shall be ministered unto you abundantly into the everlasting kingdom of our Lord Jesus Christ."

JOHN 16:12,13,15: "I have yet many things to say unto you, Howbeit...the Spirit of truth... will guide you into all truth....shall take of mine, and shall show it unto you."

"Growth in...the fruits of the Spirit is dependent largely upon our growth in knowledge...upon our growth in the fruits of the Spirit....Each step of knowledge...step of duty and obedience, and each step of duty and obedience...a further step in knowledge, for so, **the Spirit witnesseth**...." *E239*

(d) Not Ashamed

MARK 8:38: "Whosoever...shall be ashamed of me and of my words...of him also shall the Son of man be ashamed...."

"Whoever...takes pleasure, on every suitable occasion, in acknowledging Jesus...and to... present the Word...does...have this as another witness of the Holy Spirit that he is a child of God, and an heir of the kingdom." *E237*

LUKE 12:8: "...Whosoever shall confess me before men, him shall the Son of man also confess...."

"If...they are ashamed to confess themselves his followers,...ashamed to own...the members of his body, and...to confess the doctrines...the Lord will be ashamed of them...." *E237*

MATT. 10:32: "Whoso therefore shall confess me before men, him will I confess also before my Father which is in heaven."

ROM. 1:16: "I am not ashamed of the gospel of Christ."

(e) Chastenings

(1) Different Degrees of Discipline

"An earthly parent rejoices most in the...promptly submissive child, for whom the word or look of reproof is sufficient...so also our Father in heaven declares his approval of those." *E233*

ISA. 66:5: "...that tremble at his word...."

(2) Judging Self

"This...class...judge themselves and...need less chastening of the Lord." *E233*

"To this class the Lord says,..." *E234*

PSA. 32:8: "...I will guide thee with mine eye."

PSA. 73:24: "Thou shalt guide me with thy counsel, and afterward receive me to glory."

"Contrast" *E234*

REV. 7:9,14: "...a great multitude...out of great tribulation...."

(3) Suffering for Righteousness

"Nor are Chastenings always...a 'witness' of... disapproval....As with our Lord, so...providence leads the faithful...into suffering and self-denial...as tests, by self-sacrifice, of... devotion to the Father's will, and righteousness. As our Lord was chastened for our transgressions,...so his followers in many respects suffer...by reason of the wrong-doings of others...to..." *E234*

COL. 1:24: "...fill up that which is behind of the afflictions of Christ,...for his body's sake, which is the church."

"Are...experiences...removing...anger, malice, hatred, envy, strife, selfishness, rudeness...? If so...we will no doubt be able to recognize growth...in meekness, patience, gentleness, brotherly kindness, love. Whoever...can realize such...has **this witness of the Spirit**." E234

(4) New Creature Sinneth Not

1 JOHN 5:18, *Diag.*: "...Every one who has been begotten of God does not sin...."

"The child of God...may err...but he will never **willingly** transgress....If...we would rather have God's will done, and his plan fulfilled, even though it should dash our fondest hopes and break every tender tie — then...our spirit... agrees with the witness of the Spirit...not only that we were once accepted into God's family, but that we are there still." *E235*

SEAL OF THE SPIRIT IN HEART AND HEAD

JOHN 6:27: "...for him hath God the Father sealed."

"...our Lord Jesus...was the first of the house of sons to be thus sealed." *E246*

2 COR. 1:22: "Who hath also sealed us, and given the earnest of the Spirit in our hearts."

"This seal of covenant relationship, of sonship and heirship, is not an outward sign upon our foreheads. The seal or pledge of the Holy Spirit is in the heart of the sealed." *E247*

"We are not to understand sealing in the forehead to be identical with this sealing in the heart, although the two are closely related. Many of the Lord's dear people throughout the past have had the seal of the Lord upon their hearts and characters, but not upon their foreheads — they did not have the intellectual knowledge of God and his glorious plan which he has provided for all of his faithful of the present time..." *R3991:6*

2 TIM. 2:19: "Nevertheless the foundation of God standeth sure, having this seal, The Lord knoweth them that are his."

"(God) knows those who become his, by being begotten by the Word." *R1698:6*

EPH. 1:13,14: "In whom [Christ] ye also trusted, after that ye heard the word of truth, the gospel of your salvation; in whom also, after that ye believed, ye were sealed with the Holy Spirit of the promise, which is the earnest of our inheritance."

"Seals...were used...as a signet or signature, a mark of...acknowledgment...." *E246*

"The Father...does the sealing through Christ **with** the Holy Spirit, which itself is the **seal**." *E246*

"The seal of the Spirit of promise unto the day of deliverance is but another form of expressing the thought — we (the Church) 'have the first fruits of the Spirit' — the hand-payment as it were, binding the contract or covenant between the Lord and us, and assuring us that if we faint not we shall inherit the promise to the full." *E247*

ACTS 2:33: "...Having received of the Father the promise of the Holy Spirit, he hath shed forth this, which ye now see and hear."

"There is a connection between this sealing and the **promise**....It is an advanced evidence...of God's covenant with the 'sealed' one, that 'the...promises'...are true; and that he shall inherit those...blessings after...the **tests** of his love and devotion which God will apply." *E247*

"The Apostle...identifies the 'promise' with...

EPH. 4:30: "'And grieve not the holy Spirit of God, whereby ye are sealed unto the day of redemption [**deliverance**].'" *E247*

"...those who have and are led by the Spirit of God have therein an earnest or pledge of their future inheritance as the sons of God." **reference unknown**

"We...

ROM. 8:23: "'...have the first fruits of the Spirit....'

"...the hand payment...binding the contract...assuring us that if we faint not we shall inherit the promise...." *E247*

"The seal...is in the heart...hence...

REV. 2:17: "'...no man knoweth saving he that receiveth [it].'

2 COR. 1:21,22: "'Now he which stablisheth us with you in Christ, and hath anointed us, is God; who hath also sealed us, and given the earnest of the Spirit in our hearts.'

"This...seal...is the Spirit of love which is at-one with the Father and all his holy arrangements, crying out...

ROM. 8:15: "'...Abba, Father.'

PSA. 40:8: "'I delight to do thy will, O my God....'

"He who has this seal...not only seeks to do the will of the Father but...finds...

1 JOHN 5:3: "'...his commandments are not grievous.'" *E247*

"The...sealing as sons...is, then, one of the most advanced 'witnesses of the Spirit' — the very cream of Christian experiences....Before attaining this...we must receive...the **anointing** by coming into the anointed body...being **begotten** of the Spirit...unto sanctification of our spirits to know and do the Lord's will. This experience comes after we have been quickened...to the service of righteousness: It is an evidence, so to speak that we have passed from the embryo condition to one in which God can consider us sons and seal us as such." *E248*

"All...should seek to attain that...fullness of harmony...that he can acknowledge and seal....Let all be careful...not to quench...this ...treasure; — not to turn this spirit of love and joy...into a spirit of heaviness, darkness, grief....but to keep it ever bright and fresh...." *E248*

SANCTIFICATION OF THE SPIRIT

JOHN 17:17: "Sanctify them through thy truth: thy word is truth."

"The word sanctify has the significance of set apart, made holy." *R5319:3*

"All...thus sanctified are thence — forth '**new creatures in Christ'** Jesus." *E243*

JOHN 17:19: "And for their sakes I sanctify myself, that they also might be sanctified through the truth."

"There are two parts to this work of sanctification. The first is that which we do in the very beginning, when we set ourselves apart, with the desire to know and to do the will of God. The second is that which comes gradually — the teachings and instructions which set before us things that we did not perceive before...This is a deeper setting apart, and is done by God, in as much as it is done by the Father's arrangement." *R5319:3*

ROM. 15:16: "...that the offering up of the Gentiles might be acceptable, being sanctified by the Holy Spirit."

1 COR. 1:2: "...Them that are sanctified in Christ Jesus...."

"It is by...our acceptance of the divine plan and provision...our coming to...sanctification of the Spirit, that we are one with Christ...." *E243*

"All who are thus sanctified are thenceforth 'new creatures in Christ Jesus.' This sanctification in Christ is not aside from the spirit of God, nor aside from the Word of God." *E243*

1 COR. 6:11: "But ye are washed, but ye are sanctified, but ye are holy, in the name of the Lord Jesus, and by the Spirit of our God."

"Sanctification signifies a **setting apart** or separating....The evidence which we have of our justification and sanctification comes to us through the Word, and is called 'seal' and 'witness' of the Spirit in us." *E241*

"This cleansing, this sanctifying, comes not merely through the

reading of the truth, or the mental application of the truth, but through heart-thinking on the truth." *R5246:6*

EPH. 5:25,26: "...Christ also loved the church, and gave himself for it; that he might sanctify and cleanse it with the washing of water by the Word."

"It is the holy Spirit of God, operating through the Word...that...shall produce in us cleansing, justification, sanctification." *E243*

"...the sanctifying power or spirit in us is the spirit of truth." *R375:1*

"The Word of Truth cleanses our hearts by showing us our imperfections in contrast with the divine perfections." *R4662:6*

1 THES. 4:3: "This is the will of God, even your sanctification."

"So we have, first of all, our setting of ourselves apart; and then God's acceptance by our begetting of the holy Spirit as new creatures and his continued work in us." *R5332:3*

1 THES. 5:23: "...The very God of peace sanctify you wholly...."

"It is God who sanctifies, and the...channel is the holy Spirit...." *E242*

"Their sanctification is of God by Jesus." *R4528:3*

2 THES. 2:13: "God hath from the beginning chosen you to salvation through sanctification of the Spirit and belief of the truth."

"...those who shall be with him (Jesus) are **called** and **chosen** through sanctification of the Spirit and belief of the truth, and faithful." *R442:6*

"Through sanctification of the spirit (i.e. consecration of their hearts and minds.)" *R831:4*

1 TIM. 4:5: "For it is sanctified by the word of God and prayer."

HEB. 2:11: "For both he that sanctifieth and they who are sanctified are all of one: [of one spirit, of one mind, begotten of the Spirit of Truth], for which cause he is not ashamed to call them brethren." *E244*

"It is by reason of our sanctification of spirit that we are one." *R375:1*

HEB. 10:10: "By the which will we are sanctified through the offering of the Body of Jesus Christ once for all."

"We could not sanctify ourselves." *R5877:5*

HEB. 13:12: "Wherefore Jesus also, that he might sanctify the people with his own blood, suffered without the gate."

1 PET. 1:2: "Elect according to the foreknowledge of God the Father, through sanctification of the Spirit, unto obedience...."

"If the Holy Spirit of God (influence of the truth) operating upon them shall bring them to...full obedience (sanctification) to the Father's will and plan and providence, then they shall constitute the elect." *E243*

"The only sanctification recognized in Scripture as the good, acceptable and perfect will of God, is a sanctification of the spirit (mind) through belief of the truth." *R377:4*

"Thus the Spirit, through the Word brings about our complete sanctification." *R5877:6*

PRAYING FOR THE SPIRIT

MATT. 7:7: "Ask, and it shall be given you; seek, and ye shall find; knock, and it shall be opened unto you."

"And while asking, it is our duty to be seeking the things which we lack, the holy Spirit of love to fill our hearts." *R2590:2*

MATT. 21:22: "And all things, whatsoever ye shall ask in prayer, believing, ye shall receive."

MARK 11:24: "Therefore I say unto you, What things soever ye desire, when ye pray, believe that ye receive them, and ye shall have them."

"If the Lord's consecrated people could all be brought to the point where the chief aim in life, the burden of all their prayers, would be that they might have a larger measure of the Spirit of the Lord, the spirit of holiness, the spirit of the truth, the Spirit of Christ, the spirit of a sound mind, what a blessing it would mean!" *R2866:1*

LUKE 11:13: "If ye then, being evil, know how to give good gifts unto your children: how much more shall your heavenly Father give the Holy Spirit to them that ask him?"

"The Heavenly Father is pleased to have us...ask for more of the holy Spirit — a disposition...in harmony with his Spirit: and...will be pleased to so order the affairs of such that hindrances to the Spirit...shall be overcome....We need...the Lord's wisdom and providence...to help us remove...obstructions." *E223*

"The Spirit of holiness in abundance can only be received by those who earnestly desire it and seek it by prayer and effort. The...spirit of the world must be driven out....Self-will must also give place....As we are emptied of all things else....we are ready to receive of his fullness...." *E223*

"Yet the giving of this holy Spirit is a gradual process, and we are enabled to receive it only in proportion as we are emptied of the worldly or selfish spirit." *R4983:6*

"He did not mean that we must necessarily use the words, 'Give us the holy Spirit,' or that we should pray for a Pentecostal blessing, as do some well-meaning friends; but that we should ask for the spirit of the truth, of a sound mind, for the wisdom that comes from above." *R5202:3*

LUKE 18:1: "And he spake a parable unto them to this end, that men ought always to pray, and not to faint."

"While it is entirely out of harmony with God's Word to pray for another **baptism** of the holy Spirit, it is right to pray to be kept filled with the Spirit." *R376:2*

"The holy spirit is the one thing which the new creature needs." *R5310:6*

JOHN 6:63: "...The words that I speak unto you, they are spirit and they are life."

JOHN 14:13: "And whatsoever ye shall ask in my name, that will I do, that the Father may be glorified in the Son."

JOHN 14:16: "And I will pray the Father, and he shall give you another Comforter, that he may abide with you forever."

"And the holy Spirit was given as a guide and comforter of **the heirs** of immortality, ever since Jesus was glorified." *R385:4*

"Our Lord spoke of the holy Spirit as the Comforter, and he mentions himself also as a Comforter." *R3434:3*

"Thus our Lord's promise implied that the holy Spirit which the Father would send in Jesus' name and as Jesus' representative would be near his followers, a present help in every time of need — the holy power by which he would guide and direct his

people..." *E203*

JOHN 15:7: "If you abide in me and my words abide in you, ye shall ask what ye will, and it shall be done unto you."

"We may pray for the holy Spirit, for more love, more gentleness, more patience, more wisdom from on high." *R5203:1*

JOHN 16:24: "...ask, and ye shall receive, that your joy many be full."

"The graces of the holy Spirit are specially stated to be open to our requests and corresponding efforts." *R2006:1*

ACTS 8:15: "Who when they were come down prayed for them that they might receive the Holy Spirit."

EPH. 3:14,16-19: "...I bow my knees unto the Father...that he would grant you...that Christ may dwell in your hearts by faith: That ye, being rooted and grounded in love, may be able to comprehend with all saints what is the breadth, and length, and depth, and height; and to know the love of Christ, which passeth knowledge, that ye might be filled with **all the fullness of God**."

"The provision...made....we find...in the Word of truth...." *E224*

COL. 1:9: "For this cause we also, since the day we heard it, do not cease to pray for you, and to desire that ye may be filled with the knowledge of his will in all wisdom and understanding."

"...submitting their judgments on every subject to the will of the Lord, and walking according to his directions in every matter, and in every particular. They have **his wisdom, his Spirit** to guide them." *R2263:3*

JAS. 1:5: "If any of you lack wisdom, let him ask of God, that giveth to all men liberally, and upbraideth not; and it shall be given him."

"Grace from on high is needed, is promised, and should be earnestly sought." *F506*

"These, therefore, who would take the wisest course should promptly admit their own unwisdom and seek for divine direction, divine wisdom." *R2262:3*

1 JOHN 5:14,15: "...if we ask anything according to his will, he heareth us. And if we know that he hear us, whatsoever we ask, we know that we have the petitions that we desire of him."

"Our petitions, our requests, our cries to the Lord, therefore, should be for the holiness of heart, for the filling of his Spirit, for the spiritual food, refreshment, strength." *R3338:6*

"This, therefore must be continually our prayer to the end of life's journey, that we may be filled with the Spirit of the Lord." *R3665:4*

"When therefore, we pray for the Holy Spirit, and to be filled with the Lord's Spirit, we are to look about us and

find the provision which he has made for the answer to these prayers." *E225*

FILLED WITH THE SPIRIT

LUKE 1:15: "For he shall be great in the sight of the Lord, and he shall drink neither wine nor strong drink; and he shall be filled with the Holy Spirit, even from his mother's womb."

"The prenatal influence upon John the Baptist were such that, from his birth, his heart was inclined toward God and holiness." *R1916:1*

LUKE 1:41: "And his father Zacharias was filled with the Holy Spirit, and prophesied."

LUKE 2:40: "And the child grew, and waxed strong in spirit, filled with wisdom: and the grace of God was upon him."

ACTS 1:5: "For John truly baptized with water; but ye shall be baptized with the Holy Spirit not many days hence."

ACTS 2:4: "And they were all filled with the Holy Spirit."

"This text describes a twofold operation of the Holy Spirit: (1) It was the mind, disposition, Spirit of God, operating in the disciples, as the Spirit of adoption, bringing their hearts into sympathy and touch with the Father and with the glorified Redeemer. (2) God's Holy Spirit or power or influence acted upon them, conferring special miraculous gifts for a testimony to the world, and for the establishment of the Church." *E268*

"That to be **baptized** with the Spirit, is to be **filled** with the Spirit, seems clear by comparing the **promise** of Christ (Acts 1:5) and the fulfillment." *R198:6*

ACTS 4:8: "Then Peter, filled with the Holy Spirit, said unto them..."

"If Peter had been filled with fear he would not have spoken to them as he did to this Court." *R2939:6*

ACTS 4:31: "...and they were all filled with the Holy Spirit, and they spake the word of God with boldness."

"This (the Holy Spirit) is the secret of all power in the work of the Lord." *R1917:1*

"As the apostles answered the questions propounded, these clerics must have perceived that the Spirit of Christ in his followers was still able, not only to perform miracles, but to endow those humble fishermen with eloquence and courage to fully defend their position and voice the truth." *R4316:3*

ACTS 9:17: "...the Lord, even Jesus, that appeared unto thee in the way as thou camest, hath sent me, that thou

mightest receive thy sight, and be filled with the Holy Spirit."

"...under the power of the holy Spirit he was granted many gifts of the Spirit..." *R2118:2*

ACTS 13:9: "Then Saul (who also is called Paul) filled with the Holy Spirit, set his eyes on him."

"...the power to cast them (devils) out was one of these conferred upon the twelve apostles, and afterward upon the seventy that were sent out. The same power was possessed and exercised by the Apostle Paul." *R2173:2*

ROM. 8:9: "...If any man **have not** the Spirit of Christ, he is none of his."

"It rests largely with our use of the means provided, how fully we may be filled with his spirit...." *E244*

"Our mortal bodies are leaky vessels...." *E245*

1 COR. 12:25-28: "That there be no schism in the body; but that the members should have the same care one for another. And whether one member suffer, all the members suffer with it; or one member be honored, all the members rejoice with it. Now ye are the body of Christ, and members in particular. And God hath set some in the church, first apostles, secondarily teachers...."

"If we neglect the Word;...prayer,....to assemble ourselves...we will fail to get the...helps which every joint supplieth...including...various members which He sets in the body for the exposition of his Word...." *E245*

2 COR. 4:7: "...We have this treasure in earthen vessels, that the excellency of the power may be of God, and not of us."

"To be filled with his Spirit....we need to keep close to the Lord, and to the fellow-members of his body — close in sympathy, in love, in cooperation; and...close to the Word." *E245*

EPH. 3:19: "And to know the love of Christ, which passeth knowledge, that ye might be filled with all the fulness of God."

"He who is filled with the Spirit of Christ, and with a full appreciation of the love which he manifested, will have the Father's Spirit in full measure." *E224*

"The measure of our filling will correspond with the measure of our emptying of the spirit of self-will, and filling with the spirit of faith and obedience." *R2456:1*

EPH. 4:15,16: "But speaking the truth in love may grow up into him in all things, which is the head, even Christ: from whom the whole body fitly joined together and compacted by that which every joint supplieth, according to the

effectual working in the measure of every part, maketh increase of the body unto the edifying of itself in love."

"With the Lord we may have intercourse through prayer...the members of his body, and...the Scriptures....with the apostles...contact with their words. If we cannot have...personal fellowship with the members of the church, we may...through the mails, and...printed page...." *E246*

EPH. 5:18-20: "...Be filled with the Spirit; speaking to yourselves in psalms and hymns and spiritual songs, singing and making melody in your heart to the Lord; giving thanks always...."

"Our joys, our pleasures, our intoxications, must be of the spiritual kind. We must be so enthused, so enraptured, with the heavenly things, with the joy and peace and blessing which accompany the eating and drinking at the Lord's table, and being filled with his spirit, that the intoxicants of earthly joys will have less and less attraction for us." *R2873:6*

"The 'Spirit of Truth' stands ready to give us the **filling** we desire, but we must partake of — eat — the feast, or we will not be filled." **reference unknown**

PHIL. 1:11: "Being filled with the fruits of righteousness, which are by Jesus Christ, unto the glory and praise of God."

"...the 'fruits of the spirit' are to be encouraged, to be cultivated more and more, that they may yield the full, perfect fruitage of love toward God, to each other, and the love of sympathy toward the world." *E180*

COL. 1:9: "For this cause we also, since the day we heard it, do not cease to pray for you, and to desire that ye might be filled with the knowledge of his will in all wisdom and spiritual understanding."

HOLY SPIRIT A TEACHER AND GUIDE (GUIDING INTO ALL TRUTH)

LUKE 3:10: "Unto you it is given to know the mysteries of the kingdom of God."

"...those who accepted the Lord as the Savior and who took upon themselves the required vow of faithfulness in walking in his footsteps unto death — these were granted special enlightenment." *R5088:1*

JOHN 5:39: "Search the Scriptures...."

"We hear the Apostle Paul commending the Bereans' noble conduct..." *E204*

JOHN 6:45: "It is written in the prophets, And they shall all be taught of God."

"The Father himself, the great Jehovah, is not only the great lawgiver but also the Great Teacher of his own law." *E50*

"The fact that the Great Teacher is present superintending the 'harvest work' is, we believe, a further assurance along this line." *R3856:5*

JOHN 6:63: "The **words** that I speak unto you, they are spirit and they are life."

"Our Lord indicated the channel through which this power of God, 'the Spirit of Truth,' would come to his people." *E204*

"That is, My words express the...Spirit of God. Hence we have...as necessary to our victory, the study of the Word...." *E204*

JOHN 14:26: "But the Comforter, which is the Holy Spirit, whom the Father will send in my name, he shall teach you all things, and bring all things to your remembrance, whatsoever I have said unto you."

"It also acts upon us by helping our infirmities and enabling us to comprehend his Word." *R372:3*

"...not until the holy Spirit was given as a comforter, a guide into all truth and a revealer of things to come, was the precious import of this declaration of Jehovah made manifest to his saints (The gospel church), as it has been through his holy apostles and prophets." *R3052:3*

JOHN 16:13: "Howbeit when he the Spirit of truth is come, he will guide you into all truth...and he will show you things to come."

"It has been so — the Spirit of truth has been showing to the church during this age more and more of the coming glory and glorious work of Christ, and the depth of the riches of God's plans to be fulfilled in him." *R372:2*

"Thus during this age the true **followers** of Christ have been **led** into a more and more understanding of God's truth, and a fuller unfolding of the mystery of God." *R368:3*

"This privilege of being shown things to come is granted in order, first, that we may not be overwhelmed with fear and discouragement at the seeming calamities of the future; secondly, that we may be co-workers together with God in harmony with his plan; and, thirdly, in order that, seeing our future relationship to that plan, we may be fully prepared to enter into that new relationship and its duties and privileges." *R1354:2*

ACTS 17:11: "...in that they...searched the scriptures daily..."

ROM. 8:14: "For as many as are led by the Spirit of God, they are the sons of God."

"The experiences of these sons of God enable them to grow in grace, in knowledge and in love, that thus they may be fitted and prepared for positions on the spirit plane." *R5583:3*

1 COR. 2:10: "But God hath revealed them unto us by his Spirit: for the Spirit searcheth all things, yea, the deep things of God."

"The test here given of our possession of the Spirit is our knowledge of his plans and deep things which are hidden from the worldly..." *R373:3*

"...the 'spirit of a sound mind' which they receive, and the

guidance of the holy Spirit, enable them to see 'the deep things of God,' in those things which were written aforetime for their admonition." *R2834:6*

"...only those who are begotten of the holy Spirit will be able to understand in the sense of fully appreciating these 'deep things of God.'" *R4452:6*

"These blessings for the world, however, are not to be clearly seen or appreciated yet, except by those who are especially taught of God — those who have been begotten of the holy Spirit and thus enabled to understand 'the deep things of God.'" *R5597:2*

1 COR. 2:14: "But the natural man receiveth not the things of the Spirit of God: for they are foolishness unto him: neither can he know them, because they are spiritually discerned."

"God has caused them (the deep things) to be so written that only the spirit-begotten can fully comprehend them." *R5838:1*

"...even after we have been begotten of the holy Spirit, our ability to understand spiritual things deepens, not only upon our study of the Scriptures,...but also upon the measure of the holy Spirit which we possess." *R5982:4*

GAL. 1:12: "For I neither received it of man, neither was I taught it, but by the revelation of Jesus Christ."

EPH. 1:18: "The eyes of your understanding being enlightened..."

"The eyes of our understanding are to be opened toward God through the promises of his Word — through a discernment and understanding of the truth." *F142*

EPH. 3:3: "How that by revelation he made known unto me the mystery..."

"Paul tells us that he had special revelations from the Lord, and claims for his writings that they are specially inspired." *R435:2*

EPH. 3:5: "Which in other ages was not made known unto the sons of men, as it is now revealed unto his holy apostles and prophets by the Spirit."

EPH. 3:18: "May be able to comprehend with all saints what is the breadth, and length, and depth, and height;"

"Only the saints can comprehend by the holy Spirit, and that in proportion as they receive the holy Spirit, the holy mind, the holy thoughts, replacing and displacing the unholy thoughts and sentiments of the natural man." *R2892:4*

EPH. 4:21: "If so be that ye have heard him, and have been taught by him, as the truth is in Jesus."

COL. 1:9: "...that ye might be filled with the knowledge of his will in all wisdom and spiritual understanding."

"...the acceptance of these of **Christ as their wisdom** makes them really wiser than others." *R2263:3*

COL. 1:26: "Even the mystery which hath been hid from ages and from generations, but now is made manifest to his saints."

"'...the mystery' — revealed only to the saints and hidden from all others." *R4492:1*

"Now, under the revelation of God, we see the unfolding of the mystery." *R5054:6*

1 THES. 4:9: "...ye yourselves are taught of God to love one another."

"One of the first effects of a knowledge of the grace of God in Christ, and of a full, thorough consecration to the Lord, is this love for all fellow servants — 'brethren.'" *R2196:2*

2 TIM. 3:16,17: "All scripture...given by inspiration of God...is profitable...that the man of God may be...thoroughly furnished unto all good works."

"Any counsel from any other quarter is not to be received by Christians, and is sure to be misleading." *R2414:1*

"We are not therefore to expect visions or revelations or any kind of communications from the Lord or the holy angels." *R5355:1*

HEB.2:1: "...We ought to give the more earnest heed to the things which we have heard, lest...we...let them slip."

2 PET. 1:19: "We have also a more sure word of prophecy; whereunto ye do well to take heed, as unto a light that shineth in a dark place, until the day dawn, and the day star arise in your hearts."

"The promise of being 'filled with the spirit'...is...to those who search it earnestly, seeking to understand...anxious to obey it....It is easy to let spiritual things slip (Heb. 2:1)....It behooves all...to live...very close to his Word, lest the Spirit

of God be quenched, and we be filled...with the spirit of the world." *E205*

"The only ones who will see the path of righteousness distinctly will be those guided by the 'lantern' — God's Word." *R4988:1*

"The holy Spirit is the light of the church, by which we are being specially guided into the truth." *R5339:2*

1 JOHN 2:20 (*Diag.*): "But ye have an anointing from the Holy One; you all know it."

"The one receiving the anointing should know it, whether others know it or not." *R2224:6*

1 JOHN 2:27: "The anointing which ye have received of him abideth in you, and ye need not that any man teach you: but as the same anointing teacheth you all things, and is truth, and is no lie, and even as it hath taught you, ye shall abide in him."

"The word 'anointing' and the word 'unction' carry with them the thought of oiling, making smooth, lubricating. From earliest times God has used oil as a type of the holy Spirit." *R2225:1*

BEGETTING OF THE SPIRIT

JOHN 1:13 (*Diag.*): "Who were begotten not of blood, nor of the will of the flesh, nor of the will of man, but of God."

"*...gennao* when used in connection with God, should always be rendered beget or begotten." *R837:1*

"(This) refers to our begetting of the holy Spirit, whereas our birth of the holy Spirit is the Scriptural designation for the resurrection." *R4108:2*

ACTS 2:4: "And they were all filled with the Holy Spirit."

"The outpouring of the holy Spirit upon the consecrated believers constituted their begetting of the Spirit to the new nature..." *R2820:1*

1 COR. 4:15: "For though ye have ten thousand instructors in Christ, yet have ye not many fathers: for in Christ Jesus I have begotten you through the gospel."

"In their begetting of the spirit of the truth, although that truth may be presented through human agencies, the begetting cannot be accomplished by the will of man." *R2409:4*

JAS. 1:18: "Of his own will begat he us with the word of truth."

"The saints are said to be begotten of God through the word of truth. That is, they receive the first impulse in the divine life from God through his Word." *E196*

1 PET. 1:3: "Blessed be the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, which according to his abundant mercy hath begotten us again unto a lively hope."

"...those who are begotten of God, those who have experienced a change of nature, who were first begotten according to the flesh, as children of Adam, and who have been begotten again — begotten of God." *R5742:2*

"The Scriptures clearly point out the heavenly Father as the begetter in the regeneration of the Church, the Bride of Christ." *E143*

1 PET. 1:23 (*Diag. orig.*): "Having been begotten again."

"He (God) calls it a begetting, in the sense that a new life has started. The spiritual nature begins in us the moment we receive this begetting." *R5392:4*

1 JOHN 2:29, (*Diag.*): "...everyone practicing righteousness has been begotten by him."

"The word born...is erroneous and misleading; begotten is the proper translation of gennao in this case." *R3476:3*

1 JOHN 3:9, (*Diag.*): "No one who has been begotten by God practices sin: because his seed abides in him; and he cannot sin, because he has been begotten by God."

"So long as these are under such holy control...possessing the holy will, they could not sin wilfully — could not practice sin in their lives." *R5742:5*

1 JOHN 4:7, (*Diag.*): "...everyone who loves has been begotten by God, and knows God."

"Thus in 1 John 2:29; 3:9; 4:7; 5:1,18; *gennao* should be **begotten**, because God, (masculine) is the active agent." *A278*

1 JOHN 5:1,4,18, (*Diag.*): "Every one who believes that Jesus is the Anointed one, has been begotten by God; and every one who loves the begetter, loves the one begotten by him. Because all that have been begotten by God overcomes the world:...We know that every one who has been begotten by God does not sin; but the one begotten by God guards himself and the evil one does not lay hold of him."

"Whoever is to be of the anointed company must have a knowledge of the privilege of coming into relationship with God through Christ." *R5550:2*

TYPES OF THE ANOINTING OF THE SPIRIT

EXOD. 29:7: "Then shalt thou take the anointing oil, and pour it upon his head, and anoint him."

"Aaron, the typical High Priest, represented Jesus, the Head, and the Church as members of the body — the great antitypical High Priest." *T29*

EXOD. 30:23-25: "Take thou also unto thee principal spices, of pure myrrh five hundred shekels, and of sweet cinnamon half so much, even two hundred and fifty shekels, and of sweet calamus two hundred and fifty shekels, And of cassia five hundred shekels, after the shekel of the sanctuary, and of oil olive an hin: And thou shalt make it an oil of holy ointment, an ointment compound after the art of the apothecary: it shall be an holy anointing oil."

"This oil typifies the Holy Spirit of adoption whereby we, the real 'royal priesthood,' are sealed as sons of God. Only the consecrated ones, the priests, are ever to be thus anointed." *T29*

EXOD. 30:30: "And thou shalt anoint Aaron and his sons, and consecrate them, that they may minister unto me in the priest's office."

"Hence also the antitypical priests are merely partakers of the spirit of Christ, and only those who are in Christ Jesus are partakers of the anointing which seals all those who will be recognized as the heirs of God's promises, and Joint-heirs with Jesus Christ their Lord." *T37*

LEV. 8:12: "And he poured of the anointing oil upon Aaron's head, and anointed him, to sanctify him."

PSA. 23:5: "...thou anointest my head with oil:"

"For he hath given him to be head over **the church** (of the first-born), which is His body. As Jesus was foreordained to be **the anointed one**, so we also were chosen to the same anointing of the spirit as members of his body and under him as our head." *R134:3*

"That holy anointing oil used on the priests and kings of Israel typified the Holy Spirit which came upon the church representatively in Jesus. And this same anointing has come down over all the members of the church which is his body." *R5654:5*

PSA. 133:2: "It is like the precious ointment upon the head, that ran down upon the beard, even Aaron's beard: that went down to the skirts of his garment."

"The oil 'ran down...to the skirts of his (the High Priest's) garments,' thus representing how all the members of Christ's Body are to be partakers of the same anointing **after** their Head. This oil began to reach **the Body** on the day of Pentecost, and flowed on down through this Gospel age, anointing all who are truly baptized **into Christ**..." *T37*

"...thus representing how we, the **members** of **his** body, are all to be partakers of the same anointing after our head." *R72:6*

"So we who claim not to be the head but members in Christ's body receive full anointing by the same spirit." *R135:1*

ISA. 11:2: "And the spirit of the Lord shall rest upon him, the spirit of wisdom and understanding, the spirit of counsel and might, the spirit of knowledge and of the fear of the Lord."

THE HOLY ANOINTING OIL

EXOD. 30:23,24: "Take thou also unto thee principal spices, of pure myrrh five hundred shekels, and of sweet cinnamon half so much, even two hundred and fifty shekels, and of sweet calamus two hundred and fifty shekels, And of cassia five hundred shekels..."

Myrrh 500 — Wisdom

Cinnamon 250 — Understanding

Calamus 250 — Knowledge

Cassia 500 — Workmanship

"So we find God in the anointing also gives wisdom equal to our knowledge and understanding combined. Wisdom is knowing what to do." *R4093:1,2**

"Workmanship may also be translated deputyship, but never means work or labor. It has the two ideas embodied in itself that are expressed in its parallel in Isa. 11:2 ['And the spirit of the LORD shall rest upon him, the spirit of wisdom and understanding, the spirit of counsel and might, the spirit of knowledge and of the fear

of the LORD;'] — viz., counsel and might." *R4093:3** (M.E.Riemer)

"No one who has been begotten of the spirit of the Lord, the spirit of holiness and truth, could have any sympathy with sin so as to wilfully, knowingly and intentionally engage therein." *R5938:5*

REV. 1:5: "And from Jesus Christ, who is the faithful witness, and the first begotten of the dead..."

"...the first born from the dead." *E136*

"As in Jesus' case, the new body will be received in the resurrection; not by all, but by those now mentally or spiritually begotten of the spirit of the truth." R371:3

TYPES OF THE ANOINTING OF THE SPIRIT

ISA. 42:1: "Behold my servant, whom I uphold; Mine elect, in whom my soul delighteth; I have put my spirit upon him."

"In these statements of the Prophet, reference evidently is made to the work of the Lord's Anointed (head and Body) in conferring restitution blessings upon the world of mankind during the Millennial age." *R3587:4*

ISA 61:1: "The spirit of the Lord God is upon me; because the Lord hath anointed me to preach..."

"The anointing which our Lord and the members of his mystical body have received is different from anything else in the whole world." *R5227:3*

"As that ordination came upon Jesus, it later came upon the disciples at Pentecost; and all down the Gospel Age it has come upon the followers of Christ, anointing them to preach the gospel..." *Q514*

LUKE 4:18: "The Spirit of the Lord is upon me, because he hath anointed me to preach the gospel..."

ACTS 10:38: "How God anointed Jesus of Nazareth with the Holy Spirit and with Power..."

"This is the spirit dispensation; hence it is proper to say that the Gospel age began with the anointing of Jesus." *A224*

HEB. 1:9: "...God, even thy God hath anointed thee with the oil of gladness above thy fellows."

"The prophet David was guided by the Lord to give us a pen-picture of the Anointing, and how it was all poured upon our Head and must run down to us from him." *F132*

1 JOHN 2:27: "But the anointing which ye have received of him abideth in you..."

"This anointing began at Pentecost, and has continued upon all who are truly the Lord's, even to the present day." *R1917:5*

"The anointing of the church is for a work yet future." *R5537:1*

"This granting of the holy Spirit was designed to be an anointing for the whole body." *R5549:5*

"The begetting represents the matter from the individual standpoint — the anointing from the collective." *R5728:3*

"The thought connected with the word 'begetting' is that of an instantaneous work, while the thought connected with 'anointing' is a more gradual work." *R5728:3*

"The expression 'anointing of the Spirit,' must include that mollifying and mellowing development which comes as we grow in grace and knowledge." *R5728:3*

SOME ASPECTS OF THE SPIRIT

(a) Spirit of Sonship

JOHN 1:12: "But as many as received him [Jesus], to them gave he power to become the sons of God...."

"This power to become sons of God is not granted to sinners, but to the justified..." *R2409:4*

ROM. 8:14-16: "For as many as are led by the Spirit of God, they are the sons of God. For ye have not received the spirit of bondage again to fear; but ye have received the Spirit of adoption, whereby we cry Abba, Father. The Spirit itself beareth witness with our spirit that we are the children of God."

"Such are said to have received 'the Spirit of adoption' because from thenceforth God, through Christ, enters into a special covenant with these as sons." *E184*

GAL. 4:5: "...that we might receive the adoption of sons."

EPH. 1:5: "Having predestinated us unto the adoption of children by Jesus Christ to himself..."

"This shows that the election or choice of the Church was a predetermined thing on God's part; but mark, it is not an unconditional election of the individual members of the Church." *R613:3*

(b) Spirit of Understanding

EXOD. 31:2,3: "See, I have called by name Bezaleel...And I have filled him with the spirit of God, in wisdom, and in understanding, and in knowledge, and in all manner of workmanship."

"During the Jewish age the holy Spirit acted upon the servants and mouthpieces of God in a mechanical manner." *R5489:6*

PSA. 25:14: "The secret of the Lord is with them that fear him; and he will show them his covenant."

"The finishing of 'the mystery of God' in the close of this Gospel Age must therefore be expected to be understood and appreciated only by this special class of the Lord's people — those who fear or reverence him." *R2208:3*

PSA. 119:104: "Through thy precepts I get understanding."

"Having been accepted of the Father as new creatures in Christ, having been adopted into his family, by receiving the spirit of adoption and sonship, he speaks to us as to sons, in the language of Solomon, — that we take heed to his Word." *R2388:6*

PSA. 119:130: "The entrance of thy words giveth light; it giveth understanding to the simple."

ISA. 11:2,3: "And the spirit of the LORD shall rest upon him, the spirit of wisdom and understanding, the spirit of counsel and might, the spirit of knowledge and of the fear of the LORD; And shall make him of quick understanding in the fear of the LORD..."

"Those who have cultivated that spirit of love which 'thinketh no evil' have developed their characters and have become of 'quick understanding' in the fear of the Lord." *R5122:6*

MATT. 11:25: "At that time Jesus answered and said, I thank thee, O Father, Lord of heaven and earth, because thou hast hid these things from the wise and prudent, and hast revealed them unto babes."

"Hence we with the Master may be glad of the wisdom displayed in the divine arrangement of hiding certain features of the great plan of the ages from all except the 'very elect.'" **reference**

unknown

MATT. 13:11: "He answered and said unto them, because it is given unto you to know the mysteries of the kingdom of heaven, but to them it is not given."

"As yet only the saints can see, and only the wise in heavenly wisdom shall understand this." *R738:5*

MARK 4:11: "And he said unto them, Unto you it is given to know the mystery of the kingdom of God..."

LUKE 8:10: "And he said, Unto you it is given to know the mysteries of the kingdom of God."

JOHN 14:26: "But the Comforter, which is the Holy Spirit, whom the Father will send in my name, he shall teach you all things, and bring all things to your remembrance."

"This was not only true with the apostles, but has been true with respect to all the members of the body of Christ throughout this age." *R5088:3*

JOHN 16:13: "...The Spirit of truth is come will guide you into all truth...and...show you things to come....shall receive of mine, and shall show it unto you."

"[Those] who are his sheep are privileged to **understand** these 'mysteries' of Jehovah's plan, so that we may not only fully and clearly comprehend the portion already accomplished, vis., the ransom given for the life of Adam and all who lost life through his disobedience." *R1177:3*

"'He will guide you into all truth' (or 'teach you all things' — concerning the truth)." *R1525:5*

"In the past the Spirit's operation was chiefly **mechanical**; to us its operation is...**explanatory** and sympathetic...." *E177*

1 COR. 12:28: "And God hath set... apostles...teachers...."

"...to enable the sons...." *E178*

EPH. 3:18: "May be able to comprehend with all saints what is the breadth, and length, and depth and height..."

"Not all have this opening of the mental eye; not all are privileged to see the glories of Jehovah's character in symmetrical harmony, divine justice, wisdom, love and power co-ordinated and co-operating in unison for the blessing of every creature, according to the purpose which God purposed in himself before the world was." *R2587:6*

COL. 1:9: "...that ye might be filled with the knowledge of his will in all wisdom and spiritual understanding..."

"This same thought, that God's consecrated people will have intelligence respecting his plans far different from any the world will have, is everywhere kept prominently before us in the Scriptures, and must therefore be considered a very important indication with all who profess to be God's people." *R2209:1*

COL. 1:26: "Even the mystery which hath been hid from ages and from generations, but now is made manifest to his saints."

"This part of God's plan is hidden from the natural man, who sees nothing in it. Only those who reverence God sufficiently and who are in close touch with his arrangements can see." *R4841:3*

2 TIM. 2:7: "...The Lord give thee understanding in all things."

"...even though having a Bible before them, others than the consecrated may not really see and understand." *B170*

1 PET. 1:10-12: "Of which salvation the prophets have inquired and searched diligently, who prophesied of the grace *that should come* unto you: Searching what, or what manner of time the Spirit of Christ which was in them did signify, when it testified beforehand the sufferings of Christ, and the glory that should follow. Unto whom it was revealed that not unto themselves but unto us they did minister the things, which are now reported unto you by them that have preached the gospel unto you with the Holy Spirit sent down from heaven; which things the angels desire to look into."

2 PET. 1:21: "For the prophecy came not in old time by the will of man: but holy men of God spake *as they were* moved by the Holy Spirit."

1 JOHN 5:20: "And we know that the Son of God is come, and hath given us an understanding."

"The finishing of 'the mystery of God' in the close of this Gospel age must therefore be expected to be understood and appreciated by only this special class of the Lord's people." *R2208:3*

(c) Spirit of Truth

JOHN 14:17 (*Diag.*): "The Spirit of truth; which the world cannot receive, because it beholds it not, nor knows it; because it abides in you."

"The holy Spirit is the divine will, influence, power or disposition, exercised anywhere and for any purpose, at the divine pleasure." *R5749:5*

JOHN 15:26: "But when the Comforter is come, whom I will send unto you from the Father, even the Spirit of truth, which proceedeth from the Father, he shall testify of me."

"The Spirit of truth received by the study and obedience of our Father's words, gives needed strength for the overcoming of the human nature and the spirit of the world." *R375:1*

JOHN 16:13: "Howbeit when he, the Spirit of truth is come, he will guide you into all truth."

"The begetting or transforming power or influence of the knowledge of the Truth." *E183*

"The Truth itself is the main channel of the Spirit of Truth." *E203*

1 JOHN 4:6: "Hereby know we the spirit of truth and the spirit of error."

"...the Spirit of God is called the 'Spirit of Truth.' It is thus contrasted with the spirit of error; or the influence which error exerts." *R370:6*

(d) Spirit of Power

JER. 32:17: "...there is nothing too hard for thee..."

LUKE 24:49: "...until ye be endued with power from on high."

"The lesson to all the Lord's disciples from that day to the present time is that none except those thus endued with power from on high — none except those who come under the blessing of the Spirit of the Lord, the holy mind of Christ — none others are qualified to be the ambassadors for God and his representatives before men." *R3911:2*

ACTS 1:8: "But ye shall receive power, after that the Holy Spirit is come upon you."

"This promised power to know and to understand times and seasons, and all things pertaining to a proper witnessing, applies to the whole Church from first to last." *B120*

ACTS 10:38: "How God anointed Jesus of Nazareth with the Holy

Spirit and with power..."

"The power of God came upon him there. This **power** of God in him was that to which he continually referred. It was the same power that was afterward manifested through Peter, Paul and others, though in Jesus' case it was more marked." *R370:1*

ROM. 15:13: "...that ye may abound in hope, through the power of the Holy Spirit."

ROM. 15:19: "Through mighty signs and wonders, by the power of the Spirit of God."

2 COR. 12:9: "...my strength is made perfect in weakness."

"This is the blessed consolation of every truly submissive heart." *R1745:1*

EPH. 3:20: "Now unto him that is able to do exceeding abundantly above all that we ask or think, according to the power that worketh in us."

"Yet these works are not ours (as men) but as 'new creatures,' members of the body of Christ. And they are God's works, in the sense that they are incited by his Word and Spirit, for 'it is God that **worketh** in you to will and to do.'" *R3586:1*

PHIL. 4:13: "I can do all things through Christ which strengtheneth me."

"But our source of strength in battling with the current of life is never to be forgotten." *R4005:1*

"Not self-confidence, not self-reliance is the most desirable, but rather confidence in God and reliance upon his promised 'grace to help in every time of need.'" *R5113:6*

2 TIM. 1:7: "For God hath not given us the spirit of fear; but of power..."

"This (the Holy Spirit) is the secret of all power in the work of the Lord. No preaching, no teaching is of value, except it be in the power of the holy Spirit." *R1917:1*

(e) Spirit of Promise

ACTS 1:4,5: "And, being assembled together with them, commanded them that they should not depart from Jerusalem, but wait for the promise of the Father...ye shall be baptized with the Holy Spirit."

"...the promise of the Father, the evidence of the Father's acceptance, the foretaste of his blessing, which shall be completed and fulfilled on the glorification of the church in the Kingdom." *R2088:2*

ACTS 2:33: "Therefore being by the right hand of God exalted, and having received of the Father the promise of the Holy Spirit..."

"The Apostle Peter says that God fulfilled his promise to Jesus by granting him the holy Spirit to shed forth on his disciples." *R5424:5*

ACTS 2:38,39: "Then Peter said unto them, Repent, and be baptized every one of you in the name of Jesus Christ for the remission of sins, and ye shall receive the gift of the Holy Spirit. For the promise is unto you, and to your children, and to all that are afar off, even to as many as the Lord our God shall call."

"It (the holy Spirit) was sent according to his promise...'if I depart I will send him unto you.'" *R1829:6*

"It was a spiritual promise and belonged to them, but on condition that they would take certain steps." *R5295:5*

GAL. 3:14: "That the blessing of Abraham might come on the Gentiles through Christ Jesus; that we might receive the promise of the Spirit through faith."

EPH. 1:13: "...in whom also after that ye believed, ye were sealed with that holy Spirit of promise."

"This 'seal' is called the 'holy Spirit of **promise**' because it is of itself a foretaste, a first fruit, a pledge, of that blessedness into which those who possess it and hold it fast shall by and by be delivered." *R2064:6*

BORN OF THE SPIRIT

JOHN 1:13: "Which were born, not of blood, nor of the will of the flesh, nor of the will of man, but of God."

"God being associated with the action, it should be rendered begotten." *R837:1*

JOHN 3:3: "...except a man be born again, he cannot see the kingdom of God."

JOHN 3:5-8: "Jesus answered, Verily, verily, I say unto thee, Except a man be born of water and of the Spirit, he cannot enter into the kingdom of God. That which is born of the flesh is flesh; and that which is born of the Spirit is spirit. Marvel not that I say unto thee, Ye must be born again. The wind bloweth where it listeth, and thou hearest the sound thereof, but canst not tell whence it cometh, and whither it goeth; so is every one that is born of the Spirit."

"It is our opinion that the translation born is correct, except in...verses 3 and 7, where we think the significance is begotten." *R837:2*

1 COR. 15:8: "And last of all he was seen of me also, as by one born out of due time."

"No one else than he alone, not even the saintly, were to see the Lord before their resurrection change, in the end of this age." *R5034:6*

See also section on "**BEGOTTON AND BORN OF THE SPIRIT**" previously listed for comments on 1 John 2:29; 3:9; 4:7; 5:1,4,18.

THREE SPIRIT BAPTISMS SUFFICIENT

"It should be noticed that the Scriptures mention only three baptisms of the Holy Spirit: and the necessity for each of these, and for no more, is manifest — the three being parts of the one baptism. (1) The baptism of...Jesus (2) The baptism at Pentecost. (3) The baptism of Cornelius...." *E211*

(1) Jesus' Baptism of the Spirit

MATT. 3:16,17: "And Jesus, when he was baptized, went up straightway out of the water: and lo, the heavens were opened unto him, and he saw the spirit of God descending like a dove, and lighting upon him: and lo a voice from heaven, saying, This is my beloved Son, in whom I am well pleased."

MARK 1:10: "And straightway coming up out of the water, he saw the heavens opened, and the Spirit like a dove descending upon him."

JOHN 1:32-34: "And John bare record, saying, I saw the Spirit descending from heaven like a dove, and it abode upon him. And I knew him not: but he that sent me to baptize with water, the same said unto me, upon whom thou shalt see the Spirit descending, and remaining on him, the same is he which baptizeth with the Holy

Spirit. And I saw, and bare record that this is the Son of God."

"He (John) was distinctly informed that in due time he would know the Messiah by seeing the Holy Spirit from God come upon him." *R3296:6*

"Not only was our Lord's baptism of the Holy Spirit necessary to himself, that he might be a partaker of the divine power; as the divine agent, and as the earnest of his inheritance, his begetting to the divine nature; but it was proper also that there should be such an outward manifestation or recognition of him as would permit others to know him as God's Anointed." *E211*

(2) The Baptism at Pentecost

ACTS 2:2-4: "And suddenly there came a sound from heaven as of a rushing mighty wind, and it filled all the house where they were sitting. And there appeared unto them cloven tongues like as of fire, and it sat upon each of them. And they were all filled with the Holy Spirit."

"Accordingly, there cannot be too much stress laid on this baptism of the Holy Spirit, seeing that it marks the acceptance of our Lord's sacrifice and of our justification." *E211*

1 JOHN 2:27: "But the anointing which ye have received of him abideth in you."

"Neither are we to think that these Pentecostal outpourings and baptisms require a repetition, for the holy Spirit thus once poured upon the church was to abide, to continue, with the church, not to be withdrawn and poured out afresh repeatedly." *R2820:2*

"The baptism...at Pentecost....was necessary...as a witness...." *E212*

"The rushing wind...and the cloven tongues... were **manifestations** ...representing the invisible. ...The dove...was...but a manifestation....The cloven tongues fitly represented the mission of the apostles...to testify as **witnesses**...." *E212*

See also **ACTS 2:32; 3:15; 5:32; 10:39,41; 13:31.**

"This Jesus hath God raised up, whereof we all are **witnesses**."

(3) Cornelius' Baptism

"A special manifestation...with the acceptance of Cornelius...was necessary; because...Gentiles had been outcasts....It would not occur to the Jewish believers that Gentiles would be accepted ...unless some...manifestation...were granted." *E213*

ACTS 10:44: "While Peter yet spake these words, the Holy Spirit fell on all them which heard the word."

"...the holy Spirit was given to Cornelius and his companions without the laying on of hands — in the same manner it was bestowed upon the assembly at Pentecost." *R2990:4*

DEFINITION OF THIS BAPTISM

MATT. 3:11: "...he shall baptize you with the Holy Spirit..."

"The proper thought respecting the baptism of the Holy Spirit is that of an outpouring, a shedding forth, an anointing, which, however, is so complete (covering every member of the body) as to be properly designated an immersion, or 'baptism.' And this same anointing or baptism continues upon the Church down through the age — covering.... sanctifying blessing, anointing...each one who comes into the anointed 'body.'" *E215*

KEYS OF THE KINGDOM

MATT. 16:19: "...I will give unto thee the keys of the kingdom."

"The apostle Peter....used the first key at Pentecost....the second...opening the Gospel door before the Gentiles...." *E214*

THREE BAPTISMS: WATER, HOLY SPIRIT, FIRE

MATT. 3:11: "I indeed baptize you with water unto repentance: but he that cometh after me is mightier than I, whose shoes I am not worthy to bear; he shall baptize you with the Holy Spirit and with fire."

"Here (in the Jewish harvest) was the baptism of the Holy Spirit and of fire — the Holy Spirit coming upon the 'Israelites indeed' at Pentecost, and the fire of trouble upon

all others, during the thirty-seven years following their rejection." *B233*

ONE BODY

PSA. 133:2: "It is like the precious ointment upon the head, that ran down upon the beard, even Aaron's beard: that went down to the skirts of his garments."

ROM. 12:5: "So we being many are one body in Christ."

"That perfect 'body of Christ' is as yet only an ideal; it is a body of the future and not of the present, and will not be complete until the last member has been tried and proved worthy and glorified." *R962:1*

1 COR. 10:17: "For we being many are one bread and one body."

1 COR. 12:12: "For as the body is one, and hath many members, and all the members of that one body, being many, are one body, so also is Christ."

"Those who are now called out all receive a begetting of the holy Spirit. They are all baptized by the one spirit into the one body." *R5213:2*

1 COR. 12:18: "But now hath God set the members every one of them in the body, as it hath pleased him."

"And the body would not be complete without every one of them." *R5213:2*

1 COR. 12:20: "But now are they many members, yet but one body."

1 COR.12:27: "Now are ye the body of Christ, and members in particular."

"A more apt illustration of the oneness of the true Church...cannot be conceived of, than this which the Scriptures so frequently present — the human body made up of various and dissimilar members, yet unitedly constituting one body and each member dependent largely, upon each other member." *R732:1*

"Believers...baptized into Christ...come...under his baptism of the holy Spirit...." *E215*

EPH. 2:16: "That he might reconcile both unto God in one body by the cross."

EPH. 4:4: "There is one body and one spirit..."

"If the entire Body could but recognize its oneness and each use the gift or gifts possessed, remembering that the gifts bestowed are not for itself, but for the BODY, how great would be the strength and vigor and present power of the Body." *R733:1*

COL. 3:15: "...to the which also ye are called in one body..."

"No man can separate himself from the body of Christ without harm." *R68:6*

1 JOHN 2:27: "...The anointing which ye have received of him abideth in you...."

GRADUAL DEVELOPMENT

EPH. 4:15: "But speaking the truth in love, may grow up into him in all things, which is the head, even Christ."

"It also shows us that it is the will of God that we should not continue **babes** in Christ but should 'grow in grace and knowledge,' growing up (as members) into him in all things, who is the head of the body, even Christ; striving and aiming continually for the perfection of knowledge and faith-stature of the **anointed** pattern, our **head**." *R364:3*

"We are to 'grow up into him in all things.' We are to recognize that he is the Head of the church; and that if we are to be members of his body in glory, we must be developed." *R5720:3*

"If we are to be members of that body in glory, we must be developed. We are to mature in the fruits of the holy Spirit..." *R5978:3*

BY "MEASURE" OR "WITHOUT MEASURE"

"Our Lord received the holy Spirit '**without measure**'...

JOHN 3:34: "'...for God giveth not the Spirit by measure [unto him].'

"His followers receive it by measure....

1 COR. 12:7: "'A manifestation of the Spirit is given to every man to profit withal.'

ROM. 12:3: "'...to every man the measure of faith.'

"Our Lord was a perfect man, while we...are...imperfect....No member of the fallen race is capable of receiving the Lord's Spirit to the full....The rapidity with which we may acquire more...of the holy Spirit...is dependent largely upon our realization of our own imperfections, and the degree of our consecration to the Lord — to the study of his will, in his Word, and to the practice of the same...." *E184, 185*

"To the extent that the consecrated resign themselves to the Lord...they are..."

GAL. 5:18: "'...led of the Spirit....'

"...and can...

ROM. 7:6: "'...serve in newness of spirit....'

"They must have a...

GAL. 5:22, 23; 6:1: "'...Spirit of meekness....'" *E185*

EPH. 1:17, 18: "That the God of our Lord Jesus Christ, the Father of glory, may give unto you the **Spirit of wisdom and revelation** in the knowledge of him: the eyes of your understanding being enlightened; that ye may know what is the hope of his calling, and what the riches of the glory of his inheritance in the saints."

****

"It is the same gift to all, the same spirit amongst all, working in all of this class, and the duty of each one is to use this gift of the Lord for its increase; and the more his devotion and the more his faithfulness the larger may be the results." *R2736:1*

EPH.4:7: "But unto every one of us is given grace according to the measure of the gift of Christ."

"This imbuement of the spirit is not upon all professed Christians, but upon a 'little flock.'" *R103:2*

"...yet no member of the fallen race is capable of receiving the Lord's Spirit to the full — to be in absolute harmony with God in every particular." *E185*

EPH. 5:18: "...but be filled with the Spirit."

"The spirit of truth speaks to us (through the Word) and by obedience to those words we shall be filled with the Spirit." *R376:3*

"...we have something **to do** if we would be filled with the Spirit, as surely as we have something to do if we would have natural food." *R376:3*

SPIRIT OF A SOUND MIND

2 TIM. 1:7: "For God hath not given us the spirit of fear; but of power, and love, and of a sound mind."

"As the Lord's people are filled with his Holy Spirit...they have less of the spirit of fear... doubt....a...source of evil. The child of God who is filled with the Holy Spirit is a giant in comparison with his own natural self:...his fears are quelled, his heart established, his faith is rooted and grounded, and his soul is anchored... within the vail....The Holy Spirit is thus a power to those who possess it." *E249*

"The Gospel usually takes hold upon the weaker ones, who feel their weakness, and who realize...their need of help....Yet...in their weakness they are made strong." *E250*

"In proportion as we get the Spirit of love, we get the spirit of a sound mind." *R5094:5*

"As we develop the spirit of a sound mind we get to see what things are valuable, and we look at other things as being insignificant. More and more we desire the heavenly things." *R5094:6*

"Whatever may be the imperfection of mind and body resulting from the fall, those who receive the spirit of a sound mind are thereby made purer, kinder, gentler, less selfish and more thoughtful in regard to others." *R5095:4*

2 COR. 10:4: "...The weapons of our warfare are not carnal, but mighty through God to the pulling down of strongholds."

"...although the particular features of persecution have greatly changed, nevertheless it is still necessary to...

2 TIM. 2:3: "'...endure hardness, as a good soldier of Jesus Christ.'" *E250*

1 COR. 1:27,28: "But God hath chosen the foolish things of the world to confound the wise; and God hath chosen the weak things of the world to confound the mighty; and base things of the world and things which are despised, hath God chosen,...and things which are not, to bring to naught things that are."

"This Spirit...is...a Spirit of love,....not the natural love,....in large measure...selfishness. ...This natural love should become...a self-sacrificing love, based...upon...the Spirit...of God....increasing...until" *E250*

1 COR. 13:10: "...that which is perfect is come...."

"The tendency of the Gospel is to attract the more imperfect, who realize their...need of...sounder minds...." *E251*

"The Lord's people become partakers of...the 'Spirit of a sound mind; ' — their judgments are...more trustworthy...because they have... the...directions of the Lord's Word....Those... who have his Spirit...do not trust merely to their own judgment...." *E251*

"Such learn...to **rectify the errors** of their own judgments...to harmonize with...the Holy Spirit through the Word...."

MATT: 5:5: "Blessed are the meek; for they shall inherit the earth."

JAS. 4:6: "...God resisteth the proud, but giveth grace to the humble."

"Nothing is more dangerous to the child of God than self-conceit." *R5186:1*

1 PET. 5:5,6: "...Ye younger, submit yourselves to the elder. Yea, all of you be subject one to another, and be clothed with humility: for God resisteth the proud, and giveth grace to the humble. Humble yourselves therefore under the mighty hand of God, that he may exalt you in due time."

"Hence all who would abide in the Lord's love have need to be very careful along this line." *R2450:5*

1 JOHN 4:18: "...Perfect love casteth out fear...."

"As they learn to know God...." *E255*

ROM. 5:5: "And hope maketh not ashamed; because the love of God is shed abroad in our hearts by the Holy Spirit which is given unto us."

ROM. 12:3: "For I say, through the grace given unto me, to every man that is among you, not to think of himself more highly than he ought to think; but to think soberly, as God hath dealt to every man the measure of faith."

"It is a life work with many, to conquer their too high appreciation of themselves, and to obtain the spirit of a sound mind as respects their own talents." *E255*

"Those...too lacking in self-confidence...are encouraged by the same Spirit of truth which...corrects the over-confident." *E255*

1 COR. 8:2: "If any man think that he knoweth anything [of his own wisdom], he knoweth nothing yet as he ought to know."

"Transformations of character...come...from joining Christ, and receiving...the Spirit of a sound mind...." *E255*

"The man who has, by the grace of God, and his own acceptance of that grace, come into possession of the Spirit of a sound mind, has much advantage every way over the remainder of mankind....values more correctly...the things of this life....He sees that fame is...hollow and very transitory...." *E256*

"Relieved of inordinate ambitions...he is proportionately relieved from avarice,...pride, etc., and the better enabled...to act justly, and to exercise kindly sympathy toward all....This Spirit of a sound mind...is not...a...repair of his...fleshly mind,...begotten....by the...promises of the Word...." *E257*

MATT. 16:26: "For...what shall a man give in exchange for his soul [...existence] ?"

"A man with a sound mind would not exchange the most valuable thing which he possesses (his being) for anything — wealth, fame or office. And in proportion as any receive the Spirit of a sound mind, this will be their estimate." *E258*

"The world's life...is what the apostle calls...

1 PET. 1:18: "'...your vain conversation [life] [received] by tradition [custom] from your fathers.'

"Men...drop into the grooves in which their parents moved...." *E258*

"The present life is...a preparation for a future life, for all who...hear the 'call.'..." *E259*

"While the Word...and...Spirit...assure us that...

1 TIM. 6:10: "'...the love of money is the root of all evil....'

"They protect us from...indolence, instructing that each...

ROM.12:17: "'...Provide things honest in the sight of all men.'

1 TIM. 5:8: "'...specially for those of his own house....'

"They exhort us to be...

ROM. 12:11: "'Not slothful in business; fervent in spirit; serving the Lord.'

"The Spirit of a sound mind leads us to live...wisely in the present, by keeping in memory the future." *E259*

"The Spirit of a sound mind...helps its possessor...enlarge his sympathies with others...without this Spirit...who are hindered from accepting it by...the Adversary...." *E260*

"In proportion, therefore, as we imbibe the truth, in that same proportion will be our desire to be fervent in Spirit..." *R5335:1*

2 COR. 4:4: "...The god of this world hath blinded the minds of them which believe not, lest the light...should shine unto them."

"The one possessed of...the Spirit of love will...be less touchy in respect to his own rights....The will of the Lord must...stand first, but next...he will take pleasure in pleasing others...especially...his own family...." *E260*

"On whatever plane of...immorality or unwisdom the truth and grace of God shall reach a man or woman it will...make him or her the nobler, the purer, the kinder, the gentler, the more considerate..." *E262*

"The apostle enjoins...the exercise of a sound mind in...procreation, saying...

1 PET. 3:7: "'...dwell with [them] according to knowledge....'" *E262*

MATT. 6:19-21: "Lay not up for yourselves treasures on earth, where moth and rust doth corrupt, and where thieves break through and steal: but lay up for yourselves treasures in heaven, where neither moth nor rust doth corrupt, and where thieves do not break through nor steal: For where your treasure is, there will your heart be also..."

"The Lord's people are not to be anxious about the future." *F572*

"Truly, in this our day, as never before perhaps, would all who have the spirit of a sound mind to any degree be longing for a treasure which will be secure..." *R5862:3*

LUKE 21:34: "And take heed unto yourselves, lest at any time your hearts be overcharged with surfeiting, and drunkenness, and cares of this life."

1 COR. 2:16: "But we have the mind of Christ."

"'The spirit of a sound mind' — we view matters from the standpoint of Christ." *F514*

GIFTS OF THE SPIRIT

"The gifts were conferred by the laying on of the hands of the apostles: they came spontaneously only in exceptional cases...." *E206*

ACTS 2:4: "And they were all filled with the Holy Spirit, and began to speak with other tongues, as the Spirit gave them

utterance."

"God's Holy Spirit or power or influence acted also upon them, conferring special miraculous gifts for a testimony to the world, and for the establishment of the Church." *E269*

ACTS 10:45,46: "...on the Gentiles also was poured out the gift of the Holy Spirit, For they heard them speak with tongues and magnify God."

"...the holy Spirit was given to Cornelius and his companions without the laying on of hands — in the same manner that it was bestowed upon the assembly at Pentecost." *R2990:3*

"Simon Magus...was reproved...for offering money to obtain this purely **apostolic** power." *E206*

ACTS 19:6: "And when Paul had laid his hands upon them, the Holy Spirit came on them; and they spake with tongues and prophesied."

"Other believers were counted in as members of the anointed body of Christ, made partakers of his Spirit and begotten of that Spirit to newness of life, etc; but none could have a gift, or special manifestation except as conferred through these apostles." *F212*

1 COR. 12: 4-11: "Now there are diversities of gifts, but **the same Spirit**. And there are differences of administration, but **the same Lord**. And there are diversities of operations, but...the same God which worketh in all. But the manifestation of the Spirit is given to every man to profit withal. For to one is given by the Spirit the word of wisdom; to another the word of knowledge...; to another faith...; to another the gifts of healing...; to another the working of miracles; to another prophecy; to another [divers] kinds of tongues; to another the interpretation of tongues: But all these worketh...the self-same Spirit...."

"We are to distinguish...between the holy Spirit...and these gifts....All were...of the one holy influence shed forth by the one Lord, the representative of the one God..." *E178*

"These gifts were necessary in those days, both for convincing the honest-hearted Israelites and for the edification of the infant church." *R1422:5*

ACTS 8:13-21: "...Simon...was baptized....The apostles...sent...Peter and John....(For as yet he was fallen upon none of them: only they were baptized in the name of the Lord Jesus.) They laid their hands on them, and they received the Holy Spirit. And when Simon saw that through laying on of the apostles' hands the Holy Spirit was given, he offered them money, saying give me also this power....But Peter said....Thou has neither part nor lot in this matter...."

"...even Philip the Evangelist, though able to perform 'signs and great miracles,' could not confer the **gifts** of the Spirit. This agrees fully with..." *E207*

1 COR. 13:8: "...Whether there be prophecies they shall fail; whether there be tongues, they shall cease; whether there be knowledge, it shall vanish away."

"It was...so when, all the apostles having died, all those upon whom they had conferred those '**gifts**' died also. The **gifts** of faith, hope, and love which...would abide were not miraculous gifts but **growths** — 'fruits'..." *E207*

"Amongst the gifts...the apostle specifies (1) apostles, (2) prophets, (3) teachers. We still have...the...apostles, in...their teachings in the New Testament, so full...as to require no addition: and hence..." *E207*

REV. 21:14: "...the twelve apostles of the Lamb."

REV. 12:1: "...a crown of twelve stars."

"Have no successors....We still have...the gifts of prophets or expounders and teachers...speaking various languages; but no longer...by the laying on of apostolic hands....nevertheless...the condition of the heart is far more important in the Lord's sight than all other qualifications...; he is fully able to use those...full of his Spirit...and...can...supply them with assistance... as...to Moses...he gave Aaron..." *E207*

"Although the...method has changed, the same Lord by...the same holy Spirit is still guiding....All...led of his Spirit, and taught of his Word, are to judge....to receive...only those...having these gifts; and one of the tests is in respect to their fidelity to the Word of God — that they preach not themselves, but Jesus Christ, and him crucified — the power...and the wisdom of God....If any man come...with any other gospel...we are not to receive him." *E208*

PSA. 68:18; EPH. 4:8: "...When he ascended up on high, he led them captive, and gave gifts unto men."

"As sons they...

HEB. 6:4: "'...tasted of the heavenly gift and were made partakers of the Holy Spirit....'" *E210*

"It was of the Father and by the Son...Jesus" *E211*

ACTS 2:33: "...being by the right hand of God exalted, and having received of the Father the promise of the holy Spirit, he hath shed forth this which ye now see and hear."

SOME GIFTS PASSED AWAY

1 COR. 13:8: "Charity never faileth: but whether there be prophesies they shall fail; whether there be tongues they shall cease; whether there be knowledge it shall vanish away."

"All of these 'gifts' were evidently necessary at the inauguration of the Church, at the start of the new age, but became unnecessary after the Church had been established and the canon of the inspired writings had been completed." *E179*

"After the first introduction of Christianity, the miracle-working power gradually left the church, because no more needed as an introduction..." *R1722:2*

"The gifts of faith, hope and love which the apostle declared would abide were not miraculous gifts but growths — 'fruits' as he elsewhere describes them." *E207*

"But three essential gifts of the Spirit were always to remain in the church; and, thank God, they have not passed away; for still 'abideth faith, hope and charity, these three; but the greatest of these is charity.'" *R1433:5*

2 TIM. 3:17: "that the man of God may be...thoroughly furnished unto all good works."

"God's people no longer have need of those...methods of instruction and proofs of their acceptance....Now,...the operation of God's Spirit...seems to be upon each...in proportion to their natural qualifications and...zeal....Hence the apostle...incites the church to seek to **develop** spiritual gifts, powers, abilities, in and for the service of the Lord and his people and his truth...." *E179*

"These **personally developed** gifts are to be esteemed more highly than those **miraculously bestowed**...the apostle says,...

1 COR. 12:31; 14:1: "'But covet earnestly the best gifts: and yet I

show unto you a more excellent way....Follow after charity, and desire spiritual gifts, but rather that ye may prophesy.'

"Speaking with tongues was....

1 COR. 14:22: "'...for a sign...to them that believe not....'

"The '**fruits** of the Spirit,' are...to be cultivated...that they may yield the full...fruitage of...." *E180*

GAL. 5:22,23: "...love, joy, peace, long-suffering, gentleness, goodness, faith, meekness, temperance...."

"'Fruit'...is a **gift**, but of gradual development." *E180*

JAS. 1:17: "Every good gift and every perfect gift is from above, and cometh down from the Father of lights...."

"They are wrought out...as we come into harmony...with the Spirit of our Father...by which...we are having developed...the...fruits of the holy Spirit or disposition in likeness of...our Lord....being fitted to be...

JOHN 3:8: "'born of the Spirit....'

"...spirit beings." *E181*

SOME WORKINGS OF THE HOLY SPIRIT

ACTS 8:29: "Then the Spirit said unto Philip, Go near, and join thyself to this chariot."

"In what manner Philip was directed of the Holy Spirit we are not informed and it would be unwise to speculate. Our God has at his disposal unlimited means for communicating his wishes to his people." *E273*

ACTS 8:39: "...the Spirit of the Lord caught away Philip."

"As to how the Spirit caught Philip away we may not certainly know....but his vanishing would give the eunuch additional faith in what he had taught him, and that he was being used as the angels had previously." *R4334:1*

ACTS 10:19: "...the Spirit said unto him, Behold, three men seek thee."

"It is quite immaterial to us how the power, influence, Spirit of God addressed Peter, giving him this information." *E274*

ACTS 13:2: "The Holy Spirit said, Separate me Barnabas and Saul for the work whereunto I have called them."

"...it is quite probable that the Holy Spirit at this time made use of one of the 'gifts' which was then operative in the Church — the gift of prophecy — to indicate the Lord's will respecting Paul and Barnabas..." *E275*

ACTS 15:28: "It seemed good to the Holy Spirit and to us."

"...their judgement was corroborated in some manner by the Lord, and they had the evidence that their decision was the mind of the Lord, the Spirit of the Lord, the will of the Lord." *E273*

ACTS 16:6: "...were forbidden by the Holy Spirit to preach the word in Asia."

"...apparently they were hindered or not permitted to go into Asia — unfavorable circumstances preventing." *E276*

ACTS 20:23: "...the Holy Spirit witnesseth in every city, saying that bonds and afflictions abide me."

"Thus, in every instance, the testimony of the Holy Spirit was accepted by the early Church as merely being the will of our Lord Jesus, whose will was also the Father's will." *E278*

ACTS 20:28: "...over which the Holy Spirit hath made you overseers..."

"The apostle here calls attention to the fact that...the Lord had operated by his Holy Spirit in the matter of their selection." *E278*

TWO PARTS IN POURING OUT THE SPIRIT

JER. 31:33: "After those days, saith the Lord, I will put my law in their inward parts, and write it in their hearts."

"The next operation of Jehovah's Holy Spirit or power will be the establishment of that Kingdom: and with its establishment the Holy Spirit's operation will be along the Kingdom lines — establishing judgement and justice in the earth." *E192*

"And it will be the same Holy Spirit or influence of God that will operate still differently during the Millennial age, through Christ and the Church glorified, to bring the world into harmony and unity with the principles of righteousness, and with the King of kings and Lord of lords." *E181*

EZEK. 11:19: "...and I will put a new spirit within you; and I will take the stony heart out of their flesh, and give them an heart of flesh..."

"There is to be another future outpouring of God's Spirit, accompanied by remarkable and demonstrating **gifts**. But this will not be the same as the previous outpourings in all respects." *R376:4*

JOEL 2:28,29: "And it shall come to pass afterward, that I will pour out my spirit upon all flesh; and your sons and your daughters shall prophesy, your old men shall dream dreams, and your young men shall see visions. And also upon the servants and upon the handmaids in those days will I pour out my spirit."

"The prophecy is stated in a manner likely to be misunderstood, in that the blessing upon the many is mentioned first, and the blessing upon the 'little flock,' which comes first, is mentioned last." *R1411:5*

"...yet 'afterward' his Holy Spirit shall be generally poured upon the world of mankind, 'all flesh.'" *E164*

"There will be no difference between the spirit received by the church in this Gospel age and by the human family in general in the next age: it is the same spirit; and...it will be

received in the same way, from the same source (God), and through the same channel — his Word of truth." *R1411:6*

"Christ...is to bring back...so many...as are willing....(1) the church of this...age, and (2) so many as will, of the remainder...during the... Millennial age." *E217*

"The sinners are to put away their sins,... and...seek and attain...the...holy Spirit...." *E217*

"The influence of Satan...will be removed ...and...the world...shall be under the influence or Spirit of truth and righteousness and love....Thus...the holy Spirit...will be poured out upon the world...giving them enlightenment,...help,...and instructing them and leading them back to the image...of God...." *E217*

"Throughout this Gospel Age the Lord has poured out his Spirit...upon the servants and upon the handmaids in those days...."

"And...**afterward in the next age**...upon all flesh..."

"Joel's prophecy...is stated in the reverse order to that of its fulfillment;...all flesh...first,...the church last." *E219*

ZECH. 12:10: "And I will pour upon the house of David and upon the inhabitants of Jerusalem, the spirit of grace and of

supplications."

"This same outpouring of the Holy Spirit upon fleshly Israel is referred to by the prophet Zechariah, and directly applied to the end of this age." *R2504:5*

REV. 22:17: "And the Spirit and the Bride say, Come! And whosoever will may come, and take of the water of life freely."

"The Holy Spirit's office will be equally important during the Millennial age, in bringing the world of mankind back into harmony with God under the terms of the New Covenant. During the Millennial age, then, the world's progress will be in full harmony with the Holy Spirit; and in proportion as men shall come into full harmony with that Holy Spirit will any of them become eligible to the eternal conditions of life and joy and blessing which lie beyond the Millennial age." *E164*

"The Holy Spirit is to be the channel of reconciliation between the Almighty and the race of sinners redeemed with the precious life of Christ." *E217*

"...instead of the world being under the influence or spirit of deception and error and ignorance and superstition, it shall be under the influence or Spirit of truth and righteousness and love." *E218*

FUTURE DIFFERENT FROM PRESENT

The Channel Now And Future

"Thus does the Spirit or influence of God...of the Truth, instruct his people....Thus it is the channel of at-one-ment now to the church, and...will be...to the world in the coming age, when...

REV. 22:17: "'...the Spirit and the bride say, 'Come.'...'" *E208*

"To receive the holy Spirit now and to live in harmony therewith, means...conflict with the spirit of the world...." *E220*

"To receive the holy Spirit in the future will not mean persecution....

"...will not signify a **begetting**...to a spirit nature, nor...to a spirit nature, nor... joint-heirship with Christ....That promise belongs only to this Gospel age, to the...class who...

1 PET. 3:14: "'...**suffer for righteousness' sake**....'

"And upon whom...

1 PET. 4:14: "'...The Spirit of glory and of God resteth....'

"The blessings which Christ will give to the world...are....

"...not a **change** of nature...but a **restitution**..." *E220,221*

ISA. 35:5: "Then the eyes of the blind shall be opened, and the ears of the deaf shall be unstopped."

"The blindness of ignorance and superstition with which Satan has afflicted the race is far worse than the physical blindness. And the assurance is given us by the Lord that all the blind eyes shall be opened." *R5485:6*

JER. 31:33,34: "After those days, saith the Lord, I will put my law in their inward parts, and write it in their hearts; and I will be their God, and they shall be my people. And they shall teach no more every man his neighbor, and every man his brother, saying Know the Lord; for they shall all know me, from the least of them unto the greatest of them, saith the Lord."

"But by and by the school of Christ will be enlarged; and these who are now pupils will be associated with the Great Master as teachers and instructors of the Word; and then the whole world will be called upon to rewrite in their hearts the original law of righteousness." *R2060:3*

MICAH 4:2: "And many nations shall come, and say, Come, and let us go up to the mountain of the Lord, and to the house of the God of Jacob, and he will teach us of his ways, and we will walk in his paths."

Baptism, Witness, And Seal

ACTS 2:1-4: "When the day of Pentecost was fully come, they were all of one accord in one place. And suddenly there came a sound from heaven as of a rushing mighty wind, and it filled all the house where they were sitting. And there appeared unto them cloven tongues like as of fire, and it sat upon each of them. And they were all filled with the Holy Spirit, and began to speak with other tongues, as the Spirit gave them utterance."

"Pentecost...indicated that our Redeemer had appeared in the presence of God for us, as our great High Priest;...had offered...the merits of his sacrifice; that the Father had accepted the sacrifice fully; and...believers who had accepted Jesus, and who were desirous of...becoming sons of God,...were recognized as such — the holy Spirit thus testifying...: hence it is termed the 'Spirit of adoption.'...It was appropriate that...they should have an outward manifestation." *E209*

JOHN 1:12: "...As many as received him, to them gave he power to become the Sons of God even to as many as believed on [**into, Diag.**] his name."

To The World — The Spirit's Future Testimony

"The next operation of Jehovah's holy Spirit...will be the establishment of that kingdom and....it will lay...

ISA. 28:17: "'judgment...to the line, and righteousness to the plummet....'

"...deception...will give place to a clear...." *E192*

1 TIM. 2:4: "...knowledge of the Truth."

"Instead of those in harmony with God...being required to 'suffer for righteousness' sake they will be...kings and priests....Thus shall the great Jehovah and his Spirit of holiness and all who ally themselves thereto finally triumph...." *E192*

1 COR. 4:5; 6:2: "...Judge nothing...until the Lord come, who will...make manifest the counsels of the hearts....The saints shall judge the world...."

ACTS 3:23: "...Every soul which will not hear that Prophet, shall be destroyed from among the people."

2 THES. 1:9: "...with everlasting destruction...."

ACTS 3:19-23: "...Times of refreshing shall come from the presence of the Lord; and he shall send Jesus Christ,...whom the heaven must receive until the times of restitution of all things....For Moses truly said...'A Prophet shall the Lord...raise up...him shall ye hear in all things....and...every soul which will not hear...shall be destroyed....'"

JOEL 2:28: "And it shall come to pass afterward, that I will pour out my spirit upon all flesh; and your sons and your daughters shall prophesy, your old men shall dream dreams, your young men shall see visions."

"During the Millennium things will be somewhat different from what they are now. As many as will then be drawn toward God will be privileged to come into relationship with him through consecration. They will then receive the Spirit of God in the sense

of blessing, but not in the sense of begetting, as the church receives it now." *R5583:5*

"In proportion as they receive his Spirit, they will come into the attitude of sonship." *R5583*

"The Holy Spirit will witness to the reconciled world....Those possessing the Spirit will no longer be the few...but...'all flesh.'

"The Spirit 'witness' will no longer be...

2 TIM. 3:12: "'...All that will live godly...shall suffer persecution.'

"It will no longer 'witness' to a 'narrow way' of sacrifice...." *E239*

MATT. 7:14: "...Narrow is the way, which leadeth unto life...."

"...for...

ISA. 35:8: "'...An highway shall be there, and a way, and it shall be called The way of holiness; the unclean shall not pass over it; but it shall be for those: The wayfaring men, though fools shall not err therein.'

ISA. 62:10: "'Go through...the gates; prepare ye the way of the people; cast up...the highway; gather out the stones; lift up a standard for the people'

"It will witness that..." *E240*

ACTS 3:23: "...Every soul which will not hear that prophet, shall be destroyed from among the people."

PSA. 37:9-11: "...Evildoers shall be cut off: but those that wait upon the Lord, they shall inherit the earth."

THE SPIRIT ON THE CHURCH

Gradual Development

"All Christians of large...development should have...witness on **all** ...points...but...Christians who have not yet progressed far enough to have all...may be truly begotten...and yet have but few...The great Husbandman does not expect fruitage...from the fresh and tender sprout...." *E240*

"The first witness that the newly begotten may have is, that they are accepted...young branches in the true Vine; and

that the Spirit of the Vine is in them — the desire to grow and to be like the Vine, and to bring forth fruitage. Nor should it be long....before...leaves and buds...will be discernible. The new-born babe...manifests its relationship...by desires for the 'milk.'..." *E240*

1 PET. 2:2: "As newborn babes, desire the sincere milk of the Word, that ye may grow thereby."

"Those...possessed of any of the...witnessings of the Spirit should rejoice...and every particular... lacking they should endeavor to...develop....Our trust rests...in the...promises....in...trial and... darkness as when enjoying the light of our...Father's smile...." *E241*

The Spirit Of The Church

"No manifestation of the Spirit of God prior to the first advent...was exactly the same as...upon...Jesus, from...baptism...and upon the church...from Pentecost...." *E176*

JOHN 7:39: "(But this spake he of the Holy Spirit which they...should receive: for the Holy Spirit was not yet given; because that Jesus was not yet glorified.)"

"After Adam's fall none...were accepted as **sons** of God prior to the first advent...." *E177*

JAS. 2:23: "...Abraham...was called the Friend of God."

Influence on The Church

"God's holy Spirit, as it operates...to bring his people into full **at-one-ment**...is...less easily understood...than...his power...in...

GEN. 1:2: "'...The Spirit of God moved upon the face of the waters.'

"We may understand the Holy Spirit to mean...

"(a) God's power exercised in any manner, but always according to...justice and love,...always a holy power.

"(b) This power may be an energy of life, a physically creative power, or a power of thought, creating...thoughts and words, or a...life-giving power, as...in the resurrection....

"(c) The begetting or transforming power...of the truth...'The Spirit of Truth.'

"Those who accept Christ as their Saviour and Advocate, and come to...full consecration... are...**begotten**...

JAS. 1:18: "'...with the word of truth — '...begotten by the Spirit of God to...'

ROM. 6:4: "'...newness of life.'" *E183*

"Such...are said to have received 'the Spirit of adoption,' because...God, through Christ, enters into a...covenant with

these as sons....If they abide in the **Spirit of Truth** he will cause that all...shall...

ROM. 8:28: "'...work together for good to them....'

"To the development...of...more of the holy Spirit as they progress in obedience to the Spirit of Truth. Hence the exhortation...is...

EPH. 5:18: "'...Be filled with the Spirit;'

GAL. 5:16: "'...Walk in the Spirit....'

COL. 3:16: "'Let the word of Christ dwell in you richly....'

2 PET. 1:8: "'For if those things be in you, and abound, they make [you that ye shall] neither be barren nor unfruitful....'

"The same holy Spirit...of the Father...operated in our Lord Jesus...hence it is also styled 'the Spirit of Christ.'..." *E184*

ROM. 8:9: "...If any man have not the Spirit of Christ, he is none of his."

EPH. 1:13,14: "...The Holy Spirit of the promise...is the earnest of our inheritance until the redemption of the purchased possession...."

Spirit Of Sonship

JOHN 1:12: "But as many as received him [Jesus], to them gave he power to become the sons of God...."

GAL. 4:5: "...that we might receive the adoption of sons."

EPH. 1:5: "Having predestinated us unto the adoption of children by Jesus Christ to himself."

ROM. 8:14-16: "For as many as are led by the Spirit of God, they are the sons of God. For ye have not received the spirit of bondage again to fear; but ye have received the Spirit of adoption, whereby we cry, 'Abba,' 'Father.' The Spirit itself beareth witness with our spirit, that we are the children of God."

"The correct thought is that of help, encouragement, assistance, strengthening. Thus our Lord's promise implied that the Holy Spirit which the Father would send in Jesus' name and as Jesus' representative would be near his followers, a present help in every time of need — the holy power by which he would guide and

direct his people and enable them to 'walk by faith and not by sight.'" *E203*

ROM. 8:16: "The Spirit itself beareth witness with our spirit, that we are the children of God."

"What a joy and peace divine comes to those who have the true witness — to those who have the correct experiences and have learned how to read them." *E228*

1 COR. 2:14: "But the natural man receiveth not the things of the Spirit of God: for they are foolishness unto him:

neither can he know them, because they are spiritually discerned."

"This is a very crucial test, as all may discern. It distinguishes sharply between the fallen man and the new creature, the spiritual. The test is here given of our possession of the Spirit, and our ability to discern and appreciate the things of God, which are hidden from the worldly." *E280*

1 JOHN 2:20,27: "But ye have an unction from the Holy One, and ye know all things. But the anointing which ye have received of him abideth in you, and ye need not that any man teach you: but as the same anointing teacheth you of all things, and is truth, and is no lie, and even as it hath taught you, ye shall abide in him."

"The signification of unction (and of its Greek origin **Chrisma**) is smoothness, oiliness, lubrication. From custom the word carried with it also the thought of fragrance, perfume. How beautifully and forcefully this word represents the effect of God's influence toward goodness, upon those who come under this antitypical anointing — holiness, gentleness, patience, brotherly kindness — love." *E281*

"These words unction and anointing awaken... recollections of the holy anointing oil poured upon the heads of each successor to the offices of the High Priest and King in Israel." *E281*

OVERCOMING THE WORLD

"No one can be an overcomer of the world who is in sympathy...with...its...spirit of selfishness, pride, ambition, etc." *E237*

"We are not to overcome the world by flattery, nor by joining in its follies and attempting to give these a religious twist; nor...by engaging in some moral or religious work...teaching a Sunday school class, or helping the poor, or joining a...church..." *E238*

JOHN 16:33: "In the world ye shall have tribulation: but be of good cheer: I have overcome the world."

"...only those who are begotten of his spirit, yea, filled with it, will be able to come off conquerors in the end." *F92*

1 JOHN 4:4: "Ye are of God, little children, and have overcome them: because greater is he that is in you, than he that is in the world."

"These powers of the world, the flesh and the devil are closely allied, and therefore he who plans for conquest...must seek alliance with another and stronger power. This power is tendered to all who earnestly undertake this work. It is none other than the mighty arm of our God." *R5488:6*

"...by this same positiveness of decision for truth and righteousness we acquire great help and assistance from other unseen powers. From the moment of our positive resistance of temptation and positive standing up for the Lord and his cause, we become stronger in the Lord and in the power of his might." *R5813:6*

1 JOHN 5:4: ***Diag***. "Because all that has been begotten by God overcomes the world; and this is that victory which overcomes the world — our faith."

"In the above text the Apostle John points to the only power which can sufficiently energize our whole being and nerve to patient endurance of tribulation, even to the end." *R1719:3*

"Overcoming is the gaining of some victory by the new creature over besetting weaknesses as well as over trespasses." *R5103:1*

REV. 2:7: "To him that overcometh will I give to eat of the tree of life..."

REV. 2:17: "To him that overcometh will I give to eat of the hidden manna..."

REV. 2:26: "And he that overcometh, and keepeth my works unto the end, to him will I give power over the nations."

REV. 3:5: "He that overcometh, the same shall be clothed in white raiment:"

REV. 3:12: "Him that overcometh will I make a pillar in the temple of my God..."

REV. 3:21: "To him that overcometh will I grant to sit with me in my throne..."

REV. 21:7: "He that overcometh shall inherit all things."

"It will be to such as thus overcome in spirit, in faith, that the Lord will give the final word of his mouth — 'well done, good and faithful servant, enter thou into the joys of thy Lord.'" *R4897:6*

2 COR. 4:18: "While we look not at the things which are seen, but at the things which are not seen: for the things which are seen are temporal; but the things which are not seen are eternal."

Now An Individual Conflict

"The Church's conflict...is nevertheless an individual conflict...While the Church will come off conqueror, it will be composed only of the individual victors...." *E193*

"Proper consecration...makes no reservations." *E195*

JOHN 6:38: "...I came not to do mine own will, but the will of Him that sent me."

"The true consecration alone brings...the holy Spirit,...which...

JOHN 14:17: "'...the world cannot receive....'" *E195*

True Consecration

"It bows to Jehovah's will, surrendering... self-will....,makes no reservations...." *E195*

2 COR. 4:7: "...We have this treasure in earthen vessels...."

2 COR. 5:1: "...We know that if our earthly house of this tabernacle were dissolved, we have a building of God, an house not made with hands, eternal in the heavens."

Fear Is A Foe

"One of the most serious foes of those... begotten to holiness of spirit...is...fear....

"...begotten of the realization of personal unworthiness....The antidote...is the holy Spirit of Truth, and its instructions...held in full assurance of faith....It points to the great atonement...." *E196*

ROM. 8:31-34: "...If God be for us, who can be against us? He that spared not his own Son, but delivered him up for us all, how shall he not with him also freely give us all things? Who shall lay anything to the charge of God's elect? It is God that justifieth. Who is he that condemneth? It is Christ that died, yea, rather, that

is risen again, who is even at the right hand of God, who also maketh intercession for us."

"The 'spirit of fear' may be made a valuable servant....,while it cannot be tolerated as a master....Make it the watch-dog...outside the door of the heart,...calling attention to thieves...who approach...to rob us...of holiness, joy, peace, love, and fellowship with our Father and with the brethren. Let us fear lest...any...be overcome with...a spirit of slumber...." *E197*

"Fear must never be admitted within the...heart...for...

1 JOHN 4:18: "'...Perfect love casteth out fear...'

2 TIM. 1:7: "'For God hath not given us the Spirit of fear; but of power, and of love, and of a sound mind.'

"Sometimes the attack comes from...fear for friends, fear for the world, etc....This...largely drives out...peace and joy and misdirects the energies....Or...the '**spirit of error**' may attempt to head us...to believe in universal salvation... suggesting pride on God's part, that would hinder him from destroying the wilfully wicked." *E198*

"The 'spirit of error,'...fear, and...bondage...give the lie to the Spirit of Truth, that...Christ Jesus...

HEB. 2:9: "'...by the grace of God...[tasted] death for every man.'

"...and that the blessed opportunity of coming into harmony with God under...the new covenant shall ultimately be extended to every creature; and when each one is brought to a knowledge of the truth he is judged thereby and either approved unto everlasting life, or condemned to everlasting destruction." *E199*

ACTS 3:23: "And it shall come to pass, that every soul which will not hear that prophet, shall be destroyed from among the people."

1 JOHN 4:6: "Hereby know we the spirit of truth, and the spirit of error."

KNOWLEDGE NOT SUFFICIENT

"One might have **much** knowledge of the Word of God without having **any** of its Spirit. To receive the **Spirit** of the Truth is to come into heart harmony with the Truth, to come into mental accord and co-operation....by first accepting...our Redeemer and Justifier, and consecrating...unreservedly to seek to know and to do his will." *E205*

"But this...should not be confounded with the '**gifts** of the Spirit,' nor...'**fruits** of the Spirit.' though its possession...." *E205*

HEB. 12:11: "...yieldeth the peaceable fruit of righteousness...."

GAL. 5:22,23: "...love, joy, peace, longsuffering, gentleness, goodness, faith, meekness, temperance...."

"The Spirit of truth must be ours before it can produce such fruits...." *E206*

JOHN 15:2,8: "...Every branch in me that beareth fruit, He purgeth it, that it may bring forth more fruit....Herein is my Father glorified, that ye bear much fruit; so shall ye be my disciples."

"The Christian is a branch from the moment of his consecration...a partaker of the holy Spirit, and yet it is not to be expected that he will instantly bear all the fruits, nor any...in their perfection...." *E206*

SPIRIT OF TRUTH LEADS TO ACTIVITY

"The spirit of error...is a...

ROM. 11:8: "'...spirit of slumber,'...

"of carelessness in heavenly things, and carefulness for earthly things — of carelessness for the true church and its bond of love, and of carefulness for human organizations and their creed-bonds.

THE SPIRIT THAT LUSTETH TO ENVY

"**Spirit begotten** 'new creatures' are...**dual** beings; the new...lives in the old body of flesh...captured by the renewed will for its use during...its development. (This...does not imply that Christians are of two natures....)...There is a continued warfare between this new disposition...and the...spirit...of our fallen flesh. Sometimes...the...will...of our flesh is spoken of as our spirit...." *E199, 200*

JAS. 4:5: "...The spirit that dwelleth in us lusteth to envy."

"The new spirit...does not envy." *E200*

1 COR. 13:4: "...Charity [love] envieth not...is not puffed up."

"The Apostle Paul...treats the subject...as though our flesh were no longer we but our enemies, and we...as new creatures..." *E200*

GAL. 5:16, 17: "...Walk in the Spirit, and ye shall not fulfil the lust of the flesh. For the flesh lusteth against the Spirit and the Spirit against the flesh: and these are contrary the one to the other: so that ye cannot do the things that ye would."

TAUGHT THROUGH THE SPIRIT

1 COR. 2:9-16: "...Eye hath not seen, nor ear heard, neither have entered into the heart of man, the things which God hath prepared for them that love him. But God hath revealed them unto us by his Spirit: for the Spirit searcheth all things, yea, the deep things of God. For what man knoweth the things of a man, save the spirit of man which is in him? even so the things of God knoweth no man, but the Spirit of God. Now we have received, not the spirit of the world, but the Spirit which is of God; that we might know the things that are freely given to us of God. Which things we also speak, not in the words which man's wisdom teacheth, but which the holy Spirit teacheth; comparing spiritual things with spiritual. But the natural man receiveth not the things of the Spirit of God: for they are foolishness unto him: neither can he know them, because they are spiritually discerned. But he that is spiritual judgeth all things, yet he himself is judged of no man. For who hath known the mind of the Lord, that he may instruct Him? But we have the mind of Christ."

"No natural man can understand...the motives which prompt the...'new creature' to...sacrifice things valuable...for hopes...which seem unreal. Hence the followers of the Lord are counted...

1 COR. 4:10: "'...fools for Christ's sake....'" *E201, 202*

THE COMFORTER

"*Parakletos* is rendered '**Comforter**' in John 14:16, 26....The correct thought is that of help, encouragement, assistance, strengthening....The holy Spirit...would be...a present help in every time of need —...by which he would guide and...enable them to...

2 COR. 5:7: "'...walk by faith, not by sight.'

"Our Lord...identifies the holy Spirit with himself." *E202*

JOHN 14:16,18,26: "And I will pray the Father, and he shall give you another Comforter, that he [or, it] may abide with you forever....But the Comforter, which is the holy Spirit, [*Diag.*:] which the Father will send in my name, shall teach you all things, and remind you of all things which I said to you."

"The Truth itself is the main channel of the Spirit of the Truth; but all who...have its Spirit are to that extent also channels...." *E203*

"It moves, enlightens, warms, and instructs all who, having the proper conditions in themselves, are brought into connection with it...and it may bring death — Second Death, to all wilful sinners. How needful, then, that each...have the proper...**connections**...to be filled with the Spirit and made active unto all good works!" *E203*

"Nothing connected with this reference to...the comforter...implies...another **person** of a trinity....In verses 18 and 23 the Father and the Son are referred to as the ones who strengthen and guide and comfort the church — through the Spirit. Thus our Lord declared." *E204*

MATT. 28:20, *Diag.*: "...Behold, I am with you all the days, till the consummation of the age."

"...by the holy Spirit, not in the flesh." *E204*

JOHN 14:18,23: "I will not leave you comfortless: I will come unto you....If a man love me, he will keep my words: and my Father will love him, and we will come unto him and make our abode with him."

"The pronoun follows its noun...Comforter (Gr. **masculine**, but arbitrarily so, regardless of sex — as in the German, which makes stove and table masculine; fork, feminine; woman, neuter gender.)" *E171*

LYING TO THE SPIRIT

ACTS 5:3: "But Peter said, "Ananias, why hath Satan filled thine heart to lie to the Holy Spirit, and to keep back part of the price of the land?"

"Satan filled Ananias' heart...as God fills the hearts of his people — by his Spirit, his influence. Satan's spirit is one of...selfishness, which does not hesitate at

deceit....Peter...the recipient of a...'gift of discerning of spirits,' ...could see that Ananias and Sapphira were acting dishonestly....The apostle uses the word 'God' and 'Holy Spirit' interchangeably, saying in verse 3 that they had lied unto the Holy Spirit, and in verse 4, that they had lied unto God....God's Holy Spirit, acting through the apostles, was God's representative...: and...in lying to the apostles...Ananias and Sapphira were lying to God, whose agent...Peter was." *E269*

"As St. Peter said, they lied, not to man, but to the holy Spirit of God. In this, and in this alone, consisted the sin for which they died." *R5453:5*

EXOD. 17:2: "And Moses said unto them, why chide ye with me? wherefore do ye tempt the Lord?"

DEUT. 6:16: "Ye shall not tempt the Lord your God."

PSA. 78:18,41: "And they tempted God in their heart by asking meat for their lust. Yea, they turned back and tempted God, and limited the Holy One of Israel."

ISA. 7:12: "But Ahaz said, I will not ask, neither will I tempt the Lord."

MAL. 3:15: "And now we call the proud happy; yea, they that work wickedness are set up; yea, they that tempt God are even delivered."

MATT. 4:7: "Jesus said unto him, It is written again, Thou shalt not tempt the Lord thy God."

"Our Lord's spirit or disposition was far from that of tempting God with unreasonable and unnecessary requests: he claimed no temporal favors — no protection against the legitimate, natural results of any presumptuous experiment." *R1688:5*

LUKE 4:12: "And Jesus answering said unto him, It is said, Thou shalt not tempt the Lord thy God."

"But to deliberately place oneself in danger and to call upon or expect God to offset the deliberate act with divine protection would be a mistake. It would be tempting God." *R32928:3*

ACTS 5:9: "Then Peter said unto her [Sapphira] 'How is it that ye have agreed together to tempt the Spirit of the Lord?'"

"'The Spirit of the Lord,' Jesus....was...in the church, the representative of the church's Head — operating through...his Spirit-inspired... apostle." *E270*

"As with Ananias, so with his wife, their lying was reckoned to be not to Peter and the church as men, but to God whose agent and representative through the Spirit Peter was." *R372:4*

"...the same Spirit is here referred to as being 'the Spirit of the Lord,' by which the apostle probably meant the Lord Jesus. The Spirit of the Father, the Holy Spirit, was especially in the Church, the representative of the Church's Lord or Head — operating through the mind of his 'body' — in this instance his Spirit-inspired and actuated apostle." *E270*

ACTS 15:10: "Now therefore why tempt ye God, to put a yoke upon the neck of the disciples...?"

1 COR. 10:9: "Neither let us tempt Christ, as some of them also tempted, and were destroyed of serpents."

"In seeking to serve the Lord we are not to tempt Providence by expecting miracles where they are unnecessary." *R2244:2*

GRIEVE NOT — QUENCH NOT THE SPIRIT

EPH. 4:30: "And grieve not the Holy Spirit of God, whereby ye are sealed unto the day of redemption."

"...the apostle urges that we do nothing which would be a violation of our covenant — that we do nothing to cause grief to our new minds or smiting of conscience, as new creatures in Christ. Grieve not the Holy Spirit, mind of God, in you." *E264*

1 THES. 5:19: "Quench not the Spirit."

"...if we should be seduced into worldliness by the spirit of the world, the effect would be to extinguish or quench the light of the holy mind or Spirit of God in us..." *E264*

"...that it be not quenched either with false doctrines or forms and ceremonies, or too rigid rules or by worldly spirit or by the cares of this life or by any other thing, circumstance or condition under our control." *R3137:3*

"It is these advanced disciples of Jesus that are in danger of grieving the holy Spirit whereby they are sealed — of quenching the spirit of holiness in their hearts. While the quenching and the grieving are not instantaneous works, they are the paths which lead to the second death." *R5391:1*

SIN AGAINST THE HOLY SPIRIT

MATT. 12:32: "...Whosoever speaketh against the Holy Spirit, it shall not be forgiven him, neither in this world [age, *Diag.*] neither in the world to come [the coming, *Diag. interlineary*]."

"The holy Spirit here denotes a light, an intelligence, respecting God's purposes." *R5105:6*

"Sins against clear manifestations of divine grace cannot be attributed to weakness of the flesh and heredity, but must be properly charged up as wilful viciousness of the heart, which is unforgivable." *E272*

"The Scriptures nowhere acknowledge more than...

1 COR. 8:6: "'...one God, the Father, of whom are all things...'

"And he superior to all...

"...and one Lord Jesus Christ, by whom are all things....

"And he next to the Father, exalted to that position by the Father's power. The Holy Spirit was of the Father and by the Son, and hence could not be superior to them...." *E270*

"Jesus had just been using this...Holy Spirit...to cast out a devil: The Pharisees who saw the miracle, and could not deny it, sought to turn aside its force by claiming that it was...by Satanic power....Our Lord...asserts that it was...'by the Spirit of God'...

****

"They might have misinterpreted him...and... God's dealings...;but when once the power of God had been **witnessed** by them, in direct contrast with the power of the devil, the fact that they spoke evil of it implied that their hearts were in a most unholy condition. Sins of ignorance...**will** be forgiven....But sins against clear manifestations of divine grace....

"...will never have forgiveness...in this age, nor in the coming age...." *E270, 271, 272*

".If...against a measure of light, then 'stripes'... will result...if full, full knowing opposition to the holy power of God,...everlasting destruction...." *E273*

HEB. 10:26,29: "For if we sin wilfully after that we have received the knowledge of the truth, there remaineth no more sacrifice for sins,...Of how much sorer punishment, suppose ye, shall he be thought worthy, who hath trodden under foot the Son of God, and hath counted the blood of the covenant, wherewith he was sanctified, an unholy thing, and hath done despite unto the Spirit of grace?"

"...those who then wilfully sin against full light and opportunity must die the second death, from which there is no recovery." *R1234:5*

MARK 3:29: "But he that shall blaspheme against the Holy Spirit hath never forgiveness."

"If, however, it were a sin against full light, the expiation would mean second death." *R5690:2*

LUKE 12:10: "And whosoever shall speak a word against the Son of man, it shall be forgiven him: but unto him that blasphemeth against the Holy Spirit it shall not be forgiven."

"During the Gospel age, the only ones who can commit the sin unto death, blasphemy against the holy Spirit, are those

who have been enlightened by the holy Spirit." *ref. unknown*

HEB.6:4-6: "For it is impossible for those who were once enlightened, and have tasted of the heavenly gift, and were made partakers of the Holy Spirit, and have tasted the good word of God, and the powers of the world to come, if they shall fall away, to renew them again unto repentance; seeing they crucify to themselves the Son of God afresh, and put him to an open shame."

"...but if the alienation (from God) and sin are wholly wilful, against full light and ability, it is '**mortal sin**;' and there is no hope of repentance or recovery; it is unto death, the second death — destruction." *R1250:6*

"On the contrary, if any who had thus become 'new creatures' should engage in sin **willingly**, **heartily**, and live according to the flesh, it is a sure sign that the **seed** of truth wherewith he was **begotten** has perished." *R2440:5*

1 JOHN 5:16: "If any man see his brother sin a sin which is not unto death, he shall ask, and he shall give him life for them that sin not unto death. There is a sin unto death: I do not say that he shall pray for it."

THE SPIRIT OF THE WORLD — OF ANTICHRIST

1 JOHN 4:3: "...That [spirit] of Antichrist..."

"...opposed to Christ....desires to dispute that he ever came into the world; then if unsuccessful...it will claim that our Lord Jesus was a mere...sinful man; if this be disproved, it will still claim that...he accomplished nothing, or...was merely an example, and not a Redeemer...." *E186*

1 JOHN 4:1,6: "Beloved, believe not every spirit, but try the spirits whether they are of God....He that is not of God heareth not us. Hereby know we the Spirit of truth, and the spirit of error."

HOLY AND UNHOLY SPIRITS AT WAR

"God's perfections of character are the standards for holiness...and truth....Every thing and every creature...not in full accord...is unholy....These adverse influences are sometimes credited to Satan because he is the arch-enemy of God and was the first...against righteousness...'the father of lies.'...We are to distinguish between...spirit **beings** and...spirit **influences**. The trend of evolutionary thought... is to ignore the **personality** of Satan and... wicked spirits...and to claim that...merely contends with...ignorance and misdirection.... Others...are reaching the conclusion that there is no personal **God** but merely good influences which...inhere in man and are...being evolved to perfection." *E187*

EPH. 6:12, *Diag*.: "Because our conflict is not with blood and flesh, but [with the...potentates of this darkness [interlineary:] with the spiritual things of the evil one in the heavenlies."

See also Index: **Satan**

THE BATTLE GROUND

"Mankind — the minds...of men — is the battle ground on which the holy Spirit contends with the evil spirit of Satan...." *E189*

ROM. 5:12,21; 6:16-23; 7:14; 8:20,21

"By one man sin entered into the world, and death by sin; and so death passed upon all men, for that [margin and *Diag*., **in whom**] all have sinned....As sin hath reigned unto death, even so might grace reign through righteousness unto eternal life by Jesus Christ our Lord....To whom ye yield yourselves servants to obey, his servants ye are to whom ye obey; whether of sin unto death, or of obedience unto righteousness....Ye were the servants of sin, but ye have obeyed from the heart that form of doctrine which delivered you. Being then made free from sin, ye became the servants of righteousness....for as ye have yielded your members servants to uncleanness and to iniquity unto iniquity; even so now yield your members servants to righteousness unto holiness. For when ye were the servants of sin, ye were free from righteousness. What fruit had ye then in those things whereof ye are now ashamed? for

the end of those things is death. But now being made free from sin, and become servants to God, ye have your fruit unto holiness, and the end everlasting life. For the wages of sin is death; but the gift of God is eternal life through Jesus Christ our Lord....For we know that the law is spiritual: but I am carnal, sold under sin....For the creature was made subject to vanity, not willingly, but by reason of him who hath subjected **[the same] in hope, because the creature itself also shall** be delivered from the bondage of corruption into the glorious liberty of the children of God."

"Sold under sin, by...Adam, his family became 'slaves of sin' 'through frailty,'...the weakness of heredity....blinded by the god...of this...world (condition), who puts evil...as good...having... made it...difficult to do good, and...having ranged all the advantages...on the side of evil and made it impossible to attain these except by conforming to..." *E189*

1 COR 2:12: "...the spirit of the world...."

"The **battle** did not begin until our Lord's first advent; for the Spirit of Truth came first upon our Lord Jesus and...his church...." *E189*

"The **battle** of the Law of Righteousness was confined to...Israel, and...

HEB. 7:19: "'...the Law made nothing **perfect**...'

"None of the fallen race could...win in that fight. It was really to manifest Christ Jesus, the only Law-keeper, as the channel of divine mercy; and...discipline...

ROM. 9:27: "'...a remnant...'

"...ready for the Spirit Dispensation and its conflicts by pointing them to Christ." *E189*

"The world was dark when...Jesus appeared... with the Spirit of God, the light of divine truth, which constituted him...

JOHN 8:12: "'...the Light of the world....'

"And at once the **battle** began;...the holy Spirit, since Pentecost, being represented...by the true members of Christ's body, possessors of the holy Spirit...." *E189*

"The spirit of evil triumphed against the holy Spirit in our Lord to the extent of crucifying him: and...against all the faithful members of the body... — misrepresenting...and evilly entreating them, variously...." *E190*

"This defeat of the Spirit...is merely a seeming defeat. Its...mission...has been well accomplished.

"(1) It was to be in **God's people**...and by reason...of the...power of the spirit of evil...to prove...their characters...." *E191*

2 TIM. 3:12: "...All that will live godly...shall suffer persecution."

MATT. 5:11: "Blessed are ye, when men shall revile you, and persecute you, and shall say all manner of evil against you falsely, for my sake."

1 PET. 2:23: "...When He was reviled, reviled not again; when he suffered, he threatened not...."

"...none of these things move me, neither count I my life dear....

"(2) The...Spirit of holiness in God's people was to so shine forth upon the world that it would attract all not thoroughly blinded by the...spirit of the Adversary." *E191*

"The holy Spirit has triumphed in both... objects....It has selected a...'little flock' of... followers of...righteousness....also...**witnessing** to the world...." *E191*

JOHN 16:9-11: "Of sin...of righteousness,...of judgment...."

VARIOUS DELINEATIONS OF THE HOLY SPIRIT

GEN. 1:2: "...the Spirit of God...."

ISA. 11:2: "...The Spirit of the Lord...the Spirit of wisdom and understanding, the Spirit of counsel and might; the Spirit of knowledge and of the fear of the Lord."

EZEK. 11:9: "...a new spirit."

MATT. 10:20: "...the Spirit of your Father...."

JOHN 16:13: "...the Spirit of truth...."

ROM. 1:4: "...the Spirit of holiness...."

ROM. 8:9: "...the Spirit of Christ...."

ROM. 8:15: "...the Spirit of adoption...."

2 COR. 3:17: "...the Spirit of...liberty."

GAL. 6:1: "...the Spirit of meekness...."

EPH. 1:13: "....the Holy Spirit of promise."

EPH. 1:17: "...the spirit of wisdom and revelation..."

2 TIM. 1:7: "...the Spirit of...power, and of love, and of a sound mind."

HEB. 10:29: "...the Spirit of grace."

1 PET. 4:14: "...the Spirit of glory and of God...."

REV. 19:10: "...the Spirit of the prophecy." *Diag.*

CONTRASTING SPIRITS

"There is another spirit mentioned...." *E168*

2 TIM. 1:7: "...the spirit of fear...."

ROM. 8:15: "...the spirit of bondage..."

1 COR. 2:12: "...the spirit of the world..."

1 JOHN 4:6: "...the spirit of error...."

ACTS 16:16: "...a spirit of divination...."

1 JOHN 4:3: "...spirit of Antichrist...."

ROM. 11:8: "...the spirit of slumber...."

"No one thinks that these...unitedly considered, would justify the thought that there are two or more Satans...." *E168*

SUPPOSED OBJECTIONS CONSIDERED

(1) 1 THES. 5:19: "Quench not the Spirit."

"...By reason of our possession of the Holy Spirit...enlightening us, we are called" *E264*

MATT. 5:14: "...The light of the world...."

"...The spirit of the world...would...quench the light of the Holy...Spirit...shining from us...." *E264*

MATT. 6:23: "If...the light that is in thee be [-come] darkness [be extinguished] how great is that darkness!"

(2) Grieve not the Holy Spirit EPH. 4:30: "And grieve not the Holy Spirit of God, whereby ye are sealed unto the day of redemption."

"To seal signifies to mark....From the moment of true consecration...the...sealing may be noted in the words, thoughts, and conduct." *E264*

PHIL. 2:5: "Let this mind be in you which was also in Christ Jesus."

"The apostle urges that we do nothing to cause grief to our new minds or...wound our conscience....Grieve not the Holy Spirit mind of God in you, which is your seal...." *E264*

(3) The Spirit of truth JOHN 16:13: "...The Spirit of truth...shall not speak of himself, * but whatsoever he shall hear, that shall he speak: and he will show you things to come."

[* "The pronoun follows its noun here, comforter (Gr. **masculine**, but arbitrarily so, regardless of sex — as in the German, which makes stove and table, masculine; fork feminine; woman, neuter)." *E171, footnote]*

"...Our Lord had...not until now...explained that he...must leave them...." *E265*

LUKE 19:12: "He said..., A certain nobleman went into a far country to receive...a kingdom and to return."

"Consoling them...he assures them that...the Father would send another Comforter...as his representative....not...another Messiah, or... teacher...." *E265*

JOHN 16:13: "He shall not speak of himself...."

"...independently and out of harmony with my teaching...

JOHN 16:13: "...but whatsoever he shall hear, that shall he speak...."

"This Comforter will be merely a channel of communication between the Father and myself....The Spirit of Truth...will elaborate and bring to your attention...truths which I have... stated...which you are not yet prepared to clearly comprehend...until first I have paid your ransom...and presented it on your behalf." *E266*

JOHN 16:14: "He shall glorify me: for he shall receive of mine, and shall show it unto you."

"You are not...to expect a new teaching...but a further development...along the lines of my teaching....It is the very spirit of truth...from the Father. This Spirit of truth will... communicate my doctrines, and..." *E266*

JOHN 16:13: "...show you things to come."

"By receiving the Holy Spirit...and by conduct in harmony with the Father's Word...we...appreciate" *E266*

1 COR. 2:9: "...the things which God hath prepared for them that love him."

(4) But the Comforter JOHN 14:26: "But the Comforter, Which Is the Holy Ghost, Whom the Father Will Send in My Name...."

"'Ghost'...has a very vague meaning. Very positively identified with...**personality**....In the Revised Version..., twenty-one...occurrences of 'Ghost' were changed...to read 'Spirit.'...The American...Committee recorded its **protest**... to...'Ghost' in the remaining" — the original Greek word being ***pneuma*** — Spirit." *E168*

"Just as a servant is sent in the name of his master....the Holy Spirit is the Father's Spirit...sent...in the name of...Jesus.... because...the...work of atonement has been committed to the Son, and of the Father is the channel...." *E267*

"When the Holy Spirit...came upon...Jesus at his baptism...it was a comfort...but...meant...the sacrifice of every earthly...hope....Had our Lord been...self-seeking, the guidance of the Holy Spirit, instead of being comforting...would have been disquieting....The more of the mind of the Lord the natural man can discern, the more unhappy...he becomes, because it conflicts with his spirit...and reproves him. But the 'new creature...,' whose own will is dead...— to him the clear apprehension of the Father's will and plan and...providence...are comforting...." *E268*

ROM. 15:4: "...Whatsoever things were written aforetime were written for our learning, that we through patience and comfort of the Scriptures might have hope."

(5) "Filled With The Holy Spirit" ACTS 2:4: "...They were all filled with the Holy Spirit, and began to speak with other tongues, as the Spirit gave them utterance."

"It was the...Spirit of God, operating in the disciples, as the Spirit of adoption....God's Holy Spirit...acted also **upon** them, conferring...gifts for a testimony to the world, and for the establishment of the church....It would be unreasonable to think of God getting personally into...a hundred men...the power of the Highest...could be in and upon...millions without...interfering with the personal presence of Jehovah upon the throne of the universe." *E268*

(6) "Lying To The Holy Spirit" ACTS 5:3: "...Peter said, "Ananias, why hath Satan filled thine heart to lie to the Holy Spirit, and to keep back part of the price of the land?"

"Satan filled Ananias' heart...as God fills the hearts of his people — by his Spirit, his influence. Satan's spirit is one of...selfishness, which does not hesitate at

deceit....Peter...the recipient of a...'gift of discerning of spirits,'...could see that Ananias and Sapphira were acting dishonestly....The apostle uses the word 'God' and 'Holy Spirit' interchangeably, saying in verse 3 that they had lied unto the Holy Spirit, and in verse 4, that they had lied unto God....God's Holy Spirit, acting through the apostles, was God's representative...: and...in lying to the apostles...Ananias and Sapphira were lying to God, whose agent...Peter was." *E269*

(7) "Tempting The Holy Spirit" ACTS 5:9: "Then Peter said unto her [Sapphira] 'How is it that ye have agreed together to tempt the Spirit of the Lord?'"

"'The Spirit of the Lord,' Jesus....was...in the church, the representative of the church's Head — operating through...his Spirit-inspired... apostle." *E270*

(8) "Sin Against The Holy Spirit" MATT. 12:32: "...Whosoever speaketh against the Holy Spirit, it shall not be forgiven him, neither in this world [age, *Diag*.] neither in the world to come [the coming, *Diag. interlineary*]."

"The Scriptures nowhere acknowledge more than...

1 COR. 8:6: "'...one God, the Father, of whom are all things'...

"And he superior to all...

"...and one Lord Jesus Christ, by whom are all things....

"And he next to the Father, exalted to that position by the Father's power. The Holy Spirit was **of** the Father and **by** the Son, and hence could not be superior to them...." *E270*

"Jesus had just been using this...Holy Spirit...to cast out a devil: The Pharisees who saw the miracle, and could not deny it, sought to turn aside its force by claiming that it was...by Satanic power....Our Lord...asserts that it was...'by the Spirit of God.'..."

****

"They might have misinterpreted him...and...God's dealings...;but

when once the power of God had been **witnessed** by them, in direct contrast with the power of the devil, the fact that they spoke evil of it implied that their hearts were in a most unholy condition. Sins of ignorance...**will** be forgiven....But sins against clear manifestations of divine grace....

"...will never have forgiveness...in this age, nor in the coming age...." *E270, 271, 272*

"If...against a measure of light, then 'stripes'...will result...if full, full knowing opposition to the holy power of God,... everlasting destruction...." *E273*

HEB. 10:26,29: "For if we sin wilfully after that we have received the knowledge of the truth, there remaineth no more sacrifice for sins,...Of how much sorer punishment, suppose ye, shall he be thought worthy, who hath trodden under foot the Son of God, and hath counted the blood of the covenant, wherewith he was sanctified, an unholy thing, and hath done despite unto the Spirit of grace?"

1 JOHN 5:16: "If any man see his brother sin a sin which is not unto death, he shall ask, and he shall give him life for them that sin not unto death. There is a sin unto death: I do not say that he shall pray for it."

(9) The Spirit Said Unto Philip ACTS 8:29 "The Spirit said unto Philip, 'Go near, and join thyself to this chariot.'"

"In what manner...we are not informed....God has...unlimited means for communicating his wishes to his people." *E273*

ACTS 8:39: "...The Spirit of the Lord caught away Philip...."

(10) The Spirit Said Unto Him ACTS 10:19 "The Spirit said unto him, 'Behold, three men seek thee.'"

"...it is quite immaterial to us **how** the power, influence, Spirit of God....did direct the apostle...."

(11) The Holy Ghost [Spirit] Said ACTS 13:2 "The Holy Ghost [Spirit] said, 'Separate me Barnabas and Saul for the work whereunto I have called them.'"

"The Holy Spirit uses the personal...form of expression....It is...appropriate here, in speaking of Jehovah's power and the information which he gave....It is quite probable that the Holy Spirit...made use of...the gift of prophecy...." *E274*

ACTS 13:1: "Now there were in the church that was at Antioch certain prophets...."

(12) It Seemed Good To The Holy Spirit ACTS 15:28 "It seemed good to the Holy Spirit and to us."

"The decision reached was...not merely the judgment of the apostles...; but...they had the evidence that their decision was the mind...,the Spirit of the Lord.

"The Apostle James....reasons out the mind of the Lord on the subject, by reviewing the... leading of Peter — sending him to Cornelius, ...followed...by...an unfulfilled prophecy....The conclusion...he and all...accepted as the Holy Spirit's teaching...Acts 15:13-18." *E275*

ACTS 15:13-18: "And after they had held their peace, James answered, saying, Men and brethren, hearken unto me: Simeon hath declared how God at the first did visit the

Gentiles, to take out of them a people for his name. And to this agree the words of the prophets; as it is written, After this I will return, and will build again the tabernacle of David, which is fallen down; and I will build again the ruins thereof, and I will set it up: That the residue of men might seek after the Lord, and all the Gentiles, upon whom my name is called, saith the Lord, who doeth all these things. Known unto God are all his works from the beginning of the world."

(13) Forbidden by the Holy Ghost [Spirit] ACTS:16:6 "Forbidden by the Holy Ghost [Spirit] to preach the word in Asia"

"We are not informed...how the apostle and his companions were forbidden...but apparently they were hindered... — unfavorable circumstances preventing. But no matter **how**...; they were directed by the Lord's Spirit: he used invisible power...

"One of the Spirit's ways...is furnished by the context:" *E276*

ACTS 16:9: "...A vision appeared to Paul in the night; there stood a man of Macedonia, and prayed him, saying, "Come over into Macedonia, and help us."

(14) The Holy Ghost [Spirit] Witnesseth ACTS 20:23 "The Holy Ghost [Spirit] Witnesseth in every city, saying that bonds and afflictions abide me."

"As an illustration of the agencies by which God's holy will or Spirit informed Paul..., not" *E277*

ACTS 21:11: "...When he was come unto us, he took Paul's girdle, and bound his own hands and feet, and said, "Thus saith the Holy Ghost [Spirit], so shall the Jews at Jerusalem bind the man that owneth this girdle, and deliver him into the hands of the Gentiles."

"The friends at Caesarea...said..." *E278*

ACTS 21:14: "...The will of the Lord be done."

(15) "The Holy Spirit Made Some Overseers." ACTS 20:28: "Take heed therefore unto yourselves, and to all the flock, over which the Holy Ghost [Spirit] hath made you overseers, to feed the church of God."

"They were servants of the church by the Lord's appointment, through his Holy Spirit or influence which had guided...and overruled in...their selection..." *E278*

1 COR. 12:6,7: "And there are diversities of operations, but it is the same God which worketh all [things] in [among] all. But the manifestation of the Spirit is given to every man to

profit withal....**God hath** set some in the church, first apostles, secondarily prophets, thirdly teachers...."

(16) The Holy Spirit a Teacher 1 COR. 2:10,13: "...God hath revealed them unto us by his Spirit: for the Spirit searcheth all things, yea, the deep things of God....which things also we speak, not in the words which man's wisdom teacheth, but which the Holy Ghost [Spirit] teacheth...."

"The Holy Spirit or mind of God...enables their minds to comprehend his plan....The Spirit of God in his people is...the holy mind or influence or disposition of God in them" E279

(17) "The Things of the Spirit of God" 1 COR. 2:14: "But the natural man receiveth not the things of the Spirit of God: for they are foolishness unto him: neither can he know them, because they are spiritually discerned."

"The test is here given of our possession of the Spirit, and our ability to discern...the things of God, which are hidden from the worldly." E180

(18) "An Unction From The Holy One" 1 JOHN 2:20,27: "...Ye have an unction from the Holy One, and ye know all

things....But the anointing which ye have received of him abideth in you, and ye need not that any man should teach you: but as the same anointing teacheth you of all things, and is truth, and is no lie, and even as it hath taught you, ye shall abide in him."

"Most astounding is that those who have this unction '**know all things**.'...How the matter is simplified when translated, 'ye all know it' [as in *Sinaitic* and *Vatican 1209 MSS.* See *Nestle's* footnote]!...The true children of God know...the difference between the natural mind...and the new...mind...." *E282*

"Unction and anointing awaken...recollections of the holy anointing oil poured upon the...high priest and king in Israel....Jesus was anointed with the Holy Spirit....He thus became the Christ — the anointed...."

"The elect church is to be..."

1 PET. 2:9: "...a royal priesthood...."

"...(king priests) — 'members of the body of the Anointed....'

"The significance of **unction** (and of its Greek original, **chrisma**) is smoothness, oiliness, lubrication. From custom the word carried...the thought of fragrance, perfume....This word represents the effect of God's **influence**...upon those who come under this...anointing — holiness, gentleness, patience, brotherly kindness — love!" *E281*

"How could we be anointed with a person?" *E282*

"The Holy One is the Father...." *E282*

ACTS 2:33: "...Having received of the Father the promise of the Holy Spirit, he hath shed **forth** this, which ye now see and hear."

JOEL 2:28,29: "...I will pour out my spirit...."

"Can anyone claim that this would be appropriate language to use respecting any **person**?....Such language would be disrespectful, if applied to a third person of a trinity of Gods 'equal in power and glory.'" *E282*

"With us no philosophy can take the place of Christ in our hearts; no theory could cause us to question...the correctness of the Gospel.... Besides the **reasonableness** of...

JUDE 3: "'...the faith...once delivered unto the saints'

"consider the...effect of that message upon you: it was accompanied by miraculous gifts...but... the anointing...has renewed your minds, producing...**fruits** of the Spirit of holiness which the fakirs cannot duplicate and which the philosophers...cannot deny.

"On these fundamentals...That Christ Jesus was...the very Son of God and our Redeemer, and that eternal life can be obtained only through vital union with him — you have no need of instruction....And so long as you have this Holy Spirit of love abiding in you....so long as you remember that...

PHIL. 4:7: "'...the peace of God, which passeth all understanding....'

"came...through an acceptance of Jesus as the Son of God and the only power of God unto salvation, so long will this spirit hold you firm...on this point. And you will find this same test...the Holy Spirit of love...helpful in proving all matters: for whatever contradicts or ignores this Spirit of love is...a false teaching. And...its teaching is that...we must 'abide in him' — to abandon Christ is to abandon all." E286

(19) "Groanings Which Cannot Be Uttered" ROM. 8:26,27: "...The Spirit itself maketh intercession for us with groanings which cannot be uttered. And he that searcheth the hearts knoweth what is the mind of the Spirit."

"It would...be strange, if the Holy Spirit were a person,....' equal in power' with the Father and the Son, that he should find it necessary to address the Father and the Son...with unutterable groans." *E287*

"What is not uttered is not a groan. But this...would appear...strange...if...the Holy Spirit ...of the Almighty...is unable to express itself intelligently...." *E288*

"The spirit which maketh intercession for us is our own spirit....The apostle had just been writing of...humanity groaning...." *E288*

ROM 8:22: "...The whole creation groaneth and travaileth in pain together until now."

"He then passes...to the present condition of the church, in which we groan." *E288*

ROM. 8:23: "...Ourselves also, which have the first fruits of the Spirit, even we ourselves groan within ourselves...."

"We...groan for the promised deliverance...in the first resurrection....God...recognizes not the flesh and its weaknesses...but the spirit...the intentions...the 'new creature.'..." *E289*

ROM. 8:26,27: "Likewise the spirit ['our new holy mind'] also helpeth ['maketh up for'] our ['bodily'] infirmities: for we know not ['even'] what we should pray for as we ought ['much less are we always able to do as we would like']: but the spirit itself ['our holy mind'] maketh intercession ['for us — omitted by oldest MSS.'] with groanings which cannot be uttered ['in words']. And he that searcheth the hearts ['God'] knoweth what is the mind ['Greek phronema — inclination'] of...['our'] spirit, because he ['or it — our spirit' — 'there is no pronoun expressed here in the Greek; see Diag.'] maketh intercession for the saints according to [the will of] God." *E289*

"Some...overtaken in a fault....almost disheartened as they approached the throne of...grace...had no words for utterance, but merely groaned in spirit to God, 'being burdened.' But the heavenly Father....answered the unuttered prayers, granted...a blessed realization of forgiveness." *E290*

ROM. 8:31: "...If God be for us, who can be against us?"

(20) How The Spirit Reproves The World JOHN 16:8: "...When he [the Spirit of truth] is come, he will reprove the world of sin, and of righteousness, and of judgment."

"The pronoun follows its noun here, 'Comforter' (Vs. 7) (Gr. **masculine**, but arbitrarily so, regardless of sex...." *E171*

"The...Lord's...followers, upon whom his Spirit would come, and in whom it would dwell richly...were to be...

MATT. 5:14: "'...the **light** of the world.'

"It is this **light** of truth...shines forth from the truly consecrated church upon the world...that tends to reprove their darkness. Our Lord said...after he had been anointed with the Spirit of God,"

JOHN 8:12; 9:5: "As long as I am in the world, I am the light of the world."

"And addressing his church...sanctified by the same Holy Spirit, he said...

MATT. 5:14, 16: "'Ye are the light of the world....Let your light so shine before men....'" *E292*

EPH. 5:8: "...Ye were sometimes darkness, but now are ye light in the Lord: walk as children of light."

1 THES. 5:5: "Ye are all the children of light, and the children of the day: we are not of the night, nor of darkness."

2 COR. 4:6: "...For God ['the Spirit of God, the Spirit of truth' (*E193)*]...hath shined in our hearts, to give the light...of the glory of God...."

"The light of God's truth, the Holy Spirit...shines **out upon the world**...." *E293*

PHIL. 2:14,15: "Do all things without murmurings and disputings: that ye may be blameless and harmless, the sons of God, without rebuke, in the midst of a crooked and perverse nation, among whom ye shine as lights in the world...."

EPH. 5:8,11,13: "...Walk as children of light....and have no fellowship with the unfruitful works of darkness, but rather reprove them....All things that are reproved are made manifest by the light...."

"The light of God's truth...as it shines through a sanctified life, is the Holy Spirit, reproving the darkness of the world, showing...what **sin** is, in contrast with **righteousness**. And from this enlightenment will come to them the conviction of a coming judgment." *E293*

2 COR. 3:2: "Ye are our epistle written in our hearts, known and read of all men."

"Our Lord warns us of the necessity of letting our light shine **continually**, saying." *E294*

MATT. 6:23: "...If...that light that is in thee be [come] darkness, how great is that darkness!"

"Satan achieves no greater triumph than when he seduces a soul...once enlightened and sanctified by the truth. The influence of such...for evil is more than doubled." *E294*

1 COR. 10:12: "...Let him that thinketh he standeth take heed lest he fall."

"To put his light..."

MATT. 5:15: "...under a bushel...."

"...is a sure step toward darkness." *E294*

"'Hereby Know Ye the Spirit of God' From the Spirit of Antichrist."

1 JOHN 4:2,3: "Hereby know ye the Spirit of God: Every spirit that confesseth that Jesus Christ is come in the flesh is of God: and every spirit that confesseth not that Jesus Christ is come in the flesh is not of God: and this is that spirit of antichrist."

1 JOHN 4:1; 2 JOHN 7: "Beloved, believe not every spirit, but try the spirits whether they are of God: because many false prophets are gone out into the world...., who confess not that Jesus Christ is come in the flesh. This is a deceiver and an antichrist."

"The Lord's people must...'try the spirits,' whether they be of God or of the Evil One, — the Spirit of Truth or...of error...." *E295*

"...one general **test** respecting...the Spirit of truth and the spirit of error — the Holy Spirit...guiding into all truth, and the unholy spirit of antichrist...was...Messiah's having come in the flesh.... — the ransom test...: every doctrine that **denies** it is...anti (against) Christ: every doctrine that **ignores** it is...dangerous: every doctrine that **confesses** it is fundamentally correct — ...tending in the right direction." *E295*

"The heathen philosophies...

1 TIM. 6:20: "'...science falsely so called...'

"...claimed that Jesus was...a great teacher...but...not the Son of God more than the others....They denied our Lord's pre-human existence — ...that he **came** in the flesh — ...that he was anything else than a member of the fallen race....

"The other extreme error...was...that Messiah was not a man...that he was the very God, the Father....This view also denies that Messiah came in the flesh." *E296*

JOHN 1:14: "...was made flesh...."

"The simple test set forth by the Holy Spirit through the apostles is still a test of doctrines...." *E296*

"...an objection raised....is...

"That the Greek words...rendered '**has come**' signify **coming**."

"That any teaching which denies that the **second advent**...will be **in the flesh** is an antichrist spirit." *E297*

"This claim is put forth by some who...claim that our Lord...is still **flesh** and that he will...bear the scars of his human sufferings to all eternity." *E298*

PHIL. 2:9: "...God also hath highly exalted him...." *See Diag.*

2 COR. 3:17: "Now the Lord is that Spirit...."

2 COR. 5:16: "...Though we have known Christ after the flesh, yet now henceforth know we him [so] no more."

"Prof. J.R. Rinehart, Ph. D., Professor of languages in Waynesburg College (Cumberland Presbyterian)...quoting **1 JOHN 4:2** and **2 JOHN 7**...says:

"'The foregoing quotations are from the Emphatic Diaglott of Wilson, purporting to be from the original Greek text of the New Testament. The word ***eleluthota*** is the accusative, singular masculine, of the second perfect participle of the verb ***erchomai***, having the same relation to this verb that any other perfect participle has to its verb. It stands with the verb ***homolegei*** in indirect discourse, and represents a finite, perfect tense, according to ordinary Greek syntax....

"'The following translation...is, therefore, essentially correct...'" *E298*

1 JOHN 4:2: "'...Every spirit that confesseth that Jesus Christ has come in the flesh is of God.'

"The word ***erchomenon*** in the second quotation is the accusative, singular, masculine, of the present participle of the verb ***erchomai***, and is subject to the same rules of syntax as the word above. Its relation to eiselthon through ***homologountes***, as well as the context, justifies its translation as of past time....The translation of the second quotation, therefore, is properly given as follows:

2 JOHN 7: "'For many deceivers went forth into the world — those who do not confess that Jesus Christ **did come** in the flesh....'" *E532*

1 JOHN 4:2, *Diag.*: "...Every Spirit which confesses Jesus Christ to have come [*Vatican MS. 1209*] into the world, — those who do not confess Jesus Christ to have come in the flesh. This is the deceiver and the antichrist."

"As a confession that Christ came in the flesh at his first advent is

essential to a proper belief in the ransom (because otherwise he could not give a **corresponding price** for man), so all who believe...that he will come a second time as a **man**, are thereby denying the ransom; for if our Lord is still a **man** he either did not give his manhood as our ransom, or...**took it back again**." *E299*

JOHN 14:19: "Yet a little while, and the world seeth me no more; but ye see me: because I live, ye shall live also."

JOHN 16:16-19: "A little while, and ye shall not see me: and again, a little while, and ye shall see me, because I go to the Father. Then said some of his disciples among themselves, What is this that he saith unto us, A little while, and ye shall not see me: and again, a little while, and ye shall see me: and, Because I go to the Father? They said therefore, What is this that he saith, A little while? we cannot tell what he saith. Now Jesus knew that they were

desirous to ask him, and said unto them, Do ye enquire among yourselves of that I said, A little while, and ye shall not see me: and again, a little while, and ye shall see me?"

1 JOHN 3:2: "...We know not what we shall be: but...we shall be like him; for we shall see him as he is."

See also Index: **Creator; Ransom; Trinity**

IMMORTALITY VERSUS MORTALITY

DEFINITIONS: "**Immortal** — the state or condition in which death is impossible — a death-proof condition." *E391*

"Life within oneself — not dependent upon any external sustaining conditions." *A185*

"**Mortal** — a state or condition in which death is possible; a condition of liability to death, but not necessarily a dying condition unless a death sentence has been incurred." *E391* See also *A127*.

"Two Greek words are translated immortality:

"(1) ***Athanasia***, which Strong defines as '**deathlessness**.' This word is found in the following Scriptures only:

"'This mortal must put on **immortality** [***athanasia* — deathlessness**]' — referring to the first resurrection shared in only by the Church. 1 Cor. 15:53

"'When this mortal shall have put on **immortality** [***athanasia* — deathlessness**]' — referring to the same first resurrection of the Church." 1 Cor. 15:54

"'Who only hath **immortality** [***athanasia* — deathlessness**] — referring to our Lord Jesus and excepting the Father from comparison, as always.' 1 Tim. 6:16

"(2) ***Aptharsia*** and ***apthartos*** (from same root) are rendered **immortality** twice and **immortal** once, but would more properly be rendered **incorruption** and **incorruptible**, and are generally so rendered by lexicographers. All the occurrences of these words in the Bible follow:

"'To those who seek for glory, honor and **immortality** [***aptharsia* — incorruption**].' Rom. 2:7

"'It is sown in corruption, it is raised in **incorruption** [***aptharsia***].' 1 Cor. 15:42

"'Flesh and blood cannot inherit the Kingdom of God; neither doth corruption inherit **incorruption** [***aptharsia***]' 1 Cor. 15:50

"'This corruptible must put on **incorruption** [***aptharsia***].' 1 Cor. 15:53

"'When this corruptible shall have put on **incorruption** [***aptharsia***].' 1 Cor. 15:54

"'Grace be with all them that love our Lord Jesus Christ in **sincerity** [***aptharsia* — incorruptly**].' Eph. 6:24

"'Jesus Christ who hath brought life and

immortality [***aptharsia* — incorruptible**] to light through the gospel.' 2 Tim. 1:10

"'In doctrine showing uncorruptness, gravity, **sincerity** [***aptharsia* — incorruption**].' Titus 2:7

"'The glory of the **uncorruptible** [***apthartos* — incorruptible**] God.' Rom. 1:23

"'They do it to obtain a corruptible crown; but we an **incorruptible** [***apthartos***].' 1 Cor. 9:25

"'The dead [Church] shall be raised **incorruptible** [***apthartos***].' 1 Cor. 15:52

"'The King eternal, **immortal** [***apthartos* — incorruptible**], the only wise God.' 1 Tim. 1:17

"'An inheritance **incorruptible** [***apthartos***], undefiled, and that

fadeth not away, reserved in heaven for you.' 1 Pet. 1:4

"'Being born again, not of corruptible seed but of **incorruptible** [***apthartos***].' 1 Pet. 1:23

"'That which is not **corruptible** [***apthartos***] even the ornament of a meek and quiet spirit.' 1 Pet. 3:4

"The thought in this word is — that which cannot corrupt, cannot decay, cannot lose value: ***aptharsia*** is thus in many respects the equivalent of ***athanasia*** or **deathlessness** when applied to sentient beings; for that which having life is death-proof, may truly be styled incorruptible." *E396-398*

"The favor or blessing of God to his obedient children is life — continuous life — free from pain, sickness, and every other element of decay and death. Adam was given this blessing in the full measure, but was warned that he would be deprived of the 'gift' if he failed to render obedience to God — 'In the day that thou eatest thereof, dying, thou shalt die.' He knew nothing of a **life** in torment, as the penalty of sin. Life everlasting is nowhere promised to any but the obedient. Life is God's gift, and death, the opposite of life, is the penalty he prescribes." *A128*

"To those who think that the Bible abounds with such expressions as **immortal soul, undying soul, never-dying soul**, etc., we can offer no better advice than that they take a Bible concordance and look for these words and others of similar import. They will find none; and thus the sincere truth-seekers will most quickly convince themselves that Christian people in general have for centuries, in thought at least, been **adding to** the Word of God, much to their own confusion." *E392*

ORIGIN OF HUMAN IMMORTALITY ERROR

The idea that man has an immortal soul which continues to live after the body dies is held by most denominations and by the heathen. Satan was the first to deny that man would

die. (Gen. 3:4) "And the serpent said unto the woman, Ye shall not surely die..." The Scriptures contradict this falsehood (John 8:44) "Ye are of *your* father the devil, and the lusts of your father ye will do. He was a murderer from the beginning, and abode not in the truth, because there is no truth in him...," teaching instead that...

ROM. 6:23: "...the wages of sin is death..."

EZEK. 18:4,20: "...the soul that sinneth, it shall die."

"Had the penalty against sin been merely **dying** — had the Lord said to Adam, Because of your sin you must experience the trying ordeal of **dying**! then, indeed the penalty would be met by Adam and others **dying**. But such is not the penalty: the penalty is **death**, not **dying**: and death is the absence of life, destruction. Hence for man to pay his penalty would mean that he must stay **dead**, devoid of life forever. 'The soul [being] that sinneth it shall die.' As already pointed out, this destruction of the **soul** (being) according to the sentence would have been everlasting, except for the redemption accomplished by our Lord. It is in view of that redemption that death is turned into what is figuratively termed a 'sleep' — in view of that redemption there will be an awakening from this sleep of death in due time, accomplished by the Redeemer, with the full consent of divine Justice, whose demands he met. Thus, as we have seen, had it not been for the redemption, Adamic death would have been what the Second Death is to be, viz. 'everlasting destruction from the presence of the Lord and from the glory of his power.' When once the proper view of the subject is obtained, there can be no further doubt in the mind of any reasonable person that paying the penalty of sin takes all that a man has, and leaves nothing either to suffer or enjoy. On the other hand, the more we investigate from this standpoint, the more clearly we may see the seriousness of the difficulty in which our race was involved under the divine sentence; and the more will we appreciate the necessity for the ransom. And seeing this feature of the subject clearly will show us clearly also that when our Lord Jesus did become our Redeemer, when he did give himself as our ransom-price, it meant to him what the original penalty would have meant to us, viz., that 'the man Christ Jesus' suffered for us death, in the most absolute sense of the word, 'everlasting destruction.' Hence we know Christ no more after the flesh. The flesh, the human nature, was given as our ransom-price, and the fact that it was not taken back is our guarantee that all the blessed provisions of that ransom are available to the entire human family under the terms of the New Covenant — that all the perfections and rights which belonged to our dear Redeemer as a man were given in **exchange** for Adam's similar rights, which had been forfeited through disobedience; and that these, therefore, are to be given to all who will accept

them upon the divine terms, during the 'times of restitution of all things, which God hath spoken by the mouth of all his holy prophets since the world began.' Acts 3:19-21" *E465, 466*

TEXTS PROVING THAT MAN IS MORTAL

GEN. 2:17: "...in the day that thou eatest thereof thou shalt surely die." **Margin**: "Heb., dying thou shalt die."

GEN. 3:3: "...Ye shall not eat of it, neither shall ye touch it, lest ye die."

GEN. 3:19: "...dust thou art, and unto dust shalt thou return."

PSA. 89:48: "What man *is he that* liveth, and shall not see death? shall he deliver his soul from the hand [power] of the grave?..."

Grave: *sheol,* oblivion, hidden, or **extinguished,** or **obscure** — not a place but a condition. "The common thought is that no man, no **soul** experiences death; that the moment of dying is the moment of an increase of life; hence that the soul is quite superior to the powers of *sheol*, oblivion — that the soul cannot die..." *E365*

"***Sheol*** — the state or condition of death as respects the soul, in contrast with grave, a tomb for a dead body which in the Hebrew is ***qebar***. See Psa. 30:3; 49:15; 89:48; where ***sheol*** is rendered grave. See 2 Chron. 34:28; Job 10:19; Psa. 88:5; where ***qebar*** is grave. Our Lord's **soul** went to **sheol** the condition of death (Psa. 16:10; Acts 2:27), but 'he made his grave (***qebar,* tomb**) with the wicked and rich.' Isa. 53:9" *E347, footnote*

"The Hebrew word ***sheol*** occurs sixty-five times in the Old Testament Scriptures. It is three times translated **pit**, thirty-one times translated **grave**, and thirty-one times translated **hell**. These are all faulty translations, if measured by the present general use of the words, hell, grave and pit.

"The meaning of the Hebrew word ***sheol*** (***hades*** is its Greek equivalent) can scarcely be expressed by any one English word: it signifies **hidden** or **extinguished**, or **obscure** — the condition or state of death: it is not a place but a condition, and perhaps the word **oblivion** would more nearly than any other in our language correspond with the word ***sheol*** of the Hebrew and ***hades*** of the Greek. Nothing in the word ***sheol*** signifies joy or misery, or any feeling; the connections must guide us in this. Let us therefore examine uses of the words ***sheol*** and ***hades*** and ascertain from the

connection all we can respecting 'hell.' We will find it clearly stated in the Scriptures that ***sheol***, ***hades***, **oblivion**, receives all mankind, good and bad alike; that it has no light, no knowledge, no wisdom, no device; that no

tongue there praises the Lord, neither blasphemes his name; that it is a condition of absolute silence, and in every way an undesirable condition, except that it has attached to it a hope of resurrection." *E354*

See also Index: **Hell; Soul**

PSA. 145:20: "...all the wicked will he destroy."

"The theory that the distinction between man and beast consisted in a different spirit of life, a different kind of life, and that at death the one went up and the other down seems to have been very old amongst the world's philosophers; for we find Solomon, the wise man querying:

"'Who knoweth [who can prove] that the **spirit** [***ruach* — spirit of life**] of man goeth upward and that the **spirit** [***ruach* — spirit of life**] of the beast goeth downward to the earth?' (Eccl. 3:19-21) Solomon's own understanding he gives just previously, saying:

"'That which befalleth the sons of men [death] befalleth beasts; even one [the same] thing befalleth them: as the one dieth so dieth the other; yea they have all one **breath** [**ruach — spirit of life, breath of life**]; so that a man hath no pre-eminence above a beast' — in this respect, in the matter of being a different kind of life — his preeminence must be sought and found elsewhere, as we shall see." *E314, 315*

IMMORTALITY ORIGINALLY POSSESSED BY THE FATHER ONLY

1 TIM.1:17: "Now unto the King eternal, immortal [incorruptible], invisible,...be honor...."

"God has...declared his name to be Jehovah, which signifies the 'Self-existing One' or 'The Immortal One.'" *E40*

"...immortality is ascribed only to the divine nature — originally to Jehovah only...." *A186*

IMMORTALITY GIVEN TO JESUS AT HIS RESURRECTION

JOHN 5:26: "For as the Father hath life in himself; so hath he given to the Son to have life in himself."

"...immortality is ascribed...subsequently to our Lord Jesus in his present highly exalted condition...." *A186*

REV. 1:18: "I *am* he that liveth, and was dead; and, behold, I am alive for evermore...."

HEB. 1:3: "...being the brightness of *his* [the Father's] glory, and the express image of his person...."

1 TIM. 6:15,16: "...the King of kings, and Lord of lords; Who only hath immortality...."

Cf. **1 COR. 15:27**: "...the Father excepted."

"'Who only hath **immortality**' [***athanasia* — deathlessness**] — referring to our Lord Jesus and excepting the Father from comparison, as always. 1 Tim.6:16" *E397*

1 TIM. 6:15,16: "...the blessed and only Potentate, the King of kings, and Lord of lords; Who only hath immortality..."

"Many consider this passage to signify that at his appearing, at his second advent, our Lord Jesus will exhibit or make known to the world the Heavenly Father's greatness. But although that view has some reasonable aspects, we incline on the whole to apply the statement to the glory and honor of Christ — dating from the beginning of the Millennial age. True, he will cause all who accept his way to recognize Jehovah God also, but this will not be at his appearing but at the close of his reign, when he shall 'deliver up the Kingdom to God, even the Father.' 1 Cor. 15:24-28

"To apply the passage to the Father would be to deny that our Lord possesses immortality, whereas the Scriptures explicitly teach that he and all who share in the First Resurrection obtain therein immortality and that thus the Father, who hath **life-inherent** (**self-existence — immortality**), gave to the Son that he should have **life-inherent** (**self-existence — immortality**). 1 Cor. 15:42-44,53,54; John 5:26

"But to apply this Scripture to the Son seems to fit every condition perfectly, and by no means ignores the Father, Jehovah — nor proves that our Lord Jesus is the Father, Jehovah — for we are in all such cases to remember the invariable rule laid down by the inspired apostle — namely, that in comparisons, honors, etc., mentioned respecting the Son, the Father is **always excepted** as being inexpressibly above all comparisons. His words are, 'It is manifest that he [the Father] is **excepted**,' and not to be considered under or subject to our Lord Jesus and the various powers conferred by the Father upon him. For when the Son shall have subdued sin in the world, 'then shall the Son also himself be subject unto him [the Father] that did put all things under him [the Son].'

1 Cor. 15:27

"Another very similar statement of the glory of our Lord Jesus' kingdom given him by the Father is that 'He is at the head of all principality and power.' (Col. 2:10) The answer to this is the same. The Father's government and authority are never contrasted with that of the Son; for the latter is at one with the former and is his representative." *E78, 79*

"While the Scriptures do speak of the mortality of man, and indeed in nearly all particulars confine themselves to man's relationship to God, yet they no less positively teach in another way the mortality of angels, by declaring that

Christ 'only hath immortality' (1 Tim. 6:16) — the Father as always been excepted. (1 Cor. 15:27) And as we have already seen, our Lord Jesus received **immortality** (which is an element or quality of 'divine nature,' only) at his resurrection, and as a reward for his faithful obedience to the Father's will to the extent of self-sacrifice — 'unto death, even the death of the cross — wherefore him hath God **highly exalted**.' Although always superior to all others as 'the only Begotten,' this **exaltation** raised him, as the apostle declares, **far above angels** and principalities and powers and every name that is named in heaven and in earth. Eph. 1:21

"Thus it appears clear, from God's own revelation on the subject, that only Himself and his Only Begotten Son possessed this quality of immortality at the time the apostles wrote their epistles. Indeed, had the Only Begotten been **immortal** sooner than at the time of his exaltation he could not have been the Savior of the world — because he **could not have died**; and under divine arrangement to be our Redeemer he must die: the record is, 'Christ died for our sins' and was exalted to immortality afterward." *E392, 393*

IMMORTALITY PROMISED TO THE SAINTS

1 JOHN 3:2: "...when he shall appear, we shall be like him..."

2 PET. 1:4: "Whereby are given unto us exceeding great and precious promises: that by these ye might be partakers of the divine nature..."

ROM. 2:5-7: "...God...will render...To them who by patient continuance in well doing **seek** for glory and honor and immortality, eternal life."

1 COR. 15:53: "For this corruptible must put on incorruption, and this mortal *must* put on immortaltiy."

REV. 20:6: "Blessed and holy *is* he that hath part in the first resurrection: on such the second death hath no power..."

INCARNATION

"The common thought in respect to our Lord's manifestation in the flesh is usually expressed by the word **incarnation**...The **Incarnation** theory is that our Lord's human body...was merely a **clothing**, a **covering** for the spiritual body. The thought therefore...is that our Lord during his earthly life was still a spirit being, exactly as before, except that he used the flesh...as his vail or medium of communication with mankind, after the manner in which angels had appeared in human form..." *E93*

ACTUALLY MADE FLESH

JOHN 1:14: "The Word [Logos] was **made** flesh and dwelt among us."

WRONG IDEAS BASED ON INCARNATION THEORY

"Because of this incorrect premise many confused and unscriptural ideas have been evolved respecting the various incidents of our Lord's life and death:...this theory assumes that our Lord's weariness was...feigned; because...a spirit being could know no weariness...This theory would imply also that our Lord's prayers were feigned, because, says this theory, he was God himself, and to pray would have been to pray to himself; hence it is argued that his prayers were merely **pro forma**, to make an impression...The same theory is bound to suppose that our Lord's death was merely an appearance of death, for they argue that Jesus was God the Father, who being from everlasting to everlasting, cannot die: hence that the apparent agony and cry...

MATT. 27:46: "'...My God, my God, why hast thou forsaken me?'

"...and the dying, were merely **pro forma**, to make the impression upon the minds of those who heard and saw. The logical argument of this theory, therefore, is that there was no real death for man's sins, but merely an appearance of one,...**a deception** produced for a good purpose — to favorably influence the sympathies and sensibilities of mankind." *E94*

"...when they claim that he was a great and worthy ***example*** they seemingly forget...that a life of fraud and deception would not be a proper example; and...while claiming that Jesus was sinless, they claim that his life was an example for all the world, of *how to put away sin...*" *R864:4*

JESUS ACTUALLY BECAME A MAN

"...our Lord...actually...'divested himself of,' his prehuman conditions, and **actually took our nature**, '...**was made flesh**.' There was no...sham, about it: it was not that he merely appeared to humble himself while really retaining his glory and power:...not that he seemed to become poor for our sakes, yet actually remained rich in the possession of the higher spiritual nature all the time: it was not that he merely put on the clothing...of a servant. No, but he actually became a **man**..." *E94*

1 TIM. 2:5,6: "...The man Christ Jesus; Who gave himself a ransom for all..."

WHY NECESSARY TO BE MADE FLESH

"...it was absolutely necessary that he should be a man — because it was a man that sinned, man who was to be redeemed, and the divine law required that a man's life should pay the redemption

price for a man's life." *E95*

DEUT. 19:21: "...life *shall go* for life..." (Cf. Exod. 21:23).

1 COR. 15:21,22: "For since by man *came* death, by man *came* also the resurrection of the dead. For as in Adam all die, even so in Christ shall all be made alive."

PHIL. 2:5-7: "...Christ Jesus...made himself of no reputation, and took upon himself the form of a servant, and was made in the likeness of men." (*Diag.*): "divested Himself, taking a Bondsman's Form, having been made in the Likeness of Men."

NOT A SINFUL MAN

"But let no man misunderstand us...to mean that our Redeemer became a man such as we are, full of inherited imperfections and blemishes." *E95*

HEB. 7:26: "For such an high priest became us, who is holy, harmless, undefiled, separate from sinners..."

LUKE 1:35: "...the angel answered and said unto her, The Holy Spirit shall come upon thee, and the power of the Highest shall overshadow thee: therefore also that holy thing which shall be born of thee shall be called the Son of God."

WHY JESUS WAS PERFECT

"...in the case of Jesus a **perfect life** (not of or from, the Adamic fountain) was **transferred** by divine power from a pre-existent condition ...was born 'holy' (pure and perfect), though of an imperfect mother...Jesus was thus uncontaminated with the imperfections, mental, moral, or physical — which his mother in common with the entire human race shared..." *E103*

See also Index: **Ransom; Trinity**.

ISRAEL

NATURAL; SPIRITUAL; BRITISH-AMERICAN

GEN. 32:24,26,28: "And Jacob was left alone; and there wrestled a man with him....And he said, I will not let thee go, except thou bless me....And he said, Thy name shall be called....Israel: for as a prince hast thou power with God and with men, and hast prevailed."

Israel — "He will rule with God." — *Strong's Concordance* "The prince that prevails with God" —

Smith Bible Dictionary "Soldier of God" — *Gesenius*

NATURAL (FLESHLY) ISRAEL

ISRAEL'S FUTURE POSITION

"The work of the earthly phase of the kingdom of God will be confined to this world and to humanity. And those so highly honored as to have a share in it will be the most exalted and honored of God among men. These are the class...whose judgment day was previous to the Gospel age. Having been tried and found faithful, in the awakening they will...at once receive...an instantaneous resurrection to perfection as **men**." *A289*

LUKE 13:28: "...ye shall see Abraham, and Isaac, and Jacob, and all the prophets, in the kingdom of God...."

"When...the great work of restitution is accomplished by the Christ (in great measure through the agency of these noble human co-workers)...these...will shine among their fellow-men....as 'the stars forever and ever.'" *A291*

DAN. 12:3: "And they that be wise shall shine as the brightness of the firmament; and they that turn many to righteousness as the stars forever and ever."

"It is through these two phases of the kingdom that the promise to Abraham is to be verified..." *A292*

GEN. 22:17,18: "...I will multiply thy seed as the stars of the heaven, and as the sand which *is* upon the sea shore...and in thy seed shall all the nations of the earth be blessed..."

"...an earthly and a heavenly seed, both God's instruments of blessing to the world...." *A292*

"Paul (Rom. 11:17) speaks of the Abrahamic covenant as a root out of which fleshly Israel grew **naturally**, but into which the Gentile believers were **grafted** when the natural branches were cut off because of unbelief. This proves the double fulfilment of the **two seeds**, earthly (human) and heavenly (spiritual), which will constitute the two phases of the kingdom....In order of development it was first the natural (earthly), afterward the heavenly rulers; but in

order of grandeur of position and time of installment, it will be first the spiritual, afterward the natural....

****

"The Apostle, writing of this same class of ancient worthies...shows that those earthly promises cannot...be fulfilled until the still higher heavenly promises concerning the Christ...are fulfilled." *A292, 293*

HEB. 11:13,39,40: "These all died in faith, not having received the promises....And these all, having obtained a good report through faith, received not the promise; God having provided some better thing for us, that they without us should not be made perfect."

"The earthly phase of the kingdom is thus seen to be Israelitish; and around this fact cluster those many prophecies which relate to the prominence of that nation in God's plan for the future blessing of the world, when their tabernacle, fallen in the dust, shall be restored, and Jerusalem shall be a praise in the whole earth." *A294*

AMOS 9:9,11: "...I will sift the house of Israel among all nations....In that day will I raise up the tabernacle of David that is fallen and close up the breaches thereof; and I will raise up his ruins, and I will build it as in the days of old."

"But let us be on guard against a too common mistake...of supposing that the statements should be taken literally....While the literalness of the promised return of Israel to their own land, and the rebuilding of Jerusalem...cannot be questioned, we may be...confident that by the **house** and **throne** of David, not the literal stones, timbers, etc., are meant. The re-establishment of the house of David refers to the reestablishment of royalty and dominion in the hands of some of David's posterity. Christ Jesus is the promised scion of David's house, and the heir of his throne; and when his authority begins to be established, that will be the beginning of the raising up (permanent establishment) of the formerly temporary house or tabernacle of David, which was overthrown, and which for many centuries has lain in the dust...." *C256*

"We find statements by both prophets and apostles which clearly indicate that in the times of restitution Israel as a nation will be the first among the nations to come into harmony with the new order of things; that the earthly Jerusalem will be rebuilt upon her old heaps; and that their polity will be restored as in the beginning under princes or judges." *A294*

ISA. 1:26: "And I will restore thy judges as at the first, and thy counselors as at the beginning: afterward thou shalt be called, The city of righteousness, the faithful city."

PSA. 45:16: "Instead of thy fathers shall be thy children, whom thou mayest make princes in all the earth."

"And what could be more reasonably expected than that Israel should first of all rejoice to recognize the prophets and patriarchs? and that their acquaintance with the...long discipline under the law should have prepared them for tractability and obedience under the authority of the kingdom?...." *A294*

"Natural attachment, as well as a still surviving measure of trust in the long unfulfilled promises...will be favorable to Israel's general and speedy acceptance of the new rulers; while their habits of measurable obedience to the law will also be favorable to their speedy harmony with the principles of the new government." *A295*

"When mankind reaches perfection at the close of the Millennial age...they will be admitted into membership in the kingdom of God." *A296*

REV. 21:24: "And the nations...shall walk in the light of it: and the kings of the earth do bring their glory...into it."

"...In the symbolic prophecy of John...he not only saw the people walk in the light of it, but he saw the **kings** enter it in glory; yet none could enter who would defile it...." *A296*

"When considering the many promises...made to Israel, and expecting an accurate fulfilment of them to that...they are typical as well as actual. In one aspect they are typical of the whole world of mankind...

"...their priesthood typified the Christ, and that nation typified all for whom the real sacrifice was made, and to whom the real blessings will come — 'every man,' 'the whole world.'

"Then let us remember that though the future blessings, like the past, will be to the Jew first, and also to the Gentile, it will be in the matter of time only that the Jews will have the precedence to divine favor; and this...would be a natural consequence of their training under the Law, which in due time will...bring them to Christ. Though it brought only a remnant of them at the first advent, it will bring them as a people at the second advent, and as a people they will be a firstfruit among the nations." *A297*

AMOS 9:12: "That they may possess the remnant of Edom, and of all the heathen [**nations — Gentiles**; see *Strong's Concordance*: also Acts 15:17], which are called by My name."

GEN. 36:1: "...Esau...is Edom."

ROM. 9:6-8,13: "...they *are* not all Israel, which are of Israel: Neither because they are the seed of Abraham, *are they* all children: but In Isaac shall thy seed be called. That is, They which are the children of the flesh, these *are* not the children of God: but the children of the promise are

counted for the seed....As it is written, Jacob have I loved, but Esau have I hated."

ROM. 2:6,10,11: "[God]...will render...glory, honor, and peace to every man that worketh good, to the Jew first, and also to the Greek [margin]: for there is no respect of persons with God."

"The Apostle Paul calls our attention specially to the sureness of God's promises to Israel in the future, and shows what favors they lost...and what favors are still sure:...what Israel as a people failed to obtain and what the nominal Christian church...fails to obtain, is given to...the faithful 'body of Christ.'...

"But though...Israel did lose all this special favor, yet...they still had the same privilege of being grafted into Christ and the spiritual favors which the rest of mankind enjoyed, if, during the time that call was being made, they accepted in faith...." *A298, 299*

ROM. 11:23,24: "And they also, if they abide not still in unbelief, shall be graffed in....For if thou wert cut out of the olive tree which is wild by nature, and wert graffed contrary to nature into a good olive tree: how much more shall these...natural *branches*, be graffed into their own olive tree?"

"...great promises are still due to be fulfilled toward that people...." *A299*

"...hardness in some measure has happened to Israel **until** the fullness of the Gentiles may come in [until the full number selected from the Gentiles has been completed]. And then all Israel will be saved, as it has been written, 'The Deliverer [Christ, Head and Body] shall come out of Zion and shall turn away ungodliness from Jacob.' And 'This is the covenant with them from me, when I shall take away their sins.' In relation to the **glad tidings**, indeed, they are enemies on your account; but in regard to the election they are [still] beloved on account of the fathers, because the gracious gifts and calling of God are not things to be repented of. Besides, as you [Gentiles] were once disobedient to God, but have now obtained mercy by their disobedience; so also, now, these have disobeyed so that they may obtain mercy through your mercy [at the hands of the glorified Church]. For God shut up together all, for disobedience, that he might have mercy on all. [Compare Rom. 5: 17-19.] 'O the depth of the riches and wisdom and knowledge of God.' Rom.11:25-33" *A300*

"But let it not be forgotten that purity, sincerity, and entire consecration to God are essential to all those who would enter the kingdom of God in either phase. It was thus with those ancient worthies who will inherit the earthly phase of the kingdom under Christ....So, too, it has been with the faithful of the Gospel age;....The overcomers of that age will

also need to strive for purity of heart and life, if they would have a right...to enter into...the kingdom prepared for them from the foundation of the world...." *A301*

MATT. 25:34: "...Come, ye blessed of my Father, inherit the kingdom prepared for you from the foundation of the world."

SPIRITUAL ISRAEL

"Paul designates the Jewish church 'Israel after the flesh,' and the Christian church 'The Israel of God.' (1 Cor. 10:18; Gal. 6:16) We may therefore properly designate them Fleshly Israel and Spiritual Israel. The higher plane of the spiritual house is also pointed out by the Apostle when he describes Fleshly Israel as a house [family] of servants, and Spiritual Israel as a house of **sons**. (Heb. 3:5,6; Rom. 8:14)....

"In both cases there have been a nominal Israel and a real Israel...." *B204, 205*

HEAVENLY PROMISES

"The promises...to the spiritual house are all **heavenly**." *B207*

"To the spiritual house...it is said,..." *B207*

1 PET. 2:5,9,10: "Ye...are built up a spiritual house, an holy priesthood, to offer up... sacrifices acceptable to God by Jesus Christ....ye are a chosen generation, a royal priesthood, an holy nation, a peculiar people; that ye should show forth the praises of him who hath called you out of darkness into his marvellous light: Which in time past *were* not a people, but *are* **now the people of God**."

TABERNACLE, PRIESTHOOD, SACRIFICES

"Spiritual Israel has...

HEB. 8:2: "'...the true tabernacle, which the Lord pitched and not man.'

"Jesus is the...

HEB. 3:1: "'...High Priest of our profession [or order]....'

"...the Church...being the underpriests....the priesthood, which offers up....

HEB. 9:23: "'...better sacrifices....'

BABYLONIAN CAPTIVITY

"Another marked feature of this correspondency as type and antitype, noted in the Scriptures, is that both the houses of Israel (fleshly and spiritual) were carried away captives into Babylon....Fleshly Israel was taken captive into literal Babylon,, which was built upon the literal river Euphrates, while in the Gospel age mystic or figurative Babylon, which carried away captive Spiritual Israel, is portrayed as sitting

upon the mystic Euphrates. In the type, the golden vessels of the Temple were carried away and profaned by literal Babylon: in the antitype, the precious, divine (golden) truths, pertaining to the service of the true Temple, the Church (1 Cor. 3:16,17; Rev. 3:12), were far removed from their proper places, perverted and misapplied by mystic Babylon." *B208, 209*

1 COR. 3:16: "...ye are the temple of God..."

REV. 3:12: "Him that overcometh will I make a pillar in the temple of my God...."

"Mystic Babylon sits upon, is supported by...

REV. 17:1,15: "'...many waters....peoples... nations....'

"...and its fall is predicted, through the turning aside of its supporters and sustainers, the people." *B209*

REV. 16:12, *Diag.*: "And the SIXTH poured out his BOWL upon the GREAT RIVER,...EUPHRATES; and its WATER was dried up, so that the WAY of those KINGS...from the Sun-rising might be prepared."

See also Index: **Babylon; Chronology: Parallel Dispensations**

"BOTH THE HOUSES OF ISRAEL"

Correspondencies of the Mosaic and Christian Dispensations

(Chart is from *B246, 247*)

Israel After The Flesh

A House of Servants

1 COR. 10:18: "Behold Israel after the flesh: are not they which eat of the sacrifices partakers of the altar?"

ROM. 9:6-8: "...they are not all Israel, which are of Israel: Neither, because they are the seed of Abraham, are they all children: but, In Isaac shall thy seed be called. That is, They which are the children of the flesh, these are not the children of God: but the children of the promise are counted for the seed."

ROM. 4:16: "Therefore it is of faith, that it might be by grace; to the end the promise might be sure to all the seed; not to that only which is of the law, but to that also which is of the faith of Abraham; who is the father of us all."

HEB. 3:5: "And Moses verily was faithful in all his house, as a servant, for a testimony of those things which were to be spoken after."

Israel After The Spirit

A House of Sons

GAL. 4:4-7,30,31: "...God sent forth his Son, made of a woman, made under the law To redeem them that were under the law, that we might receive the adoption of sons. And because ye are sons, God hath sent forth the Spirit of his Son into your hearts, crying, Abba, Father. Wherefore thou art no more a servant, but a son; and if a son, then an heir of God through Christ....Nevertheless what saith the scripture? Cast out the bondwoman and her son: for the son of the bondwoman shall not be heir with the son of the freewoman. So then, brethren, we are not children of the bondwoman, but of the free."

GAL. 6:15,16: "For in Christ Jesus neither circumcision availeth any thing, nor uncircumcision, but a new creature. And as many as walk according to this rule, peace be on them, and mercy, and upon the Israel of God."

JOHN 1:12: "But as many as received him, to them gave he power to become the sons of God, even to them that believe on his name."

ROM. 8:15: "For ye have not received the spirit of bondage again to fear; but ye have received the Spirit of adoption, whereby we cry, Abba, Father."

HEB. 3:6: "But Christ as a son over his own house; whose house

are we, if we hold fast the confidence and the rejoicing of the hope firm unto the end."

Founded in Jacob's Twelve Sons

1 KINGS 18:31: "And Elijah took twelve stones, according to the number of the tribes of the sons of Jacob..."

Founded in Jesus' Twelve Apostles

REV. 21:14: "And the wall of the city had twelve foundations, and in them the names of the twelve apostles of the Lamb."

A Kingdom and Priesthood

A Holy Nation

EXOD. 19:6: "And ye shall be unto me a kingdom of priests, and an holy nation. These are the words which thou shalt speak unto the children of Israel."

A Royal Priesthood

A Holy Nation

1 PET. 2:5,9: "Ye also, as lively stones, are built up a spiritual house, an holy priesthood, to offer up...sacrifices, acceptable to God by Jesus Christ...But ye *are*...a royal priesthood.."

Aaron, Fleshly High-Priest

HEB. 9:6,7: "...the priests went always into the first tabernacle...But into the second went the high priest alone once every year, not without blood, which he offered for himself, and...the people."

Jesus the Spiritual High-Priest

HEB. 9:11: "But Christ being come an high priest of good things to come, by a greater and more perfect tabernacle, not made with hands..."

Circumcision of the Flesh

ROM. 2:28: "For he is not a Jew, which is one outwardly; neither is that circumcision, which is outward in the flesh."

Circumcision of the Heart

ROM. 2:29: "But he is a Jew, which is one inwardly; and circumcision *is that* of the heart, in the spirit, and not in the letter; whose praise is not of men, but of God."

Law of Sin and Death Law of the Spirit of Life in

Christ Jesus

ROM. 8:2: "For the law of the Spirit of life in Christ Jesus hath made me free from the law of sin and death."

Earthly Promises

GEN. 13:14-17: "And the LORD said unto Abram, after that Lot was separated from him, Lift up now thine eyes, and look from the place where thou art northward, and southward, and eastward, and westward: For all the land which thou seest, to thee will I give it, and to thy seed for ever. And I will make thy seed as the dust of the earth: so that if a man can number the dust of the earth, *then* shall thy seed also be numbered. Arise, walk through the land in the length of it and in the breadth of it; for I will give it unto thee."

"Better Promises"

HEB. 9:23: "It *was* therefore necessary that the patterns of things in the heavens should be purified with these; but the heavenly things themselves with better sacrifices than these."

HEB. 11:40: "God having provided some better thing for us, that they without us should not be made perfect."

HEB. 8:6: "But now hath he obtained a more excellent ministry, by how much also he is the mediator of a better covenant, which was established upon better promises."

Length of Favor 1845 Years from Jacob's Death to Israel's Rejection and the Beginning of

Spiritual Israel A.D. 33

Length of Favor 1845 Years

From Jesus' Death to the Beginning of Christ's Reign and the Rejection of Babylon,

A.D. 1878

The Nominal System

Cast Off, A.D. 33

MATT. 23:38: "Behold, your house is left unto you desolate."

The Nominal System Spewed Out, A.D. 1878

REV. 3:16: "So then because thou art lukewarm, and neither cold nor hot, I will spue thee out of my mouth." [*Sinaitic MS.*, "because thou art thus lukewarm and art neither hot or cold; refrain thy mouth."]

****

The End of the Age a Harvest...

LUKE 10:2.16: "Therefore said he unto them, The harvest truly is great, but the labourers are few: pray ye therefore the Lord of the harvest, that he would send forth labourers into his harvest....He that heareth you heareth me; and he that despiseth you despiseth me; and he that despiseth me despiseth him that sent me."

****

The End of the Age a Harvest...

MATT. 13:24-30, 36-43: "...The kingdom of heaven is likened unto a man which sowed good seed in his field: But while men slept, his enemy came and sowed tares among the wheat, and went his way. But when the blade was sprung up, and brought forth fruit, then appeared the tares also. So the servants of the householder came and said unto him, Sir, didst not thou sow good seed in thy field? from whence then hath it tares? He said unto them, An enemy hath done this. The servants said unto him, Wilt thou then that we go and gather them up?

"But he said, Nay; lest while ye gather up the tares, ye root up also the wheat with them. Let both grow together until the harvest: and in the time of harvest I will say to the reapers, Gather ye together first the tares, and bind them in bundles to burn them: but gather the wheat into my barn.

"...and his disciples came...saying, Declare unto us the parable of the tares of the field. He answered and said unto them, He that soweth the good seed is the Son of man; The field is the world; the good seed are the children of the kingdom; but the tares are the children of the wicked *one*; The enemy that sowed them is the devil; the harvest is the end of the world [*Diag.* age]; and the reapers are the angels [*Diag.* messengers]. As therefore the tares are gathered and burned in the fire; so shall it be in the end of this [*Diag.* the] world [*Diag.* age]. The Son of man shall send forth his angels, and they shall gather out of his kingdom all things that offend, and them which do iniquity; And shall cast them into a furnace of fire: there shall be wailing and gnashing of teeth. Then shall the righteous shine forth as the sun in the kingdom of their Father. Who hath ears to hear, let him hear."

Presence of Christ in the Flesh

as Reaper

JOHN 4:35-38: "Say not ye, There are yet four months, and then cometh harvest? behold, I say unto you, Lift up your eyes, and look on

Spiritual Presence of Christ

as Reapers

REV. 14:14-16: *Diag.* "...and behold! a white Cloud, and on the cloud [one] sitting like a Son of Man, having on his HEAD a golden

the fields; for they are white already to harvest. And he that reapeth receiveth wages, and gathereth fruit unto life eternal: that both he that soweth and he that reapeth may rejoice together. And herein is that saying true, One soweth, and another reapeth. I sent you to reap that whereon ye bestowed no labour: other men laboured, and ye are entered into their labours."

CROWN, and in his HAND a sharp SICKLE. And Another Angel came forth out of the [Sinaitic MS., his] TEMPLE, crying with a LOUD [Gr., great] VOICE, to the [one] SITTING on the CLOUD, 'Send thy sickle, and reap; Because the HOUR to reap is come, because the HARVEST of the EARTH is dry.' And the [one] sitting [cf. interlineary] on the cloud cast his sickle on the EARTH, and the EARTH was reaped."

Our Lord's Presence and the Sacrificial Character of His Death, the Stumbling-Stone

Our Lord's Presence and the

Sacrificial Character of His

Death the Stumbling-Stone

ISA. 8:14: "And he shall be for a sanctuary; but for a stone of stumbling and for a rock of offence to **both the** [nominal] **houses of Israel**..."

They Knew Not the Time of Their Visitation

LUKE 19:44 "And shall lay thee even with the ground, and thy children within thee; and they shall not leave in thee one stone upon another; because thou knewest not the time of thy visitation."

MATT. 24:38,39: "For as in the days that were before the flood they were eating and drinking, marrying and giving in marriage, until the day that Noe entered into the ark, And knew not until the flood came, and took them all away; so shall also the coming [presence, *Diag.*] of the Son of man be.

Our Lord Presented in Three Characters — As Bridegroom, Reaper, and King

JOHN 3:29; 4:35,38: "He that hath the bride is the bridegroom: but the friend of the bridegroom, which standeth and heareth him, rejoiceth greatly because of the bridegroom's voice: this my joy therefore is fulfilled....Say not ye, There are yet four months, and then cometh harvest? behold, I say unto you, Lift up your eyes, and look on the fields; for they are white already to harvest....I sent you to reap that whereon ye bestowed no labour: other men laboured, and ye are entered into their labours."

MATT. 21:5,9,4: "Tell ye the daughter of Sion, Behold, thy King cometh unto thee, meek, and sitting upon an ass, and a colt the foal of an ass....And the multitudes that went before, and that followed, cried, saying, Hosanna to the son of David: Blessed is he that cometh in the name of the Lord; Hosanna in the highest....All this was done, that it might be fulfilled which was spoken by the prophet..."

2 COR. 11:2: "For I am jealous over you with godly jealousy: for I have espoused you to one husband, that I may present you as a chaste virgin to Christ."

REV. 14:14,15: *Diag.:* "And I saw, and behold a white cloud, and on the cloud [one] sitting like a Son of man, having on His head a golden crown, and in his hand a sharp sickle. And another angel came forth out of the temple, crying with a loud voice to the one sitting on the cloud, 'Send thy sickle and reap; because the hour to reap is come; because the harvest of the earth is dry.'"

REV. 17:14: "These shall make war with the Lamb, and the Lamb shall overcome them: for he is Lord of lords, and King of kings: and they that are with him are called, and chosen, and faithful."

An Advent Movement at the

Time of Jesus' Birth, Thirty Years Prior to His Advent and

Anointing as Messiah at

Baptism

MATT. 2:1,2: "Now when Jesus was born in Bethlehem of Judaea in the days of Herod the king, behold, there came wise men from the east to Jerusalem, Saying, Where is he that is born King of the Jews? for we have seen his star in the east, and are come to worship him."

An Advent Movement in 1844,

Thirty Years Prior to the Actual Time of His Presence, to

Awaken and Test the Church

MATT. 25:1: "Then shall the kingdom of heaven be likened unto ten virgins, which took their lamps, and went forth to meet the bridegroom."

See also **verses 3-16.**

ACTS 10:37,38: "That word, I say,

ye know, which was published throughout all Judaea, and began from Galilee, after the baptism which John preached; How God anointed Jesus of Nazareth with the Holy Ghost and with power: who went about doing good, and healing all that were oppressed of the devil; for God was with him."

Actual Presence of the Lord as

Bridegroom and Reaper —

October A.D. 29

Actual Presence of the Lord as

Bridegroom and Reaper —

October A.D. 1874

Power and Title as King Assured Three and

a Half Years Later

A.D. 33

Power and Title as King Assumed Three and

a Half Years Later

A.D. 1878

First Work of the King, Judgment

Nominal Jewish House

Rejected

Literal Temple Cleansed.

MATT. 20:18: "Behold, we go up to Jerusalem; and the Son of man shall be betrayed unto the chief priests and unto the scribes, and they shall condemn him to death"

Nominal Christian House

Rejected;

Spiritual Temple Cleansed.

1 PET. 4:17: "For the time is come that judgment must begin at the house of God: and if it first begin at us, what shall the end be of them that obey not the gospel of God?"

MATT. 21:10-15: "And when he was come into Jerusalem, all the city was moved, saying, Who is this? And the multitude said, This is Jesus the prophet of Nazareth of Galilee. And Jesus went into the temple of God, and cast out all them that sold and bought in the temple, and overthrew the tables of the moneychangers, and the seats of them that sold doves, And said unto them, It is written, My house shall be called the house of prayer; but ye have made it a den of thieves. And the blind and the lame came to him in the temple; and he healed them. And when the chief priests and scribes saw the wonderful things that he did, and the children crying in the temple, and saying, Hosanna to the son of David; they were sore displeased."

REV. 3:16: "So then because thou art lukewarm, and neither cold nor hot, I will spue thee out of my mouth."

MAL. 3:2: "But who may abide the day of his coming? and who shall stand when he appeareth? for he is like a refiner's fire, and like fullers' soap."

See Also **MATT. 21:5-9**

MATT. 23:37,38: "O Jerusalem, Jerusalem, thou that killest the prophets, and stonest them which are sent unto thee, how often would I have gathered thy children together, even as a hen gathereth *her* chickens under her wings, and ye would not! Behold, your house is left unto you desolate."

MATT. 24:1,2: "And Jesus went out, and departed from the temple: and his disciples came to him for to shew him the buildings of the temple. And Jesus said unto them, See ye not all these things? Verily I say unto you, There shall not be left here one stone upon another, that shall not be thrown down."

Entire Destruction of Entire Destruction of Nominal Christendom

Jewish Polity Accomplished

In 37 years after being cast off — or 40 years from the beginning of the harvest — A.D. 70

Accomplished

in 47 years after being cast off — or 40 years from the beginning of the harvest — A.D. 1915 [See Author's Forward (1916), pp. ix-x (iii-iv) on the dates 1914, 1915]

BRITISH – AMERICAN ISRAEL Anglo-Israelites

"Anglo-Israelites claim that the Anglo-Saxons... the people of the United States, etc., are the descendants of the ten tribes of Israel...that they can trace their journey toward Great Britain, and that the greatness and influence of the English speaking peoples are traceable to the fact that they belong to Israel...

"Some of the evidences...seem far from strong; but if we should admit...all they claim...it would not prove that the greatness and influence...are attributable to their being Israelites by natural generation...

"That the ten tribes strayed away from the two...is a sign of unbelief; for God had predicted that...the Savior...was to come out of **Judah**...At the time of the return from the Babylonian captivity, though...mostly of...Judah and Benjamin, yet all...were not..." C250

"To the descendants of these...our Lord presented himself...He says:

MATT. 15:24: "'...I am not sent but unto the lost sheep of the **house of Israel**.'

"...and forbade his disciples to go to any outside the Jews of Palestine....

MATT. 10:5-6: "'These twelve Jesus sent forth, and commanded them, saying, Go not into the way of the Gentiles, and into any city of the Samaritans enter ye not: But go rather to the lost sheep of the house of Israel [in Palestine].'

"The Apostles used the word 'Israel' and not 'Judah,' when speaking of those...in Palestine (Acts 2:22; 3:12; 5:35; 13:16; 21:28), and...apply the words of Isaiah concerning the **remnant** of Israel to the comparatively few who received the gospel...and speak of all **the rest** as stumbling..." C252

ROM. 9:4,27,29,31-33; 10:1-4; 11:1,7-14, 25,26,31: "Who are Israelites...Esaias also crieth concerning Israel, Though the number of the children of Israel be as the sand of the sea, a remnant shall be saved...And as Esaias said before, Except the Lord...had left us a seed, we had been as Sodom...But Israel, which followed after the law of righteousness, hath not attained to the law of righteousness...Because [they sought it] not by faith, but as it were by the works of the law. For they stumbled at that

stumblingstone; As it is written, Behold I lay in Sion a stumblingstone and rock of offense...my heart's desire...for Israel is, that they might be saved...For...they have a zeal...but not according to knowledge...

"...Hath God cast away his people? God forbid. For I also am an Israelite,...of the tribe of Benjamin.

"...Israel hath not obtained that which he seeketh for; but the election hath obtained it, and the rest were blinded (According as it is written, 'God hath given them the spirit of slumber, eyes that they should not see, and ears that they should not hear;') unto this day. And David saith, 'Let their table be made a snare, and a trap, and a stumblingblock, and a recompense unto them: Let their eyes be darkened that they may not see, and bow down their back alway...' through their fall salvation is come unto the Gentiles...Now if the fall of them be the riches of the world, and the diminishing of them the riches of the Gentiles; how much more their fulness? For I speak to you Gentiles...If by any means I may provoke to emulation [them which are] my flesh, and might save some of them...

"For...blindness in part is happened unto Israel, until the fullness of the Gentiles be come in. And so all Israel shall be saved: as it is written, There shall come out of Sion the Deliverer, and shall turn ungodliness from Jacob:...Even so have these now also not believed, that through your mercy they also may obtain mercy."

"So, then, even if...the Anglo-Saxon peoples were part of the ten lost tribes,...no favor could have come to them upon that score...for **they deserted the Israelitish covenant** and became idolaters, unbelievers, and practically Gentiles. Besides,...all the **natural**

seed...who would continue to reject Christ, were cast off...from the time of Christ's death to...1878, when...favor was due to return. Consequently, the prominence of the Anglo-Saxon for the past centuries could in no sense have been Israel's **returning** favor. Those from whom favor was taken for the rejection and crucifixion of the Lord are the ones to whom the favor is to return now. At that time and ever since, Israel has been represented by 'the Jew'...

ROM. 2:9,10: "'Tribulation and anguish, upon every soul of man that doeth evil, of the Jew first, and also of the Gentile; But glory, honor, and peace, to every man that worketh good, to the Jew first, and also to the Gentile.'

"...and it is the Jew that will now be restored to favor as the **natural** 'seed...' These, with the spiritual 'seed'...are to be God's agencies for blessing all the families of the earth." C252

"Nor will the coming favor to Israel be exclusive. All believers in the covenant promises may share those returning favors with the natural seed, just as any Jew

during the Gospel age who accepted Christ was eligible to all the spiritual blessings...As only a small remnant... accepted the gospel favors from the beginning, so, aside from the Jews only a small number...will be ready for the new laws and conditions of the Millennial age,...and hence, at first, few but Jews will be blessed under it....

"The Jew, long accustomed...to...works of...the Law to secure...blessing, **stumbled** over...the remission of sins, without works, to everyone that believeth in Jesus' perfect work and sacrifice...But the Jew's respect for the Law will turn to this advantage...; for works are required after faith in Christ...And the Jew, in accepting...Christ, will not be so inclined to lose sight of God's justice as are many others of today..." *C253*

See also Index: **Chronology — Parallel Dispensations**

ISRAEL: PART 2

Israel (Fleshly)

I. God's first chosen people:

DEUT. 7:6: "For thou art an holy people unto the LORD thy God: the LORD thy God hath chosen thee to be a special people unto himself, above all people that are upon the face of the earth."

See also **PSA. 135:4; 147:19,20; AMOS 3:2**

II. Israel's

(1) Desolation of their land and cities; (2) Their dispersion throughout the Gospel Age:

LEV. 26:31-39: "And I will make your cities waste, and bring your sanctuaries unto desolation, and I will not smell the savour of your sweet odours. And I will bring the land into desolation: and your enemies which dwell therein shall be astonished at it. And I will scatter you among the heathen, and will draw out a sword after you: and your land shall be desolate, and your cities waste. Then shall the land enjoy her sabbaths, as long as it lieth desolate, and ye be in your enemies' land; even then shall the land rest, and enjoy her sabbaths. As long as it lieth desolate it shall rest; because it did not rest in your sabbaths, when ye dwelt upon it. And upon them that are left alive of you I will send a faintness into their hearts in the lands of their enemies; and the sound of a shaken leaf shall chase them; and they shall flee, as fleeing from a sword; and they shall fall when none pursueth. And they shall fall one upon another, as it were before a sword, when none pursueth: and ye shall have no power to stand before your enemies. And ye shall perish among the heathen, and the land of your enemies shall eat you up. And they that are left of you shall pine away in their iniquity in your enemies' lands; and also in

the iniquities of their fathers shall they pine away with them."

See also **DEUT. 29:22-28; ISA. 17:4-6; 43:5,6; JER. 4:20, 26-29: 12:4,7-13; 16:13-18; 19:7-9; 29:14,17,18; 30:11; 32:36,37; AMOS 8:14; 5:3,5; 7:8,9**

III. Israel's preservation as a separate people while dispersed among all the nations:

HOS.3:4,5: "For the children of Israel shall abide many days without a king, and without a prince, and without a sacrifice, and without an image, and without an ephod, and without teraphim: Afterward shall the children of Israel return, and seek the LORD their God, and David their king; and shall fear the LORD and his goodness in the latter days."

IV. Israel's return to their land and God's favor prophesied:

LEV. 26:40-45: "If they shall confess their iniquity, and the iniquity of their fathers, with their trespass which they trespassed against me, and that also they have walked contrary unto me; And that I also have walked contrary unto them, and have brought them into the land of their enemies; if then their uncircumcised hearts be humbled, and they then accept of the punishment of their iniquity: Then will I remember my covenant with Jacob, and also my covenant with Isaac, and also my covenant with Abraham will I remember; and I will remember the land. The land also shall be left of them, and shall enjoy her sabbaths, while she lieth desolate without them: and they shall accept of the punishment of their iniquity: because, even because they despised my judgments, and because their soul abhorred my statutes. And yet for all that, when they be in the land of their enemies, I will not cast them away, neither will I abhor them, to destroy them utterly, and to break my covenant with them: for I am the LORD their God. But I will for their sakes remember the covenant of their ancestors, whom I brought forth out of the land of Egypt in the sight of the heathen, that I might be their God: I am the LORD."

See also: **PSA. 22:23-31; 102:13-28; ISA. 2:2,3; 14:1; 40:1,2; JER. 23:5-8; 24:6; 30:7-11,18-24; 31:8-12; 33:7,10,11; EZEK. 16:53-55,60-63; 36:1-15,24-38;37; HOS. 3:4,5; JOEL 3:1,2,17-21; AMOS 9:14,15; ZEPH. 3:10-20; ZECH. 8**

V. Israel's return nationally before Messiah recognized, the earthly Kingdom set up, and the New Covenant made with them.

EZEK. 37:21-28: "And say unto them, Thus saith the Lord GOD; Behold, I will take the children of Israel from among the heathen, whither they be gone, and will gather them on

every side, and bring them into their own land: And I will make them one nation in the land upon the mountains of Israel; and one king shall be king to them all: and they shall be no more two nations, neither shall they be divided into two kingdoms any more at all. Neither shall they defile themselves any more with their idols, nor with their detestable things, nor with any of their transgressions: but I will save them out of all their dwellingplaces, wherein they have sinned, and will cleanse them: so shall they be my people, and I will be their God. And David my servant shall be king over them; and they all shall have one shepherd: they shall also walk in my judgments, and observe my statutes, and do them.

And they shall dwell in the land that I have given unto Jacob my servant, wherein your fathers have dwelt; and they shall dwell therein, even they, and their children, and their children's children for ever: and my servant David shall be their prince for ever. Moreover I will make a covenant of peace with them; it shall be an everlasting covenant with them: and I will place them, and multiply them, and will set my sanctuary in the midst of them for evermore. And the heathen shall know that I the LORD do sanctify Israel, when my sanctuary shall be in the midst of them for evermore."

ZECH. 12:10: "And I will pour upon the house of David, and upon the inhabitants of Jerusalem, the spirit of grace and of supplications: and they shall look upon me whom they have pierced, and they shall mourn for him, as one mourneth for his only son, and shall be in bitterness for him, as one that is in bitterness for his firstborn."

See also: **JER. 31:23-34**

VI. Israel's return to their land and to God's favor preludes of the Millennial blessings upon them, and through them upon all nations.

MICAH 4:1-4: "But in the last days it shall come to pass, that the mountain of the house of the LORD shall be established in the top of the mountains, and it shall be exalted above the hills; and people shall flow unto it. And many nations shall come, and say, Come, and let us go up to the mountain of the LORD, and to the house of the God of Jacob; and he will teach us of his ways, and we will walk in his paths: for the law shall go forth of Zion, and the word of the LORD from Jerusalem. And he shall judge among many people, and rebuke strong nations afar off; and they shall beat their swords into plowshares, and their spears into pruninghooks: nation shall not lift up a sword against nation, neither shall they learn war any more. But they shall sit every man under his vine and under his fig tree; and none shall make them afraid: for the mouth of the LORD of hosts hath spoken it."

See also: **JER. 31:5-34; EZEK. 16:44-63; 36:21-38; AMOS 9:11-15; ZECH. 8:20-23; 14:16-21**

THE PROMISED LAND

THE INHERITANCE OF CANAAN

"It is proper to speak of an earthly and a heavenly Canaan,...mistake common to too many to apply all the promises of God that are yet future to the heavenly. There are earthly promises still unfulfilled, and one of these is referred to in our lesson (Gen. 15:7). The Lord...informed Abraham again that he intended to give that land to him and his posterity '...Lord said to Abram...Lift up now thine eyes and look to the north and south and east and west; for all the land thou seest to thee will I give it and to thy seed after thee for an everlasting possession.' Gen 13:14; 17:8" *R3945:3*

JEWS — RETURN TO PALESTINE:

"What is known as the land of Palestine is but a very small part of the promised land, which is to stretch from the Nile to the Euphrates (Gen. 15:18), and appears to include Arabia as well as parts of Egypt and the Sudan, an area equal to the half of Europe. Much of this is now desert land, but 'the desert shall rejoice, and blossom as the rose.' (Isa. 35:1) Thus there will be ample space and abundant provision made for the Israelites in the promised land — promised for an everlasting possession to Abraham and his descendants — when God's favor will have returned to them as foretold by the Prophets — Rom. 11:25-27." *Q792*

GEN. 15:18: "In the same day the LORD made a covenant with Abram, saying, Unto thy seed have I given this land, from the river of Egypt unto the great river Euphrates..."

GEN. 12:7: "And the Lord appeared unto Abram, and said, Unto thy seed will I give this land..."

GEN. 15:7: "...I *am* the LORD that brought thee out of Ur of the Chaldees, to give thee this land to inherit it."

GEN. 35:10,12: "And God said unto him, Thy name *is* Jacob: thy name shall not be called any more Jacob, but Israel shall be thy name:...And the land which I gave Abraham and Isaac, to thee will I give it, and to thy seed after thee will I give the land."

EXOD. 23:30,31: "By little, and little, I will drive them out from before thee, until thou be increased, and inherit the land. And I will set thy bounds from the Red sea even unto the sea of the Philistines, and from the desert unto the river: for I will deliver the inhabitants of the land into your hand; and thou shalt drive them out before thee."

NUM. 34:1-13: "And the LORD spake unto Moses, saying, Command the children of Israel, and say unto them, When ye come into the land of Canaan; (this *is* the land that shall fall unto you for an inheritance, *even* the land of Canaan with the coasts thereof:) Then your south quarter shall be

from the wilderness of Zin along by the coast of Edom, and your south border shall be the outmost coast of the salt sea eastward: And your border shall turn from the south to the ascent of Akrabbim, and pass on to Zin: and the going forth thereof shall be from the south to Kadeshbarnea, and shall go on to Hazaraddar, and pass on to Azmon: And the border shall fetch a compass from Azmon unto the river of Egypt, and the goings out of it shall be at the sea. And *as* for the western border, ye shall even have the great sea for a border: this shall be your west border. And this shall be your north border: from the great sea ye shall point out for you mount Hor: From mount Hor ye shall point out *your border* unto the entrance of Hamath; and the goings forth of the border shall be to Zedad: And the border shall go on to Ziphron, and the goings out of it shall be at Hazarenan: this shall be your north border. And ye shall point out your east border from Hazarenan to Shepham: And the coast shall go down from Shepham to Riblah, on the east side of Ain; and the border shall descend, and shall reach unto the side of the sea of Chinnereth eastward: And the border shall go down to Jordan, and the goings out of it shall be at the salt sea: this shall be your land with the coasts thereof round about. And Moses commanded the children of Israel, saying, This *is* the land which ye shall inherit by lot, which the LORD commanded to give unto the nine tribes, and to the half tribe..."

DEUT. 1:1: "These *be* the words which Moses spake unto all Israel on this side Jordan in the wilderness."

DEUT. 1:7,8: "Turn you, and take your journey, and go to the mount of the Amorites, and unto all *the places* nigh thereunto, in the plain, in the hills, and in the vale, and in the south, and by the sea side, to the land of the Canaanites, and unto Lebanon, unto the great river, the river Euphrates. Behold, I have set the land before you: go in and possess the land which the LORD sware unto your fathers, Abraham, Isaac and Jacob, to give unto them and to their seed after them."

DEUT. 2:4-9: "And command thou the people saying, Ye *are* to pass through the coast of your brethren the children of Esau, which dwell in Seir;...I will not give you of their land,...because I have given mount Seir unto Esau *for* a possession...And the LORD said unto me, Distress not the Moabites,...for I will not give thee of their land *for* a possession; because I have given Ar unto the children of Lot."

DEUT. 2:18,19: "...pass over through Ar, the coast of Moab, this day. And *when* thou comest nigh over against the children of Ammon, distress them not,...not give thee of the land of the children of Ammon...because I have given it unto the children of Ammon...because I have given it unto the children of Lot."

DEUT. 3:8: "And we took at that time out of the hand of the two kings of the Amorites the land that *was* on this side Jordan, from the river of Arnon unto mount Hermon..."

DEUT 3:12: "And this land, *which* we possessed at that time, from Aroer, which *is* by the river Arnon, and half mount Gilead, and the cities thereof, gave I unto the Reubenites and to the Gadites."

DEUT. 3:13: "And the rest of Gilead, and all Bashan, *being* the kingdom of Og, gave I unto the half tribe of Manasseh; all the region of Argob, with all Bashan, which was called the land of giants."

DEUT. 3:20: "Until the LORD have given rest unto your brethren, as well as unto you, and *until* they also possess the land which the LORD your God hath given them beyond Jordan: and *then* shall ye return every man unto his possession, which I have given you."

DEUT. 3:25-29: "I pray thee, let me go over, and see the good land that *is* beyond Jordan, that goodly mountain and Lebanon. But the LORD was wroth with me for your sakes, and would not hear me: and the LORD said unto me, Let it suffice thee; speak no more unto me of this matter. Get thee up into the top of Pisgah, and lift up thine eyes westward, and northward, and southward, and eastward, and behold *it* with thine eyes: for thou shalt not go over this Jordan. But charge Joshua, and encourage him, and strengthen him: for he shall go over before this people, and he shall cause them to inherit the land which thou shalt see. So we abode in the valley over against Beth-peor."

DEUT. 11:24: "...from the wilderness and Lebanon, from the river, the river Euphrates, even unto the uttermost sea shall your coast be."

JOSH. 13:23,24,29,32: (two tribes and half) "And the border of the children of Reuben was Jordan, and the border *thereof*. This *was* the inheritance of the children of Reuben after their families, the cities and the villages thereof. And Moses gave *inheritance* unto the tribe of Gad, *even* unto the children of Gad according to their families. And Moses gave *inheritance* unto the half tribe of Manasseh: and *this* was *the possession* of the half tribe of the children of Manasseh by their families. These *are the countries* which Moses did distribute for inheritance in the plains of Moab, on the other side Jordan, by Jericho, eastward."

"Next the Lord outlined the promised land (Joshua 1:4) and practically gave the very boundaries which subsequently marked the possessions of Israel at the close of David's reign and throughout that of Solomon — from the Arabian wilderness on the South and Mount Lebanon to the river Euphrates on the north and the Mediterranean Sea on the west." *R4061:3*

JOSH. 1:1-9: "Now after the death of Moses the servant of the LORD it came to pass, that the LORD spake unto Joshua the son of Nun, Moses' minister, saying, Moses my servant is dead; now therefore arise, go over this Jordan, thou, and all this people, unto the land which I do give to them, even to the children of Israel. Every place that the sole of your foot shall tread upon, that have I given unto you, as I said unto Moses. From the wilderness and this Lebanon even unto the great river, the river Euphrates, all the land of the Hittites, and unto the great sea toward the going down of the sun, shall be your coast. There shall not any man be able to stand before thee all the days of thy life: as I was with Moses, so I will be with thee: I will not fail thee, nor forsake thee. Be strong and of a good courage: for unto this people shalt thou divide for an inheritance the land, which I sware unto their fathers to give them. Only be thou strong and very courageous, that thou mayest observe to do according to all the law, which Moses my servant commanded thee: turn not from it to the right hand or to the left, that thou mayest prosper whithersoever thou goest. This book of the law shall not depart out of thy mouth; but thou shalt meditate therein day and night, that thou mayest observe to do according to all that is written therein: for then thou shalt make thy way prosperous, and then thou shalt have good success. Have not I commanded thee? Be strong and of a good courage; be not afraid, neither be thou dismayed: for the LORD they God *is* with thee whithersoever thou goest."

See also: **JOSHUA 3:5-17 and *R4063-64***

JOSH. 1:10-12: "Then Joshua commanded the officers of the people, saying, Pass through the host, and command the people, saying, Prepare you victuals; for within three days ye shall pass over this Jordan, to go in to possess the land, which the LORD your God giveth you to possess it. And to the Reubenites, and to the Gadites, and to half the tribe of Manasseh spake Joshua saying..."

JOSH. 1:14: "Your wives, your little ones,...shall remain in the land which Moses gave you **on this side Jordan**..."

JOSH. 13:7,8: "Now therefore divide this land for an inheritance unto the nine tribes, and the half tribe of Manasseh, With whom the Reubenites and the Gadites have received their inheritance, which Moses gave them, beyond Jordan eastward, *even* as Moses the servant of the LORD gave them..."

JOSH. 13:14: "Only the tribe of Levi he gave none inheritance; the sacrifices of the LORD God of Israel made by fire *are* their inheritance, as he said unto them."

JOSH. 13:33: "But unto the tribe of Levi Moses gave not *any* inheritance: The LORD God of Israel was their inheritance, as he said unto them."

AMOS 9:14,15: "And I will bring again the captivity of my people of Israel, and they shall build the waste cities, and inhabit *them*; and they shall plant vineyards, and drink the wine thereof; they shall also make gardens, and eat the fruit of them. And I will plant them upon their land, and they shall no more be pulled up out of their land which I have given them, saith the LORD thy God."

Note: Reason for this study:

Gen. 15:13 — 400 years Exod. 12:40 — 430 years

SOJOURNING OF THE CHILDREN OF ISRAEL

"The Lord said to Abraham...Lift up now thine eyes and look to the north and south and east and west, for all the land thou seest to thee will I give it and to thy seed after thee for an everlasting

possession. (Gen. 13:14; 17:8)" *R3945:3*

"Then came the answer to Abraham's question 'Whereby shall I know?'...The Lord did give Abraham a glance into the future of his people, saying, 'Know of a surety that thy seed shall be a stranger in a land *that is* not theirs, and shall serve them: and they shall afflict them **four hundred years**;' (Gen. 15:13) not to be 0understood...that Israel would be in bondage for four hundred years nor that they would be afflicted all the years they would be in a strange land. Rather...that not until four hundred years would his posterity return to that land to inherit it according to the promise;...It would be in the fourth generation...that his descendants would return to Canaan..." *R3945:5*

GEN. 15:16: "But in the fourth generation they shall come hither again: for the iniquity of the Amorites *is* not yet full."

"...none of these calamities can come upon your posterity while you still live...We remember... Joseph died and Pharaoh died, and then began one hundred and ninety-eight years of servitude and affliction, which continued until the Lord sent Moses and delivered Israel at the close of the 400 years mentioned in our lesson." *R3945:6*

"Abraham...his wife...Lot...aged father...the four started for the land of promise. His father Terah died on the way, in Haran, after which Abraham passed over into Canaan...and bind the Covenant (Acts 7:4; Gen. 12:4)...Thus we have the date of the Covenant, and the beginning of the four hundred and thirty years." *B45*

EXOD: 12:41-43,47,50,51: "And it came to pass at the end of the four hundred and thirty years, even the selfsame day it came to pass, that all the hosts of the LORD went out from the land of Egypt. It *is* a night to be much observed unto the LORD for bringing them out from the land of Egypt: this *is* that night of the LORD to be observed of all the children of Israel in their generations. And the LORD

said unto Moses and Aaron, This *is* the ordinance of the passover: There shall no stranger eat thereof: All the congregation of Israel shall keep it. Thus did all the children of Israel; as the LORD commanded Moses and Aaron, so did they. And it came to pass the selfsame day, *that* the LORD did bring the children of Israel out of the land of Egypt by their armies."

"In harmony with this we read: 'Now the sojourning of the children of Israel who dwelt in Egypt was four hundred and thirty years; and it came to pass at the end of the four hundred and thirty years, **even the self-same day** it came to pass, that all the hosts of the Lord went out from the land of Egypt.' Exod. 12:40-42,51" *B46*

"...the Lord revealed to Abraham that his posterity would not come into the land of promise for some four hundred years after his son should be born, but would have affliction as a people, even as Israel experienced this in Egypt. The four hundred years being a statement in round numbers, otherwise more explicitly stated as four hundred and thirty years, included the wanderings of Isaac and Jacob before going down into Egypt, as well as the captivity in Egypt." *R2854:3*

"JACOB'S TROUBLE"

"...yet one more wave of anguish must pass over that chastened people;...final conflict...will be in the land of Palestine...when law and order are swept away Israel will finally be besieged by hosts of merciless plunderers...Gog and Magog (Ezek. 38)...'Alas!' says...Jeremiah 'for that day is great...' Jer.30:7" *D554*

"Gog and Magog are represented as saying, 'I will go up to the land of unwalled villages, I will go to them that are at rest, that dwell safely, all of them dwelling without walls,...' (Ezek. 38:11-13). The prophet foretelling these events '...Thou shalt come from...north parts...it **shall be in the latter days!**' (apparently the closing scene of the day of trouble), etc. Ezek. 38:15,16." *D554*

"In the midst of the trouble God will reveal himself as Israel's defender as in ancient times...and there their blindness will be removed. We read, — 'For I will gather all nations...' Zech. 14:2,3." *D555*

"The testimony of all the prophets is...that the power of God will be so marvelously manifested in Israel's deliverance,...with weapons which no human power can control...upon the wicked (Israel's enemies...) until speedily all the world will know that the Lord has accepted Israel again to his favor, and become their King, as in olden times..." *D557*

TIMES OF THE GENTILES

ISRAEL'S "SEVEN TIMES" OF CHASTISEMENT

"And when God was to remove the crown from Israel until the true seed should come to take the dominion, he determined to let the Gentile Kings take control...of ruling the world...that the world might learn the futility of its own efforts at self government while in its sinful condition. Ezek. 21:24-27" *B75*

"...overturning of crown...has been accomplished ...first turned over to Babylon, then...Medo Persia...then...Greece,...then,...Rome." *B76*

"Times of Gentiles is a period of 2,520 years, from the year B.C. 606 to and including A.D. 1914...beginning of Gentile Times is marked as at the time of the removal of the crown of God's typical Kingdom from Zedekiah, their last king." *B79*

"Some...think removal of the crown from Israel was a violation...'the scepter...not depart from JUDAH...until Shiloh come.' Gen. 49:10 — Note distinction between the crown and the scepter..." *B81*

GEN. 49:10: "The sceptre shall not depart from Judah, nor a lawgiver from between his feet, until Shiloh come; and unto him *shall* the gathering of the people *be*."

"Though the crown was removed, i.e., though power to govern even themselves was taken... the right to rule (the scepter) conveyed originally in God's promise, was not removed..." *B83*

"When the scepter (the right)...passed to our Lord Jesus, that Law Covenant ended." *B85*

"Shiloh...received the scepter and 'all power' at his resurrection." *B86*

"Our Lord's words, 'Jerusalem...trodden down of the Gentiles until Times...Gentiles be fulfilled.' Luke 21:24...suggest a limit and definite period of Gentile domination..." *B87*

LUKE 21:24: "And they shall fall by the edge of the sword, and shall be led away captive into all nations: and Jerusalem shall be trodden down of the Gentiles, until the times of the Gentiles be fulfilled."

"Turning to Leviticus we find recorded blessings and cursings of an earthly...character. If Israel would obey...will be blessed above other nations; if not,...evils would befall them — 'and I will walk

among you'..." *B87*

LEV. 26: 17,18,24,28: "And I will set my face against you, and ye shall be slain before your enemies: they that hate you shall reign over you; and ye shall flee when none pursueth you. And if ye will not yet for all this hearken

unto me, then I will punish you seven times more for your sins. Then will I also walk contrary unto you, and will punish you yet seven times for your sins. Then I will walk contrary unto you also in fury; and I, even I will chastise you seven times for your sins."

"These seven times...refer to the length of time...Gentiles should rule over them..." *B88*

"In the Bible a 'time' is used in the sense of a year..." *B89*

"Were these 'seven times' literal or symbolic?...They were symbolic times, 2,520 years...Hebrew word translated 'seven times' in Lev. 26:18,21,24,28 is the same word...translated in Daniel 4:16,23,25,32 except...in Daniel the word *iddan* is added...in Leviticus it is left to be understood." *B89*

DAN. 4:16,23,25,32: "Let his heart be changed from man's, and let a beast's heart be given unto him; and let seven times pass over him. And whereas the king saw a watcher and an holy one coming down from heaven, and saying, Hew the tree down, and destroy it; yet leave the stump of the roots thereof in the earth, even with a band of iron and brass, in the tender grass of the field; and let it be wet with the dew of heaven, and *let* his portion *be* with the beasts of the field, till seven times pass over him; That they shall drive thee from men, and thy dwelling shall be with the beasts of the field, and they shall make thee to eat grass as oxen, and they shall wet thee with the dew of heaven, and seven times shall pass over thee, till thou know that the most High ruleth in the kingdom of men, and giveth it to whomsoever he will."

"The 'seven times' of Nebuchadnezzar's degradation, Dan. 4:16,23-26, proved to be seven literal years...so the humiliation of Israel and the world...proved to be seven symbolic times..." *B90*

ANOTHER LINE OF TESTIMONY

"Another view of the Gentile Times is presented by Daniel — Chapter 4. Here man's original dominion over the whole earth, its removal, and the certainty of its restitution,... illustrated in a dream given to Nebuchadnezzar, its interpretation by Daniel..." *B93*

"In his dream Nebuchadnezzar 'saw...a tree...the height was great...reached unto heaven...fruit much...meat for all:...and, beasts had shadow under it,...fowls...dwelt in the boughs...all flesh was fed...a holy one...from heaven...He cried aloud...Hew down the tree and cut off his branches...leave the stump,...even with a band of iron and brass,...let his portion be with the beasts...Let his heart be changed from man's and let a beasts heart be given unto him; and let seven times pass over him.'" *B93*

"...tree...represented the first dominion...given to...its representative...Adam (Gen. 1:28)... Power vested in him...were over the whole earth, to bless, and feed, and protect and shelter every living thing. When sin entered, the command came to hew down the tree...left the lower creation without its lord...though he commanded it to be hewn down...the root... continued, though bound with strong fetters so that it should not sprout until the divinely appointed time." *B94*

"...figure changes from the stump...to a man degraded and brought to the...likeness of beasts...reason dethroned...glory departed, so we see man, the fallen degraded lord of earth." *B95*

"...he wandered among the beasts until seven times (seven literal years...)." *B95*

"At the end of the days, I Nebuchadnezzar, lifted up mine eyes unto heaven, and mine understanding returned unto me, and I blessed the Most High...Dan. 4:34-37." *B96*

DAN. 4:34-37: "And at the end of the days I Nebuchadnezzar lifted up mine eyes unto heaven, and mine understanding returned unto me, and I blessed the most High, and I praised and honoured him that liveth for ever, whose dominion *is* an everlasting dominion, and his kingdom *is* from generation to generation: And all the inhabitants of the earth *are* reputed as nothing: and he doeth according to his will in the army of heaven, and *among* the inhabitants of the earth: and none can stay his hand, or say unto him, What doest thou? At the same time my reason returned unto me; and for the glory of my kingdom, mine honour and brightness returned unto me; and my counsellors and my lords sought unto me; and I was established in my kingdom, and excellent majesty was added unto me. Now I Nebuchadnezzar praise and extol and honour the King of heaven, all whose works *are* truth, and his ways judgment: and those that walk in pride he is able to abase."

FLESHLY ISRAEL AND SPIRITUAL ISRAEL

"...he [Paul] calls up the whole Jewish system as divinely instituted..." *B201*

"...prophecies given aforetime by holy men of old were given, not for themselves,...but exclusively for the instruction of the Christian Church." *B203*

1 PET. 1:12: "Unto whom it was revealed, that not unto themselves, but unto us they did minister the things, which are now reported unto you by them that have preached the gospel unto you with the Holy Spirit sent down from heaven; which things the angels desire to look into."

"We purpose to show that the whole Jewish nation, during that entire age, was unwittingly engaged, under God's direction, in furnishing for our instruction a typical view of the entire plan of salvation..." *B203*

"...fleshly house,...under God's arrangements, furnished pantomime illustrations of spiritual things...if studied and heeded, greatly bless and enlighten the house of sons." B204, 205

CHART: FLESHLY AND SPIRITUAL ISRAEL (The following chart is based on B202-209)

FLESHLY ISRAEL

"...call and favor...of past and coming age,...to earthly honors...everlasting life as earthly (human) beings;" B202

SPIRITUAL ISRAEL

"...call and favor of the Gospel Age are to heavenly honors...change of nature...to divine..." B202

Jewish Dispensation B204 Christian Dispensation B204

"Israel after the Flesh" B204 "The Israel of God" B204

1 COR. 10:18: "Behold Israel after the flesh: are not they which eat of the sacrifices partakers of..house (family) of servants." B204

GAL. 6:16: "And as many as walk according to this rule, peace be on them, and mercy, and upon the Israel of God."

"...house (family) of servants" B204 ...house of sons... B204

HEB. 3:5: "And Moses verily was faithful in all his house, as a servant, for a testimony of those things which were to be spoken

after..."

HEB. 3:6: "But Christ as a son over his own house; whose house are we, if we hold fast the confidence and the rejoicing of the hope firm unto the end."

ROM. 8:14: "For as many as are led by the Spirit of God, they are the sons of God."

Nominal Israel...chaff B205

MATT. 3:12: "Whose fan is in his hand, and he will thoroughly purge his floor, and gather his wheat into the garner; but he will burn up the chaff with unquenchable fire."

...Real Israel...wheat B205

HEB. 3:5,6: "And Moses verily was faithful in all his house, as a servant, for a testimony of those things which were to be spoken after; But Christ as a son over his own house; whose house are we, if we hold fast the confidence and the rejoicing of the hope firm unto the end."

"The head of the Fleshly house was Jacob, surnamed Israel (a prince) and through his twelve sons he founded the house...

"It's founder, Christ, established it through the twelve Apostles:..." B205

"House of Israel" B205 The Church of Christ

"fleshly seed of Abraham" B205 "Spiritual seed of Jehovah" B205

"Tabernacle made with hands..." ...the true (the antitypical) Tabernacle, which the Lord pitched and not man."

HEB. 9:1,2,9,10: "Then verily the first covenant had also ordinances of divine service, and a worldly sanctuary....For there was a tabernacle made; the first, wherein was the candlestick, and the table, and the shewbread; which is called the sanctuary. Which was a figure for the time then present, in which were offered both gifts and sacrifices, that could not make him that did the service perfect, as pertaining to the conscience; Which stood only in meats and drinks, and divers washings, and carnal ordinances, imposed on them until the time of reformation."

HEB. 8:2: "A minister of the sanctuary, and of the true tabernacle, which the Lord pitched, and not man."

"...typical priesthood...of which Aaron was the head..." B208

"...offered typical sacrifices for the sins of the typical people...a typical cleansing..." *B208*

HEB. 10:1: "For the law having a shadow of good things to come, *and* not the very image of the things, can never with those sacrifices which they offered year by year continually make the comers thereunto perfect."

"...offers up better sacrifices which actually...cancel the sins of the whole world...Our Lord Jesus is...High Priest of our Profession..." *B208*

HEB. 9:23: "It was therefore necessary that the patterns of things in the heavens should be purified with these; but the heavenly things themselves with better sacrifices than these."

"...(fleshly) house of Israel was carried away captives into...literal Babylon." *B208*

"...(spiritual) house of Israel carried away captives to...figurative Babylon." *B208*

2 KINGS 24:14-16: "And he carried away all Jerusalem, and all the princes, and all the mighty men of valour, *even* ten thousand captives, and all the craftsmen and smiths: none remained, save the poorest sort of the people of the land. And he carried away Jehoiachin to Babylon, and the king's mother, and the king's wives, and his officers, and the mighty of the land, *those* carried he into captivity from Jerusalem to Babylon. And all the men of might, *even* seven thousand, and craftsmen and smiths a thousand, all *that* were strong *and* apt for war, even them the king of Babylon brought captive to Babylon."

"...golden vessels of the Temple...profaned by literal Babylon..." *B209*

"...precious divine (golden) truths...perverted ...by mystic Babylon." *B209*

2 CHRON. 36:7: "Nebuchadnezzar also carried of the vessels of the house of the LORD to Babylon, and put them in his temple at Babylon."

2 KINGS 24:12,13: "And Jehoiachin the king of Judah went out to the king of Babylon, he, and his mother, and his servants, and his princes, and his officers: and the king of Babylon took him in the eighth year of his reign. And he carried out thence all the treasures of the house of the LORD, and the treasures of the king's house, and cut in pieces all the vessels of gold which Solomon king of Israel had made in the temple of the LORD, as the LORD had said."

JER. 51:7-9: "Babylon *hath been* a golden cup in the LORD'S hand, that made all the earth drunken: the nations have drunken of her wine; therefore the nations are mad. Babylon is suddenly fallen and destroyed: howl for her; take balm for her pain, if so be she may be healed. We would have healed Babylon, but she is not healed: forsake her, and let us go every one into his own country: for her judgment reacheth unto heaven, and is lifted up *even* to the skies."

PARABLE OF THE RICH MAN AND LAZARUS

LUKE 16:19-31

LUKE 16: 19-31: "There was a certain rich man, which was clothed in purple and fine linen, and fared sumptuously every day: And there was a certain beggar named Lazarus, which was laid at his gate, full of sores, And desiring to be fed with the crumbs which fell from the rich man's table: moreover the dogs came and licked his sores. And it came to pass, that the beggar died, and was carried by the angels into Abraham's bosom: the rich man also died, and was

Buried; and in hell he lift up his eyes, being in torments, and seeth Abraham afar off, and Lazarus in his bosom. And he cried and said, Father Abraham, have mercy on me, and send Lazarus, that he may dip the tip of his finger in water, and cool my tongue; for I am tormented in this flame. But Abraham said, Son, remember that thou in thy lifetime receivedst thy good things, and likewise Lazarus evil things: but now he is comforted, and thou art tormented.

"And beside all this, between us and you there is a great gulf fixed: so that they which would pass from hence to you cannot; neither can they pass to us, that *would come* from thence. Then he said, I pray thee therefore, father, that thou wouldest send him to my father's house: For I have five brethren; that he may testify unto them, lest they also come into this place of torment. Abraham saith unto him, They have Moses and the prophets; let them hear them. And he said, Nay, father Abraham: but if one went unto them from

the dead, they will repent. And he said unto him, If they hear not Moses and the prophets, neither will they be persuaded, though one rose from the dead."

"...To regard it as a literal statement involves several absurdities:...unless we are poor beggars full of sores,...never enter into future bliss...if we, wear fine linen and purple...we are sure of future torment...coveted place of favor is 'Abraham's bosom,'...would not hold very many of earth's millions..." *R2603:6*

"...as a parable it is easy of interpretation..." *R2604:1*

"Abraham represents God...'Richman' represents the Jewish Nation." *R2604:2*

ROM. 3:2: "Much every way: chiefly, because that unto them were committed the oracles of God."

REV. 19:8: "And to her was granted that she should be arrayed in fine linen, clean and white: for the fine linen is the righteousness of saints."

"Lazarus represents the outcasts...and truth hungry Gentiles 'feeling after God.'" *R2604:2*

"But there came a great dispensational change in Israel's history when as a nation they rejected and crucified the Son of God...then the promise of royalty ceased...Kingdom taken from them...given to a nation bringing forth the fruits thereof—the Gospel Church, 'a holy nation, a peculiar people.'...The rich man died to all the special advantages." *R2604:3*

TITUS 2:14: "Who gave himself for us, that he might redeem us from all iniquity, and purify unto himself a peculiar people, zealous of good works."

1 PET. 2:7,9: "Unto you therefore which believe *he is* precious: but unto them which be disobedient, the stone

which the builders disallowed, the same is made the head of the corner, But ye *are* a chosen generation, a royal priesthood, an holy nation, a peculiar people; that ye should shew forth the praises of him who hath called you out of darkness into his marvelous light..."

MATT. 21:43: "Therefore say I unto you, The kingdom of God shall be taken from you, and given to a nation bringing forth the fruits thereof."

"Lazarus also died: the condition of the humble Gentiles and...outcasts of Israel...carried to Abraham's bosom...who receives...children of faith as the heirs of all the promises made to Abraham." *R2604:3*

GAL. 3:29: "And if ye *be* Christ's, then are ye Abraham's seed, and heirs according to the promise."

"To the symbolisms of death and burial...to illustrate the dissolution of Israel and their burial...our Lord added a further figure — 'In hell (hades the grave) he lifted up his eyes being in torments'...The dead cannot lift up their eyes, not see...for it is distinctly stated 'There is no work, nor device,...'...'go down into silence.'" *R2604:4*

ECCL. 9:10: "Whatsoever thy hand findeth to do, do *it* with thy might; for *there* is no work, nor device, nor knowledge, nor wisdom, in the grave, whither thou goest."

PSA: 115:17: "The dead praise not the LORD, neither any that go down into silence."

"For eighteen hundred years the Jews...not only in distress...casting out from the favor of God...but have been relentlessly persecuted by all classes, including professed Christians...'Send Lazarus,'...but the great gulf fixed between them hinders that. Nevertheless, God still recognizes the relationship...addresses them as children of the Covenant (verse 25) These 'torments'... penalties attached to violation of their covenant...See Lev. 26." *R2604:5*

"The 'great gulf fixed'...wide difference between the Gospel Church and the Jew...by deeds of Law none can be justified...Christ shall profit him nothing (Gal. 5:24)...hence they cannot come...to Bosom of Abraham." *R2604:5*

GAL. 5:24: "And they that are Christ's have crucified the flesh with the affections and lusts."

JOHN 8:39: "They answered and said unto him, Abraham is our father. Jesus saith unto them, If ye were Abraham's children, ye would do the works of Abraham."

ROM. 4:16: "Therefore *it is* of faith, that *it might be* by grace; to the end the promise might be sure to all the seed; not to that only which is of the law, but to that also which is of the faith of Abraham; who is the father of us all..."

GAL. 3:29: "And if ye *be* Christ's, then are ye Abraham's seed, and heirs according to the promise."

"The plea of the 'rich man'...sending 'Lazarus' to his five brethren we interpret as follows:...If the nation of the Jews (chiefly two tribes) were represented in the one 'rich man,' it would be a harmony of numbers to understand the 'five brethren' to represent the ten tribes chiefly scattered abroad...All special favor of God ceased to all Israel (the ten tribes, as well as the two more directly addressed)." *R2604:6*

"...'great gulf'...to be 'fixed' only throughout the Gospel age." *R2605:1*

"Though for centuries the Jews...bitterly persecuted by pagans, professed Christians...yet as a people they will be very prominent among the nations in the beginning of the Millennium. The 'vail' (2 Cor. 3:13-16) of prejudice still exists, but it will be gradually taken away as the light of Millennial morning dawns;...They will thus leave their hadean state (national death) and torment, and come, the first of the nations, to be blessed...the humble, the poor in spirit, are beginning to look upon him whom they have pierced (Zech. 12:10). Therefore 'speak ye comfortably to Jerusalem, and cry unto her that her appointed time is accomplished.' Isa. 40:1,2." *R2605:2*

2 COR. 3:13-16: "And not as Moses, which put a vail over his face, that the children of Israel could not steadfastly look to the end of that which is abolished: But their minds were blinded: for until this day remaineth the same vail untaken away in the reading of the old testament; which vail is done away in Christ. But even unto this day, when Moses is read, the vail is upon their heart. Nevertheless when it shall turn to the Lord, the vail shall be taken away."

ZECH. 12:10: "And I will pour upon the house of David, and upon the inhabitants of Jerusalem, the spirit of grace and of supplications: and they shall look upon me whom they have pierced, and they shall mourn for him, as one mourneth for *his* only *son*, and shall be in bitterness for him, as one that is in bitterness for *his* firstborn."

ISA. 40:1,2: "Comfort ye, comfort ye my people, saith your God. Speak ye comfortably to Jerusalem, and cry unto her, that her

warfare is accomplished, that her iniquity is pardoned: for she hath received of the LORD'S hand double for all her sins."

"...this parable seems to teach precisely what Paul explained in Rom. 11:19-32. Because of unbelief the natural branches were broken off, and the wild branches grafted into the Abrahamic root — promise: The parable leaves the Jews in their trouble, and does not refer to their final restoration to favor...but Paul assures us that when the

fullness of the Gentiles...is come in, 'they (natural Israel) shall obtain mercy through your (the Church's) mercy.'...'The deliverer shall come out of Zion (the glorified church), and shall turn away ungodliness from Jacob (the fleshly seed)'...Rom. 11:26-33." *R2605:4*

ROM. 11:19-33: "Thou wilt say then, The branches were broken off, that I might be graffed in. Well; because of unbelief they were broken off, and thou standest by faith. Be not highminded, but fear: For if God spared not the natural branches, *take heed* lest he also spare not thee. Behold therefore the goodness and severity of God: on them which fell, severity; but toward thee, goodness, if thou continue in *his* goodness: otherwise thou also shalt be cut off. And they also, if they abide not still in unbelief, shall be graffed in: for God is able to graff them in again. For if thou wert cut out of the olive tree which is wild by nature, and wert graffed contrary to nature into a good olive tree: how much more shall these, which be the natural *branches*, be graffed into their own olive tree? For I would not, brethren, that ye should be ignorant of this mystery, lest ye should be wise in your own conceits; that blindness in part is happened to Israel, until the fulness of the Gentiles be come in. And so all Israel shall be saved: as it is written, There shall come out of Sion the Deliverer, and shall turn away ungodliness from Jacob: For this *is* my covenant unto them, when I shall take away their sins. As concerning the gospel, *they are* enemies for your sakes: but as touching the election, *they are* beloved for the fathers' sakes. For the gifts and calling of God *are* without repentance. For as ye in times past have not believed God, yet have now obtained mercy through their unbelief: Even so have these also now not believed, that through your mercy they also may obtain mercy. For God hath concluded them all in unbelief, that he might have mercy upon all. O the depth of the riches both of the wisdom and knowledge of God! how unsearchable *are* his judgments, and his ways past finding out!"

THE NATION OF ISRAEL ELECTED

"**AMOS 3:2**: '...You only have I known of all the families of the earth.' Isa. 45:4...'For Jacob my servant's sake, and Israel mine elect, I have even called thee by thy name.'" *F176*

"The Apostle shows how Israel, as God's favored or elect nation for a time...had 'much advantage every way...':

1. to them pertained the promises...

2. they were the branches of the olive tree...

3. God broke off...natural branches as were out of harmony with the root of promise.

4. While the entire nation was originally elected to receive God's choicest favors,...only the faithful would be in a

proper condition of heart to become spiritual Israelites...Such were the very elect of that nation..." *F177*

"Israel according to the flesh was called of the Lord to be his peculiar people, separate from the other peoples or nations of the earth. Israel's calling, however was not 'the high calling' or 'heavenly calling,' and consequently we find no mention of heavenly things in any of the promises pertaining to that people. Their call was to a preparatory condition, which... made ready a remnant...to receive and profit by the high calling to the 'great salvation,' which at first began to be spoken by the Lord....Heb. 2:3" *F85*

HEB 2:3: "How shall we escape, if we neglect so great salvation; which at the first began to be spoken by the Lord, and was confirmed unto us by them that heard *him.*

EARTH'S GREAT JUBILEE

"In this chapter we propose to examine the typical feature of the Mosaic Law...Jubilee...was intended to foreshadow the great Restitution, the recovery of mankind from the fall, to be accomplished in the Millennial age;... Illustration of the coming Restitution; and that in the manner of its reckoning it furnishes time regulations which,...indicate clearly the time for the beginning of the antitype, the 'Restitution of all things.'" *B175*

ACTS 3:19-21: "Repent ye therefore, and be converted, that your sins may be blotted out, when the times of refreshing shall come from the presence of the Lord. And he shall send Jesus Christ, which before was preached unto you: Whom the heaven must receive until the times of restitution of all things, which God hath spoken by the mouth of all his holy prophets since the world began."

"The year of Jubilee was a Sabbath of rest...both to the people and to the land...They had a Sabbath day every seventh day; and once every year...Sabbath days reached a climax — i.e. a cycle of seven of these Sabbaths,...period of forty-nine days (7 x 7 equals 49) was followed by a Jubilee day, the fiftieth day (Lev. 23:15,16), known...as Pentecost...." *B175*

LEV. 23:15,16: "And ye shall count unto you from the morrow after the Sabbath, from the day that ye brought the sheaf of the wave offering; seven sabbaths shall be complete: Even unto the morrow after the seventh Sabbath shall ye number fifty days; and ye shall offer a new meat offering unto the LORD."

"The Sabbath year occurred every seventh year...land was allowed to rest...a climax of these Sabbath (rest) years was reached...seven times seven years, or forty-nine years (7 x 7 equals 49)...and the year, following, the **Fiftieth Year**, was the **Year of Jubilee**." *B176*

"When Israel came into Canaan, the land was divided...by lot....If a man became involved in debt...and with his family go into servitude... God made a bountiful provision...that all their accounts, credits and debts...reckoned only to the Jubilee Year, when all must be freed...to make a fresh start for the next term of fifty years." *B176*

"The account...is found in Lev. 25." *B177*

"While in the typical Jubilee Year many restored liberties and blessings were at once entered upon, yet probably most of the year was required to straighten out affairs and get each one fully installed again in all his former liberties, rights, and possessions. So, too, with the antitype, the Millennial age of Restitution. It will open with sweeping reforms, with the recognition of rights, liberties, and possessions long lost sight of; but the work of completely restoring (to the obedient) all that was originally lost will require all of that age of restitution — a thousand years." *B179*

"The first work in the typical Jubilee Year would naturally be a

searching out of former rights and possessions....Tracing the parallel...expect in the antitype just what we now see going on all about us; for, as will shortly be shown, we have already entered upon the great antitypical Jubilee period, and have been in it since October, A.D. 1874." *B182*

"The Lord had appointed a jubilee arrangement by which every seventh year would be a Sabbath year of rest to the soil, and every fiftieth year a Jubilee of restitution for all the people, to all the inhabitants throughout Israel. It would appear that this divine arrangement fell into neglect or was only partially observed for a time. Doubtless the princes and nobles and wealthy thought they saw an error in the divine program and that they could improve upon God's arrangement. At all events there is no record of the keeping of the Jubilees, and the Lord here declares that they were neglected — either they were not kept at all or they were observed in so perfunctory a manner as to constitute neglect from the divine standpoint. Nevertheless we have no record of the Lord having chided the people on this score. A lesson for us would be that every feature of the divine law is of importance, that every regulation should be observed, that there is a blessing in the arrangement whether it so appears to human judgment or not, and that the Lord will require an account from us eventually respecting our knowledge and obedience.

"Turning to Leviticus 26:33-35, we find that the Lord through Moses had foretold this very failure to observe the year Sabbaths and Jubilees, and that it was on this account that the whole nation was cast out of the land of promise so that it received in the seventy years of its desolation the full

number of Jubilee years — 'For as long as it lay desolate it kept Sabbath to fulfil three score and ten years.'

"This thought, that each of those years that the land was desolated represented a Jubilee year which had not been properly observed by Israel, furnishes one of the keys by which we may estimate the whole number of Jubilees from the entrance of the children of Israel into the land of Palestine down to the grand consummation when the kingdom of Messiah will be established and the actual Jubilee, the antitypical Jubilee, will begin. These calculations carried out show that we are already living in the great antitypical Jubilee, which will last for a thousand years. As the priests were to blow the silver trumpets in the beginning of the typical Jubilee year announcing its beginning, so now all who are of the royal priesthood are commissioned by the Lord to blow upon the silver trumpets of truth, and to make known to all who have a hearing ear in spiritual Israel our present times and seasons, and that the great Jubilee, the times of restitution of all things, has begun. This implies, as we have already shown, that the great King is now taking unto himself his great power, and that his reign over the nations will soon begin, precipitating the time of trouble such as was not since there was a nation, the result of which will be the overthrow of all human institutions and the opening of the way to the establishment of the Kingdom for which we pray, 'Thy kingdom come,' under whose ministrations all the families of the earth will be blessed, and every evil institution and thing suppressed, and every good and true matter brought forward to the light, established.

"Thank God for the great blessing and privilege of living in our day under these favorable conditions. Let us be faithful to our vow and for the present be submissive to the powers that be, waiting for the Lord in his own time and way to establish his kingdom and to fulfil all the gracious promises of his Word. Let us who realize that we are now in the antitypical Jubilee be faithful to the blowing on the trumpets." *R3624:1,2,4,5*

"Fiftieth Day and Fiftieth Year"

"Here we are reminded that Israel had two systems of Sabbaths — one of the Sabbath days and the other of Sabbath years. The Sabbath days began to count in the Spring. It was a multiple of seven. Seven times seven days (forty-nine days) brought them to the Jubilee day, the fiftieth day, which was styled Pentecost. It is scarcely necessary to call attention to the fulfillment of the antitype of this. Pentecost never had its true meaning until the Lord, as 'the first-fruits of them that slept,' arose from the dead. Then immediately the seven times seven, plus one, began to count, and on the fiftieth day the holy Spirit was shed abroad upon all those 'Israelites indeed' who, already

consecrated, were waiting in the upper room for the antitypical High Priest to make satisfaction for their sins and to shed forth upon them the holy Spirit, as the evidence of their restoration to divine favor. Immediately they had peace with God. Immediately they entered into rest. Immediately they realized that they were children of God, begotten of the holy Spirit, that they might in due time become joint-heirs with Jesus Christ their Lord. And is it not true that all down throughout this Gospel age all who follow in the footsteps of Jesus and the disciples, all who renounce sin, trust in Jesus and fully consecrate their lives to him, become recipients of the holy Spirit and similarly enter into his rest? Only those who have entered into this rest and joy of the holy Spirit can fully appreciate the matter.

"Now let us glance at the year Sabbath. Every seventh year the land had its rest. And seven times seven (forty-nine) brought them up to the fiftieth year or the Year of Jubilee, in which year all debts were cancelled and each Israelite returned to his own inheritance. It was a year of rest, peace, joy. That Jubilee pictures the glorious Restitution Times of Messiah's kingdom, which, we believe, are nigh, even at the door. When these times shall be ushered in all the faithful followers of Jesus will have reached the heavenly condition, to be forever with the Lord. Their rest (Sabbath keeping) will have reached its completion, its perfection, and throughout that antitypical Jubilee the blessings of divine favor will be gradually extended to the whole world, that every creature desirous of coming into harmony with God may enter into the rest which God has provided for the poor, groaning creation through the great Redeemer." *R5028:1,2*

THE LAW COVENANT

ARE JEWS STILL BOUND UNDER THE LAW COVENANT?

"Did not the Law Covenant end at the time of our Lord's death?..." *R4504:3*

"Many make the mistake of supposing that the Law Covenant ended at the cross....the terms of that covenant are binding upon every Jew from the day in which the Covenant was made to the present time — as St. Paul says, 'The law hath dominion over a man as long as he liveth.' (Rom. 7:1). **Every Jew today is under a death condemnation**, by virtue of that law which he is under, yet cannot keep. There are only two possible ways of his getting free from that bondage...." *R4504:6*

"With the end of this age the great High Priest ...offer the blood of

'the Lord's goat' 'for the sins of all the people;'...this will include the sins of Israel. And then the blessed

opportunities of the New Covenant will be opened to them...Jer. 31:31; Rom. 11:27-31)...eyes will be opened...accept the Mediator the New Covenant..." *R4505:1*

JER. 31:31: "Behold, the days come, saith the LORD, that I will make a new covenant with the house of Israel, and with the house of Judah..."

ROM. 11:27-31: "For this is my covenant unto them, when I shall take away their sins. As concerning the gospel, *they are* enemies for your sakes: but as touching the election, *they are* beloved for the fathers' sakes. For the gifts and calling of God *are* without repentance. For as ye in times past have not believed God, yet have now obtained mercy through their unbelief: Even so have these also now not believed, that through your mercy they also may obtain mercy."

"...to get free from the Law Covenant...in the times of restitution, he must die to the law. As St. Paul declares, 'The Law hath dominion over a man as long as he liveth.' 'Wherefore, my brethren, ye also are become dead to the law by the body of Christ, that ye should be married to another, even to him who is raised from the dead.' (Rom. 7:1,4)...

"Does the Jewish Law Covenant still exist?..." R3062:1

"Law Covenant was an agreement between God and...Israel...God pledged rewards...if obedient; and Israel bound itself to keep the Law,...in event of failure...they would justly come under divine sentence afresh...The rewards of the Law...secured by one Jew; namely our Lord Jesus,..." *R3062:3*

"God has thus accomplished his side of the Covenant, the Jews have never accomplished their side. Every circumcised Jew comes under the provisions of the Law Covenant and is subject to all its conditions, and can escape those conditions only in the divinely appointed way...by accepting Jesus as his Savior, the curse of the Law; for he is the end of the law for righteousness (righteously) to every one that believeth (Rom. 10:4)...ceases to be a Jew and becomes a Christian....Consequently all Jews not thus believing are still under the Law Covenant to which they have subscribed and to which they are bound by their own covenant... (Rom. 8:4). The curse which they brought upon their own heads remains with them. 'His blood be upon us and our children' (Matt. 27:25). They can only escape the curse of the law and the additional curse of this gross violation of it, by having the merit of his blood, his sacrifice, imputed to them, as a sin sacrifice, the atonement of their guilt." *R3062:2,3*

"THE SEVENTH DAY STILL A SABBATH"

"A mistake made by many Christians is the supposition that the Law Covenant which God made with Israel ceased,

passed away. On the contrary, as the Apostle declares, 'The Law hath dominion over a man so long as he liveth.' The Jewish law is as obligatory upon the Jew today as it was upon his fathers in the days of Moses. Only death could set the Jew free from that Law Covenant until, in God's due time, it shall be enlarged and made what God, through the Prophet, styles a New Covenant — a New Law Covenant. That will take place just as soon as the Mediator of the New Covenant shall have been raised up from amongst the people. That Prophet will be like unto Moses, but greater — the antitype. That Prophet will be the glorified Christ — Jesus the Head and the completed church, who are frequently spoken of as members of his body, and sometimes styled the bride, the Lamb's wife. This antitypical Mediator (Acts 3:22,23), under the New Law Covenant which he will then establish, will assist the Jews (and all who come into harmony with God through him) back to that human perfection in which they will be able to keep the divine law perfectly in every particular. This great Mediator, Messiah, will for a thousand years carry on this great work.

"This Mediator is not yet completed. The Head has passed into glory centuries ago, but the body, the church, awaits a completeness of membership and resurrection change — to be made 'like him and see him as he is' and share his glory and his work.

"Meantime the Law Covenant is still in force upon every Jew; but it is not in force upon any but Jews, as it never has been in force upon any other people. During these eighteen centuries, between the death of Christ and the inauguration of the New Covenant, Jesus, as the great High Priest, is offering the 'better sacrifices' mentioned by St. Paul (Heb. 9:23) and described in type in Leviticus 16. The first part of the great High Priest's sacrifice was the offering of the human body which he took for the purpose when he was made flesh — 'a body hast thou prepared me' 'for the suffering of death.' (Heb. 9:5; 2:9) The second part of his 'better sacrifices' is the offering of his mystical body — the church. This work has been in progress since Pentecost. To the consecrated ones who approach the Father through him he becomes the Advocate. He accepts them as his members on the earth; and their sufferings thenceforth are his sufferings so fully that he could say of them to Saul of Tarsus, 'Saul, Saul, why persecutest thou me?' 'I am Jesus whom thou persecutest.' These, accepted as his representatives in the flesh, their blemishes covered by their Advocate's merit, are begotten, by the Heavenly Father, of the holy Spirit to be members of the new creation — the spiritual body of Christ, of which he is the Head." *R5027:2*

"LAW — WHEN PUT AT AN END"

"*Question* (1916) — 2 — *When did Jesus put an end to the law? At Jordan, or at Calvary*

"Answer. — This expression 'Putting an end to the law' is one that is apt to be misunderstood. The question might be viewed from various viewpoints. Jesus never put an end to the law in a very important sense of the word. The law is the Father's law. It existed before Jesus came. It still exists. It will always be in existence. Jesus did not put it to an end and never will put it to an end. It is God's law briefly summed up in this: 'Thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thy heart, with all thy soul, mind and strength; and thy neighbor as thyself.' When will that law be put an end to? Never! Never! We get a little nearer to an appreciation of it every day. Neither at the Jordan or at Calvary, nor at any time will He ever put an end to that law. What, then is meant by this expression? Upon the basis of that law as God gave it through Moses to the Israelites was made a covenant, and that covenant was often called the law because it was the law-covenant and consequently this word covenant, because the covenant and the law were so closely associated and vitally connected was sometimes used when the law was meant, and the word law was used to include the covenant based upon it. It was in this sense that Jesus made an end of the law, that is, the law-covenant or the covenant based upon that law. He made an end of this covenant, and yet, He did not make a full

end of the law covenant even, for, to my understanding, the Jews are still under that law-covenant, and certain blessings are to come to them in consequence. They are now under the condemnation part of that law-covenant, but if it were dead, they would not be under its condemnation phase. They could not be under the condemnation of a dead covenant. Jesus therefore made an end simply of the favors, privileges, opportunities granted to the Jews under that covenant. How? By Himself fulfilling all its obligations and Himself thus becoming the Heir of God to the things which the law had promised to the One who would keep it. The whole Jewish nation had an opportunity of becoming heirs of these blessings if they had kept the law, but they failed to keep the law; but Jesus coming in, He kept all its requirements and thereby became Heir and inheritor of all the blessings which that law had promised, and thus He made an end of those blessings, so far as others were concerned; and from that time on no Jew can come in. Jesus got all the blessings. The Jews can get the curse, but not the blessings. Jesus is dividing these blessings with all those who become His disciples. We became joint-heirs with Him to all that inheritance which He inherited by keeping the law. We are unable to keep the law, and these Jews were not able to keep the law, but Jesus kept it and won its blessings, so that we may now become (both Jews and Gentiles) joint-heirs of all the promises made to natural Israel, through faith in the Lord Jesus and becoming members of His body. We come in and we get possession of all these things. What Jesus made an end of then, was, such requirements upon the Jews except certain obligations they had. Then coming under the new arrangement they are liberated from the requirements of the old. For instance, the Apostles coming in, the requirements of the law covenant were no longer binding upon them, when Jesus made the new provision whereby they might enter in. The new provision was to enable them to come in under the new arrangement. The Apostles became dead to the old things of the old arrangement in order that they might become alive to the better things — to God — by choosing to become the disciples of Jesus." *Q431, 432*

BERLIN CONGRESS OF NATIONS

A JEWISH KINGDOM PROPOSED Washington, D. C., March 5th, 1891

"William E. Blackstone, of Chicago, today visited the President of the United States in company with Secretary Blaine, and presented a memorial in behalf of the Russian Jews.

"He explained that the memorial was the result of a Conference of Christians and Jews recently held in Chicago, and called special attention to the fact that it did not antagonize Russia, but sought in a peaceable way to give the Jews control of their old home — Palestine.

"He pointed out many evidences of the possibility of great development of that country, both agriculturally and commercially, under an energetic government, and said that the railroad now building from Joppa to Jerusalem, if extended to Damascus, Tadmor and down the Euphrates, cannot fail to become an international highway.

"He said that the poverty of the Turkish Government gives emphasis to the proposed indemnity, by funding a portion of the Turkish national debt through Jewish capitalists, and that only peaceable diplomatic negotiations are asked for, to the end that all private ownership of land and property be carefully respected and protected. In closing he said that, being on such friendly terms with Russia and having no complications in the Orient, it is most fitting and hopeful that our government should initiate this friendly movement, to give these wandering millions of Israel a settled and permanent home.

"The President listened attentively to Mr. Blackstone's remarks, and promised to give the subject serious consideration."

THE MEMORIAL

The text of the memorial is as follows:

"What shall be done for the Russian Jews? It is both unwise and useless to undertake to dictate to Russia concerning her internal affairs. The Jews have lived as foreigners in her dominions for centuries, and she fully believes that they are a burden upon her resources and prejudicial to the welfare of her peasant population, and will not allow them to remain. She is determined that they must go. Hence, like the Sephardim of Spain, these Ashkenazim must emigrate. But where shall two millions of such poor people go? Europe is crowded, and has no room for more peasant population. Shall they come to America? This would be a tremendous expense and would require years.

"Why not give Palestine back to them again? According to God's distribution of nations it is their home — an inalienable possession from which they were expelled by force. Under their cultivation it was a remarkably fruitful land, sustaining millions of Israelites, who industriously tilled its hillsides and valleys. They were agriculturists and producers as well as a nation of great commercial importance—the center of civilization and religion. It is said, too, that rains are increasing, and there are many evidences that the land is recovering its ancient fertility.

"Why shall not the powers which, under the treaty of Berlin, in 1878, gave Bulgaria to the Bulgarians and Servia to the Servians, now give Palestine back to the Jews. These provinces, as well as Roumania, Montenegro and Greece, were wrested from the Turks and given to their natural owners. Does not Palestine as rightfully belong to the Jews?

"If they could have autonomy in government, the Jews of the world would rally to transport and establish their suffering brethren in their time-honored habitation. For over seventeen centuries they have patiently waited for such a privileged opportunity. They have not become agriculturists elsewhere because they believed they were sojourners in the various nations, and were yet to return to Palestine and till their own land. Whatever vested rights, by possession, may have accrued to Turkey can be easily compensated for, possibly by the Jews assuming an equitable portion of the national debt.

"To this end we respectfully petition His Excellency, Benjamin Harrison, President of the United States, and the Hon. J. G. Blaine, Secretary of State, to use their good offices and influence with the governments of their imperial majesties — Alexander III, Czar of Russia; Victoria, Queen of Great Britain and Empress of India; William II, Emperor of Germany; Francis Joseph, Emperor of Austro-Hungary; Abdul Hamid II, Sultan of Turkey; Her Royal Majesty, Marie Christina, Queen Regent of Spain; with the government of the Republic of France; and with the governments of Belgium, Holland, Denmark, Sweden, Portugal, Roumania, Servia, Bulgaria and Greece, to secure the holdings, at an early date, of an international conference to consider the condition of the Israelites and their claims to Palestine as their ancient home, and to

promote in all other just and proper ways the alleviation of their suffering conditions.

"[The memorial is signed by prominent men of all professions and creeds from Chicago, Boston, New York, Philadelphia, Baltimore and Washington.]" *C288-290*

"These wonderful promises...had a marked beginning with the year 1878, as the result of the Berlin Congress of Nations. The Jews enjoy greater privileges in the land of their fathers...

"England has already assumed a protectorate over Palestine...when, in 1878, Russia was about to enter Constantinople, England interposed and sent a fleet of gunboats into the harbor. The result was the Berlin Conference of June 13, 1878, the chief figure was a Hebrew, Lord Beaconsfield, Prime Minister of England..." *C260, 261*

Disraeli "Lord Beaconsfield Berlin Congress 1878:"

"Russia, at war with Turkey, was successful, and by the treaty of San Stefano, practically effaced Turkey from Europe. Lord Beaconsfield, a Jew, came into power in 1874. As Premier of Great Britain, Beaconsfield sent the English fleet into the Dardanelles and brought Indian troops to Malta and made a demonstration against Russia. She yielded and agreed to a discussion of the whole affair at Berlin. Accordingly, from June 13 to July 13, 1878, the Berlin Congress was held. Beaconsfield compelled Russia to greatly modify this treaty. Turkey was enfranchised and made independent, **but upon condition that civil and religious rights be granted to the Jews**. This had an important bearing on the history of the Jews." *Excerpt from the Jewish Encyclopedia: "Comfort for the Jews," page 77*

"All these prophetic points in the past are clearly marked, and we should expect some evidence of God's returning favor to Fleshly Israel ('Jacob') in or about A.D. 1878. This we do find, in the fact the Jew is now permitted privileges in Palestine denied him for centuries past. And it was in that very year — 1878 A.D., when their '**double**' was full, and God's favor was due to return to that people — that the 'Berlin Congress of Nations' was held, in which Lord Beaconsfield, (a Jew), then Prime Minister of England, was the central figure and took the leading part. There England assumed a general protectorate over the Asiatic provinces of Turkey, among which is Palestine; and the Turkish government amended its laws relating to aliens, which greatly ameliorated the condition of the Jews then residing

in Palestine, as well as partially opened the door for others to locate there, with the privilege of holding real estate. Previously, the Jew was but 'a dog,' to be cuffed, kicked, and abused by his Mohammedan ruler, and was denied the most ordinary privileges of existence, in the land sacred to him with memories of the past, and with promises touching the future." *B218*

"Now the remarkable fact is to be noted that a corresponding period of 1845 years from the death of Christ A.D. 32 brings us to A.D. 1878, a year memorable for the meeting of the Berlin Conference of Nations, at which a Hebrew, Disraeli, as the representative of Great Britain, was accorded the place of chief honor as the leading spirit. Moreover, the decisions of that Conference had a weighty influence in the affairs of God's Chosen People. Under the ruling of that Conference of the Great Powers of Europe the various Balkan States, divisions of the Turkish Empire, were placed under the supervision of the Governments whose interests were contiguous. By that division of responsibility for peace in the Turkish provinces, Egypt and Palestine, as portions of the Turkish Empire, come under the protection of Great Britain and France. The French made only a partial success of their venture in digging the Suez Canal and in the turning over of that canal to the British, the French abandoned their responsibilities in Egypt and Palestine, to the British, although the Egyptian Government and the Turkish authority are both recognized." *OV75:1*

THE VALLEY OF DRY BONES

"The prophet declares that this picture represents the revival of Israel's Hopes. First the dry bones of hope, then sinews of strength, and finally comeliness and completion. We read 'This is the whole House of Israel, which say, Our hope (of again becoming a nation) is dried; we are cut off from our parts.' Ezek. 37:1-14" *PD53*

EZEK. 37:1-14: "The hand of the LORD was upon me, and carried me out in the spirit of the LORD, and set me down in the midst of the valley which *was* full of bones, And caused me to pass by them round about: and, behold, *there were* very many in the open valley; and, *lo, they were* very dry. And he said unto me, Son of man, can these bones live? And I answered, O Lord GOD, thou knowest. Again he said unto me, Prophesy upon these bones, and say unto them, O ye dry bones, hear the word of the LORD. Thus saith the Lord GOD unto these bones; Behold, I will cause breath to enter into you, and ye shall live: And I will lay sinews upon you, and will bring up flesh upon you, and cover you with skin, and put breath in you, and ye shall live; and ye shall know that I *am* the LORD. So I prophesied as I was commanded: and as I prophesied, there was a noise, and behold a shaking, and the bones came together, bone to his

bone. And when I beheld, lo, the sinews and the flesh came up upon them, and the skin covered them above: but *there was* no breath in them. Then said he unto me, Prophesy unto the wind, prophesy, son of man, and say to the wind, Thus saith the Lord GOD; Come from the four winds, O breath, and breathe upon these slain, that they may live. So I prophesied as he commanded me, and the breath came into them, and they lived, and stood up upon their feet, an exceeding great army. Then he said unto me, Son of man, these bones are the whole house of Israel: behold, they say, Our bones are dried, and our hope is lost: we are cut off for our parts. Therefore prophesy and say unto them, Thus saith the Lord GOD; Behold, O my people, I will open your graves, and cause you to come up out of your graves, and bring you into the land of Israel. And ye shall know that I *am* the LORD, when I have opened your graves, O my people, and brought you up out of your graves, And shall put my spirit in you, and ye shall live, and I shall place you in your own land: then shall ye know that I the LORD have spoken *it*, and performed *it*, saith the Lord."

"The time is evidently not far distant when their national hope will be rehabilitated and they shall rejoice again as a people." *PD53*

See ISA. 40:1,2 (Already quoted on page 286.)

See ROM. 11:25-33 (Already quoted on page 287)

"Peter tells us that this restitution is spoken of by the mouth of all the holy prophets. (Acts 3:19-21) They do all teach it. Ezekiel says of the valley of dry bones, 'These bones are the whole house of Israel.' and God says to Israel, 'Behold, O my people, I will open your graves, and cause you to come up out of your graves, and bring you into the land of Israel. And ye shall know that I am the Lord, when I....shall put my spirit in you, and I shall place you in

your own land; then shall ye know that I the Lord have spoken it, and performed it, saith the Lord.' Ezek. 37:11-14" *A108*

See ACTS 3:19-21 (Previously quoted on page 288)

PROMISE OF A NEW HEART

EZEK. 36:25-38: "Then will I sprinkle clean water upon you, and ye shall be clean: from all your filthiness, and from all your idols, will I cleanse you. A new heart also will I give you, and a new spirit will I put within you: and I will take away the stony heart out of your flesh, and I will give you an heart of flesh. And I will put my spirit within you, and cause you to walk in my statutes, and ye shall keep my judgments, and do *them.* And ye shall dwell in the land that I gave to your fathers; and ye shall be my people, and I will be your God. I will also save you from all your uncleannesses: and I will call for the corn, and will increase it, and lay no famine upon you. And I will multiply the fruit

of the tree, and the increase of the field, that ye shall receive no more reproach of famine among the heathen. Then shall ye remember your own evil ways, and your doings that *were* not good, and shall loathe yourselves in your own sight for your iniquities and for your abominations. Not for your sakes do I *this*, saith the Lord GOD, be it known unto you: be ashamed and confounded for your own ways, O house of Israel. Thus saith the Lord GOD; In the day that I shall have cleansed you from all your iniquities I will also cause *you* to dwell in the cities, and the wastes shall be builded. And the desolate land shall be tilled, whereas it lay desolate in the sight of all that passed by. And they shall say, This land that was desolate is become like the garden of Eden; and the waste and desolate and ruined cities *are become* fenced, and *are* inhabited. Then the heathen that are left round about you shall know that I the LORD build the ruined *places, and* plant that that was desolate: I the LORD have spoken *it,* and I will do *it.* Thus saith the Lord GOD; I will yet *for* this be enquired of by the house of Israel, to do *it* for them; I will increase them with men like a flock. As the holy flock, as the flock of Jerusalem in her solemn feasts; so shall the waste cities be filled with flocks of men: and they shall know that I *am* the LORD."

"*Golden Text*: 'A new heart also will I give you, and a new spirit will I put within you.' Ezek. 36:26

"In our last lesson we saw Judah in distress, her crown removed, her holy city and temple in ruins, and her people given to the sword and to captivity. The expostulations and warnings of the prophet Jeremiah had not availed to turn them from their evil course, and consequently the wrath of God was visited upon them, as it had been previously visited upon her sister Samaria (the ten tribes). But although multiplied were their iniquities and their crimes, the Lord did not utterly cast away his people, but in great mercy remembered them, even in the land of their captivity, where he was represented in their midst by the prophet Ezekiel, who for twenty-two years delivered unto them the Word of the Lord — words of reproof and denunciation, and also words of promise and hope, of which those of this lesson are a pleasing sample. As we pursue these words of promise and call to mind the miserable idolatries, licentiousness and ingratitude of this hard-hearted and stiff-necked people, let us not fail to mark the loving kindness of our God, his mercy and faithfulness, his slowness to anger and his plenteous grace. And while we do so, let us not forget the typical character of his dealings with Israel — that in chastising and correcting and forgiving and restoring and promising to bless and fully reinstate them to his favor, he is illustrating his great love and mercy and his everlasting kindness toward the whole world whom he so loved as to give his only begotten Son to

redeem, and whom he purposes in due time to bring to a knowledge of the truth and to a full opportunity, under the most favorable conditions, of securing everlasting life. 1 Tim. 2:4-6: 'Who will have all men to be saved, and to come unto the knowledge of the truth. For *there is* one God, and one mediator between God and men, the man Christ Jesus; Who gave himself a ransom for all, to be testified in due time.' The final restoration and blessing of Israel here predicted is only the first-fruits of that abundant grace which is in store for all the world, to be manifested in due time.

"This prophesy has not yet been fulfilled, but clearly relates to the final restoration of Israel to the land of promise and to the favor of God, when the long period of their chastisement unmixed with favor is ended, and when he who redeemed all and 'whose right it is' to reign over Israel and the world shall have come again and taken the dominion. Jer. 16:13-18: 'Therefore will I cast you out of this land into a land that ye know not, *neither* ye nor your fathers; and there shall ye serve other gods day and night; where I will not shew you favour. Therefore, behold, the days come, saith the LORD, that it shall no more be said, The LORD liveth, that brought up the children of Israel out of the land of Egypt; But, The LORD liveth, that brought up the children of Israel from the land of the north, and from all the lands whither he had driven them: and I will bring them again into their land that I gave unto their fathers. Behold, I will send for many fishers, saith the LORD, and they shall fish them; and after will I send for many hunters, and they shall hunt them from every mountain, and from every hill, and out of the holes of the rocks. For mine eyes *are* upon all their ways: they are not hid from my face, neither is their iniquity hid from mine eyes. And first I will recompense their iniquity and their sin double; because they have defiled my land, they have filled mine inheritance with the carcasses of their detestable and abominable things.'

"The words of the Prophet previous to the promises of blessing in this lesson recall the numerous sins of Israel as the cause for their dispersion among the heathen, and remind them of how they had brought disgrace upon the name of the Lord in all the countries whither they went, and that they have no claim upon the mercy and forbearance of God. But, not withstanding all this, he declares the Lord's purpose to gather them out from among the heathen, and out of all the countries, into their own land, and '*then*' to cleanse and bless them; and in this great exhibition of his forbearance and love to a notoriously stiffnecked and rebellious house, to exalt his great name among the nations — a name in which they as well as Israel, may safely trust, since the ample provisions of his plan are for the salvation of all, of whatever tribe or nation,

who trust and obey him when brought to the full knowledge of the truth. (verses 16-24) (Ezek. 36) 'Moreover the word of the LORD came unto me, saying, Son of man, when the house of Israel dwelt in their own land, they defiled it by their own way and by their doings: their way was before me as the uncleanness of a removed woman. Wherefore I poured my fury upon them for the blood that they had shed upon the land, and for their idols *wherewith* they had polluted it: And I scattered them among the heathen, and they were dispersed through the countries: according to their way and according to their doings I judged them. And when they entered

unto the heathen, whither they went, they profaned my holy name, when they said to them, These *are* the people of the LORD, and are gone forth out of his land. But I had pity for mine holy name, which the house of Israel had profaned among the heathen, whither they went. Therefore say unto the house of Israel, thus saith the Lord GOD; I do not *this* for your sakes, O house of Israel, but for mine holy name's sake, which ye have profaned among the heathen, whither ye went. And I will sanctify my great name, which was profaned among the heathen, which ye have profaned in the midst of them; and the heathen shall know that I *am* the LORD, saith the Lord GOD, when I shall be sanctified in you before their eyes. For I will take you from among the heathen, and gather you out of all countries, and will bring you *into your own land.'*

"Verse 24 — This unquestionably refers to the literal and final regathering of Israel to Palestine — the land which God promised to Abraham, saying, 'Lift up now thine eyes, and look from the place where thou art, northward, and southward, and eastward, and westward; for *all the land which thou seest to thee* will I give it and *to thy seed* forever.' (Gen. 13:14,15; 17:8) It is the land of which Stephen said (Acts 7:5) Abraham never owned a foot, but in the confident hope of which he died. Such a promise, made to Abraham, as well as to his seed, and made by God who cannot lie, and which Abraham never realized before he died, manifestly implies the resurrection of Abraham, as well as of that large proportion of his seed which has gone down into the grave, in order to the receiving of the land. Nor was 'the land' here used in a mythical sense: it was plainly — '*all the land which thou seest*,' and, as stated in Gen. 17:8, *'the land wherein thou art a stranger, all the land of Canaan.'*

"Such an interpretation of this promise is amply supported by the Prophet in the succeeding chapter (37:11-14), where he says, 'Thus saith the Lord Jehovah: Behold, O my people [Israel — verse 11], I will open your graves, and cause you to come up out of your graves, and bring you into the land of Israel. And ye shall know that I am Jehovah when I have opened your graves, O my people, and brought you up out of your graves, and shall put my spirit in you, and ye shall know that I Jehovah have spoken it and performed it saith

Jehovah.' It is also in perfect harmony with the words of Paul and of our Lord Jesus — 'There shall be a resurrection of the dead, both of the just and unjust.' 'Marvel not at this: for the hour is coming in the which *all that are in the graves* shall hear his voice [the voice of the Son of Man], and shall come forth; they that have done good, unto the resurrection of life; and they that have done evil, unto the resurrection of judgment' [trial]. Acts 24:15; John 5:28,29." *R1373:4,5,6*

"In that graphic picture of earthly resurrection furnished us in Ezekiel's prophecy (37:5-10, 13,14) the relationship of the body and the spirit of life, '**the breath**,' is clearly presented. It matters not that the prophet uses this merely as a **symbol**, it nevertheless shows (proves) that a human organism has no life until it receives the ***ruach*** — the breath of life — which, as elsewhere shown, is common to all animals, none of whom can live without it. Let us notice Ezekiel's statements very critically, as follows:

"...'I will cause **breath** [***ruach*** — spirit of life, life — energy] to enter into you, and ye shall live.'

"...'And I will...bring up flesh upon you, and cover you with skin, and put **breath** [***ruach*** — spirit of life, life — energy] in you, and ye shall live.'" *E316*

"'And when I beheld, lo the sinews and the flesh came upon them, and the skin covered them above: but there was no **breath** [***ruach*** — spirit of life, life-energy] in them.'

"...'And he said unto me Prophesy unto the **wind** [***ruach*** — spirit of life, life-energy — margin, breath] and say unto the **wind** [***ruach*** — spirit of life, breath of life], Thus saith the Lord God, Come from the four **winds** [***ruach***] **O breath** [***ruach*** — breath or spirit of life], and breathe upon these slain, that they may live.'

"...'So I prophesied as he commanded me, and **the breath** [***ruach*** — spirit of life, breath of life, living energy] came into them, and they lived.'

"...'And ye shall know that I am the Lord, when I have opened your graves, O my people, and brought you up out of your graves, and shall put my **spirit** [***ruach*** — spirit of life, breath of life] in you, and ye shall live.'" *E317*

ISRAEL'S DOUBLE

"Fleshly Israel, like Spiritual Israel, was called of God to be his peculiar people,...Recipients of special favor...for eighteen hundred and forty-five (1845) years...began with...national life, at death of Jacob...called 'The Twelve Tribes of Israel,' Gen. 49:28: 'All these *are* the twelve tribes of Israel: and this *is it* that their father spake unto them, and blessed them; every one according to his blessing he blessed them.' Gen. 46:3: 'And he said, I *am* God, the God of

thy father: fear not to go down into Egypt; for I will there make of thee a great nation.'..." *B213*

DEUT. 26:5: "'And thou shalt speak and say before the LORD thy God, A Syrian ready to perish *was* my father, and he went down into Egypt, and sojourned there with a few, and became there a nation, great, mighty, and populous:'...Favor ended with their rejection of Messiah — A.D.33 — when five days before his crucifixion...'Your house is left unto you desolate.' Matt. 23:38" *B213*

"Through the prophet Jeremiah...The Lord says: 'Therefore will I cast you out of this land...'" *B216*

JER. 16:9-13: "For thus saith the LORD of hosts, the God of Israel; Behold, I will cause to cease out of this place in your eyes, and in your days, the voice of mirth, and the voice of gladness, the voice of the bridegroom, and the voice of the bride. And it shall come to pass, when thou shalt shew this people all these words, and they shall say unto thee, Wherefore hath the LORD pronounced all this great evil against us? or what *is* our iniquity? or what *is* our sin that we have committed against the LORD our God? Then shalt thou say unto them, Because your fathers have forsaken me, saith the LORD, and have walked after other gods, and have served them, and have worshipped them, and have forsaken me, and have not kept my law; And ye have done worse than your fathers; for, behold, ye walk every one after the imagination of his evil heart, that they may not hearken unto me: Therefore will I cast you out of this land..."

"But though he cast them off from favor for a while, God will not leave them cast off forever, but says Jer. 16: 13-15..." *B217*

JER. 16:13-15: "Therefore will I cast you out of this land into a land that ye know not, *neither* ye nor your fathers; and there shall ye serve other gods day and night; where I will not shew you favour. Therefore, behold, the days come, saith the LORD, that it shall no more be said, The LORD liveth, that brought up the

children of Israel out of the land of Egypt; But, The LORD liveth, that brought up the children of Israel from the land of the north, and from all the lands whither he had driven them: and I will bring them again into their land that I gave unto their fathers."

"Among...references to this favor to be restored to Israel...James, Acts 15:14-16: 'Simeon hath declared how God at the first did visit the Gentiles, to take out of them a people for his name. And to this agree the words of the prophets; as it is written, After this I will return, and will build again the tabernacle of David, which is fallen down; and I will build again the ruins thereof, and I will set it up:'... Rom. 11:26: 'And so all Israel shall be saved: as it is written, There shall come out of Sion the Deliverer, and

shall turn away ungodliness from Jacob.' But first, they must drink the very last dregs of their chastisement;...as expressed...Jer. 16:18: 'And first I will recompense their iniquity and their sin double; because they have defiled my land, they have filled mine inheritance with the carcasses of their detestable and abominable things.'" *B217*

"Period of their favor...eighteen hundred and forty-five (1845) years, and there their 'double' (*mishneh*) — the repetition or duplication of the same length of time, eighteen hundred and forty-five (1845) years without favor — began. Eighteen hundred and forty-five years since A.D. 33 shows A.D. 1878 to be the end of their...disfavor." *B218*

"This we do find...Jew...permitted privileges in Palestine....It was in that very year — 1878 A.D.,...'Berlin Congress of Nations' was held, in which Lord Beaconsfield was the central figure..." *B218*

See Also: *R5817* — "God's Mercy to Israel and to Others;" *R1378* — "Comfort Ye My People"

"The nation of Israel is temporarily cut off from Divine protection...until the full number from the Gentiles shall have been brought into spiritual Israel. Then all Israel will be recovered from their blindness and their alienation from God, as it is written: 'This is my Covenant with them when I shall take away their sins.' Romans 11:26-32

"The only people or nation now in covenant relationship with God, according to the Bible is Spiritual Israel..." *R5626:6*

MOSES THE MEDIATOR OF

THE LAW COVENANT

"The Israelites were commanded to celebrate this Passover as the first feature of the Jewish Law and as one of their greatest memorials as a nation." *R5640:4*

"The Law Covenant instituted at Mount Sinai was not made with Moses, but with the People of Israel, as Moses declared...

"'And Moses called all Israel, and said unto them, Here, O Israel, the statutes and judgments which I speak in your ears this day...The Lord our God made a covenant with us in Horeb. The Lord made not; this Covenant with our fathers, but with us, *even us* , who *are* all of us here alive this day.' Deut. 5:1-3." *R4999:3*

"Moses took bulls and goats...used the blood for the sprinkling of the Tables of the Law,...and then he sprinkled the people..." *R5000:1*

"During the entire thousand years of the reign of Christ upon His mediatorial Throne the work of sprinkling the people...At the close of the thousand years, when all the

people shall have been sprinkled — the Mediatorial Kingdom will come to an end; Through all eternity it will be true that Jesus was the Mediator of that Covenant, but his Mediatorial office will not continue." *R5000:2,4*

"So it was in the case of Moses: The Law Covenant which he mediated was binding both upon God and Israel for a time whether Moses lived or died. Long after his death it was still spoken of as the Mosaic Law Covenant and Moses was referred to as the one who mediated that Covenant." *R5000:4*

"End of the Atonement Day, after Aaron ...applied its blood on behalf of all the people, then,...was accompanied by Moses, the Mediator, to the altar. Thus we read: Moses and Aaron went into the tabernacle of the congregation, and came out, and blessed the people...Lev. 9:23." *R4504:4*

"Question — How long was Moses a mediator?

"Answer — Moses is mediator of the law covenant as long as the law covenant is in effect. Moses is mediator of the Law covenant today. It had no other mediator. That mediation which he accomplished has stood good all the way down. Just the same as if the Secretary of State should enter into a treaty between the United States and Great Britain, how long would he be the one who executed that treaty? Just as long as that treaty stood, he would be the one who executed that treaty. And so Moses is still the mediator, or the one who brought into effect that law covenant between God and Israel. The law covenant is still in force, and Moses is, therefore, still the mediator of that law covenant, even though he is dead. This is the same thought that our Lord gave, you remember, when he said, 'Even to this day when Moses is dead,' etc. Then again, you remember he said that the Scribes and Pharisees sit in Moses' seat. Moses still had his seat as mediator of the law covenant, and he was represented by those who came afterwards and who stood for and represented that order of things." *Q498*

THE FULFILLMENT OF

TIME-PROPHECY AT THE FIRST ADVENT OF CHRIST

(The Seventy Weeks of Daniel's Prophecy)

DAN. 9:23-27: "At the beginning of thy supplications the commandment came forth, and I am come to shew *thee*; for thou *art* greatly beloved: therefore understand the matter, and consider the vision. Seventy weeks are determined upon thy people and upon thy holy city, to finish the transgression, and to make an end of sins, and to make reconciliation for iniquity, and to bring in everlasting righteousness, and to seal up the vision and prophecy, and to anoint the most Holy. Know therefore and understand,

that from the going forth of the commandment to restore and to build Jerusalem unto the Messiah the Prince *shall* be seven weeks, and threescore and two weeks: the street shall be built again, and the wall, even in troublous times. And after threescore and two weeks shall Messiah be cut off, but not for himself: and the people of the prince that shall come shall destroy the city and the sanctuary; and the end thereof *shall be* with a flood, and unto the end of the war desolations are determined. And he shall confirm the covenant with many for one week: and in the midst of the week he shall cause the sacrifice and the oblation to cease, and for the overspreading of abominations he shall make it desolate, even until the consummation, and that determined shall be poured upon the desolate."

"Many prophecies...confirm the date of the second coming of

Christ, this one alone marked the date of the first advent." *B64*

"...sixty-nine symbolic weeks, or four hundred and eighty-three years reach **unto Messiah the Prince**, and not to the birth of Jesus...prophecy was fulfilled which says: 'From the going forth of the commandment to restore and to build Jerusalem (Dan. 9:25) unto Messiah (the Anointed) the Prince, shall be seven weeks and three-score and two (sixty-nine) weeks...a year for a day.'" *B66*

"...which would give B.C. 454 as the true date of Nehemiah's commission." *B67*

"Since...four hundred and eighty-three years, reach unto Messiah...we deduct (454) years B.C. as the true date of the decree to restore and to build Jerusalem; and the remainder — 29 A.D. — should be the year in which the Anointed (Messiah) would be manifested...that Jesus was baptized by John and received the Anointing of the spirit A.D. 29." *B67*

"Our Lord's ministry covered **three and a half years**, ending with his crucifixion...A.D. 33. In this he exactly fulfilled the prophecy concerning the remaining or last week (seven years of promised favor which says: '**After** [7 and 62] sixty-nine weeks shall Messiah be cut off [*Douay* translation, "be slain"] but not for himself' — 'in the midst of the week [remaining — the 70th] he shall cause the sacrifice and oblation to cease.'" *B68*

"Fleshly Israel, like Spiritual Israel, was called of God to be his peculiar people, a peculiar treasure unto him above all other people (the one an earthly treasure, and a type of the other, which is a heavenly treasure). Separated from the world, they were the recipients of special favor from God for eighteen hundred and forty-five (1845) years. This period began with the beginning of their **national life**, at the death of Jacob, the last of the patriarchs, when they were first recognized as a nation, and called 'The Twelve Tribes of Israel,' a national name. See Gen. 49:28; 46:3; Deut. 26:5.

These eighteen hundred and forty-five years of national life and favor ended with their rejection of Messiah — A.D. 33 — when, five days before his crucifixion, he presented himself to them as their king, and, not being received, declared, '**Your house is left unto you desolate**.' (Matt.23:38) This, the end of their favor, was the point of their fall, which continued for thirty-seven (37) years, and ended A.D. 70 in the total destruction of their national polity, as well as of their city, temple, etc. It should be noted, however, that God continued his favor to individuals of that nation, after the nation, as a nation, had been cut off; for the gospel call was **confined** to individuals of that nation for three and a half years after Pentecost, after the death of Christ — not reaching Cornelius, the first Gentile so favored (Acts 10), until that time. This was the full end of the seventy weeks of favor promised through Daniel, as it had been written, 'He shall confirm the covenant with many for one week.' That seventieth week of years began at our Lord's baptism; his cross, as predicted, marked its middle; and favor was confined to Fleshly Israel until its close." *B213*

"TO MAKE AN END OF SINS"

"A brother inquires how he shall answer those who claim that Daniel 9:24 teaches that our Lord Jesus made an end of sin at his first advent and that therefore the church could not share with him in his antitypical or 'better sacrifices' for sin.

"The passage refers to the 70 weeks of Israel's favor, the 69th of which reached to our Lord's baptism at Jordan, and the 70th, beginning there, reached to 3 years beyond the cross — our Lord's death marking the middle of that 70th week (v. 27), and the acceptance of Cornelius by the holy Spirit marking its end. A number of things were to be accomplished before the termination of those 70 symbolical weeks — 490 years. We therefore should inquire: In what sense were all of these fulfilled? In what sense were transgressions finished at that time? Were there no more after the close of the 70th week? Are there none now? 'Everlasting righteousness' was to be brought in. Does 'everlasting righteousness' prevail throughout the whole earth, or has it at any time prevailed either during or since the 70 weeks of Israel's favor? The same query would be applicable to the making 'an end of sins.' Have sins come to an end? Are there no more sins? And in what sense did sins come to an end at any time during the 70 weeks? 'Reconciliation for iniquity;' was to be made. Are we sure that all iniquities were reconciled for at that time? What proof have we to that effect, since the Scriptures do not so say? These questions suggest their own answers.

"We still hold that the sense of this prophecy is that before those 70 symbolical weeks — 490 years — would end,

long-looked for important events would begin to have their fulfillment — not to the world, nor yet to nominal Israel, but to 'thy people.' For 'Israelites indeed' these blessings were provided and foretold — others to be blessed in due time. Those loyal to the Lord like Daniel were specially 'thy people' — the most holy of verse 24. 'Israelites indeed' who accepted God's mercy were the 'most holy,' who were anointed by the holy Spirit at Pentecost. To them and all of their class since, the incidents of that time sealed or made positive the prophetic utterances of the past, and confirmed the visions of coming glory declared by the prophets. In Christ and his redemptive work believers realized the beginning of God's blessing for humanity.

"To this class applied the 'reconciliation for iniquity' which our Lord Jesus made at the heavenly Mercy Seat, when 'he ascended up on high, there to appear in the presence of God for us.' The iniquities of the church were thus cancelled. The reconciliation of believers was thus effected. But the reconciliation went no further than believers; unbelievers are still unreconciled. The great Redeemer did not appear as their Advocate or make reconciliation for their iniquities. We are glad, however, that he will begin a reconciling work for them at a later time, as shown by other Scriptures. To those whose iniquities were thus reconciled for by our Redeemer's sacrifice there was an end of their sins — they were no longer under condemnation. The offense was by one man unto condemnation, but a free gift of God through Jesus effects for 'Israelites indeed' the forgiveness of many transgressions. (Rom. 5:12-19) Moreover, transgression was finished so far as these were concerned; because since then it is possible for these to abide in divine favor to keep the Law blamelessly — as the Apostle declares, 'The righteousness of the Law is fulfilled in us, who are walking not after the flesh, but after the spirit.' (Rom. 8:4; Gal. 5:14) The work of redemption and reconciliation effected opened to every Jew an opportunity for release from bondage to the Law by becoming dead with Christ; and likewise the close of that 70th week opened the secondary door of divine favor to the Gentiles.

"We see nothing whatever in this Scripture to contradict the plain statement of other Scriptures, to the effect that our Lord's great work of reconciliation is divided into two parts — the first for the church and the second for the world. As we read, 'He is a

propitiation (satisfaction for our sins [the church's sins] and not for ours only, but also [additionally and subsequently] for the sins of the whole world.' Full satisfaction was in our Lord's sacrifice. It merely waits to be offered. It is nearly nineteen centuries since the first application for the church. This use of the Lord's merit will soon be accomplished — and that merit (passed through the church) will again be in the hands of

the great High Priest to be used on behalf of the sins of the whole world." *R4504:2,3,5,6*

HISTORY OF THE MODERN NATION

LANDS AND PEOPLE — GROLIER, INC. N.Y. VOLUME 2 PAGES 222, 223 Palestine and Great Britain

"During World War 1, Great Britain, which was fighting the Turks, attempted to rally worldwide Jewish support for its cause. It organized special Jewish units to fight in Palestine and issued the Balfour Declaration. This letter from Arthur James Balfour (later Lord Balfour), the British Foreign Secretary, to Lord Rothschild. The letter stated that the British Government would assist in the establishment 'of a national home for the Jewish people' in Palestine, provided it would not prejudice 'civil and religious rights of existing non-Jewish communities...or the... status, enjoyed by Jews' in other countries.

"After Allied victory and the collapse of the Ottoman Empire at the end of World War 1, Palestine became a British mandate. Terms of British control over Palestine included implementing the Balfour Declaration. The British governors of the country, however, soon became involved in the growing conflict between Zionist aspirations and demands of the Arabs for independence. Attempts to find a compromise or to bridge the gap between the two groups failed. During the interval between the wars, the Arabs waged a civil war against the British and against Zionist settlements in the country.

"Despite opposition by Arab nationalists the Jewish community in Palestine grew rapidly, especially after the arrival of over 200,000 refugees from Hitler's persecution in the l930's. Their number increased until by 1946 Jews were one third (over 600,000) of the total population. Schools, farms hospitals, factories, and all the necessary institutions and establishments for an independent government were developed.

"6,000,000 Jews (one third of the world's total) had been murdered in concentration camps by the Nazis, Zionist demands for independence became stronger. After several attacks against the British by Jewish underground groups, the British Government presented the Palestine problem to the United Nations, which recommended partition.

"Arab nationalists, insisting on self- determination, refused to accept partition, and again war raged through the country. On May 14, 1948, as the last British troops were about to leave, the Jewish leaders of Palestine declared their independence and established the State of Israel. Within hours, armies from the neighboring Arab nations joined the Palestinian Arabs in a war against the new

Jewish state. In the fighting, Jordan (then known as Transjordan) annexed the west bank of the Jordan River and the Old City of Jerusalem.

"Israel Since Independence"

"After the Arab armies were defeated, Egypt, Lebanon, Syria and Jordan signed armistice agreements with Israel, bringing hostilities to a halt in 1949. But Arab states have declared their continuing hostility, refusing to negotiate a peace settlement with Israel. One of the obstacles to peace has been the situation of the Arabs who became refugees during the fighting. The Arab countries have insisted that they be allowed to return to Israel. The Israelis contend that the refugee problem must be part of an over-all peace plan.

"In 1956 a second war broke out after Egypt announced nationalization of the Suez Canal, refused Israel passage through the canal, and blockaded the Straits of Tiran. In the 1956 war Israel was joined by Great Britain and France. Although Egypt was defeated, the Israeli, French and British troops were ordered by the United Nations to withdraw from the occupied territory. Egypt continued to refuse Israel passage through the Suez Canal, although passage through the Straits of Tiran continued, with United Nations troops stationed at the straits. A United Nations peace-keeping force also was stationed in the Sinai.

"The years that followed were marked by unceasing clashes and incidents along Israel's frontiers with Egypt, Jordan, and Syria. (The Lebanese frontier was relatively quiet.) In 1967 war broke out once more. At Egyptian insistence the United Nations forces had been withdrawn; the blockade of the Straits of Tiran was re-imposed; and Egyptian soldiers and tanks moved into the Sinai following the departure of the United Nations troops. Reacting to this and to continued threats, Israel attacked Egypt, again invading the Gaza Strip and Sinai. Egypt was immediately joined by Jordan and Syria. Within 6 days all three countries were defeated and large parts of their territory were occupied.

"The United Nations Security Council called upon Israel to withdraw from the occupied areas and on both sides to end 'all claims or states of belligerency' and to respect and acknowledge the 'sovereignty, territorial integrity and political independence of every State in the area and their right to live in peace within secure and recognized boundaries free from threats or acts of force.' Israel has refused to withdraw from the occupied territories, however, unless the Arab states enter direct peace negotiations to bring the hostilities to a final halt."

Facts About Israel Published by the Ministry of Information, Jerusalem Israel: The First Twenty-five Years DECLARATION OF THE ESTABLISHMENT OF THE STATE OF ISRAEL * 14 MAY 1948

*Published in the Official Gazette, No.1 of the 5th lyar, 5708 (14th May, 1948).

"Eretz-Israel (Hebrew — the land of Israel, Palestine) was the birthplace of the Jewish people. Here their spiritual, religious and political identity was shaped. Here they first attained to statehood, created cultural values of national and universal significance and gave to the world the eternal book of books.

"After being forcibly exiled from their land, the people kept faith with it throughout their dispersion and never ceased to pray and hope for their return to it and for the restoration in it of their political freedom.

"Impelled by this historic and traditional attachment, Jews strove in every successive generation to re-establish themselves in their ancient homeland. In recent decades they returned in their masses.

Pioneers, ma'apilim (Hebrew — immigrants coming to Eretz-Israel in defiance of restrictive legislation.) and defenders, they made deserts bloom, revived the Hebrew language, built villages and towns, and created a thriving community, controlling its own economy and culture, loving peace but knowing how to defend itself, bringing the blessings of progress to all the country's inhabitants, and aspiring towards independent nationhood.

"In the year 5657 (1897), at the summons of the spiritual father of the Jewish state, Theodor Herzl, the first Zionist congress convened and proclaimed the right of the Jewish people to national rebirth in its own country.

"This right was recognized in the Balfour Declaration of the 2nd November, 1917, and re-affirmed in the mandate of the League of Nations which, in particular, gave international sanction to the historic connection between the Jewish people and Eretz-Israel and to the right of the Jewish people to rebuild its national home.

"The catastrophe which recently befell the Jewish people — the massacre of millions of Jews in Europe — was another clear demonstration of the urgency of solving the problem of its homelessness by re-establishing in Eretz-Israel the Jewish state, which would open the gates of the homeland wide to every Jew and confer upon the Jewish people the status of a fully-privileged member of the comity of nations.

"Survivors of the Nazi holocaust in Europe, as well as Jews from other parts of the world, continued to migrate to Eretz-Israel, undaunted by difficulties, restrictions and

dangers, and never ceased to assert their right to a life of dignity, freedom and honest toil in their national homeland.

"In the Second World War, the Jewish community of this country contributed its full share to the struggle of the freedom-and peace-loving nations against the forces of Nazi wickedness and, by the blood of its soldiers and its war effort, gained the right to be reckoned among the peoples who founded the United Nations.

"On the 29th November, 1947, the United Nations General Assembly passed a resolution calling for the establishment of a Jewish state in Eretz-Israel; The General Assembly required the inhabitants of Eretz-Israel to take such steps as were necessary on their part for the implementation of that resolution. This recognition by the United Nations of the right of the Jewish people to establish their state is irrevocable.

"This right is the natural right of the Jewish people to be masters of their own fate, like all other nations, in their own sovereign state.

"Accordingly we, members of the people's council, representatives of the Jewish community of Eretz-Israel and of the Zionist movement, are here assembled on the day of termination of the British mandate over Eretz-Israel and, by virtue of our natural and historic right and on the strength of the resolution of the United Nations General Assembly, hereby declare the establishment of a Jewish state in Eretz-Israel, to be known as the State of Israel.

"We declare that, with effect from the moment of the termination of the mandate, being tonight, the eve of Sabbath, the 6th lyar, 5708 (15th May, 1948), until the establishment of the elected, regular authorities of the state in accordance with the constitution which shall be adopted by the elected constituent assembly not later than the 1st October 1948, the people's council shall act as a provisional council of state, and its executive organ, the people's administration, shall be the provisional government of the Jewish state, to be called 'Israel.'

"The state of Israel will be open for Jewish immigration and for the ingathering of the exiles; it will foster the development of the country for the benefit of all its inhabitants; it will be based on freedom, justice and peace as envisaged by the prophets of Israel; it will ensure complete equality of social and political rights to all its inhabitants irrespective of religion, race or sex; it will guarantee freedom of religion, conscience, language, education and culture; it will safeguard the holy places of all religions; and it will be faithful to the principles of the charter of the United Nations.

"The State of Israel is prepared to cooperate with the agencies and representatives of the United Nations in

implementing the resolution of the General Assembly of the 29th November, 1947, and will take steps to bring about the economic union of the whole of Eretz-Israel.

"We appeal to the United Nations to assist the Jewish people in the building-up of its state and to receive the State of Israel into the comity of nations.

"We appeal — in the very midst of the onslaught launched against us now for months — to the Arab inhabitants of the State of Israel to preserve peace and participate in the upbuilding of the state on the basis of full and equal citizenship and due representation in all its provisional and permanent institutions.

"We extend our hand to all neighboring states and their peoples in an offer of peace and good neighbourliness, and appeal to them to establish bonds of cooperation and mutual help with the sovereign Jewish people settled in its own land. The State of Israel is prepared to do its share in a common effort for the advancement of the entire middle east.

"We appeal to the Jewish people throughout the diaspora to rally round the Jews of Eretz-Israel in the tasks of immigration and upbuilding and to stand by them in the great struggle for the realization of the age-old dream — the redemption of Israel.

"Placing our trust in the Almighty, we affix our signatures to this proclamation at this session of the provisional council of state, on the soil of the homeland, in the city of Tel Aviv, on this Sabbath eve, the 5th day of lyar, 5708 (14th May, 1948).

"Daniel Auster Zvi Luria Mordekhai Bentov Golda Myerson Yitzchak Ben Zvi Nachum Nir Eliyahu Berligne Zvi Segal Fritz Bernstein RabbiYehuda Leib Rabbi Wolf Gold Hacohen Fishman Meir Grabovsky David Zvi Pinkas Yitzchak Gruenbaum Aharon Zisling Dr. Abraham Granovsky Moshe Kolodny Eliyahu Dobkin Eliezer Kaplan Meir Wilner-Kovner Abraham Katznelson Zerach Wahrhaftig Felix Rosenblueth Herzl Vardi David Remez David Ben-Gurion Berl Repetur Rachel Cohen Mordekhai Shattner Rabbi Kalman Kahana Ben Zion Sternberg Saadia Kobashi Bekhor Shitreet Rabbi Yitzchak Meir Levin Moshe Shapira Meir David Loewenstein Moshe Shertok"

THE BALFOUR DECLARATION

The following is the first page from the book entitled:

THE BALFOUR DECLARATION, by Leonard Stein

published by Simon and Schuster, New York

Foreign Office

November 2nd, 1917

"Dear Lord Rothschild,

"I have much pleasure in conveying to you on behalf of his Majesty's Government, the following declaration of sympathy with Jewish Zionist aspirations which has been submitted to and approved by the Cabinet.

"His Majesty's Government view with favor the establishment in Palestine of a national home for the Jewish people, and will use their best endeavours to facilitate the achievement of this object, it being clearly understood that nothing shall be done which may prejudice the civil and religious rights of existing non-Jewish communities in Palestine, or the rights and political status enjoyed by Jews in any other country."

"I should be grateful if you would bring this declaration to the knowledge of the Zionist Federation.

Yours sincerely,

Arthur James Balfour

"(copy of this letter, with Mr. Balfour's signature, is attached)"

LEADING UP TO THE BALFOUR DECLARATION

The following quotes are from the book entitled:

THE BALFOUR DECLARATION, By Leonard Stein

published by Simon and Schuster, New York-

"Brandeis first began to interest himself in Zionism in 1910." *pg. 194*

"In 1916, when President Wilson having nominated Brandeis to fill a vacancy in the Supreme Court encountered some opposition in the Senate, he wrote in support of the appointment: I have known him. I have tested him by seeking his advice upon some of the most difficult and perplexing public questions..." *pg. 195*

"April 8, 1917, Dr. Chaim Weizmann wrote to Brandeis in (Washington, Zionist secretary at the time) about his encouraging interviews with Balfour..." *pg. 423*

"Balfour had arrived in Washington April 22nd, l917, and Brandeis had been introduced to him soon afterwards at a White House luncheon..." *pg 427*

"The essential contributions of the talks between Brandeis (Zionist secretary at the time) and Balfour in Washington,

were the powerful impression left on Balfour's mind of the ethical purposes and practicalities of Zionism and the popular strength among Jewry in America of the desire for the **Jewish Homeland** ...Balfour was powerfully struck with the intellectual and moral distinction of Brandeis...Brandeis, on his side, was equally won by Balfour. He was struck with Balfour's keen understanding of the **Jewish Problem** and said that the whole long discussion with Balfour was pithily summed up by Balfour's quietly emphatic remark: 'I AM A ZIONIST.'" *pg. 428*

"At the end of September l917, when, after an abortive discussion in the War Cabinet earlier in the month, the question of a declaration in **favor of Zionism** had been shelved, Lloyd George (Prime Minister) personally gave instructions for it to be restored to the agenda for early consideration...Lloyd George, Prime Minister, like Balfour was..., 'immovable.'" *pg. 144*

"Lloyd George's personal interest in the Balfour Declaration...was his determination that...France will have to accept our protectorate; we shall be there by conquest and shall remain." *pg. 145*

From the book:

CROSSROADS TO ISRAEL 1917 – 1948

by Christopher Sykes

"Arab delegation...Moslem Christian Association...came to see him (Mr. Churchill) ...They asked him to rescind the Balfour Declaration...Three and a half years after the Declaration...He replied 'this is not in my power, and it is not my wish.' He enlarged on the right of the Jews to national center within their ancient homeland...

"Examine Mr. Balfour's careful words, Palestine to be 'a national home' not 'the national home,' Establishment of a national home does not mean a Jewish Government to dominate the Arabs." *pgs 49, 50*

JEWISH STATE

From the book:

ENCYCLOPEDIA BRITANNICA, under the sub-heading

FULFILLMENT OF A HISTORIC IDEAL

"Following U.N. partition of Palestine, Israel emerged on May 15, 1948. It was the first Jewish State to be established in nearly 2,000 years. Its creation represents a fulfillment of the historic national ideal of the Jewish people stemming from the traditional religious belief in God's promise of the land of Israel to the people of Israel. The establishment of Israel as an internationally recognized member of the family of nations signified a decisive step in modern Jewish history." *pg. 1059*

From the book:

THE WORLD BOOK, under the sub-heading

INDEPENDENCE

"On November 29, 1947, the U.N. voted to end British control of Palestine and divide the country into a Jewish State and an Arab State. The Jews agreed to the U.N.'s plan, but the Arabs wanted all Palestine to be an Arab State. Nearly all Arab countries prepared to crush the Jewish nation." *pg. 392*

"Israel came into existence on May 14, 1948, under leadership of David Ben-Gurion. British control officially ended that night. The next day, Israel was attacked by five Arab nations." *pg. 392*

HATRED OF THE JEWS

"Benjamin Disraeli, better known as Lord Beaconsfield, wrote a political biography which is attracting considerable attention. Goldwin Smith thus refers to it:

"It is natural that in the course of this political biography Disraeli, who had witnessed the exclusion of Jews from the House of Commons and who had found and was still finding his own Israelite descent an almost insuperable bar to advancement, should diverge for a moment from the main current of his narration to consider the grounds of the disabilities to which the Hebrew race had been so long subjected in Christian Europe. He begins by reminding us that the Saxon, the Slav and the Celt have adopted most of the laws and many of the customs of the Jews, together with all the latter's literature and all their religion. The former are, therefore, indebted to the Israelites for much that regulates, much that charms and much that solaces existence. The toiling multitude rest every seventh day by virtue of a Jewish law; they are perpetually reading, that they may be taught by example, the records of Jewish history; they are continually singing the odes and elegies of Jewish poets; and they daily acknowledge on their knees with reverent gratitude that the only medium of communication between the Creator and themselves is the Jewish religion. Yet, at

the hour when Disraeli wrote, the Saxon, the Slav and the Celt were accustomed to treat that race as the vilest of generations; and, instead of looking upon them logically as the channel of human happiness, they were accustomed to inflict upon them every term of obloquy and every form of persecution. Had it not been for the Jews of Palestine the good tidings of our Lord would have been unknown forever to the northern and western races. The first preachers of the Gospel were Jews, no others; the historians of the Gospel were Jews, no others. No human being has ever been permitted to write under the inspiration of the holy Spirit except a Jew. 'They nursed the sacred flame of which they were the consecrated and hereditary depositories. When the time was ripe to diffuse the truth among the Gentiles it was not a senator of Rome

nor a philosopher of Athens who was personally appointed by our Lord for that office, but a Jew of Tarsus, who founded the seven churches of Asia. That greater church, great even amid its terrible corruptions, that has avenged the victory of Titus by subjugating the capital of the Caesars and has changed every one of the Olympian temples into altars of the God of Sinai and of Calvary, was founded by another Jew, a Jew of Galilee.' From all which Disraeli concludes that the dispersion of the Jewish race, preceding as it did for ages the advent of our Lord, could not be for conduct which occurred subsequent to his nativity, and that they are also guiltless of that subsequent conduct which has been imputed to them as a crime, since for him and his blessed name they preached and wrote and shed their blood, 'as witnesses.'

"Disraeli says: 'The creative genius of Israel, on the contrary, never shone so bright; and when the Russian, the Frenchman and the Anglo-Saxon, amid applauding theaters or the choral voices of solemn temples, yield themselves to the full spell of a Mozart or a Mendelssohn, it seems difficult to comprehend how these races can reconcile it to their hearts to persecute a Jew. In the course of the same remarkable chapter Disraeli refers to the futility of persecution in the case of the Jew. 'Egyptian Pharaohs, Assyrian kings, Roman emperors, Scandinavian crusaders, Gothic princes and holy inquisitors have alike devoted their energies to the fulfillment of this common purpose. Expatriation, exile, captivity, confiscation, torture on the most ingenious and massacre on the most extensive scale, and a curious system of degrading customs and debasing laws which would have broken the heart of any other people have been tried, and in vain! The Jews, after all this havoc, are probably more numerous at this date than they were during the reign of Solomon the Wise, are found in all lands, and prospering in most. All which proves that it is in vain for man to attempt to baffle the inexorable law of nature, which has decreed that a superior race shall never be destroyed or absorbed by an inferior.' Disraeli adds that all the tendencies of the Jewish race are conservative. The bias of the Jews is toward religion, property and natural aristocracy. For which reason Disraeli pronounces it for the interest of statesmen that this bias of a great race should be encouraged and their energies and creative powers enlisted in the cause of the existing social orders." *Watchword. R3881-2:6,1,2*

CROSSROADS TO ISRAEL 1917 –1948

by Christopher Sykes

Code:

UNSCOP — United Nations Special Committee Palestine

UNO — United Nations Organization

"UNSCOP produced their recommendations on the 1st of September 1947. Their plan was a fantastic partition scheme...by allotting most of the Negev to the Jewish State...gave them the Arab town of Jaffa." *pg. 323*

"The inclusion of Negev with town of Beersheba,....vanished from the scene. The 'fighting serpents scheme'...on 26th of September, Mr. Creech Jones (special committee in Palestine) made clear it was not approved by his government, that Britain would not impose it by force...'in the absence of a settlement (British Government) had to plan for an early withdrawal of British forces and of the British administration from Palestine.' " *pg. 324*

"UNSCOP partition scheme finally passed by General Assembly of UNO at end of November 1947, reduced the proposed Jewish State by approximately 500 square miles and subtracted the town of Beersheba from the Jewish Negev area. Very surprisingly the Jewish negotiators accepted even this hard condition." *pg. 325*

"On 11th December 1947, Mr. Creech Jones announced in House of Commons the date when the Palestine mandate would be terminated, the 15th of May 1948." *pg. 336*

"He (President Truman)...met Weizmann once in November l947,...was fascinated by his personality. The U.S. Government planned to accept the UNSCOP...with the subtraction of the Negev from the Jewish area. Weizmann persuaded Mr. Truman...would deprive the Jews of a Red Sea port it would place them at a grave disadvantage...Was a considerable achievement for Zionism, but in his old age Weizmann was soon to render another remarkable service to his people." *pg 345*

"1947 — 1948 — Zionist propagandists...again overplaying their hand. As a result they were rapidly losing the sympathy of Mr. Truman. 'I do not think...I ever had so much pressure and propaganda aimed at the White House.'...'I put off seeing Dr. Chaim Weizmann who returned to the United States for an interview with me.'" *pg. 346*

"Dr. Weizmann returned to the United States...and from the Waldorf Astoria Hotel he witnessed with dismay the signs of an American retreat from partition. In vain he tried to see the President...Then on the 14th of March, a most extraordinary event occurred. A man called Eddie Jacobson, a non-Zionist Kansas Jew, called on Dr. Weizmann. Mr. Jacobson had known President Truman since...the First World War, and had afterward been his partner in an unsuccessful clothing store. In spite...he was not a Zionist, Mr. Jacobson had a boundless admiration for Dr. Weizmann whom he had never seen. Hearing from a Jewish friend of the anxieties of Jewish Leaders in America and irritation of the President, he sent a telegram to Mr.

Truman asking him to receive Dr. Weizmann...Reply was vague. Thereupon Mr. Jacobson went to Washington... called on Mr. Truman on the plea of personal business. When Mr. Jacobson told him his real intention the President was not pleased. He explained coldly that he respected Dr. Weizmann but that meeting 'would only result in more wrong interpretation.'" *pg. 346*

"Mr. Jacobson then played his masterstroke. He nodded to a statuette of Andrew Jackson that was in the room, and addressed Andrew Jackson's successor as follows:

"He's been your hero all your life, hasn't he? You have probably read every book there is on Jackson. I remember when we had the Store that you were always reading books and pamphlets and a lot of them were about Jackson. You have put his statute in front of the Jackson County Court House in Kansas City when you built it.

I have never met the man who has been my hero all my life, but I have studied his past like you have studied Jackson's. He is the greatest Jew alive, perhaps the greatest Jew who ever lived. You yourself have told me that he is a great statesman and a fine gentleman. He is an old man and a very sick man. He has traveled thousands of miles to see you, and now you put off seeing him. That isn't like you." *pg. 347*

"...this utterance was followed by a long silence during which the President looked out of the window. Then he turned to Mr. Jacobson and said 'all right, you bold headed son of a b., you win. Tell the (Appointment Secretary) to invite Dr. Weizmann here...18th of March.'" *pg. 347*

"The meeting was secret and described thus by Mr. Truman:

"We talked...three-fourths of an hour. He talked about the possibilities of development in Palestine, about the scientific work that he and his assistants had done that would sometime be translated into industrial activity in the Jewish State that he envisaged. He spoke for the need for land if the future immigrants were to be cared for, and he impressed on me the importance for any Jewish State of the Negev area in the south...

"I told him as plainly as I could, why I had at first put off seeing him. He understood. I explained to him what the basis of my interest in the Jewish problem was and that my primary concern was to see justice done without bloodshed. And when he left my office I felt that he had reached a full understanding of my policy and that I knew what it was he wanted." *pg. 347*

"On the morning of the 20th, the President was thrown into a state of agitation when he read the news of what happened at Lake Success. He asked his administrative Assistant: How could this have happened? I assured Chaim

Weizmann that we were for partition and would stick to it. He must think I am a plain liar. In this...he was wrong. Dr. Weizmann had no doubt...that Mr. Truman would keep faith with him." *pg. 348*

"On the 9th of April 1948, Dr. Weizmann wrote a letter to the President asserting that there was no solution except partition. He said:

"'The choice for our people, Mr. President, is between statehood and extermination.'

"While drafting the letter he heard that the trusteeship plan meant a possible continuance of British rule. He added a paragraph:

"I would sound a solemn warning against the prolongation of British rule in Palestine. As you may know, I have cherished the British-Jewish relationship all my life. I have upheld it in difficult times. I have been grievously disappointed by its recent decline...I tremble to think of the wave of violence and repression which would sweep Palestine if the conditions and auspices of the recent unhappy years were to be continued under British or indeed under any foreign rule. I also know how passionately the British people desire the end of this troubled chapter. Should your administration, despite all this, press for any prolongation of British tenure, it would mean a responsibility for terrible events." *pg. 358*

"On the 23rd of April...Dr. Weizmann received an urgent message to go to the apartment of Judge Samuel Rosenman, a friend of Mr. Truman's...His meeting with Judge Rosenman had been...to affirm and affirm again his trust in Mr. Truman as a human being. The judge had been authorized to tell Dr. Weizmann about an interview not dissimilar to that with Jacobson, which the President had held with this other close friend. Mr. Truman had opened the conversation by telling the other quite simply 'I have Dr. Weizmann on my conscience.' He went over the events of the 19th of March, explaining how he was inadequately informed about the United States brief to UNO, and, it seems, somewhat blaming himself for the ensuing muddle. He said his object now was to get the American position in UNO back to what it had been before the 19th when official American policy was in support of the resolution of November 1947. If this could be done, he said, and if a Jewish State was proclaimed, he would recognize it immediately. He made it clear he would deal with only one Jewish Representative, and that was Dr. Weizmann. Such was the news which Judge Rosenman brought the old man. It was kept a close secret by Dr. Weizmann and his immediate circle and was not divulged till 1962, ten years after his death. A little over three weeks remained till the end of the mandate." *pg. 360*

"But Dr. Weizmann saw the matter...Now was the moment when the Jewish N. H. had to declare its faith in itself and its destiny...Mr. Meyer Weisgal telephoned Dr. Weizmann on behalf of Ben-Gurion to know his views. Dr. Weizmann's answer was uncompromising: 'Proclaim the State, no matter what ensues!...Don't let them weaken — it is now or never.'" *pg. 364*

"On the 13th of May, Dr. Weizmann wrote to President Truman informing him that the State of Israel was to be proclaimed on the next day. The letter arrived at the White House on the morning of the 14th. He discussed it with...Staff and members of the White House....It was realized Dr. Weizmann held no official position and...no action could be taken on his letter... There was an official Jewish Representative in Washington, Eliahu Epstein,...Captain Clifford was ordered by the President...That Mr. Epstein write an official letter to the President as representative 'of the Jewish State'...Secretary Marshall still wished to proceed cautiously and to delay American support of the proclamation for a few days...to consult British and French Governments, but that the President was now resolute for immediate recognition." *pg. 364*

"In Palestine the British departure took place a day earlier than scheduled...The mandatory regime first established by Lord Samuel came to an end." *pg. 365*

"At nine o'clock on the morning of the 14th of May, the last British High Commissioner left the country...Ben-Gurion appeared before a specially convened session...in the Museum of Modern Art...He announced the establishment of a Jewish State in Palestine to be called ISRAEL. He declared certain principles of the new polity equal citizenship for Jew and Gentile and good will towards Israel's neighbors. 'With trust in the Rock of Israel,' he concluded 'we set our hand on this declaration at this session of the Provisional State Council in the city of Tel Aviv, on this Sabbath Eve, the fifth day of Iyar, in the year five thousand seven hundred and eight.'" *pg. 365*

"The vague expression 'Rock of Israel' was substituted for the words 'Almighty God' in the original draft, in deference to the scruples of Jewish Communists." *pg. 365*

"Israel had become a Parliament state with an elected chamber known in Hebrew as the Knesset. David Ben-Gurion was confirmed in the office of Prime Minister, and, by unanimous vote, Dr. Weizmann was elected first President of modern Israel." *pg. 369*

"Israel after the war became a land exalted by a just pride in achievement. Even its enemies could not doubt the immensity of what the nationalist party had accomplished. Within three and a half years of sufferings such as few

other people had undergone in the whole course of recorded history, after the loss of a third of their whole population in the world, the Jews had formed a Jewish state, only fifty-one years after Theodore Herzl had called the first Zionist Congress." *pg. 369*

EVENTS LEADING UP TO THE BALFOUR DECLARATION

From the book:

THE AUTOBIOGRAPHY OF CHAIM WEIZMANN

"At the end of August 1914, I found a printed circular on my desk, from the War Office, inviting every scientist in possession of any discovery of military value to report it. I promptly offered the War Office my fermentation process, without remuneration. I received no reply." *pg. 171*

"One day in March 1916,...there was waiting for me a summons to the British Admiralty where I was to see Sir Frederick L. Nathan, the head of the powder department. He explained there was a serious shortage of acetone, which was the solvent in making cordite. Without this solvent it would be necessary to make far-reaching changes in the naval guns." *pg. 172*

"I was brought into the presence of the First Lord of the Admiralty, Mr. Winston Churchill. ...Almost his first words were, Well, Dr. Weizmann, we need thirty thousand tons of acetone. Can you make it?" *pg. 173*

"I received, later on,...lucrative offers from the Admiralty, and, again, from the Ministry of Munitions...headed by Lloyd George. I refused them, and asked instead for a salary about equal to what my wife and I had been earning...I would have to give up my University work and move permanently to London." *pg. 174*

"My life shifted once again toward my Zionist interests...events moved rapidly toward one of the climatic points in the history of the movement, I believe, in the history of the Jewish people — THE ISSUANCE OF THE BALFOUR DECLARATION." *pg. 175*

"Old Balfour Declaration" *pg. 206*

"Revised Balfour Declaration, see copy of letter attached from the book: 'Balfour Declaration.'" *pg. 208*

"October 16, 1917, Colonel House acting for President Wilson, cabled the British Government: America's support of the substance of Declaration." *pg. 208*

"Mr. George, in his WAR MEMORIES, dates his acquaintance...and interest in our movement, from the time (1917) when I came to work for Ministry of Munitions...His narrative makes it appear that the Balfour Declaration was a **reward given me by the Government** when Mr. Lloyd

George became Prime Minister for my SERVICES TO ENGLAND." *pgs. 149, 150*

THE WHITE PAPER

The following quotes are from the book entitled:

CROSSROADS TO ISRAEL 1917 – 1948

by Christopher Sykes"

"17th May 1939

"The main propositions of the White Paper were these: the infamous White Paper as it came to be thought of by millions of Jews-were these: there was to be no partition of Palestine; it was no part of British policy that Palestine should become a Jewish state, and this objection was based on the provisions of the Churchill White Paper of 1922: likewise it was not part of British Policy that the country should become an Arab state and this objection was based on a rejection of the Arab claim drawn from the McMahon correspondence; British policy was based on a 'desire to see established ultimately an Independent Palestine State' within ten years; in the transitional period Jews and Arabs were to be invited to take an increasing share in the administration; in the same period the expansion of the Jewish National Home by immigration would in principle be limited by Arab agreement to it, but during the next five years Jewish immigration would be permitted, economic conditions allowing, to the extent of 10,000 a year with an immediate immigration of 25,000 refugees in addition to the yearly quota; after this immigration, amounting to 75,000 in five years, no further Jewish immigration would be allowed 'unless the Arabs of Palestine are prepared to acquiesce in it;' land purchase by Jews from Arabs would be prohibited in some areas, and restricted in others, in accordance with regulations to be published by the High Commissioner." *pg. 195*

"The colonial Office courteously accepted the correction and redrafted the passage as follows in the final statement of policy issued in a Government White Paper on the 30th of June 1922:

"It is not the case, as has been represented by the Arab Delegation, that during the War His Majesty's Government gave an undertaking that an independent national government was to be at once established in Palestine. This representation mainly rests upon a letter, dated the 24th of October, 1915, from Sir Henry McMahon, then His Majesty's High Commissioner in Egypt, to the Shereef of Mecca, now King Hussein of the Hedjaz. That

letter is quoted as conveying a promise to the Shereef of Mecca to recognize and support the independence of the Arabs within the territories proposed by him. But this promise was given subject to a reservation made in the

same letter, which excluded from its scope, among other territories, the portions of Syria lying to the West of the district of Damascus. This reservation has always been regarded by His Majesty's Government as covering the Viloyet of Beyrout and the independent Sanjak of Jerusalem. The whole of Palestine was thus excluded from Henry McMahon's pledge."

pg. 64

JEHOVAH'S WITNESSES

[Editor's Note: Some of the following quotes are from the Jehovah's Witnesses' literature. They are included here to present their point of view.]

"The remarkable growth of Jehovah's Witnesses ...has attracted...attention...the world over." *Z1970, April 15, pg. 245, par. 1 (Present day Watchtower Magazine)*

"God spoke of his people as witnesses, saying: 'You *are* my witnesses'....(Isa. 43:12)...Jesus... said: 'You will be witnesses of me....' The Apostle Paul...referred to Abel, Enoch, Noah, Abraham, Isaac, and the prophets as 'so great a cloud of witnesses.' (Acts 1:8 'But ye shall receive power, after that the Holy Ghost is come upon you: and ye shall be witnesses unto me both in Jerusalem, and in all Judea, and in Samaria, and unto the uttermost part of the earth.' Heb. 11th Chapter; Heb. 12:1 'Where-fore seeing we also are compassed about with so great a cloud of witnesses, let us lay aside every weight, and the sin which doth so easily beset us, and let us run with patience the race that is set before us,')...." *Z1970, Apr. 15, pg. 249, par. 1*

ISA. 43:1,3,5-8,10,12,22-24,26-28: "Thus saith the Lord....O Jacob...O Israel,....I gave Egypt for thy ransom....I will bring thy seed from the east, and gather thee from the west; I will say to the north, Give up; and to the south, Keep not back: bring my sons from far, and my daughters from the ends of the earth; every one that is called by my name: for I have created him for my glory, I have formed him; yea, I have made him.

"Bring forth the blind people that have eyes, and the deaf that have ears....Ye *are* my witnesses, saith the Lord, and my servant whom I have chosen....I have declared, and have saved...when *there was* no strange *god* among you: therefore ye are my witnesses...that I *am* God....But thou has not called upon me, O Jacob; but thou hast been weary of me, O Israel. Thou hast not brought me the small cattle of thy burnt offerings; neither hast thou honored me with thy sacrifices....Thou hast brought me no sweet cane,...neither filled me with the fat of thy sacrifices: but thou hast made me to serve with thy sins, thou hast wearied me with thine iniquities....Let us plead together: declare thou, that thou mayest be justified. Thy first father hath sinned, and thy teachers have transgressed against me. Therefore I have profaned the princes of the sanctuary, and have given Jacob to the curse, and Israel to reproaches."

[Editor's Note: Some of this is not very complimentary to those here called "witnesses." The primary application seems to refer to fleshly Israel.]

NUMBERS AND WORKS

"The Watchtower has grown from a first issue of 6,000 to more than 6,000,000 copies each issue...in seventy-two tongues.

"The work...is now being carried on...in 203 lands...." *Z1970, pg. 250, par. 2,3*

"...1,336,112 publishers spent 239,769,076 hours...." *Z1970 pg. 251, par. 3*

THE LORD'S TRUE CHURCH

LUKE 12:32: "Fear not little flock; for it is your Father's good pleasure to give you the kingdom."

REV. 14:1,4, *Diag.*: "...And I saw...the Lamb...on the MOUNT Zion, and with him a Hundred and Forty-four Thousand...."

"The Lord's church, the only one to which the name ecclesia, body, or church is properly applicable is so insignificant, so unostentatious, and comparatively so poor in this world's riches, that it is not recognized nor recognizable from the worldly standpoint. It is neither man-made nor man-ruled; nor are its members enrolled on earth, but in heaven. (Heb. 12:23) 'To the general assembly and church of the firstborn, which are written in heaven, and to God the Judge of all, and to the spirits of just men made perfect.' Its head and bishop is the Lord, its law is his Word: it has but one Lord, one faith, one baptism; and it is built upon the testimonies of the holy apostles and prophets — Jesus Christ himself being its chief corner- stone." *R2429:1; July 8th Manna*

ORGANIZATION OF THE TRUE CHURCH, JESUS THE HEAD

COL. 1:18: "And he is the head of the body, the church...."

EPH. 2:20: "...Jesus Christ himself being the chief corner *stone*."

INSPIRED APOSTLES

REV. 21:14: "And the wall of the city had twelve foundations, and in them the names of the twelve apostles of the Lamb."

ELDERS, DEACONS, ETC.

See *Volume Six, Study V*, especially *pages 234-264*; also *Study VI, pages 276-282*.

"ANGELS"

REV. 1:20, *Diag.*: "...the SEVEN STARS are Messengers of the SEVEN Congregations...."

"...seven stages or developments...symbolized by seven congregations in Asia Minor." *T115*

THAT SERVANT

LUKE 12:42: "...Who then is that faithful and wise steward, whom *his* Lord shall make ruler over his household, to give *them their* portion of meat in due season?"

MATT. 24:47: "...he shall make him ruler over all his goods."

AN INDIVIDUAL, NOT A GROUP

"If neither the 'household' nor 'fellow-servants' were mentioned, it might be questionable whether the expression 'that servant' referred to one or to all faithful servants; but...when '*that* servant' and '*his fellow*-servants' are all mentioned in one connection, and in *contrast*, it would be a perversion of the rules of language and interpretation to mix and confound that which the Holy Spirit has so emphatically marked as distinct...." *R1946:2*

See also Index: **Servant, That Wise and Faithful.**

2 TIM. 3:16,17, *RSV.*: "Every Scripture inspired of God is also profitable for teaching, for reproof, for correction, for instruction which is in righteousness: that the man of God may be complete, furnished completely unto every good work."

"It will be well for us all to remember that all the graces of the Spirit, all the progress in the knowledge of divine things to which we already have attained, that may have really helped us nearer to

God and to holiness, have come to us through the Scriptures of the Old Testament, and through the words of our Lord and his inspired apostles: nor will it ever be necessary to go to other channels for the true wisdom which would prepare us for the salvation promised." *R2166:2; May 21 Manna*

"FALLING AWAY"

"After the apostles fell asleep...the majority of the church began to neglect the lamp and to look to human teachers....By degrees there came...a special class...who...were regarded...as the proper guides...aside from the Word of God...." *A22*

"THE CHANNEL" — AN ORGANIZATION?

"We believe that **The Watch Tower** will be used as the Lord's official organ to disseminate his truth until that work shall have been finished. But however this may be, time alone will tell." *R6350:2* (1918)

"There would be a table where our Lord would sup with his espoused, and she with him — a channel of service...The

Watch Tower Bible and Tract Society is this channel...." *R6413:2*

"Again the wily...adversary...is using every means to create strife...causing divisions... putting non-essentials for fundamentals...." *R6413:5*

"The Laodicean 'angel'...prepared for a continuance of the table, the channel...'He that receiveth whomsoever I send receiveth me'....

"It behooves us...that we reject not his table (channel) lest we be led to the cup and the table of devils. (1 Cor. 10:21)...." *R6413:5,6* (1919)

THE "GREAT CROWD"

REV. 7:9,10: *NEW WORLD TRANSLATION* (of "Jehovah's Witnesses"): "After these things [the selection of the 144,000] I saw, and, look! a great crowd, which no man was able to number....And they keep on crying with a loud voice, saying: 'Salvation we owe to our God, who is seated on the throne, and to the Lamb.'"

"This great, unnumbered multitude are destined to survive the end of this wicked system and to have the opportunity to live forever on the earth. In addition, the resurrection of the dead will open up the opportunity for thousands of millions of persons to gain eternal life...." *Z1970, April 15, pg. 246, col. 2, par. 1 (Watchtower Magazine)*

ARMAGEDDON

"God's war of Armageddon will not kill any innocent, righteous ones...Only the wicked will perish." *Z1970, April 15, pg. 247, col. 2, par 1 (Watchtower Magazine)*

"Jehovah's witnesses believe their work to be a lifesaving work. Why would they engage in it if they believed that there was no hope for others? They are certain that God's mercy will extend to many kinds of people. The Apostle Paul stated that God is going to resurrect even 'the unrighteous.'" *Z1970, April 15, pg. 247, par.1 (Watchtower Magazine)*

ACTS 24:15: "There shall be a resurrection of the dead, both of the just and unjust."

"But with regard to the coming 'great tribulation,' and being saved through that conflict, the Bible shows that people must now turn to God and take their stand on his side if they wish protection from him...." *Z1970, April 15, pg. 247, par. 2 (Watchtower Magazine)*

MATT. 24:38,39, *Diag.*: "For as in those days...before the deluge, they...understood [interlineary, 'knew'] not till the DELUGE came and swept them all away, thus will be the PRESENCE of the SON of MAN."

PRESENT WORK OF "WITNESSES"

"Jehovah's witnesses also believe that the end of this wicked system of things is very near, and so they are busily engaged in warning people of this fact....

"Jehovah's witnesses want people to know that God is going to bring an end to wicked conditions in the earth and replace them with righteousness by means of his perfect heavenly Kingdom government. The time for that to happen is very near; it is to occur in this generation. People must be warned of this fact and be told what to do to receive God's protection and blessing...." *Z1970, April 15, pg. 245, Col. 2. (Watchtower Magazine)*

IS FUTURE HOPE FOR WORLD DEPENDENT ON OUR PRESENT EFFORTS?

"The church has made a great mistake in supposing that in the present age, and in her present condition, her office has been to convert the world...." *A14*

"The conversion of the world in the present age was not expected of the church....God has not yet **even attempted** the world's conversion." *A95*

DID JESUS PREACH FROM DOOR TO DOOR?

"Jesus Christ visited the people at their homes to talk to them about God and his purposes, even though many of them had views on religion that were different from what Jesus taught. Since he instructed his followers to do the same, Jehovah's witnesses consider it imperative that they follow his example closely...." *Z1970, April 15, pg. 245, last para. (Watchtower Magazine)*

DO THESE TEXTS THEY CITE PROVE THIS STATEMENT?

1 PET. 2:21, *Diag.*: "...Christ suffered on your behalf, leaving you a Copy, so that you may follow in his FOOTSTEPS."

MATT. 10:11, *Diag.*: "And whatever City or Village you enter, inquire what worthy person resides there; and remain with him until you leave the place."

ACTS 5:42; 20:20, *Diag.*: "And every Day, in the TEMPLE and at Home, they ceased not teaching and preaching the glad tidings....I kept back NOTHING that was PROFITABLE, neglecting not to declare to you and to teach you publicly and at your Houses."

LUKE 10:7: "...Go not from house to house."

A TEXT NOT CITED

JOHN 18:20, *Diag.*: "JESUS answered him, I have spoken publicly to the WORLD; I always taught in a Synagogue

and in the TEMPLE, where All the JEWS come together; and in secret I said nothing."

(We are not condemning this group for calling in homes to teach — merely giving these passages to show what was done then.)

JESUS TEACHING PUBLICLY

MARK 2:1,2: "...he entered into Capernaum... and it was noised that he was in the house. And straightway many were gathered together, insomuch that there was no room to receive *them*, no, not so much as about the door: and he preached the word unto them."

IF THOU WHO KILLED HIM HAD A CHANCE, WHY NOT THOSE WHO OPPOSE US?

JOHN 7:32,45,46: "...the Pharisees and the chief priests sent officers to take Him....Then came the officers to the chief priests and Pharisees; and they said unto them, Why have ye not brought him? The officers answered, Never man spake like this man."

ACTS 2:36-39: "...God hath made...Jesus, whom ye have crucified, both Lord and Christ. ...They...said...What shall we do? Then Peter said...Repent, and be baptized...for the promise is unto you...."

UNRIGHTEOUS MAY PASS THROUGH

"Many will feel rebellious against that perfect and equitable rule...

"But...when the Prince of life has put in force the laws of righteousness and equity with an iron rule, the masses...will learn....to love righteousness...." *A303*

ZEPH. 3:8,9: "...my determination *is* to gather the nations...to pour upon them...all my fierce anger: for all the earth shall be devoured with the fire of my jealousy. For then will I turn to the people a pure language, that they may all call upon the name of the LORD, to serve him with one consent."

EZEK. 7:16: "But they that escape of them shall escape, and shall be on the mountains like doves of the valleys, all of them mourning, every one for his iniquity."

PARABLE OF SHEEP AND GOATS

MATT. 25:31,32: "When the Son of man shall come in his glory, and all the holy angels [Gr. ***aggeloi*, 'messengers'**] with him, then...he shall separate them as a shepherd divideth *his* sheep from the goats."

THE SAINTS ASSOCIATE JUDGES

1 COR. 6:2: "...The saints shall judge the world...."

JUDE 14,15, *Diag.*: "...Behold, the Lord cometh with his Holy Myriads, to execute Judgment against all...."

MATT. 19:28: "...ye which have followed me, in the regeneration when the Son of man shall sit in the throne of his glory, ye also shall sit upon twelve thrones, judging the twelve tribes of Israel."

SATAN BOUND

"The scene of this parable...is laid after the time of trouble, when the nations shall have been subdued, Satan bound (**REV. 20:1,2**) 'And I saw an angel come down from heaven, having the key of the bottomless pit and a great chain in his hand. And he laid hold on the dragon, that old serpent, which is the Devil, and Satan, and bound him a thousand years,'...

REV. 20:3: "'...that he should deceive the nations no more, till the thousand years should be fulfilled....'

"...and the authority of Christ's kingdom established. Ere this,...(the overcoming church) will have been seated with him in his throne...." *R2606:3*

LEAST OF CHRIST'S BRETHREN

MATT. 25:40: "...as ye have done *it* unto one of the least of these my brethren, ye have done *it* unto me."

"The brethren of the Gospel church are not the only 'brethren' of Christ. All who...will have been restored to perfection will be recognized as sons of God — *human sons*....Our Lord's love for these, his human brethren, is here expressed...." *R2607:2*

WILLFUL SIN NOT FORGIVEN

MATT. 12:31: "...the blasphemy against the...Spirit shall not be forgiven...."

ADAM HAD TO BE REDEEMED

ROM. 5:18: "...as by the offense on one *judgment came* upon all men to condemnation; even so by the righteousness of one *the free gift came* upon all men unto justification of life." (Is this not the same "all?")

A RANSOM FOR ALL

1 TIM. 2:3-6: "...God...will have all men to be saved and to come unto the [Diag., 'an accurate'] knowledge of the truth. For *there is* one God and one mediator between God and men, the man Christ Jesus; Who gave himself a ransom for all, to be testified in due time."

BLESSING FOR ALL

GAL. 3:8,16,29: "And the Scripture, foreseeing that God would justify the heathen through faith, preached before

the gospel unto Abraham...'In thee shall all nations be blessed.' Now to Abraham and his seed were the promises made. He saith not, And to seeds, as of many; but as of one, And to thy seed, which is Christ. And if ye *be* Christ's, then are ye Abraham's seed, and heirs according to the promise."

RESTITUTION OF ALL

ACTS 3:20,21: "And He shall send Jesus Christ...Whom the heaven must receive until the times of restitution of all things...."

EVEN THE SODOMITES

GEN. 19:24,25: "...the LORD rained upon Sodom...brimstone and fire...And he overthrew those cities...and all the inhabitants...."

AGE—LASTING BUT NOT EVERLASTING

JUDE 7, *Rotherham*: "...Sodom...a penalty of age-abiding fire undergoing."

NOT YET HAVING FULL LIGHT

MATT. 11:23,24: "...if the mighty works which have been done in thee, had been done in Sodom, it would have remained until this day....it shall be more tolerable...for Sodom...in the day of judgment than for thee."

SODOMITES TO RETURN

(The **Watch Tower** once taught, then denied, now affirms their hope of a resurrection.)

EZEK. 16:46,53,60,61: "...thy younger sister.... *is* Sodom....When I shall bring again...the captivity of Sodom...*then will I bring again* the captivity of thy captives....I will establish unto thee an

everlasting covenant....thou shalt receive thy sisters...."

"PERPETUAL" SLEEP

JER. 51:39,57: "...I will make them drunken, that they may rejoice, and sleep a perpetual sleep, and not wake....And I will make drunk her princes, and her wise *men*, her captains, and her rulers, and her mighty men: and they shall sleep a perpetual sleep, and not wake...."

DEFINITION OF "OLAM," "PERPETUAL"

Young's Concordance: "an age, indefinite time"

COMPARE AARONIC PRIESTHOOD

EXOD. 29:9: "And thou shalt gird...Aaron and his sons...and the priest's office shall be theirs for a perpetual statute..."

HEB. 7:11,12: "...Another priest should rise after the order of Melchisedec, and not...after the order of Aaron....the priesthood being changed...."

OTHER LORDS TO PERISH

ISA. 26:13,14: "...*other* lords beside thee have had dominion over us....*They are* dead, they shall not live; *they are* deceased [*Leeser* — 'departed'], they shall not rise: therefore thou hast visited and destroyed them, and made all their memory to perish."

"...'other lords [rulers, powers] have had dominion over us [Sin, the great taskmaster, and his representatives in civil, ecclesiastical, and financial despotism, including trusts, combines, and every other evil system which oppresses men at the present time...]; but of Thee only would we make mention [now as our ruler]....'" *R1951:2*

SIN UNTO SECOND DEATH FOLLOWS RECEIVING THE HOLY SPIRIT

HEB. 10:26, *Diag.*: "For if we should voluntarily sin after HAVING RECEIVED the KNOWLEDGE of the TRUTH, there is no longer a Sacrifice left for Sins."

ROM. 6:9: "...Christ being raised from the dead dieth no more...."

HEB. 6:4-6: *Diag.*: "For THOSE once ENLIGHTENED, and having tasted the HEAVENLY GIFT, and Became Partakers of the holy Spirit, and having tasted the Good Word of God and the Powers of the Coming Age, and having fallen away, it is impossible to renew again to Reformation, they having re-crucified and are exposing to contempt the SON of GOD."

ONLY SPIRIT BEGOTTEN ON TRIAL NOW FOR ETERNAL LIFE

1 COR. 6:20: "...ye *are* bought with a price...."

"...This text...speaks not of the world, but of the church...." *R4633:2*

EPH. 2:3: "...we...were by nature the children of wrath, even as others."

"...The others...are still children of wrath.... Because the satisfaction for their sins has not yet been made." *R4633:3*

"Fortunate it is for those who have...partially believed, that their standing is **not** that of full justification...until they have become...footstep followers....If not justified and spirit-begotten ...he...will have a share in the justification which His kingdom will offer to every member of the human family — aside from the church...." *Fiii*

THE "DOOR" NOT YET CLOSED

"There are three ways in which the closing of this door might be indicated: first, by a definite Bible statement of the exact date; second, by such a reversal of public sentiment with reference to the truth, that fidelity and zeal in its service would no longer meet with opposition, and when suffering with Christ for the truth's sake (Rom. 8:17) would be no longer possible; or third, by such a condition of affairs obtaining in the world that all opportunity for such service would be effectually obstructed, thus leaving no opportunities for candidates to enter into the work and to develop and prove their love and faithfulness by their activity and endurance.

"Though we are definitely informed that the door will be shut sometime within this harvest period or end of the age, the Bible does not give the exact date; and, although after the great time of trouble there will be a grand reversal of public sentiment in favor of truth and justice, we have no intimation whatever that such a condition of affairs will obtain until after the harvest period is fully ended. But we have a clear intimation that **the door will be shut** in the manner last named; for, before the Millennial day breaks, we are forewarned of a dark night wherein no man can labor...

"The morning cometh, and also the night." Isa. 21:12. See also Vol.11, chap. viii." *C207, 208*

ROM 8:17: "And if children, then heirs; heirs of God, and joint-heirs with Christ; if so be that we suffer with *him*, that we may be also glorified together."

See also Index: **High Calling**; *R5950-51*

DOES FEAR OF SECOND DEATH BRING ACCEPTABLE SERVICE ANY MORE THAN FEAR OF TORMENT?

1 JOHN 4:18: "There is no fear in love; but perfect love casteth out fear: because fear hath torment [*Diag.*, 'restraint']. He that feareth is not made perfect in love."

2 COR. 5:14,15: "For the love of Christ constraineth us; because we thus judge, that if one died for all, then were all dead: And *that* he died for all, that they which live should not henceforth live unto themselves, but unto him which died for them and rose again."

WILL SURVIVORS OF ARMAGEDDON HAVE CHILDREN TO FILL THE EARTH

LUKE 20:33-35, *Diag.*: "At the RESURRECTION...To which of them does she become a Wife; for the SEVEN had her for a Wife. And Jesus said..., The CHILDREN of this AGE marry,...but THOSE DEEMED WORTHY to obtain

that AGE, and THAT RESURRECTION from the Dead, neither marry nor are given in marriage...."

BLOOD TRANSFUSIONS

"Jehovah's witnesses do not take blood transfusions...." *Z1970, Apr. 15, par. 1 (Watch Tower Magazine)*

GEN. 9:4: "But flesh with the life thereof, *which is* the blood thereof, shall ye not eat."

"The eating or drinking of an animal's blood involving the death of the animal is not the same as transfusion of some blood not

involving the donor's death.

"...Moses....applied the blood to the horns of the altar. The 'finger' of the '**Law**' thus pointed out that the altar of earthly sacrifices was acceptable...by reason of the shed blood (the life given....)" *T41*

JOHN 6:53,55: "...Except ye eat the flesh of the Son of man, and drink his blood, ye have no life in you....For my flesh is meat indeed, and my blood is drink indeed."

1 CHRON. 11:17-19: "And David...said, 'Oh that one would give me drink of the...well of Bethlehem....' And the three brake through the host...and brought *it* to David: but David poured it out to the LORD, And said, '...shall I drink the blood of these men that have put their lives in jeopardy?"

These men had risked their lives — as blood-donors do not.

See also Index: **Antichrist; The Church; Babylon; Faith Vs. Works**.

THE JUDGMENT DAY

ACTS 17:30,31 "...GOD...hath appointed a day, in the which he will judge the world in righteousness by *that* Man whom he hath ordained; *whereof* he hath given assurance unto all *men*, in that he hath raised him from the dead."

Definition: (*Young's*) Gr., "*krisis*," "**judgment**," "**the process of judgment**;" "*krima*," "**the judgment** (pronounced)" *pg. 196, col. 1,* under "**condemnation**."

MEANING OF "JUDGMENT"

"...**judgment**....includes the idea of a trial as well as a decision....this is true...also of the Greek word which it translates." *A138*

MEANING OF "DAY"

"...**day**, both in Scripture and in common usage, though most frequently used to represent a period of twelve or twenty-four hours, really signifies any definite or special period of time. Thus...we speak of Noah's day, Luther's day, Washington's day; and thus in the Bible the entire time of creation is called a day...." *A138*

GEN. 2:4: "These *are* the generations of the heavens and of the earth...in the day that the Lord God made the earth and the heavens..."

"Then we read of 'the day of temptation... forty years....'" *A138*

HEB. 3:8,9: "Harden not your hearts, as...in the day of temptation...: When your fathers tempted me,...and saw my works forty years."

2 COR. 6:2; ISA. 49:8: "...day of salvation..."

REV. 6:17: "...the great day of his wrath...."

ISA. 63:4: "...The day of vengeance....."

ISA. 22:5: "...day of trouble...."

"Then again we read of..." *A139*

PHIL. 2:6: "...the day of Jesus Christ..."

2 PET. 3:7: "...the day of judgment...."(cf. vs. 8)

"...terms applicable to the Millennial age, in which Messiah will reign over, rule, and judge the world in righteousness, and..." *A139*

1 TIM. 6:15: "...shall show, *who is* the blessed and only Potentate, the King of kings and Lord of lords."

MORE THAN TWENTY-FOUR HOURS

"Those who will carefully consult a complete concordance... with reference to the Day of Judgment, and note the kind

and amount of work to be accomplished..., will soon see the necessity for giving the term **day** its wider significance." *A139*

"There have been...

"OTHER JUDGMENT DAYS"

"...during which certain elect classes have been on trial." *A139*

THE FIRST JUDGMENT DAY

"The first great judgment...was...in Eden, when the whole human race, as represented in its head, Adam, stood on trial before God. The result...was the verdict — Guilty, disobedient, unworthy of life; and the penalty inflicted was death..." *A140*

GEN. 2:17, *margin*: "...Dying thou shalt die."

"And so...

1 COR. 15:22: "'...in Adam all die....'

"The decision of the Judge (Jehovah) has ever since been enforced." *A140*

ROM. 1:18: "...The wrath of God is revealed from heaven against all ungodliness...."

"...in every funeral procession. Every tomb,.... every ache and pain...are results of the first trial and sentence...But mankind are to be recovered from the sentence of that first trial by the one sacrifice for all, which the great redeemer provides....Death...in view of this redemption is...to be considered...a temporary sleep...." *A140*

THE CHURCH ONLY RELEASED YET

"Only the Church of believers in Christ are yet in any sense released...from this...penalty; and their escape is...only so reckoned by faith." *A140*

ROM. 8:24: "...We are saved **by hope**..."

"Our actual release...will not be experienced until the resurrection...." *A140*

NOT BECAUSE SENTENCE WAS UNJUST

"It is not that God considers his decision in the first sentence unjust, but that he has provided a redemption from the penalty...in order that he may grant another judgment (trial) under more favorable conditions to the entire race — all having then had experience with sin and its results. God has not changed...from his original purpose, which he formed before the world began....He changes not, and..." *A141*

EXOD. 34:7: "...will by no means clear *the guilty*."

"He will exact the full penalty....And that full penalty has been provided by the Redeemer..., who...tasted...

HEB. 2:9: "'...death for every man.'

"Our Lord having provided a ransom for Adam's race..., can justly give a new offer of life to them all...." *A141*

CHRIST TO BE THEIR JUDGE

"...when God gives the world this individual trial, it will be under Christ as Judge...." *A142*

JOHN 5:22: "For the Father judgeth no man, but hath committed all judgment unto the Son."

"The character of the Judge is a sufficient guarantee that the judgment will be just and merciful, and with due consideration for the infirmities of all, until the willing and obedient are brought back to the original perfection lost in Eden." *A142*

A JUDGE ALSO A DELIVERER

"A judge, in ancient times was one who executed justice and relieved the oppressed. ...When under oppression by their enemies because of transgression....Israel was time and again released and blessed by the raising up of judges....He who pays for the sins of all....will **deliver** and **judge** those whom he so loved as to redeem." *A142*

PSA. 98:9: "...with righteousness shall he judge the world, and the people with equity."

OBEY AND LIVE

"This coming judgment will be on...the same principles as the first. The same law of obedience will be presented, with the same reward of life, and the same penalty of death. And as the first trial had a beginning, progressed, and culminated with a sentence, so also will the second; and the sentence will be life to the righteous, and death to the unrighteous...." *A143*

AN INDIVIDUAL TRIAL

"The second trial will be one in which every man will stand the test for himself alone...None will then die because of Adam's sin, or...inherited imperfections. It shall no more be said,...

JER. 31:29,30: "'In those days they shall say no more, The fathers have eaten a sour grape, and the children's teeth are set on edge. But every one shall die for his own iniquity: every man that eateth the sour grape, his teeth shall be set on edge.'

ACCORDING TO ABILITY

"And it will be true of the world then as it is of the church now, that a man will not be judged...

2 COR. 8:12: "'...according to that he hath not...'

"...but according to that which he hath...Under the reign of Christ, mankind will be gradually educated, trained, and disciplined until they reach perfection. And when they have reached perfection,...any who then fall short of perfect obedience will be cut off." *A143*

EZEK. 18:4,20: "Behold, all souls are mine; as the soul of the father, so also the soul of the son is mine: the soul that sinneth, it shall die...The son shall not bear the iniquity of the father, neither shall the father bear the iniquity of the son..."

"Any who sin willfully, against full light and ability, will perish in the second death. And should any one during that age of trial, under its full blaze of light...make no progress toward perfection for a hundred years, he...will be 'cut off,' though at a hundred years he would be in the period of comparative childhood." *A144*

ONE HUNDRED YEARS' TRIAL

ISA. 65:20, *LEESER*: "There shall no more come thence an infant of few days, nor an old man that shall not have the full length of his days; for as a lad shall one die a hundred years old; and as a sinner shall be accursed he who (dieth) at a hundred years old."

REWARD AND PENALTY

MATT. 25:34-36, 40-43, 45, 46: "Then shall the King say unto them on his right hand, Come, ye blessed of my Father, inherit the kingdom prepared for you from the foundation of the world: For I was an hungered, and ye gave me meat: I was thirsty, and ye gave me drink: I was a stranger, and ye took me in: Naked, and ye clothed me: I was sick, and ye visited me: I was in prison, and ye came unto me....Inasmuch as ye have done *it* unto one of the least of these my brethren, ye have done *it* unto me.

"Then shall he say also unto them on the left hand, Depart from me ye cursed, into everlasting fire, prepared for the devil and his angels: For I was an hungered, and ye gave me no meat: I was thirsty, and ye gave me no drink: naked, and ye clothed me not: sick, and in prison, and ye visited me not....Inasmuch as ye did it not to one of the least of these, ye did *it* not to me. And these shall go away into everlasting punishment (cutting off, *Diag*.): but the

righteous into life eternal."

For explanation of the parable see Index: **Hell and Purgatory**.

REV. 20:15, *Diag.*: "And if anyone was not found (having been) written in the book of the LIFE he was cast into the LAKE OF (the) FIRE." (Cf. Interlineary)

REV. 21:8, *Diag.*: "But as for the COWARDS, and Unbelievers, and the Abominable, and Murderers, and Fornicators, and Sorcerers, and Idolaters, and ALL (the) LIARS, their PORTION (will be) in THAT LAKE which BURNING with Fire and Sulphur which is the SECOND DEATH." (cf. Interlineary.)

1 COR. 15:25: "For he must reign, till he hath put all enemies under his feet."

EVERLASTING DESTRUCTION

"This will be their second death. No reason will be given for them, and there will be no release or resurrection for them, their sins being a willful, individual sin against full light and opportunity, under a most favorable, individual trial." *A144*

PRESENT RESPONSIBILITY

"We do not wish to be understood as ignoring the present responsibility of the world..." *A145*

PROV.15:3: "The eyes of the LORD *are* in every place, beholding the evil and the good."

ECCL.12:14: "...God shall bring every work into judgment, with every secret thing, whether *it* be good or whether *it* be evil."

"The good and the evil deeds of the present time will receive a just recompense of reward either now or hereafter." *A145*

1 TIM. 5:24: "Some men's sins are open beforehand, going before to judgment; and some *men* they follow after."

ONLY THE "LITTLE FLOCK" NOW ON TRIAL FOR LIFE ETERNAL

"No others than the Lord's favored 'little flock' have as yet sufficient light to incur the final penalty, the second death." *A145*

TWO CLASSES JUDGED BEFORE THE WORLD'S JUDGMENT DAY

"A period of about six thousand years intervenes between the world's first and second judgment days...God has been selecting two...classes...and...trying, disciplining, and training them to be his honored instruments during the period or day of the world's judgment.

"These...are...those...tried and found faithful during the Christian dispensation, and the faithful overcomers who preceded the Christian dispensation...Those who successfully pass trial for either of these...classes will not

come into judgment with the world, but...will be God's agents...in giving to men the instruction and training necessary for their final...judgment..." *A145*

1 COR. 6:2: "Do ye not know that the saints shall judge the world?..."

THEIR JUDGMENT MORE SEVERE

"The judgment of both of these classes has been more severe than the trial of the world...in its judgment day; because these have had to withstand Satan,...while in the world's judgment day Christ will be reigning and Satan will be bound..." *A146*

REV: 20:3: "...that he should deceive the nations no more, till the thousand years should be fulfilled..."

"These have suffered persecution for righteousness, and punished only for unrighteousness..." *A146*

A TIME FOR REJOICING

1 CHRON. 16:31-34: "Let the heavens be glad, and let the earth rejoice: and let *men* say among the nations, The LORD [Jehovah] reigneth. Let the sea roar, and the fullness thereof: let the fields rejoice, and all that *is* [are] therein. Then shall all the trees of the wood sing out [loud] at the presence of the LORD [Jehovah], because he cometh to judge the earth. O give thanks unto the LORD [Jehovah]; for *he is* good; for his mercy *endureth* forever."

MISUNDERSTANDING THROUGH MISTRANSLATION

"In John 5:28,29 a precious promise for the world of a coming **judgment-trial** for life everlasting is, by a mistranslation, turned into a fearful imprecation. According to the Greek, they that have done evil — that have failed of divine approval-will come forth unto a resurrection (raising up to perfection) by judgment, stripes, disciplines." *A147*

JOHN 5:28,29, *RSV*.: "Marvel not at this: for the hour cometh, in which all that are in the tombs shall hear his voice, and shall come forth; they that have done good, unto the resurrection of life; and they that have done evil, unto the resurrection of judgment."

JUSTIFICATION

DEFINITION

"Justification really means only one thing, vis.: a making right, making just....Justification may be either partial or complete." *R5959:2*

From *Young's Literal Bible Translation* under the heading of *Explanation of Bible Terms* — "**just — right; justification — state of being declared right; justify — declare right**." "Example of being '**declared right**.'"

LUKE 18:13,14: "And the publican, standing afar off, would not lift up so much as *his* eyes unto heaven, but smote upon his breast, saying, God be merciful to me a sinner. I tell you, this man went down to his house justified *rather* than the other: for every one that exalteth himself shall be abased; and he that humbleth himself shall be exalted."

Two different significations: Question 24, *R5881:* "Is it merit or righteousness that is imputed to the one who is justified by faith? Answer: We would here need to qualify the expression 'justification by faith,' because in Bible usage this term has **two different significations**. We read, for instance, that Abraham was justified by faith, but surely not in the sense that the church is justified by faith! Abraham was justified to fellowship with God, to receive the promise, to know about certain things that God purposes in the future, and to demonstrate his loyalty to God under a divine standard. But he was not justified to eternal life. He was not justified in the sense that he could be invited to present his body a living sacrifice and become a redeemer for Adam, or in any sense a meritorious sacrifice for another. No one could be thus justified by faith until after the death of Jesus, until his imputation of his merit after he ascended up on high and appeared 'in the presence of God for us' — the church."

CHURCH'S JUSTIFICATION TO LIFE (COMPLETE)

ROM. 3:24-26: "Being justified freely by his grace thru the redemption that is in Christ Jesus: Whom God hath set forth *to be* a propitiation thru faith in his blood, to declare his righteousness for the remission of sins that are past, through the forbearance of God; To declare, *I say*, at this time his righteousness; that he might be just, and the justifier of him which believeth in Jesus."

CHURCH'S JUSTIFICATION IN DETAIL

BY BLOOD

ROM. 5:9: "Much more then, being now justified by his blood, we shall be saved from wrath thru him."

BY FAITH

ROM. 5:1: "THEREFORE being justified by faith, we have peace with God, through our Lord Jesus Christ."

IN JESUS' NAME

1 COR. 6:11: "And such were some of you: but ye are washed, but ye are sanctified, but ye are justified in the name of the Lord Jesus, and by the Spirit of our God."

BY WORKS OF FAITH

JAS. 2:24: "Ye see then how that by works a man is justified, and not by faith only."

JESUS RAISED FOR OUR JUSTIFICATION

ROM. 4:25: "Who was delivered for our offenses, and was raised again for our justification."

GOD JUSTIFIETH

ROM. 8:33: "Who shall lay anything to the charge of God's elect? It is God that justifieth."

ABRAHAM'S JUSTIFICATION (PARTIAL) (INCLUDES ALL THE ANCIENT WORTHIES)

ABRAHAM JUSTIFIED BY FAITH

ROM. 4:2,3: "For if Abraham were justified by works, he hath *whereof* to glory; but not before God. For what saith the scripture? Abraham believed God, and it was counted unto him for righteousness."

SACRED RECORD OF ANCIENT WORTHIES

HEB. 11:1-40: "Now faith is the substance of things hoped for, the evidence of things not seen. For by it the elders obtained a good report....(Of whom the world was not worthy:) they wandered in deserts, and *in* mountains, and *in* dens and caves of the earth. And these all, having obtained a **good report through faith**, received not the promise: God having provided some better thing for us, that they without us should not be made perfect."

JUSTIFIED BY WORKS OF FAITH

JAS. 2:19-24: "Thou believest that there is one God; thou doest well: the devils also believe, and tremble. But wilt thou know, O vain man, that faith without works is dead? Was not Abraham our father justified by works, when he had offered Isaac his son upon the altar? Seest thou how faith wrought with him works, and by works was faith made perfect? And the scripture was fulfilled which saith,

Abraham believed God, and it was imputed unto him for righteousness: and he was called the Friend of God. Ye see then how that by works a man is justified, and not by faith only."

NOT TO LIFE, BUT TO FRIENDSHIP

JAS. 2:23: "And the scripture was fulfilled which saith, Abraham believed God, and it was imputed unto him for righteousness: and he was called the Friend of God."

ISRAEL AS A NATION JUSTIFIED TYPICALLY — Animal Blood Typical Only

HEB. 10:4: "For it is not possible that the blood of bulls and of goats should take away sins."

This is Plane "**P**" on the Chart of the Ages.

JUSTIFICATION TO FRIENDSHIP IN GOSPEL AGE BEFORE FULL CONSECRATION

JOHN 14:1: "Let not your heart be troubled: ye believe in God, believe also in me."

JOHN 15:14,15: "Ye are my FRIENDS, if ye do whatsoever I command you. Henceforth I call you not servants; for the servant knoweth not what his lord doeth: but I have called you FRIENDS; for all things that I have heard of my Father I have made known unto you."

"The subject of Justification has not changed, but it has expanded and clarified. If writing this Volume today, the author would make some slight variations of language, but without any real changes as respects the meaning and application of the word Justification. We now see that a justification to life is one thing, and a justification to more or less of friendship with God is another. Abraham, for instance, **and the faithful before Pentecost**, were justified to friendship with God and to have more or less communication with Him by prayer, etc.; but they could not have full justification until the Blood of Atonement had been presented to and accepted by Divine Justice — the Father. **Just so the sinner today** approaching God might be said to be in the way of Justification (to life) — he would have more of God's favor than if he faced toward sin. We once spoke of a sinner in this condition as being justified, because he believed in Jesus as his Redeemer and was reaching forward to a full consecration of himself. Now we see that while the sinner's attitude, like that of the Ancient Worthies, might be styled 'tentative justification' it would not reach the condition of a full, complete justification from sin until the sinner had fully presented himself in consecration to our great High Priest, Jesus, and had been accepted of Him in the name of the Father. Then, under the covering of the imputed merit of Christ's sacrifice, the

sinner would be acceptable to the Father under Christ's Robe and begotten of the Holy Spirit." *Fiii*

"In the Gospel Age, when one is justified to friendship, he is on the way to, or 'in the way of' justification to life. Justification to friendship changes to justification to life when it is vitalized by the imputation of the merit of Jesus at full consecration and spirit-begetting.

"You see, this one has been tentatively justified up to this time. Now he has come to the place where he has knowledge, he knows what the Lord requires of him, and if he takes the step of consecration he will be begotten of the Spirit a new creature; and this will continue until the last number of the elect shall be completed. But if he does not, then his tentative justification lapses; it does not hold up; it is not confirmed, it is not made actual or vital. The only way in which this faith-justification — is made actual, or vital, is by consecration. Now suppose he consecrates. 'Now, Lord, I have sat down and counted the cost. I have concluded to accept your terms; I give you my whole heart and everything I am and have; I make a full surrender. Use it, Lord, in ways of thine.' Now, having made that consecration, the great Advocate becomes his personal Advocate, and imputes of his merit to cover his blemishes, so that his consecration may be accepted of the Father; and in that way his justification is vitalized, it is made complete; it is made a living justification, he is justified to life; and then being justified to life in that same moment he presents that justified life a living sacrifice, acceptable to God, a living consecration that God accepts thru Christ as a sacrifice; that is the vitalizing of that justification. Up to that point it was not made vital; it was merely a tentative one. He was going in the right direction, and God treated him patiently and encouraged him to go on until he got to the point where he must decide. If he decided to give up all, then the great Advocate vitalized his justification, and by faith he was recognized as being perfect, and by faith he was recognized as presenting himself, and God accepted the sacrifice." *Q402*

THOSE WHOSE JUSTIFICATION IS NOT VITALIZED

"Fortunate it is for the masses who have heard of Jesus and partially believed that their standing with the Lord is not that of full justification, that he refuses to fully justify any until they have become by covenant his disciples, his footstep followers. This is because justification can come only once to each individual, and if he should misuse that justification and fail to get eternal life, he would be in a worse state than if he had never been justified." *Fiii*

FUTURE JUSTIFICATION OF THE WORLD

"If not justified and spirit-begotten in the present time, he is not of the church, but will have a share in the merit of Christ's sacrifice and in the justification which his kingdom will offer to every member of the human family — aside from the church...." *Fiii*

"Now in the world's case in the next age, justification will not be by faith, but by works. You remember in the book of Revelation where it speaks of the world coming forth to their day of Judgment, we read, 'They were (all) judged, every man according to his works.'" *Q402*

JOHN 12:47,48: "And if any man hear my words, and believe not, I judge him not: for I came not to judge the world, but to save the world. He that rejecteth me, and receiveth not my words, hath one that judgeth him: the word that I have spoken, the same shall judge him in the last day."

REV. 20:12,13, *cf, Diag. and interlineary:* "And I saw the DEAD, the GREAT and the LITTLE, standing before the THRONE; and Books were opened; and Another Book was opened, which is the book of the Life; and the DEAD were judged from the THINGS having been WRITTEN in the BOOKS, according to their WORKS. And the SEA gave up the DEAD which were in them; and they were judged each one according to their WORKS."

REV. 22:12: "And, behold, I come quickly; and my reward *is* with me, to give every man according as his work **shall be**."

KINGDOMS OF THIS WORLD

"All other kingdoms than that of Israel are...called the kingdoms 'of this world,' under the 'prince of this world' — Satan. The removal of God's kingdom in the days of Zedekiah left the world without any government which God could approve, or whose laws or affairs he has specially supervised. The Gentile governments God recognized indirectly, in...his decree...that during the interregnum the control of Jerusalem and the world should be exercised by Gentile governments..." *A249*

See also Index: **Chronology; Gentile Times.**

TIMES OF THE GENTILES

LUKE 21:24: "...Jerusalem shall be trodden down of the Gentiles, until the times of the Gentiles be fulfilled."

"This...intervening period of time between the removal of God's scepter and government and the restoration...in Christ, is...termed 'The Times of the Gentiles'..." *A249*

ORDAINED OF GOD

ROM. 13:1: "Let every soul be subject unto the higher powers. For there is no power but of God: the powers that be are ordained of God."

A WISE PURPOSE

"Their imperfection and misrule form a part of the general lesson on the exceeding sinfulness of sin, and prove the inability of fallen men to govern himself, even to his own satisfaction." *A250*

"During the Gospel age, the Kingdom of Christ has existed only in its incipient stage, in its humiliation, without power or privilege of reigning — without the crown, possessing only the scepter of promise: unrecognized by the world, and subject to the 'powers that be' — the Gentile kingdoms. And the heirs of the heavenly kingdom must so continue, until the time appointed for them to reign together with Christ. During the time of trouble, closing this age, they will be exalted to power, but their '**reign**' of righteousness over the world could not precede A. D. 1915 — when the Times of the Gentiles have expired. Therefore it is the duty of the Church to await patiently the appointed time for its triumph and glorious reign: to keep separate from the kingdoms of this world as strangers, pilgrims, and foreigners; and, as heirs of the Kingdom to come, to let their hopes and ambitions center in it. Christians should recognize the true character of these kingdoms, and, while they keep separate from them, should render to them due

respect and obedience, because God has permitted them to rule. As Paul teaches, 'Let every soul be subject unto the higher powers; for there is no power but of God.' Rom.13:1

"Nor can fleshly Israel come into their long promised inheritance until that time, though preparatory steps will previously be taken; for God will not fully establish either the earthly or the spiritual phase of his Kingdom until this lease to the Gentiles expires.

"The crown (dominion) was removed from God's people (both the spiritual and the fleshly seed) until the Times of the Gentiles shall end — at the glorious presence of Messiah, who will be not only 'King of the Jews,' but 'King over all the earth, in that day.' Some may think that this removal of the crown from Israel was a violation of the promise, 'The scepter shall not depart from Judah, nor a law-giver from between his feet, until Shiloh come.' (Gen. 49:10) Note, however, a distinction between the **crown** and the **scepter**; for, though the crown passed away in the days of Zedekiah, the scepter, as we shall see, did not depart until six hundred and thirty-nine years afterward — when our Lord Jesus, of the tribe of Judah and seed of David according to the flesh, being approved of God, became the rightful and only heir of the long-promised scepter of earth." *B80, 81*

PSA. 76:10: "Surely the wrath of man shall praise thee: the remainder of wrath shalt thou restrain."

SATAN THE INVISIBLE PRINCE

"Man's inability to establish a perfect government is attributable to...his fallen... condition. Those weaknesses have also been taken advantage of by Satan....

2 TIM. 2:26: "'...captive...at his will...'

"...and made himself...

JOHN 14:30; 12:31: "'...the prince of this world....'

"...by usurpation; through...deception and control of fallen men." *A250*

"...it was because Satan possessed such control that he could offer to make our Lord the...visible sovereign of the earth under his direction." *A251*

MATT. 4:9: "...All these things will I give thee, if thou wilt fall down and worship me."

FOUR UNIVERSAL EMPIRES

DAN. 2:37-42: "Thou, O king, *art* a king of kings: for the God of heaven hath given thee a kingdom, power, and strength, and glory. And wheresoever the children of men dwell, the beasts of the field and the fowls of the heaven hath he given into thy hand, and hath made thee ruler over

them all. *Thou art* this head of gold. And after thee shall arise another kingdom inferior to thee, and another third kingdom of brass, which shall bear rule over all the earth. And the fourth kingdom shall be strong as iron....And whereas thou sawest the feet and toes, part of potters' clay, and part of iron, the kingdom shall be divided;...*so* the kingdom shall be partly strong, and partly broken (or brittle)." *A253*

"These are termed universal empires — Babylon,...Medo-Persia,...Greece,...and Rome.... The Roman held...sway, at the time of our Lord's birth, as we read...

LUKE 2:1: "'...there went out a decree from Caesar Augustus, that all the world should be taxed [margin, enrolled].'

"The iron empire, Rome, was by far the strongest, and...still continues (1886) as represented in the nations of Europe. This division is represented in the ten toes of the image. The clay element blended with the iron ...represents the mixture of church and state termed 'Babylon' — confusion....This mixed system...the church nominal wedded to the kingdoms of this world...presumes to call itself Christendom...." *A253*

DAN. 2:43: "And whereas thou sawest iron mixed with miry clay, they shall mingle themselves with the seed of men: but they shall not cleave one to another, even as iron is not mixed with clay."

THE COUNTERFEIT KINGDOM

"The Papal system has long claimed that it is the kingdom which the God of heaven... promised to set up, and that...it did break in pieces and consume all other kingdoms. The truth...is that the nominal church merely united with earthly empires, and that Papacy never was the true kingdom of God. One of the best evidences that Papacy did not...consume these... kingdoms is that they still (1886) exist. And now that the miry clay has become dry and 'brittle,' it is losing its adhesive power, and the iron and clay show signs of dissolution...." *A254*

DANIEL'S VIEW OF THOSE KINGDOMS VERSUS NEBUCHADNEZZAR'S

"In Nebuchadnezzar's vision we see the empires of earth...from the world's standpoint,...an exhibition of human glory, grandeur, and power; though...also...an intimation of their decay and final destruction...in the deterioration from gold to iron and clay." *A256*

"The world loves, admires, praises, and defends the rulers and governments represented in this great image, though it has been continually disappointed, deceived, wounded, and oppressed by them. The world extols...its Alexanders,

Caesars, Bonapartes, and others, whose greatness showed itself in the slaughter of their fellow men....And...in the 'ten toes' of the image, as we see...today...more than twelve million (in 1886) men armed with every fiendish device of modern ingenuity, to slaughter one another." *A256*

MAL. 3:15: "And now we call the proud happy; yea, they that work wickedness are set up...."

"From the standpoint of God and those in harmony with him, as...portrayed...to...Daniel ...these kingdoms appear inglorious and beastly. ..." *A257*

DAN. 7:3-7: "...four great beasts came up from the sea....The first was like a lion,...And... another beast...like to a bear....and lo another, like a leopard,...and...a fourth beast, dreadful and terrible, and strong exceedingly;...and it had ten horns."

"The details relative to the first three... (Babylon...,Medo-Persia...,and Greece)...we pass by...." *A257*

"The fourth beast,....the Roman Empire is shown; and the divisions...in the ten horns...." *A258*

DAN. 7:8: "I considered the horns, and...there came up among them another little horn...and... in this horn *were* eyes like the eyes of man, and a mouth speaking great things."

"The little horn...represents the Church of Rome....its eyes, representing intelligence, and...its mouth...its utterances, its claims, etc." *A258*

"Rome, when viewed in the light of its bloody persecutions,...has been the most devilish of all earthly governments. Even in its change from Rome Pagan to Rome Papal it illustrated one of Satan's chief characteristics; for...." *A258*

2 COR. 11:14: "...Satan himself is transformed into an angel of light."

THE CONSUMING AND DESTRUCTION

DAN. 7:26: "But the judgment shall sit, and they shall take away his dominion, to consume and to destroy *it* unto the end."

"This beast or Roman Empire...will be slain by the rising of the masses of the people, and the over-throw of governments, in the 'Day of the Lord,' preparatory to the recognition of the heavenly rulership....The **consuming** of the Papal horn comes first. Its power and influence began to consume when Napoleon took the Pope prisoner....Then when neither the curses of the Pope nor their prayers delivered them...it became evident...that the divine authority and power claimed...were without foundation. After that, the temporal power of the Papacy waned rapidly

until, in September 1870 it lost the last vestige...at the hands of Victor Immanuel." *A259*

"Nevertheless, during all that time...in which it was being 'consumed,' it kept uttering its great swelling words...In 1870,...but a few months before...it made the declaration of the **infallibility** of the Popes...." *A259*

DAN. 7:11: "I beheld then because of the voice of the great words which the horn spake...."

"...the thing to be expected, so far as the empires of the earth are concerned, is their utter destruction...." *A260*

DAN. 7:11,12: "...I beheld *even* till the beast was slain, and his body destroyed, and given to the burning flame. As concerning the rest of the beasts, they had their dominion taken away: yet their lives were prolonged for a season and time."

LOSS OF DOMINION AND DESTRUCTION

"(Babylon, Persia, and Greece) had their **dominion** taken from them...but their lives as nations did not cease immediately, Greece and Persia (Iran) still have some life, though it is long...since universal dominion passed from their grasp....The fourth and last of these beasts....will lose dominion and life at once, and go into utter destruction; and with it the others will pass away also...." *A260*

DAN. 2:35: "Then was the iron, the clay, the brass, the silver, and the gold broken to pieces together, and became like the chaff of the summer threshingfloors; and the wind carried them away, that no place was found for them...."

CAUSE OF THEIR DESTRUCTION

"No matter what...the means..., the cause...will be the establishment of...the kingdom of God under Christ...." *A260*

NOT PEACEFULLY

"The 'kingdoms of this world; like the prince of this world,' will not surrender peaceably, but must be bound and restrained by force." *A261*

PSA. 149:8,9: "To bind their kings with chains, and their nobles with fetters of iron; To execute upon them the judgment written: this honor have all his saints...."

DAN. 2:44: "And in the days of these kings shall the God of heaven set up a kingdom, which shall never be destroyed: and the kingdom shall not be left to other people, *but* it shall break in pieces and consume all these kingdoms, and it shall stand forever."

BETTER THAN LAWLESSNESS

"While making no attempt to excuse our rebel race, we can sympathize with its vain efforts to govern itself....These...governments, corrupt though they have been,...have been much better than lawlessness and anarchy...." *A262*

SATAN'S USURPATION

"Man's idea was self-government independent of God; and when God permitted him to try the experiment, Satan embraced the opportunity to extend his....dominion." *A263*

MAN'S OBJECTIVE IN SELF-GOVERNMENT

"Though...corruption and selfishness have turned aside...justice,...the ostensible object of all governments...has been...justice and the well-being of all...." *A263*

"Where the ends of justice have been greatly ignored, either the masses have been... deceived...or wars, commotions, and revolutions have been the result." *A263*

"The dark deeds of base tyrants...did not represent the laws and institutions of those governments, but in usurping authority they gave to those governments their beastly character. Every government has had a majority of...good laws...for the protection of life and property,...the punishment of crime, etc....Poor as these governments have been, without them the baser element of society would, by force of numbers have overcome the juster, better element." *A263*

"But after centuries of experiment, dissatisfaction is more general...than ever...; not because there is more oppression and injustice ...,but because...man's eyes are being opened by the increase of knowledge." *A264*

"Governments...have exhibited the **average ability** of the people represented...to govern themselves. Even where despotic governments have existed, the fact that they have been tolerated by the masses proved that...they were not capable of establishing...a better government, though many individuals were always, doubtless, far in advance of the average..." *A264*

PRESENT AWAKENING

Today....men are not so easily...deceived and led by rulers and politicians, and...will not submit to the yokes of former days. This change has been clearly marked only as far back as the sixteenth century; and its progress has been most rapid within the last fifty years. (1886) This change is the...result of the...increase...of knowledge among the masses....The preparation for this...began with the invention of printing about 1440 A.D.....This increase of

knowledge ...is one of the mighty influences...now... binding Satan — curtailing his influence...." *A265*

"The increase of knowledge...awakens...self respect among men and a realization of their natural and inalienable rights, which they will not long permit to be ignored....Because of the increase of knowledge...widespread dissatisfaction will finally express itself in a world-wide revolution, in the overthrow of all law and order;...anarchy and distress upon all classes...." *A265*

OUR ATTITUDE

"...neither Jesus nor the apostles interfered with earthly rulers....They taught the Church to submit to these powers, even though they often suffered under their abuse of power....to respect those in authority, even if...not personally worthy...; to pay...taxes, and except where they conflicted with God's laws...to offer no resistance to any established law....

ACTS 4:19: "...Whether it be right in the sight of God to hearken unto you more than unto God, judge ye."

ACTS 5:29: "...We ought to obey God rather than men."

"The Lord Jesus and the apostles and the early Church were all law-abiding, though they...took no share in the governments of this world." *A266*

ROM. 13:1-7: "Let every soul be subject unto the higher powers. For there is no power but of God: the powers that be are ordained of God. Whosoever therefore resisteth the power, resisteth the ordinance of God: and they that resist shall receive to themselves damnation (Diag. interlineary, judgment). For rulers are not a terror to good works, but to the evil. Wilt thou then not be afraid of the power? do that which is good, and thou shalt have praise of the same: For he is the minister of God to thee,...a revenger to *execute* wrath upon him that doeth evil. Wherefore *ye* must needs be subject, not only for wrath, but also for conscience sake. For this cause pay ye tribute also: for they *are* God's ministers, attending continually upon this very thing. Render therefore to all their dues: tribute to whom tribute *is due*; custom to whom custom; fear to whom fear; honour to whom honour."

MATT. 22:21: "...Render therefore unto Caesar the things which are Caesar's; and unto God the things that are God's."

NOT ENGAGING IN POLITICS

"...the consecrated ones who aspire to office in the coming kingdom of God, should neither covet the honors and emoluments of office in the kingdoms of this world, nor should they oppose these powers. They are fellow-citizens and heirs of the coming kingdom...and...should claim only

such rights...under the kingdoms of this world as are accorded to aliens...." *A266*

EPH. 2:19: "Now therefore ye are...fellow citizens with the saints and of the household of God."

"Their mission is not to help the world to improve its present condition, nor to have anything to do with its affairs at present....The influence of the **true** Church...has been...so small as to count practically nothing politically....The saints may influence the world only by their separateness from it, by letting their light shine; and thus through their lives the spirit of truth reproves the world. Thus — as peaceable, orderly obeyers and commanders of every righteous law, reprovers of lawlessness and sin, and pointers forward to the promised kingdom of God..., and not by...mingling in politics and scheming with the world for power, and thus being drawn into wars and sins and the general degradation — in glorious chastity should the prospective Bride of the Prince of Peace be a power for good...." *A267*

"The Church...should give its **entire attention** and effort to preaching the kingdom of God, and to advancement of the interests of that kingdom according to the plan laid down in the Scriptures. If this is faithfully done there will be no time nor disposition to dabble in...politics. ..." *A267*

RESULTS OF ERRONEOUS VIEW

"But some thought...instead of suffering, to get the Church into a position of favor with the world. By a combination with earthly powers they succeeded. As a result Papacy was developed and in time became the mistress...of nations." *A268*

REV. 17:3,5, *Diag.*: "...I saw a Woman sitting on a scarlet Beast...and on her FOREHEAD a name written, Mystery, Babylon the GREAT."

REV. 18:7, *Diag.*: "...I sit a Queen and am not a Widow."

"Soon she began to invent new theories... deceiving herself and then the nations, into the belief that the promised Millennial reign of Christ had come, and that Christ the King was represented by her popes, who reigned over the kings of the earth as his vicegerents. Her claims were successful in deceiving the whole world....Soon the kings of Europe were crowned or deposed by her edict." *A268*

"Thus...the kingdoms of Europe...claim to be Christian kingdoms, and...that their sovereigns reign 'by the grace of God,' i.e., through appointment of...Papacy or some of the Protestant sects." *A268*

"God never approved of calling these kingdoms by the name of Christ. Deceived by the church nominal these nations are...claiming to be what they are not. Their only title, aside

from the vote of the people, is in God's limited grant, spoken to Nebuchadnezzar — until He comes whose right the dominion is." *A269*

"The claim that these imperfect kingdoms...are the kingdoms...

REV.11:15: "'...of our Lord and his Anointed...'

"...is a gross libel upon the true kingdom of Christ...and upon the 'Prince of Peace' and righteous rulers." *A269*

ISA.32:1: "BEHOLD a king shall reign in righteousness, and princes shall rule in judgment."

"Another...injury...from that error is that the attention of the children of God has...been attracted away from the promised...kingdom; and they have been led to an improper recognition of and intimacy with earthly kingdoms and to...attempts to engraft upon these...the graces and morals of Christianity, to the neglect of the Gospel of the true kingdom..." *A269*

"...earth's nations are but 'kingdoms of this world' whose lease...is...expired..." *A270*

"Christian people...since they should uphold the kingdom of Christ...feel...bound to champion the present falling kingdoms...;and thus their sympathies are often forced to the side of oppression, rather than...right and freedom — ...the kingdom of Christ..." *A270*

REV. 17:14: "...he is Lord of lords and King of kings: and they that are with him *are* called, and chosen, and faithful."

REV. 19:19 *Diag.*: "And I saw the BEAST, and the KINGS of the EARTH, and their ARMIES gathered together to make War against [with] HIM that sat [sitting] on the HORSE, and against [with] his ARMY. [Cf. Diag. and interlineary.]"

THE WORLD AWAKENED

"The world is fast coming to realize that the 'kingdoms of this world' are not Christlike, ...and they will act out their convictions so much more violently as they realize that a deception has been practiced upon them...Many conclude that Christianity itself is an imposition without foundation, and that, leagued with civil rulers, its aim is...to hold in check the liberties of the masses." *A270*

THE KINGDOMS DO NOT LEARN

"O that men...would...understand the work and plan of the Lord! Then would the...kingdoms melt down gradually — reform would...follow reform, and liberty follow liberty, and truth and justice would be established...But they will not do this...; and so...the kingdoms of this world will pass away with a great time of trouble..." *A271*

PSA. 2:1-6,10-12: "Why do the nations tumultuously assemble, and the people meditate a vain thing? The kings of the earth set themselves, and the rulers take counsel together against the LORD, and against his anointed, *saying*, Let us break their bands asunder, and cast away their cords from us. He that sitteth in the heavens shall laugh: the Lord shall have them in derision. Then shall he speak unto them in his wrath, and vex them in his sore displeasure [saying] **I have anointed my King** upon my holy hill of Zion...Be wise now, therefore, O ye kings: be instructed, ye judges of the earth. Serve the LORD with fear and rejoice with trembling. Kiss [make friends with] the Son [God's Anointed] lest he be angry, and ye perish **in** the way; for his wrath **may** soon **be** kindled. Blessed *are* all they that take refuge in him."

See Index: **Antichrist; Chronology (Gentile Times); The Day of Vengeance; Babylon; Conscientious Objection to War; Five World Empires; Kingdom of God.**

LIBERTY IN CHRIST

DEFINITION OF LIBERTY

Greek: *Eleutheria* from *eleutheros*; **freedom** (legitimate or licentious, chiefly moral or ceremony). *Strongs*

NEW CREATION NOW UNDER LAW OF LIBERTY

JAS. 1:25: "...Perfect law of liberty."

"The New Creation, now under the Law of Liberty,...hate sin and love righteousness and use their liberty, not as an opportunity to gratify the flesh, but to mortify it — not to revel in sin, but to sacrifice earthly interests in co-operation with the Lord in putting away sin and ridding the world of it and wages of death. Those begotten again to this new spirit or disposition...these, and these alone, can be safely put under the Law of Liberty." *F378*

"...the sons of God must learn to use the liberty of sonship and thereby show the more particularly their absolute obedience to the law and principles of love." *F235*

"God makes this Law of Liberty applicable only to the New Creation." *F377*

GAL. 5:13: "...ye have been called unto liberty."

"...if they lose the spirit of their adoption, they cease to be sons, cease to be under this Law of Liberty." *F378*

"...the enlightening influences of the Bible have been accepted by Christendom while its law of love...has been generally ignored." *D307*

"...use your liberty...in sacrificing present rights for the sake of the truth and its service..." *F92*

FULL LIBERTY TO EACH MEMBER

"The scriptural idea of unity is upon the foundation principles of the Gospel. (1) Our redemption through the precious blood, and our justification by faith therein. (2) Our consecration, sanctification, setting apart to the Lord, the Truth and their service — including the service to the brethren. (3) Aside from these essentials, upon which unity must be demanded, there can be no scriptural fellowship — upon every other point fullest liberty is to be accorded, with, however, a desire to see, and to help others to see the divine plan in its every feature and detail." *F240*

DO NOT MISUSE LIBERTY

GAL. 5:13: "...*use* not liberty for an occasion to the flesh, but by love serve one another."

"...those who most clearly discern the liberty wherewith Christ makes free shall not misuse their liberty so as to stumble others; but use it rather as unto God and each other for opportunities to grow in grace, knowledge, and all the fruits of the Spirit." *F386*

"...it is also true that we should be on guard lest we use our liberty in such a manner as to stumble others weaker than ourselves..." *R4920:1*

(**ROM. 14**) "...Love, therefore, would forbid the use of knowledge and liberty if it perceived that their exercise might work injury to another." *R4920:4*

"...so govern your exercise of that liberty that none will misunderstand it." *R5325:1*

1 PET. 2:16: "...not using liberty for a cloak of maliciousness..."

JAS. 2:12: "So speak ye, and so do as they that shall be judged by the law of liberty."

KEEP YOUR LIBERTY

GAL. 5:1: "STAND fast therefore in the liberty wherewith Christ hath made us free, and be not entangled again with the yoke of bondage."

"The true teacher's place, and the true Bible student's place, is outside of all human bondage, free to examine and feed upon all portions of the good Word of God, and untrammeled to follow the Lamb whithersoever he leads." *C144*

"Every one who comes to realize the liberty of the sons of God and full freedom from Babylon's bondage should expect to meet other attempts of the great adversary to bring him into other bondages, or to stumble him." *C188*

"The tendency of the human mind is either toward anarchy on the one hand, or toward tight organization and bondage on the other. The divine arrangement, avoiding both of these extremes, marks out for the New Creation an organization simple in the extreme, and devoid of everything akin to bondage." *F234*

"...allowing no one to pen us up by human creeds; neither allowing any to lead us out beyond the bounds fixed for us by the Chief Shepherd, into liberties, licenses, and speculations that he never authorized." *R3143:4*

"Every means that could be thought of was employed to crush out the very spirit of true Christianity..." *reference unknown*

GAL. 2:4: "...false brethren...came in privily to spy out our liberty which we have in Christ Jesus, that they might bring us into bondage."

STILL MORE LIBERTY NEEDED

2 COR. 3:17: "...where the spirit of the Lord *is*, there *is* liberty."

"Instead of having too many divisions or splits of the kind we now see on every hand, the real need of the Church of Christ is **still more liberty** — until each individual member shall stand free and independent of all human bonds, creeds, confessions, etc. With...each individual Christian united in loyalty to the Lord and to his Word, very quickly the original unity which the Scriptures inculcated would be discerned and all true children of God...would find themselves drawn to each other member similarly free, and bound to each other by the cords of love far more strongly than are men bound in earthly systems and societies." *F241*

"The difficulty is in knowing how to balance our liberties as new creatures with these blemishes of the old nature — the natural man." *R4005:2*

ALL TO THE GLORY OF GOD

1 COR. 10:29: "...why is my liberty judged of another *man's* conscience?"

"Whoever realizes the true meaning of his consecration vow, the true significance of his begettal of the holy Spirit, the true meaning of the perfect law of liberty under which he has come, the law of love, will find it ample for the regulation of all of life's affairs, for

he must seek thereafter that whether he eats or drinks or whatever he does all shall be to the glory of God." *R4007:5*

WORLD UNDER LAW OF LIBERTY AT END OF MILLENNIUM

ROM. 8:21: "...from the bondage of corruption into the glorious liberty of the children of God."

"The liberty of the sons of God was lost to our race through the disobedience of our first parents." *R4005:4*

"The world will not be left to a Law of Love during the Millennium, but will be ruled with Justice and Mercy under a law of obedience to the Kingdom. Not until the close of the Kingdom (when the willful evildoers shall have been cut off in the Second Death) will the race — proved perfect and fully in accord with the divine standard — be put under the Law of Liberty — Love, and its Golden Rule." *F378*

ROM. 14:13-17,20,21: "...Let us not...judge one another...: but judge this...that no man put a stumbling-block or an occasion to fall in *his* brother's way....*there is* nothing unclean of itself: but to him that esteemeth anything to be unclean, to him *it is* unclean. But if thy brother be grieved with *thy* meat, now walkest thou not charitably. Destroy

not him with thy meat, for whom Christ died. Let not then your good be evil spoken of. For the kingdom of God is not meat and drink; but righteousness, and peace, and joy in the Holy Spirit....For meat destroy not the work of God. All things indeed *are* pure; but *it is* evil for that man who eateth with offense. *It is* good neither to eat flesh, nor to drink wine, nor any thing whereby thy brother stumbleth, or is offended, or is made weak."

NEW LIGHT (?)

"However much they should ever come to respect prophesyings, or public speaking, the Lord's people should learn proportionately not to receive what they might hear without proper examination and criticism: they should prove all things that they hear, should exercise discrimination of mind, as to what is logically and scripturally supported, and what is mere conjecture and possibly sophistry. They should prove what they hear with a view to holding fast everything that stands the test of the divine Word, and shows itself to be in accordance with the Holy Spirit; and they should as promptly reject whatever will not stand these tests." *R3137:4 (MANNA, Aug. 18)*

HOW TO TEST TEACHINGS

1 THES. 5:20,21: "Despise not prophesyings. Prove all things; hold fast that which is good."

EPH. 4:11-16: "And He gave some, apostles; and some, prophets; and some, evangelists; and some, pastors and teachers; For the perfecting of the saints, for the work of the ministry, for the edifying of the body of Christ: Till we all come in the unity of the faith, and of the knowledge of the Son of God, unto a perfect man, unto the measure of the stature of the fullness of Christ: that we *henceforth* be no more children, tossed to and fro, and carried about with every wind of doctrine, by the sleight of men, *and* cunning craftiness, whereby they lie in wait to deceive; But speaking the truth in love, may grow up into him in all things, which is the head, *even* Christ: From whom the whole body fitly joined together and compacted by that which every joint supplieth, according to the effectual working in the measure of every part, maketh increase of the body unto the edifying of itself in love."

TRYING THE SPIRITS

"We are to 'try the spirits,' the teachings, the doctrines. This does not signify, however, that we are to be 'blown about by every wind of doctrine.' We should know in whom we have believed; and having been once convinced, we should not be easily turned aside from a properly grounded faith." *R5913:5*

1 JOHN 4:1: "Beloved, believe not every spirit, but try the spirits whether they are of God: because many false prophets are gone out into the world."

"If we are satisfied that we have been building upon the Rock Foundation furnished us in the divine Revelation, we should expect that any further light coming to us would not be contradictory to what we have found to be Scriptural and harmonious with the divine character. On the contrary, we

should expect that all further light from the divine Word would be consistent with the foundations of our faith." *R5913:6*

AVOID FORBIDDEN PATHS

"When we see others walking in forbidden paths, the way of transgressors, we are not to follow them there in order to help them out; but to show them the right path by keeping in it and calling to them. When we see some confusing themselves with doctrines and teachings of men, which we know are fundamentally wrong, we are not to wade through those doctrines in order to help them out; but we are to remind them that the study of any doctrine which will not square with the *foundation* is not only a misuse of consecrated time, but that all trifling with that which we know to be error is

wrong and dangerous, as all violations of conscience and principle are dangerous." *R1860:3 (MANNA, June 8)*

BY WHAT TO PROVE NEW LIGHT

"It will be well for us all to remember that all the graces of the Spirit, all the progress in the knowledge of divine things to have helped us nearer to God and to holiness, have come to us through the Scriptures of the Old Testament and the words of our Lord and his inspired apostles: nor will it ever be necessary to go to other channels for the true wisdom which would prepare us for the salvation promised." *R2166:2 (MANNA, May 21)*

1 TIM. 4:1,2: "Now the Spirit speaketh expressly, that in the latter times some shall depart from the faith [through] giving heed to seducing spirits, and doctrines of devils [demons]; Speaking lies in hypocrisy...."

"These 'seducing spirits and doctrines of devils,' so successful over the entire world in all past time, the Lord advises his people, will be specially active and specially seductive in form in the close or 'harvest' of this Gospel age." *R1643:1*

"We are also forewarned that this 'hypocrisy' consists in personating *messengers of light* ('angels of light')..., and affecting to bring in 'new light')." *R1643:1*

HOW SATAN DECEIVED MANY

2 COR. 11:14,15: "...Satan himself is transformed into an angel of light. Therefore it is no great thing if his ministers also be transformed as the ministers of righteousness...."

DESIRE FOR CHANGE NOT NORMAL

"The restless desire for something new, that now prevails, is not a natural but an abnormal condition, due to our imperfection, and to our present unsatisfactory surroundings. It is not God-like restlessly to crave

something new. Most things are old to God and he rejoices most in those things which are old and perfect." *reference unknown*

LIGHT, THOUGH NOT SELF-CONTRADICTORY IS PROGRESSIVE

"While it is true that the path of each individual believer is a shining one, yet the special application of this statement is to the just (justified) as a class. Patriarchs, prophets, apostles, and saints of the past and present have walked in its increasing light; and the light will continue to increase beyond the present — 'unto the perfect day.' It is one continuous path, and the one continuous and increasing light is the Divine Record, illuminating as it becomes due." *A20*

PROV. 4:18: "...the path of the just is as the shining light, that shineth more and more unto the perfect day."

See also Index: **Walking in the Light**

MARRIAGE

(MARRIAGE, RE-MARRIAGE AND DIVORCE)

"Marriage between man and woman is a picture, or illustration, of the union to take place between Christ and the church; and God so ordained that it should be." *R5900:2*

SCRIPTURES PERMITTING MARRIAGE

GEN. 1:28: "And God blessed them, and God said unto them, Be fruitful, and multiply, and replenish the earth...."

"The Lord's words in this connection were to the natural man and woman and not to the church — new creatures in Christ Jesus." *R3922:5*

"...for others who are not new creatures, though moral and well disposed, marriage is the reasonable and proper expectation of life according to the divine arrangement." *R4091:1*

GEN. 2:18: "And the LORD God said, *It is* not good that man should be alone; I will make an help meet for him."

PROV. 18:22: "*Whoso* findeth a wife findeth a good *thing*, and obtaineth favour of the LORD."

JOHN 2:2: "And both Jesus was called, and his disciples, to the marriage."

"The fact that our Lord was willing to attend the wedding implies a sympathy with the marriage institution." *R2418:3*

1 COR. 7:2: "...let every man have his own wife, and let every woman have her own husband."

1 COR. 7:9: "...it is better to marry than to burn."

1 COR. 7:28: "But and if thou marry, thou hast not sinned; and if a young virgin marry, she hath not sinned...."

"No matter what others may say or do, each one of the Lord's people is to be guided in his judgment by the letter and spirit of God's Word, the Bible." *R5353:1*

1 COR. 7:36: "...if any man think that he behaveth himself uncomely toward his virgin...let them marry."

"St. Paul points out distinctly that there is no law of God to prohibit brothers and sisters in the Lord from marrying if they find, in their judgment, that this is the necessary or preferable thing in their cases." *R5353:1*

1 TIM. 4:1,3: "...some shall depart from the faith...Forbidding to marry."

"None are forbidden to marry, and false teachers who have since arisen, forbidding to marry, are condemned as seriously out of order." *R1554:1*

"It is not...the province of anybody to forbid marriage, directly or indirectly." *Q460*

1 TIM. 5:14: "I will therefore that the younger women marry...."

"[these]...words were not respecting the young sisters who were consecrated to the Lord, but...were spoken with reference to young widows of the church in general who should not be made financial burdens on the church. (vss. 3-16)" *R1554:2*

1 TIM. 5:3-16: "Honour widows that are widows indeed. But if any widow have children or nephews, let them learn first to shew piety at home, and to requite their parents: for that is good and acceptable before God. Now she that is a widow indeed, and desolate, trusteth in God, and continueth in supplications and

prayers night and day. But she that liveth in pleasure is dead while she liveth. And these things give in charge, that they may be blameless. But if any provide not for his own, and specially for those of his own house, he hath denied the faith, and is worse than an infidel. Let not a widow be taken into the number under threescore years old, having been the wife of one man. Well reported of for good works; if she have brought up children, if she have lodged strangers, if she have washed the saints' feet, if she have relieved the afflicted, if she have diligently followed every good work. But the younger widows refuse: for when they have begun to wax wanton against Christ, they will marry; having damnation, because they have cast off their first faith. And withal they learn to be idle, wandering about from house to house; and not only idle, but tattlers also and busybodies, speaking things which they ought not. I will therefore that the younger women marry, bear children, guide the house, give none occasion to the adversary to speak reproachfully. For some are already turned aside after Satan. If any man or woman that believeth have widows, let them relieve them, and let not the church be charged; that it may relieve them that are widows indeed."

HEB.13:4: "Marriage is honorable in all...."

"He does not say that the marriage state is unholy or impure or in any way contrary to God's law." *R5353:1*

SCRIPTURES NOT FAVORING MARRIAGE

MATT. 19:12: "...and there be eunuchs, which have made themselves eunuchs for the kingdom of heaven's sake...."

"...our Lord Jesus...by the power of his consecrated will, became a eunuch for the kingdom of heaven's sake." *R3922:5*

1 COR. 7:1: "...*It is* good for a man not to touch a woman."

1 COR. 7:8: "I say therefore to the unmarried and widows, It is good for them if they abide even as I."

"...with very rare exceptions, the *consecrated* can best fulfil their covenant by walking alone with God, having only his preferences to consult in every matter and entirely untrammeled by domestic cares." *R1554:2*

"But the advice to remain unmarried, he would have us to understand, is not imperative." *R1554:1*

1 COR. 7:28: "...Nevertheless such shall have trouble in the flesh: but I spare you."

1 COR. 7:34-38: "There is difference *also* between a wife and a virgin. The unmarried woman careth for the things of the Lord, that she may be holy both in body and in spirit: but she that is married careth for the things of the world, how she may please her husband. And this I speak for your own profit; not that I may cast a snare upon you, but for that which is comely, and that ye may attend upon the Lord without distraction. But if any man think that he behaveth himself uncomely toward his virgin, if she pass the flower of *her* age, and need so require, let him do what he will, he sinneth not: let them marry. Nevertheless he that standeth steadfast in his heart, having no necessity, but hath power over his own will, and hath so decreed in his heart that he will keep his virgin, doeth well. So then he that giveth *her* in marriage doeth well; but he that giveth *her* not in marriage doeth better."

"The advice not to marry usually will be found helpful to those who have made a full consecration of themselves to the Lord, who will find that they can accomplish more in the Lord's service free, as far as possible, from earthly obligations and division of heart." *R4091:1*

"The establishing of an earthly home and the rearing of an earthly family...should not be the ambition of the saints." *reference unknown*

1 COR. 7:40: "But she is happier if she so abide, after my judgment, and I think also that I have the Spirit of God."

UNEQUALLY YOKED

EXOD. 34:15,16: "Lest thou make a covenant with the inhabitants of the land, and they go a whoring after their gods, and do sacrifice unto their gods, and *one* call thee, and thou eat of his sacrifice; And thou take of their daughters unto thy sons, and their daughters go a whoring after their gods, and make thy sons go a whoring after their gods."

DEUT. 7:3: "Neither shalt thou make marriages with them; thy daughter thou shalt not give unto his son, nor his daughter shalt thou take unto thy son."

NEH. 13:25-27: "And I contended with them, and cursed them, and smote certain of them, and plucked off their hair,

and made them swear by God, *saying*, Ye shall not give your daughters unto their sons, nor take their daughters unto your sons, or for yourselves. Did not Solomon king of Israel sin by these things? yet among many nations was there no king like him, who was beloved of his God, and God made him king over all Israel: nevertheless even him did outlandish women cause to sin. Shall we then hearken unto you to do all this great evil, to transgress against our God in marrying strange wives?"

2 COR. 6:14: "Be ye not unequally yoked together with unbelievers: for what fellowship hath righteousness with unrighteousness? and what communion hath light with darkness?"

"Neither should one who has become a New Creature in Christ Jesus become unequally yoked with one who is still of the earth, earthy — no matter how noble and honorable the person may be." *F496*

"There is surely divine wisdom in this injunction, yet it is not a law, and Christians who have married unconsecrated persons are not to leave them, but fulfil their marriage covenants." *R4912:4*

MARRIAGE IS BINDING

MATT. 19:6: "Wherefore they are no more twain, but one flesh. What therefore God hath joined together, let not man put asunder."

MATT. 19:9: "And I say unto you, Whosoever shall put away his wife, except *it be* for fornication, and shall marry another, committeth adultery: and whoso marrieth her which is put away doth commit adultery."

"The marriage relation, both in its duration and in its character, was designed to be a type of the lasting, faithful and blessed union of Christ and the church." *R1554:5*

MARK 10:9: "What therefore God hath joined together, let not man put asunder."

"This is the marriage covenant; this is binding; this is unalterable; this must not be broken; the pledges here made must be observed, in letter and spirit." *R3110:1*

ROM. 7:2,3: "For the woman which hath an husband is bound by the law to *her* husband so long as he liveth; but if the husband be dead, she is loosed from the law of *her* husband. So then if, while

her husband liveth, she be married to another man, she shall be called an adulteress: but if her husband be dead, she is free from that law; so that she is no adulteress, though she be married to another man."

1 COR. 7:10,11: "And unto the married I command, *yet* not I, but the Lord, Let not the wife depart from *her* husband: But and if she depart, let her remain unmarried, or be

reconciled to *her* husband: and let not the husband put away *his* wife."

1 COR. 7:27: "Art thou bound unto a wife? seek not to be loosed. Art thou loosed from a wife? seek not a wife."

1 COR. 7:39: "The wife is bound by the law as long as her husband liveth; but if her husband be dead, she is at liberty to be married to whom she will; only in the Lord."

"Whoever has neglected this advice has either rued his neglect or by it has been led so far astray as to be unable to appreciate his own decline from godliness." *R2069:4*

MARRIAGE A TYPE

HOS. 2:19,20: "And I will betroth thee unto me for ever; yea, I will betroth thee unto me in righteousness, and in judgment, and in loving-kindness, and in mercies. I will even betroth thee unto me in faithfulness: and thou shalt know the LORD."

PSA. 45:10-16: "Hearken, O daughter, and consider, and incline thine ear; forget also thine own people, and thy father's house; So shall the king greatly desire thy beauty: for he *is* thy Lord; and worship thou him. And the daughter of Tyre *shall be there* with a gift; *even* the rich among the people shall entreat thy favour. The king's daughter *is* all glorious within: her clothing *is* of wrought gold. She shall be brought unto the king in raiment of needlework: the virgins her companions that follow her shall be brought unto thee. With gladness and rejoicing shall they be brought: they shall enter into the king's palace. Instead of thy fathers shall be thy children, whom thou mayest make princes in all the earth."

MATT. 19:6: "Wherefore they are no more twain, but one flesh...."

"The marriage relation, both in its duration and in its character, was designed to be a type of the lasting, faithful and blessed union of Christ and the church." *R1554:5*

1 COR. 11:3: "But I would have you know that the head of every man is Christ; and the head of the woman *is* the man; and head of Christ *is* God."

"Thus God taught the headship of man...." *R1549:5*

"As a woman who becomes a wife accepts her husband as the head of the family, so the church accepts Christ as its Head...." *R2845:1*

EPH. 5:23: "For the husband is the head of the wife, even as Christ is the head of the church..."

"In Biblical usage a woman symbolizes the Church, and a man symbolizes the Lord, the Head or Master of the Church." *F270*

"The marriage relationship amongst mankind is intended under divine arrangement to be a figure or illustration of the relationship between Christ and the Church, his Bride, his body." *F494*

EPH. 5:31,32: "For this cause shall a man leave his father and mother, and shall be joined unto his wife, and they two shall be one flesh. This is a great mystery: but I speak concerning Christ and the church."

"The New Creation should esteem the typical, earthly marriage and its proper duties and responsibilities much more highly because of their appreciation of the antitypical union between Christ and his Church." *F495*

REV. 19:9: "And he saith unto me, Write, Blessed *are* they which are called unto the marriage supper of the Lamb. And he saith unto me, These are the true sayings of God."

RELATIVE POSITION OF HUSBANDS AND WIVES

1 COR. 11:3: "But I would have you know, that the head of every man is Christ; and the head of the woman *is* the man; and the head of Christ *is* God."

EPH. 5:22,25: "Wives, submit yourselves unto your own husbands, as unto the Lord. Husbands, love your wives, even as Christ also loved the church, and gave himself for it..."

"The subjection of the church to Christ is a willing subjection...inspired by love, veneration, gratitude and implicit confidence and trust in the Lord's love and care for us...." *R1552:5*

EPH. 5:33: "Nevertheless let every one of you in particular so love his wife even as himself; and the wife *see* that *she* reverence her husband."

"Only true love and true nobility of character can command such reverence." *R1552:5*

COL. 3:18,19: "Wives, submit yourselves unto your own husbands, as it is fit in the Lord. Husbands, love *your* wives, and be not bitter against them."

"Whether it be the husband, the wife or the child who rides rough-shod over the rights of others, this course is contrary to the divine law and the spirit of love." *R5168:4*

1 PET. 3:1,7: "LIKEWISE, ye wives, *be* in subjection to your own husbands; Likewise, ye husbands, dwell with *them* according to knowledge, giving honor to the wife as unto the weaker vessel."

"This reverence of a husband...does not mean slavery...but a reverence of love of devotion...." *F498*

"...no woman should marry a man beneath her in character and talents....No man should marry...his superior." *F496*

1 TIM. 2:12,13: "But I suffer not a woman to teach, nor to usurp authority over the man, but to be in silence. For Adam was first formed, then Eve."

OBLIGATIONS IN MARRIAGE

EXOD. 21:10: "If he take him another *wife*; her food, her raiment, and her duty of marriage, shall he not diminish."

RUTH 1:16,17: "And Ruth said, Entreat me not to leave thee, *or* to return from following after thee: for whither thou goest, I will go; and where thou lodgest, I will lodge: thy people *shall be* my people, and thy God my God: Where thou diest, will I die, and there will I be buried: the LORD do so to me, and more also, *if ought* but death part thee and me."

PROV. 12:4: "A virtuous woman *is* a crown to her husband: but she that maketh ashamed *is* as rottenness in his bones."

PROV. 31:10-12,25-28: "Who can find a virtuous woman? for her price is far above rubies. The heart of her husband doth safely trust in her, so that he shall have no need of spoil. She will do him good and not evil all the days of her life....Strength and honour *are* her clothing; and she shall rejoice in time to come. She openeth her

mouth with wisdom; and in her tongue *is* the law of kindness. She looketh well to the ways of her household, and eateth not the bread of idleness. Her children arise up, and call her blessed; her husband *also*, and he praiseth her."

ECCL. 9:9: "Live joyfully with the wife whom thou lovest all the days of the life of thy vanity, which he hath given thee under the sun, all the days of thy vanity: for that *is* thy portion in *this* life, and in thy labour which thou takest under the sun."

1 COR. 7:3-5: "Let the husband render unto the wife due benevolence: and likewise also the wife unto the husband. The wife hath not power of her own body, but the husband: and likewise also the husband hath not power of his own body, but the wife. Defraud ye not one the other, except *it be* with consent for a time, that ye may give yourselves to fasting and prayer; and come together again, that Satan tempt you not for your incontinency."

"The husband who loves his wife to the neglect of his own preference at times is the one who is likely to be appreciated most; and the wife who does what she can to serve her husband's interest and is devoted to him is an illustration of what the church does for her Lord." *R5900:3*

"After marriage is too late for one to decide for himself whether or not he prefers to live a celibate life....The time to consider such matters is before marriage. Neither would it be proper that either should attempt to bind the other, nor

that they should together vow a life of celibacy in the bonds of wedlock." *F512*

"Mutual obligations are accepted in marriage from which there can be no departure except by **mutual consent**." *R1554:6*

1 TIM. 3:11: "Even so *must their* wives be grave, not slanderers, sober, faithful in all things."

1 PET. 3:1: "Likewise, ye wives, be in subjection to your own husbands..."

"...thus manifesting a spirit of loving forbearance, rather than of contention." *R1553:2*

1 PET. 3:7: "Likewise, ye husbands, dwell with them according to knowledge, giving honor unto the wife as unto the weaker vessel..."

"While the wife is specially counseled to imitate Christ's humility, the husband is urged, to imitate Christ's generosity...." *R1553:2*

REMARRIAGE

MATT. 19:9: "And I say unto you, Whosoever shall put away his wife, except *it be* for fornication, and shall marry another, committeth adultery: and who so marrieth her which is put away doth commit adultery."

"In any event, however, the New Creature is not at liberty to remarry unless the divorce be granted, and that on the one ground mentioned by our Lord — adulterous unfaithfulness to the mate." *F505*

"(The New Creature's marriage contract) is not cancelled by any earthly court to such an extent as to permit marriage to another, except upon the one cause specified." *F516*

ROM. 7:2: "For the woman which hath an husband is bound by the law to *her* husband so long as he liveth; but if the husband be dead, she is loosed from the law of *her* husband."

1 COR. 7:15: "But if the unbelieving depart, let him depart. A brother or sister is not under bondage in such *cases*...."

"...desertion would not grant the right of either party to remarry so long as the other lives." *R1555:4*

1 COR. 7:39: "The wife is bound by the law as long as her husband liveth; but if her husband be dead, she is at liberty to be married to whom she will; only in the Lord."

"If, neglecting the Lord's instruction, he surround himself with additional downward tendencies, by taking a husband or wife not in the Lord...he will surely find it greatly to his disadvantage." *R2069:5*

"That the Lord's people should marry 'only in the Lord' may at first appear a limitation, a restraint, a bondage: but no — it is merely advice. Whoever follows the advice will eventually find that he has been blessed thereby, and whoever disregards the advice will generally learn the unwisdom of his course through severe experiences later." *F513*

DIVORCE

MATT. 19:7-9: "They say unto him, Why did Moses then command to give a writing of divorcement, and to put her away? He saith unto them, Moses because of the hardness of your hearts suffered you to put away your wives: but from the beginning it was not so. And I say unto you, Whosoever shall put away his wife, except it be for fornication, and shall marry another, committeth adultery: and whoso marrieth her which is put away doth commit adultery."

(**DEUT. 24:1-4**: "WHEN a man hath taken a wife, and married her, and it come to pass that she find no favour in his eyes, because he hath found some uncleanness in her: then let him write her a bill of divorcement, and give *it* in her hand, and send her out of his house. And when she is departed out of his house, she may go and be another man's *wife*. And *if* the latter husband hate her, and write her a bill of divorcement, and giveth *it* in her hand, and sendeth her out of his house; or if the latter husband die, which took her *to be* his wife; Her former husband, which sent her away, may not take her again to be his wife, after that she is defiled; for that *is* abomination before the LORD: and thou shalt not cause the land to sin, which the LORD thy God giveth thee *for* an inheritance.")

"But one cause is mentioned in the Scriptures as a proper ground for the dissolution of the marriage bond." *R1554:5*

JER. 3:1: "...If a man put away his wife, and she go from him, and become another man's, shall he return unto her again? Shall not that land be greatly polluted?...."

MATT. 5:32: "But I say unto you, That whosoever shall put away his wife, saving for the cause of fornication, causeth her to commit adultery...."

"A divorce is a full breaking of the original marriage contract. (Jesus) declared that the marriage contract could not be fully broken except by adultery." *R5954:5*

MARK 10:11,12: "And he saith unto them, Whosoever shall put away his wife, and marry another, committeth adultery against her. And if a woman shall put away her husband, and be married to another, she committeth adultery."

LUKE 16:18: "Whosoever putteth away his wife, and marrieth another, committeth adultery: and whosoever

marrieth her that is put away from *her* husband committeth adultery."

"...In our day these matters are regulated by courts. Very properly, Bible Students govern themselves by the Word of God...." *R5954:5*

"The fact that a court would grant a divorce would not by a Bible student be considered liberation from the marriage bonds, unless upon the one ground which the Master specified. But a court divorce is to be respected when it is backed by the condition of adultery — or backed by a second marriage of the separated one." *R5954:5*

1 COR. 7:10-15: "And unto the married I command, *yet* not I, but the Lord, Let not the wife depart from *her* husband. But and if she depart, let her remain unmarried, or be reconciled to *her* husband: and let not the husband put away *his* wife. But to the rest speak I, not the Lord: if any brother hath a wife that believeth not, and she be pleased to dwell with him, let him not put her away. And the woman which hath an husband that believeth not, and if he be pleased to dwell with her, let her not leave him. For the unbelieving husband is sanctified by the wife, and the unbelieving wife is sanctified by the husband: else were your children unclean; but now are they holy. But if the unbelieving depart, let him depart. A brother or a sister is not under bondage in such *cases*: but God hath called us to peace."

"The believing one if once deserted by the unbelieving would not be bound to receive the deserter back again to marriage fellowship...but he or she would be bound not to marry another so long as the first companion lives." *R1554:5*

THE MASS

"Christ's **continual** sacrifice was not actually canceled or abolished by Papacy, but it was set aside by a false doctrine advanced by that system — which gradually, but in the end fully and completely, set aside the merit of Christ's sacrifice as a **continual** and ever-efficacious one. This false doctrine is known as the Mass, or Sacrifice of the Mass." *C98*

"Romanists claim that the Mass was instituted by Christ and the apostles; but the earliest mention of it we have been able to find was at the Council of Constantinople, A.D.381. However, the date of the introduction of this defiling error is not particularly referred to in the prophecy, except that by reason of this fundamental error Papacy became the 'Abomination of Desolation' **before** it was, as such, 'set up' in power which, we have seen, was in A.D. 539." *C103 (See also C95-105)*

"The five magical Latin words which, it is claimed, effect this change of bread and wine into **actual** flesh and blood, are '**Hoc est autem corpus meum**.' It is claimed that any priest can thus create Christ in the flesh, **afresh**, to be sacrificed **afresh**. And having thus created Christ, a bell is sounded, and priests and people fall down and worship and adore the bread and wine, which now they recognize as the very Christ. This done, the bread (the real flesh of Christ, veiled from the senses, they say) is broken. Christ is thus slain or **sacrificed afresh**, repeatedly, for the special sins sought by this means to be canceled." *C99*

SCRIPTURE PROOFS OF ERROR OF THE MASS

HEB.7:25,27: "Wherefore he is able to save them to the uttermost that come unto God by him, seeing he ever liveth to make intercession for them. Who needeth not daily, as those high priests, to offer up sacrifice, first for his own sins, and then for the people's: for this he did once, when he offered up himself."

HEB.9:28: "So Christ was once offered to bear the sins of many; and unto them that look for him shall he appear the second time without sin unto salvation."

HEB.10:12-14: "For by one offering he hath perfected for ever them that are sanctified."

1 TIM.2:5,6: "For there is one God, and one mediator between God and men, the man Christ Jesus; Who gave himself a ransom for all, to be testified in due time."

THE MASS IS NOT THE EUCHARIST

"Is not the mass merely the eucharist, the Lord's supper, under another name?...No!...it is wholly different. The

Lord's supper celebrates the death of Christ accomplished at Calvary; the mass represents a new sacrifice for sins made every time it is performed." *R3960:6*

THE MASS — DOCTRINE OF ROMAN CATHOLICISM

"The death of Christ, they claim, canceled Adamic or original sin, but is not applicable for our daily shortcomings, weaknesses, sins and omissions; it is not a **continual sacrifice**, ever meritorious for all our sins, ever sufficient and efficacious to cover as a robe every sinner and every sin, so as to permit the contrite one to come back into union and fellowship with God. For such sins the Sacrifice of the Mass was instituted..." *C98*

"High mass is a particular sacrifice of Christ for a particular individual. Low mass is a sacrifice of Christ for the general sins of a congregation..." *R3960:6*

TRANSUBSTANTIATION

"The Christ to be thus sacrificed afresh is first 'created' from wheat bread and wine by the officiating priest. They are ordinary bread and wine until laid upon the altar, when certain words of consecration, it is claimed, change the bread and wine into the **actual** flesh and blood of Christ. Then they are bread and wine no longer, though they still have such an appearance. This change is called **transubstantiation** — change of substance." *C99 (See also pages 100-103.)*

CHRIST NOT SACRIFICED AFRESH DAILY

"This in the Scriptures is called an 'abomination' in God's sight, because it disregards, sets at naught, the statement of the Scriptures that Christ dieth no more, that by one sacrifice he hath perfected forever all who come unto the Father through him..." *R3960:6*

ROM.6:9: "Knowing that Christ being raised from the dead dieth no more; death hath no more dominion over him."

FULFILLMENT OF DANIEL — THE ABOMINATION OF DESOLATION

DAN.11:31: "...and shall take away the daily *sacrifice* [continual sacrifice], and they shall place the abomination that maketh desolate."

THE CONTINUAL SACRIFICE

"The continual sacrifice...is generally supposed to refer to the daily or continual burnt-offerings of the Jews at Jerusalem...The prophecy, however, passes by...the typical burnt-offerings, and deals with the antitypical..., Christ's meritorious sacrifice once for all and forever — a continual,

ever-efficacious sacrifice, for the sins of the whole world." *C98*

HEB.7:27: "Who needeth not daily, as those high priests, to offer up sacrifice, first for his own sins, and then for the people's: for this he did once, when he offered up himself."

HEB.9:28: "So Christ was once offered to bear the sins of many; and unto them that look for him shall he appear the second time without sin unto salvation."

HEB.10:13,14: "From henceforth expecting till his enemies be made his footstool. For by one offering he hath perfected for ever them that are sanctified."

WHEN "SET UP"

DAN.12:11: "And from the time *that* the daily *sacrifice* shall be taken away, and the abomination that maketh desolate set up, *there shall be* a thousand two hundred and ninety days."

"...the fall of the Ostrogothic kingdom in A.D.539 was,...clearly indicated by the prophetic measure (1260 years), the exact point of time when this desolating and, in the sight of God, abominable system was '**set up**.'" *C81*

RECOGNIZED IN "TIME OF THE END"

MATT.24:15,16: "When ye therefore shall see the abomination of desolation, spoken of by Daniel the prophet, stand in the holy place, (whoso readeth, let him understand:) Then let them which be in Judea flee into the mountains."

NOT FULFILLED IN REFORMATION

"Luther, while full of denunciation for many of Papacy's sins and falsities, did not see the great abomination of desolation to be the Mass. On the contrary, on his return to his church after his stay at Wartburg castle, finding that the Mass, as well as images and candles had been discontinued, as being without Scriptural authority, Luther re-established the Mass." *D572*

"The very foundation doctrine of 'justification by faith' in the 'continual sacrifice' is rapidly giving way to the old Papal dogma of justification by works and by the sacrilegious sacrifice of the mass." *D33* (The latter, the mass, amongst Episcopalians — 'High Church' — in Great Britain and United States)" *Footnote*

TYPICAL & ANTI—TYPICAL FULFILLMENT THE ABOMINATION OF DESOLATION...

"...while it may have had a typical application to the trouble in the end of the Jewish age, its real or most important application belongs to the trouble with which the Gospel age terminates..." *D570*

"Looking back we see in this another parallelism between the end of the Jewish harvest and the end of the Gospel harvest. Fleshly Israel's rejection of the true sacrifice for sins, and their retention of the typical sacrifices which were no longer acceptable to God, but abominations, was an important incident in connection with their national and ecclesiastical fall. So here, the rejection of the doctrine of the ransom and the acceptance of either masses or good works or penances instead, is an important incident in connection with the fall of Christendom, civil and ecclesiastical." *D572*

MEDIATOR

1 TIM. 2:5: "*There is* one God and one mediator between God and men, the man Christ Jesus..."

HEB. 8:6: "...he is the mediator of a better covenant, (not better then the Grace or Sarah Covenant, but better then the Law Covenant), which was established upon better promises."

Definition: "**Middle man, mediator**" — *Young's analytical Concordance*

"A **go-between**, i.e. (simply) an **internunciator**, or (by implication) a **reconciler** (**intercessor**)" — *Strong's Exhaustive Concordance*

"It was thus, as God's representative on the one hand, and as Israel's representative on the other, that Moses could be and was the mediator of the Law Covenant between God and that nation." *R5046:6*

NONE IN ABRAHAMIC COVENANT

GAL. 3:18-20: "For if the inheritance *be* of the law, *it is* no more of promise:...Wherefore then *serveth* the law? It was added because of transgressions, till the seed should come to whom the promise was made; *and it was* ordained by angels in the hand of a mediator. Now a mediator is not...of one, but God is one."

MOSES AS MEDIATOR

"Moses was the Mediator or 'go between' of the Law Covenant. He went back and forth between God and the people, making known God's terms, and bringing back their response." *R4570:3*

MEDIATOR VERSUS ADVOCATE

"As for the word Mediator, it is indeed a glorious name and title possessed by our Lord, but it is not the proper...name to be associated with his service in our justification. It is not Scripturally applicable to the church at all, except that we are associates with the Mediator of the New Covenant as 'his members' in the sufferings of this present time, and as joint-heirs with him in the glorious prospects of the Millennium...." *R4560:6*

"The Redeemer purposes no mediatorial work in behalf of the church..." *R4584:6*

1 JOHN 2:1: "...We have an advocate with the Father, Jesus Christ the righteous..."

"Instead of standing between the Father and us, as during the Millennium he will stand between the Father and the world, he introduces us immediately to the Father, and the

Father, on receiving us, immediately begets us of the holy Spirit. Our Lord's words, are, 'No man cometh unto the Father but by me' — the Advocate of the Church." *R4584:6*

JESUS — MEDIATOR

HEB. 9:15: "...he is the mediator of the new testament, that by means of death, for the redemption of the transgressions *that were* under the first testament, they which are called might receive the promise of eternal inheritance."

HEB. 12:24: "And to Jesus the mediator of the new covenant ['testament,' margin]..."

NEW COVENANT MADE DURING MILLENNIUM

"Although the New Covenant will not reach full operation until the close of the Millennium, nevertheless the blessings of the New Covenant will begin to go into effect as soon as the great Mediator shall have applied the merit of his sacrifice 'for all the people.' This blessing will begin with the ancient worthies, because they already are acceptable with the Father. Under the New Covenant provisions they will immediately get the blessings of restitution to human perfection. They will represent Israel and thus the blessings will proceed through Israel to all mankind." *R4571:5*

NEED FOR MEDIATOR

JOB 9:33: "There is not between us a mediator, who might lay his hand upon us both." (*Rotherham*)

"Job...seems to realize his need of some one to represent his cause before the Lord, and cries out that he is righteous as he knows how to be; that he cannot reason the matter with God, being so much beneath him in knowledge and power; that the willfully wicked are not so troubled, while he who has pursued righteousness is so afflicted that life has no further pleasure and he wishes he had never been born. (Chapters 9, 10 and 16) Feeling his own insufficiency to state his case before the great Jehovah he desires 'a days-man [*i.e.*, a mediator] betwixt' God and himself..." *Rl505:6*

THE CHRIST — THE MILLENNIAL MEDIATOR

2 COR. 3:5: "Not that we are sufficient of ourselves to think any thing as of ourselves; but our sufficiency *is* of God..."

2 COR. 5:18: "And all things *are* of God, who hath reconciled us to himself by Jesus Christ, and hath given to us the ministry of reconciliation..."

ACTS 3:23: "And it shall come to pass, that every soul, which will not hear that prophet, shall be destroyed from among the people."

"The antitypical Moses here pictured was undoubtedly the glorified Christ, Head and Body, in his instruction of the world during the Millennium. It is certainly not true that all are destroyed who disobey the Lord at the present time. It is this antitypical Moses taken from amongst the brethren that God has been raising up during this Gospel age. Our Redeemer and Lord was raised up first to be 'Head over the church which is his body.' Since then the members are being raised up from the world, separated from the world to the Lord and the Millennial work."

EPH. 1:23: "Which is his body, the fullness of him that filleth all in all."

EPH. 4:4: "*There is* one body, and one Spirit, even as ye are called in one hope of your calling..."

EPH. 4:12: "For the perfecting of the saints, for the work of the ministry, for the edifying of the body of Christ."

EPH. 4:16: "From whom the whole body fitly joined together and compacted by that which every joint supplieth, according to the effectual working in the measure of every part, maketh increase of the body unto the edifying of itself in love."

EPH. 5:30: "For we are members of his body, [of his flesh, and of his bones. *Spurious*]"

COL. 1:18: "And he is the head of the body, the church: who is

the beginning, the firstborn from the dead; that in all *things* he might have the preeminence."

COL. 3:15: "And let the peace of God rule in your hearts, to the which also ye are called in one body; and be ye thankful."

"Moses was not the typical priest and made not the typical atonement for sin; that was the work of the priest — Aaron. Moses as the mediator of the Law Covenant typified The Christ, Head and Body, Mediator of the New Covenant." *R4354:5*

"That Moses, the mediator of the Law Covenant, was a type of Christ, the Mediator of the New Covenant, is clearly taught in the Scriptures and generally recognized by Bible students; but all have not recognized that Moses was a type of the entire Christ — head and body — and that in this sense the entire Gospel age has been the period of Christ's raising up..." *D629*

1 COR.12:12: "For as the body is one, and hath many members, and all the members of that one body, being many, are one body: so also *is* Christ."

"The mediating of the New Covenant with mankind...will mean the gradual bringing of the willing and obedient nearer and nearer to the standard of human perfection...The world will be under the blessed provisions

and experiences mediated for them by The Christ, but will not be individually introduced to the Father — brought into covenant relationship with God. At the close of the Millennium the perfected world...will be introduced to the Father on the covenant terms of full regeneration...at the hands of the Mediator. Thus it is written..." *R4571:5*

ISA. 42:6: "I the LORD...will...give thee for a covenant of the people..."

NEW COVENANT TO BE MADE WITH MEDIATOR

"During the Millennium the world will not be in covenant-relationship with God except in and through the Mediator. All their blessing will come through him, and their approach to the Father and all their worship will be through him. In other words, the New Covenant with Israel will be made not with them directly, but with their Mediator, and he will stand between them and God until they are perfected by restitution, ready to be received as sons of God, in covenant-relationship with the Father, at the conclusion of the Millennium." *R4640:4*

"God's Covenant will be with the Mediator for Israel, guaranteeing forgiveness and reconciliation to all of Abraham's natural seed who will exercise the faith and obedience of Abraham..." *R4555:1*

OLD LAW COVENANT MADE WITH MEDIATOR "CHRIST MADE A CURSE FOR ISRAEL"

EXOD. 24:2: "...Moses alone shall come near the Lord..."

NUM. 5:4: "...as the Lord spake unto Moses; so did the children of Israel."

NUM. 11:2: "...the people cried unto Moses; ...and...Moses prayed unto the Lord..."

PSA. 105:26: "He sent Moses his servant..."

PSA. 106:16: "They envied Moses also in the camp..."

PSA. 106:23: "...he [God] said that he would destroy them, had not Moses his chosen stood before him in the breach..."

MAL. 4:4: "Remember ye the Law of Moses my servant..."

ACTS 15:21: "...Moses...hath in every city them that preach him..."

JOHN 7:19: "Did not Moses give you the law...?"

MARK 10:3: "...What did Moses command you?"

JOHN 5:45: "...*one* accuseth you, *even* Moses, in whom ye trust."

1 COR. 10:2: "...all [Israel] baptized unto [into] Moses, in the cloud and in the sea."

HEB. 10:28: "He that despised Moses' law died without mercy..."

JOHN 1:17: "...the law was given by Moses, *but* grace and truth came by Jesus Christ." *R5046:5*

See also Index: **Advocate; Covenants; Israel**

THE MEMORIAL SUPPER

1 COR. 5:7,8: "...Christ our passover is sacrificed for us: Therefore let us keep the feast, not with old leaven, neither with the leaven of malice and wickedness; but with the unleavened *bread* of sincerity and truth." (See also *F457-484*)

ISRAEL'S PASSOVER

EXOD. 12:3,5-8,11-13,15: "...In the tenth *day* of this month they shall take to them...a lamb,...a male of the first year:...And ye shall keep it up until the fourteenth day...and...kill it between the two evenings [*margin*]...take of the blood, and strike *it* on the two side posts and on the upper door post of the houses, wherein they shall eat it. And they shall eat the flesh in that night, roast with fire, and unleavened bread; *and* with bitter *herbs...with* your loins girded, your shoes on your feet, and your staff in your hand; and ye shall eat it in haste: it *is* the Lord's passover. For I will pass through the land of Egypt this night, and will smite all the firstborn in the land of Egypt...And the blood shall be...for a token upon the houses where ye *are*: and when I see the blood, I will pass over you, and the plague shall not be upon you...Seven days shall ye eat unleavened bread..."

THROUGH THE RED SEA

EXOD. 14:21-23,28: "...And the Lord caused the sea to go back by a strong east wind,...and made the sea dry...And the waters were divided. And the children of Israel went into the midst of the sea upon the dry ground: and the waters were a wall unto them on their right hand, and on their left. And the Egyptians...went in after them...And the waters returned, and covered...all the host of Pharaoh...there remained not...one of them."

THE ANTITYPE

"Israel...typified the whole people of God — all who shall...become his...,down to the close of the Millennial age;...the Egyptians represented the opponents of God, Pharaoh,...representing Satan...and Pharaoh's servants and horsemen representing fallen angels and men... associated...with Satan...Israel...groaned under their taskmasters, yet...could never had freed themselves...so we see the world...groaning and travailing in pain together under...'the prince of this world' and...Sin and Death...their only hope is in God and in the antitypical Moses, who...shall deliver his people...bringing them across the Red Sea — representing the Second Death, in which Satan and all who affiliate...with him...shall be everlastingly destroyed, as was

typified in the overwhelming of Pharaoh and his hosts..." *F458*

THE PASSOVER PICTURE

"The foregoing is the general picture; but inside of it...was another,...which related...to...the firstborn...They became liable to death before the...exodus...they became...represented in the tribe of Levi...separated from their brethren, giving up...their inheritance in the land, that... they might be the teachers of their brethren.

"This tribe...of Levi...represents the household of faith...represented...by the...Royal Priesthood ...whose Chief Priest is the Lord, and which shall bless, rule, and instruct the world during the Millennial age...the...church of the first-borns...is subject now to Second Death, having their...trial...in advance of the remainder of mankind, and passes from death unto life, through the merit of the Redeemer's blood — death." *F459*

"...they...sacrifice with him, the earthly inheritance,...the earthly life, that they may attain heaven and its 'life more abundant.' Thus, while the Church of the firstborn...'all die like men,' and...seem to...renounce more than do others,...these are passed over, or rescued from death, and...with...Jesus...made partakers of glory, honor, and immortality. These, whose passing over occurs during the nighttime of this Gospel age...are to be the leaders of the Lord's host, to bring it forth from the bondage of Sin and Satan..." *F460*

ROM. 8:22,19: "...the whole creation groaneth and travaileth in pain together...waiteth for the manifestation of the sons of God."

HEB. 12:23: "...the general assembly and church of the firstborn, which are written in heaven..."

ROM. 2:7: "...who by patient continuance in well doing seek for glory and honor and immortality..."

JOHN 10:10: "...I am come that they might have life...more abundantly."

THE PASSOVER

"In order to effect the passing over of the firstborn, and the consequent deliverance of all the Lord's people...it was necessary that the Passover lamb...be slain, that its blood...sprinkled upon the doorposts and lintels..., its flesh...eaten that night with bitter herbs, and with unleavened bread. Thus each house...represented the household of faith, and each lamb...the Lamb of God which taketh away the sin of the world, and the first born in each family...the New Creation. The bitter herbs represented the trials and afflictions of this present time...as each household was to eat with staff in hand and girded for a

journey,...the antitypical first-born and household of faith who would thus partake of the Lamb during the nighttime of this Gospel age would be pilgrims and strangers in the world, who would realize the bondage of sin and death, and be desirous of being led...into the liberty of the sons of God." *F460*

OUR LORD'S MEMORIAL

"...on the 14th day of the first month...our Lord died, as...

JOHN 1:29: "'...the Lamb of God, which taketh away the sin of the world.'

"As the Jews were commanded to select the lamb...on the tenth day...and to receive it into their houses...,the Lord...offered himself to them on that date, when...he rode into the city...,the multitude crying...

MATT. 21:9: "'...Hosanna to the son of David: Blessed *is* he that cometh in the name of the Lord...'

"On the 14th day...in...

1 COR. 11:23: "'...the *same* **night** in which he was betrayed...'" *F461*

"...and in the **same day**, therefore, in which he died...he celebrated...the Passover...the Jewish custom...began each day...in the evening...

"...after they had thus observed the Jewish supper...the Lord —

taking part of the unleavened bread and of the fruit of the vine remaining over...instituted...a new thing, that... should...**supplant** the...Passover Supper...a **Memorial** of...our Lamb...*" F462, 463*

"The appropriate thing thenceforth for all believers in Jesus as the true Passover lamb would be the sprinkling of the doorposts of the heart with his blood...

HEB. 10:22: ***Diag.*** "'...our HEARTS having been sprinkled from a Consciousness of evil.'

"...those...memorializing intelligently while in the world shall not be of the world: but shall be...

1 PET. 2:11: "'...as strangers and pilgrims...'

"...who seek...conditions...free from the... bondage of...Sin and Death. These partake of the true...unleavened bread: they seek to have it...without the...leaven of human theory... ambitions, selfishness, etc...also of the bitter herbs of persecution..." *F463*

2 TIM: 3:12: "...all that will live godly in Christ Jesus shall suffer persecution."

MATT. 5:11: "...*men* shall revile you, and persecute *you*, and shall say all manner of evil against you falsely, for my sake."

1 COR. 11: 23-26: "...the Lord...took bread: And when he had given thanks, he brake *it*, and said, Take, eat: this is my body, which is broken for you: this do in remembrance of me. After the same manner also *he took* the cup, when he had supped ['after the to have supped.' *Diaglott interlineary*], saying, This cup is the new testament ['covenant'] in my blood: this do ye, as oft as ye drink *it*, in remembrance of me. For as often as ye eat this bread, and drink this cup, ye do shew the Lord's death till he ['of whom,' *Diaglott Interlineary*] come."

"...not only until our Lord's parousia, or presence...but until during his parousia...his faithful ones have been gathered to him...there to...partake of it..." *F465*

MARK 14:25: "...new in the kingdom..."

OUR COMMON PARTICIPATION

1 COR. 10:16,17: "The cup of blessing which we bless, is it not the communion of the blood of Christ? The bread which we break, is it not the communion of the body of Christ? For we *being* many are one bread [loaf],...one body: for we are all partakers of that one bread."

"...we, as...members of the body of Christ, the prospective first-borns...become participators with our Lord in his death, sharers in his sacrifice; and...

COL. 1:24: "'...fill up that which is behind of the afflictions of Christ...'

"...while our Lord's flesh was the loaf broken for the world,...the faithful, the elect,...are counted in as parts of that one loaf...

1 COR. 12:27; EPH. 4:12: "'...members in particular...of the body of Christ.'

"...and hence, in the breaking of the loaf, after recognizing it as the sacrifice of our Lord on our behalf, we are to recognize it, further, as the breaking or sacrificing of the whole Church ...consecrated to be dead with him, to be broken with him, to share his sufferings." *F465*

"This is the exact thought...in the word 'communion' — common-union, common participation. Hence, with every...Memorial we not only recognize the foundation of all our hopes...in the dear Redeemer's sacrifice for our sins, but we...renew our own consecration to...

2 TIM. 2:11,12: "'...be dead with *him*...[that we may] also live with *him* [to] suffer [with him, that we may]...also reign with *him* ...'

"The heart-communion with him, the heart-feeding upon him, the heart-communion with the fellow members of the body, and the heart-realization of the meaning of our covenant of sacrifice, is the real communion...being daily

broken with our Lord, and continually feeding upon his merit..." *F466*

THE CUP ALSO

"...the apostle includes the cup...

1 COR. 10:16: "'...is it not the communion [common-union, common participation] of the blood of Christ?...'

"...the truly consecrated, faithful 'little flock'...has been Christ in the flesh;...the suffering and trials and ignominy and death of these...'members of his body'...are...counted in as parts of his sacrifice..." *F467*

FOR HIS BODY'S SAKE

"In speaking of our filling up...the afflictions of Christ, the Apostle Paul adds...

COL. 1:24: "'...for his body's sake, which is the church...'" *F467*

"The laying down of life, is to be done in the main for the brethren — in their service,...our time and talents and influence and means are, more or less, mortgaged to others...(depending on us), and we are obligated...to...

ROM. 12:17: "'...Provide things honest in the sight of all men.'

"...for ourselves..." *F468*

LOVE REVEALED BY SACRIFICE

"...in proportion as our love for the Lord is strong...we will delight...not only to give our surplus of energy and influence and means,...as we find opportunity in the service of the brethren, but additionally,...to curtail within reasonable...limits the demands of the home and family, and especially of self, that we may have the more to sacrifice...the laying down of our lives for the brethren is in small affairs of service,...temporal or spiritual, the spiritual being the...more important..." *F469*

STILL APPROPRIATE

"...the fourteenth day of the first month, Jewish reckoning...is still appropriate..." *F469*

WHO MAY PARTAKE?

"...none should commune who do not trust in the precious blood of Christ as the sacrifice for sins...None should commune unless he is a member of the...one loaf, and unless he has reckoned his...blood, sacrificed with the Lord's in the same...cup...the line is to be drawn by each...for himself — so long as his professions are...reasonably attested by his...conduct. It is not for the

Church to judge, unless...the matter has come before it...according to the prescribed regulations..." *F472*

MATT. 18:15-17: "Moreover if thy brother shall trespass against thee, go and tell him his fault between thee and him alone: if he

shall hear thee, thou hast gained thy brother. But if he will not hear *thee*, *then* take with thee one or two more, that in the mouth of two or three witnesses every word may be established. And if he shall neglect to hear them, tell *it* unto the church: but if he neglect to hear the church, let him be unto thee as an heathen man and a publican."

"Having noted who are excluded, and who properly have access to the Lord's table, we see that every true member of the **Ecclesia** has the right to participate, unless that right has been debarred by a public action of the whole Church, according to the rule therefor laid down by the Lord. (Matt. 18:15-17) All such may celebrate: all such will surely desire to celebrate — will surely desire to conform to the Master's dying admonition. 'Eat ye all of it; drink ye all of it.' They will realize that unless we eat the flesh of the Son of Man, and drink his blood, we have no life in us: and that if they have in heart and mind partaken of the merits of the Lord's sacrifice really, and of his life, that it is both a privilege and a pleasure to memorialize this, and to confess it before each other and before the Lord." *F474*

PARTAKING UNWORTHILY

1 COR. 11:27-29: "Wherefore whosoever shall eat this bread, and drink *this* cup of the Lord, unworthily, shall be guilty of the body and blood of the Lord. But let a man examine himself, and so let him eat of *that* bread, and drink of *that* cup. For he that eateth and drinketh unworthily, eateth and drinketh damnation [judgment, *margin, Diaglott;* condemnation, *Young's*] to himself, not discerning the Lord's body."

"The...warning here seems to be against a careless celebration...which would make of it a feast, and against inviting persons to it in a promiscuous manner. It is not such a feast. It is a solemn Memorial,...only for the members of the Lord's 'body;' and whoever does not discern...that the loaf represents the flesh of Jesus, and...the cup...his blood, would...come under condemnation...each...should decide... whether...he...trusts in the broken body and shed blood of our Lord as...his ransom price; and...whether...he has made a consecration of his all...as a member of the 'one body.'" *F473*

WHO MAY SERVE IT

"While each member of the **Ecclesia**, the New Creation, has a sufficient ordination of the Lord to take any part in connection with the Memorial Supper, yet the Church, in

electing elders, indicates that they should be representatives of the entire **Ecclesia** in respect such matters as this. Therefore, the duty of arranging and ministering this Memorial would devolve upon them as a service to which they have already been selected by the Church." *F475*

ASSEMBLING TO PARTAKE

MATT. 18:20: "...where two or three are gathered together in my name, there am I in the midst of them."

"Wherever even two or three may meet to claim this promise, it being...inconvenient to meet with a larger group, they are privileged to celebrate as a Church...where an individual... cannot possibly meet with others, we suggest that his faith...claim the promise — regarding the Lord and himself as the two. We advise that such unavoidable isolation be not permitted to hinder any from the annual celebration...that the solitary individual provide...(unleavened bread...such as soda...cracker) and...(raisin juice or grape juice)...and that he celebrate in communion of spirit with the Lord and...fellow-members of the body, from whom he is...separated." *F475*

SUGGESTED ORDER OF SERVICE

"(1)...one or more hymns, appropriate to the occasion...

"(2) Prayer for...blessing upon the assembly, and especially upon those who shall participate... also fellow-members...in all the world, and especially such as are celebrating...

"(3) The elder...might read an account of the original institution of the Memorial...

"(4) He or another elder might...present an account of the...type and antitype...

"(5) Calling attention to the fact that our Lord blessed the bread...the leader might...call upon some competent brother to ask a blessing upon the bread, or — none...but himself being competent — he should invoke the divine blessing upon the bread and upon those who would partake of it, that the eyes of their understanding might be opened widely to an appreciation...of the depths of meaning... attaching to it, and...have blessed communion with the Lord in the use of this symbol...and to make renewal of their own consecration to be broken with him.

"(6) One of the...pieces of unleavened bread might then be broken, using the Lord's words,...

1 COR. 11:24: "'...this is my body, which is broken for you...'

"...and the platter...be served...

"(7) Silence would well be maintained during the passing of the emblems, except that brief remarks,...respecting the

signification...and how we feed upon the Lord, might not be inappropriate — though...it would be well that this...be covered...when explaining the signification...before the distribution, that the communion of the participants be not intruded upon.

"(8) A blessing would then be asked upon the cup, even as...our Lord...

LUKE 22:17: "'...took the cup, and gave thanks...'

"...and gave to his disciples.

"Some brother might be called upon for this prayer of thanks, and of request for the Lord's blessing upon those participating, and it should be similarly served in quietness.

"(9) The service being thus ended, we advise that the course of the Lord and the apostles be followed... — that a hymn be sung...and the congregation thus dismissed — without any concluding prayer...greetings, inquiries for health, etc.,...and that each go...home avoiding, as far as possible, anything that might disturb his reflections and communion, and that so far as possible each seek to continue to commune, not only on that night, but during the following day, having in memory the Lord's experiences in Gethsemane, and his need of sympathy and help, and...that each member of his body may also have Gethsemane occasions, and need the comfort and help of fellow disciples." *F476-478*

"...let us...seek to be helpful to the fellow-members of the body, remembering that whatsoever is done to the least...is done unto the Head...We can...remember...Peter — his earnest impulsiveness...and yet his weakness... and his need of the Lord's

help and prayers...

LUKE 22:32: "'...I have prayed for thee, that thy faith fail not...'

"To remember this may be a special aid to us...to look to the Lord for...

HEB. 4:16: "'...grace to help in time of need.'

"...remember Judas, and that his fall came through selfishness — ambition, covetousness; and...through...selfishness Satan...entered into him, it may help us to be on our guard...lest we...should deny the Lord that bought us; lest we...betray the Lord or his brethren, or his Truth. Let us through the day following have in memory our dear Redeemer's experiences;...that we may thus enter...into sympathy with him...that we may not think strange the fiery trials which may...come upon us...and...keep in memory his dying words, 'It is finished,' and realize that this meant a completion of his sin-offering on our behalf, so that...'

ISA. 53:5: "'...with his stripes we are healed.'

"...and...that...

HEB. 7:25: "'...he ever liveth to make intercession...'

"For us, and to render assistance in every time of need." *F478, 479*

MIRACLES

"...miracles, not common to our experience, find parallels about us every day, which, being more common, are passed by unnoticed...beyond our comprehension, as well as beyond our power — hence miraculous..." *A62*

OLD TESTAMENT MIRACLES

AARON'S ROD THAT BUDDED

NUM. 17:8: "...the rod of Aaron...was budded, and...bloomed blossoms, and yielded almonds."

"...the meaning...will be seen to be Jehovah's acceptance of Aaron and his sons — the typical priesthood, representatives of Christ and the Church...A peculiarity about the almond tree is that the fruit-buds appear before the leaves. So...the 'Royal Priesthood:'...sacrifice or...bring forth fruit before the leaves of professions..." *T122*

THE BRAZEN SERPENT

NUM. 21:9: "And Moses made a serpent of brass [copper], and put it upon a pole, and it came to pass, that if a serpent had bitten any man, when he beheld the serpent of brass, he lived."

JOHN 3:14,15; 12:32,33: "And as Moses lifted up the serpent in the wilderness, even so must the Son of man be lifted up: That whosoever believeth on him should not perish, but have eternal life. And I, if I be lifted up from the earth, will draw all *men* unto me. This he said, signifying what death he should die."

"Israelites bitten by those serpents represented or typified sinners bitten by sin and suffering from the consequences thereof — the fall. He...was the great antitype of that brazen serpent...by his crucifixion he who knew no sin was made a curse for us...: in no other way has God provided for eternal life for the people than by the acceptance of...Christ crucified." *R4048:4*

2 COR. 5:21: "For he hath made him *to be* sin for us, who knew no sin; that we might be made the righteousness of God in him."

DANIEL DELIVERED FROM LIONS

DAN. 6:21,22: "Then said Daniel...My God hath sent his angel, and hath shut the lions' mouths, that they have not hurt me..."

DEADLY POTTAGE CORRECTED

2 KINGS 4:39-41: "And one...gathered...wild gourds...and shred *them* into the pot of pottage: for they knew them not...as they were eating...they cried...*There is* death in the

pot... But he [Elisha] said, Then bring meal. And he cast *it* into the pot...And there was no harm..."

DEATH OF KORAH, DATHAN, ABIRAM

NUM. 16:18,19,27,32,35: "And they took every man his censer, and put fire in them and laid incense thereon, and stood in the door of the tabernacle of the congregation with Moses and Aaron. And Korah gathered all the congregation against them unto the door of the...congregation: and the glory of the LORD appeared unto all the congregation...and Dathan and Abiram came out, and stood in the door of their tents, and their wives, and their sons, and their little children...And the earth opened her mouth, and swallowed them up, and their houses, and all the men that appertained unto Korah, and all their goods...And there came out a fire from the

LORD, and consumed the two hundred and fifty men that offered incense."

JUDE 11: "Woe unto them! for they have gone in the way of Cain, and ran greedily after the error of Balaam for reward, and perished in the gainsaying of Core."

"...these men...typified persons who enjoying great favors of the Lord misappropriate these, applying them selfishly and in pride, will die the second death, and with them their allies, sharers in their sin." *R3100:5*

DEATH OF NADAB AND ABIHU

LEV.10:1,2: "And Nadab and Abihu, the sons of Aaron, took either of them his censer, and put fire therein, and put incense thereon, and offered strange fire before the LORD, which he commanded them not. And there went out fire from the LORD, and devoured them, and they died before the LORD."

"Aaron's four sons at first represented the under-priesthood, but two...were destroyed — corresponding to...two classes...one of them suffering the Second Death, the other saved from it only..." *T40*

1 COR. 3:15: "...so as by fire."

"As we come more clearly to realize the high attainment of character required of all who will ever be accorded everlasting life on any plane, and how very few seem to make any serious profession of or attempt at **perfect love** as a governing principle in their lives, we are led to wonder if the two sons of Aaron...were not intended to typify...spirit-begotten ones who... will...not be worthy of any life..." *T119 (footnote)*

DEATH OF UZZAH

2 SAM. 6:6,7: "...Uzzah put forth *his hand* to the ark of God, and took hold of it; for the oxen shook *it*. And the anger of the LORD was kindled against Uzzah; and God

smote him there for *his* error; and there he died by the ark of God."

"...let us be...careful to note and particularly follow the Word of the Lord in every matter..." *R3253:2*

ELIJAH FED BY RAVENS

1 KINGS 17:6: "And the ravens brought him bread and flesh in the morning, and bread and flesh in the evening..."

ELIJAH AND THE PROPHETS OF BAAL

1 KINGS 18:30,33-38: "And Elijah...put the wood in order, and cut the bullock in pieces,...and said, Fill four barrels with water, and pour *it* on the burnt sacrifice, and on the wood...Do *it* the second time. And they did... And he said, Do *it* the third time. And they did...And the water ran round about the altar; and he filled the trench also with water. And... Elijah...said...Hear me, O LORD...Then the fire of the LORD fell, and consumed the burnt sacrifice, and the wood, and the stones, and the dust, and licked up the water that *was* in the trench."

The Antitype

"The Church was...1260...years in the wilderness condition, during which there was a spiritual famine because of the lack of truth — the living water — Comp. Rev.12:6, 11:3, Amos 8:11.

"At the end of the 1260 years the power of the truth...was manifested (A.D.1799); and since then the truth has flowed at the rate of millions of Bibles every year..." *B256*

ELIJAH TAKEN UP

2 KINGS 2:11: "...Elijah went up by a whirlwind into heaven."

"...the word heaven here is used to represent the sky, the circumambient air, and has no reference whatever to the heaven which is God's dwelling place. That neither of these prophets went to the latter place we have the very best evidence in our Lord's words..." *R3417:4*

JOHN 3:13: "...no man hath ascended up to heaven but he that came down from heaven, *even* the Son of man..."

"So far as life is concerned,...God buried Moses, and so I presume God likewise buried Elijah..." *Q259*

"Elijah's career ended by his being taken from the earth." *B256*

"The saints will be changed from earthly to heavenly conditions." *B256*

FALL OF JERICHO

JOSH. 6:20: "...when the people heard the sound of the trumpet, and the people shouted with a great shout, that the wall fell down flat..."

THE FIERY FURNACE

DAN. 3:23-27: "And these three men...fell down bound into the midst of the burning fiery furnace. Then Nebuchadnezzar...was astonied... and said,...Did not we cast three men bound into the midst of the fire?...Lo, I see four men loose, walking in the midst of the fire, and they have no hurt; and the form of the fourth is like the Son of God...Shadrach, Meshach. and Abednego came forth of the midst of the fire...upon whose bodies the fire had no power, nor was an hair...singed, neither were their coats changed, nor the smell of fire had passed on them."

JORDAN DIVIDED BY ELIJAH

2 KINGS 2:8: "And Elijah took his mantle, and wrapped *it* together, and smote the waters, and they were divided hither and thither, so that they two went over on dry ground."

JORDAN DIVIDED BY ELISHA

2 KINGS 2:14: "And he took the mantle of Elijah that fell from him, and smote the waters, and said, Where is the LORD God of Elijah? and when he also had smitten the waters, they parted hither and thither: and Elisha went over."

JORDAN STOPPED

JOSH. 3:14-17: "...when the people removed from their tents, to pass over Jordan, and the priests bearing the ark of the covenant before the people; And as they that bare the ark were come unto Jordan, and the feet of the priests that bare the ark were dipped in the brim of the water, (for the Jordan overfloweth all his banks all the time of harvest,) That the waters which came down from above stood *and* rose up upon an heap very far from the city Adam...and those that came down toward...the salt sea, failed, *and* were cut off: and the people passed over...And the priests that bare the ark...stood firm on dry ground...until all the people were passed clean over Jordan."

MANNA

EXOD. 16:14,15: "And when the dew...was gone up, behold...a

small round thing, *as* small as the hoar frost on the ground. And...the children of Israel...said...It *is* manna: for they wist [knew] not what it *was*. And Moses said...This *is* the bread which the LORD hath given you to eat."

RED SEA DIVIDED

EXOD. 14:21-27: "And Moses stretched out his hand over the sea; and the LORD caused the sea to go *back* by a strong east wind all that night, and made the sea dry *land*, and the waters were divided. And the children of Israel went into the midst of the sea upon the dry *ground*: and the waters *were* a wall unto them on their right hand, and on their left. And the Egyptians...went in after them to the midst of the sea...And...in the morning watch...the LORD...troubled the...Egyptians, And took off their chariot wheels,...And the LORD said unto Moses, Stretch out thine hand over the sea,...and the sea returned to his strength...And the waters...covered...all the host of Pharaoh...; there remained not...one of them."

WATER FROM THE SMITTEN ROCK

EXOD. 17:1,4-6: "...there was no water...And Moses cried unto the LORD...And the LORD said...take...thy rod...I will stand before thee there upon the rock,...and there shall come water out of it...And Moses did so..."

NUM. 20:7,8,10,11: "And the LORD spake unto Moses, saying, Take the rod,...and speak ye unto the rock before their eyes; and it shall give forth his water...And Moses...said...Hear now, ye rebels; must we fetch you water out of this rock?...and...he smote the rock twice: and the water came out abundantly..."

Significance of the Rock

1 COR. 10:1,4: "...our fathers...drank of that spiritual Rock...and that Rock was Christ."

"Christ Jesus, the true Rock was to be smitten but once for our sins, and as a result of that one smiting at Calvary the water of life would be obtained for all true Israelites to all time,...the second smiting...made a new type...some... crucify Christ afresh,...denying or ignoring the value of the original sacrifice, denying the blood that bought them,...committing the sin unto... second death..." *R3077:3*

HEB. 6:6: "...they crucify to themselves the Son of God afresh, and put *him* to an open shame."

1 JOHN 5:16: "...There is a sin unto death..."

REV. 20:14: "...the second death."

SUN AND MOON STAYED

JOSH. 10:12,13: "Then spake Joshua to the LORD in the day when the LORD delivered up the Amorites before the children of Israel..., Sun, [Heb., *shemesh*, **sunlight**], stand thou still [Heb. dum, be dim] upon Gideon; and thou: Moon [Heb., *Yareach*, **moonlight**], in the valley of Ajalon. And the sun [shemesh, sunlight] stood still [Heb., *amad*, **stood, continued as it was**]...in the midst of heaven, and hasted

not [literally pressed not] to go down [to go in — *Rotherham*; Heb., *bo*, **to go**] about a whole day." See *R3344,45*

SYRIAN ARMY TEMPORARILY BLINDED

2 KINGS 6:18-20: "...Elisha prayed...and said, Smite this people, I pray thee, with blindness. And he smote them with blindness according to the word of Elisha. And Elisha said unto them, This *is* not the way, neither *is* this the city: follow me, and I will bring you to the man whom ye seek. But he led them to Samaria. And...Elisha said, LORD, open the eyes of these *men*...And the LORD opened their eyes..."

EGYPTIAN PLAGUES

1. WATERS TURNED TO BLOOD

EXOD. 7:20,21: "...and he lifted up the rod, and smote the waters...in the river...and all the waters...were turned into blood. And the fish... died; and the river stank, and the Egyptians could not drink of the water..."

2. FROGS

EXOD. 8:6: "And Aaron stretched out his hand over the waters...and the frogs came up, and covered the land..."

3. LICE

EXOD. 8:17: "...Aaron stretched out his hand with his rod, and smote the dust...and it became lice in man, and in beast..."

4. FLIES (or BEASTS, margin)

EXOD. 8:24: "...there came a grievous swarm...into all the land of Egypt..."

5. MURRAIN

EXOD. 9:3,6: "...the hand of the LORD is upon thy cattle...horses...asses...camels...oxen, and...sheep...and all the cattle of Egypt died..."

6. BOILS

EXOD. 9:10: "And they took ashes of the furnace...and Moses sprinkled it up toward heaven; and it became a boil breaking forth *with* blains upon man, and upon beast."

7. HAIL

EXOD. 9:23, 25: "And Moses stretched forth his rod toward heaven: and the LORD sent thunder and hail, and the fire ran along upon the ground...And the hail smote...man and beast; and...every herb of the field, and brake every tree of the field."

8. LOCUSTS

EXOD. 10:13, 15: "And Moses stretched forth his rod over...Egypt, and the LORD brought an east wind...the east

wind brought the locusts... they covered the...earth, so that the land was darkened; and they did eat every herb of the land, and all the fruit of the trees which the hail had left: and there remained not any green thing..."

9. DARKNESS

EXOD. 10: 22,23: "And Moses stretched forth his hand toward heaven; and there was a thick darkness in all the land of Egypt three days: They saw not one another, neither rose any from his place for three days..."

10. DEATH OF FIRSTBORN

EXOD. 12:29: "And...at midnight the LORD smote all the firstborn...from the firstborn of Pharaoh...unto the firstborn of the captive...and all the firstborn of cattle."

OTHER MIRACLES CONTINUED

WIDOW'S MEAL AND CRUSE OF OIL

1 KINGS 17:16: "...the barrel of meal wasted not, neither did the

cruse of oil fail..."

HER SON RAISED

1 KINGS 17:17,19,21,22: "...the son of the woman...fell sick;...that there was not breath left in him...And he...laid him upon his own bed. And he stretched himself upon the child three times, and cried unto the LORD...and he revived."

ELIJAH FED BY AN ANGEL

1 KINGS 19:5-8: "...an angel touched him, and said...Arise and eat. And...behold...a cake...and.. .water...And the angel...came again...and said, Arise and eat...and he...went in the strength of that meat forty days and forty nights, unto Horeb the Mount of God."

WIND, EARTHQUAKE, FIRE

1 KINGS 19:11,12: "...the LORD passed by, and a great and strong wind rent the mountains, and brake in pieces the rocks...and after the wind an earthquake...and after the earthquake a fire;...and after the fire a still small voice."

WALL FALLS ON ISRAEL'S ENEMIES

1 KINGS 20:29,30: "...the children of Israel slew...and hundred thousand...in one day. But the rest fled...into the city; and...a wall fell upon twenty and seven thousand...*that were* left..."

SOLDIERS SENT AFTER ELIJAH WERE KILLED

2 KINGS 1:9,13,14: "The king...sent again a captain of the third fifty with his fifty. And the third...said...there came

fire down from heaven and burnt up the two captains...with their fifties..."

JORDAN DIVIDED; ELIJAH TAKEN UP

2 KINGS 2:8,11,12,14: "And Elijah took his mantle...and smote the waters, and they were divided...And...behold a chariot of fire, and horses of fire, and parted them...and Elijah went up by a whirlwind...And Elisha...took the mantle...and when he also had smitten the waters, they parted..."

WATERS HEALED

2 KINGS 2:21,22: "And he went forth unto the spring...and cast the salt in...So the waters were healed..."

MOCKING YOUTHS TORN BY BEARS

2 KINGS 2:23,24: (*Leeser*): "...Young lads... mocked him...And he...cursed them in the name of Yahweh; [*Rotherham*] and there came forth two she-bears...and tare of them forty-two youths."

WATER AND VICTORY GIVEN

2 KINGS 3:9,14,17,20,22-24: "...there was no water for the host...Elisha said...ye shall not see...rain; yet that valley shall be filled with water...there came water...and the country was filled...the Moabites saw the water...*as* red as blood: and they said,...they have smitten one another: now...Moab, to the spoil. And when they came to the camp of Israel, the Israelites... smote the Moabites..."

WIDOW'S OIL MULTIPLIED

2 KINGS 4:1-7: "Now there cried a...woman... unto Elisha...my husband is dead: and thou knowest that thy servant did fear the LORD: and the creditor is come to take...my two sons to be bondmen...Thine handmaid hath not anything...save a pot of oil. Then he said, Go, borrow thee vessels...not a few...pour out into all those vessels...When the vessels were full...the oil stayed...And he said, Go, sell the oil, and pay thy debt, and live...of the rest."

SHUNAMITE'S SON BORN AND RESTORED

2 KINGS 4:14,16-20,25,29,32-36: "...Gehazi answered, Verily she hath no child, and her husband is old...And he said,...Thou shalt embrace a son...And the woman...bare a son... And when the child was grown,...he went out to his father to the reapers. And he said unto his father, My head...And he said...Carry him to his mother. And...he sat on her knees till noon, and *then* died...So she went...unto the man of God...then he said to Gehazi,...lay my staff upon the face of the child...And when Elisha was come...the child was dead...He went in...and prayed unto the LORD...and

lay upon the child, and put his mouth upon his mouth, and his eyes upon his eyes, and his hands upon his hands: and he stretched himself upon the child; and the flesh of the child waxed warm. Then he returned, and walked in the house...and went up, and stretched himself upon him: and the child sneezed seven times, and...opened his eyes...And he...said, Call this Shunammite...And he said, Take up thy son."

HUNDRED FED WITH TWENTY LOAVES

2 KINGS 4:42-44: "...a man...brought the man of God...twenty loaves of barley and full ears of corn...And he said, Give unto the people...And his servitor said, What, should I set this before an hundred men? He said...Thus saith the LORD, They shall eat and shall leave *thereof*...And they did..."

NAAMAN CURED; GEHAZI SMITTEN

2 KINGS 5:10,14-16,21,22,25-27: "...Elisha sent...saying, Go and wash in Jordan seven times, and thy flesh shall come again...and thou shalt be clean...and his flesh came again like unto the flesh of a little child, and he was clean. And he returned...and he said...take a blessing of thy servant...but he refused...Gehazi followed after Naaman...And he said...My master hath sent me, saying,...there be come...two...sons of the prophets: give them...a talent of silver, and two changes of garments...And Elisha said unto him...*Is it* time to receive money, and... garments...? The leprosy...of Naaman shall cleave unto thee,...And he went out...a leper..."

IRON MADE TO SWIM

2 KINGS 6:5,6: "...as one was felling a beam, the axe head fell into the water...And the man of God...cut down a stick, and cast *it* in...and the iron did swim."

YOUNG MAN'S EYES OPENED; ARMY BLINDED

2 KINGS 6:17,18: "And Elisha prayed... LORD...open his eyes...and he saw:...the mountain...full of horses and chariots of fire... And when they came down...the LORD...smote them with blindness..."

TOUCHING ELISHA'S BONES REVIVES DEAD MAN

2 KINGS 13:21: "...as they were burying a man...they spied a band...and they cast the man into the sepulchre of Elisha: and when the man...touched the bones of Elisha, he revived, and stood upon his feet."

ANGEL DESTROYS SENNACHERIB'S ARMY

2 KINGS 19:35: "That night...the angel of the LORD...smote in the camp...an hundred fourscore and five thousand..."

SHADOW GOES BACK ON DIAL

2 KINGS 20:9-11: "...shall the shadow go forward...or back...? And Hezekiah answered,.. .let the shadow return backward...And...the LORD...brought the shadow...backward...in the dial..."

"When...the upper atmosphere...causes two bright parhelia or mock suns to appear on opposite sides of the sun, and...the lower air contains drifting clouds, massive enough to hide often two of the three...If the cloud...hide the west...and disclose the eastern, the shadows...become such as...cast an hour and a half earlier..." *R2383:1*

UZZIAH'S LEPROSY

2 CHRON. 26:16-20: "...he...went into the temple of the LORD to burn incense...And Azariah the priest went in after him, and... fourscore priests...and said...not unto thee, Uzziah, to burn incense unto the LORD, but to the priests...Then Uzziah was wroth, and... leprosy even rose up in his forehead..."

DAN. 2:1,5,17-19: "...Nebuchadnezzar dreamed dreams,...the king...said...The thing is gone from me:...Then Daniel...made the thing known to... his companions: That they would desire mercies of the God of heaven concerning this secret; ...Then was the secret revealed unto Daniel..."

NEBUCHADNEZZAR'S REASON LOST

DAN. 4:31-34: "...there fell a voice from heaven...The kingdom is departed from thee. And they shall drive thee from men, and thy dwelling *shall be* with the beasts of the field: they shall make thee to eat grass as oxen, and seven times shall pass over thee...The same hour was the thing fulfilled...at the end of the days I Nebuchadnezzar lifted up mine eyes unto heaven, and mine understanding returned..."

HANDWRITING ON THE WALL

DAN. 5:5: "In the same hour came forth fingers of a man's hand, and wrote...upon...the wall..."

DANIEL IN THE LION'S DEN

DAN.: 6:16,20-22: "...they brought Daniel, and cast *him* into the den of lions...The king...said unto Daniel...is thy God...able to deliver thee...Then said Daniel...My God hath sent his angel, and hath shut the lions' mouths, that they have not hurt me..."

JONAH, THE FISH, THE GOURD

JONAH 1:4,11,12,17; 2:10; 4:6,7,10,11: "...the LORD sent out a great wind...and there was a mighty tempest...so that the ship was like to be broken...said they unto him, What shall we do unto thee, that the sea may be calm...?...he said...cast me forth into the sea;...Now the LORD had prepared a great fish to swallow up Jonah. And Jonah was in the belly of the fish three days and three nights...And the LORD spake unto the fish, and it vomited out Jonah upon the dry *land.* And the LORD God prepared a gourd, and made it to come up over Jonah, that it might be a shadow over his head...But God prepared a worm...and it smote the gourd that it withered...Then said the LORD, Thou hast had pity on the gourd... should not I spare Nineveh,...wherein are more then sixscore thousand persons...?"

NEW TESTAMENT MIRACLES

JOSEPH'S DREAM

MATT: 1:20: "...the angel...appeared unto him in a dream, saying...fear not to take unto thee Mary thy wife: for that which is conceived in her is of the Holy Spirit."

THE STAR OF BETHLEHEM

MATT. 2:1,2,9: "...there came wise men... Saying, Where is he that is born King of the Jews? for we have seen his star in the east,...the star...went before them, till it came and stood over where the young child was."

WISE MEN AND JOSEPH WARNED

MATT. 2:12,13: "And being warned...in a dream that they should not return to Herod, they departed...another way. And...the angel... appeareth to Joseph in a dream, saying, Arise, and take the young child and his mother, and flee into Egypt..."

THE SPIRIT AS A DOVE

MATT.3:16,17; MARK 1:10,11; LUKE 3:21,22: "...And Jesus, when he was baptized, went up straightway out of the water: and lo, the heavens were opened unto him, and he saw the Spirit of God descending like a dove, and lighting upon him: And lo a voice from heaven, saying, This is my beloved Son, in whom I am well pleased."

LEPER HEALED

MATT. 8:2,3; MARK 1:40; LUKE 5:12: "...there came a leper...saying, Lord,...thou canst make me clean. And Jesus...touched him...And...his leprosy was cleansed."

PALSEY CURED

MATT. 8:5,6,8,10,13; LUKE 7:2-10: "...there came...a centurion...saying, Lord, my servant lieth...sick of the palsy...I am not worthy that thou shouldest come under my roof: but speak the word only, and my servant shall be healed...Jesus...said...I have not found so great faith...in Israel...And his servant was healed..."

PETER'S MOTHER—IN—LAW CURED

MATT. 8:14,15; MARK 1:30,31; LUKE 4:38,39: "And when Jesus was come into Peter's house he saw his wife's mother...sick...And he touched her hand, and the fever left her..."

THE TEMPEST CALMED

MATT. 8:26; MARK 4:37-41; LUKE 8:22-25: "...he...rebuked the winds and the sea; and there was a great calm."

DEMONS CAST OUT INTO SWINE

MATT. 8:28,31,32; MARK 5:1-17; LUKE 8:26-37: "...there met him two possessed with devils...the devils besought him, saying, If thou cast us out, suffer us to go away into the herd of swine...The...swine ran...into the sea, and perished..."

FORGIVING AND CURING A MAN OF PALSY

MATT. 9:2,3,4,5,7; MARK 2:1-12; LUKE 5:18-26: "...they brought to him a man sick of the palsy...and Jesus...said...Thy sins be forgiven thee. And...certain of the scribes said within

themselves, This man blasphemeth. And Jesus said...that ye may know...that the Son of man hath power...to forgive sins (then saith he to the sick...), Arise, take up thy bed and go unto thine house. And he arose and departed to his house."

WOMAN HEALED BY TOUCHING GARMENT

MATT.9:20,22; MARK 5:25-34; LUKE 8:43-48: "...A woman...diseased...twelve years...touched... his garment...and...was made whole..."

JAIRUS' DAUGHTER RAISED

MATT. 9:24,25; MARK 5:22-43; LUKE 8:41-56: "He said..., the maid is not dead but sleepeth. And they laughed him to scorn. But...he...took her by the hand, and the maid arose."

BLIND GIVEN SIGHT

MATT. 9:27,29,30: "...two blind men followed him...saying,...have mercy on us...Then touched he their eyes...And their eyes were opened..."

DUMB AND POSSESSED SPEAKS

MATT. 9:32,33: "...they brought to him a dumb man possessed with a devil. And when the devil was cast out, the dumb spake: and the multitudes marvelled, saying, It was never so seen in Israel."

DISCIPLES GIVEN POWER TO WORK MIRACLES

MATT. 10:1,5,8; MARK 3:14,15; LUKE 10:1,9,17: "...he gave them power *against* unclean spirits, to cast them out, and to heal all manner of sickness and all manner of disease... Jesus...commanded them, saying,...Heal the sick, cleanse the lepers, raise the dead, cast out devils..."

JESUS' MIRACLES

MATT. 11:4,5: "Jesus answered...Go and show John again those things which ye do hear and see: The blind receive their sight, and the lame walk, the lepers are cleansed, and the deaf hear, and dead are raised up, and the poor have the gospel preached to them."

WITHERED HAND RESTORED

MATT. 12:10,13; MARK 3:1-6; LUKE 6:6-11: "...there was a man which had *his* hand withered...Then saith he...Stretch forth thine hand. And...it was restored..."

BLIND, DUMB, POSSESSED, RESTORED

MATT. 12:22; LUKE 11:14-26: "Then was brought...one possessed with a devil, blind, and dumb: and he healed him...the blind and dumb both spake and saw."

FEEDING MULTITUDE (1)

MATT.14:19-21; MARK 6:35-44; LUKE 9:12-17; JOHN 6:5-14: "And he...took the five loaves, and the two fishes, and...blessed...and gave...to his disciples, and the disciples to the multitude...they took up...that remained twelve baskets full. And they...were about five thousand men, beside women and children."

WALKING ON SEA

MATT. 14:25,28-31; MARK 6:47-51; JOHN 6:16-21: "...Jesus went unto them, walking on the sea...Peter...said,...bid me come unto thee on the water...Peter...walked on the water...But beginning to sink, he cried,...save me...Jesus... caught him..."

SPIRIT CAST OUT OF SYROPHENICIAN WOMAN'S DAUGHTER

MATT. 15:22,28; MARK 7:25-30: "...a woman...cried... saying...my daughter is...vexed with a

devil...Jesus...said...be it...as thou wilt. And her daughter was made whole..."

FEEDING MULTITUDE (2)

MATT. 15:36-38; MARK 8:1-9: "And he took the seven loaves and the fishes, and gave thanks,...and gave to his disciples, and the disciples to the multitude...And they took up...that was left seven baskets full. And they...were four thousand men, beside women and children."

CASTING OUT A DEMON

MATT. 17:14,15,18; MARK 9:26,27; LUKE 9:37-42: "There came...a...man...saying, Lord have mercy on my son: for he is a lunatick...for...he falleth into the fire, and oft into the water...And Jesus rebuked the devil; and *the spirit* cried, and rent him *sore*, and came out of him: and he was as one dead...But Jesus...lifted him up..."

TRANSFIGURATION

MATT. 17:1-3,5; MARK 9:2-8; LUKE 9:28-36: "...Jesus...was transfigured...and his face did shine as the sun, and his rainment was white as the light. And, behold, there appeared unto them Moses and Elias talking with him...behold, a bright cloud overshadowed them: and behold a voice out of the cloud, which said, This is my beloved Son, in whom I am well pleased; hear ye him."

TRIBUTE MONEY IN FISH

MATT. 17:27: "...cast an hook, and take up the fish that first cometh up; and when thou hast opened his mouth, thou shalt find a piece of money: that take, and give unto them for me and thee."

EYES OF BLIND OPENED

MATT. 20:34; MARK 10:46-52; LUKE 18:35-43: "So Jesus...touched their eyes: and immediately their eyes received sight..."

FIG TREE CURSED

MATT. 21:19; MARK 11:13,14,20-26: "And when he saw a fig tree...he...found nothing...but leaves only, and said...Let no fruit grow on thee...and presently the fig tree withered away."

"...our Lord's curse upon a fig tree which bore no fruit, and which withered away directly... inclines us to believe that the fig tree... [Matt.24:32] may...signify the Jewish nation..." *D604*

UNCLEAN SPIRIT CAST OUT

MARK 1:23-26; LUKE 4:33-37,41: "And there was in their synagogue a man with an unclean spirit; and he cried out

Saying, Let *us* alone;...art thou come to destroy us? I know thee...the Holy One of God. And Jesus rebuked him, saying, Hold thy peace, and come out of him. And when the unclean spirit had torn him, and cried with a loud voice, he came out of him."

SPIRITS CAST OUT AND HEALING BY TOUCH

MARK 3:10,11; LUKE 6:19: "For he had healed many; insomuch that they pressed upon him for to touch him, as many as had plagues. And unclean spirits, when they saw him, fell down before him, and cried, saying, Thou art the Son of God. And the whole multitude sought to touch him: for there went virtue out of him, and healed *them* all."

HEALING DEAF AND TONGUE-TIED

MARK 7:32-35: "And they bring unto him one that was deaf, and had an impediment in his speech;...And he...put his fingers into his ears, and he spit, and touched his tongue;...and saith...Be opened. And...his ears were opened... and he spake plain."

BLIND GIVEN SIGHT

MARK 8:23-25: "...when he had spit on his eyes, and put his hands upon him, he asked him if he saw ought. And he...said, I see men as trees, walking. After that he put *his* hands again upon his eyes,...and he...saw...clearly."

BIRTH OF JOHN FORETOLD

LUKE 1:11,13: "And there appeared unto him an angel...the angel said...thy wife Elisabeth shall bear thee a son..."

ZACHARIAS' DUMBNESS

LUKE 1:20: "...thou shalt be dumb,... until...these things shall be performed..."

JESUS' BIRTH FORETOLD

LUKE 1:30,31,36,39-41: "And the angel said... thou shalt...bring forth a son...JESUS...thy cousin Elisabeth, she hath also conceived a son in her old age...And Mary...went...And entered into the house of Zacharias...And...when Elisabeth heard the salutation of Mary, the babe leaped..."

ZACHARIAS' DUMBNESS DEPARTS

LUKE 1:62-64,67: "And they made signs to his father, how he would have him called. And he asked for a writing table, and...wrote, saying, His name is John...And his mouth was opened...and he spake...And Zacharias...prophesied..."

ANGEL ANNOUNCES JESUS' BIRTH

LUKE 2:9-11: "And, lo, the angel of the Lord came upon them, and the glory of the Lord shone round about them...And the angel said...unto you is born...a Saviour, which is Christ the Lord."

ANGELS' SONG

LUKE 2:13,14: "And suddenly there was with the angel a multitude of the heavenly host praising God, and saying, Glory to God in the highest..."

SIMEON'S AND ANNA'S TESTIMONY

LUKE 2:25-30,36,38: "And, behold, there was a man...whose name *was* Simeon...just and devout...And it was revealed unto him...that he should not see death before he had seen the Lord's Christ. And he came by the Spirit into the temple: and when the parents brought in the child Jesus,...took he him up in his arms...and said, Lord, now lettest thou thy servant depart in peace,...for mine eyes have seen thy salvation...And there was one Anna, a prophetess,...And she coming in that instant gave thanks likewise unto the Lord, and spake of him to all them that looked for redemption in Jerusalem."

MIRACULOUS CATCH OF FISH

LUKE 5:5,6: "And Simon...said...we have toiled all the night, and have taken nothing: nevertheless at thy word I will let down the net. And...they inclosed a great multitude of fishes..."

RAISING THE WIDOW'S SON

LUKE 7:12,14,15: "...there was a dead man carried out,...And he said, Young man,...Arise. And he that was dead sat up, and began to speak..."

WOMAN MADE STRAIGHT

LUKE 13:11-13: "...there was a woman which had a spirit of infirmity eighteen years, and was bowed together, and could in no wise lift up *herself*...Jesus...said...thou art loosed from thine infirmity. And he laid *his* hands on her: and immediately she was made straight..."

DROPSIED MAN HEALED

LUKE 14:2,4: "...a certain man...had the dropsy...And he...healed him..."

TEN LEPERS CLEANSED

LUKE 17:12-14: "...ten...lepers...said, Jesus,... have mercy on us...he said...Go shew yourselves unto the priests...as they went, they were cleansed."

HIGH PRIEST'S SERVANT'S EAR HEALED

LUKE 22:50,51: "...one of them smote the servant of the high priest, and cut off his right ear. And Jesus...touched his ear, and healed him."

WATER TURNED INTO WINE

JOHN 2:7-10: "Jesus saith...Fill the waterpots with water. And they filled them...he saith... Draw out now, and bear unto the governor of the feast...When the ruler of the feast had tested the water that was made wine, and knew not whence it was...the governor...saith,...thou hast kept the good wine until now."

NOBLEMAN'S SON HEALED

JOHN 4:46,47,50-53: "...there was a certain nobleman, whose son was sick...he...besought him that he would...heal his son: for he was at the point of death...Jesus saith...thy son liveth, And the man believed...as he was now going down, his servants met him...saying, Thy son liveth. Then enquired he...when he began to amend...So the father knew that *it was* at the same hour, in, which Jesus said...Thy son liveth..."

IMPOTENT MAN AT POOL HEALED

JOHN 5:5-9: "And a certain man was there, which had an infirmity thirty and eight years... Jesus...saith...Wilt thou be made whole? Jesus saith...Rise, take up thy bed, and walk...the man was made whole, and took up his bed, and walked..."

MAN BLIND FROM BIRTH GIVEN SIGHT

JOHN 9:1,6,7: "...he saw a man...blind from... birth...he spat on the ground, and made clay of the spittle, and he anointed the eyes

of the blind man with the clay, And said...Go, wash in the pool of Siloam...He went...and washed, and came seeing."

LAZARUS RAISED

JOHN 11:38,39,43,44: "Jesus...cometh to the grave...Jesus said Take *ye* away the stone. Martha...saith...he hath been *dead* four days... he cried...Lazarus, come forth. And he that was dead came forth..."

COMING OF THE HOLY SPIRIT

ACTS 2:2-4: "...there came a sound from heaven as of a rushing mighty wind, and it filled all the house...And there appeared...cloven tongues like as of fire, and it sat upon each of them. And they were all filled with the Holy Spirit, and began to speak with other tongues..."

LAME MAN MADE TO WALK

ACTS 3:2,3,6-8: "And a...man lame from his mother's womb...asked an alms...Peter said...In the name of Jesus Christ...rise up and walk. And he...lifted *him* up: and immediately his feet and ankle bones received strength. And he leaping up stood, and walked,...walking and leaping..."

ANANIAS AND SAPPHIRA STRICKEN

ACTS 5:5,10, *Diag.*: "And ANANIAS...fell down, and expired...And she fell down,...and expired..."

HEALING POWERS

ACTS 5:15,16, *Diag.*: "...they brought out the SICK even into the OPEN SQUARES,...that at least the SHADOW of Peter...might overshadow some of them. And the MULTITUDE came together even from the CITIES surrounding Jerusalem, bringing Sick persons, and those troubled by impure Spirits; all of whom were cured."

PRISON DOORS OPENED

ACTS 5:17-19: "Then the high priest...and all they that were with him,...and put them in...prison. But the angel...opened the prison doors, and brought them forth..."

STEPHEN'S VISION

ACTS 7:55,56: "But he...said,...I see the heavens opened, and the Son of man standing on the right hand of God."

PHILIP'S MIRACLES

ACTS 8:7: "For unclean spirits, crying with loud voice, came out of many...and many taken with palsies, and that were lame, were healed."

JESUS' APPEARANCE TO SAUL

ACTS 9:3,4; 22:6,7; 26:13,14: "...suddenly there shined round about him a light from heaven: And he fell to the earth, and heard a voice saying unto him, Saul, Saul, why persecutest thou me?"

ANANIAS RESTORES SAUL'S SIGHT

ACTS 9:10-12,18; 22:12,13: "And there was a certain disciple...Ananias; and to him said the Lord in a vision,...go...enquire...for...Saul...he hath seen in a vision a man named Ananias... putting his hand on him, that he might receive his sight...And...there fell from his eyes as it had been scales: and he received sight..."

AENEAS HEALED

ACTS 9:33,34: "...he found...Aeneas which had kept his bed eight years, and was sick of the palsy. And Peter

said...Aeneas, Jesus Christ maketh thee whole: arise, and make thy bed. And he arose immediately."

RAISING OF DORCAS

ACTS 9:36,37,40,41: "...a...disciple named Tabitha,...by interpretation is called Dorcas:... died...Peter...prayed; and turning...said, Tabitha arise. And she opened her eyes; and when she saw Peter, she sat up. And he gave her *his* hand, and lifted her up, and...presented her alive."

PETER SENT TO CORNELIUS — GENTILES ACCEPTED

ACTS 10:1,3,5,9-15,19,20,44: "...Cornelius...saw in a vision...an angel...saying...call for...Peter... Peter...fell into a trance, And saw heaven opened, and...as it had been a great sheet...let down... wherein were...beasts, and creeping things, and fowls...And there came a voice to him Rise, Peter; kill and eat. But Peter said, Not so...And the voice *spake*...What God hath cleansed...call not thou common. While Peter thought on the vision, the Spirit said...three men seek thee...go with them...While Peter yet spoke...the Holy Spirit fell on all them which heard..."

PETER DELIVERED FROM PRISON

ACTS 12:7-10: "...the angel...came...and a light shined in the prison: and he...raised him up...And his chains fell off...And he saith...follow me...And...he thought he saw a vision. When they were past the first and the second ward, they came unto the iron gate that leadeth unto the city; which opened to them of his own accord: and they...passed on through one street; and...the angel departed..."

ELYMAS STRICKEN BLIND

ACTS 13:9-11: "Then...Paul...said, O...enemy of all righteousness,...thou shalt be blind...for a season. And...there fell on him...a darkness; and he went about seeking some to lead him..."

LAME MAN HEALED

ACTS 14:8-10: "And there sat a...man...who had never walked: the same heard Paul speak: who...perceiving that he had faith to be healed, Said...Stand upright on thy feet. And he leaped and walked."

THE MACEDONIAN CALL

ACTS 16:9: "And a vision appeared to Paul...a man of Macedonia...saying, Come over into Macedonia, and help us."

CASTING OUT AN EVIL SPIRIT

ACTS 16:16-18: "...A...damsel possessed with a spirit of divination...followed Paul...saying, These men are the servants of the most high God, which shew unto us the way of salvation...But Paul...said to the spirit, I command thee in the name of Jesus Christ to come out of her. And he came out the same hour."

EARTHQUAKE RELEASES PRISONERS

ACTS 16:25,26: "And at midnight Paul and Silas prayed, and sang praises unto God...And suddenly there was a great earthquake, so that the foundations of the prison were shaken: and...the doors were opened, and everyone's bands were loosed."

PAUL'S MIRACLES VS. MAN'S ATTEMPT TO CAST OUT SPIRITS

ACTS 19:11-13,15,16: "And God wrought special miracles by the hands of Paul: So that from his body were brought unto the sick handkerchiefs or aprons, and the diseases departed...and the evil spirits went out of them. Then certain of the vagabond Jews, exorcists, took upon them to call over them which had evil spirits the name of the LORD Jesus, saying, We adjure you by Jesus whom Paul preacheth...And the evil spirit...said, Jesus I know, and Paul I know; but who are ye? And the man in whom the evil spirit was leaped on them, and overcame them..."

THE DEAD RAISED

ACTS 20:9,10,12: "...Eutychus...sunk down with sleep, and fell down from the third loft, and was taken up dead. And Paul went down, and fell on him, and embracing *him* said Trouble not yourselves; for his life is in him...And they brought the young man alive..."

PAUL SENT TO THE GENTILES

ACTS 22:17,18,21: "...while I prayed in the temple, I was in a trance; And saw him saying unto me,...get thee quickly out of Jerusalem:... Depart for I will send thee...unto the Gentiles."

PAUL ENCOURAGED BY JESUS

ACTS 23:11: "...the Lord stood by him, and said, Be of good cheer, Paul: for as thou hast testified of me in Jerusalem, so must thou bear witness also at Rome."

ALSO ON THE SHIP

ACTS 27:23,24: "For there stood by me...the angel of God,...saying, Fear not, Paul; thou must be brought before Caesar: and, lo, God hath given thee all that sail with thee."

PAUL UNHARMED BY VIPER

ACTS 28:3-6: "And when Paul had gathered a bundle of sticks, and laid them on the fire, there came a viper out of the heat, and fastened on his hand. And...the barbarians...said...No doubt this man is a murderer, whom, though he hath escaped the sea, yet vengeance suffereth not to live. And he shook off the beast into the fire, and felt no harm. Howbeit they looked when he should have swollen, or fallen down dead suddenly: but after they had looked a great while, and saw no harm come to him, they changed their minds, and said that he was a god."

PUBLIUS' FATHER HEALED

ACTS 28:8: "...the father of Publius lay sick of a fever and of a bloody flux: to whom Paul entered in, and prayed, and laid his hands on him, and healed him."

PAUL'S SIGNS AND WONDERS

ROM.15:19: "Through mighty signs and wonders, by the power of the Spirit of God..."

MIRACULOUS GIFTS

1 COR.12:8-10,28-30: "For to one is given by the Spirit the word of wisdom; to another the word of knowledge by the same Spirit; To another faith by the same Spirit; to another the gifts of healing by the same Spirit; To another the working of miracles; to another prophecy; to another discerning of spirits; to another...kinds of tongues; to another the interpretation of tongues. And God hath set some in the church, first apostles, secondarily prophets, thirdly teachers, after that miracles, then gifts of healings, helps, governments, diversities of tongues. *Are* all apostles?...*are* all workers of miracles? Have all the gifts of healing? do all speak with tongues? do all interpret?"

MIRACULOUS GIFTS TO CEASE

1 COR.13:8-10: "...whether *there be* prophecies, they shall fail; whether *there be* tongues, they shall cease; whether *there be* knowledge, it shall vanish away. For we know in part, and we prophesy in part. But when that which is perfect is come, then that which is in part shall be done away."

MISUSE OF TONGUES

1 COR.14:18,23,27-33: "...I speak with tongues more than ye all: If...all speak with tongues, and there come in...unlearned, or unbelievers, will they not say that ye are mad? If any man speak in an *unknown* tongue *let it be* by *two*, or at the most...three, and *that* by course; and let one interpret. But if there be no interpreter, let him keep silence in the church...Let the prophets speak two or three,

and let the other judge. If *anything* be revealed to another that sitteth by, let the first hold his peace. For ye may all prophecy one by one, that all may learn, and all may be comforted. And the spirits of the prophets are subject to the prophets. For God is not *the author* of confusion, but of peace..."

RESURRECTION AND APPEARANCES OF CHRIST

1 COR.15;4-8: "...he rose again the third day... And...was seen of Cephas, then of the twelve: After that he was seen of above five hundred brethren at once;...After that, he was seen of James; then of all the apostles. And last of all he was seen of me also, as of one born out of due time (*Diag.*, **by the abortion**)."

PAUL'S VISIONS

2 COR.12:1,3,4: "...I will come to visions and revelations...I knew such a man,...caught up into paradise, and heard unspeakable words, which it is not lawful for a man to utter."

MIRACLES THROUGH THE SPIRIT

GAL. 3:5: "He...that ministereth to you in the Spirit, and worketh miracles...*doeth he it* by the works of the law, or by the hearing of faith?"

A WITNESS TO PREACHING

HEB. 2:3,4: "...great salvation...began to be spoken by the Lord, and was confirmed unto us by them that heard him. God also bearing... witness, both with signs and wonders, and with divers miracles, and gifts of the Holy Spirit..."

THE REVELATION OF JOHN

REV. 1:10: "I was in the Spirit on the Lord's day..."

MORMONISM

Name — "The Church of Jesus Christ of Latter-day Saints"

Organized — 1830

Beliefs — "The Father is a glorified and perfect person and Jesus Christ the Son is in His express image...One is an individual as much as the other...a spirit clothed with a spiritual, yet tangible, immortal body...The Holy Spirit is not a personage of tabernacle, and his influence...extends throughout...space...and that Spirit, proceeding from the presence of God, gives life and light to all things animate, and the power by which they are governed, and by which the Father and the Son are everywhere present."

(*Excerpts — 1-22 from booklet "What Mormons Believe")*

WHAT MORMONS BELIEVE

(1) MAN

"Man is a dual being, also in the image of God, who is the Father of his spirit and the Creator of his body..."

FAITH LEADING TO REPENTANCE

"Faith in God the Father, the Son, and the Holy Ghost leads to...repentance..."

"Repentance leads to remission of sins...through baptism...by one having authority..."

(2) BAPTISM

"Baptism...is immersion in water...Becoming dead to sin by repentance, the believer is buried in the liquid grave and...born of water to a new life..."

ATONEMENT

"The repentant believer, thus baptized, obtains remission of sins through the shedding of Christ's blood. He who knew no sins died that sinners might be saved by obedience to His commandments...What they are able to do is required of them...that they may receive the benefits of His atonement."

(3) SPIRITUAL GIFTS

"The regenerated soul...is entitled to such spiritual gifts as he or she may deserve and obtain by...faith...wisdom, knowledge, prophecy, visions,...tongues, interpretation..., discerning of spirits, healing..., etc...."

(4) LATTER DAY REVELATIONS

"In these latter days the Father and the Son have appeared and revealed anew the Gospel. Angels have ministered to man. John the Baptist brought to earth the authority of the lesser or Aaronic Priesthood...Peter, James, and John have

conferred their keys of Apostleship...and the...authority of the higher Melchisedec Priesthood. Elijah...and others have bestowed the keys they held..."

(5) FOUNDER

"Joseph Smith was the instrument...to commence the work of restitution and open the last dispensation, that of 'the fulness of times.' He received that divine authority under the hands of those heavenly messengers. He, by revelation and commandment ordained others..."

(6) FUTURE PROBATION

"The Gospel...is to be preached to every creature. Persons who have died after reaching years of accountability without an opportunity of receiving it, will hear it in the spirit world, and may there obey or reject it....All will thus have the doors of redemption opened to them. Infants who die before they become accountable need no baptism but are all redeemed by the blood of Christ."

(7) SPIRIT OF MAN

"The spirit of man is the intelligent, responsible being, an entity both before and after dwelling in the body. It was in the beginning with the Father. The sons and daughters of God, after probation in the flesh, return to him and then, until the resurrection associate in such sphere as they have fitted themselves to occupy...A disembodied spirit can learn, believe, repent, and yield obedience, but cannot be baptized in water..."

(8) "BAPTIZED FOR THE DEAD"

"The living may be baptized for the dead..."

(9) PREACHING TO THE DEAD

"As the Spirit of Christ preached to the spirits in prison while his body was in the sepulchre, so his servants bearing His authority, preach to 'the dead' after finishing their work on earth..."

(10) RESURRECTION

"Jesus...was 'the first-fruit.' All who have breathed the breath of life will also be raised from the dead, receiving their bodies again as He did....Those who have put on Christ...will be Christ's at his coming and will be quickened by his glory, the celestial typified by the sun. After...a thousand...years the rest of the dead will come forth, some in the terrestrial glory, typified by the moon, and others in the Celestial glory, typified by the stars, the rest in a kingdom not of any degree of glory. All will be judged according to their works."

(11) PUNISHMENT

"The condemned will be punished for sin, as divine justice shall determine...the severity and...duration. The purpose is

the vindication of the law and the reclamation of the transgressor...All who can be redeemed will be placed in some degree of glory...Only the sons of perdition who deny the Holy Ghost after having received it, who willfully pervert the power given to them to attain the highest exaltation and who shed innocent blood, will be utterly lost."

(12) INHERITANCE OF THE EARTH

"The glory of those...in Christ...is to 'inherit all things.'...They will inherit the earth when it is purified and crowned with...the presence of God..."

(13) THE LAST DISPENSATION

"This is the last dispensation. In it Israel will be gathered...and Palestine will be the abode of the sons of Judah. The elect...will gather...to Zion on the American continent. The earth will be cleansed...Paradise will bloom again, war will cease...the curse will be removed..."

(14) JOSEPH SMITH

"The Prophet of the nineteenth century was directed by the angel of God to...where the records...of the former inhabitants of this continent were deposited. He...translated a portion of them...It is called the book of Mormon..."

(15) THE BOOK OF MORMON

"It gives the history of two races, the first...from a colony brought upon this land at the time of the dispersion from the Tower of Babel; the second...from Jerusalem...when Zedekiah was king...It relates the wars, travels, religion, progress, and decadence of those races — the progenitors of the American Indians...and contains an account of the visit on this land of Jesus Christ, after his...ascension...establishing his church here..."

(16) OTHER BOOKS

"The Book of Mormon does not take the place of the Bible, but is auxiliary to it...They with the Book of Doctrine and Covenants, and the Pearl of Great Price, are the standards of doctrine and discipline..."

(17) PRESIDENT OF MORMONS

"The President of the Church, who is a prophet, a seer, and a revelator, is entitled to divine communication by any of the means which God chooses...Revelation for the whole Church comes through the head alone..."

(18) CELESTIAL MARRIAGE

"Celestial,...eternal marriage, is a feature of the Mormon faith...By the authority vested in the head of the church, that which is sealed on earth is sealed in heaven, and the man and woman united under that authority in an

everlasting covenant are joined forever. Such was the marriage of Adam and Eve...The redemption restored them..., and they stand at the head of their posterity, immortal, perfected..."

(19) TITHING

"The revenue of the church is...from tithes..."

(20) FASTING AND DONATIONS TO THE POOR

"Every month a fast is held, and the amount saved...donated to the poor..."

(21) DIVINE ORIGIN

"The great distinctive feature of 'Mormonism'... is its claim of divine origin....Continuous revelation...through its earthly head, and to every member who seeks for it in his or her own behalf and guidance is a fundamental principle of the 'Mormon' faith. Divine authority is associated with it."

(22) TO TRIUMPH

"'Mormonism'...

"...will triumph and flood the earth with light and truth, until darkness shall flee and Satan be bound and the kingdoms of this world become the kingdom of our God and His Christ, and he shall reign over all the ransomed globe forevermore."

The foregoing is condensed from the booklet entitled "What the Mormons Believe." Our reply follows:

MORMONISM ANSWERED

(1) MAN NOT DUAL BEING

GEN.2:7: "And the LORD GOD formed man *of* the dust of the ground, and breathed into his nostrils the breath of life; and man became a living soul."

GEN.3:19: "...dust thou art, and unto dust shalt thou return."

MAN AND BEAST HAVE SAME BREATH

GEN. 7:21,22: "And all flesh died that moved upon the earth, both of fowl, and of cattle, and of beast, and of every creeping thing..., and every man: All in whose nostrils *was* the breath of life, of all that *was* in the dry *land* died."

ECCL. 3:19,20: "For that which befalleth the sons of men befalleth them: as the one dieth, so dieth the other; yea, they have all one breath; so that a man hath no preeminence above a beast...All go unto one place; all are of the dust, and all turn to dust again."

LOWER ANIMALS ALSO SOULS

NUM. 31:28: "And levy a tribute unto the LORD...one soul of five hundred,...of the persons, and of the beeves, and of the asses, and of the sheep..."

See also Index: **Soul**

(2) JOHN'S VS. GENTILE BAPTISM

ACTS 19:4,5: "Then said Paul, John verily baptized with the baptism of repentance, saying unto the people, that they should believe on him which should come after him, that is, on Christ Jesus. When they heard *this*, they were baptized in the name of the LORD Jesus."

INTO CHRIST'S SACRIFICIAL DEATH

ROM.6:3-5: "...so many of us as were baptized into Jesus Christ were baptized into his death? Therefore we are buried with him by baptism into death: that like as Christ was raised up from the dead by the glory of the Father, even so we also should walk in newness of life. For if we have been planted together in the likeness of his death, we shall be also *in the likeness* of *his* resurrection."

See also Index: **Baptism**

(3) GIFTS TO PASS AWAY

ACTS 8:18: "...through laying on of the apostles' hands the Holy Spirit was given..."

ROM. 1:11: "For I long to see you, that I may impart unto you some spiritual gift..."

MIRACULOUS GIFTS TO CEASE

1 COR. 13:8: "...whether *there be* prophecies, they shall fail; whether *there be* tongues, they shall cease; whether *there be* knowledge, it shall vanish away."

See also Index: **The Holy Spirit**

(6) FUTURE PROBATION

ACTS 17:30,31: "God...hath appointed a day, in the which he will judge the world in righteousness..."

JOHN 5:25: "...the dead shall hear the voice of the Son of God: and they that hear shall live."

ACTS 3:22,23: "...him shall ye hear in all things...And...every soul, which will not hear... shall be destroyed..."

JOHN 5:28,29: "...all that are in the graves shall hear his voice, And shall come forth; they that have done good, unto the resurrection of life; and they that have done evil, unto the resurrection of judgment." (*Cf.R.V.*)

"...judgment signified more than...the rendering of a verdict. It includes the idea of a trial,...this is true...of the Greek word...[*krisis*]" *A138*

"It is not that God considers his decision in the first judgment unjust, but that he has provided a **redemption** from the penalty of the first judgment, in order that he may grant another judgment

(trial) under more favorable conditions to the entire race — all having then had experience with sin and its results..." *A141*

See also Index: **Day of Judgment.**

(7) "DISEMBODIED" SPIRITS (?)

1 COR.15:40,44: "*There are*...celestial bodies,... there is a spiritual body."

SPIRIT OF MAN HUMAN NOT SPIRITUAL

1 COR: 15:45,47: "...The first man Adam was made a living soul; the last Adam *was made* a quickening spirit...The first man *is* of the earth, earthy: the second man *is* the Lord from heaven."

GEN. 2:7: "...God formed man of the dust *of* the ground, and breathed into his nostrils the breath of life; and man became a living soul."

JOHN 3:6: "That which is born of the flesh is flesh; and that which is born of the Spirit is spirit."

"...the divine, angelic and human natures are separate and distinct...a perfect man is...not an angel..." *A178*

"The blending of two natures produces neither the one nor the other, but an imperfect, hybrid thing, which is obnoxious to the divine arrangement..." *A179*

See also Index: **Natures Distinct**

(7) EXISTENCE IN SPIRIT FORM BEFORE BIRTH

See also Index: **Transmigration of Soul**

(8) BAPTISM FOR THE DEAD

1 COR. 15:29, *Sinaitic MS.*: "Else what shall they do which are baptizing for the dead, if the dead rise not at all? Why then are they baptized on behalf thereof?"

"...each one of those who had been immersed, had symbolized his own death —...among those dead with Christ, to share his sacrificial death (which was on behalf of the dead and dying world), in prospect of a...resurrection to share... the work of blessing and restoring the world." *R1545:4*

(9) PREACHING TO THE DEAD

1 PET. 4:6: "For this cause was the gospel preached also to them that are dead, that they might be judged according to men in the flesh, but live according to God in the spirit."

"It refers to preaching...to men...under the Adamic penalty....Those of the 'dead' who hear the Gospel and accept it are reckoned as passed from death unto life...though men continue to judge of them according to the flesh, and by the outward appearance, they are judged by God according to the intents of the mind, here rendered 'spirit.'" *R1987:1*

(9) PREACHING TO "SPIRITS IN PRISON"

1 PET. 3:18-20: "...Christ also hath once suffered for sins, the just for the unjust, that he might bring us to God, being put to death in the flesh, but quickened by [in] the spirit. By which also he...preached unto the spirits in prison; Which sometime were disobedient, when once the longsuffering of God waited in the days of Noah, while the ark was a preparing, wherein few, that is, eight souls were saved by water."

"If Jesus was really dead...he could do no preaching; for" *R1679:1*

ECCL. 9:5,10: "...the dead know not anything...for there is no work, nor device, nor knowledge, nor wisdom, in the grave [sheol], wither thou goest."

"If Jesus...could have preached, the antediluvians could not have heard, for...they have no wisdom, nor knowledge, in the grave...

"...the preaching was not to men, nor to the spirits of men, but to *spirits*, spirit beings;...[not between] the death and resurrection of Jesus.

"...the *spirits* are those of spirit beings who were disobedient during the days of Noah, and whom God...imprisoned..." *R1679:1*

JUDE 6, *DIAG.*: "...THOSE Angels who KEPT not THEIR own Principality, but left their OWN Habitation he has kept in perpetual Chains, under Thick Darkness, for the Judgment of the Great Day..."

WHO ARE THESE ANGELS?

GEN. 6:1,2,4,5: "...when men began to multiply...,and daughters were born unto them...the sons of God saw the daughters of men that they *were* fair; and they took them wives...There were giants...when the sons of God came in unto the daughters of men, and they bare *children* unto them...And...the wickedness of man *was* great..."

2 PET. 2:4: "...God spared not the angels that sinned, but...delivered them into chains of darkness, to be reserved unto judgment..."

"...by his sufferings, death, and resurrection...In Jesus they saw exemplified obedience even unto death, and its reward — resurrection — to...the divine nature..." *R1679:4*

(10) BODIES NOT RESURRECTED

1 COR. 15:37,38: "...that which thou sowest, thou sowest not that body that shall be, But God giveth it a body as it hath pleased him, and to every seed his own body."

NO "CELESTIAL" BODIES

1 COR. 15:40: "*There are* also celestial bodies, and bodies terrestrial: but the glory of the celestial is *one*, and the *glory* of the terrestrial *is* another."

REVELATION 20:5

"In this verse the words '**But the rest of the dead lived not again until the thousand years were finished**'...are not found in...the *Sinaitic, Vatican...1160*, nor the *Syriac MS*...

"However,...Perfect life without weakness...is the only sense in which God recognizes...**life**...

"...since anything short of perfect life is a condition of partial death...the rest of the dead [as a class] will not live again...until the thousand years of restitution and blessing are complete." *A288, footnote*

COMPARE:

REV. 20:12: "And I saw the **dead** stand before God;...and the dead were judged..."

DURING MILLENNIAL REIGN

1 COR. 15:25,26: "For he must reign, till he hath put all enemies under his feet. The last enemy *that* shall be destroyed is death."

(11) PUNISHMENT

ROM. 6:23: "For the wages of sin *is* death..."

STRIPES

HEB. 12:6: "...whom the Lord loveth he chasteneth, and scourgeth every son whom he receiveth."

PROPORTIONAL

LUKE 12:47,48: "And that servant, which knew his lord's will, and prepared not *himself*, neither did according to his will, shall be beaten with many *stripes*. But he that knew not, and did commit things worthy of stripes, shall be beaten with few *stripes*..."

KINGDOM JUDGMENTS

ISA. 26:9,10: "...when thy judgments are in the earth, the inhabitants of the world will learn righteousness....the wicked...will...not learn righteousness; in the land of uprightness will he deal unjustly..."

FINAL DESTRUCTION

2 THES. 1:9: "...everlasting destruction from the presence of the Lord..."

COMPARE:

PSA. 139:8: "...If I make my bed in hell, behold, thou *art there."*

PSA. 37:10: "...The wicked *shall* not *be*...his place...*shall* not *be*."

EZEK. 18:4,20: "...the soul that sinneth, it shall die."

SORER PUNISHMENT — NO RESURRECTION

HEB. 10:28,29: "He that despised Moses' law died...Of how much sorer punishment,...shall he be thought worthy, who hath trodden under foot the Son of God, and hath counted the blood of the covenant, wherewith he was sanctified, an unholy thing, and hath done despite unto the Spirit of grace?"

"He will not only lose a few years of his condemned life, but lose his...being...forever." *E474*

COMPARE:

MATT. 10:28: "...fear him which is able to destroy both soul and body..."

(12, 13) THOSE IN CHRIST HAVE HEAVENLY INHERITANCE

1 PET. 1:4 "...an inheritance incorruptible, and undefiled,...reserved in heaven for you."

(14) NO OTHER GOSPEL

GAL. 1:6-9: "I marvel that ye are so soon removed from him that called you into the grace of Christ unto another gospel: Which is not another; but there be some that trouble you, and would pervert the gospel of Christ. But though we, or an angel from heaven, preach any other gospel unto you than that which we have preached unto you, let him be accursed. As we said before, so say I now again, if any man preach any other gospel unto you than that ye have received, let him be accursed."

(15) NO ADDED WORDS

REV 22:18,19: "For I testify unto every man that heareth the words of the prophecy of this book, If any man shall add unto these things, God shall add unto him the plagues that are written in this book: And if any man shall take away from the words of the book of this prophecy, God shall take away his part out of the book of life, and out of the holy city, and from the things which are written in this book."

(16) TRUTH NOT CONTRADICTORY

ISA. 8:20: "To the law and to the testimony: if they speak not according to this word, *it is* because *there is* no light in them."

The reader can see by comparison of these comments with the same numbers with quotations from their booklet preceding them, that there is disagreement. *See also A57-63*

(18) NO MARRIAGE IN FUTURE LIFE

LUKE 20:35: "...they which shall be accounted worthy to obtain that world ['**age**' — *R3461*], and the resurrection from the dead, neither marry, nor are given in marriage."

ROM. 7:3: "...if, while her husband liveth, she be married to another man, she shall be called an adulteress..."

However, see also Index: **Marriage: Divorce**

(19) TITHING

DEUT. 14:28,29: "At the end of three years thou shalt bring forth all the tithe of thine increase the same year, and shall lay *it* up within thy gates: And the Levites (because he hath no part nor inheritance with thee), and the stranger, and the fatherless, and the widow, which *are* within thy gates, shall come, and shall eat and be satisfied..."

FOR LEVITES WITH NO INHERITANCE

NUM. 18:23,24,26,28: "But the Levites...have no inheritance....But the tithes...I have given to the Levites to inherit: therefore...they shall have no inheritance...speak unto the Levites, and say..., Ye shall offer up an heave offering...a tenth part of the tithe...and ye shall give thereof the LORD'S heave offering to Aaron the priest."

NATURES DISTINCT

"The Scriptures,...while holding out promises of...restitution to all the families of the earth,...promise...spiritual nature only to the church selected during the Gospel Age....

"If...mankind are saved from all the degradation, weakness, pain, misery and death which result from sin and are restored to...human perfection...they are as...completely saved from that fall as those who, under the...'high calling' of the Gospel age, become 'partakers of the divine nature.'" *A173*

PHIL. 3:14: "I press toward the mark for the prize of the high calling of God in Christ Jesus."

2 PET. 1:4: "Whereby are given unto us exceeding great and precious promises: that by these ye might be partakers of the divine nature, having escaped the corruption that is in the world through lust."

HUMAN PERFECTION

"...there have been...**only** two perfect men — Adam and Jesus. Adam...created in the image of God...with...powers of reason, memory, judgment and will, and...justice, benevolence, love, etc....was an earthly image of a spiritual being....God can even say to...fallen man...

ISA. 1:18: "'Come..., let us reason together....'

"As Jehovah is ruler over all things, so man was made a ruler over all earthly things..." *A174*

GEN. 1:26: "After our likeness...let them have dominion over the fish of the sea, and over the fowl of the air, and over the cattle, and over all the earth, and over every creeping thing that creepeth upon the earth."

"...God recognized the man whom he **had made** — not merely commenced to make... '**very good**'...in God's sight nothing short of perfection is **very good**, in his intelligent creatures." *A174*

GEN. 1:31: "And God saw every thing that he had made, and, behold, *it was* very good..."

DEUT. 32:3,4: "Because I will publish the name of the LORD: ascribe ye greatness unto our God. *He is* the Rock, his work is perfect: for all his ways *are* judgment: a God of truth and without iniquity, just and right *is* he."

PSA. 8:5-8: "...thou hast made him a little lower than the angels, and hast crowned him with glory and honour. Thou madest him to have dominion over the works of thy hands; thou hast put all under his feet: all sheep and oxen, yea, and the beasts of the field; The fowl of the air, and the fish

of the sea, *and whatsoever* passeth through the paths of the seas." (Cf. Heb. 2:7)

JESUS ALSO PERFECT

HEB. 2:8,9: "...But now we see not yet all things put under him. But we see Jesus, who was made a little [*Rotherham*, '**less some little**'] lower than the angels for the suffering of death, crowned with glory and honour..."

['of perfect manhood...' *A175*]

"that he...

["as a fitting ransom or substitute" *A175*]

"by the grace of God should taste death for every man."

PERFECTION ON DIFFERENT PLANES

"...A Creature may be perfect, yet on a lower plane of being than another..." A175, 176

Grades of Spiritual Being

Grades of Earthly or Animal Being

Grades in the Vegetable Domain

Grades in the Mineral Domain

Divine Angelic

Human Brute Fowl Fish

Trees Shrubs Grasses Mosses

Gold Silver Copper Iron

"Each of the minerals...may be pure, yet gold ranks the highest. Though each of the orders of plants...be brought to perfection, they would still differ in nature and rank. Likewise with animals: if each species...be brought to perfection, there would still be variety; for perfecting...does not change a nature....The divine nature is the highest...of all spiritual natures. Christ at his resurrection was made...

HEB. 1:4: "'...**so much better than**....'

"...perfect angels as the divine is superior to the angelic nature.

"...the classes...in the...table are...separate, yet... The highest grade of mineral is...**lower** than animal life, because animal life, even in its lowest forms has intelligence enough to be conscious of existence....man...the highest of animal...beings is...

HEB. 2:7: "'...a little lower than the angels...'

"...because angels are...heavenly beings." *A176*

MAN NOT A SPIRIT BEING

"Man did not lose a heavenly but an earthly paradise." *A177*

OUR LORD'S CHANGES OF NATURE

"...our Lord, before he left his glory to become a man was...

PHIL. 2:6: "'...in the form of God....'

"...a spiritual form, a spirit being; but since to be a ransom for mankind he had to be a man,...it was necessary that his nature be changed...." *A177, 178*

HEB. 2:16: "'...he **took not** on him *the nature of angels*;...but...'

JOHN 1:14: "'...was made flesh...'

PHIL. 2:7-9: "'...made himself of no reputation, and took upon him the form of a servant, and was made in the likeness of men: And being found in fashion as a man, he humbled himself, and became obedient unto death, even the death of the cross. Wherefore God also hath highly exalted him, and given him a name which is above every name...'

"Angelic nature is not the only order of spirit being, but...is a lower nature than that of our Lord before he became a man....He is now of the highest order of spirit being, a partaker of the divine...nature." *A178*

JESUS WAS A PERFECT MAN

"...else he could not have kept a perfect law,... the full measure of a **perfect man's ability**.... could not have given....

1 TIM. 2:6: "'...a ransom...'...a corresponding price...for the forfeited life of the perfect man Adam...'" *A178*

1 COR. 15:21: "For since by man *came* death, by man *came* also the resurrection of the dead."

JESUS NOT A MIXTURE OF TWO NATURES

"It was not until...his consecration even unto death...that he received the earnest of his inheritance of the divine nature...." *A179*

MATT. 3:16,17: "And Jesus, when he was baptized, went up straightway out of the water: and, lo, the heavens were opened unto him, and he saw the Spirit of God descending like a dove, and lighting upon him: And lo a voice from heaven, saying, This is my beloved Son, in whom I am well pleased."

"And not until...he had...sacrificed the human nature even unto death, did our Lord Jesus become a full partaker of the divine nature." *A179*

"...there was no mixture of natures, but...twice he experienced a change of nature; first from spiritual to human; afterward from human to... divine; and in each case the one was given up for the other." *A180*

LIGHT AN ILLUSTRATION

"The sun is the great foundation of light to the earth,... producing....upon a diamond, upon a brick, and upon

various kinds of glass,... different effects....So with life....The oyster has life but its organism...cannot make much use of...life, just as the brick cannot reflect much... light....So with...beast, fish, and fowl. Like the various kinds of glass..., so these...show forth differently the...powers they possess....

"The polished diamond...appears as though...a miniature sun. So...man....was...able to receive and retain life by...means which God supplied, and never grow dim....Yet,...as the diamond can reflect no light except when shone upon..., man can possess...life only as the supply of life is continued...." *A208*

JESUS AN ILLUSTRATION

"While Jesus as a man was an illustration of perfect human nature, to which...mankind will be restored,...since his resurrection he is the illustration of the...divine nature which the overcoming Church will...share...." *A180*

TWO SALVATIONS

"Because the present age is devoted mainly to the development of this class...and...the apostolic epistles are devoted to the instruction of this 'little flock' it should not be inferred that God's plans end with the completion of this...company. Nor...that...the divine nature, spiritual bodies, etc.,...are God's design for all...." *A180*

DIFFERENT RESURRECTIONS

1 COR. 15:38-40: "...God giveth it a body as it hath pleased him, and to every seed his own body. All flesh *is* not the same flesh: but *there is* one *kind of* flesh of men, another flesh of beasts, another of fishes, *and* another of birds. *There are* also celestial bodies, and bodies terrestrial: but the glory of the celestial *is* one, and the *glory* of the terrestrial *is* another."

THE SPIRITUAL RESURRECTION

1 COR. 15:41: "*There is* one glory of the sun, and another glory of the moon, and another glory of the stars: for *one* star differeth from *another* star in glory."

"THE FIRST RESURRECTION"

1 COR. 15:42-49: "So also *is* the resurrection of the dead. It is sown in corruption; it is raised in incorruption: It is sown in dishonour; it is raised in glory: it is sown in weakness; it is raised in power: It is sown a natural body; it is raised a spiritual body. There is a natural body, and there is a spiritual body. And so it is written, The first man Adam was made a living soul; the last Adam *was made* a quickening spirit. Howbeit that *was* not first which is spiritual, but that which is natural; and afterward that which is spiritual. The first man *is* of the earth, earthy: the

second man *is* the Lord from heaven. As *is* the earthy, such *are* they also that are earthy: and as *is* the heavenly, such *are* they also that are heavenly. And as we have borne the image of the earthy, we shall also bear the image of the heavenly."

THE NATURAL VERSUS SPIRITUAL

"The...terrestrial body is...flesh, blood, and bones...The spiritual...is not..." *A181*

JOHN 3:6,8: "That which is born of the flesh is flesh; and that which is born of the Spirit is spirit....The wind bloweth where it listeth, and thou hearest the sound thereof, but canst not tell whence it cometh, and whither it goeth: so is every one that is born of the Spirit."

1 JOHN 3:2: "...it doth not yet appear what we shall be: but we know that, when he shall appear, we shall be like him; for we shall see him as he is."

SPIRIT BEINGS DESCRIBED

"...spirit beings...can be...present, yet invisible." *A182*

PSA. 34:7: "The angel of the LORD encampeth round about them that fear him, and delivereth them."

HEB. 1:14: "Are they not all ministering spirits, sent forth to minister for them who shall be heirs of salvation?"

INVISIBLY PRESENT

"Elisha was surrounded by a host of Assyrians; his servant was fearful...The young man's eyes were opened, and he saw the mountains round about them full of chariots of fire and horsemen of fire (or like fire). (See 2 Kings 6:15-17.) 'Again, while to Balaam the angel was invisible, the ass...saw him.' (See Numbers 22:22-31)." *A182*

2 KINGS 6:15-17: "And when the servant of the man of God was risen early, and gone forth, behold, an host compassed the city both with horses and chariots. And his servant said unto him, Alas, my master! how shall we do? And he answered, Fear not: for they that *be* with us are more than they that *be* with them. And Elisha prayed, and said, LORD, I pray thee, open his eyes, that he may see. And the LORD opened the eyes of the young man; and he saw: and, behold, the mountain *was* full of horses and chariots of fire round about Elisha."

NUM. 22:22-31: "And God's anger was kindled because he went:

and the angel of the LORD stood in the way for an adversary against him. Now he was riding upon his ass, and his two servants *were* with him. And the ass saw the angel of the LORD standing in the way, and his sword drawn in his hand: and the ass turned aside out of the way, and went into the field: and Balaam smote the ass, to turn her into the way. But the angel of the LORD stood in a path of the vineyards, a wall *being* on this side, and a wall on

that side. And when the ass saw the angel of the LORD, she thrust herself unto the wall, and crushed Balaam's foot against the wall: and he smote her again. And the angel of the LORD went further, and stood in a narrow place, where *was* no way to turn either to the right hand or to the left. And when the ass saw the angel of the LORD, she fell down under Balaam: and Balaam's anger was kindled, and he smote the ass with a staff. And the LORD opened the mouth of the ass, and she said unto Balaam, What have I done unto thee, that thou hast smitten me these three times? And Balaam said unto the ass, Because thou hast mocked me: I would there were a sword in mine hand, for now would I kill thee. And the ass said unto Balaam, *Am* not I thine ass, upon which thou hast ridden ever since I *was* thine unto this day? was I ever wont to do so unto thee? And he said, Nay. Then the LORD opened the eyes of Balaam, and he saw the angel of the LORD standing in the way, and his sword drawn in his hand: and he bowed down his head, and fell flat on his face."

APPEARING AS MEN

"...angels can assume human bodies and...so appeared to Abraham...At first Abraham supposed them to be...men..." *A183*

GEN. 18:1,2: "And the LORD appeared unto him....And he...looked, and, lo, three men stood by him...."

JUDG. 6:11-22; 13:20: "And there came an angel of the LORD, and sat under an oak which *was* in Ophrah, that *pertained* unto Joash the Abiezrite: and his son Gideon threshed wheat by the winepress, to hide *it* from the Midianites. And the angel of the LORD appeared unto him, and said unto him, The LORD *is* with thee, thou mighty man of valour. And Gideon said unto him, Oh my Lord, if the LORD be with us, why then is all this befallen us? and where be all his miracles which our fathers told us of, saying, Did not the LORD bring us up from Egypt? but now the LORD hath forsaken us, and delivered us into the hands of the Midianites. And the LORD looked upon him, and said, Go in this thy might, and thou shalt save Israel from the hand of the Midianites: have not I sent thee? And he said unto him, Oh my Lord, wherewith shall I save Israel? behold, my family is poor in Manasseh, and I *am* the least in my father's house. And the LORD said unto him, Surely I will be with thee, and thou shalt smite one man. And he said unto him, If now I have found grace in thy sight, then show me a sign that thou talkest with me. Depart not hence, I pray thee, until I come unto thee, and bring forth my present, and set *it* before thee. And he said, I will tarry until thou come again. And Gideon went in, and made ready a kid, and unleavened cakes of an ephah of flour: the flesh he put in a basket, and he put the broth in a pot, and brought *it* out unto him under the oak, and

presented *it*. And the angel of God said unto him, Take the flesh and the unleavened cakes, and lay *them* upon this rock, and pour out the broth. And he did so. Then the angel of the LORD put forth the end of the staff that *was* in his hand, and touched the flesh and the unleavened cakes; and there rose up fire out of the rock, and consumed the flesh and the unleavened cakes. Then the angel of the LORD departed out of his sight. And when Gideon perceived that he *was* an angel of the LORD, Gideon said, Alas, O Lord GOD! for because I have seen an angel of the LORD face to face....For it came to pass, when the flame went up toward heaven from off the altar, that the angel of the LORD ascended in the flame of the altar. And Manoah and his wife looked on *it*, and fell on their faces to the ground."

"An angel appeared to Gideon as a man,...

"An angel appeared to the father and mother of Samson, and they thought him a man....

"Spirit beings are glorious in, their normal conditions,....The countenance of the angel who rolled away the stone,...was...

MATT. 28:3: "'...like lightning...'

"Saul...caught a similar glimpse of Christ's glorious body shining above the brightness of the sun at noonday.

ACTS 26:13: "'At midday, O king, I saw in the way a light from heaven, above the brightness of the sun, shining round about me and them which journeyed with me.'

"The Lord was seen of Saul alone,...." *A183*

ACTS 9:7: "And the men which journeyed with him stood speechless, hearing a voice, but seeing no man."

DAN. 10:6,7: "His body also *was* like the beryl, and his face as the appearance of lightning, and his eyes as lamps of fire,...and the voice...like...a multitude.....the men...with me saw not the vision; but a great quaking fell upon them, so that they fled...."

NO INJUSTICE IN VARIETY OF CREATION

"God had a right...to make us...creatures of a brief...time....It is...favor that we have an existence....that we are...not beasts...that angels are...higher than men; and...that the Lord Jesus and his bride become partakers of the divine nature...." *A189*

"None have a right to dictate to God...." *A191*

HUMAN RESTITUTION

ACTS 3:19-21: "...times of refreshing...come from the presence of the Lord;....And he shall send Jesus Christ,....Whom the heaven must receive until the times of restitution of all things..."

"CLOSE YOUR EYES"

"Close your eyes for a moment to the scenes of misery and woe, degradation and sorrow that yet prevail on account of sin, and picture before your mental vision the glory of the perfect earth. Not a stain of sin mars the harmony and peace of a perfect society; not a bitter thought, not an unkind look or word; love, welling up from every heart, meets a kindred response in every other heart, and benevolence marks every act. There sickness shall be no more; not an ache nor a pain, nor any evidence of decay — not even the fear of such things. Think of all the pictures of comparative health and beauty of human form and feature that you have ever seen, and know that perfect humanity will be of still surpassing loveliness. The inward purity and mental and moral perfection will stamp and glorify every radiant countenance. Such will earth's society be; and weeping bereaved ones will have their tears all wiped away, when thus they realize the resurrection work complete." *A191*

RESTITUTION

ISA. 45:18: "...God...formed the earth...created it not in vain, he

formed it to be inhabited..."

"Paradise shall be restored....

ISA. 35:1: "'...The desert shall...blossom....'

ISA. 55:13: "'Instead of the thorn shall come up the fir tree, and instead of the briar shall come up the myrtle tree...'

PSA. 67:6: "'*Then* shall the earth yield her increase....'

"The...animal creation will be perfect, willing and obedient...; nature with all its pleasing variety will call to man...know the glory and power and love of God,....The restless desire for something new...due to our imperfection, and... unsatisfactory surroundings....Man will be so absorbed...with the glory...on the human plane that he will have no aspiration to...another nature...." *A192*

BEGOTTEN OF THE SPIRIT

1 PET. 1:3,4: "Blessed *be* the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, which according to his abundant mercy hath begotten us again unto a lively hope by the resurrection of Jesus Christ from the dead, To an inheritance incorruptible, and undefiled, and that fadeth not away, reserved in heaven for you..."

JAS. 1:18: "Of his own will begat he us with the word of truth, that we should be a kind of firstfruits of his creatures."

DEVELOPMENT OF THE SAINTS

"...begotten of God through the Word....they receive the first impulse of the divine life.... When...they fully consecrate their justified humanity to God, a living sacrifice...it is accepted of God; and...the spiritual life is begun. Such find themselves...thinking and acting as the new...mind prompts, even to the crucifixion of the human desires...." *A196*

"The embryo 'new creature' continues to grow...as the old human nature, with its hopes, aims, desires, etc., is crucified....As the Spirit of God continues to unfold, through his Word, more and more of his plans, he thus quickens even our mortal bodies....

ROM. 8:11: "'If the Spirit of him that raised up Jesus from the dead dwell in you, he that raised up Christ from the dead shall also quicken your mortal bodies by his Spirit that dwelleth in you.'

"In due time we will have new bodies...adapted ...to the new, divine mind....

"The birth of the 'new creature' is in the...first (or choice) resurrection....

REV. 20:6: "'Blessed and holy *is* he that hath part in the first resurrection: on such the second death hath no power, but they shall be priests of God and of Christ, and shall reign with him a thousand years.'

"We are not actually spirit beings until the resurrection, though from the time we receive the spirit of adoption we are reckoned as such....When we become spirit beings actually, ...born of the Spirit, we will no longer be fleshly beings....Cf. John 3:6" *A197*

JOHN 3:6: "That which is born of the flesh is flesh; and that which is born of the Spirit is spirit."

ROM. 8:23: "...ourselves also, which have the firstfruits of the Spirit, even we ourselves, groan within ourselves, waiting for the adoption, *to wit*, the redemption ['deliverance'] of our body ['the Church, the body of Christ']." *E434*

THE CHANGE TO THE DIVINE NATURE

"...the change from the human to the spiritual nature is effected...by carrying the same mental powers over to the higher condition. When clothed with the heavenly body,....we shall have the range of thought and scope of power which belong to it." *A201*

"The...transformation of mind....is not a change of operation, but it is the will and the bent of mind that are changed." *A202*

ROM. 12:1,2: "I beseech you therefore, brethren, by the mercies of God, that ye present your bodies a living sacrifice, holy, acceptable unto God, *which is* your reasonable service. And be not conformed to this world: but be ye transformed by the renewing of your mind, that ye may prove what *is* that good, and acceptable, and perfect, will of God."

MEMORY AND PERSONALITY CONTINUE

ROM. 6:8: "Now if we be dead with Christ, we believe that we shall also live with him..."

"Changes which daily occur to our human bodies do not cause us to forget the past, or to lose our identity....

"When changed from spiritual to human conditions...the same mental faculties (memory, etc.) being common to both, Jesus could realize his former glory,...before becoming a man,...as his words prove...." *A202*

JOHN 17:5: "...Father, glorify thou me with thine own self, with the glory which I had with thee before the world was."

GLORY IN VARIETY TO ETERNITY

"No insignificant feature of the glory of God's finished work will be the beautiful variety, yet wonderful harmony, of all things, animate and inanimate — ...with each other and...with God." *A203*

See also Index: **Angels; Begotten and Born of the Spirit; Bible, The; Consecration; Creation And Fall; Creator; Grace; High Calling; Immortality vs. Mortality; Incarnation; Reincarnation and Transmigration; Restitution; Resurrection; Two Salvations**

ORGANIZATION OF THE NEW CREATION

"The Lord's church, the only one to which the name *ecclesia*, body or church, is properly applicable, is so insignificant, so unostentatious, and comparatively so poor in this world's riches, that it is not recognized nor recognizable from the worldly standpoint. It is neither man-made nor man-ruled; nor are its members enrolled on earth, but in heaven. (Heb. 12:23). Its head and bishop is the Lord, its law is his Word: it has but one Lord, one Faith, one Baptism; and it is built upon the testimonies of the holy apostles and prophets — Jesus Christ himself being its chief corner-stone." *R2429:1*

HEB. 12:23: "To the general assembly and church of the firstborn, which are written in heaven, and to God the Judge of all, and to the spirits of just men made perfect..."

THE FOUNDATION

"As the New Creation will not reach... completion until the First Resurrection, so its organization will be completed only then....As living stones we are now called...to places in the glorious temple, and...come to Jesus, who... shapes, chisels, fits, and polishes us for places in the glorious Temple of the future — the meeting place between God and the world. As in the...temple built by Solomon every stone was thoroughly fitted in the quarry for its place...so with us — all the fitting preparation is done in the present life...." *F195*

1 COR. 3:11: "...other foundation can no man lay than that is laid, which is Jesus Christ."

ISA. 28:16: "...thus saith the Lord GOD, Behold, I lay in Zion for a foundation stone, a tried stone, a precious corner stone, a sure foundation: he that believeth on him shall not make haste." [be confounded — 1 Pet. 2:6]

1 PET. 2:6: "Wherefore also it is contained in the scripture, Behold, I lay in Sion a chief corner stone, elect, precious: and he that believeth on him shall not be confounded."

MATT. 21:42: "...The stone which the builders rejected...is become the head of the corner...."

PSA. 118:22: "The stone *which* the builders refused is become the head *stone* of the corner."

1 PET. 2:7: "Unto you therefore which believe *he is* precious: but unto them which be disobedient, the stone which the builders disallowed, the same is made the head of the corner..."

"The Scriptures give us the thought that the church...is represented by a pyramid, which has five corner-stones, the

chief one being the top-stone — a perfect pyramid in itself, the lines of which control the entire structure. Jesus, rejected by the Jews, crucified, is the chief corner-stone of this great temple of God....Already he is glorified. During this age his footstep followers shaped in harmony with his character-likeness, are being prepared to be united with him in heavenly glory." *R5505:6*

EPH. 2:19-22: "...ye...are built upon the foundation of the apostles and prophets, Jesus Christ himself being the chief corner *stone*; In whom all the building fitly framed together groweth unto an holy temple in the Lord: In whom ye also are builded together for an habitation of God through the Spirit."

APOSTLES

"Upon this foundation our Lord...began to rear his Church, and in so doing he called twelve apostles....He has never given authority since for any more-barring the fact that Judas...was succeeded by the Apostle Paul." *F208*

REV. 21:14: "And the wall of the city had twelve foundations, and in them the names of the twelve apostles of the Lamb."

"Amongst the gifts of the Spirit the apostle specifies — (1) apostles, (2) prophets, (3) teachers. We still have...the gift of apostles, in that we have their teachings...so full...as to require no addition; and hence the twelve...have no successors...since there are but 'twelve apostles of the Lamb;' they are 'the twelve stars,' the crown of the Church....(John 6:70; Rev. 12:1)...." *E207*

JOHN 6:70: "Jesus answered them, Have not I chosen you twelve, and one of you is a devil?"

REV. 12:1: "And there appeared a great wonder in heaven; a woman clothed with the sun, and the moon under her feet, and upon her head a crown of twelve stars..."

THE APOSTLE PAUL

"We cannot recognize the choice of Matthias, [Acts 1:15-26]...as...the Lord's....He...was chosen ...without authority. They had been instructed to...wait for endowment...by the Holy Spirit... and it was during this waiting period...that they...cast lots and chose Matthias....The Lord in his own time brought forward the Apostle Paul, declaring,...

ACTS 9:15: "'...he is a chosen vessel unto me, to bear my name before the Gentiles, and kings, and the children of Israel...'" *F208*

ACTS 1:15-26: "And in those days Peter stood up in the midst of the disciples, and said, (the number of names together were about an hundred and twenty,) Men *and* brethren, this scripture must needs have been fulfilled,

which the Holy Ghost by the mouth of David spake before concerning Judas, which was guide to them that took Jesus. For he was numbered with us, and had obtained part of this ministry. Now this man purchased a field with the reward of iniquity; and falling headlong, he burst asunder in the midst, and all his bowels gushed out. And it was known unto all the dwellers at Jerusalem; insomuch as that field is called in their proper tongue, Aceldama, that is to say, The field of blood. For it is written in the book of Psalms, Let his habitation be desolate, and let no man dwell therein: and his bishopric let another take. Wherefore of these men which have companied with us all the time that the Lord Jesus went in and out among us, Beginning from the baptism of John, unto that same day that he was taken up from us, must one be ordained to be a witness with us of his resurrection. And they appointed two, Joseph called Barsabas, who was surnamed Justus, and Matthias. And they prayed, and said, Thou, Lord, which knowest the hearts of *all* men, show whether of these two thou hast chosen, That he may take part of this ministry and apostleship, from which Judas by transgression fell, that he might go to his own place. And they gave forth their lots; and the lot fell upon Matthias; and he was numbered with the eleven apostles."

"...and again we have the apostle's statement that he was chosen

from his mother's womb...and....was not a whit behind the chiefest of the apostles....” *F208* Cf. 2 Cor. 11:5

2 COR. 11:5: “For I suppose I was not a whit behind the very chiefest apostles.”

GAL. 1:15: “...God...separated me from my mother's womb, and called *me*....”

2 COR. 12:11,12: “...in nothing am I behind the very chiefest apostles, though I be nothing. Truly the signs of an apostle were wrought among you in all patience, in signs, and wonders, and mighty deeds.”

ACTS 20:27: “...I have not shunned to declare unto you all the counsel of God.”

GAL. 1:11,12: “...I certify you,...that the gospel which was preached of me is not after man. For I neither received *it* of man, neither was I taught it, but by the revelation of Jesus Christ.”

“The apostles...were with him continually and could therefore be witnesses respecting all the affairs of his ministry...

“The Apostle Paul, although not directly a witness to the same extent...was...a witness of our Lord's resurrection...was given a subsequent glimpse of his glorious presence...

1 COR. 15:8: “‘And last of all he was seen of me also, as of one born out of due time. [before the time].’

“His experiences permitted him to know and appreciate not only...

1 COR. 2:10: “‘...the deep things of God.’

“...even some things...

2 COR. 12:4: “‘...which it is not lawful for a man to utter.’

“But the illumination which they gave to the apostle's mind has through his writings been reflected upon the Church from his day to the present time. “ *F215*

INSPIRATION OF THE APOSTLES

“The apostles...were used of the Lord as his inspired agents, and...specially guided...in respect to the testimony, doctrines, customs, etc., which they would establish....

1 COR. 4:1: “‘Let a man so account of us as...stewards of the mysteries of God.’

“The Comforter was...to...

JOHN 14:26; 16:13: “‘...teach you all things, and bring all things to your remembrance, whatsoever I have said unto you....and...show you things to come.’

“This is...specially applicable to the apostles; ...we may understand the apostolic inspiration to have been...(1) Refreshment of memory enabling them to recall...the Lord's personal teachings....(2) Guidance into an appreciation of...the divine plan...(3)...revelations of things to come....” *F217*

“...the Lord so supervised the matter that nothing of importance was omitted...” *F218*

2 TIM. 3:17: “That the man of God may be...thoroughly furnished unto all good works.”

“The apostles' clear-sighted view was an illumination of the mind which enabled them to see...the divine purposes and thus to state them clearly.” *F219*

“We are fully justified in the belief that their other teachings, as well as their historical accounts, were so supervised by the Lord that improper words were avoided, and that the truth was set forth in such a form as to constitute ‘meat in due season’...from their day to the present. This...was indicated by our Lord's words....” *F220*

“Our Lord's promise...,’[the Father's Holy Spirit] shall show you things to come’...implies a special inspiration of the apostles....They were...also prophets...making known future events....The writings of the Apostle Paul are... illuminated by the visions and revelations...of things,...still future....” *F222*

“The Apostle Peter...points out the coming of false teachers....even denying that the Lord bought them. Looking down to our day he prophesies saying,...

2 PET. 3:3,4: “‘...there shall come in the last days scoffers...saying, Where is the promise of his...coming?...[cf. *Diaglott*, **presence**]’

“He prophesied also that...

2 PET. 3:10: “‘...the day of the Lord will come as a thief....’

“The Apostle James...prophesies respecting the end of this age....” *F223*

JAS. 5:1-6: “Go to now, ye rich men, weep and howl for your miseries that shall come upon *you*. Your riches are corrupted, and your garments are motheaten. Your gold and silver is cankered; and the rust of them shall be a witness against you, and shall eat your flesh as it were fire. Ye have heaped treasure together for the last days. Behold, the hire of the labourers who have reaped down your fields, which is of you kept back by fraud, crieth: and the cries of them which have reaped are entered into the ears of the Lord of sabaoth. Ye have lived in pleasure on the earth, and been wanton; ye have nourished your hearts, as in a day of slaughter. Ye have condemned *and* killed the just; *and* he doth not resist you.”

“The Apostle John...was the most remarkable... prophet of all the apostles: his...Book of Revelation, delineating...things to come.” *F223*

OBJECTIONS TO INFALLIBILITY ANSWERED

“...five...circumstances...are usually considered as opposed to the thought that the apostles did not err in their teachings....

“(1) Peter's denial of our Lord....This...was prior to his being anointed by the Holy Spirit.... Furthermore, the infallibility we have claimed for the Apostles...applies to their **public** teachings and writings, and not to all the incidents...of their lives, which unquestionably, were affected by the blemishes of their earthen vessels, marred by the fall....” *F223*

“(2) Peter on one occasion ‘dissembled.’...(Gal. 2:11-14)....This error...God promptly corrected through the Apostle Paul....” *F224*

“(3) It is claimed that the apostles expected the Lord's second advent to take place very quickly possibly in their own lifetime....The Lord left the apostles in uncertainty respecting the time of the second coming....

“...the Apostle Peter distinctly says that he wrote...that his testimony might be with the Church after his decease — a clear evidence that he did not expect to live until the establishment of the Kingdom. (2 Pet. 1:15). The Apostle

Paul, while declaring that ‘the time is short,’ did not pretend to say how short. Indeed, viewed from the standpoint of seven one-thousand-year days — the seventh of which would bring the kingdom — more than foursixths...had...passed, and the time was far spent....Paul also spoke of the time of his departure....He points

out that the day of the Lord would so come as a thief.... Some false impressions on the subject he corrected, saying..." *F225*

2 THES. 2:2,3: "...be not soon shaken...as that the day of Christ is at hand [present, *Diag*.]....That day shall not come except there come a falling away first, and that man of sin be revealed...."

See also **2 PET. 1:15**

"(4) it is objected that Paul, who wrote...

GAL. 5:2: "...if ye be circumcised, Christ shall profit you nothing."

"...caused Timothy to be circumcised....(Acts 16:3)....Timothy was a Jew, because his mother was a Jewess (Acts 16:1); and circumcision was a national custom amongst the Jews...**before**... Moses and...continued after Christ...." *F226*

ACTS 16:3: "Him would Paul have to go forth with him; and took and circumcised him because of the Jews which were in those quarters: for they knew all that his father was a Greek."

ACTS 16:1: "Then came he to Derbe and Lystra: and, behold, a certain disciple was there, named Timotheus, the son of a certain woman, which was a Jewess, and believed; but his father was a Greek..."

"His argument of Gal. 5:2 was not addressed to Jews...." *F226*

GAL. 5:2: "Behold, I Paul say unto you, that if ye be circumcised, Christ shall profit you nothing."

"(5)...Paul's course...in **Acts 21:20-26**. is reflected upon as being contrary to his own teachings...."

ACTS 21:20-26: "And when they heard *it*, they glorified the Lord, and said unto him, Thou seest, brother, how many thousands of Jews there are which believe; and they are all zealous of the law: And they are informed of thee, that thou teachest all the Jews which are among the Gentiles to forsake Moses, saying that they ought not to circumcise *their* children, neither to walk after the customs. What is it therefore? the multitude must needs come together: for they will hear that thou art come. Do therefore this that we say to thee: We have four men which have a vow on them; Them take, and purify thyself with them, and be at charges with them, that they may shave *their* heads: and all may know that those things, whereof they were informed concerning thee, are nothing; but *that* thou thyself also

walkest orderly, and keepest the law. As touching the Gentiles which believe, we have written *and* concluded that they observe no such thing, save only that they keep themselves from *things* offered to idols, and from blood, and from strangled, and from fornication. Then Paul took the men, and the next day purifying himself with them entered into the temple, to signify the accomplishment of the days of purification, until that an offering should be offered for every one of them."

"Paul had not taught that **Jewish** converts should not circumcise their children...." F227

"Certain ceremonies of the Jewish dispensation ...were typical....

"One of these...rites termed 'purifying,' was that observed by Paul and the four Jews....Being Jews, they had a right...to perform the symbol of...purification..." *F228*

BINDING AND LOOSING

MATT. 18:18: "...Whatsoever ye shall bind on earth shall be bound in heaven: and whatsoever ye shall loose on earth shall be loosed in heaven."

"They should be...so guided...that their decisions...would be proper..." *F220*

UPON THIS ROCK WILL I BUILD MY CHURCH

"After the apostle Peter had borne witness that our Lord was the Messiah,...

MATT. 16:17,18: "'...Jesus answered...flesh and blood hath not revealed it unto thee, but my Father which is in Heaven....Thou art Peter, [**a stone, a rock**] and upon this rock [*petra* — **a mass of rock** — the great fundamental rock of truth, which you have thus expressed] I will build My church....'

"The Apostle Peter...declared all truly consecrated believers to be 'living **stones**' [Greek, l*ithos*] who come to the great rock... Christ Jesus...— though *petros*, rock, signifies a larger stone than *lithos*, and all the apostles as 'foundation' stones would...have a larger importance than their brethren. Rev. 21:14" *F220*

REV. 21:14: "And the wall of the city had twelve foundations, and in them the names of the twelve apostles of the Lamb."

1 PET. 2:4,5: "To whom coming, as unto a living stone [Greek, *lithos*], ye also, as lively [living, *Diag*.] stones, are built up a spiritual house...."

KEYS OF THE KINGDOM

MATT. 16:19: "And I will give unto thee the keys of the kingdom of heaven: and whatsoever thou shalt bind on

earth shall be bound in heaven: and whatsoever thou shalt loose on earth shall be loosed in heaven."

"Thus the same authority given to the apostles as a whole [Matt. 18:18] was...expressed to Peter, with the additional privilege...of the keys — the opening power....the Apostle Peter...did the opening work...to the Jews at Pentecost, and, later, to the Gentiles at the house of Cornelius...." *F221*

NOT LORDS OF GOD'S HERITAGE

EPH. 4:4,5: "There is one body,...one Lord...."

MATT. 23:2,6-8: "...The scribes and the Pharisees....love...to be called...Rabbi....But be not ye called Rabbi: for one is your Master,... Christ; and all ye are brethren."

"Peter...when counseling the elders to 'feed **the flock of God**....' did not say **your** flock....Paul says,..." *F231*

1 COR. 4:1, 8-13: "Let a man account of us as of the ministers [servants] of Christ, and stewards of the mysteries of God....Now ye are full, now ye are rich, ye have reigned as kings *without us*; and I would...ye did reign, that we might reign with you. For I think that God hath set forth us the apostles last, as it were..."

1 TIM. 5:17, *Diag*.: "Let the ELDERS who PRESIDE well be esteemed worthy of Double Honor, especially THOSE who TOIL in Word and Teaching."

"Nothing here, certainly would sanction an autocratic ruling or dictatorial bearing-meekness, gentleness, longsuffering, brotherly-kindness, love, must be prominent qualifications of those recognized as elders....We might...render the passage thus: Let the prominent elders be accounted worthy of double honor, especially those bending down through hard work in preaching and teaching." *F251*

2 TIM. 2:24,25: "And the servant of the Lord must not strive; but

be gentle unto all men, apt to teach, patient, In meekness instructing those that oppose...."

1 COR: 4:9-13: "...appointed to death: for we are made a spectacle unto the world, and to angels, and to men. We *are* fools for Christ's sake,...we are weak,...we *are* despised....we both hunger and thirst,....and are buffeted, and have no dwelling place; And labor, working with our own hands: being reviled,...persecuted,... defamed...:we are made as the filth of the world,...the offscouring of all things...."

See also Index: **Apostolic Succession**

ELDERS

EPH. 4:11-13: "And he gave some, apostles; and some, prophets; and some, evangelists; and some, pastors and teachers; For the perfecting of the saints, for the work of

the ministry, for the edifying of the body of Christ: Till we all come [attain to, *Diag*.] in the unity of the faith, and of the knowledge of the Son of God, unto a perfect man, [a full grown man, *Diag*.] unto the measure of the stature of the fulness of Christ..."

"Those who would serve as ministers of the Truth in 'word and doctrine' should not be novices, but members of the body, whose ripeness in character and knowledge and fruits of the Spirit would qualify them for such a service. Such were to be recognized as elders — not necessarily elders in years of natural life, but elders, or seniors, or ripe one in respect to the Truth, and fitness to counsel and admonish the brethren along the lines of the Lord's Word.

"All who attend to the spiritual ministries of the Truth are properly described by the term 'elder;' whether otherwise they are doing the service of an apostle or prophet or evangelist or pastor or teacher...." *F243*

BISHOPS

"Bishop...signifies overseer....The apostle was met by the elders of the Church at Ephesus, and...said:..." *F244*

ACTS 20:28: "Take heed...unto yourselves, and to all the flock, over the which the Holy Ghost hath made you overseers,...."

"Elders...are all overseers, care-takers, watchers of the interests of Zion, some locally and some in the broad and general sense,...each, according to his talent and ability, might serve the flock, one as an evangelist,...to go about preaching the truth to beginners - finding those possessed of an ear to hear...:, another...as a pastor (shepherd), because of special qualifications of a social kind, enabling him to look after the interests of the Lord's people personally, individually - visiting them..., encouraging them, strengthening them, holding together and defending them against the wolves in sheep's clothing...." *F245*

PROPHETS

"The word 'prophet'...signifies a **public speaker** — an orator...." *F246*

NOT SELFISHLY AMBITIOUS

"The true sheep must not only be careful to recognize the voice of the true Shepherd and to follow him, but they must...not...encourage those who are self-seeking. Every one esteemed worthy of confidence...as an elder, should be sufficiently well known...to justify such confidence." *F248*

QUALIFICATIONS FOR ELDERSHIP

1 TIM. 3:1-7: "...If a man desire the office of a bishop,...then [he] must be blameless, the husband of one wife, vigilant,

sober, of good behaviour, given to hospitality, apt to teach; Not given to wine, no striker, not greedy of filthy lucre; but patient, not a brawler, not covetous; One that ruleth well his own house, having his children in subjection with all gravity; (For if a man know not how to rule his own house, how shall he take care of the church of God?) Not a novice, lest being lifted up with pride he fall into the condemnation of the devil. Moreover he must have a good report of them which are without; lest he fall into reproach and the snare of the devil."

TITUS 1:7-9: "...blameless, as the steward of God; not selfwilled, not soon angry,....a lover of hospitality, a lover of good men, sober, just, holy, temperate; Holding fast the faithful word as he hath been taught, that he may be able by sound doctrine both to exhort and to convince the gainsayers."

1 THES. 5:12,13: "....know them which labour among you, and are over you in the Lord, and admonish you; And to esteem them very highly in love for their work's sake...."

DUTIES OF ELDERS

1 PET. 5:1-3: "The elders which are among you I exhort, who am also an elder....Feed the flock of God which is among you, taking the oversight thereof, not by constraint, but willingly; not for filthy lucre, but of a ready mind; Neither as being lords over God's heritage, but being ensamples to the flock."

"They should be generous men, men of pure lives, having no more than one wife; and if they have children, it should be noticed to what extent the parent has exercised a wholesome influence in his own family....He is not to be...deceptive, not to be a brawler...the world should...be unable to point to anything derogatory to their character as respects honesty, uprightness, morality, truthfulness....

"...an elder shall be 'apt to teach':...he must have ability as a teacher, explainer, expounder of the divine plan, and thus be able to assist the Lord's flock in word and in doctrine. It is not essential...that the...qualifications of a...public speaker be possessed...." *E249*

"Other of the elders, perhaps not so apt to teach, may be just in their element in prayer and testimony meetings...." *F250*

GAL. 6:6: "Let him that is taught in the word communicate unto him that teacheth in all good things."

ROM. 12:6-8: "Having then gifts differing according to the grace that is given to us, whether prophecy, *let us prophesy* according to the proportion of faith; Or ministry, *let us wait on our* ministering: or he that teacheth, on teaching; Or he that exhorteth, on exhortation...."

PASTORS

"A pastor, or shepherd...is an overseer of the flock....The Lord Jehovah is our Pastor or Shepherd in the largest sense...

PSA. 23:1: "'THE LORD is my Shepherd....'

"And his Only Begotten Son, our Lord Jesus, is the great" *F251*

1 PET. 2:25: "...Shepherd and Bishop...."

"The general overseers and 'Pilgrims' are all shepherds and pastors — looking out for the interest of the general flock; and every local

elder is a pastor, shepherd, overseer in a local capacity..." *F251*

1 COR. 4:15: "For though ye have ten thousand instructors in Christ, yet *have ye* not many fathers: for in Christ Jesus I have begotten you through the gospel."

TEACHERS

St. Paul classed himself not only as an **apostle** and as an **elder** and **servant**, but also as a **teacher**.

"He was not a teacher of languages nor of mathematics nor of astronomy nor of any of the sciences, except the only great science to which the Lord's Gospel or good tidings, refers....All of the church as well as the elders should see to it that teachers of false doctrines...are not recognized as teachers of the church." *F255*

GAL. 1:8: "But though we, or an angel from heaven, preach any other gospel unto you than that which we have preached unto you, let him be accursed." [*"anathema*, **a thing put up, devoted**" —*Young; "ban* **or...excommunicated**." *Strong.*]

"Some...who are...capable of making plain to others the divine plan in a private way,...have no capacity for...public speaking....Those who can privately speak a word for the Lord and for his cause...are to be encouraged to use their every opportunity to serve those who have an ear to hear....the ablest preachers....have found occasionally that their public work prospers best when it is ably supplemented by the less public discourses, by the more private expounding of deep things of God to a smaller company." *F256*

EVANGELISTS

"The gift of the evangelist, the power to stir men's heart and minds to investigation of the Truth, is a special gift not possessed by all....The evangelistic work can largely be accomplished through the printed page....scattering tracts and colporteuring...." *F256*

ORDINATION

"'**Ordained**'...means '**to elect by stretching out the hand**'.... *Young's...Concordance....Strong's Concordance....*'**A handreacher, or voter (by raising the hand.')**"

"A...different Greek word is used...of the apostles...."

JOHN 15:16: "...I have chosen you, and **ordained** you...."

1 TIM. 2:7: "...I am **ordained**...an apostle...."

"This ordination...was..." *F276*

GAL. 1:1: "...(not of men, neither by man, but by Jesus Christ, and God the Father,....)"

"**Ordain**, in respect to elders,...in one other place...is the translation of a different Greek word,...which signifies — '**To place, or set down**' — *Young*. '**to place down**' *Strong*..." *F277*

TITUS 1:5: "...ordain elders in every city, as I had appointed thee:" [as I gave thee charge — *ASV*.]

"The apostle, would surely not give Titus 'charge'...to do differently from what he (the apostle) did...." *F278*

ELECTION OF ELDERS AND DEACONS

"On the subject of election of...elders and deacons....

"Our suggestion was that wherever possible the election should be unanimous, and unless seventy-five percent of the class, or more, favored a brother's election, it would be rather unwise...to accept....We did not...mean that a minority of twenty-five or thirty percent should be encouraged to obstruct the class and hinder an election.

"Only the spirit of love and the best interests of all...suggests more than fifty-one percent. Love should strive for a unanimous vote....

"Suppose that in a class of one hundred, six elders were...necessary....A, might have a hundred votes; B, ninety; C, eighty; D, seventy; E, sixty; F, fifty....Only two would be selected on a ninety percent basis; but our thought would be that the entire six might be unanimously elected, if they were on the average as good material as the class possessed, if nothing were known derogatory to their moral characters.

"It is a mistake to think that the standards established...are to be taken literally, for no one would be found up to all the requirements. The apostle has stated what the ideal elder would be. Each voter should have this ideal before his mind in thinking of the will of the Lord; but the class is not to be left without an elder unless there are serious blemishes." *R5336:2,3,5*

DEACONS

2 COR. 6:4: "...in all things approving ourselves as the ministers of God...."

"The word here rendered ministers is... *diakonos*,... servants....

2 COR. 3:5,6: "'...God,....hath made us able ministers of the new testament....' [*diakonos*... servants]

"The apostle declares that himself and Timothy were deacons (servants) of God and...of the New Testament — the New Covenant....All true elders...are thus deacons, or servants of God and of the Truth and of the Church — otherwise they should not be recognized as elders at all." *F252*

MATT. 23:11: "...he that is greatest among you shall be your servant."

"As there were servants in the Church not qualified by talents, etc., for recognition as elders, because less apt to teach or less experienced, so...the apostles and prophets (teachers) on...occasions chose certain ones for their servants, or assistants, or deacons...." *F252*

DEACONS OF THE CHURCH

"This word **deacon** is applied...to a class of brethren useful as servants of the body of Christ, and, honored accordingly, but not so well qualified...for...elders. Their choice...implied good character, faithfulness to the Truth and zeal for the service of the Lord and his flock. Thus...when the distribution of food, etc.,...was arranged,...when...the claim was made that some were neglected, the apostles turned the matter over to...the Church, saying..." *F253*

"**ACTS 6:3,4**: "...look ye out among you seven men of honest report, full of the Holy Ghost and wisdom, whom we may appoint over this business. But we will give ourselves continually to prayer, and to the ministry of the word."

"Amongst these seven was Stephen,...the first martyr....That Stephen was chosen...to be a deacon in no sense...hindered him from using his talents in any other way he might find opportunity...[**preaching**]...

"We wish to impress...the complete liberty of each...to use his talents...as an evangelist.... (Stephen would not have been competent to teach in the Church, however, unless chosen by the Church to that service.)....As the Church has need of elders qualified...to teach, and evangelists to preach, so it has need of

deacons to serve...as ushers, treasurers, or what not....” *F254*

QUALIFICATIONS FOR DEACONS

1 TIM. 3:8-13: “Likewise *must* the deacons be grave, not doubletongued, not given to much wine, not greedy of filthy lucre; Holding the mystery of the faith in a pure conscience. And let these also first be proved; then let them use the office of a deacon, being *found* blameless. Even *so must their* wives be grave, not slanderers, sober, faithful in all things. Let the deacons be the husbands of one wife, ruling their children and their own houses well. For they that have used the office of a deacon well purchase to themselves a good degree, and great boldness in the faith which is in Christ Jesus.”

SISTERS NOT TO TEACH IN THE CHURCH

1 TIM. 2:11,12: “Let the woman learn in silence with all subjection. But I suffer not a woman to teach, nor to usurp authority over the man, but to be in silence.”

BUT ANOINTED TO PREACH THE GOSPEL OTHERWISE

ISA. 61:1-3: “The spirit of the Lord GOD *is* upon me; because the LORD hath anointed me to preach good tidings unto the meek; he hath sent me to bind up the brokenhearted, to proclaim liberty to the captives, and the opening of the prison to *them that are* bound; To proclaim the acceptable year of the LORD, and the day of vengeance of our God; to comfort all that mourn; To appoint unto them that mourn in Zion, to give unto them beauty for ashes, the oil of joy for mourning, the garment of praise for the spirit of heaviness....”

“(1) The Sisters have the same liberty as the brethren in the matter of the election of the Church’s servants....

“(2) The sisters cannot serve as elders or teachers in the Church....This...need not be understood to hinder the sisters from participating in meetings not of the teaching kind; such as prayer and testimony meetings, Berean studies, etc., because the apostle says that if she pray or prophesy (speak) it should be with her head covered representing her acknowledgment of the fact that the Lord, the Great Teacher, is specially represented by the brethren....Such participation need not be considered teaching; because neither are the brethren who participate, teachers....The teachers or elders are specially chosen, though always from among the males.” *F272*

“For a sister to call the attention of the assembly to the words of the Lord or of the apostles on any subject under discussion without giving her own views could not be considered teaching, nor as in any sense usurping authority over the man....To refer to, or to read to others...publications explanatory of the Scriptures would

not be teaching on her part, but by the author quoted....” *F270*

LET HER BE COVERED

1 COR. 11:5,10: “...every woman that prayeth or prophesieth with her head uncovered dishonoureth her head:...For this cause ought the woman to have power on her head because of the angels.” [messengers, See *margin and Diaglott footnote*.]

“The same apostle refers most respectfully to noble women of his day as helpers in the ministry....He mentions Priscilla as well as her husband as...’fellow workers.’...” *F267*

ROM. 16:3: “Greet Priscilla and Aquilla my helpers in Christ Jesus...”

“Priscilla’s service...is mentioned in the same language as the services of Urbane....Since Aquilla’s name is mentioned after....his wife, the inference is reasonable that the wife was the more efficient....” *F267*

ROM. 16:9: “Salute Urbane, our helper in Christ....”

ASSEMBLING

HEB. 10:24,25: “And let us consider one another to provoke unto love and to good works: Not forsaking the assembling of ourselves together,...but exhorting *one another*: [or, to it, *Diag*.] and so much the more, as ye see the day approaching.”

MAL. 3:16,17: “Then they that feared the LORD spake often one to another: and the LORD hearkened, and heard it, and a book of remembrance was written before him for them that feared the LORD, and that thought upon his name. And they shall be mine, saith the LORD of hosts, in that day when I make up my jewels [margin: special treasure]; and I will spare them, as a man spareth his own son that serveth him.”

OBJECT OF ASSEMBLING

“The object...is...for mutual advancement in spiritual things...provoking...unto more...love for the Lord and for each other, and to increased good works...that would glorify our Father,...bless the brotherhood....” *F309*

GAL. 6:10: “As we have therefore opportunity ...do good unto all *men*....”

1 JOHN 4:20: “...he that loveth not his brother whom he hath seen, how can he love God whom he hath not seen?”

“Similarly mistaken...are those who say, I long to be with the Lord and to enjoy his... fellowship, if they...neglect...to meet with the brethren, and do not enjoy...fellowship.” *F309*

“Such...have not one...promise...of a blessing so long as they are in this attitude....” *F310*

MATT. 18:20: “For where two or three are gathered together in my name, there am I in the midst of them.”

EPH. 4:15,16: “...speaking the truth in love,...grow up into him in all things, which is the head, *even* Christ: From whom the whole body fitly joined together and compacted by that which every joint supplieth, according to the effectual working in the measure of every part, maketh increase of the body unto the edifying of itself in love.”

JUDE 20: “...building up yourselves on your most holy faith....”

NOT WORLDLY ASSEMBLIES

“We are not to crave merely numbers and show and popularity...The Lord’s promised blessing is to ‘two or three **of you**.’...the exhortation is to ‘the assembling of **ourselves** together.’...The assemblies are...to be...of those who know of God’s grace and who have accepted of the same by a full consecration of themselves....” *F311*

1 THES. 5:11: “Wherefore comfort yourselves together, and edify one another, even as also ye do.”

THE INTERESTED NOT EXCLUDED

“This does not mean that outsiders are to be forbidden...if they...desire...and be blessed by your holy conversation,

exhortations to good works, and love, and exposition of the divine Word of promise, etc....Compare 1 Cor. 14:23-26." *F311*

1 COR. 14:23-26: "If therefore the whole church be come together into one place, and all speak with tongues, and there come in *those that are* unlearned, or unbelievers, will they not say that ye are mad? But if all prophesy, and there come in one that believeth not, or one unlearned, he is convinced of all, he is judged of all: And thus are the secrets of his heart made manifest; and so falling down on *his* face he will worship God, and report that God is in you of a truth. How is it then, brethren? when ye come together, every one of you hath a psalm, hath a doctrine, hath a tongue, hath a revelation, hath an interpretation. Let all things be done unto edifying."

NO SCHISMS

1 COR. 12:4,6,12,14,18-20, 22-25: "Now there are diversities of gifts, but the same Spirit....and there are diversities of operations, but it is the same God which worketh all in all...For as the body is one, and hath many members, and all the members of that one body, being many, are one body; so also is Christ....For the body is not one member, but many....But now God hath set the

members every one of them in the body, as it hath pleased him. And if they were all one member, where were the body? But now are they many members yet but one body....Nay, much more...those members of the body, which we think to be less honorable, upon these we bestow more abundant honor; and our uncomely parts have more abundant comeliness. For our comely parts have no need: but God hath tempered the body together, having given more abundant honor to that part which lacked: that there should be no schism in the body; but that the members should have the same care one for another."

NOT BONDAGE EITHER

"It is the Lord's pleasure that there be no schism...no splits....With human methods divisions are unavoidable — except as...a unity of force....those whom the Son makes free can never participate heartily in such...in which personal liberty is utterly destroyed....Instead of having too many divisions...the real need...is still more liberty — until each individual member shall stand free and independent of all human bonds, creeds, confessions, etc. With each...standing fast in the liberty wherewith he was made free by the Lord..., and...united in loyalty to the Lord and to his Word...the original unity...would be discerned and all true children of God, all members of the New Creation, would find themselves drawn to each other member similarly free, and bound each to the other by the cords of love far more strongly than...in earthly systems...." *F241*

2 COR. 5:14: "The love of Christ constraineth us...[**'to hold together**' — *Young's Concordance*]"

JOHN 8:32: "...Ye shall know the truth, and the truth shall make you free."

GAL. 5:1: "Stand fast therefore in the liberty wherewith Christ hath made us free...."

SIMPLICITY OF ORGANIZATION

"The tendency of the human mind is either toward anarchy...or...tight organization and bondage....the divine arrangement...marks out... an organization simple in the extreme, and devoid of everything akin to bondage...." *F234*

See also Index: **Liberty in Christ.**

PARABLES

"In a parable the thing said is never the thing meant." *R2604:1*

"A parable is never an exact statement, but merely an illustration of a truth by something which is in many respects like it." *A138*

NEW TESTAMENT PARABLES

BREAD OF LIFE

JOHN 6:32-35: "...my Father giveth you the true bread from heaven. For the bread of God is he which cometh down from heaven, and giveth life unto the world....Then said they unto him, Lord, evermore give us this bread. Jesus said unto them, I am the bread of life: he that cometh to me shall never hunger; and he that believeth on me shall never thirst."

"Our Lord...explained the...parable, declaring,...I am the bread of life..." *R2651:5*

THE BRIDEGROOM

MARK 2:19,20: "Can the children of the bridechamber fast, while the bridegroom is with them? as long as they have the bridegroom with them, they cannot fast. But the days will come, when the bridegroom shall be taken away from them, and then shall they fast in those days."

"...it would be inappropriate for his followers to be in sadness...when they were receiving such wonderful blessings —...when the Bridegroom... was present cheering..., refreshing, and strengthening them, opening the eyes of their understanding, and giving them hearing ears to appreciate the divine favor...coming unto them. Such would not be an appropriate time for fasting....when the Bridegroom would be away, there would be an abundance of perplexity and sorrow and then fasting would be in order.

"But fasting...means self-denial. So long as the Master was with his people, and especially so long as he was honored by the multitudes, it required comparatively little self-denial to be...his followers. But...when his cause was unpopular...it required self-denial (antitypical fasting) to confess...him; and so it has been all through the Gospel age....

"Now, in the Lord's second Presence, we might say that the feast has begun again —...to those...whom he causes to sit down to meat, and to whom he brings forth things new and old,...it almost appears as tho the fasting time has passed, and that the...'joys of the Lord' have begun. Not that there are no trials..., but that...his people are so refreshed and exhilarated with the meat in due season that the...self-

denials (fastings)...may now be esteemed...not...worthy to be compared with the...foretastes of the great marriage feast soon to be enjoyed." *R2592:1,2,3*

THE DRAGNET

MATT. 13:47-50: ***Diag.***: "Again, the KINGDOM of the HEAVENS resembles a Drag-net, being cast into the SEA, and enclosing fishes of Every Kind; which, when it is full, they draw to the SHORE, and sitting down, gather the GOOD into vessels, but throw the USELESS away. So will it be at the END of the AGE. The MESSENGERS will go forth, and will separate the WICKED from among the RIGHTEOUS; and will throw them into the FURNACE of FIRE; there will be the WEEPING and the GNASHING OF TEETH."

"This...represents the nominal...Church...the net cast into the sea (the world)....at the close of the age — in the harvest...would be commenced..., a separating,...the gathering of the desired sort and the rejection of others...

"The separating work...is the same as...in the parable of the wheat and the tares....'...present truth,' harvest truth, is now the Lord's agency for testing and dividing." *C214, 215*

THE ELEVENTH HOUR

MATT. 20:1-16: "For the kingdom of heaven is like unto a man...which went out early in the morning to hire laborers....And...agreed...for a penny a day....And he went out about the third hour, and saw others...and said...Go ye also into the vineyard, and whatsoever is right I will give you....Again he went out about the sixth and ninth hour, and did likewise. And about the eleventh hour he...found others...and saith....Go ye also into the vineyard:....And when they came that were *[hired]* about the eleventh hour, they received...a penny. But...the first...likewise received...a penny....And...they murmured against the goodman of the house....But he answered...didst not thou agree...for a penny?...I will give unto this last, even as unto thee....So the last shall be first, and first last...."

"When the offer of the kingdom was promulgated...some who had previously neglected God's service....were...given an opportunity....

"The Scribes and the Pharisees, who had been faithful to the Lord God all their lives... murmured....

"The general lesson...would seem to be that we should appreciate...that whatever God has to offer is a gift.....We should be glad to see... others enter the service and...get the same reward....Only those who have such a broad spirit...will be fit for the kingdom....Any who receive...the resurrection change will be far from murmuring...." *R5473:6*

THE BARREN FIG TREE

LUKE 13:6-9: "...A certain *man* had a fig tree planted in his vineyard; and he came and sought fruit thereon, and found none. Then said he unto the dresser of his vineyard, Behold, these three years I come seeking fruit on this fig tree, and find none: cut it down; why cumbereth it the ground? And he answering said unto him, Lord, let it alone this year also, till I shall dig about it, and dung *it*: And if it bear fruit, *well:* and if not, then after that thou shalt cut *it* down."

"...the three and a half years of our Lord's ministry to the Jewish nation, and their final rejection by him, are represented by the barren fig tree parable...." *R2564:4*

THE FIG TREE PUTTETH FORTH LEAVES

MATT. 24:32,33: "Now learn a parable of the fig tree; When his branch is yet tender, and putteth forth leaves, ye know that summer is nigh: So likewise ye, when ye shall see all these things, know that it is near, *even* at the doors."

"...our Lord's curse upon a fig tree which bore no fruit, and which

withered away directly (Matt. 21:19,20)...may...signify the Jewish nation. If so...the resettlement of Palestine and establishing an independent nation of Israel there since 'The full end of "Gentile times"' is remarkably significant as a fulfillment." *D604*

MATT. 21:19,20: "And when he saw a fig tree in the way, he came to it, and found nothing thereon, but leaves only, and said unto it, Let no fruit grow on thee henceforward for ever. And presently the fig tree withered away. And when the disciples saw it, they marvelled, saying, How soon is the fig tree withered away."

GEHENNA — FIRE AND WORMS

MATT. 18:8,9: "Wherefore if thy hand or thy foot offend thee, cut them off, and cast *them* from thee: it is better for thee to enter into life halt or maimed, rather than having two hands or two feet to be cast into everlasting ['lasting,' Liddell and Scott] fire. And if thine eye offend thee, pluck it out, and cast *it* from thee: it is better for thee to enter into life with one eye, rather than having two eyes to be cast into hell fire. ['Gehenna of the fire.']"

MARK 9:48: "Where their worm dieth not, and the fire is not quenched."

"Mark 9....verses 44 and 46, and part of 45 are not found in the oldest Greek MSS, though verse 48, which reads the same, is in all manuscripts...." *R2602:5*

ISA. 66:24: "And they shall go forth, and look upon the carcasses of the men that have transgressed against me: for their worm shall not die, neither shall their fire be quenched; and they shall be an abhorring unto all flesh."

"**Gehenna** as a figure represented the second death — the utter destruction which must ensue in the case of all who, after having fully received the opportunities of a future... existence...prove...unworthy...God will... 'destroy' [not...preserve soul or body in '**gehenna**']....Any who are condemned to the second death are...forever blotted out...." *R2602:5,6*

"After reading the above...no one...supposes that our Lord advised the people to mutilate their bodies....Nor does he mean...that the injuries and disfigurements of the present life will continue beyond the grave, when we shall 'enter into life.' The Jews, whom the Lord addressed, having no conception of a place of everlasting torment, and who knew...**Gehenna** to refer to the valley outside their city, which was not a place of torment, nor a place where any living thing was cast, but a place for the utter destruction of whatever might be cast into it....knew that Gehenna also was used...to symbolize utter destruction." *R2602:6*

"...it will richly pay...to make any sacrifice to receive ['the future life']....It would richly repay them to deny themselves many comforts, pleasures and tastes, dear to them as a right hand, precious as an eye, and serviceable as a foot, rather than by gratification to forfeit the life to come and be utterly destroyed in **Gehenna** — the second death.

"In the literal **Gehenna**,...the bodies of animals, etc., frequently fell upon ledges of rocks and not into the fire kept burning below....These would breed worms and be destroyed by them, as...surely as those which burned....The worm and the fire...completed...**destruction** — the fire was not quenched and the worms died not...until all was consumed....If a house were ablaze and the fire could not be...quenched...until the building was destroyed, we might...call such an 'unquenchable fire.'" *R2603:1,2*

THE GOOD SAMARITAN

LUKE 10:30-37: "A certain *man* went down from Jerusalem to Jericho, and fell among thieves, which stripped him of his raiment, and wounded *him*, and departed, leaving *him* half dead. And by chance there came down a certain priest that way: and when he saw him, he passed by on the other side. And likewise a Levite, when he was at the place, came and looked *on him*, and passed by on the other side. But a certain Samaritan, as he journeyed, came where he was: and when he saw him, he had compassion *on him*, And went to *him*, and bound up his wounds, pouring in oil and wine, and set him on his own beast, and brought him to an inn, and took care of him. And on the morrow when he departed, he took out two pence, and gave *them* to the host, and said unto him, Take care of him; and whatsoever thou spendest more, when I come again, I will repay thee. Which now of these three, thinkest thou, was neighbour unto him that fell among the thieves? And he said, He that showed mercy on him. Then said Jesus unto him, Go, and do thou likewise."

"...go and show mercy...any man in the world, friend or foe, is your neighbor and is to be loved and served...as you may have opportunity. As you would have him do for you do even so for him; love him and serve him as yourself, as you would have him love and serve you under reversed conditions." *R3804:3*

THE GOOD SHEPHERD

JOHN 10:1-5,7-18: "Verily, verily, I say unto you, He that entereth not by the door into the sheepfold, but climbeth up some other way, the same is a thief and a robber. But he that entereth in by the door is the shepherd of the sheep. To him the porter openeth; and the sheep hear his voice: and he calleth his own sheep by name, and leadeth them out.

"And when he putteth forth his own sheep, he goeth before them, and the sheep follow him: for they know his voice. And a stranger will they not follow, but will flee from him: for they know not the voice of strangers....Then said Jesus unto them again, Verily, verily, I say unto you, I am the door of the sheep. All that ever came before me are thieves and robbers: but the sheep did not hear them. I am the door: by me if any man enter in, he shall be saved, and shall go in and out, and find pasture. The thief cometh not, but for to steal, and to kill, and to destroy: I am come that they might have life, and that they might have *it* more abundantly. I am the good shepherd: the good shepherd giveth his life for the sheep. But he that is an hireling, and not the shepherd, whose own the sheep are not, seeth the wolf coming, and leaveth the sheep, and fleeth: and the wolf catcheth them, and scattereth the sheep. The hireling fleeth, because he is an hireling, and careth not for the sheep. I am the good shepherd, and know my *sheep*, and am known of mine. As the Father knoweth me, even so know I the Father: and I lay down my life for the sheep. And other sheep I have, which are not of this fold: them also I must bring, and they shall hear my voice; and there shall be one fold, and one shepherd. Therefore doth my Father love me, because I lay down my life, that I might take it again. No man taketh it from me, but I lay it down of myself. I have power to lay it down, and I have power to take it again. This commandment have I received of my Father."

"All 'Israelites indeed'...recognized the voice of the true Shepherd and became his followers.... Jesus as the 'Door' represents all the privileges and blessings of the true sheep....By him....we go in and

out...enjoying the liberties and privileges secured to us by our Shepherd....through our justification by our Lord's sacrifice...and...our

consecration...and our adoption through the Holy Spirit...." *R3528:1*

"The pretended Shepherd...not only steals...the title of Shepherd or Pastor, but...is willing to risk the...spiritual life of the sheep that the sectarian lines may be kept up, that his own personal interests may be served....How many... seem willing to misrepresent the harvest message, and everybody and everything connected therewith, that...they may....maintain their standing and influence in the denomination....

"Our Lord...demonstrated his devotion...by the sacrifice of....even life itself....Those elders... whose loyalty to the Lord and the flock is... manifested should be recognized....The self-sacrificing spirit,...with humility, should be recognized...as the spirit of the true Shepherd....

"Our Lord defended the interests of the sheep against the false spirits and the wolves of his day, and it cost him his life....the faithful followers of the Lord...have been obliged...to fight with the wolves...or else...flee before them by silence and allowing the sheep to be starved and misled...." *R3527:3,5*

"The Lord was gathering...spiritual Israel...." *R3527:6*

"'Other sheep'...are those who will become Lord's sheep after the...'little flock' shall have been completed....[Matt. 25:31,32]"

MATT. 25:31,32: "When the Son of man shall come in his glory, and all the holy angels with him, then shall he sit upon the throne of his glory: And before him shall be gathered all nations: and he shall separate them one from another, as a shepherd divideth *his* sheep from the goats..."

"The basis of....[the *special* love of the Father for the Son]...was the Son's complete trust in the Father and thorough harmony with and obedience to the divine will..." *R3528:4*

"Our Lord's commission was not merely to lay down his life, but also to receive it again...

"...his life, which would shortly be given was voluntarily submitted....It was necessary that his disciples should know this...that they might realize him as the Redeemer whose voluntary sacrifice redeemed father Adam and his entire race. To have confidence in the result they must have confidence in his resurrection...." *R3528:5,6*

THE GREAT SUPPER

LUKE 14:16-24: "...A certain man made a great supper, and bade many: And sent his servant at supper time to say to them that were bidden, Come; for all things are now ready. And they all with one *consent* began to make excuse. The first said unto him, I have bought a piece of ground,

and I must needs go and see it: I pray thee have me excused. And another said, I have bought five yoke of oxen, and I go to prove them: I pray thee have me excused. And another said, I have married a wife, and therefore I cannot come. So that servant came, and showed his lord these things. Then the master of the house being angry said to his servant, Go out quickly into the streets and lanes of the city, and bring in hither the poor, and the maimed, and the halt, and the blind. And the servant said, Lord, it is done as thou hast commanded, and yet there is room. And the lord said unto the servant, Go out into the highways and hedges, and compel *them* to come in, that my house may be filled. For I say unto you, That none of those men which were bidden shall taste of my supper."

"God...is the host in this parable....Israel only was invited....Christ, as represented in the bullock of the sin offering, had...presented himself...at Jordan,....The message of Jesus and the twelve, and later the seventy...was the invitation to come and enjoy the great feast...— the great privileges...of the kingdom.

"But...when the invitation...was really put before them, it proved that they loved the kingdom...far less than they and others might have supposed...

"Also, now....many seem to feel that what they would call the real and practical things of life need all of their attention....

"The first invitation...represents the first years of our Lord's ministry...specially directed toward...the scribes and Pharisees and doctors of the Law...." *R2701:3,5,6*

"The trial of the nation as a whole, represented by its leaders, ended...when our Lord...wept over the city..., saying,...'Behold, your house is left unto you desolate!'...Nevertheless,...God extended mercy to...such...as...realized their own unworthiness — the lame, the halt, the blind, who confessed that they were not perfect, but who desired perfection, and who rejoiced in the call...and gladly forsook all else for it....

"...both of these first calls belong to the city — ...Israel....but...failed to find the sufficient number....Now...the message must be sent outside the city, outside of Judaism, — to the Gentiles..., into the highways....The word 'compel'...should...be...persuade." *R2702:1,2*

HONORED SEAT AT FEAST

LUKE 14:7-11: "And he put forth a parable to those which were bidden, when he marked how they chose out the chief rooms; saying unto them, When thou art bidden of any *man* to a wedding, sit not down in the highest room; lest a more honourable man than thou be bidden of him; And he that

bade thee and him come and say to thee, Give this man place; and thou begin with shame to take the lowest room. But when thou art bidden, go and sit down in the lowest room; that when he that bade thee cometh, he may say unto thee, Friend, go up higher: then shalt thou have worship in the presence of them that sit at meat with thee. For whosoever exalteth himself shall be abased; and he that humbleth himself shall be exalted."

"The...lesson...seems to be an illustration....of the way...God will deal with those whom he invites to the...marriage feast. The chief places will not be given to those...most inclined to usurp authority: but...the Lord will not forget the man or woman...who...would...appreciate the very humblest place...." *R3832:1*

HOUSEHOLDER RETURNING FROM WEDDING FEAST

LUKE 12:35-48: "Let your loins be girded about, and *your* lights burning; And ye yourselves like unto men that wait for their lord, when he will return from the wedding; [feasts (*Diag.*)] that when he cometh and knocketh, they may open unto him immediately. Blessed *are* those servants, whom the lord when he cometh shall find watching: verily I say unto you, that he shall gird himself, and

make them to sit down to meat, and will come forth and serve them. And if he shall come in the second watch, or come in the third watch, and find them so, blessed are those servants. And this know, that if the goodman of the house had known what hour the thief would come, he would have watched, and not have suffered his house to be broken through. Be ye therefore ready also: for the Son of man cometh at an hour when ye think not. Then Peter said unto him, Lord, speakest thou this parable unto us, or even to all? And the Lord said, Who then is that faithful and wise steward, whom his lord shall make ruler over his household, to give them their portion of meat in due season? Blessed is that servant, whom his lord when he cometh shall find so doing. Of a truth I say unto you, that he will make him ruler over all that he hath. But and if that servant say in his heart, My lord delayeth his coming; and shall begin to beat the menservants and maidens, and to eat and drink, and to be drunken;

"The lord of that servant will come in a day when he looketh not for him, and at an hour when he is not aware, and will cut him in sunder, and will appoint him his portion with the unbelievers. And that servant, which knew his lord's will, and prepared not himself, neither did according to his will, shall be beaten with many stripes. But he that knew not, and did commit things worthy of stripes, shall be beaten with few stripes. For unto whomsoever much is given, of him shall be much required: and to whom men have committed much, of him they will ask the more."

"...at our Lords second coming he will be present before any of his servants know of his arrival. He will knock or cause announcement of his presence to be made. Those who will hear...will be such only as are awake...and on the alert for the knock. These will receive a special spiritual feast...as a...reward for their... devotion....Also, because the Master of the household, turned to be its servant, would have all the keys...and...will bring forth...things new and old...." *R3355:1*

"The knock, or proclamation of the Lord's presence...has been given since 1875....Rev. 3:20...." [See Dan. 12:12]

REV. 3:20: "Behold, I stand at the door, and knock: if any man hear my voice, and open the door, I will come in to him, and will sup with him, and he with me."

DAN. 12:12: "Blessed *is* he that waiteth, and cometh to the thousand three hundred and five and thirty days."

HOUSE BROKEN INTO

LUKE 12:39,40, ***Diag.***: "Now you know this, That if the HOUSEHOLDER had known at What Hour the THIEF would come, he would have watched, and not have permitted him to break into his HOUSE. Be you also prepared for at an Hour you think not, the SON of MAN comes."

"The reference here is to a thief-like coming, and the Greek word...literally [means] 'dug into.' Many of the houses of olden time were...built of dried mud....Entry...could be gained more quickly by digging through the wall than by forcing the door. The goodman of the house '[A.V.]' or its master does not refer to the Lord, for the house...is the 'present evil world' — the social structure....It is not necessary to conclude that Satan is meant, although he is in a general way the master of present institutions....We may...understand the good man...to...signify...the powers that be.

"These, if they knew the time of His coming, would have fortified themselves...and have sought to defend present institutions....

"The breaking up of the strong man's house...is already under way...." *R3355:4,5* [Cf. *D611, 612*]

Watch, If ye Would Know

"'Watch therefore: for ye know not what hour your Lord doth come. But understand this [the reason why the time is so secreted under symbols and parables], that if the householder had known in what watch the thief would come, he would have watched, and would not have suffered his house to be broken up.' Matt. 24:42,43

"The 'master of the house' or 'householder' of the present dispensation is not **our** Lord, but **our** Adversary, the devil — 'the god of this world,' 'the prince of the power of the air,'

'the prince of this world,' who now ruleth in the children of disobedience, blinding the minds of all that believe not — whose eyes of understanding have not been anointed with the Lord's eye-salve. (2 Cor. 4:4; Eph. 2:2; Rev. 3:18) This adversary is a wily one, and very cunning; and whatever knowledge he has of the divine times and seasons and arrangements he is prompt to use in opposing the divine plan, as our Lord declares in the foregoing statement. The Heavenly Father's course toward Satan has been to let him take his own way, except where it would conflict with the divine plan, and so to overrule his evil devices as to use them for the furtherance of the divine plan. Hence Satan, although he has long known the Bible, has understood but little of it, for the same reason that man has not understood it; because written in parables, symbols and figures of speech. And now that these are **due** to be understood, the understanding of them is confined to such as have the guidance of the holy Spirit, which, as our Lord promised, 'shall guide you into all truth,' but which the world cannot receive. Satan does not possess the holy Spirit and is not guided by it, and consequently much of the divine Word is foolishness unto him. But he has learned no doubt as the world to some extent has learned, that — 'The Secret of the Lord is with them that fear him.' (Psa. 25:14) We may presume therefore that his representatives, the fallen angels, are frequently present at the little Conferences and Bible studies, etc., of God's truly consecrated people, to learn something of the divine plan.

"In what way Satan would have managed his affairs differently if he had known sooner more about the divine plan, we can only surmise; but we have our Lord's positive testimony that such knowledge on Satan's part would have made necessary a different ending of the Gospel age, and a different opening of the Millennial age, than God had purposed and declared. But instead of knowing and setting his house in order, he was taken unawares by the Lord's **parousia** in 1874, and the 'harvest' work then begun: so that with all his wiles and deceptions, all his simulations of the true light, etc., his 'house,' present institutions, will suffer complete collapse. As he realizes this, he puts forth the most strenuous efforts to deceive — even resorting through his deluded servants to miracles of physical healing, although he is the prince of disease, sickness and death. (Heb. 2:14) But a house thus divided against itself is sure to fall: and great will be the fall of Babylon: it will fall as a great millstone cast into the sea. Rev. 18:21 'Therefore be ye also ready, for at such an hour as ye think not the Son of Man cometh.' Matt. 24:44

"Here '**ye also**,' believers, the Lord's faithful, are mentioned in contrast with Satan and his household. The time of the Lord's presence could not be known beforehand, even by the saints. Nor

was the fact of the Lord's presence recognized

until nearly a year after October 1874, when his knock, through the word of the prophets and apostles, was recognized. Since that time there are abundant outward signs, evidences, of the presence of the Son of Man; and his devoted ones as they are gathered from the four winds of heaven, are taken into his banqueting house and caused to sit down to meat such as the world knoweth not of, and are served, first of all by the Master himself, and incidentally by each other. See Luke 12:37." *D611, 612*

LUKE 11:21,22: "When a strong man armed keepeth his palace, his goods are in peace: But when a stronger than he shall come upon him, and overcome him, he taketh from him all his armour wherein he trusted, and divideth his spoils."

"We have already presented, in previous volumes, and in previous chapters of this volume, the clear testimony of the written Word, showing that we stand on the threshold of a new age — that the Millennial Day is dawning, with its change of earth's rulership from the control of the 'prince of this world' and his faithful, to the control of him 'whose right it is' (by purchase) and his faithful saints. We have seen that though the result of this change will be a great blessing, yet the time of the transfer, while the present prince, the 'strong man' is being bound and his household driven out of power (Matt. 12:29; Rev. 20:2), will be a time of intense trouble. The Scriptural time-proofs which we have considered show that this trouble was due to date from the time of Christ's second advent (October, 1874), when the judging of the nations would commence, under the enlightening influences of the Day of the Lord." *C341*

A HOUSE ON A ROCK

MATT. 7:24-27: "...whosoever heareth these sayings of mine, and doeth them, I will liken him unto a wise man, which built his house upon a rock And the rain descended, and the floods came, and the winds blew, and beat upon that house; and it fell not: for it was founded upon a rock. And every one that heareth these sayings of mine, and doeth them not, shall be likened unto a foolish man, which built his house upon the sand: And the rain descended, and the floods came, and the winds blew, and beat upon that house; and it fell: and great was the fall of it."

"This...parable...refers...to two parties in the church....Those who build upon the rock...not only hear his message but are obedient thereto to the extent of their ability...." *R3748:3,4*

"It is not merely...to be doctrinally informed, but...he is looking for such character development...as will bring us into...heart harmony, and, to the extent that we are able, to obedience, in all the affairs of life....[They] whose faith is built upon knowledge without obedience, without growth in grace, will not be accepted to the kingdom...." *R3748:4,5*

LEAVEN

MATT. 13:33: "...The kingdom of heaven is like unto leaven, which a woman took, and hid in three measures of meal, till the whole was leavened."

"The grace of God given to his people in the beginning of this age, (1) the faith once delivered to the saints, (2) the hope set before us in the Gospel, (3) love, the bond of perfectness, summed up the three measures of the Lord's provision for his people....But gradually a woman arose, represented in Revelation as a harlot, and as 'that woman Jezebel.' This Roman Catholic system...proceeded to mix therewith the leaven of her own impurity....[till] the holy doctrines were contaminated with her false doctrines...." *R2635:4*

THE LOST COIN

LUKE 15:8-10: "...what woman having ten pieces of silver, if she lose one piece, doth not light a candle, and sweep the house, and seek diligently till she find *it*? And when she hath found *it*, she calleth her friends and her *neighbours* together, saying, Rejoice with me; for I have found the piece which I had lost. Likewise, I say unto you, there is joy in the presence of the angels of God over one sinner that repenteth."

"...the woman...having a bracelet on which were hung ten pieces of silver — a marriage token — on losing one...set...to work until she found it,....The woman's energy in seeking...is...an illustration of *divine energy* on behalf of *lost humanity*....

"The ten pieces...each had stamped upon it...a certain image or likeness....All the sons of God...were made in the *image*....of God. It was one of these that was lost —...man....

"The lighting of the candle and the sweeping... represent the work of God through Christ, which will be accomplished by the end of the Millennial age....

"Rejoicing...will come at the close of the Millennial age...but now, in advance...all the heavenly host rejoices...over one sinner that repenteth...." *R2707:3,4,5*

LOST SHEEP

LUKE 15:4-7: "What man of you, having an hundred sheep, if he lose one of them, doth not leave the ninety and nine in the wilderness, and go after that which is lost, until he find it? And when he hath found *it*, he layeth *it* on his shoulders, rejoicing. And when he cometh home, he calleth together *his* friends and neighbours, saying unto them, Rejoice with me; for I have found my sheep which was lost. I say unto you, that likewise joy shall be in heaven over one sinner that repenteth, more than over ninety and nine just persons, which need no repentance."

"The true shepherd who, loving his sheep..., left the ninety and nine well cared for...in the wilds (not in a desert)...gives us an illustration of the divine care....but if...the parable was...to be applied...to illustrate...the divine plan of salvation...the one sheep that was lost represented Adam and the human family, and that the ninety and nine...were the angels and other spirit beings, who never wandered....In this view the shepherd...would represent...Jesus...." *R2706:3*

MANY MANSIONS

JOHN 14:2: "In my Father's house are many mansions: if *it were* not so, I would have told you. I go to prepare a place for you."

"The Father's house is really the universe,....Divine providence has made... arrangement for...all the sons of God....The hope was that by his obedience...he would be raised...to...the divine nature. Thus it was necessary that he should go away...as the man... but that...at his second coming, they also should be 'changed'...to spirit conditions, and 'be like him and see him as he *is.*' 1 John 3:2" *R2454:3*

1 JOHN 3:2: "Beloved, now are we the sons of God, and it doth not yet appear what we shall be: but we know that, when he shall

appear, we shall be like him; for we shall see him as he is."

MASTER AND SERVANT

LUKE 17:7-10: "But which of you, having a servant plowing or feeding cattle, will say unto him by and by, when he is come from the field, Go and sit down to meat? And will not rather say unto him, Make ready wherewith I may sup, and gird thyself, and serve me, till I have eaten and drunken; and afterward thou shalt eat and drink? Doth he thank that servant because he did the things that were commanded him? I trow not. So likewise ye, when ye shall have done all those things which are commanded you, say, We are unprofitable servants: we have done that which was our duty to do."

"...in the Lord's service we are to look for the rewards of faith,...manifestations of divine favor, in the removal of obstacles...in the way of our progress in his service by cultivating Christian character in ourselves and others, and in ministering generally to the furtherance of the divine plans. We may not expect these rewards except as we prosecute the service....We owe him the full measure of our ability; hence we may not feel that we have merited...the...heavenly inheritance....We have merely done our duty; but God...has prepared, for those who lovingly serve him, rewards beyond what they could have asked....Our service...could never find acceptance...except as supplemented by the...work of Christ." *R1967:6*

MUSTARD SEED

MATT. 13:31,32: "...The kingdom of heaven is like to a grain of mustard seed, which a man took, and sowed in his field: Which indeed is the least of all seeds: but when it is grown, it is the greatest among herbs, and becometh a tree, so that the birds of the air come and lodge in the branches thereof."

"The...parable — picture of the kingdom in its...embryonic condition...is intended to show that from a very small beginning the nominal church...would attain to quite considerable proportions. Its start is likened to the small mustard seed, which attains to the largest size of its class of herbs. Yet this...does not necessarily signify...anything specially desirable, but,...becomes a disadvantage, in that the fowls...lodge in its branches....The 'fowls of the air' in the...parable of the sower represented Satan and his agents...the church...flourished rapidly and exceedingly, and...because of its attainments, strength, etc., Satan through his agents, came and lodged to the various branches of...this...church....They come in, not for the benefit of the mustard-seed tree or shrub, but for their own...benefit...." *R2634:6*

NEW CLOTH, OLD GARMENT

MATT. 9:16: "No man putteth a piece of new cloth unto an old garment, for that which is put in to fill it up taketh from the garment, and the rent is made worse."

"The reason for discarding all human organizations, and not reforming the least objectionable one and calling out of all others into it, now, is shown by our Lord's treatment of the...Jewish sects in the harvest...of their dispensation....

"...a patch of new cloth upon a very old garment would only make the weakness...more noticeable, and from the inequality of strength the rent would be made greater....

"Here...in introducing the fuller light of truth, at the dawn of the Millennial age, does not put it as a patch upon any of the old systems...." *C159, 160*

NEW WINE, OLD BOTTLES

MATT. 9:17: "Neither do men put new wine into old bottles: else the bottles break, and the wine runneth out, and the bottles perish: but they put new wine into new bottles, and both are preserved."

"New wine put into old wineskins, out of which all the stretch...had gone, would...speedily burst...the old wine skins,...also...lose the...new wine.

"The Lord...in introducing the fuller light of truth, at the dawn of the Millennial age, does not put it as new wine into old skins." *C160*

See also comments on preceding parable.

PHARISEE AND PUBLICAN

LUKE 18:9-14: "And he spake this parable unto certain which trusted in themselves that they were righteous, and despised others: Two men went up into the temple to pray; the one a Pharisee, and the other a publican. The Pharisee stood and prayed thus with himself, God, I thank thee, that I am not as other men *are*, extortioners, unjust, adulterers, or even as this publican. I fast twice in the week, I give tithes of all that I possess. And the publican, standing afar off, would not lift up so much as *his* eyes unto heaven, but smote upon his breast, saying, God be merciful to me a sinner. I tell you, this man went down to his house justified *rather* than the other: for every one that exalteth himself shall be abased; and he that humbleth himself shall be exalted."

"The Pharisees were a very moral class...devout, at least outwardly,...though inwardly...far from right....There is a similar class...today,... scrupulous, and yet not pleasing to the Lord. They are proud of their righteousness, and seem to fail to realize that if...naturally less depraved...they have nothing...to boast of, because...far from...perfect....God would look with...more compassion...upon the more depraved man if he were the more honest and more humble...than on the morally better but less humble.

"The parable pictures two men going up...to pray: the one was a self-righteous Pharisee...in many respects a good man, but very conscious of all his...observances of divine rules; the other man was of a lower...cast, who had more weaknesses...and who realized his condition. The Pharisee...stood and prayed with himself: apparently his prayers did not ascend to the Lord,...he prayed with himself,...congratulated himself in the prayer....the Father...seeketh such to worship him as worship him in spirit and in truth; and it seems impossible for anyone to come before the Lord in a proper manner who does not appreciate his own...imperfections...and acknowledges these and seeks the divinely arranged means for covering them." *R3841:6,1*

THE POUNDS

LUKE 19:12-27: "...A certain nobleman went into a far country to receive for himself a kingdom, and to return. And he called his ten servants, and delivered them ten pounds, and said unto them, Occupy till I come. But his citizens hated him, and sent a message ['embassy,' *Diag.*] after him, saying, We will not have this *man* to reign over us. And it came to pass, that when he was returned, having received the kingdom, then he commanded these servants to be called unto him, to whom he had given the money, that he

might know how much every man had gained by trading. Then came the first, saying, Lord, thy pound hath gained ten pounds. And he said unto him, Well, thou good servant: because thou hast been faithful in a very little, have thou authority over ten cities. And the second came, saying, Lord, thy pound hath gained five pounds. And he said likewise to him, Be thou also over five cities. And another came, saying, Lord, behold, *here is* thy pound, which I have kept laid up in a napkin: For I feared thee, because thou art an austere man: thou takest up that thou layedst not down, and reapest that thou didst not sow. And he saith unto him, Out of thine own mouth will I judge thee, *thou* wicked servant. Thou knewest that I was an austere man, taking up that I laid not down, and reaping that I did not sow: Wherefore then gavest not thou my money into the bank, that at my coming I might have required mine own with usury? And he said unto them that stood by, Take from him the pound, and give *it* to him that hath ten pounds. (And they said unto him, Lord, he hath ten pounds.) For I say unto you, That unto every one which hath shall be given; and from him that hath not, even that he hath shall be taken away from him. But those mine enemies, which would not that I should reign over them, bring hither, and slay *them* before me."

PSA. 2:8: "Ask of me, and I shall give *thee* the heathen *for* thine inheritance, and the uttermost parts of the earth *for* thy possession."

"During...the Master's absence...he has committed to his...servants...one pound each... — justification...As one...gained ten pounds, so such....who have gladly spent themselves...in the service of the Lord, are to have the highest rewards....Another..., reporting a gain of five pounds....received his master's 'Well done,'...but the reward was less....This will mean a less influential place in the...kingdom." *R5492:3,6*

THE UNFAITHFUL SERVANT

"...servants who maintain their justification, seeking to live harmless, honest lives, but who fail to sacrifice....will...lose the...kingdom; but because they still remain servants and have a love for righteousness they will....

1 COR. 3:15: "'...be saved; yet so as by fire.'

"...that...through tribulations....they will...gain everlasting life on the spirit plane....they seem to be represented as the virgins, the bride's companions,...who follow her. Psa. 45:14" *R5493:2*

PSA: 45:14: "She shall be brought unto the king in raiment of needlework: the virgins her companions that follow her shall be brought unto thee."

"Christ...will...

HEB: 2:15: "'...deliver them who through fear of death...'

"...are fearful of performing their covenant vow...." *R5493:3*

SLAYING THE KING'S ENEMIES

"The great King...will be doing...good for his enemies in bringing upon them punishments.... necessary to arouse them to an appreciation of their true condition and...privileges." *R5493:5*

PSA. 45:3-5: "Gird thy sword upon *thy* thigh, O *most* mighty, with thy glory and thy majesty. And in thy majesty ride prosperously because of truth *and* meekness and righteousness; and thy right hand shall teach thee terrible things. Thine arrows *are* sharp in the heart of the king's enemies; *whereby* the people fall under thee."

"...the sharp arrows of divine truth are represented as slaughtering the hosts of error.... Unless the enemies...be thus brought into subjection...the..." *R5493:6*

ACTS 3:23: "...soul, which will not hear that prophet, shall be destroyed from among the people."

PRODIGAL SON

LUKE 15:11-32: "A certain man had two sons: And the younger of them said to *his* father, Father, give me the portion of goods that falleth to *me*. And he divided unto them *his* living. And not many days after the younger son gathered all together, and took his journey into a far country, and there wasted his substance with riotous living. And when he had spent all, there arose a mighty famine in that land; and he began to be in want. And he went and joined himself to a citizen of that country; and he sent him into his fields to feed swine. And he would fain have filled his belly with the husks that the swine did eat: and no man gave unto him. And when he came to himself, he said, How many hired servants of my father's have bread enough and to spare, and I perish with hunger!

"I will arise and go to my father, and will say unto him, Father, I have sinned against heaven, and before thee, And am no more worthy to be called thy son: make me as one of thy hired servants. And he arose, and came to his father. But when he was yet a great way off, his father saw him, and had compassion, and ran, and fell on his neck, and kissed him. And the son said unto him, Father, I have sinned against heaven, and in thy sight, and am no more worthy to be called thy son. But the father said to his servants, Bring forth the best robe, and put it on him; and put a ring on his hand, and shoes on *his* feet: And bring hither the fatted calf, and kill *it*; and let us eat, and be merry:

"For this my son was dead, and is alive again; he was lost, and is found. And they began to be merry. Now his elder

son was in the field: and as he came and drew nigh to the house, he heard music and dancing. And he called one of the servants, and asked what these things meant. And he said unto him, Thy brother is come; and thy father hath killed the fatted calf, because he hath received him safe and sound. And he was angry, and would not go in: therefore came his father out, and entreated him. And he answering said to *his* father, Lo, these many years do I serve thee, neither transgressed I at any time thy commandment: and yet thou never gavest me a kid, that I might make merry with my friends: But as soon as this thy son was come, which hath devoured thy living with harlots, thou hast killed for him the fatted calf. And he said unto him, Son, thou art ever with me, and all that I have is thine. It was meet that we should make merry, and be glad: for this thy brother was dead, and is alive again; and was lost, and is found."

"The elder brother well represents the Pharisees and Doctors of the Law, who outwardly...were in harmony with God....They had their good portion of this present life as well as the....Covenant in the future." *R3835:6*

"The younger son would represent that portion of...Israel which...wandered off as publicans and sinners....These...sometimes smote upon their breasts saying, 'God be merciful to me a sinner.' These were all repudiated by the Pharisees and Doctors of the Law...and would not eat with them....Our Lord...respecting the Father, was willing to receive them, told them of the Father's love, of his provision to give them the robe of Christ's

righteousness...make them participants in the great feast of...kingdom blessings;...the ring as a signet of his...mercy, forgiveness, and love, the Pentecostal blessing." *R3836:1*

"The Pharisees...were angry. They...would not go to the same feast. They...lacked the spirit of brotherly kindness, love....

"The parable seems to imply...more hope of those who have gone into sin...returning to God, being accepted...than...of some who,... outwardly...religious, fail to acquire...love and mercy...." *R3836:2*

RICH FOOL

LUKE 12:16-21: "...The ground of a certain rich man brought forth plentifully: And he thought within himself, saying, What shall I do, because I have no room where to bestow my fruits? And he said, This will I do: I will pull down my barns, and build greater; and there will I bestow all my fruits and my goods. And I will say to my soul, Soul, thou hast much goods laid up for many years; take thine ease, eat, drink, *and* be merry. But God said unto him, *Thou* fool, this night thy soul shall be required of thee: then

whose shall those things be, which thou hast provided? So *is* he that layeth up treasure for himself, and is not rich toward God."

"The right attitude...would have answered...: these bounties...are a trust, and I am a steward... I have...the power to make many...happy;...in this...manner I shall have much greater pleasure than...to use all...upon myself...." *R2685:6*

"...dying suddenly....he would enter the next life a pauper, as respects...development in good qualities....with a load of selfishness....for a time [a] handicap...should he then make efforts toward perfection...." *R2686:2,4*

RICH MAN AND LAZARUS

LUKE 16:19-31: "There was a certain rich man, which was clothed in purple and fine linen, and fared sumptuously every day: And there was a certain beggar named Lazarus, which was laid at his gate, full of sores, And desiring to be fed with the crumbs which fell from the rich man's table: moreover the dogs came and licked his sores. And it came to pass, that the beggar died, and was carried by the angels into Abraham's bosom: the rich man also died, and was buried; And in hell he lift up his eyes, being in torments, and seeth Abraham afar off, and Lazarus in his bosom. And he cried and said, Father Abraham, have mercy on me, and send Lazarus, that he may dip the tip of his finger in water, and cool my tongue; for I am tormented in this flame. But Abraham said, Son, remember that thou in thy lifetime receivedst thy good things, and likewise Lazarus evil things: but now he is comforted, and thou art tormented. And beside all this, between us and you there is a great gulf fixed: so that they which would pass from hence to you cannot; neither can they pass to us, that *would come* from thence. Then he said, I pray thee therefore, father, that thou wouldest send him to my father's house: For I have five brethren; that he may testify unto them, lest they also come into this place of torment. Abraham saith unto him, They have Moses and the prophets; let them hear them. And he said, Nay, father Abraham: but if one went unto them from the dead, they will repent. And he said unto him, If they hear not Moses and the prophets, neither will they be persuaded, though one rose from the dead.

"...in reading this scripture....as a literal statement involves...absurdities....Lazarus was blessed,...not because he was good, but simply because he was poor and sick....'Abraham's bosom'...if...literal...would not hold very many...sick and poor." *R2603:6*

"So...the 'rich man' represents a *class* and 'Lazarus'...another *class.*

"To our understanding, Abraham represented God, and the 'rich man'...the Jewish nation.... The Jews had 'fared sumptuously...' — being the...recipients of God's favors...." *R2604:1,2*

ROM. 3:1,2: "What advantage then hath the Jew?....Much every way: chiefly, because that unto them were committed the oracles of God. ['Law and Prophecy']" *R2604:2*

"The promises...and their organization as a... kingdom...invested that people with royalty... 'purple.' The...sacrifices...constituted them, in a typical sense,...(righteous...) represented by... 'fine linen'...

"Lazarus represented the outcasts...sin-sick, hungered....'Publicans and sinners'...,seeking a better life, and truth-hungry Gentiles...'feeling after God' constituted the Lazarus class....they lay at the gate of the rich man. No rich promises of royalty were theirs; not even typically were they cleansed; but, in moral sickness,...they were companions of 'dogs.'... the...Jew called the outsiders...'dogs.'...

"These ate of the 'crumbs' of divine favor which fell from Israel's table...the Lord's words to the Syro-Phoenician woman give us the key. He said to this Gentile..." *R2604:1,2,3*

MATT. 15:26,27: "...It is not meet ['proper'] to take the children's bread, and to cast *it* to dogs. And she said, Truth, Lord: yet the dogs eat of the crumbs which fall from their master's table."

"Jesus healed her daughter, thus giving the desired crumb....

"There came a...change in Israel's history when...they rejected and crucified the Son of God....Thus the 'rich man' *died* to all these special advantages, and soon...found himself in... affliction....

"Lazarus also died:...the humble Gentiles and the Godseeking 'outcasts' of Israel underwent a great change, being carried by the angels (messengers — apostles, etc.) to Abraham's bosom. Abraham is represented as the father of the faithful...who are...heirs of...the promises made to Abraham...." *R2604:3*

ROM. 9:8: "...They which are the children of the flesh, these *are* not the children of God: but the children of the promise are counted for the **seed**."

"...the children of Abraham..." *R2604:3*

GAL. 3:29: "...if ye *be* Christ's, then are ye Abraham's seed, and heirs according to the promise."

"...the termination of...things...existing was well illustrated by...death....

"To...death and burial...the dissolution of Israel and their burial...among the other nations our Lord added...'In hell [hades...] he lifted up his eyes, being in torments, and seeth Abraham afar off,' etc. The dead cannot lift up their eyes, nor see..., nor converse for,...

ECCL. 9:10: "'...*there is* no work, nor device, nor knowledge, nor wisdom, in the grave [**sheol**, in Hebrew, or **hades** in Greek]....'

"And the dead..." *R2604:4*

PSA. 115:17: "...go down into silence."

"...'torments' would be added to Jews as a nation *after* their national dissolution and burial amongst the other peoples dead in

trespasses and sins; and...they would plead in vain for... comfort...." *R2604:4*

FIVE BRETHREN

"The people of Judea...were...referred to as 'Israel'...but...the majority...were of the tribes, Judah and Benjamin....If the...*two* tribes...were represented in the *one* 'rich man,' it would be [in] harmony...to understand the 'five brethren' to represent the *ten* tribes chiefly scattered abroad....no other nation than Israel had 'Moses and the prophets' as instructors. (vs.29) the majority of the ten tribes had so far disregarded Moses and the prophets that they did not return to the land of promise,...and hence it would be useless to attempt further communication with them, even by one from...the figuratively dead, but now figuratively risen Lazarus class...." *R2604:6*

LUKE 16:29: "Abraham saith unto him, They have Moses and the prophets; let them hear them."

"Though for centuries the Jews have been bitterly persecuted...they are now gradually rising to political freedom and influence; and...they will be very prominent...." *R2605:2*

ROM. 11:31: "...through your ['the Church's'] mercy they also may obtain mercy...."

ROM. 11:19-32: "Thou wilt say then, The branches were broken off, that I might be grafted in. Well; because of unbelief they were broken off, and thou standest by faith. Be not highminded, but fear: For if God spared not the natural branches, *take heed* lest he also spare not thee.

"Behold therefore the goodness and severity of God: on them which fell, severity; but toward thee, goodness, if thou continue in *his* goodness: otherwise thou also shalt be cut off. And they also, if they abide not still in unbelief, shall be grafted in: for God is able to graft them in again. For if thou wert cut out of the olive tree which is wild by nature, and wert grafted contrary to nature into a good olive tree: how much more shall these, which be the natural *branches*, be

grafted into their own olive tree? For I would not, brethren, that ye should be ignorant of this mystery, lest ye should be wise in your own conceits; that blindness in part is happened to Israel, until the fulness of the Gentiles be come in.

"And so all Israel shall be saved: as it is written, There shall come out of Sion the Deliverer, and shall turn away ungodliness from Jacob: For this is my covenant unto them, when I shall take away their sins. As concerning the gospel, *they are* enemies for your sakes: but as touching the election, *they are* beloved for the fathers' sakes. For the gifts and calling of God *are* without repentance. For as ye in times past have not believed God, yet have now obtained mercy through their unbelief: Even so have these also now not believed, that through your mercy they also may obtain mercy. For God hath concluded them all in unbelief, that he might have mercy upon all."

"Though the parable mentions no bridging of this 'great gulf,' other portions of Scripture indicate that it was to be 'fixed' only throughout the Gospel age, and that at its close the 'rich man,' having received the measurement of punishment for his sins, will walk out of his fiery troubles over the bridge of God's promises yet unfulfilled to that nation." *Where are the Dead:64*

See also Index: **Hell; Israel.**

SHEEP AND GOATS

MATT. 25:31-46: "When the Son of man shall come in his glory, and all the holy angels with him, then shall he sit upon the throne of his glory: And before him shall be gathered all nations: and he shall separate them one from another, as a shepherd divideth *his* sheep from the goats: And he shall set the sheep on his right hand, but the goats on the left. Then shall the King say unto them on his right hand, Come, ye blessed of my Father, inherit the kingdom prepared for you from the foundation of the world: For I was an hungered, and ye gave me meat: I was thirsty, and ye gave me drink: I was a stranger, and ye took me in: Naked, and ye clothed me: I was sick, and ye visited me: I was in prison, and ye came unto me. Then shall the righteous answer him, saying, Lord, when saw we thee an hungered, and fed *thee*? or thirsty, and gave *thee* drink? When saw we thee a stranger, and took *thee* in? or naked, and clothed *thee*? Or when saw we thee sick, or in prison, and came unto thee? And the King shall answer and say unto them, Verily I say unto you, Inasmuch as ye have done *it* unto one of the least of these my brethren, ye have done *it* unto me. Then shall he say also unto them on the left hand, Depart from me, ye cursed, into everlasting fire, prepared for the devil and his angels: For I was an hungered, and ye gave me no meat: I was thirsty, and ye gave me no drink: I

was a stranger, and ye took me not in: naked, and ye clothed me not: sick, and in prison, and ye visited me not.

"Then shall they also answer him, saying, Lord, when saw we thee an hungered, or athirst, or a stranger, or naked, or sick, or in prison, and did not minister unto thee? Then shall he answer them, saying, Verily I say unto you, Inasmuch as ye did *it* not to one of the least of these, ye did *it* not to me. And these shall go away into everlasting punishment: but the righteous into life eternal.

"...the parable...refers to the Millennial age...'*When the Son of man shall come in his glory*, and all the holy angels with him....[the overcoming church]...seated with him in his throne' when the nations shall have been subdued, Satan bound...and the authority of Christ's kingdom established....

"The decision of some cases...will be reached long before the end of the age." *R2606:2,3*

ISA. 65:20: *Leeser*: "...as a lad shall one die a hundred years old; and as a sinner shall be accursed he who (dieth) at a hundred years old."

"The sheep...willing to be led, shall....be gathered at the Judge's right hand — symbol of his approval and favor; but the goat class, self-willed and stubborn, always climbing on the rocks — seeking prominence and approval...and feeding upon...refuse, while the sheep graze in the rich pastures of the truth...are gathered to the Judge's left hand...his disfavor...." *R2606:4*

"The reward of this 'sheep' class will be granted them because, during the age of trial and discipline, they cultivated and manifested...love...

ROM. 13:10: "'...the fulfilling of the law...'

"...what they will have done for one another the Lord will count as done unto him, counting them all his brethren — children of God...of the human nature...

"...the 'sheep' here...are not the Gospel church, but those 'other sheep'...in John 10:16. And the kingdom prepared...from the foundation of the world, is not the kingdom prepared for the

Gospel church. The church will receive her kingdom at the beginning of the Millennium; but this is the kingdom prepared for the 'sheep' of the Millennial age....the dominion of earth... originally given to Adam,...lost through sin...." *R2606:5,6*

JOHN 10:16: "And other sheep I have, which are not of this fold: them also I must bring, and they shall hear my voice; and there shall be one fold, and one shepherd."

"The dead...when again brought into existence will need food, raiment, and shelter....

"These are said to be 'sick and in prison' (more properly, under ward or watch). The grave is the great prison...but when released...the restoration to perfection is not...instantaneous...Being not yet perfect, they may properly be termed *sick* and *under ward*, ...there will be abundant opportunity for mutual helpfulness, sympathy, instruction and encouragement, and any failure to assist will mark a lack of...love.

"The righteous...will have simply come into harmony with God's law of love and proved it by their works....

"[The 'goats'] shall go away into everlasting [Greek, *aionios* — **lasting**] punishment, but the righteous into life eternal' [Greek, *aionios* — **lasting**]. The punishment will be as lasting as the reward. Both will be everlasting." *R2607:2,4,6*

"The Greek word here translated punishment is *kolasin*, restraint, cutting off — in this case cutting off from life — second death.

"...the Greek word is *kolasin*, which means, literally, *to cut off*, or lopped off; this being *everlasting*..." *R719:2*

"The word is *kolasis.* Young defines it to mean **restraint**; Liddell and Scott say it means **pruning**, and B. Wilson in the Diaglott renders it '**Cutting-off**.' These are **the best** authorities on Greek. Thus it is clearly evident that the punishment referred to is — everlasting **restraint** or cutting of from life, of which they had proved themselves unworthy." *R367:4*

ROM. 6:23: "...The wages of sin is death...."

SOWER AND SEED

MATT. 13:3-9,18-23: "And he spake many things unto them in parables, saying, Behold, a sower went forth to sow; And when he sowed, some *seeds* fell by the way side, and the fowls came and devoured them up: Some fell upon stony places, where they had not much earth: and forthwith they sprung up, because they had no deepness of earth: And when the sun was up, they were scorched; and because they had no root, they withered away. And some fell among thorns; and the thorns sprung up, and choked them: But other fell into good ground, and brought forth fruit, some an hundredfold, some sixtyfold, some thirtyfold. Who hath ears to hear, let him hear.

"Hear ye therefore the parable of the sower. When any one heareth the word of the kingdom, and understandeth *it* not, then cometh the wicked *one*, and catcheth away that which was sown in his heart. This is he which received seed by the way side. But he that received the seed into stony places, the same is he that heareth the word, and anon with joy receiveth it; Yet hath he not root in himself, but dureth for a while: for when tribulation or persecution ariseth because

of the word, by and by he is offended. He also that received seed among the thorns is he that heareth the word; and the care of this world, and the deceitfulness of riches, choke the word, and he becometh unfruitful.

"But he that received seed into the good ground is he that heareth the word, and understandeth *it*; which also beareth fruit, and bringeth forth, some an hundredfold, some sixty, some thirty."

LUKE 8:11: "...The seed is the Word of God."

"Some are like the wayside, or paths hard trodden by life's experiences; sometimes, by too great prosperity and unprepared to receive God's message, unappreciative of it....it enters not into the heart...They may appreciate...certain beauties and consistencies of the truth, but...it never enters in....Ere long...Satan...steals away...every element of truth they once had seen....The truth is not for such....

"The stony-ground hearers...not only see something of the beauty of God's plan but they receive it with joy, they give every evidence of bringing forth much fruit....the shallowness of the nature is not disclosed until, opposition being aroused, the sun of persecution blights and withers the results....Having little nourishment backed by little character, it will soon wither and bring no fruitage to maturity.

"The soil that brings forth great thorns is rich, and if devoted wholly to the production of wheat would bring forth large crops. So... some...are good, strong deep characters, they would...bring forth much fruitage...if...fully devoted to the Lord. But alas! their talents, influence, means, time...is absorbed in...the bringing forth of earthly projects and ambitions whose interests conflict with the interests of the kingdom....Those who have heard of the Lord and love him are mistaken when they suppose they can love both the Lord and the world...we cannot serve God and mammon,...we cannot bring forth both thorns and wheat. Our hearts must be...wholly given to the Lord...else we cannot bring forth the fruitage which he requires....

"...some of our hearts have been plowed deeply by the plowshare of experience, trouble, disappointment in...earthly affairs and conditions....The soil...is deep and able to receive and appreciate the truth...not infested with the double mind of business care, household work, etc." *R3764:3,4,5,6*

"Let us determine that by the grace of God...we will...bring forth...an hundredfold...." *R3765:4*

STEWARD, FAITHFUL AND WISE

LUKE 12:42-48: "And the Lord said, Who then is that faithful and wise steward, whom *his* lord shall make ruler over his household, to give *them their* portion of meat in due season? Blessed *is* that servant, whom his lord when he cometh shall find so doing. Of a truth I say unto you, that he will make him ruler over all that he hath. But and if that servant say in his heart, My lord delayeth his coming; and shall begin to beat the menservants and maidens, and to eat and drink, and to be drunken; The lord of that servant will come in a day when he looketh not for *him*, and at an hour when he is not aware, and will cut him in sunder, and will appoint him his portion with the unbelievers.

"And that servant, which knew his lord's will, and prepared not *himself*, neither did according to his will, shall be beaten with many *stripes*. But he that knew not, and did commit things worthy of stripes, shall be beaten with few *stripes*. For unto whomsoever much is given, of him shall be much required: and to whom men have committed much, of him they will ask the more."

MATT. 24:51 adds: "...**there shall be weeping and gnashing of**

teeth" and substitutes "hypocrites" for "unbelievers" in Luke 12:46.

MATT 24:48, *Diag.*, *Nestle, Lachman, Tischendorf, Tregelles, and Rotherham* omit "his coming."

"That a...class of brethren together would constitute the steward....would be...to recognize a clerical...class as...separate from the remainder ...because this steward is to dispense the meat...to the fellow-servants. The church...is not composed of clergy and laity....In the past the Lord has used individuals,...For instance Peter...at Pentecost, and again at the home of Cornelius....

"Since the servant...is to dispense food to... fellow-servants, the term seems to be limited to some...individual....This servant, if found faithful, would be intrusted...with the distribution of every feature of present truth.... Unfaithfulness...would mean his degradation... and presumably the service would go on at the hands of another....

"'All his goods' should...be understood to apply to...truths due to be protected or disbursed....down to the close of the 'harvest.'

"This servant must not act or be regarded as a lord...the 45th verse...shows that such a misuse of his appointment would work his downfall....

"Verses 47,48, seem to imply that the servant's responsibility...will be in proportion to his knowledge of the Lord's will..." *R3355; 3356:6,2,4,5*

See also Index: **That Faithful and Wise Servant**

STRAIT GATE

LUKE 13:24-27: "Strive to enter in at the strait gate: for many, I say unto you, will seek to enter in, and shall not be able. When once the master of the house is risen up, and hath shut to the door, and ye begin to stand without, and to knock at the door, saying, Lord, Lord, open unto us; and he shall answer and say unto you, I know you not whence ye are: Then shall ye begin to say, We have eaten and drunk in thy presence, and thou hast taught in our streets. But he shall say, I tell you, I know you not whence ye are; depart from me, all ye workers of iniquity."

"In other words the call, the only call of this Gospel age, is to the narrow way of self-sacrifice: and no distraction of interest should slack our running for the great prize of immortality now offered. When the number of the 'elect' is filled full and the great tribulation of the end of this age gives notice that the Church is completed and glorified, there will be many to take a different view of the worldly trifles which now hinder their fulfillment of their consecration pledges." *E401*

TALENTS

LUKE 19:12-27: "He said therefore, A certain nobleman went into a far country to receive for himself a kingdom, and to return. And he called his ten servants, and delivered them ten pounds, and said unto them, Occupy till I come. But his citizens hated him, and sent a message after him, saying, We will not have this *man* to reign over us. And it came to pass, that when he was returned, having received the kingdom, then he commanded these servants to be called unto him, to whom he had given the money, that he might know how much every man had gained by trading. Then came the first, saying, Lord, thy pound hath gained ten pounds. And he said unto him, Well, thou good servant: because thou hast been faithful in a very little, have thou authority over ten cities. And the second came, saying, Lord, thy pound hath gained five pounds. And he said likewise to him, Be thou also over five cities. And another came, saying, Lord, behold, *here is* thy pound, which I have kept laid up in a napkin: For I feared thee, because thou art an austere man: thou takest up that thou layedst not down, and reapest that thou didst not sow. And he saith unto him, Out of thine own mouth will I judge thee, *thou* wicked servant. Thou knewest that I was an austere man, taking up that I laid not down, and reaping that I did not sow: Wherefore then gavest not thou my money into the bank, that at my coming I might have required mine own with usury? And he said unto them that stood by, Take from him the pound, and give *it* to him that hath ten pounds. (And they said unto him, Lord, he hath ten pounds). For I say

unto you, That unto every one which hath shall be given; and from him that hath not, even that he hath shall be taken away from him. But those mine enemies, which would not that I should reign over them, bring hither, and slay *them* before me."

"One pound was given to each servant....the parable of the talents...is different in that one received five talents, another two, another one — corresponding to the varying conditions of the Lord's people...." *R3869:3*

"...the talents...undoubtedly represent the opportunities and privileges of...consecrated... followers of Jesus....those who have become the Lord's bond-servants are possessors of various talents...and opportunities, some more and some less, and...these were entrusted to them as the Lord's, and they were made the Lord's stewards....

"Our natural talents may be considered, first, as...wealth, influence, intellectual power, education, and public utterance.

"...talents may be viewed from the standpoint of our spiritual qualities, meekness, gentleness, patience, brotherly kindness, love....Some that are naturally...very selfish...might be considered as those possessing only the one talent...others, ...two...and others...five-talented....

"The Lord will doubtless measure us according to both...standpoints, but we may be sure that...the chiefest of all...talents...is love.... Only...as love...shall have guided the use of our talents...they will be acceptable...." *R3870:1,4,5,6*

"The parable shows the Master...rewarding faithfulness...with...the 'joys of the Lord,'... glory, honor, and immortality....the honor of the kingdom,...and...being participators...in... uplifting the world...'Faithful over a **few** things, ruler over **many** things.'

"The one-talent man...had not wasted...it in ministering to the flesh....The Master...said, 'Thou wicked and slothful servant.' The point of this reproof lies in the fact that...every consecrated child of God...has agreed to spend and to be spent in the Master's service, whatever his talents....

"His talent, his opportunity...shall be...taken from him,...'There shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth'...sorrow...chagrin....This....'a great company.'...will be before the throne, whereas the faithful servants will be in the throne." *R3871:2,3*

TEN VIRGINS

MATT. 25:1-13: "Then shall the kingdom of heaven be likened unto ten virgins, which took their lamps, and went forth to meet the bridegroom. And five of them were wise, and five *were* foolish. They that *were* foolish took their

lamps, and took no oil with them: But the wise took oil in their vessels with their lamps. While the bridegroom tarried, they all slumbered and slept. And at midnight there was a cry made, Behold, the bridegroom cometh; go ye out to meet him. Then all those virgins arose, and trimmed their lamps. And the foolish said unto the wise, Give us of your oil; for our lamps are gone out. But the wise answered, saying, *Not so*; lest there be not enough for us and you: but go ye rather to them that sell, and buy for yourselves. And while they went to buy, the bridegroom came; and they that were ready went in with him to the marriage: and the door was shut. Afterward came also the other virgins, saying, Lord, Lord, open to us. But he answered and said, Verily I say unto you, I know you not. Watch therefore, for ye know neither the day nor the hour...."

"The parable teaches a movement among the heirs of the Kingdom, in expectation of meeting the Bridegroom...in which two classes would be manifested...'wise' and 'foolish'...'Virgin' signifies pure; so...both the wise and the foolish represent 'holy people.'...

"The movement...in this parable corresponds... to one which began with the 'Miller movement.'..." *C91*

"The virgins...are shown as all having lamps trimmed and giving them light. These lamps represent the Scriptures ('Thy Word is a lamp unto my feet'), and such a **general** trimming of lamps — searching the Scriptures — by all classes of Christians probably never before took place. The oil...the spirit of the truth....was manifest, then, in the lamps of all; but all had not the spirit of the truth in themselves — the 'vessels.'

"The disappointment of 1844 is...recorded by the statement that 'the Bridegroom' 'tarried' — ...seemed...to tarry. And the confusion and darkness...are shown...by the statement: 'While the Bridegroom tarried, they all **slumbered** and slept'...in their...slumber many...dreamed strange ...things.

"But the parable shows a second movement... class is referred to, but not necessarily the same individuals. As the first movement was the result of light upon...the time for Messiah's second advent...so was the second....But....in the first, the lamps of all...burned alike; and the company...was mixed;...in the second...while all will be aroused, only those will be led out who have the spirit of the truth in their hearts, as well as a knowledge of the Bible — a trimmed lamp. Disappointment was predicted for the first movement, and waiting for the 1335 days was necessary; but the second was not a disappointment, and a waiting was no longer necessary; for fulfillment came...in...1874,....very early in the morning of the new age, but... 'midnight' hour, so far as the deep slumbering of the virgins was concerned...the cry...went forth, 'Behold the Bridegroom!'*

*Sinaitic and Vatican MSS. omit '**cometh**.'

"...and we are now living 'in the [**parousia**] presence of the Son of man.' And such has been the character of the present movement,...a proclamation of the Lord's **presence** and of the kingdom work now in progress...the time is fulfilled and...the Kingdom...is...being set up, while the kingdoms and systems of men are crumbling...." *C92*

"...though all the virgin class trim their lamps, all cannot see. Only those who have the oil in their vessels (in themselves — the fully consecrated) can get the light from their lamps....The others...will get the oil and the light some time...; but only those **filled** with the oil, the Spirit of the truth, will have the light in season and....go in...to the marriage. The oil, or spirit of consecration, and light cannot be communicated from one virgin to another.... each must get his own supply of...(the Truth and its Spirit of consecration and holiness)...and the cost is considerable in...self-denial and misrepresentation and fiery trial. Experience in the great time of trouble will be the market in which the foolish virgins will purchase their oil. But is will then be too late to go into the marriage...These repentant..., shall yet **serve** him in his temple." *C93*

TOWER, PROPOSAL TO BUILD

LUKE 14:28-30: "For which of you, intending to build a tower, sitteth not down first, and counteth the cost, whether he have *sufficient* to finish *it*? Lest haply, after he hath laid the foundation, and is not able to finish *it*, all that behold *it* begin to mock him, Saying, This man began to build, and was not able to finish."

"...on one occasion Jesus apparently reproved even a spirit of enthusiasm that might becloud the cool judgment, saying, 'Sit down and count the cost,'...They are not to be brought into the family of God by prayers or by excitement, but by the declaration of the divine terms and conditions. To such as accept the grace of God the urgent message goes out that they receive it not in vain; that, having put their hand to the plow, they do not look back; that, having enlisted...they endure hardness, rejoicing in the privilege of service and sacrifice." *R5454:5*

TWO DEBTORS FORGIVEN

LUKE 7:41-43: "There was a certain creditor which had two debtors: the one owed five hundred pence, and the other fifty. And when they had nothing to pay, he frankly forgave them both. Tell me therefore, which of them will love him most? Simon answered and said, I suppose that *he*, to whom he forgave most. And he said unto him, Thou hast rightly judged."

"...not many great...wise...learned...noble, or rich...of this world will be...heirs of the kingdom...because

these...appreciate less the necessity of divine...forgiveness....Hence...the Gospel of mercy...appeals most directly to the sinner..." *R3761:6*

TWO KINDS OF CREDITORS

MATT. 18:23-35: "Therefore is the kingdom of heaven likened unto a certain king, which would take account of his servants. And when he had begun to reckon, one was brought unto him, which owed him ten thousand talents. But forasmuch as he had not to pay, his lord commanded him to be sold, and his wife, and children, and all that he had, and payment to be made. The servant therefore fell down, and worshipped him, saying, Lord, have patience with me, and I will pay thee all. Then the lord of that servant was moved with compassion, and loosed him, and forgave him the debt. But the same servant went out, and found one of his fellowservants, which owed him an hundred pence: and he laid hands on him, and took *him* by the throat, saying, Pay me that thou owest. And his fellowservant fell down at his feet, and besought him, saying, Have patience with me, and I will pay thee all. And he would not: but went and cast him into prison, till he should pay the debt. So when his fellowservants saw what was done, they were very sorry, and came and told unto their lord all that was done. Then his lord, after that he had called him, said unto him, O thou

wicked servant, I forgave thee all that debt, because thou desiredst me: Shouldest not thou also have had compassion on thy fellowservant, even as I had pity on thee? And his lord was wroth, and delivered him to the tormentors, till he should pay all that was due unto him. So likewise shall my heavenly Father do also unto you, if ye from your hearts forgive not every one his brother their trespasses."

"Some...who have received divine grace in abundant measure are very hardhearted, uncharitable, unforgiving, vindictive, malicious, and vengeful toward those who trespass against them, and whose trespasses are sometimes purely imaginary." *R2295:3*

MATT. 5:11: "...shall **say all manner of evil against you falsely**, for My sake."

"What shall we say of the Christianity of the brother...who...thus abuses his fellow servant?... The King was wroth and called the forgiven but unforgiving servant to account, pronouncing him...a 'wicked servant.'" *R2295:4*

UNJUST JUDGE

LUKE 18:1-8: "And he spake a parable unto them *to this end*, that men ought always to pray, and not to faint; Saying, There was in a city a judge, which feared not God, neither regarded man: And there was a widow in that city; and she came unto him, saying, Avenge me of mine

adversary. And he would not for a while: but afterward he said within himself, Though I fear not God, nor regard man; Yet because this widow troubleth me, I will avenge her, lest by her continual coming she weary me. And the Lord said, Hear what the unjust judge saith. And shall not God avenge his own elect, which cry day and night unto him, though he bear long with them? I tell you that he will avenge them speedily. Nevertheless when the Son of man cometh, shall he find [the] faith on the earth?"

"...if an unjust judge would finally grant relief...from selfish motives, surely our heavenly Father, who is neither unjust nor unloving nor careless of the interests of his people, will heed their prayers. If...a matter be...very importune, demanding our earnest prayers and if the answer...be not quickly forthcoming, we neither conclude that God is an unjust judge who cares not for us...selfishly careless of our interests except as we would bother him; but...as our loving heavenly parent, whose arm is not shortened...whose love for us is...strong,...as a father pitieth his children, and...are to have patience, and to trust the fulfillment of our petitions to his wisdom,. love, and power, knowing that all things shall...work together for good to them that love God, to the called ones according to his purpose." *R3841:2*

UNJUST STEWARD

LUKE 16:1-15: "And he said also unto his disciples, There was a certain rich man, which had a steward; and the same was accused unto him that he had wasted his goods. And he called him, and said unto him, How is it that I hear this of thee? give an account of thy stewardship; for thou mayest be no longer steward. Then the steward said within himself, What shall I do? for my lord taketh away from me the stewardship: I cannot dig; to beg I am ashamed. I am resolved what to do, that, when I am put out of the stewardship, they may receive me into their houses. So he called every one of his lord's debtors *unto him*, and said unto the first, How much owest thou unto my lord? And he said, An hundred measures of oil. And he said unto him, Take thy bill, and sit down quickly, and write fifty. Then said he to another, And how much owest thou? And he said, An hundred measures of wheat. And he said unto him, Take thy bill, and write fourscore. And the lord commended the unjust steward, because he had done wisely: for the children of this world are in their generation wiser than the children of light. And I say unto you, Make to yourselves friends of the mammon of unrighteousness; that, when ye fail, they may receive you into everlasting habitations. He that is faithful in that which is least is faithful also in much: and he that is unjust in the least is unjust also in much.

"If therefore ye have not been faithful in the unrighteous mammon, who will commit to your trust the true *riches*?

And if ye have not been faithful in that which is another man's, who shall give you that which is your own? No servant can serve two masters: for either he will hate the one, and love the other; or else he will hold to the one, and despise the other. Ye cannot serve God and mammon. And the Pharisees also, who were covetous, heard all these things: and they derided him. And he said unto them, Ye are they which justify yourselves before men; but God knoweth your hearts: for that which is highly esteemed among men is abomination in the sight of God."

"The steward...corresponds to...the scribes and Pharisees...'To them were committed the oracles of God.'...

"They were weak through the fall, incompetent to be administrators of so great a trust; and God....intended that...he would dispose them from the stewardship and give it...to Messiah." *R2715:3,6*

"Our Lord....shows them what an earthly steward would do....

"...if they were as wise....they should have said....we...have not kept the law...perfectly;...it is not within our power to do so...." *R2715:3,6*

"...the wise thing...is to...deal kindly...with these sinners...instead of denouncing them...we should say...,We cannot keep this perfect law...and... you cannot...but now, instead of being... discouraged...do the best you can." *R2716:2*

"...the Pharisees...'derided' — being covetous. But our Lord pressed the lesson home...saying 'Ye are they which justify yourselves before men; but God knoweth your hearts.' You are the unjust steward and soon all will witness your rejection." R2716:4

LUKE 16:16: "The law and the prophets ['of which you are the representatives'] ['recognized of God'] until John [the Baptist]; since that time the kingdom of God is preached ['the new, the Gospel dispensation'], and every one presseth into it. ['should press toward it.']" *R2716:4*

"These are to 'make to themselves friends;' in other words, to lay up treasures in heaven, by the sacrifice of the Mammon of unrighteousness; — that is to say, the sacrifice of the various interests of this present time of unrighteousness, 'this present evil world.'" *R2717:4*

THE VINE

JOHN 15:1-11: "I am the true vine, and my Father is the husbandman. Every *branch* in me that beareth not fruit he taketh away: and every branch that beareth fruit, he purgeth it, that it may bring forth more fruit. Now ye are clean through the word which I have spoken unto you. Abide in me, and I in you. As the branch cannot bear fruit

of itself, except it abide in the vine; no more can ye, except ye abide in me. I am the vine, ye are the branches: He that abideth in me, and I in him, the same bringeth forth much fruit: for without me ye can do nothing. If a man abide not in me, he is cast forth as a branch, and is withered; and men gather them, and cast *them* into the fire, and they are burned.

"If ye abide in me, and my words abide in you, ye shall ask what ye will, and it shall be done unto you. Herein is my Father glorified, that ye bear much fruit; so shall ye be my disciples. As the Father hath loved me, so have I loved you: continue ye in my love. If ye keep my commandments, ye shall abide in my love; even as I have kept my Father's commandments, and abide in his love. These things have I spoken unto you, that my joy might remain in you, and *that* your joy might be full."

"There is but one Head and **center** of the Church, our Lord Jesus...in all of his work the Father was freely acknowledged, and...his work was done...by the Father's authority...

MATT. 15:13: "'...Every plant which My heavenly Father hath not planted, shall be rooted up.'

"The true church...is of the Father's planting....The fruitage of the True Vine is Love...." *F206*

JOHN 15:12,13: "This is my commandment, That ye love one another, as I have loved you. Greater love hath no man than this, that a man lay down his life for his friends."

VINEYARD AND WICKED HUSBANDMEN

MARK 12:1: "...A certain man ['God'] planted a vineyard ['...Israel — Isa.5:7']...and set a hedge about it ['the divine law, the...supervision and... guardianship of God and the ministration of his faithful servants, all of which served to separate them from...surrounding nations and...their influence'], and digged a place for the winevat, and built a tower ['...representing God's care...in setting watchmen, the prophets and others.... Ezek. 3:17; Isa. 62:6; Jer.6:17'] and let it out to husbandmen ['the priests and leaders...whose duty it was to...lead in right ways...'], and went into a far country ['left the vineyard thus prepared...to insure an abundant harvest...']."

ISA. 5:7: "For the vineyard of the LORD of hosts is the house of Israel, and the men of Judah his pleasant plant: and he looked for judgment, but behold oppression; for righteousness, but behold a cry."

EZEK. 3:17: "Son of man, I have made thee a watchman unto the house of Israel: therefore hear the word at my mouth, and give them warning from me."

ISA. 62:6: "I have set watchmen upon thy walls, O Jerusalem, *which* shall never hold their peace day nor night: ye that make mention of the LORD, keep not silence."

JER. 6:17: "Also I set watchmen over you, saying, Hearken to the sound of the trumpet. But they said, We will not hearken."

"The fruits which the Lord had a right to expect...were gratitude, love, obedience, meekness and readiness of mind and heart...." *R1795:6*

MARK 12:2-5: "And at the season ['...as it was proper to expect some fruit'] he sent to the husbandmen a servant, ['a prophet or teacher'] that he might receive **from the husbandmen** ['through their influence; for the rulers...were held specially responsible...'] of the fruit of the vineyard. And they caught *him*, and beat him, and sent *him* away empty. And again he sent unto them another servant; and at him they cast stones, and wounded *him* in the head, and sent *him* away shamefully handled. And again he sent another; and him they killed, and many others; beating some, and killing some."

JER. 37:13-21: "And when he was in the gate of Benjamin, a captain of the ward was there, whose name was Irijah, the son of Shelemiah, the son of Hananiah; and he took Jeremiah the prophet, saying, Thou fallest away to the Chaldeans. Then said Jeremiah, *It is* false; I fall not away to the Chaldeans. But he hearkened not to him: so Irijah took Jeremiah, and brought him to the princes. Wherefore the princes were wroth with Jeremiah, and smote him, and put him in prison in the house of Jonathan the scribe: for they had made that the prison. When Jeremiah was entered into the dungeon, and into the cabins, and Jeremiah had remained there many days; Then Zedekiah the king sent, and took him out: and the king asked him secretly in his house, and said, Is there *any* word from the LORD? And Jeremiah said, There is: for, said he, thou shalt be delivered into the hand of the king of Babylon. Moreover Jeremiah said unto king Zedekiah, What have I offended against thee, or against thy servants, or against this people, that ye have put me in prison? here are now your prophets which prophesied unto you, saying, The king of Babylon shall not come against you, nor against this land? Therefore hear now, I pray thee, O my lord the king: let my supplication, I pray thee, be accepted before thee; that thou cause me not to return to the house of Jonathan the scribe, lest I die there. Then Zedekiah the king commanded that they should commit Jeremiah into the court of the prison, and that they should give him daily a piece of bread out of the bakers' street, until all the bread in the city were spent. Thus Jeremiah remained in the court of the prison."

1 KINGS 18:13; 22:24-27: "Was it not told my lord what I did when Jezebel slew the prophets of the LORD, how I hid an hundred men of the Lord's prophets by fifty in a cave, and fed them with bread and water?

"But Zedekiah the son of Chenaanah went near, and smote Micaiah on the cheek, and said, Which way went the spirit of the LORD from me to speak unto thee? and Micaiah said, Behold, thou shalt see in that day, when thou shalt go into an inner chamber to hide thyself. And the king of Israel said, Take Micaiah, and carry him back unto Amon the governor of the city, and to Joash the king's son; And say, Thus saith the king, Put this *fellow* in the prison, and feed him with bread of affliction and with water of affliction, until I come in peace."

2 KINGS 6:31: "Then he said, God do so and more also to me, if the head of Elisha the son of Shaphat shall stand on him this day."

2 CHRON. 24:20,21; 36:16: "And the Spirit of God came upon Zechariah the son of Jehoiada the priest, which stood above the people, and said unto them, Thus saith God, Why transgress ye the commandments of the LORD, that ye cannot prosper? because ye have forsaken the LORD, he hath also forsaken you. And they conspired against him, and stoned him with stones at the commandment of the king in the court of the house of the LORD."

"But they mocked the messengers of God, and despised his words, and misused his prophets, until the wrath of the LORD arose against his people, till *there was* no remedy."

ACTS 7:52: "Which of the prophets have not your fathers persecuted? and they have slain them which showed before of the

coming of the Just One; of whom ye have been now the betrayers and murderers..."

HEB. 11:35-38: "Women received their dead raised to life again: and others were tortured, not accepting deliverance; that they might obtain a better resurrection: And others had trial of *cruel* mockings and scourgings, yea, moreover of bonds and imprisonment: They were stoned, they were sawn asunder, were tempted, were slain with the sword: they wandered about in sheepskins and goatskins; being destitute, afflicted, tormented; (Of whom the world was not worthy:) they wandered in deserts, and *in* mountains, and *in* dens and caves of the earth."

MARK 12:6-9: "Having yet therefore one son, his wellbeloved, he sent him also last unto them, saying, They will reverence my son. But those husbandmen said among themselves, This is the heir; come, let us kill him, and the inheritance shall be ours. And they took him, and killed *him*, and cast *him* out of the vineyard. What shall therefore the lord of the vineyard do? he will come and destroy the husbandmen, and will give the vineyard unto others."

"Having yet therefore one son, his well beloved ['...Jesus...'], he sent him also last unto them, saying, 'They will reverence my son.' ['Though God knew...otherwise, it is so expressed to show the reasonableness of such expectation.']

"But those husbandmen ['the chief priests and rulers'] said among themselves, 'This is the heir.' [This man claims to be...the Messiah...] Come 'let us kill him, and the inheritance shall be ours.' [the desire to retain their prestige and power was the very object...in...crucifying the Lord.]

"And they took him and killed him and cast him out of the vineyard. [Verse 9 foretells the purpose of God...to give his favors to others.] What shall therefore the lord of the vineyard do? 'he will come and destroy the husbandmen, and will give the vineyard unto others.'" *R1796:1,2,4*

MATT. 21:42-46: "Jesus saith unto them, Did ye never read in the scriptures, The stone which the builders rejected, the same is become the head of the corner: this is the Lord's doing, and it is marvelous in our eyes? [Psa. 118:22,23] Therefore say I unto you, The kingdom of God shall be taken from you, and given to a nation bringing forth the fruits thereof. And whosoever shall fall on this stone shall be broken: but on whomsoever it shall fall, it will grind him to powder. And when the chief priests and Pharisees had heard his parables, they perceived that he spake of them. But when they sought to lay hands on him, they feared the multitude, because they took him for a prophet."

PSA. 118:22,23: "The stone *which* the builders refused is become the head *stone* of the corner. This is the LORD'S doing; it *is* marvelous in our eyes."

"The result of the stumbling of the nominal Gospel church over this stone will be the same as in the case of the Jewish church: they will be broken...disintegrated....

"But when this corner stone crowns the finished temple...the church glorified...upon whomsoever this stone falls it will grind him to powder; it will utterly destroy him....Acts 3:23" *R1983:4*

ACTS 3:23: "And it shall come to pass, *that* every soul, which will not hear that prophet, shall be destroyed from among the people."

WATER OF LIFE

JOHN 4:7,9-15: "There cometh a woman of Samaria to draw water: Jesus saith unto her, Give me to drink....Then saith the woman of Samaria unto him, How is it that thou, being a Jew, askest drink of me, which am a woman of Samaria?...Jesus answered and said unto her, If thou knewest the gift of God, and who it is that saith to thee, Give me to drink; thou wouldest have asked of him, and he

would have given thee living water. The woman saith unto him, Sir, thou hast nothing to draw with, and the well is deep: from whence then hast thou that living water? Art thou greater than our father Jacob, which gave us the well, and drank thereof himself, and his children, and his cattle? Jesus answered and said unto her, Whosoever drinketh of this water shall thirst again: But whosoever drinketh of the water that I shall give him shall never thirst; but the water that I shall give him shall be in him a well of water springing up into everlasting life. The woman saith unto him, Sir, give me this water, that I thirst not, neither come hither to draw."

JOHN 7:37-39: "In the last *day*, that great day of the feast, Jesus stood and cried, saying, If any man thirst, let him come unto me, and drink. He that believeth on [into] me, as the scripture hath said, out of his belly shall flow rivers of living water. (But this spake he of the Spirit, which they that believe on [into] him should receive: for the Holy Ghost [Spirit] was not yet *given*; because that Jesus was not yet glorified.)"

"As our physical systems call for water...and cannot do without it, so we have...thirsts of a higher intellectual order....What the whole world is seeking for and failing to get, our Lord Jesus gives to his people — water of life, satisfaction. Those who receive his blessing have in them wells of water springing up in their hearts....Their...thirsts are satisfied...; they have more than ambition could ask." *R3496:3*

"The golden pitcher full of water...poured upon the altar...apparently symbolized the outpouring of the Holy Spirit."

"It is presumed that...at the close of the pouring of the...water on the altar...that Jesus made the announcement [John 7:37,38]...

JOHN 7:37,38: "In the last *day*, that great day of the feast, Jesus stood and cried, saying, If any man thirst, let him come unto me, and drink. He that believeth on me, as the scripture hath said, out of his belly shall flow rivers of living water."

"...the Lord is seeking for the thirsting ones... and if they will drink at his fountain of grace and truth, they will find the satisfaction, the comfort, the joy, the peace, the rest, the blessing, which the world can neither give nor take away. Blessed...are they who are now drinking of the waters given forth by the smitten Rock — our Lord...." *R3509:3,5,6.*

"...ultimately the stream of the water of life shall flow during the Millennial age for the blessing of the whole world....The water of life represents the truth....this...shall proceed from...the Lord, from...the glorified church,...such a stream...as will reach every part of the earth." *R3510:2*

THE WEDDING GARMENT

MATT. 22:2-14: "The kingdom of heaven is like unto a certain king, which made a marriage [—feast, *Diag.*] for his son, And sent forth his servants to call them that were bidden to the wedding [—feasts, *Diag.*]: and they would not come. Again, he sent forth other servants, saying, Tell them which are bidden, Behold, I have prepared my dinner: my oxen and *my* fatlings *are* killed, and all things *are* ready: come unto the marriage. But they made light of *it*

, and went their ways, one to his farm, another to his merchandise: And the remnant took his servants, and entreated *them* spitefully, and slew *them*. But when the king heard *thereof*, he was wroth: and he sent forth his armies, and destroyed those murderers, and burned up their city. Then saith he to his servants, The wedding [—feast] is ready, but they which were bidden were not worthy. Go ye therefore into the highways, and as many as ye shall find, bid to the marriage. So those servants went out into the highways, and gathered together all as many as they found, both bad and good: and the wedding [feast, *Diag*.] was furnished with guests. And when the king came in to see the guests, he saw there a man which had not on a wedding garment: And he saith unto him, Friend, how camest thou in hither not having a wedding garment? And he was speechless. Then said the king to the servants, Bind him hand and foot, and take him away, and cast *him* into outer darkness; there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth. For many are called, but few *are* chosen."

"For any guest to discard the wedding robe presented by the host...and to appear in his own clothing, would have been...significant of pride and of disrespect for his entertainer."

"The wedding garment clearly illustrates the righteousness of Christ,...without which no one is acceptable...." *C198*

"...some...seem to lose sight of their personal unworthiness,...**they seem to see, in their own little self-denials**...the equivalent of what...Jesus did — and feel that they...are **indispensable**...." *C200*

"These are represented...by the one 'bound,' hindered from making further progress...and... will finally be cast...into the 'outer darkness' of the world...." *C201*

"They boldly claim to need no Redeemer; and... convince themselves and others that they get into the sheepfold by another way without being ransomed — in their own righteousness, and some claim...that they were unalterably elected by God...to the heavenly glory.

"Of those who have discarded the robe he inquires, '...how comest thou in hither, not having a wedding garment?' — a...reminder that the...robe was the very condition of... admission....those who have rejected the robe... are

'speechless.' They cannot deny that it was while wearing the robe they were admitted; and they do not like to acknowledge it.

"The 'outer darkness' is the darkness that envelops the worldly wise...human reasoning undirected by God's Word and unsquared by his...plan of ransom and restitution. The binding...makes an example of such before...the consecrated, and helps...loyal ones to see...the necessity...of the robe...The servants who...do the binding are those...who can **bind the influence** of such with scriptural testimonies on...the precious blood and the robe....the disrobed ones are forced, by their own..efforts to justify themselves, out of the light....

"Those...'cast into outer darkness' must first have been in the light...their responsibility and penalty are greater than...of those who never enjoyed such favor." *C202, 203*

"...while more...are still learning of the Bridegroom's presence and joyfully coming in...some...already in are proving...unworthy... and their...apprehension...of the Lord's presence and...work begin to grow...dim, as...they... gravitate toward worldly views...." *C204*

WHEAT AND TARES

MATT. 13:24-30, 37-43: "...The kingdom of heaven is likened unto a man which sowed good seed in his field: But while men slept, his enemy came and sowed tares among the wheat, and went his way. But when the blade was sprung up, and brought forth fruit, then appeared the tares also. So the servants of the householder came and said unto him, Sir, didst not thou sow good seed in thy field? from whence then hath it tares? He said unto them, An enemy hath done this. The servants said unto him, Wilt thou then that we go and gather them up? But he said, Nay; lest while ye gather up the tares, ye root up also the wheat with them. Let both grow together until the harvest: and in the time of harvest I will say to the reapers, Gather ye together first the tares, and bind them in bundles to burn them: but gather the wheat into my barn....He that soweth the good seed is the Son of man; The field is the world; the good seed are the children of the kingdom; but the tares are the children of the wicked *one*; The enemy that sowed them is the devil; the harvest is the end of the world; and the reapers are the angels [messengers, *Diag*.]. As therefore the tares are gathered and burned in the fire; so shall it be in the end of this world [of the age, *Diag*.]. The Son of man shall send forth his angels [messengers, *Diag*.], and they shall gather out of his kingdom all things that offend [seducers, *Diag*.], and them which do iniquity; And shall cast them into a furnace of fire: there shall be wailing and gnashing of teeth. Then shall the righteous shine forth as

the sun in the kingdom of their Father. Who hath ears..., let him hear."

"In this harvest, wheat and tares are to be separated....The wheat are the...truly consecrated....The tares...call him Lord; but do not obey him....The wheat and tares together... constitute 'Christendom.'..." *C136*

"In the time of harvest, we must expect a... separating work, hitherto prohibited...." *C137*

"**The truth now due** is the sickle....The reapers...are the Lord's followers...." *C139*

"The wheat was not to be bundled....one of the effects of the harvest will be to gather and bind the tares before the burning...." C140

"...it is a mistake...to suppose that the burning of the tares in...fire, where there shall be wailing and gnashing of teeth...refers either to a literal fire, or to trouble beyond the present life...." *C145*

[see also Index: **Hell and Purgatory**]

"Nor does the destruction of the tares imply the destruction of all the **individuals**....rather a destruction of the false pretentions....

"They are the offspring of errors.

"If you would be one of the over-coming saints, you must now be one of the 'reapers' to thrust in the sickle of truth...." *C146*

See also Index: **Harvest**

OLD TESTAMENT PARABLES

AMOS 7-9 Chapters ZECH. 1:7 — 6:15 JUDGES 9:7-15: (The trees make a king)

"And when they told *it* to Jotham, he went and stood in the top of mount Gerizim, and lifted up his voice, and cried, and said unto them, Hearken unto me, ye men of Shechem, that God may hearken unto you. The trees went forth *on a time* to anoint a king over them; and they said unto the olive tree, Reign thou over us.

But the olive tree said unto them, Should I leave my fatness, wherewith by me they honour God and man, and go to be promoted over the trees? And the trees said to the fig tree, Come thou, *and* reign over us. But the fig tree said unto them, Should I forsake my sweetness, and my good fruit, and go to be promoted over the trees? Then said the trees unto the vine, Come thou, *and* reign over us. And the vine said unto them, Should I leave my wine, which cheereth God and man, and go to be promoted over the trees? Then said all the trees unto the

bramble, Come thou, *and* reign over us. And the bramble said unto the trees, If in truth ye anoint me king over you, *then* come *and* put your trust in my shadow: and if not, let fire come out of the bramble, and devour the cedars of Lebanon."

JUDGES 14:14: (Samson's Riddle)

"And he said unto them, Out of the eater came forth meat, and out of the strong came forth sweetness. And they could not in three days expound the riddle."

2 SAM. 12:1-6: (Poor man's ewe lamb)

"And the LORD sent Nathan unto David. And he came unto him, and said unto him, There were two men in one city; the one rich, and the other poor. The rich *man* had exceeding many flocks and herds: But the poor *man* had nothing, save one little ewe lamb, which he had bought and nourished up: and it grew up together with him, and with his children; it did eat of his own meat, and drank of his own cup, and lay in his bosom, and was unto him as a daughter. And there came a traveller unto the rich man, and he spared to take of his own flock and of his own herd, to dress for the wayfaring man that was come unto him; but took the poor man's lamb, and dressed it for the man that was come to him. And David's anger was greatly kindled against the man; and he said to Nathan, As the LORD liveth, the man that hath done this *thing* shall surely die: And he shall restore the lamb fourfold, because he did this thing, and because he had no pity."

2 SAM. 14:6-11: (Widow's two sons)

"And thy handmaid had two sons, and they two strove together in the field, and *there was* none to part them, but the one smote the other, and slew him. And, behold, the whole family is risen against thine handmaid, and they said, Deliver him that smote his brother, that we may kill him, for the life of his brother whom he slew; and we will destroy the heir also: and so they shall quench my coal which is left, and shall not leave to my husband *neither* name nor remainder upon the earth. And the king said unto the woman, Go to thine house, and I will give charge concerning thee. And the woman of Tekoah said unto the king, My lord, O king, the iniquity be on me, and on my father's house: and the king and his throne be guiltless. And the king said, Whosoever saith *ought* unto thee, bring him to me, and he shall not touch thee any more. Then said she, I pray thee, let the king remember the LORD thy God, that thou wouldest not suffer the revengers of blood to destroy any more, lest they destroy my son. And he said, As the LORD liveth, there shall not one hair of thy son fall to the earth."

1 KINGS 20:35-40: (Escaped prisoner)

"And a certain man of the sons of the prophets said unto his neighbour in the word of the LORD, Smite me, I pray thee. And the man refused to smite him. Then said he unto him, Because thou hast not obeyed the voice of the LORD, behold, as soon as thou art departed from me, a lion shall slay thee. And as soon as he was departed from him, a lion found him, and slew him. Then he found another man, and said, Smite me, I pray thee. And the man smote him, so that in smiting he wounded *him*. So the prophet departed, and waited for the king by the way, and disguised himself with ashes upon his face. And as the king passed by, he cried unto the king: and he said, Thy servant went out into the midst of the battle; and, behold, a man turned aside, and brought a man unto me, and said, Keep this man: if by any means he be missing, then shall thy life be for his life, or else thou shalt pay a talent of silver. And as thy servant was busy here and there, he was gone. And the king of Israel said unto him, So *shall* thy judgment *be*; thyself hast decided *it*."

1 KINGS 22:19-23: (Micaiah's vision)

"And he said, Hear thou therefore the word of the LORD: I saw the LORD sitting on his throne, and all the host of heaven standing by him on his right hand and on his left. And the LORD said, Who shall persuade Ahab, that he may go up and fall at Ramothgilead? And one said on this manner, and another said on that manner. And there came forth a spirit, and stood before the LORD, and said, I will persuade him. And the LORD said unto him, Wherewith? And he said, I will go forth, and I will be a lying spirit in the mouth of all his prophets. And he said, Thou shalt persuade *him*, and prevail also: go forth, and do so. Now therefore, behold, the LORD hath put a lying spirit in the mouth of all these thy prophets, and the LORD hath spoken evil concerning thee."

2 KINGS 14:9: (Thistle and Cedar)

"And Jehoash the king of Israel sent to Amaziah king of Judah, saying, The thistle that was in Lebanon sent to the cedar that was in Lebanon, saying, Give thy daughter to my son to wife: and there passed by a wild beast that *was* in Lebanon, and trode down the thistle."

PROV. 23:29-35: (The Drunkard)

"Who hath woe? who hath sorrow? who hath contentions? who hath babbling? who hath wounds without cause? who hath redness of eyes? They that tarry long at the wine; they that go to seek mixed wine. Look not thou upon the wine when it is red, when it giveth his colour in the cup, when it moveth itself aright. At the last it biteth like a serpent, and stingeth like an adder. Thine eyes shall behold strange

women, and thine heart shall utter perverse things. Yea, thou shalt be as he that lieth down in the midst of the sea, or as he that lieth upon the top of a mast. They have stricken me, *shalt thou say*, and I was not sick; they have beaten me, *and* I felt it not: when shall I awake? I will seek it yet again."

PROV. 24:30-34: (The Sluggard and his Vineyard)

"I went by the field of the slothful, and by the vineyard of the man void of understanding; And, lo, it was all grown over with thorns, *and* nettles had covered the face thereof, and the stone wall thereof was broken down. Then I saw, *and* considered it well: I looked upon *it, and* received instruction. Yet a little sleep, a little slumber, a little folding of the hands to sleep: So shall thy poverty come as one that travelleth; and thy want as an armed man."

ISA. 5:1-6: (Unfruitful vineyard)

"Now will I sing to my wellbeloved a song of my beloved touching

his vineyard. My wellbeloved hath a vineyard in a very fruitful hill: And he fenced it, and gathered out the stones thereof, and planted it with the choicest vine, and built a tower in the midst of it, and also made a winepress therein: and he looked that it should bring forth grapes, and it brought forth wild grapes. And now, O inhabitants of Jerusalem, and men of Judah, judge, I pray you, betwixt me and my vineyard. What could have been done more to my vineyard, that I have not done in it? wherefore, when I looked that it should bring forth grapes, brought it forth wild grapes? And now go to; I will tell you what I will do to my vineyard: I will take away the hedge thereof, and it shall be eaten up; *and* break down the wall thereof, and it shall be trodden down: And I will lay it waste: it shall not be pruned, nor digged; but there shall come up briers and thorns: I will also command the clouds that they rain no rain upon it."

ISA. 28:23-29: (The plowman)

"Give ye ear, and hear my voice; hearken, and hear my speech. Doth the plowman plow all day to sow? doth he open and break the clods of his ground? When he hath made plain the face thereof, doth he not cast abroad the fitches, and scatter the cummin, and cast in the principal wheat and the appointed barley and the rie in their place? For his God doth instruct him to discretion, and doth teach him. For the fitches are not threshed with a threshing instrument, neither is a cart wheel turned about upon the cummin; but the fitches are beaten out with a staff, and the cummin with a rod. Bread corn is bruised; because he will not ever be threshing it, nor break it *with* the wheel of his cart, nor bruise it *with* his horsemen. This also cometh forth

from the LORD of hosts, *which* is wonderful in counsel, *and* excellent in working."

EZEK. 17:3-10: (Eagles and vine)

"And say, Thus saith the Lord GOD; A great eagle with great wings, longwinged, full of feathers, which had divers colours, came unto Lebanon, and took the highest branch of the cedar: He cropped off the top of his young twigs, and carried it into a land of traffic; he set it in a city of merchants. He took also of the seed of the land, and planted it in a fruitful field; he placed *it* by great waters, *and* set it as a willow tree. And it grew, and became a spreading vine of low stature, whose branches turned toward him, and the roots thereof were under him: so it became a vine, and brought forth branches, and shot forth sprigs. There was also another great eagle with great wings and many feathers: and, behold, this vine did bend her roots toward him, and shot forth her branches toward him, that he might water it by the furrows of her plantation. It was planted in a good soil by great waters, that it might bring forth branches, and that it might bear fruit, that it might be a goodly vine. Say thou, Thus saith the Lord GOD; Shall it prosper? shall he not pull up the roots thereof, and cut off the fruit thereof, that it wither? it shall wither in all the leaves of her spring, even without great power or many people to pluck it up by the roots thereof. Yea, behold, *being* planted, shall it prosper? shall it not utterly wither, when the east wind toucheth it? it shall wither in the furrows where it grew."

EZEK. 19:2-9: (Lion's whelps)

"And say, What *is* thy mother? A lioness: she lay down among lions, she nourished her whelps among young lions. And she brought up one of her whelps: it became a young lion, and it learned to catch the prey; it devoured men. The nations also heard of him; he was taken in their pit, and they brought him with chains unto the land of Egypt. Now when she saw that she had waited, *and* her hope was lost, then she took another of her whelps, *and* made him a young lion. And he went up and down among the lions, he became a young lion, and learned to catch the prey, *and* devoured men. And he knew their desolate palaces, and he laid waste their cities; and the land was desolate, and the fulness thereof, by the noise of his roaring. Then the nations set against him on every side from the provinces, and spread their net over him: he was taken in their pit. And they put him in ward in chains, and brought him to the king of Babylon: they brought him into holds, that his voice should no more be heard upon the mountains of Israel."

EZEK. 23: (Two harlots) EZEK. 24:3-5: (Boiling Pot)

"And utter a parable unto the rebellious house, and say unto them, Thus saith the Lord GOD; Set on a pot, set *it* on, and also pour water into it: Gather the pieces thereof into it, *even* every good piece, the thigh, and the shoulder; fill *it* with the choice bones. Take the choice of the flock, and burn also the bones under it, and make it boil well, and let them seethe the bones of it therein."

EZEK. 31: (Cedar in Lebanon) EZEK. 32:1-16: (Sea Monster)

"And it came to pass in the twelfth year, in the twelfth month, in the *first* day of the month, *that* the word of the LORD came unto me, saying, Son of man, take up a lamentation for Pharaoh king of Egypt, and say unto him, Thou art like a young lion of the nations, and *thou art* as a whale in the seas: and thou camest forth with thy rivers, and troubledst the waters with thy feet, and fouledst their rivers. Thus saith the Lord GOD; I will therefore spread out my net over thee with a company of many people; and they shall bring thee up in my net. Then will I leave thee upon the land, I will cast thee forth upon the open field, and will cause all the fowls of the heaven to remain upon thee, and I will fill the beasts of the whole earth with thee. And I will lay thy flesh upon the mountains, and fill the valleys with thy height. I will also water with thy blood the land wherein thou swimmest, *even* to the mountains; and the rivers shall be full of thee. And when I shall put thee out, I will cover the heaven, and make the stars thereof dark; I will cover the sun with a cloud, and the moon shall not give her light. All the bright lights of heaven will I make dark over thee, and set darkness upon thy land, saith the Lord GOD. I will also vex the hearts of many people, when I shall bring thy destruction among the nations, into the countries which thou hast not known. Yea, I will make many people amazed at thee, and their kings shall be horribly afraid for thee, when I shall brandish my sword before them; and they shall tremble at every moment, every man for his own life, in the day of thy fall.

"For thus saith the Lord GOD; The sword of the king of Babylon shall come upon thee. By the swords of the mighty will I cause thy multitude to fall, the terrible of the nations, all of them: and they shall spoil the pomp of Egypt, and all the multitude thereof shall be destroyed. I will destroy also all the beasts thereof from beside the great waters; neither shall the foot of man trouble them any more, nor the hoofs of beasts trouble them. Then will I make their waters deep, and cause their rivers to run like oil, saith the Lord GOD. When I shall make the land of Egypt desolate, and the

country shall be destitute of that whereof it was full, when I shall smite all them that dwell therein, then shall they know that I *am* the LORD. This *is* the lamentation wherewith they shall lament her: the daughters of the nations shall lament her: they shall lament for her, *even* for Egypt, and for all her multitude, saith the Lord GOD."

EZEK. 34: (Shepherds and flock) EZEK. 37: (Valley of dry bones) EZEK. 47: (Living waters) ZECH. 11: (True and false shepherds)

PARENTAL OBLIGATIONS

"The possibilities connected with the birth of every child extend in directions of...good and evil...Surely, if mankind realized this matter from its true standpoint, it would lift the begetting of children from the plane of a passion and a relaxation of intellectual and moral principles to be a consecrated plane, in which the responsibilities of fatherhood and motherhood would be realized...to a degree attained...by very few. These thoughts of obligation would extend not only to the child,...but also to the Creator who intrusted to humanity this wonderful power of propagation..." *F519*

"...human fatherhood should be after the likeness of divine fatherhood, which provides for every son...'If a son, then an heir.' If a sound mind were in control, a man would not incur the responsibilities of husband, or of fatherhood a numerous family, with known inability to produce a healthy offspring, or to provide for them the necessities of life until able to do so for themselves." *R1080:5*; *R1413:4,5* "Is it no rather, the mission and privilege of such [consecrated] to feed and clothe, spiritually, God's little ones?" *R1080:6; 1413:4,5*

CONSECRATED PLANNING

1 COR. 7:38: "So then he that giveth *her* in marriage doeth well; but he that giveth *her* not in marriage doeth better."

"'Marriage is honorable in all,' but that we emphasize with him [Paul] that he that marrieth doeth *well*, but he that marrieth not doeth better. (1 Cor. 7:38; Heb. 13:4) So now we emphasize that he that brings forth natural children of the highest types does *well*, but he that co-operates with God for the begetting of spiritual sons does better." *R2902:3*

PRENATAL CONDITIONS

"If the prenatal surrounding conditions be those of debauchery and selfishness and meanness, is it any wonder that...the child...should be mean, ignoble, and with tendencies toward debauchery, selfishness, etc.?" F520

"During that period the mind of the mother, her thoughts, her moods, her sentiments, are all being impressed upon the embryo child; and not only so, but at such a period, the mother herself is specially susceptible to the influences surrounding her, many, if not all, of which are properly under the care of her husband." *F520*

"...it is true that 'I was born in sin, shapen in iniquity...' and...the Lord's people...should realize the possibility of alleviating in some measure the stains and weaknesses which belong to the fallen race....They should see to it that

their children are born with noble characters as they can possibly bestow upon them...." *F521*

"...the time to begin to train a child is at the moment of its begettal, and that a poorly begotten child needs to have trained out of it the weaknesses and foolishness and sin which were impressed upon it before birth....The Lord's people...should realize the possibility of alleviating in some measure the stains and weaknesses which belong to the fallen race.... Fallen they will still be, and a Savior they will still need...." *F521*

"The moment of begettal should not only be one of mutual love and respect, but one of reverence for the Creator and of appreciation of the God-like power of procreation bestowed upon

them. It should be, additionally, an occasion of prayer for the divine blessing; and...subsequently, the interests of the child should be conserved in all of life's arrangements ...it would be a special occasion for the exercise. of the graces of the Spirit, which should previously have been cultivated to a considerable extent...." *F522*

"...one, unfavorably circumstanced...should the more earnestly in prayer seek to have the heart filled with the peace of God which passeth all understanding, and to let that rule continually." *F524*

"...the foundation for greatness must be laid before birth." *R2902:1*

"A child born under such circumstances of prayer and devotion to the Lord, could not, under natural laws, fail to be noble minded and religiously inclined....The imperfect cannot even grasp or picture perfect things, but it can approximate them, and in that same proportion it can impress that approximation of character upon the offspring." *R4090:3*

CHILD TRAINING

PROV. 22:6: "Train up a child in the way he should go: and when he is old, he will not depart from it."

PROV. 13:24: "He that spareth his rod hateth his son: but he that loveth him chasteneth him betimes."

HEB. 12:7,8: "If ye endure chastening, God dealeth with you as with sons; for what son is he whom the father chasteneth not? But if ye be without chastisement, whereof all are partakers, then are ye bastards, and not sons."

"Nothing is further from our intention than to urge indiscriminate and frequent use of the rod in the training of children. We have cited these scriptures, however, to show the mistaken position of those who hold that corporal chastisement by parents, even when necessary, is wrong. The home that is **ruled** with the rod must of necessity be an unhappy home. The homes of the New Creatures should

be ruled by love not by the rod. The rod is to be kept merely as an occasional necessity for enforcing the rules of love; and when it is administered it is to be wielded by the hand of love and never by the hand of anger. The New Creatures, governed by the spirit of a sound mind, learn gradually that order is one of heaven's first laws, and hence that it should be one of the first elements and characteristics of the homes of the New Creatures." *F524*

"Order, however, does not of necessity mean absolute quiet, else the wilderness and the silent cities of the dead would be the only places where order would rule. Order may mean joy as well as peace, happiness as well as rest, liberty as well as law. Order means law — with New Creatures the Golden Rule and the Law of Love governing the head of the house and his helpmate, as well as governing the children, making of the parents ensamples to the children in all the Christian graces. Law, even the Law of Love, means rewards and punishments, and in the family the parents have the dispensing of these. According to their realized weaknesses they, in turn, need direction from the Heavenly Father that they may glorify him not only in their own hearts and wills, but that their homes shall be earthly ensamples of the homes of the righteous, the homes of those who have the mind of Christ.

"Their rewards for their children should be in the provision of such comforts and blessings as circumstances, under control of a recognized providence, may permit. Their punishments may be more or less severe according to the wilfulness of the child, but never according to the standard of justice, never in the attempt to mete out to the child the full measure of what its conduct might justly demand — because we are not under justice ourselves, but under mercy, under love, and are to show mercy, not only in our dealings with others, but specially in our dealings with our own children, whose imperfections and blemishes are, doubtless, traceable in a greater or less degree to ourselves and our forebears. Love may sometimes punish by the refusal of a kiss, as it may sometimes reward by the giving of a kiss; it may sometimes for a season banish the unruly one from the company of the obedient and from the pleasures provided for them. The Law of Love may sometimes even exercise the rod of discipline to the extent of denying supper or of giving merely the necessities, bread and water, and withholding some of the additional comforts and luxuries; or may sometimes wield the literal rod of chastisement to enforce obedience, and thus preserve the order and blessings of the home, not only for the obedient children, but also for the chastised one, whom it hopes thus to bless and bring into full accord." *F525, 526*

"The thought seems to be that if the plastic mind of a child be properly cared for, properly impressed with the

principles of righteousness, that impress cannot be wholly effaced even though the child might temporarily try forbidden paths of sin." *R3598:2*

"...the most lasting impressions of life are frequently received before ten years of age...and the lessons should begin when the child is a month old — lessons of loving obedience to law and order to the parental authority as representing the still higher power of the Creator." *R3598:3*

"The child who learns to remember and reverence his Creator, who learns also of his own imperfections and how they were incurred and that the death penalty is the curse resting upon himself and all the world, blighting every earthly prospect, will be in a fair way to receive the message of salvation...to learn of how God in his love has provided Jesus...." *R3608:4*

"We will admit that ours is a very difficult day in which to properly rear children. Nevertheless, instead of making the parent lax and indifferent in respect to his obligations, it should lead him to the greater diligence and to the more earnestly seeking of wisdom...that he may so discharge his duty toward the child as to bless it...with a proper foundation of character...." *R3711:6*

"The hopefulness of youth naturally gilds the future with glory; and with ardent spirits, undisciplined, unrestrained, and self-conscious, it plunges into new schemes, sanguine of the success of its theories until by and by, its bright visions fade...." *R2024:2*

JUSTIFICATION OF CHILDREN

1 COR. 7:14: "For the unbelieving husband is sanctified by the wife, and the unbelieving wife is sanctified by the husband: else were your children unclean; but now are they holy."

"The unbelieving husband is sanctified by the (believing) wife, and the unbelieving wife is sanctified by the (believing) husband (in respect to the subject under consideration, viz., the offspring of their wedlock;) else were your children unholy (sinners under condemnation, unjustified, unrelated to God, aliens from his care, and blessing); but now (in view of this provision of divine grace) are they holy (that is, in a justified or acceptable state ['tentatively justified state' (*1916 edition*)] with God through which he may

treat them not as enemies)." *F532*

CONSECRATION OF CHILDREN

PROV. 8:17: "...those that seek me early shall find me."

"...the Scriptures make very plain the fact that they may and should be consecrated to the Lord by their parents before their birth or even their begetting,...." *R1671:3*

Examples of such consecrated children:

LUKE 1:16, 15, 44, 66, 80: (John the Baptist) "And many of the children of Israel shall he turn to the Lord their God....For he shall be great in the sight of the Lord, and shall drink neither wine nor strong drink; and he shall be filled with the Holy Ghost [Spirit], even from his mother's womb....For, lo, as soon as the voice of thy salutation sounded in mine ears, the babe leaped in my womb for joy....And all they that heard *them* laid *them* up in their hearts, saying, What manner of child shall this be! And the hand of the Lord was with him.... And the child grew, and waxed strong in spirit, and was in the deserts till the day of his showing unto Israel."

GAL. 1:15; ACTS 26:4,5: (Paul) "But when it pleased God, who separated me from my mother's womb, and called *me* by his grace,.... My manner of life from my youth, which was at the first among mine own nation at Jerusalem, know all the Jews; Which knew me from the beginning, if they would testify, that after the most straitest sect of our religion I lived a Pharisee."

2 TIM. 1:5; 3:15: (Timothy) "When I call to remembrance the unfeigned faith that is in thee, which dwelt first in thy grandmother Lois, and thy mother Eunice; and I am persuaded that in thee also....And that from a child thou hast known the holy scriptures, which are able to make thee wise unto salvation through faith which is in Christ Jesus."

1 SAM. 1:11,24-28; 2:11,18,19: (Samuel) "And she vowed a vow, and said, O LORD of hosts, if thou wilt indeed look on the affliction of thine handmaid, and remember me, and not forget thine handmaid, but wilt give unto thine handmaid a man child, then I will give him unto the LORD all the days of his life, and there shall no razor come upon his head....And when she had weaned him, she took him up with her, with three bullocks, and one ephah of flour, and a bottle of wine, and brought him unto the house of the LORD in Shiloh: and the child *was* young. And they slew a bullock, and brought the child to Eli. And she said, Oh my lord, *as* thy soul liveth, my lord, I *am* the woman that stood by thee here, praying unto the LORD. For this child I prayed; and the LORD hath given me my petition which I asked of him: Therefore also I have lent him to the LORD; as long as he liveth he shall be lent to the LORD. And he worshipped the LORD there....And Elkanah went to Ramah to his house. And the child did minister unto the LORD before Eli the priest....But Samuel ministered before the LORD, *being* a child, girded with a linen ephod. Moreover his mother made him a little coat, and brought it to him from year to year, when she came up with her husband to offer the yearly sacrifice." *R1671:3,6*

"Like the Apostle Paul (**Gal. 1:15**) Moses seems to have been chosen before he was born." *R1651:2*

"...godliness...with the dawn of intelligence this disposition should begin to be cultivated and warmed into vital, active piety, so that at a very tender age the little ones may intelligently ratify the parental covenant of entire consecration to God. This they should be expected and led to do as early as possible." *R1671:3*

"The consecrated parent should consecrate to the Lord...all of his children; and from infancy should be instilling into their minds and hearts that the proper course for all of God's people is to devote themselves in largest possible measure to the divine service. They should be taught to regard all of life's affairs with a view to rendering their all to his service in any possible capacity; and to pray that the Lord would accept and use their time, talent, influence — all — in his service...." *R3148:3*

PROV. 10:22: "The blessing of the LORD, it maketh rich, and he addeth no sorrow with it."

"Many seemingly consecrated people hold back their most precious possessions, their children, from the Lord, and incline to devote them to some worldly calling in life — medicine, law, industry. **Do not such parents know it is their privilege to present themselves to the Lord and all they have, including their children?**" *R4091:2*

"The fact that the children have been formally devoted to God in public may assist the parents in fulfilling their obligations and later assist the children as they shall come to a knowledge of the fact that they were thus committed to divine care by their parents." *R4823:6*

"We suggested that, later in life, children coming to know that they have been devoted to the Lord in infancy might to some extent gain a measure of blessing...." *R4862:3*

"The Lord did not accept any of the infants of Palestine to be his disciples, nor has he called infants to be his disciples since." *R2766:2*

DISCIPLINE Angry Words

EPH. 6:4: "And, ye fathers, provoke not your children to wrath: but bring them up in the nurture and admonition of the Lord."

"...the new creation....should not use angry or harsh words to their children....Their 'speech should be with grace,' with love, with kindness, even when reproving....A hasty blow...might do injury to the child not only physically...— but also wound its affections, develop in it a fear of the parent instead of love, which should be considered the only proper groundwork on which the obedience and order of the

home are built....The parent owes it to himself as a part of his own discipline, as well as to his child, that he shall never inflict a punishment which he has not sufficiently considered, and coolly and dispassionately found to be not **more**, but **less**, than justice might properly demand. He owes it to himself also that the child shall fully understand...the necessity for the preservation of order...continue...; also that the parent has no anger toward him, no malice, no hatred, nothing but sympathy and love and the desire to do him good." *F526*

HEB. 12:7,8: ***Diag.***: "If you endure Discipline, GOD deals with you as with Sons; for is there any Son whom a Father does not discipline? But if you are without Discipline, of which all have become Partakers, then truly you are Spurious, and not Sons."

PROV. 19:18: "Chasten thy son while there is hope, and let not thy soul spare for his crying."

PROV. 22:15: "Foolishness *is* bound in the heart of a child; *but* the rod of correction shall drive it far from him."

PROV. 23:13,14: "Withhold not correction from the child: for *if*

thou beatest him with the rod, he shall not die. Thou shalt beat him with the rod, and shalt deliver his soul from hell."

PROV. 29:15: "The rod and reproof give wisdom: but a child left *to himself* bringeth his mother to shame."

PROV. 29:17: "Correct thy son, and he shall give thee rest; yea, he shall give delight unto thy soul."

COL. 3:21: "Fathers, provoke not your children *to anger*, lest they be discouraged."

"Beginning early the parents' love combined with firmness should so move the child's mind that it would have absolute confidence in the parents' love and in their loyalty to God's regulations in all of life's interests. To such a child the look of sadness and regret or the tear of sorrow on the parent's face will be much more efficacious than many blows and much violent language." *R4092:1*

EXPLAINING AUTHORITY

"Christian parents...should read to their children from the Word, the divine sanction of parental authority...that a parent shall train up a child in the way he should go; and additionally he should point out the necessity for this — because we all are fallen and unable to come up to the divine standard, etc.; that all these means and corrections are necessary as helps to the counteraction of evil tendencies under which we have been born...." *F527*

SENSE OF JUSTICE IN CHILDREN

"Let us recall, too, how keen was our sense of justice when we were children — how we mentally approved parental discipline when we understood its motive to be for the development of character, but how we resented it if we did not see a principle of justice, if we were punished beyond a reasonable chastisement comporting with the offense." *F527*

BUILDING CHARACTER

"...the training of a child does not consist solely....respecting its outward deportment... but...chiefly in the establishment of **right principles in the heart**....The law of love, of generosity, meekness, patience, gentleness, forbearance, should be inculcated....The child that is taught to be selfish, or one whose natural selfishness is not brought kindly to his attention (though not in the presence of others) and lovingly reproved and corrected, is missing a most important lesson...." *F528*

TRAINING FROM INFANCY

"Many of the heartaches of well-intentioned parents over the waywardness....of their children might have been spared them had they done their duty by those children in infancy....The parent who is properly training his child...will be getting valuable experiences for himself....The child will expect to **find** him illustrating...the principles he seeks to inculcate...." *F528*

CLEANLINESS

"...every Christian home should be as nearly absolutely clean as possible...and as free from moral obliquity and defilement as earthen vessels can be made. Every child should be able to...recall the voice of prayer at the family altar, the kind words of father or mother..., and the general spirit of peace and restfulness...." *F529*

BAD TRAINING

"If in an angry voice the parent calls it 'a little rascal' and the feelings of the child, at first hurt by such reflections against its character, become toughened, it gradually learns to glory in being a little rascal. When it first hears the angry and impatient mother exclaim,...'I'll break your back!' no doubt there is a measure of terror... but it is not long in learning that these are idle threats....Much of the original instincts of love is driven out. It finds the parent equally untruthful in respect to promises....thus the child is taught to lie, to threaten, to promise, to deceive...." *F530*

MIXED MARRIAGES

1 COR. 7:39: "The wife is bound by the law as long as her husband liveth; but if her husband be dead, she is at liberty to be married to whom she will; only in the Lord."

"The fact of the one being a new creature, and the other an unbeliever, or unconsecrated does not alter the divine arrangement in respect to the headship of the family. This still devolves upon the husband, and if a new creature he must direct in respect to the affairs of his family as best as he is able under the circumstances, and guided by the promised wisdom from on high. If the wife be the new creature, her soundness of mind, devotion to principles of righteousness, her gentleness, meekness, thoughtfulness, carefulness, should make her such a jewel in the family, should cause her light so to shine before her husband, that he might take pleasure in giving her practically the full control of the children....Any...authority she should exercise, however would be delegated by her husband...." *F532*

"Likewise the husband, letting his light shine should expect that ere long his wife, as well as his children, would discern his difference from irreligious man....Nevertheless, if these results...do not come...remember that the Lord's counsel forewarned us..." *F533*

MATT. 10:36: "...A man's foes *shall be* they of his own household."

RECTIFYING PAST MISTAKES

"Some...appeal for advice, saying: 'In my early Christian experience in the nominal church I was mistaught....During this time my children were born....Now my children are wild, wayward, selfish, disobedient....How may I rectify so far as possible my neglect of the past?'" *F534*

"Our reply...is that...these trials may serve for our polishing....

"As for the duty of such a parent, it would...be to begin by teaching them the lessons they should have been taught in infancy....this instruction should be given with great love and forbearance and patience, which would be a notable lesson to the child....According to the age of the child and other related circumstances ...results should be waited for with patience; and such **restrictions** as seemed absolutely necessary should be applied with gentleness and consideration and explanations. Parental authority should be established kindly, not rudely. Children who have been in the habit of ruling the household should not be expected to become good and obedient, instantaneously." *F535*

OLDER CHILDREN

"Two principles should guide:...love for the Lord and for the children, and...the Word of God, as the source of authority

and instruction, should be continually appealed to....Parents should learn to treat children with consideration....They should realize that

the parent respects their consciences and their judgments, and endeavors to deal with them in harmony with these elements of character. Especially as the child reaches a condition of manhood or womanhood should his or her reason be appealed to and in the same proportion force and corporal chastisement should be abandoned." *F536*

"...when...manhood or womanhood is reached the child instinctively feels that he...should no longer be treated as a child, but as a companion; should no longer be **commanded** in anything, but requested; should no longer be **required** to give a strict account in detail of all moneys earned, but should be permitted a larger discretion and personality than previously. Wise, just, loving parents should...seek from that period...to deal with the child as with a younger brother or sister — as adviser and best friend...." *F536*

"There is probably no time in life more fraught with danger than when the young birds leave the home nest and launch out to try their own wings and to carve out their own fortunes. And if they can go with a father's and a mother's blessing...what a power is there for good!" *R2025:4*

OBLIGATIONS TO PARENTS

"We do not mean that...that the obligations of the child towards the parent cease when the years of maturity are reached....A child is obligated to the maintenance of the parent so long as the parent shall live, and the child shall have the strength to provide....Properly appealed to, the provision should be the more promptly and lovingly made. The obligation of the child to aged parents for their support corresponds exactly with the responsibility of the parent for the care and reasonable support of the child in infancy and immaturity..." *F537*

HIGHER EDUCATION

"If...the parents found that they had a child of very brilliant mind, and if...financial and other considerations opened the way for a collegiate course...they might well consider whether or not these indications were the Lord's directions in respect to their duty....Nevertheless, in sending him to college...they should feel...a great fear, lest this outward polish in the wisdom of this world should efface all the polish of faith and character and heart which they...had been bestowing upon it.

"They should consider well whether their child was so thoroughly rooted and grounded in character, in principle, in loyalty to the Lord and his Word, that the infidel

tendencies of the schools....and their...evolution, etc., could never displace...faith in the Lord and in his Word." *F538*

EDUCATION

"...the Christian parent who discerns present truth should encourage his child not to strive for the higher education; because (1) to qualify himself for a profession would be to put before himself a temptation in that direction which would last through life: (2) because the higher education of the present day in all colleges is so impregnated with....evolution...and higher criticism that the strong possibility is that, like others he would fall into skepticism, which will kill his devotion to the Lord, and he could only be induced to serve the Lord, even outwardly, by an honorable position....— if, indeed, it left him anything but morality as a substitute for religion!...the most talented and best educated have nothing worthy a place on the Lord's altar....Some...are glad to leave...schools to engage in the much grander and more important service of the gospel, as colporteur-evangelists...." *R3148:3*

"Many seemingly consecrated people hold back their most precious possessions their children, from the Lord, and incline to devote them to some worldly calling in life— medicine, law, industry....What a great mistake! Do not such parents know that it is their privilege to present themselves to the Lord and all they have, including their children?...Can they not realize...that greater happiness would accompany a devoted life, even though spent in poverty, than could come through any other course, even though surrounded by every luxury?" *R4091:2*

USEFUL PLAY

"It is a mistaken idea that...that which is useful is a drudgery...the kindergarten is a movement...in...a very right direction — the making of instruction pleasurable....And all subsequent pleasure...should be somewhat along the same line — nothing should be approved that is merely a waste of time and energy...." *F539*

"The little girl takes pleasure in...'playing house.' The little boy plays 'shop,'...a school teacher or a doctor. All such plays are in the right direction....As they grow older they should...consider it as a part of their recreation to help keep the home in order or to assist in the real store....

"Economy of time as well as of means should be inculcated from infancy...." *F540*

EXERCISE OF THE CHILD MIND

"As the child grows and realizes how much there is in the world to learn, he should be encouraged to read,

but...should be taught to discriminate wisely between the 'chips' of fiction and the 'apples' of knowledge...." *F541*

EVIL SUGGESTIONS

"...when the mind and the imagination have been opened...to the reception of unclean thoughts and...obscene pictures, who shall tell the depraving effect of such..." *F542*

SCRIPTURAL INSTRUCTION

DEUT. 6:7: "And thou shalt teach them diligently unto thy children, and shalt talk of them when thou sittest in thine house, and when thou walkest by the way, and when thou liest down, and when thou risest up."

"The religious element of the child's mind requires special training, and...the Christian parent should be his tutor...." *F542*

"Seeds sown in childhood...take deep root and yield most profusely. It is a great mistake to suppose that spiritual development must wait until carnality has taken deep root, so that the remainder of life will be one of degradation or a fierce battle to overcome...." *R1810:6*

"...a minor child, either of whose parents is consecrated,...would have a right to look for answers to his prayers...." *R5833:2*

PRIMARY DUTY

"The religious training of children should be left in the hands of the parents...; and neither church nor state has the right...to

supplant the parent...." *R1191:4*

"It is a mistake frequently made to suppose that children cannot appreciate religious principles.... Those parents who consider their children to be a little garden-spot, and who faithfully plant in these the seeds of justice and love and patience and meekness and gentleness,...to the extent that they may be able, will be sure to find a rich reward in the grace of character that will result...." *R2903:2*

"They should be taught...to pray that the Lord would accept and use their time, talent, influence — all — in his service..." *R3148:3*

"The experience of Samuel and our own...and that of many others assure us that some of the deepest religious sentiments may be experienced as early as 12 years of age. This should be watched for by the parents and should be cultivated with much...care...and if he neglect his responsibilities he is culpable and will surely suffer, not only disappointment in respect to his children...but...also in that he will be the loser of certain blessing in his own heart...." *R4091:4*

"The parents are...the priests...in respect to their children. To whatever extent they shirk this...or to whatever extent the honor of this station is ignored, their influence over the child is lost..." *R5287:5*

NOMINAL SUNDAY SCHOOLS

"Sunday schools have been injurious to Christian parents, in that they have led them to consider themselves relieved of the parental responsibility placed upon them by the Lord. The Sunday School teacher is often thoroughly incapable for such a responsibility, and their proper training — seldom one who professes entire consecration....Such a teacher is given the place of the parent in respect to the most important of all parental duties....The parent who diligently instructs and guides his children in moral and spiritual matters...receives a great blessing...himself...." *F544*

"If the child sees that the parent venerates God and his Word, and is instructed from this source, he has before him an object lesson which should be valuable to him throughout life....

"If...the child be sent to a Sunday School teacher to receive instruction respecting the Bible, the lesson to the infant mind is that the parent is incapable of giving this instruction...." *F545*

"The parent...would feel bound to exemplify his own teaching....and in case of failure in any special degree, would get a blessing from making a confession of his failure before those cognizant of it, even if they were his own children...." *F546*

"...for us to deliberately lead their young feet into the snares of the Adversary, and to assist in entangling them in sectarianism,...would be a crime...against them and against the truth...." *R2766:3*

ECCLESIA SUNDAY SCHOOLS

"If Sunday schools are established for the instruction of the young in moral and doctrinal matters, and if the parents see fit to make use of the same, it is their privilege....But surely this with the hours of family intercourse are quite sufficient." *R1191:5*

ECCL. 12:1: "Remember now thy Creator in the days of thy youth, while the evil days come not..."

"Those evil days of bitter disappointment and despair never will come to those who in youth commit their ways unto the Lord and trust him to guide their paths." *R1671:6*

"...from the time he reaches ten to twelve years of age he should be encouraged to consider the propriety of a full consecration to the Lord — the period of immaturity...is

through the parent, but that in proportion as maturity of mind is reached, the Lord expects a personal consecration...." *F529*

"The age at which an intelligent faith in the Lord might be exercised and the time, therefore, at which...a covenant of full consecration to the Lord's service could be...entered into, must vary with the individuality of the children." *R2766:2*

"...the heart should be given to the Lord in the days of youth, before the evil days and evil experiences have come; before one shall have learned so much of evil that the remainder of life would not suffice to eradicate it." *R4838:5*

SERVICE OF CHILDREN

"We have known saintly mothers to unintentionally lay snares for the feet of their children by introducing them to ways of the world in which they themselves would not walk. Their...sentiment was, 'I must not put upon these...the weight of the cross, nor expect of them saintship; if ever they become truly consecrated saints of God they will then know the trials of the "narrow way"...'...We hold that the only real pleasure and substantial joy in the world is to be found in the narrow way of self-sacrifice." *R4838:1*

"We have known some that we considered quite competent both to believe and to consecrate at as early an age as fourteen..." *R2766:2*

"...teach them to appreciate the privilege of rendering little sacrifices of play, etc. in his service. We should not force them, but teach them both by word and example to appreciate such opportunities as great privileges; nor should we expect them to sacrifice **all** their play-time. Endeavor to have their services like your own, free-will offerings." *R1133:1,2*

"It has been suggested...to have children all over the country...act as colporteurs...." *R1133:2*

CHILDREN AT MEETINGS

"We should...see that we do not take children who are not properly trained. Thus we shall not be in danger of annoying others. No one has a right to take children to the meeting, when their presence would be detrimental to the spiritual interests of others. We believe however that a way could be devised whereby the child could be left at home until of such age as not to disturb the class. The majority of parents become so accustomed to the ways of their children that they do not realize that others are being annoyed...." *R5187:2,4*

CONFIDENCE OF CHILDREN

"If the confidence of a child in the parent have its roots in a recognition...that the parent is a...child of God...and...the spirit of love... pervade the home...the many questions... presenting themselves...— religious, moral, secular, social, and physical — will all be carried most naturally to such a parent." *F547*

"Confidential questions should never be treated lightly nor confidences broken....We do not mean that all questions should be answered in full (regardless of age); a very partial answer may be wisest sometimes...." *F548*

OBEDIENCE

"A proper observance of the Lord's words...

JAS. 5:12: "'Let your yea be yea; and *your* nay, nay....' (Cf. Matt.

5:37)

"Would save many parents much trouble.... From earliest infancy the child should learn obedience, and that without a repetition of the command...." *F548*

THE POWER OF SUGGESTION

"Few recognize the importance of the human **will** in respect to health and sickness, joy and pain, obedience and disobedience, right doing and wrong doing — indeed in respect to every act and word and thought....The child-mind is specially susceptible to impressions and suggestions...." *F549*

"...the mother who every morning greets her child with a cheery face and voice, gives her child a **happy** suggestion, good for it both mentally and physically....

"Discontent...would find little to stimulate its growth in a family in which all were intent on giving happifying suggestions to themselves and each other." *F550*

"On moral questions suggestions are equally potent for good or evil...." *F552*

"It is the mistake of some to be less zealous in preaching and exemplifying the gospel in their own families than among those outside of them." *R1882:5*

"Every parent should recognize himself as having incurred grave responsibilities toward his children, not only for their temporal necessities, but equally for their mental and moral training and the parents who are most faithful in the discharge of this God-appointed responsibility are themselves most successfully running the race: for they will find that every effort to make clear the divine plan to the child will bring clearness and force to the parents' mind, and every attempt to inculcate the spirit of the Lord, the spirit of holiness, the spirit of truth, will be sure to bring a

blessing, not only upon the heart of the child, but upon the heart of the parent." *R2766:3*

"The boy or girl who has had a proper training by godly parents, especially in respect to the hopes set before us in the gospel, has advantage every way over youthful companions who have no specific object and motive in life, who lack the ballast of the divine promises and are driven hither and thither by the changing winds of time, generally into folly and often into sin...." *R2886:1*

MOTHER'S ROLE

"The divine arrangement by which the mothers of the human family are considerably separated from the selfishness and strife of business and politics, so that if the mother will, she can expend her energies in the training of her children according to the highest ideals before her mind, has undoubtedly been a great blessing to the race in various ways." *R3607:6*

"...to her must fall the major part of the responsibility for the training of the children...." *R3608:2*

DISOBEDIENCE

"In the event of...disobedience...it should be admonished from the standpoint of sympathy and confidence in its good intentions. 'I...am sure this...was...the result of following the example of others and will sufficiently exerting **her will**....I believe that this time I shall...not punish you...except that...I will give you no good night kiss — just to impress the matter upon your mind my dear. Now you'll try harder next time to exercise self-control....I am sure you will!' Next time take the matter still more seriously, but never question the child's proper **desires** or **intentions**. 'I do not doubt your good intentions, but I am sorry...that you do not exercise your **will power**...as I am sure you could do....It is necessary...that I...punish you, though it would be far more to my pleasure to command you....the matter affects... your entire future, for if you do not now learn to say "No" to temptation you will fail also in the more important...question of life....But I am confident that my love and confidence and instructions will yet bear fruit....Our very defeats...may become helps to us if we but set our wills the more firmly for the right. We learn to be especially on guard...where...we are weak. Let us bow before the Lord and ask his blessing, that this failure may be a...lesson, and ask his assistance in laying it, to heart, that your conduct may be more pleasing to him when next you are assailed by temptation.'" *F553*

GOOD SUGGESTIONS IN MOTTOS

"All suggestions should take into consideration...

PSA. 111:10: "'The fear of the Lord is the beginning of wisdom....'

"Scripture text cards in every room...should continually remind parents and children...that the Lord's will is the only standard recognized, that the Lord is cognizant of all our doings...and that God is 'for us' (Rom. 8:31)...and for all who are seeking righteousness in humility." *F554*

ROM. 8:31: "What shall we then say to these things? If God *be* for us, who *can be* against us?"

PROV 15:3: "The eyes of the LORD *are* in every place, beholding the evil and the good."

1 PET. 3:12: "For the eyes of the Lord *are* over the righteous, and his ears *are open* unto their prayers: but the face of the Lord *is* against them that do evil."

PARENTAL EXAMPLE

GEN. 21:15,16: "And the water was spent in the bottle, and she cast the child under one of the shrubs. And she went, and sat her down over against *him* a good way off, as it were a bowshot: for she said, Let me not see the death of the child. And she sat over against *him*, and lift up her voice, and wept."

"The best provision which parents can make for their children is to give them, by precept and example, faithful instruction in *righteousness*." *R1963:5*

"Let them see both in your example and teaching...there is no compromise with the world...the hollowness of worldly pleasures...the peace and joy of those who have left the world to follow Christ." *R1672:1*

"The experience and wisdom of riper years are — the safeguards of youth, and specially in the case of parental experience and wisdom, which parental love is ever desirous of utilizing for the benefit of sons and daughters, to protect them from the ills of life of which they have learned either by experience or observation. Youth, alas! too often disregards this divinely provided safeguard until by and by it learns its folly by bitter experience." *R2024:2*

IN THE TIME OF TROUBLE

"There is just one promise which seems to hold during that time of trouble...

ZEPH. 2:3: "'...seek righteousness, seek meekness: it may be ye

shall be hid in the day of the LORD'S anger.'

"Christian parents...should remember that they themselves, on the other side the veil, will have still as good an opportunity of watching over the interests of their loved ones as they now have, and a much better opportunity than now to exercise a protecting care over them...." *F555*

"The best provision...for the New Creation to make for their children....is in their proper training...." *F556*

1 TIM. 6:6: "...godliness with contentment is great gain ['great riches']."

"The saints would best make no...effort to hide their children, knowing that it would be folly....If our children...need the purging, we should not wish to have them escape it. If they do not need it, we may be rest assured that the Lord will permit the glorified members of his body, his Church, to care for their children and friends during that trouble and to succor them from that would not be to their benefit. What more could we ask than that we should be their ministering guardians far more able to help them than if we were with them in the flesh?" *R1963:4,5*

"...give them by precept and example, faithful instruction in *righteousness*....we should endeavor so to train our children that, when the trouble comes, they will be both able and willing to counsel others to righteousness and the avoidance of carnal warfare, rather than selfishly think merely of their own safety. Children should be encouraged to such stability of character, in combination with faith in God, that they will, under any stress, act up to a high...nobility." *R1963:5,6*

"...they will arise children and develop. The government, etc., of children will be much easier when the curse begins to roll away." *R201:4*

AMUSEMENTS

"Babies are spoiled by being kept in a constant excitement of amusement until their contentment is destroyed and they will cry for amusement. This thought of amusement continues during childhood, when the child should be entertaining itself investigating the affairs of life and asking explanations of its parents or of books....Members of the new creation should from first to last train their offspring...to be actors in the great drama of life, to deprecate shams and to seek to perform as great acts of usefulness and benevolence on the world stage as their talents and opportunities will permit." *F556*

"...each should be taught that it is a shame and a sin to kill time....the child who learns to waste time...is being permanently injured....

"...should be taught that any waste is reprehensible, and that hoarding in a miserly manner is likewise censurable...." *R3598:5*

DUTY

EXOD. 20:12: "Honour thy father and thy mother...."

"The duty to 'honor' parents, however extends far beyond the obligation to obey them, which specially applies to childhood,...The duty... extends from the cradle to the grave and when the last honors are paid to the lifeless forms of parents, they should still hold an honored place in the archives of memory.

"Nothing is more beautiful in youth than preferment and deference to riper years....Lev. 19:32." *R2024:3*

LEV. 19:32: "Thou shalt rise up before the hoary head, and honour the face of the old man, and fear thy God: I *am* the LORD."

MARRIAGE OF CHILDREN

"...those who marry do well but those who marry not do better. This advice, however, is not applicable to...unconsecrated children. Concerning the latter the apostle writes:

1 TIM. 5:14: "I will therefore that the younger women marry, bear children, guide the house, give none occasion to the adversary to speak reproachfully." *F557*

"Wise parents will not attempt to frustrate the natural desire of their children for marriage, but, co-operating wisely, will endeavor...to aid them in mating properly. Let not the indulgent parent forget that mating should be on the same plane — unbeliever with unbeliever — justified with justified, sanctified with sanctified...." *F558*

"The Apostle's teaching respecting marriage (1 Cor. 7:27-40) should be brought to their attention...." *R3148:3*

1 COR. 7:27-40: "Art thou bound unto a wife? seek not to be loosed. Art thou loosed from a wife? seek not a wife. But and if thou marry, thou hast not sinned; and if a virgin marry, she hath not sinned. Nevertheless such shall have trouble in the flesh: but I spare you. But this I say, brethren, the time *is* short: it remaineth, that both they that have wives be as though they had none; And they that weep, as though they wept not; and they that rejoice, as though they rejoiced not; and they that buy, as though they possessed not; And they that use this world, as not abusing *it*: for the fashion of this world passeth away.

"But I would have you without carefulness. He that is unmarried careth for the things that belong to the Lord, how he may please the Lord: But he that is married careth for the things that are of the world, how he may please *his* wife. There is difference *also* between a wife and a virgin. The unmarried woman careth for the things of the Lord, that she may be holy both in body and in spirit: but she that is married careth for the things of the world, how she may please *her* husband. And this I speak for your own profit; not that I may cast a snare upon you, but for that which is

comely, and that ye may attend upon the Lord without distraction. But if any man think that he behaveth himself uncomely toward his virgin, if she pass the flower of *her* age, and need so require, let him do what he will, he sinneth not: let them marry. Nevertheless he that standeth steadfast in his heart, having no necessity, but hath power over his own will, and hath so decreed in his heart that he will keep his virgin, doeth well. So then he that giveth *her* in marriage doeth well; but he that giveth *her* not in marriage doeth better. The wife is bound by the law as long as her husband liveth; but if her husband be dead, she is at liberty to be married to whom she will; only in the Lord. But she is happier if she so abide, after my judgment: and I think also that I have the Spirit of God."

CHILDREN'S HEALTH

"...as clean bodies will assist their children to clean minds, so healthy bodies are valuable adjuncts to healthy minds....Pure air, pure water, pure food, and pure exercise, mental and physical are at the foundation of the best utilization of what we receive from our parents and have transmitted to our children." *F559*

"Every parent...should see to it that every child has some prescribed work to do proportioned to its strength and years, and

that he does it well and carefully; and this work should be partly physical and...mental. The character of the reading and studying should have close inspection, and should change from time to time — for the proper rounding out of mind and body, in preparation for the various duties of life. The child should realize the parental interest in him, and should know that it is prompted by love for his future welfare and is of divine obligation." *F559*

"Mental moods are now recognized as having a powerful influence upon digestion...The new creature...may preserve his 'peace of God' under...unfavorable surroundings,...if he be the responsible head of a family, it is his duty to look after the peace of the family by so far as possible keeping the table converse upon pleasant and profitable if not religious topics." *F562*

SPOILING

"Jacob probably did not realize to what extent his partiality was cultivating against Joseph; and indeed, we may question if it would have been to Joseph's advantage, as respects development of character, to have remained at home under such conditions: he would probably have been a spoiled young man, just as grandparents are very apt to spoil grandchildren by too much petting and partiality developing in the favored child a spirit of pride to plague and injure it for the remainder of life." *R2880:1*

FALLEN ANGELS

"...condition of entire will-lessness...the child...a more easy dupe for the fallen angels." *R4458:5*

FAMILY ORDER

JOSH. 24:15: "...choose you this day whom ye will serve;...but as for me and my house, we will serve the LORD."

"...so, also, it should be no meaningless phrase as respects his household; it should mean that his children shall be trained in the nurtures and admonition of the Lord; it should mean that minor children shall not be allowed to rule the house nor discredit parents outside the home, but that the parental influence exercised in kindness, in love and in firmness shall each family so far as possible into covenant relationship to the Lord, instructing them in the way of the Lord, both by precept and example." *R3094:6*

"This will mean that so far as possible each member of the church recognizing Christ as his Head, will seek to do the will of God in his family...and this will mean if he has not already established the Family Altar of prayer, he will immediately do so...." *R2985:6*

"...in our own family...we sing one of the hymns...every morning before breakfast. This, with the rendering of thanks...constitutes our family worship for the day (being preceded by such personal prayer or communion with the Lord as each may desire, — and the same before retiring at night.)" *R1808:2*

"...more elaborate family worship..., [proper] for those who have the time and opportunity. All that is left to the judgment and convenience of the head of each family....We speak not by Scriptural authority, but simply according to our own judgment, when we advise brethren or sisters who are the heads of households (1) to have, as a family some general recognition of the Lord every morning; — as, for instance, a hymn of praise, or a text or a chapter of Scripture, with a short prayer, either at the breakfast table, or before or after breakfast. But (2) we advise that such general worship be not burdensomely long, but on the contrary, brief and crisp." *R1811:1,4*

"Brothers and sisters should sympathize with one another, and have a spirit of helpfulness one toward another." *R5229:2*

"As with ourselves their clothing should be neat, comfortable and becoming '*decent*' but not '*costly.*'" *R874:2*

"Having brought children into the world, it becomes the duty of parents to see to their reasonable establishment in it. This includes not only the dispensing of food and of

raiment during childhood and youth, but also the provision of intellectual and moral instructions...." *R4854:1*

"Children must be clothed and fed and sheltered and trained; and each consecrated parent can use only his best judgement as to how it shall be done, remembering to do all as unto the Lord, and so, they will come up ready for the Master's use and will be trained in his love and in his service; the spirit of the world will be pointed out to them in contrast with the spirit of Christ; and they will learn to see the deformity of the one and the grace of the other." *R1327:5*

"The proper and best provision for our children's future, is a sensible education which should embrace at least the common school branches, as well as the practical lessons of life, whether trade or housekeeping or business." *R874:2*

"The child fairly well born and who receives a reasonable education and guidance to maturity is well off and has a rich legacy in himself; and the parent who has made such provision for his children has every reason to feel that he has been ruled in the matter by a sound mind, the holy Spirit, the disposition approved by the Lord, even though he leave no property...." *R4854:2*

PROVIDING FOR CHILDREN

PROV. 13:22: "A good *man* leaveth an inheritance to his children's children: and the wealth of the sinner *is* laid up for the just."

LUKE 11:11,12: "If a son shall ask bread of any of you that is a father, will he give him a stone? or if *he ask* a fish, will he for a fish give him a serpent? Or if he shall ask an egg, will he offer him a scorpion?"

2 COR. 12:14: "Behold, the third time I am ready to come to you; and I will not be burdensome to you: for I seek not yours, but you: for the children ought not to lay up for the parents, but the parents for the children."

1 TIM. 5:8: "But if any provide not for his own, and specially for those of his own house, he hath denied the faith, and is worse than an infidel."

TEACHING OUR CHILDREN

DEUT. 6:6,7: "And these words, which I command thee this day, shall be in thine heart: And thou shalt teach them diligently unto thy children, and shalt talk of them when thou sittest in thine house, and when thou walkest by the way, and when thou liest down, and when thou risest up."

PSA. 34:11; 78:1-8: "Come, ye children, hearken unto me: I will teach you the fear of the LORD....Maschil of Asaph. Give ear, O my people, to my law: incline your ears to the words of my mouth. I will open my mouth in a parable: I

will utter dark sayings of old: Which we have heard and known, and our fathers have told us. We will not hide *them* from their children, showing to the generation to come the praises of the

LORD, and his strength, and his wonderful works that he hath done. For he established a testimony in Jacob, and appointed a law in Israel, which he commanded our fathers, that they should make them known to their children: That the generation to come might know *them, even* the children *which* should be born; *who* should arise and declare *them* to their children: That they might set their hope in God, and not forget the works of God, but keep his commandments: And might not be as their fathers, a stubborn and rebellious generation; a generation *that* set not their heart aright, and whose spirit was not steadfast with God."

PROV. 22:6: "Train up a child in the way he should go: and when he is old, he will not depart from it."

ISA. 38:19; 54:13: "The living, the living, he shall praise thee, as I do this day: the father to the children shall make known thy truth....And all thy children *shall be* taught of the LORD; and great *shall be* the peace of thy children."

JOEL 1:3: "Tell ye your children of it, and *let* your children *tell* their children, and their children another generation."

1 THES. 2:11: "As ye know how we exhorted and comforted and charged every one of you, as a father *doth* his children..."

1 TIM. 3:4: "One that ruleth well his own house, having his children in subjection with all gravity..."

CORRECTION OF CHILDREN

PROV. 13:24; 19:18; 22:15; 23:13,14; 29:15,17: "He that spareth his rod hateth his son: but he that loveth him chasteneth him betimes.... Chasten thy son while there is hope, and let not thy soul spare for his crying....Foolishness *is* bound in the heart of a child; *but* the rod of correction shall drive it far from him.... Withhold not correction from the child: for *if* thou beatest him with the rod, he shall not die. Thou shalt beat him with the rod, and shalt deliver his soul from hell....The rod and reproof give wisdom: but a child left *to himself* bringeth his mother to shame....Correct thy son, and he shall give thee rest; yea, he shall give delight unto thy soul."

EPH. 6:4: "And, ye fathers, provoke not your children to wrath: but bring them up in the nurture and admonition of the Lord."

COL. 3:21: "Fathers, provoke not your children *to anger*, lest they be discouraged."

1 TIM. 3:12: "Let the deacons be the husbands of one wife, ruling their children and their own houses well."

TITUS 2:4: "That they may teach the young women to be sober, to love their husbands, to love their children..."

PROMISES AND ASSURANCE

PROV. 3:1-10; 8:17,32; 23:15,16,24,25: "My son, forget not my law; but let thine heart keep my commandments: For length of days, and long life, and peace, shall they add to thee. Let not mercy and truth forsake thee: bind them about thy neck; write them upon the table of thine heart: So shalt thou find favour and good understanding in the sight of God and man. Trust in the LORD with all thine heart; and lean not unto thine own understanding. In all thy ways acknowledge him, and he shall direct thy paths. Be not wise in thine own eyes: fear the LORD, and depart from evil. It shall be health to thy navel, and marrow to thy bones. LORD with thy substance, and with the firstfruits of all thine increase: So shall thy barns be filled with plenty, and thy presses shall burst out with new wine....I love them that love me; and those that seek me early shall find me....

"Now therefore hearken unto me, O ye children: for blessed *are they that* keep my ways....

"My son, if thine heart be wise, my heart shall rejoice, even mine. Yea, my reins shall rejoice, when thy lips speak right things....The father of the righteous shall greatly rejoice: and he that begetteth a wise *child* shall have joy of him. Thy father and thy mother shall be glad, and she that bare thee shall rejoice."

MATT. 19:14,15: "But Jesus said, Suffer little children, and forbid them not, to come unto me: for of such is the kingdom of heaven. And he laid *his* hands on them, and departed thence."

MARK 10:16: "And he took them up in his arms, put *his* hands upon them, and blessed them."

LUKE 18:15,16: "And they brought unto him also infants, that he would touch them: but when *his* disciples saw *it*, they rebuked them. But Jesus called them *unto him*, and said, Suffer little children to come unto me, and forbid them not: for of such is the kingdom of God."

ACTS 2:39: "For the promise is unto you, and to your children, and to all that are afar off, *even* as many as the Lord our God shall call."

CHILDREN OF CONSECRATED SPECIALLY BLESSED

PSA. 102:28;103:17,18: "The children of thy servants shall continue, and their seed shall be established before thee....But the mercy of the LORD is from everlasting to everlasting upon them that fear him, and his righteousness unto children's children; To such as keep his covenant, and to those that remember his commandments to do them."

PROV. 20:7: "The just *man* walketh in his integrity: his children *are* blessed after him."

JER. 32:39: "And I will give them one heart, and one way, that they may fear me for ever, for the good of them, and of their children after them..."

1 COR 7:14: "For the unbelieving husband is sanctified by the wife, and the unbelieving wife is sanctified by the husband: else were your children unclean; but now are they holy."

EXAMPLES OF PARENTAL CONCERN AND AFFECTION

GEN. 21:15,16: (Hagar) "And the water was spent in the bottle, and she cast the child under one of the shrubs. And she went, and sat her down over against *him* a good way off, as it were a bowshot: for she said, Let me not see the death of the child. And she sat over against *him*, and lift up her voice, and wept."

GEN. 24:55: (Rebekah) "And her brother and her mother said, Let the damsel abide with us *a few* days, at the least ten; after that she shall go."

EXOD. 2nd Chapter: (Moses' Mother)

RUTH 1:8,9: (Naomi) "And Naomi said unto her two daughters in law, Go, return each to her mother's house: the LORD deal kindly with you, as ye have dealt with the dead, and with me. The LORD grant you that ye may find rest, each of you in the house of her husband. Then she kissed them; and they lifted up their voice, and wept."

MARK 5:22,23: (Jairus) "And, behold, there cometh one of the rulers of the synagogue, Jairus by name; and when he saw him, he

fell at his feet, And besought him greatly, saying, My little daughter lieth at the point of death: *I pray thee*, come and lay thy hands on her, that she may be healed; and she shall live."

PRAYER

"When we think of the greatness of the Creator, Maker of heaven and earth and all therein; and when we think of our own littleness, our weaknesses and imperfections, we are amazed that our God has made any provision whereby even the best of his creatures might hold communion with him in prayer." *R5692:1*

PSA. 8:3,4: "When I consider thy heavens, the work of thy fingers, the moon and the stars, which thou hast ordained; What is man, that thou art mindful of him? and the son of man, that thou visitest him?"

"The poet has well defined prayer as being 'The soul's sincere desire, uttered or unexpressed.' Another has well declared that it 'is the Christian's vital breath,' — that is to say Christian character cannot be maintained without prayer any more than a human life could be maintained without breathing." *R4913:2*

ROM. 8:26: "Likewise the Spirit also helpeth our infirmities: for we know not what we should pray for as we ought: but the Spirit itself maketh intercession for us with groanings which cannot be uttered."

HEB. 4:12: "For the word of God is quick, and powerful, and sharper than any twoedged sword, piercing even to the dividing asunder of soul and spirit, and of the joints and marrow, and is a discerner of the thoughts and intents of the heart."

"The late Bishop Phillips Brooks expressed the true thought very beautifully and succinctly when he said, 'Prayer is not conquering God's reluctance; it is laying hold upon God's willingness.'" *R5481:3* See Lev. 11:13

GRACE TO HELP

HEB. 4:16: "Let us therefore come boldly unto the throne of grace, that we may obtain mercy, and find grace to help in time of need."

A PRIVILEGE

"Prayer is a wonderful privilege. It is a very great favor to be permitted to approach the Supreme Ruler of the universe with our petitions. We should come, therefore, in the spirit of earnestness and humility and reverence." *R5480:1*

REQUIREMENTS

JOHN 9:31: "Now we know that God heareth not sinners: but if any man be a worshipper of God, and doeth his will, him he heareth."

1 PET. 3:12: "For the eyes of the Lord *are* over the righteous, and his ears *are open* unto their prayers: but the face of the Lord *is* against them that do evil."

"There must be two conditions met in order that our prayers may be answered. We must first have accepted Jesus as our Savior, and then have made a consecration to God in his appointed way." *R5708:1*

"We are to distinguish between prayer, petitions to God, and adoration. Any one may worship God, may bow down and adore him. But in the matter of prayer, there is a limitation. Only certain persons may pray to the Lord with any assurance of being heard." *R5708:6*

BELIEVING

MATT 21:22: "And all things, whatsoever ye shall ask in prayer, believing, ye shall receive."

WHOLE—HEARTEDLY

JER. 29:13: "And ye shall seek me, and find me, when ye shall search for me with all your heart."

CONDITION

2 CHRON. 7:14: "If my people, which are called by my name, shall humble themselves, and pray, and seek my face, and turn from their wicked ways; then will I hear from heaven, and will forgive their sin, and will heal their land."

RECONCILIATION WITH THY BROTHER

MATT. 5:23,24: "Therefore if thou bring thy gift to the altar, and there rememberest that thy brother hath ought against thee; Leave there thy gift before the altar, and go thy way; first be reconciled to thy brother, and then come and offer thy gift."

OBEDIENCE

1 JOHN 3:22: "And whatsoever we ask, we receive of him, because we keep his commandments, and do those things that are pleasing in his sight."

PURPOSE OF PRAYER

MATT. 6:8: "Be not ye therefore like unto them: for your Father knoweth what things ye have need of, before ye ask him."

"This opportunity (of prayer) is not for us to instruct Jehovah how to arrange matters for the best, but to bring our hearts to realize him as the center of wisdom and power; that having unburdened our hearts, we may be prepared to listen for his answer and advice through his Word." *R4983:1*

PROPER APPROACH

JOHN 16:23: "And in that day ye shall ask me nothing. Verily, verily, I say unto you, Whatsoever ye shall ask the Father in my name, he will give *it* you."

JOHN 14:6: "Jesus saith unto him, I am the way, the truth, and the life: no man cometh unto the Father, but by me."

"...certain rules should govern all prayers, all approaches to God for communion, namely, that we should approach with humility and simplicity and reverence, and in the name of Jesus." *R2251:3*

MATT. 6:12: "And forgive us our debts, as we forgive our debtors."

MARK 11:25: "And when ye stand praying, forgive, if ye have ought against any: that your Father also which is in heaven may forgive you your trespasses."

"...it is only so long as we are willing to forgive our debtors that we may pray with confidence to our heavenly Father and hope for his forgiveness of our trespasses." *R2667:2*

PROPER REQUESTS

JAS. 4:3: "Ye ask, and receive not, because ye ask amiss...."

"In order to pray properly, the child of God should know what he may pray for. Otherwise he might be asking for the wrong things, such as God would never be pleased to give him." *R5310:3*

LUKE 11:9: "And I say unto you, Ask, and it shall be given you; seek, and ye shall find; knock, and it shall be opened unto you."

JAS. 1:5: "If any of you lack wisdom, let him ask of God, that giveth to all *men* liberally, and upbraideth not; and it shall be given him."

"...to pray for anything which God is willing to give is entirely proper. We may pray for the holy Spirit, for more love, more gentleness, more patience, more wisdom from on high. We may pray that all these things will work together for our good; for he has promised that this shall be....But we may not tell him what to do." *R5203:1*

JOHN 15:7: "If ye abide in me, and my words abide in you, ye shall ask what ye will, and it shall be done unto you."

"The prayers of God's people should not be for temporal things. We know of no Scriptural illustration where the spiritual sons of God asked definitely for temporal things and received an answer." *R5624:4*

PERSISTENCE IN PRAYER

ROM. 12:12: "Rejoicing in hope; patient in tribulation; continuing instant in prayer..."

LUKE 18:1: "And he spake a parable unto them *to this end*, that men ought always to pray, and not to faint..."

1 THES. 5:17: "Pray without ceasing."

"Not only should we pray frequently and with regularity, but we should be always in the attitude of prayer." *R5203:6*

EPH. 6:18: "Praying always with all prayer and supplication in the Spirit, and watching thereunto with all perseverance and supplication for all saints..."

LUKE 18:7: "And shall not God avenge his own elect, which cry day and night unto him, though he bear long with them?"

"God wishes us to be persistent, and our persistence measures and indicates the depth of our desires." *R2865:6*

EFFECTIVENESS OF PRAYER

JAS. 5:16: "Confess *your* faults one to another, and pray one for another, that ye may be healed. The effectual fervent prayer of a righteous man availeth much."

HEB. 13:18: "Pray for us...."

"We have reason to believe that when we pray for others, our prayers avail. We have known instances where prayers have been answered very remarkably. The Lord's Word seem to inculcate this faith in us." *R5204:2*

BREVITY

ECCL. 5:2: "Be not rash with thy mouth, and let not thine heart be hasty to utter *any* thing before God: for God *is* in heaven, and thou upon earth: therefore let thy words be few."

MATT. 6:7,8: "But when ye pray, use not vain repetitions,....for your Father knoweth what things ye have need of, before ye ask him."

"The prayers recorded in the Bible are generally not lengthy. God accepts as our prayers all the good thoughts and sentiments of our minds, as well as those expressed by our tongues." *R5311:5*

WAITING PATIENTLY FOR ANSWERS

LUKE 18:1: "And he spake a parable unto them to this end, that men ought always to pray, and not to faint..."

"If one's prayers seem not to be answered, he should not become faint-hearted and cease to pray." *R5203:3*

Also please see article *THANKSGIVING WITH PRAYER AND SUPPLICATION. R5379-5382*

MODEL PRAYERS

GEN. 32:9-12,24-30: (Jacob's prevailing prayer) "And Jacob said, O God of my father Abraham, and God of my father Isaac, the LORD which saidst unto me, Return unto thy country, and to thy kindred, and I will deal well with thee: I am not worthy of the least of all the mercies, and of all the truth, which thou hast showed unto thy servant; for with my staff I passed over this Jordan; and now I am become two bands. Deliver me, I pray thee, from the hand of my brother, from the hand of Esau: for I fear him, lest he will come and smite me, *and* the mother with the children. And thou saidst, I will surely do thee good, and make thy seed as the sand of the sea, which cannot be numbered for multitude....

"And Jacob was left alone; and there wrestled a man with him until the breaking of the day. And when he saw that he prevailed not against him, he touched the hollow of his thigh; and the hollow of Jacob's thigh was out of joint, as he wrestled with him. And he said, Let me go, for the day breaketh. And he said, I will not let thee go, except thou bless me. And he said unto him, What *is* thy name? And he said, Jacob. And he said, Thy name shall be called no more Jacob, but Israel: for as a prince hast thou power with God and with men, and hast prevailed. And Jacob asked *him*, and said, Tell *me*, I pray thee, thy name. And he said, Wherefore is it *that* thou dost ask after my name? And he blessed him there. And Jacob called the name of the place Peniel: for I have seen God face to face, and my life is preserved."

EXOD. 32:11-13: (Moses' prayer for Israel's forgiveness) "And Moses besought the LORD his God, and said, LORD, why doth thy wrath wax hot against thy people, which thou hast brought forth out of the land of Egypt with great power, and with a mighty hand? Wherefore should the Egyptians speak, and say, For mischief did he bring them out, to slay them in the mountains, and to consume them from the face of the earth? Turn from thy fierce wrath, and repent of this evil against thy people. Remember Abraham, Isaac, and Israel, thy servants, to whom thou swarest by thine own self, and saidst unto them, I will multiply your seed as the stars of heaven, and all this land that I have spoken of will I give unto your seed, and they shall inherit *it* for ever."

NUM. 14:13-20: (Moses' prayer for intercession) "And Moses said unto the LORD, Then the Egyptians shall hear *it*, (for thou broughtest up this people in thy might from among them;) And they will tell *it* to the inhabitants of this land: *for* they have heard that thou LORD art among this people, that thou LORD *art* seen face to face, and *that* thy cloud standeth over them, and *that* thou goest before them, by day time in a pillar of a cloud, and in a pillar of fire by

night. Now *if* thou shalt kill *all* this people as one man, then the nations which have heard the fame of thee will speak, saying, Because the LORD was not able to bring this people into the land which he sware unto them, therefore he hath slain them in the wilderness. And now, I beseech thee, let the power of my LORD be great, according as thou hast spoken, saying, The LORD *is* longsuffering, and of great mercy, forgiving iniquity and transgression, and by no means clearing *the guilty*, visiting the iniquity of the fathers upon the children unto the third and fourth *generation*. Pardon, I beseech thee, the iniquity of this people according unto the greatness of thy mercy, and as thou hast forgiven this people, from Egypt even until now. And the LORD said, I have pardoned according to thy word..."

1 KINGS 8:22-53: (Solomon's prayer of dedication) "And Solomon stood before the altar of the LORD in the presence of all the congregation of Israel, and spread forth his hands toward heaven: And he said, LORD God of Israel, *there is* no God like thee, in heaven above, or on earth beneath, who keepest covenant and mercy with thy servants that walk before thee with all their heart: Who hast kept with thy servant David my father that thou promisedst him: thou spakest also with thy mouth, and hast fulfilled *it* with thine hand, as *it is* this day. Therefore now, LORD God of Israel, keep with thy servant David my father that thou promisedst him, saying, There shall not fail thee a man in my sight to sit on the throne of Israel; so that thy children take heed to their way, that they walk before me as thou hast walked before me. And now, O God of Israel, let thy word, I pray thee, be verified, which thou spakest unto thy servant David my father. But will God indeed dwell on the earth? behold, the heaven and heaven of heavens cannot contain thee; how much less this house that I have builded? Yet have thou respect unto the prayer of thy servant, and to his supplication, O LORD my God, to hearken unto the cry and to the prayer, which thy servant prayeth before thee to day: That thine eyes may be open toward this house night and day, *even* toward the place of which thou hast said, My name shall be there: that thou mayest hearken unto the prayer which thy servant shall make toward this place. And hearken thou to the supplication of thy servant, and of thy people Israel, when they shall pray toward this place: and hear thou in heaven thy dwelling place: and when thou hearest, forgive. If any man trespass against his neighbour, and an oath be laid upon him to cause him to swear, and the oath come before thine altar in this house: Then hear thou in heaven, and do, and judge thy servants, condemning the wicked, to bring his way upon his head; and justifying the righteous, to give him according to his righteousness.

"When thy people Israel be smitten down before the enemy, because they have sinned against thee, and shall turn again to thee, and confess thy name, and pray, and make supplication unto thee in this house: Then hear thou in heaven, and forgive the sin of thy people Israel, and bring them again unto the land which thou gavest unto their fathers.

"When heaven is shut up, and there is no rain, because they have sinned against thee; if they pray toward this place, and confess thy name, and turn from their sin, when thou afflictest them: Then hear thou in heaven, and forgive the sin of thy servants, and of thy people Israel, that thou teach them the good way wherein they should walk, and give rain upon thy land, which thou hast given to thy people for an inheritance. If there be in the land famine, if there be pestilence, blasting, mildew, locust, *or* if there be caterpillar; if their enemy besiege them in the land of their cities; whatsoever plague, whatsoever sickness *there be*; What prayer and supplication soever be *made* by any man, *or* by all thy people Israel, which shall know every man the plague of his own heart, and spread forth his hands toward this house: Then hear thou in heaven thy dwelling place, and forgive, and do, and give to every

man according to his ways, whose heart thou knowest; (for thou, *even* thou only, knowest the hearts of all the children of men;) That they may fear thee all the days that they live in the land which thou gavest unto our fathers....

"Moreover concerning a stranger, that *is* not of thy people Israel, but cometh out of a far country for thy name's sake; (For they shall hear of thy great name, and of thy strong hand, and of thy stretched out arm;) when he shall come and pray toward this house; Hear thou in heaven thy dwelling place, and do according to all that the stranger calleth to thee for: that all people of the earth may know thy name, to fear thee, as *do* thy people Israel; and that they may know that this house, which I have builded, is called by thy name. If thy people go out to battle against their enemy, whithersoever thou shalt send them, and shall pray unto the LORD toward the city which thou hast chosen, and *toward* the house that I have built for thy name: Then hear thou in heaven their prayer and their supplication, and maintain their cause. If they sin against thee, (for *there is* no man that sinneth not,) and thou be angry with them, and deliver them to the enemy, so that they carry them away captives unto the land of the enemy, far or near; *Yet* if they shall bethink themselves in the land whither they were carried captives, and repent, and make supplication unto thee in the land of them that carried them captives, saying, We have sinned, and have done perversely, we have committed wickedness; And *so* return unto thee with all their heart, and with all their soul, in the land of their enemies, which led them away captive, and

pray unto thee toward their land, which thou gavest unto their fathers, the city which thou hast chosen, and the house which I have built for thy name: Then hear thou their prayer and their supplication in heaven thy dwelling place, and maintain their cause, And forgive thy people that have sinned against thee, and all their transgressions wherein they have transgressed against thee, and give them compassion before them who carried them captive, that they may have compassion on them: For they *be* thy people, and thine inheritance, which thou broughtest forth out of Egypt, from the midst of the furnace of iron: That thine eyes may be open unto the supplication of thy servant, and unto the supplication of thy people Israel, to hearken unto them in all that they call for unto thee. For thou didst separate them from among all the people of the earth, *to be* thine inheritance, as thou spakest by the hand of Moses thy servant, when thou broughtest our fathers out of Egypt, O Lord GOD."

1 KINGS 18:36-39: (Elijah's prayer before the prophets of Baal) "And it came to pass at *the time of* the offering of the *evening* sacrifice, that Elijah the prophet came near, and said, LORD God of Abraham, Isaac, and of Israel, let it be known this day that thou *art* God in Israel, and *that* I *am* thy servant, and *that* I have done all these things at thy word. Hear me, O LORD, hear me, that this people may know that thou *art* the LORD God, and *that* thou hast turned their heart back again. Then the fire of the LORD fell, and consumed the burnt sacrifice, and the wood, and the stones, and the dust, and licked up the water that *was* in the trench. And when all the people saw *it*, they fell on their faces: and they said, The LORD, he *is* the God; the LORD, he *is* the God."

2 KINGS 19:14-19: (Hezekiah's prayer against...Sennacherib) "And Hezekiah received the letter of the hand of the messengers, and read it: and Hezekiah went up into the house of the LORD, and spread it before the LORD. And Hezekiah prayed before the LORD, and said, O LORD God of Israel, which dwellest *between* the cherubims, thou art the God, *even* thou alone, of all the kingdoms of the earth; thou hast made heaven and earth. LORD, bow down thine ear, and hear: open, LORD, thine eyes, and see: and hear the words of Sennacherib, which hath sent him to reproach the living God. Of a truth, LORD, the kings of Assyria have destroyed the nations and their lands, And have cast their gods into the fire: for they *were* no gods, but the work of men's hands, wood and stone: therefore they have destroyed them. Now therefore, O LORD our God, I beseech thee, save thou us out of his hand, that all the kingdoms of the earth may know that thou *art* the LORD God, *even* thou only."

2 CHRON. 14:11,12: (Asa's prayer for victory) "And Asa cried unto the LORD his God, and said, LORD, *it is* nothing with thee to help, whether with many, or with them that have no power: help us, O LORD our God; for we rest on thee, and in thy name we go against this multitude. O LORD, thou *art* our God; let not man prevail against thee. So the LORD smote the Ethiopians before Asa, and before Judah; and the Ethiopians fled."

2 CHRON. 20:5-12: (Jehosaphat's prayer against the invaders) "And Jehoshaphat stood in the congregation of Judah and Jerusalem, in the house of the LORD, before the new court, And said, O LORD God of our fathers, *art* not thou God in heaven? and rulest *not* thou over all the kingdoms of the heathen? and in thine hand *is there not* power and might, so that none is able to withstand thee? *Art* not thou our God, *who* didst drive out the inhabitants of this land before thy people Israel, and gavest it to the seed of Abraham thy friend for ever? And they dwelt therein, and have built thee a sanctuary therein for thy name, saying, If, *when* evil cometh upon us, *as* the sword, judgment, or pestilence, or famine, we stand before this house, and in thy presence, (for thy name *is* in this house,) and cry unto thee in our affliction, then thou wilt hear and help. And now, behold, the children of Ammon and Moab and mount Seir, whom thou wouldest not let Israel invade, when they came out of the land of Egypt, but they turned from them, and destroyed them not; Behold, I *say*, *how* they reward us, to come to cast us out of thy possession, which thou hast given us to inherit. O our God, wilt thou not judge them? for we have no might against this great company that cometh against us; neither know we what to do: but our eyes *are* upon thee."

NEH. 1:4-11: (Nehemiah's prayer for the regathering) "And it came to pass, when I heard these words, that I sat down and wept, and mourned *certain* days, and fasted, and prayed before the God of heaven, And said, I beseech thee, O LORD God of heaven, the great and terrible God, that keepeth covenant and mercy for them that love him and observe his commandments: Let thine ear now be attentive, and thine eyes open, that thou mayest hear the prayer of thy servant, which I pray before thee now, day and night, for the children of Israel thy servants, and confess the sins of the children of Israel, which we have sinned against thee: both I and my father's house have sinned. We have dealt very corruptly against thee, and have not kept the commandments, nor the statutes, nor the judgments, which thou commandedst thy servant Moses....Remember, I beseech thee, the word that thou commandedst thy servant Moses, saying, *If* ye transgress, I will scatter you abroad among the nations: But *if* ye turn unto me, and keep my commandments, and do them; though there were of you cast out unto the uttermost part of the heaven, *yet* will I

gather them from thence, and will bring them unto the place that I have chosen to set my name there. Now these *are* thy servants and

thy people, whom thou hast redeemed by thy great power, and by thy strong hand. O Lord, I beseech thee, let now thine ear be attentive to the prayer of thy servant, and to the prayer of thy servants, who desire to fear thy name: and prosper, I pray thee, thy servant this day, and grant him mercy in the sight of this man. For I was the king's cupbearer."

PSA. 51:1-19: (David's prayer for forgiveness) "To the chief Musician, A Psalm of David, when Nathan the prophet came unto him, after he had gone in to Bathsheba. Have mercy upon me, O God, according to thy lovingkindness: according unto the multitude of thy tender mercies blot out my transgressions. Wash me thoroughly from mine iniquity, and cleanse me from my sin. For I acknowledge my transgressions: and my sin *is ever* before me. Against thee, thee only, have I sinned, and done *this* evil in thy sight: that thou mightest be justified when thou speakest, *and* be clear when thou judgest. Behold, I was shapen in iniquity, and in sin did my mother conceive me. Behold, thou desirest truth in the inward parts: and in the hidden *part* thou shalt make me to know wisdom....Purge me with hyssop, and I shall be clean: wash me, and I shall be whiter than snow. Make me to hear joy and gladness; *that* the bones *which* thou hast broken may rejoice. Hide thy face from my sins, and blot out all mine iniquities. Create in me a clean heart, O God; and renew a right spirit within me. Cast me not away from thy presence; and take not thy holy spirit from me. Restore unto me the joy of thy salvation; and uphold me *with thy* free spirit. Then will I teach transgressors thy ways; and sinners shall be converted unto thee. Deliver me from bloodguiltiness, O God, thou God of my salvation: and my tongue shall sing aloud of thy righteousness. O Lord, open thou my lips; and my mouth shall show forth thy praise. For thou desirest not sacrifice; else would I give *it*: thou delightest not in burnt offering. The sacrifices of God are a broken spirit: a broken and a contrite heart, O God, thou wilt not despise. Do good in thy good pleasure unto Zion: build thou the walls of Jerusalem. Then shalt thou be pleased with the sacrifices of righteousness, with burnt offering and whole burnt offering: then shall they offer bullocks upon thine altar."

DAN. 2:20-23: (Daniel's prayer of thanks and praise) "Daniel answered and said, Blessed be the name of God for ever and ever: for wisdom and might are his: And he changeth the times and the seasons: he removeth kings, and setteth up kings: he giveth wisdom unto the wise, and knowledge to them that know understanding: He revealeth the deep and secret things: he knoweth what is in the darkness, and the light dwelleth with him. I thank thee, and praise thee, O thou God of my fathers, who hast given

me wisdom and might, and hast made known unto me now what we desired of thee: for thou hast *now* made known unto us the king's matter."

OUR LORD'S MODEL PRAYER

MATT. 6:9-13: "After this manner therefore pray ye: Our Father which art in heaven, Hallowed be thy name. Thy kingdom come. Thy will be done in earth, *as it is* in heaven. Give us this day our daily bread. And forgive us our debts, as we forgive our debtors. And lead us not into temptation, but deliver us from evil..."

"No form of prayer is furnished in the Scriptures. Even the Master, when asked by the disciples for instruction on the subject, gave them, not a form to repeat, but merely an idea or example of how to arrange their prayer to God. He did not say, Pray this prayer, but, 'After this manner pray ye.'" *R4984:4*

PYRAMID — THE GREAT PYRAMID

ISA.19:19,20: "In that day shall there be an altar to the LORD in the midst of the land of Egypt, and a pillar at the border thereof...to the LORD. And it shall be for a sign and for a witness unto the LORD of hosts in the land of Egypt...."

JER. 32:20: "Which hast set signs and wonders in the land of Egypt, *even* unto this day, and in Israel, and among *other men*; and hast made thee a name, as at this day..."

ITS GENERAL DESCRIPTION

"The Great Pyramid of Gizeh...is...in Egypt....It covers...about thirteen acres. It is 486 feet high and 764 feet broad at its base. It is estimated that the Great Pyramid weighs six million tons." *C313*

ITS ASTRONOMICAL FEATURES

"...*a Draconis*, the dragon-star,...looked directly down the entrance at midnight of...the... autumnal equinox, B.C. 2170."

"...Prof. Smyth....considering the ascending passages as...a telescope...calculated what constellation would have been before his telescope at the particular date...and found that it must have been the Pleiades....*A Draconis* is...a symbol of sin and Satan... *Pleiades* is a symbol of God....the Great Pyramid thus indicates...the prevalence of evil and of its dominion over the downward course of mankind, and...that the only hope...is in Jehovah." *C321*

JOB 38:31: "Canst thou bind the sweet influences of Pleiades...."

ITS PECULIAR LOCATION

"...looking out over...the....land of lower Egypt, it may be truly said to be at the very border thereof, as well as in its nominal center, as described by...Isaiah." *C325*

ITS SCIENTIFIC LESSONS

"The measure of the base of the four sides...is... as many pyramid cubits as there are days in four years — including the leap year....The measures diagonally across the base from northeast to southwest, and from northwest to southeast, added, give as many inches as there are years in the precessional cycle. The distance to the sun, it is claimed is indicated by the height and angle of the Great Pyramid....The Great Pyramid has also its own way of indicating the most correct standard of all weights and

measures, based upon the size and weight of the earth...." *C326*

ITS TESTIMONY TO THE PLAN OF REDEMPTION

"If the Great Pyramid....represents the plan of God...its top corner-stone should represent Christ...." *C328*

ISA. 28:16: "...Behold I lay in Zion...a precious corner*stone*...."

ZECH. 4:7: "He shall bring forth the headstone ...*with* shoutings,...Grace, grace unto it."

PSA. 118:22-24: "The stone *which* the builders refused is become the head *stone* of the corner. This is the LORD'S doing; it *is* marvellous in our eyes. This is the day ['the Millennial day of Christ's glory as the Head and Ruler of the world.' — *E329*]... *which* the LORD hath made; we will rejoice and be glad in it." (Cf. Matt. 21:42)

ACTS 4:11: "This is the stone which was set at nought of you builders, which is become the head of the corner."

MATT. 21:44: "And whosoever shall fall on this stone shall be broken: but on whomsoever it shall fall, it will grind him to powder."

JOB 38:6,7: *margin* "Whereupon are the sockets thereof fastened? or who laid the corner stone thereof; When the morning stars sang together, and all the sons of God shouted for joy?"

"Job...specifies the head...corner-stone by mentioning the other four corner-stones first." *C329*

EPH. 1:10; 2:20-23, *Diag.*: "In regard to an Administration of the FULNESS of the APPOINTED TIMES, to re-unite ALL things under one head, even under the ANOINTED one:—the THINGS in the HEAVENS, and the THINGS on the EARTH,— under him,.... having been built on the FOUNDATION...of the APOSTLES and Prophets, Christ Jesus being a Foundation corner-stone of it; on which All the BUILDING being fitly compacted together, increases into a holy Temple for the Lord; on whom you are also built up together, for a Spiritual Habitation of God."

OUTLINE OF THE PLAN

"The...'Entrance Passage'...represents the... downward course of mankind toward destruction..." *C331*

"The 'First Ascending Passage'...impassible by reason of the granite 'plug' 'tightly wedged in the lower end'" "...was a way, yet none could walk in it. So the Law covenant was a passage-way to life; but because of the weakness of the flesh none could...attain the life offered...." *C336, 368*

ROM. 3:20: "...by the deeds of the law there shall no flesh be justified...."

"The 'First Ascending Passage'...opens at its upper end into a large....hall-way, called the 'Grand Gallery,' the ceiling of which is *seven times* the height of the passages leading to it.... The 'Grand Gallery' is understood to represent the period of the Gospel call....The loftiness and greater width of this passage-way will represent the grander hopes and greater liberties of the Christian dispensation." *C331*

"On a level with the floor of the 'Grand Gallery' at its lower end, there starts a 'Horizontal Passage' under it which leads to a little room commonly termed the 'Queen's Chamber'...representing the perfection of humanity after the Millennial age shall have restored all the obedient and worthy ones to the moral likeness of the Creator...." *C332; C358*

"At the upper end of the 'Grand Gallery' is another low passageway, leading into a little room, called the 'Ante-Chamber'...which to some has suggested the idea of a school — a place for instruction and testing." *C332*

THE ANTE-CHAMBER

"This Ante-Chamber symbolizes the school of Christ, and the discipline — the trials of faith, patience, endurance, etc. — to which all are subjected who have made a full consecration...to the will of God...." *C351*

"...the traveler must stoop very low at the doorway or passage which leads into the 'Ante-Chamber.' This stoop symbolizes the

consecration or death of the human will." *C350*

PYRAMID AND TABERNACLE COMPARED

"*Granite* is used to symbolize divine things or the divine nature, just as gold...in Israel's... Tabernacle...: the low passages leading into the 'Ante-Chamber' correspond to the vails before the Holy and the Most Holy; and the granite coffer, the only furniture in the 'King's Chamber,' corresponds to the Ark of the Covenant,...the only furniture in the Most Holy 'in capacity'..." *C355*

PROGRESSIVE STEPS TO GLORY

"...the granite floor does not reach quite to the front of the 'Ante-Chamber,' while the granite ceiling reaches the full length....the first low passage symbolizes the consecration of the...will, which gives him entrance into the 'Holy' or sanctified condition...the 'Ante-Chamber,' whose granite ceiling now covers him." *C357*

"But...a huge obstruction...known as the 'Granite Leaf.'...like a drop-door partly closes the way...so that we must stoop again....This...represents the **divine will**....It is

not enough that you should sacrifice your will...; you might...then take up the will and plan of another;...you must bow to the divine will and become active in God's service through sanctification of the spirit and belief of the truth....The 'Granite Leaf' passed, we stand...upon the granite floor...." *C351*

"And not only the death of the will, but also actual death must be passed before we enter... actually the...'divine nature.' And this, too, is shown by...a very low passage through which, entrance to the 'King's Chamber' is gained....the grandest and highest room...,the...'divine nature.'" *C352* "...of polished red granite throughout...." *C355*

See also Index: **Tabernacle Types and Shadows**

SPIRIT VS. HUMAN NATURE SHOWN

"...an...imaginary line...through the vertical axis of the Great Pyramid would leave...only the 'Ante-Chamber' and the 'King's Chamber' on the south...." *C358*

THE BOTTOMLESS PIT

"This room is...peculiar..., the ceiling being well finished, while the sides are only commenced and the bottom is rough and unfinished....the 'Subterranean Chamber,'...illustrates the great trouble, disaster, destruction, the 'wages of sin,' to which the downward course leads." *C331*

"This room speaks of liberty...as well as trouble, of elevation as well as degradation....

"How true this is to facts, too....The light of...the day of the Lord — induces the spirit of liberty; and the spirit of liberty, coming in contact with the pride, wealth, and power of those still in control, will be the cause of the trouble....evil systems...will...sink into...destruction which the subterranean...'Pit' also symbolizes...." *C343*

"...is no part of the Pyramid...It lies under...its basal line....A vertical line from its farthest wall would pass...along the farthest wall of the 'Ante-Chamber.'...**it is possible** for some who have entered the 'Holy' or sanctified condition...to commit the sin...unto death...." *C358-361*

THE "WELL," THE "KEY" TO THE PYRAMID

"From the west side of the lower...end of the 'Grand Gallery,' extending downward, there is an irregular passage called the 'Well,' leading into the descending entrance passage. It would appear that...the passageway into the 'Queen's Chamber' had been...covered by the flooring...of the 'Grand Gallery,' and also that a...slab covered the mouth of the 'Well'...It looks as though an explosion had taken place at the mouth of the 'Well,' bursting it open from

beneath. It is our opinion...that no such explosion ever occurred but that things were left...as they are...to indicate the same thing that would be indicated by the supposed explosion...." *C335*

"Yes, that 'Well.'...represents...our Lord's death and burial,...also his resurrection....Our Lord burst the bonds of death...." *C337* "Its route passes through a grotto in the natural rock...." *C335*

"It evidently symbolized the death of our Lord Jesus....The fact that it was natural and not hewn...teaches that the Lord's sacrifice...was...a foreordained matter...before the outworking of the plan symbolized by the Pyramid began. The fact that it was located above...the basal line of the Pyramid seems to teach...that though our Lord died as a ransom for sinners, he did not descend into sin and degradation, but even in his death was within the...divine plan, as symbolized in the Pyramid...above the basal line." *C362*

"Our Lord's first advent and his death, marked by the 'Well's' mouth, are on that side of the Pyramid's axis which represents the **human nature**; and its location on the same **level** as the passage leading to the 'Queen's Chamber,' which symbolizes **human perfection**,...seems to say: He...[**JOHN 1:14**]: '...was made flesh....'

1 TIM. 2:5,6: "...the man Christ Jesus...gave himself a ransom for all...."

"...yet he [**2 COR. 5:21**]: '...knew no sin...was [**HEB. 7:26**]: '...holy, harmless, undefiled, separate from sinners....'" *C361*

THE RANSOM THE ONLY HOPE

"...our Lord burst the bonds of death, thereby bringing...[**2 TIM. 1:10**:] '...life and immortality to light.' — ...open up a new way to life." *C337*

HEB. 10:20: "By a new and living way, which he hath consecrated for us, through the veil, that is to say, his flesh..."

"It was not possible for him to be holden of death (Acts 2:24), is the seeming language of the torn rocks surrounding the upper opening of this 'Well.' As the 'Well' was the only way...to each of these upward passages...., so by the death and resurrection of our Redeemer is the only avenue of life on any plane for the fallen race. As the 'First Ascending Passage' was...impassible, so the...Law Covenant stood as...but a useless or impassible way to life." *C337*

ROM. 3:20: "...by the deeds of the law there shall no flesh be justified...."

CHRONOLOGICAL FEATURES

"From the...beginning of the Grand Gallery, in upward progression, begin the years of our Savior's life,...an inch to a year. Three and thirty inch-years...bring us right over against the mouth of the Well." *C337*

THE GRAND GALLERY

"At the upper...end of the 'Grand Gallery' the floor-line of the 'Ante-Chamber'...extends into the 'Grand Gallery,' forming an abrupt barrier or high step...." *C335*

"One measure...from the wall at the north end...to the 'Step' and then — omitting its riser or front — along its upper surface, the **walking surface**,...would...give...October 1874...." *C362, 363*

"...the 'Entrance Passage,' from the outside edge ...to the nearest edge of the passage connecting with the 'Well,' marks in year-inches the period...from the day....Isaac, the typical seed of promise, became heir of all his father Abraham's wealth..." *C366, 368*

See also Index: **Chronology**, for significance of dates in this section.

THE OVERHEAD PASSAGE

"The 'Grand Gallery'...has seven courses of overlapping stones in its walls...." *C347*

"The upper or south end....leans northward." *C335*

"In the upper or south end of the east wall, at its top,...is an opening connecting with the...space above the 'King's Chamber.'...Seven years before...1881 the great One from the heavens will enter." *C366*

DISTINCTION OF NATURES

"The stones upon the various levels or planes represents the perfection of all who, under Christ Jesus our Head, shall become conformed to God's perfect will....some...on the human and some on the spiritual and divine planes or natures. Thus the floor of the 'King's Chamber' is...on the fiftieth course of masonry,...the 'Queen's Chamber' on the twenty-fifth..., and the lower end of the 'First Ascending Passage,' if extended by the 'Plug,' would reach down to the basal line. Thus from its base-line upward the Great Pyramid seems to stand as an emblem of God's plan of salvation, or lifting up out of sin and death,...for all....The base-line corresponds with the date of the confirmation of God's promise to...Israel — the beginning of the uplifting...process." *C330*

THE TIME OF TROUBLE

"The 'Descending Passage'...represents the course of the world...into the great time of trouble (the 'Pit.'...The junction of the 'First Ascending Passage' with the 'Grand Gallery,'...marks the birth of our Lord Jesus....If we measure backward down the 'First Ascending Passage' to its junction with the 'Entrance Passage,' we shall have a fixed date. This measure is 1542 inches....Then measuring **down** the 'Entrance Passage' from that point to the 'Pit,' we find it...3457 inches....Thus the Pyramid witnesses that the close of 1914 will be the beginning of the time of trouble...." *C341*

THE "FIRST ASCENDING PASSAGE"

"In measuring this passage with its 'Plug' we should consider it as though it were a telescope, with the 'Plug' drawn out until the upper end reaches the place originally marked by the lower end of it...." *C346*

"And not only was this an ingenious way of hiding and yet furnishing the length of the period...but...to have made the 'First Ascending Passage' long enough...in year-inches would have necessitated the making of the Pyramid still larger, which...would have destroyed its scientific...lessons." *C347*

THE "QUEEN'S CHAMBER"

"The floor of this 'Queen's Chamber' and the passage-way leading to it...is rough and... unfinished....This...may indicate that its floor is not subject to measurement by year-inches.... As...perfection of human nature is illustrated in the 'Queen's Chamber,' so the way to it represents the seven thousand years of experience and discipline through which the fallen race must pass before full restitution to perfection can be gained....As the first six-sevenths of the passageway...is extremely low, it represents the six thousand years past, and...the...difficulty and humility necessary...on the part of...patriarchs, prophets, and others during the...reign of sin and death....The last seventh...represents the Millennial Age, just dawning....its height being nearly twice as great indicates that during the coming thousand years of grace....men can progress with...ease toward full perfection...." *C371*

THE VENTILATING TUBES

"As the 'King's Chamber,' by its ventilating tubes indicates that it symbolizes...an everlasting condition, so the 'Queen's Chamber' symbolizes ...that...human perfection...**may be made** an everlasting state....The 'King's Chamber' had open ventilators, the ventilators in the 'Queen's Chamber' were originally...covered...." *C373*

RANSOM

"For *there is* one God, and one mediator between God and man, the man Christ Jesus; Who gave himself a ransom for all, to be testified in due time." 1 Tim. 2:5,6 "**Ransom**,*...anti-lutron*" — "**A corresponding price**" — *Young*

SIGNIFICANCE — A CORRESPONDING PRICE

MATT. 20:28; MARK 10:45: "...the Son of man came not to be ministered unto, but to minister, and to give his life a ransom for many."

EXOD. 21:23,24: "And if *any* mischief follow, then thou shalt give life for life, Eye for eye, tooth for tooth, hand for hand, foot for foot..."

1 COR. 15:21,22: "For since by man *came* death, by man *came* also the resurrection of the dead. For as in Adam all die, even so in Christ shall all be made alive."

ROM. 5:15-19: "But not as the offence, so also *is* the free gift. For if through the offence of one many be dead, much more the grace of God, and the gift by grace, *which is* by one man, Jesus Christ, hath abounded unto many. And not as *it was* by one that sinned, so *is* the gift: for the judgment *was* by one to condemnation, but the free gift *is* of many offences unto justification. For if by one man's offence death reigned by one; much more they which receive abundance of grace and of the gift of righteousness shall reign in life by one, Jesus Christ.) Therefore as by the offence of one *judgment came* upon all men to condemnation; even so by the righteousness of one *the free gift came* upon all men unto justification of life. For as by one man's disobedience many were made sinners, so by the obedience of one shall many be made righteous."

REDEMPTION

"The word 'redeem' is sometimes used as the translation of the Greek word ***agorazo***. This word is defined by Prof. Young to signify 'to acquire at the forum.' Still more literally, it would signify, to purchase in the open market; for the root of the word, ***agora***, signifies **market-place**...." *E429*

REV. 5:9: "...thou wast slain and hast **redeemed** us to God by thy blood...."

REV. 14:3: "...the hundred...forty...four thousand, which were redeemed from the earth." "Another word rendered '**redeem** ,'...is...formed by the addition of a prefix, *ex.* Prof. Young gives...the definition, 'to acquire out of the forum.' Still more literally, **to publicly purchase and take possession of**..." *E430*

GAL. 3:13: "Christ hath redeemed us from the curse of the law...."

"Another Greek word is also rendered '**redeemed**,' namely '***lutroo*** ...' '**to loose by a price**'...— that is, **to set free by the payment of a price**...." *E431*

LUKE 24:21: "We trusted that it had been he which should have **redeemed** Israel."

"...certain...writers and teachers....denying that the world was purchased by our Lord's death,... are prone to cite passages where the word redeem is improperly used for deliver, and then give the inference that deliver is the only meaning of redeem....In view of the carelessness of our translators the...proper method...where much depends on the exact meaning..., is to get at the original word and its meaning." *E438*

WHAT RANSOM WAS PAID FOR MAN?

"The man Christ Jesus was...**a perfect man**, the counterpart of the first man, Adam,...and... was...ready...to give his life and all human rights for the purchase, the redemption, of Adam and race...which lost life and all human rights in him...'the man Christ Jesus' did...sacrifice...on man's behalf **all that he had**...." *E440*

"...what price he gave...since it was a corresponding price,...should correspond exactly to whatever was man's penalty. Our Lord did not go to everlasting torment,...hence... everlasting torment is not the wages of sin." *E441*

[Imperfect man could not redeem himself.]

PSA. 49:7: "None of *them* can by any means redeem his brother, nor give to God a ransom for him..."

ROM. 6:23: "...the wages of sin *is* death...."

1 COR. 15:3: "...Christ **died** for our sins...."

1 PET. 3:18: "...the just for the unjust..."

EZEK. 18:4,20: "...The soul that sinneth, it shall die..."

1 JOHN 2:2: "...he is the propitiation [*hilasnos*, satisfaction] for our sins: [the church's sins], and not for ours only, but also for *the sins of* the whole world."

ISA. 53:5,6: "But he was wounded for our transgressions, *he was* bruised for our iniquities: the chastisement of our peace *was* upon him; and with his stripes [the things which he suffered in our stead — self denial even unto **death**] we are healed....the LORD hath laid on him the iniquity of us all." *E442*

BOUGHT WITH A PRICE

1 COR. 7:23: "Ye are bought with a price...."

"Since divine Justice...whose sentence forfeited man's life, therefore to divine Justice the ransom price must...be paid." *E449*

1 PET. 1:18,19: "Forasmuch as ye know that ye were not redeemed with corruptible things, as silver and gold, from your vain conversation received by tradition from your fathers; But with the precious blood of Christ, as of a lamb without blemish and without spot..."

ISA. 53:12: "Therefore will I divide him a portion with the great, and he shall divide the spoil with the strong; because he hath poured out his soul unto death: and he was numbered with the transgressors; and he bare the sin of many, and made intercession for the transgressors."

THE PURPOSE

ROM. 14:9: "...Christ both died, and rose, and revived, that he might be Lord both of the dead and living."

HOW WE ARE REDEEMED

"The race of Adam not having been born...was not directly, but indirectly sentenced, and consequently needed not to be directly, but indirectly purchased. An unborn seed in the loins of the man Christ Jesus became the offset or corresponding price for the seed of Adam unborn at the time of his transgression." *E453*

JOB 33:24,25: "Then he is gracious unto him, and saith, Deliver

him from going down to the pit: I have found a ransom. His flesh shall be fresher than a child's: he shall return to the days of his youth..."

ISA. 35:10: "And the ransomed of the LORD shall return, and come to Zion with songs and everlasting joy upon their heads: they shall obtain joy and gladness, and sorrow and sighing shall flee away."

ROM. 5:12: "Wherefore, as by one man sin entered into the world, and death by sin; and so death passed upon all men, for that [*margin and Diag.*, 'in whom'] all have sinned..."

LOVE DOES NOT SET ASIDE JUSTICE

"Love's method was not...to over-rule and oppose the sentence, nor to interfere with its full execution, but to provide a substitute, a ransom, for man...its design is to accomplish more, viz., to effect a **restitution** for all of mankind willing after experience to return to loyalty to God and his righteous law." *E452*

THE PRICE NOT TAKEN BACK

"For our Lord Jesus to have been raised a man would have implied...the taking back of our ransom...." *E454*

JOHN 6:51: "I am the living bread which came down from heaven: if any man eat of this bread, he shall live for ever: and the bread that I will give is my flesh, which I will give for the life of the world."

1 COR. 15:45-48: "...The first man Adam was made a living soul; the last Adam was *made* a **quickening spirit**. Howbeit that *was* not first which is spiritual, but that which is natural; and afterward that which is spiritual. The first man *is* of the earth, earthy: the second man [the second Adam] *is* the Lord from heaven [at his second presence, during the Millennium].....As we have borne the image of the earthy [Adam] we [the church, joint-heirs with Christ, and sharers...in the divine nature...] shall also bear the image of the heavenly [— the second Adam]." *E455*

1 JOHN 3:2: "...We shall be like him; for we shall see him as he is."

2 PET. 1:4: "...partakers of the divine nature..."

ROM. 2:7: "...glory and honor and immortality...."

"Our Lord has become the second Adam — because he took the first Adam's position, as head of the race, by purchasing...it, with his own life. But as it was the **man** Christ Jesus who gave himself as the ransom-price, it could not be the man Christ Jesus who would be the father of the race. The **man** Christ Jesus laid down all that he had for the redemption of the **man** Adam and his race...." *E453*

THE RANSOM DEPOSITED

"The ransom was laid down at the cross, when Jesus cried,...

LUKE 23:46: *Diag*. "'...Father, into thy hands I commit my spirit....'

"My life! Thus Jesus, so to speak, made a deposit of the ransom price without definitely applying it." *R5880:5*

"He finished this work of laying down His life, surrendering it, sacrificing it, permitting it to be taken from Him, when He on the cross cried: 'It is finished!' Nothing more could be laid down than was there laid down — a Ransom, a corresponding price, for Father Adam. But it was not paid over as a price in settlement of Adam's account, else Adam and the entire sinner race would then and there have been turned over to Jesus. The price was merely laid in the hands of Divine Justice as a deposit, to the credit of the One who had died, that He might apply it later in harmony with the Divine Plan." *Eii*

THE IMPUTATION OF THE MERIT

"Every reference of Scripture to **Justification by faith** — that we are justified by the blood of Christ, etc., is a testimony...— that...

2 COR. 5:19,21: "'To wit, that God was in Christ, reconciling the world unto himself, not imputing their trespasses unto them; and hath committed unto us the word of reconciliation.... For he hath made him *to be* sin for us, who knew no sin; that we might be made the righteousness of God in him.'

1 THES. 4:14; 5:10: "'For if we believe that Jesus died and rose again, even so them also which sleep in Jesus will God bring with him....Who died for us, that, whether we wake or sleep, we should live together with him.'" *F444*

"When he ascended into heaven...

"His next step was to embargo, or mortgage it, by imputing a share of it to his church...." *R5880:6*

HEB. 9:14: "For Christ is not entered into the holy places made with hands, *which are* the figures of the true; but into heaven itself, now to appear in the presence of God for us..."

THE FINAL APPLICATION

"The ransom will be fully paid and...disposed of after the church shall have passed beyond the veil...and when the great High Priest, Head and body...shall seal the new covenant and put it into...operation on behalf of Adam and all his race....before human restitution can properly begin. Man's recovery from death is part of the ransom work." *R5882:4*

HOSEA 13:14: "I will ransom them from the power of the grave; I will redeem them from death: O death, I will be thy plagues; O grave, I will be thy destruction: repentance shall be hid from mine eyes."

ADAM REDEEMED

ROM. 4:18: "Who against hope believed in hope, that he might become the father of many nations, according to that which was spoken, So shall thy seed be."

RANSOM NOT PARDON

"**Pardon** — 'To remit the penalty of; to let pass.' "Webster— 'To refrain from exacting the penalty. In Law — To release from a punishment that has been imposed by sentence.'" *E459*

"And the more this thought of a ransom — **a corresponding price** — is considered, the more force does it seem to contain, and the more light does it shed upon the entire work of the Atonement. The thought, and the only thought, contained in it is that as Adam, through

disobedience, forfeited his **being**, his **soul**, all his rights to life and to earth, so Christ Jesus our Lord, by his death, as a **corresponding price**, paid a full and exact offset for Father Adam's soul or being, and in consequence for all his posterity — every human soul — sharers in his fall and in his loss. Rom. 5:12" *E428*

For further words translated "**Redemption**" see *Vol. 5 Chapt. 15*.

REINCARNATION AND TRANSMIGRATION

DEFINITION

"**Reincarnation**: —...rebirth in new bodies or forms of life; especially: a rebirth of a soul in a new human body. A belief....that the souls of the dead successively return to earth in new forms or bodies."

"**Transmigration**: —...The passing of the individual soul at death into a new body or new form of life usually human or animal....transmigration of souls (could remember all the previous lives in his metempsychoses—Erwin Schrodinger)...." *Webster's Unabridged Dictionary, 1964*

HISTORY

"This doctrine, famous in antiquity and still held as a religious tenet by certain sects of the civilized world, has its roots far back in primitive culture. It is developed out of three universal savage beliefs: (1) that man has a soul, connected in some vague way with the breath, which can be separated from his material body, temporarily in sleep, permanently at death; (2) that animals and even plants have souls, and are possessed to a large extent of human powers and passions; (3) that souls can be transferred from one organism to another.

"It is formed by combination of two sets of ideas which belong to different planes of culture; the ideas of judgment and punishment after death elaborated in a relatively cultured society by a priestly class are combined with ideas, like that of totem transmigration, proper to a savage society." *Encyclopedia Britannica*

IN HEATHEN RELIGION AND PHILOSOPHIES

DRUIDS — they looked at transmigration as a means of purifying the soul and preparing it for eternal life.

TIBET — The soul of the Dalai-Lama is believed to transmigrate.

INDIA — From the Upanishads (not as early as Vedas). Transmigration is used for moral retribution. It is the infusion of the lower beliefs of the non-Aryan conquered races into the higher religious system of their Aryan conquerors.

LATER HINDUISM — 8,400,000 forms of existence through which all souls were liable to pass before returning to their source in the Deity.

BUDDHISM — (Reaction to above) — there is no soul...Karma (Character) passes from individual to

individual, till in the perfectly righteous man the will to live is extinguished and that particular chain of lives is brought to an end.

"Though Buddhism was almost a complete revolution of thought from Brahmanism, yet it carried with it the absurd doctrine of the transmigration of souls and of numerous heavens for the good according to merit, and about 136 hells situated inside the earth for the wicked, according to their deserts. And the gloomy end, whenever or however reached, is annihilation for good and bad alike...." *R1184:3*

BRAHMANISM — "It presents elaborate, ritualistic and ceremonial rules of the most exacting character, and promulgated the doctrine of the transmigration of souls.

"The highest future bliss to which the Brahminist aspires is absorption into Brahm; and as his normal condition is presumed to be that of unconscious sleep, absorption into Brahm would signify nothing more than annihilation. However, before he reaches this consummation of his hope, the Brahmanist expects to pass through a series of transmigrations, until deemed worthy of it. His desire is to so act in the present life as to rise a grade higher in the next birth. If he has been wicked he will be a step lower, or if very wicked he will be sent to one or other of the innumerable hells to expiate his guilt and to reappear on earth in mineral, vegetable or animal form before he rises again to the human. Or is counted worthy to advance upward he enjoys a heaven of carnal delights with one or other of the superior gods. His worthiness of future reward, however, is not made dependent upon actual virtue, but rather upon conformity to Brahman rites and ceremonies, the liberal support of the priesthood, etc...." *R1183:3*

GREECE — Orphic religion...first appeared in Thrace, 6th Century B. C.

Orpheus — "Is said to have taught that soul and body are united by a compact unequally binding on either; the soul is divine, immortal and aspires to freedom, while the body holds it in fetters as a prisoner. Death dissolves this compact, but only to re-imprison the liberated soul after a short time: for the wheel of birth revolves inexorably. Thus the soul continues its journeys, alternating between a separate unrestrained existence and fresh reincarnation, round the wide circle of necessity, as the companion of many bodies of men and animals. To these unfortunate prisoners Orpheus proclaims the message of liberation, that they stand in need of the grace of redeeming gods and of Dionysus in particular, and calls them to turn to God by ascetic piety of life and self-purification: the purer their lives, the higher will be their next reincarnation, until the soul had completed the spiral ascent of destiny to live forever as God from whom it comes."

Plato — "Real weight and importance of metempsychosis is due to his adoption — found in the eschatological myth which closes the Republic — in which Er reports having seen The soul of Orpheus changing into a swan, Thamyras becoming a nightingale, musical birds choosing to be men, the soul of Atalanta choosing the honors of an athlete. Men were seen passing into animals and wild and tame animals changing into each other."

In Plato's view the number of souls was fixed; birth therefore is never the creation of a soul, but only a transmigration from one body to another.

JEWISH LITERATURE — Attempts have been made with little success to find metempsychoses in early Jewish literature. But there are traces of it in Philo, and it is definitely adopted in the Kabbala.

CHRISTIAN DEVELOPMENT — Within the Christian Church it was held during the first centuries by isolated Gnostic sects, and by the Manichaeans in the 4th and 5th centuries, but was invariably repudiated by orthodox theologians. In the middle ages these traditions were continued by numerous sects known collectively as Cathari. At the Renaissance we find the doctrine in Giordano Bruno, and in the 17th century in the theosophist van Helmont. A modified form of it was adopted by Swedenborg.

THEOSOPHY — Modern theosophy, which draws its inspiration from India, has taken metempsychosis as a cardinal tenet; it is,

says a recent theosophical writer, 'the master key to modern problems,' and among them to the problem of heredity.

"Theosophy holds that 'all things are of God' in the absolute and ridiculous sense. It holds that all finite existences were effluxed or thrown off from one Infinite Being; that these effluxed beings — angels, men, beasts, birds and devils — being portions of Deity, are immortal, and (as Satan has always taught) 'shall not surely die.'...

"Theosophy claims not only that man will live forever future, but that he has lived forever past. It appeals to the weak-minded with the question, 'Have you never seen places that seem strangely familiar the first times you visited them? Those were places you had seen before your present existence began.' And, as of old, Satan may sometimes assist a sluggish imagination with a dream. Theosophy holds that death is not death, but a new birth; and that each individual will be reborn again and again until he has developed sufficiently the divine nature; and that then he will be reabsorbed into God for eternity.

"Theosophy professes to be based upon neither theology nor philosophy. The word Theosophy is defined by its advocates to mean the Religion of Wisdom. They claim that its wisdom is divine, resulting from direct intuition and

communion with God. Consequently they reject philosophical reasoning, and revelation such as the Scriptures, as hindrances to true wisdom....

"Therefore Theosophy is, as it claims to be, preeminently suited to the sentiments of the majority of the wise children of this world, who do not appreciate either their own imperfections or God's mercy in Christ.

"Of course none of these delusions has any use for the doctrine of the cross of Christ — the 'ransom for all' — or its testimony 'in due time,' now or hereafter. See 1 Tim. 2:4-6...." *R5801:2,3,4*

"And those words give the most remarkable hint of its origin. For its creed is 'the doctrines of demons' from beginning to end. No personal devil, that which is mystically called the Devil being but the negative and opposite of God. No atonement except man's 'unification' with himself; not forgiveness of sin, souls being required to wear away their guilt by self-expiation, miracles, mysteries, ultimate deification — these are specimen articles of the delusive creed. Its whole character and contents so far as we can comprehend them as yet is another phase of Satanic delusion...." *R1009:5*

Note: the above section on Heathen Religions and Philosophies was taken from *Encyclopedia Britannica and McClintock and Strong*, unless otherwise stated.

ARGUMENTS AGAINST REINCARNATION AND TRANSMIGRATION

Outside the narrow circle of theosophists there is little disposition to accept the doctrine (this is in the Christian scheme): But it may be worth while to point out that there are two fatal objections to it. The first is that personal identity depends on memory, and we do not remember our previous incarnations. The second is that the soul, whatever it may be, is influenced throughout all its qualities by the qualities of the body: modern psychology discredits the idea that the soul is a metaphysical essence which can pass indifferently from one body to another. If (to suppose the impossible) the soul of a dog were to pass into a man's body it would be so changed as to be no longer the same soul; and so, in a less degree, of change from one human body to another. — *Encyclopedia Britannica.*

ANIMAL SOULS EXIST SEPARATE AND DISTINCT FROM HUMAN SOULS

ANIMALS EXISTED LONG BEFORE MAN WAS CREATED

"The next two epoch-days...brought forward living creatures that **move**—in the sea and on the land—vegetation, etc., still progressing, and all preparing for the introduction of

man, the earthly image of his Creator, 'crowned with glory and honor,' to be king of earth....Man's creation, the final work, came in the close of the sixth day..." *F29*, See also Gen. 1:19-31.

THEY ARE OF INFERIOR VALUE TO MAN

"This distinction in the statement implies that there was a difference between the ordinary development of plant life and the special creation of man to be the lord of earth, the representative of the Creator." *R3921:3*

ANIMALS INFERIOR — (1) RECEIVE NO RESURRECTION

ECCL. 3:19,21: "For that which befalleth the sons of men befalleth beasts; even one thing befalleth them: as the one dieth, so dieth the other; yea, they have all one breath; so that a man hath no preeminence above a beast: for all is vanity....Who knoweth the spirit of man that goeth upward, and the spirit of the beast that goeth downward to the earth?"

"Now we can see why it is that the Scriptures speak of 'souls' in connection with the lower animals. They, as well as man, are sentient beings or creatures of intelligence, only of lower orders. they, as well as man, can see, hear, feel, taste and smell; and each can reason up to the standard of his organism, though, none as abstrusely nor on as high a plane as man. We read...**Gen. 1:30**: 'To you it shall be meat, and to every beast of the earth, and to every fowl, of the air, and to every thing that creepeth upon the earth, wherein there is life....' (Heb. '***nephesh chaiyah***' — **a living soul** .)...

GEN. 1:20: "'Let the waters bring forth the moving creation that hath **life** (Heb. — **a living soul**).'

"The distinction between man and beast is not the kind of breath or life, but in that man has a higher organism than other animals; possessing moral and intellectual powers and qualities in the image or likeness of those possessed by the Creator, who has a still higher organism, of spirit, not of flesh. And, as already shown, man's hope for a future life lies not in his inherent powers, but in his Creator's gracious provision which centered in the redemption of every soul of man from death, by the great Redeemer, and the consequent provision that whoever will may have everlasting life by **resurrection**, subject to the terms of the new covenant." *R1880:3,4*

ANIMALS INFERIOR — (2) ARE GIVEN AS FOOD TO MAN

GEN. 9:3: "Every moving thing that liveth shall be meat for you; even as the green herb have I given you all things."

"And as a son he had the rich token of his Father's loving providence in the vast domain of earth which he was to subdue and take possession of as his posterity would increase and require it; and all its products — animal, vegetable and mineral — were

subject to his control and use...” *R1266:2*

ANIMALS INFERIOR — (3)

LEV. 18:23: “Neither shalt thou lie with any beast to defile thyself....”

SOULS REPRODUCE AFTER THEIR OWN KIND

“But in nature we see the various species ‘each after its kind,’ entirely separate from each other, and kept so without any artificial fencing, etc. — kept so by the law of their Creator.” *F22*

See Also **Gen. 1:19-31.**

TRANSMIGRATION DENIES UNIVERSAL LAWS OF REPRODUCTION AND HEREDITY

“The different families of vegetables will now more unite and blend than will the various animal families.” *F32*

“Heredity:...the transmission of qualities from ancestor to descendant (as from parent to child)....” — *Websters’s Unabridged Dictionary, 1964*

DENIES RANSOM AND RESURRECTION

ROM. 5:17-19: “For if by one man’s offence death reigned by one; much more they which receive abundance of grace and of the gift of righteousness shall reign in life by one, Jesus Christ.) Therefore as by the offence of one *judgment came* upon all men to condemnation; even so by the righteousness of one *the free gift came* upon all men unto justification of life. For as by one man’s disobedience many were made sinners, so by the obedience of one shall many be made righteous.”

“The Apostle had a totally different thought: his preaching was to the effect that death is a real penalty for sin, and that there never could be life or consciousness, except by a resurrection of the dead, and that a resurrection of the dead could only come by divine favor in the accomplishment of a redemption of all that had been condemned to death....” *R3195:1*

ROM. 6:23: “For the wages of sin *is* death; but the gift of God *is* eternal life through Jesus Christ our Lord.”

1 COR. 15:21,22: “For since by man *came* death, by man *came* also the resurrection of the dead. For as in Adam all die, even so in Christ shall all be made alive.”

1 COR. 15:16,18: “For if the dead rise not,....Then they also which are fallen asleep in Christ are perished.”

See also Index: **Immortality; Ransom; Resurrection.**

RESPONSIBILITY TO THE TRUTH

“Whoever comes in contact with the truth, realizing its character, has thereby a responsibility with reference to it. It must be either received and acted upon, or rejected and despised. To ignore it does not release from responsibility. If we accept it...we have a responsibility TOWARD it also, because it is for ALL the household of faith; and each one receiving it...must dispense it....” *A349*

MATT. 5:16: “Let your light...shine....”

MATT. 6:23: “...If...the light that is in thee be [come] darkness, how great is that darkness!”

ISA. 62:10: “...Lift up a standard for the people.”

EFFECT OF TRUTHS NOW DUE

“A knowledge of these things, and the evidences that they are nigh, even at the door, should have a powerful influence upon...the consecrated...who are seeking the prize of the divine nature. We urge such, while they lift up their heads and rejoice, knowing that their redemption draweth nigh, to lay aside every...hindrance, and to run patiently the race...they have started. Look away from self and its unavoidable weaknesses,...knowing... such...are covered...and that your sacrifice and self-denials are acceptable to God through our Redeemer...the strength sufficient...by which we can be ‘overcomers,’ is provided in his Word....derived from a **knowledge** of his character and plans, and the condition upon which we may share in them....” *A346*

2 PET. 1:2-4: “Grace and peace be multiplied unto you through the knowledge of God, and of Jesus our Lord, According as his divine power hath given unto us all things that *pertain* unto life and godliness, through the knowledge of him that hath called us to glory and virtue: Whereby are given unto us exceeding great and precious promises: that by these ye might be partakers of the divine nature....”

A TEST

“But to obtain this knowledge and this strength...will surely test the sincerity of your consecration vows. You have consecrated all your time, all your talents, to the Lord....How much of it are you giving? Are you still willing...to give up your plans and methods, and the theories of yourselves and others to accept of God’s plan and way and time of doing his great work?...at the cost of earthly friendships and social ties...to give up time from other things for the investigations of these glorious themes...with the...knowledge that it will cost you this self-

denial? If all is not consecrated... you will begrudge the time and effort...to obtain the strength needful for all the trials of faith incident to the present...above other times.” *A346*

“The sincerity of your sacrifice...will be tested...and will prove you either worthy or unworthy of...the kingdom. If you give diligence to the Word...and receive its truths into a good, honest, consecrated heart,...it will become the all absorbing theme of life... and...separate you from the world and from many nominal Christians....they will...separate you from their company, and you will be counted a fool for Christ’s sake....” *A347*

2 COR. 4:8-10: “*We are* troubled on every side, yet not distressed;

we are perplexed, but not in despair; Persecuted, but not forsaken; cast down, but not destroyed; Always bearing about in the body the dying of the Lord Jesus, that the life also of Jesus might be made manifest in our body."

LUKE 6:22: "Blessed are ye, when men shall hate you, and when they shall separate you *from their company*, and shall reproach *you* , and cast out your name as evil, for the Son of man's sake."

1 JOHN 3:1: "Behold, what manner of love the Father hath bestowed upon us, that we should be called the sons of God: therefore the world knoweth us not, because it knew him not."

1 COR. 3:18: "Let no man deceive himself. If any man among you seemeth to be wise in this world, let him become a fool, that he may be wise."

"Are you willing to follow on...through evil and through good report...to forsake all, as he may lead you by his Word? — to ignore the wishes of friends, as well as your own desires..." *A347*

See also Index: **Unity of the Faith; Walking In the Light.**

RESTITUTION

"To set up **again**. Give back something...that has been **lost** or **taken away**. A return to former condition or situation." *Webster*

Restitution: "***apokatastasis,***" "**reconstitution**" — *Strong*; from "***apokathistemi,***" "**reconstitute**," the verb translated "**restore**" in Matthew 17:11; Acts 1:6

MATT. 17:11: "And Jesus answered and said unto them, Elias truly shall first come, and restore all things."

ACTS 1:6: "When they therefore were come together, they asked of him, saying, Lord, wilt thou at this time restore again the kingdom to Israel?"

"Used of...the restoration of estates to rightful owners, a balancing of accounts" — *Vine*

"A complete restoration, reestablishment, restitution" — *Liddell and Scott*

Also used of "**the return** of the stars to the same place in the heavens as in the former year...."

RESTITUTION OF ALL THINGS

ACTS 3:19-21 (*Diag.*): "Repent ye therefore, and be converted, that your sins may be blotted out, when the times of refreshing shall come from the presence ['from the face of the Lord;' *Rotherham*] And he shall send Jesus Christ, which before was preached unto you: Whom the heaven must receive until the times of restitution of all things, which God hath spoken by the mouth of...his holy prophets.... from of old."

PICTURED BY ISRAEL'S JUBILEE

"Every fiftieth year, counting from the time of their entrance into Canaan, was to Israel a year of Jubilee, a time of rejoicing and restitution, in which broken families were reunited and lost Homesteads were restored...." *B176*

LEV. 15:10: "...Ye shall return every man unto his possession, and ye shall return every man unto his family."

"This arrangement...foreshadowed...the release of all mankind from the debt of sin and its bondage and servitude...— the great restitution... to come to all the race, now groaning under the bondage of corruption and slavery to sin." *B177*

ROM. 8:21,22: "...the creature itself also shall be delivered from the bondage of corruption into the glorious liberty of the children of God. For we know that the whole creation groaneth and travaileth in pain together until now."

"God has evidently designed the permission of evil for six thousand years, as well as that the cleansing and restitution of all shall be accomplished during the seventh thousand." *A94*

See also Index: **Chronology**

"...if the Times of Restitution began with October, A.D. 1874, and if our Lord's second presence was then due...those watching should see some distinguishable indications of what the Scriptures explain to be the first work of his presence, viz., the harvesting...,the gathering...of his elect, and...preparatory steps toward the establishment of Christ's Kingdom....The harvest of the church is indeed upon us; the wheat is being separated from the tares; shaping themselves, making ready for the permanent establishment of the redeemer's Kingdom...." *B190*

See also Index: **Harvest; Day of Vengeance**

STAGES OF INAUGURATION

"Messiah's Kingdom has various stages of inauguration. First, in His **Parousia** the glorified Jesus quickens, or resurrects, the sleeping members of the Body of Christ. This is the first executive act of the Great One whom God has so highly exalted — the Heir of the great Abrahamic promise. His members must be completed before He will officially take His position as the King of the world. Assurance of this fact is given by the inspired Word: 'When Christ, who is our Life, shall appear, then shall we also appear with Him in glory.' (Col. 3:4) Next in order the Master deals with the living members of His Body, the Church. As shown in the parables of the pounds and the talents, the Master's judgment concerning worthiness or unworthiness in the Kingdom must pass upon all of His consecrated ones and the full number of the Elect must be found and be glorified by the resurrection 'Change' — because 'Flesh and blood cannot inherit the Kingdom of God.' (1 Cor. 15:50) Then the dominion of the world will be assumed. The glorified One will ask of the Father, and He will give Him the heathen for His inheritance and the uttermost parts of the earth for His possession. 'He will rule them with a rod of iron. As the vessels of a potter shall they be broken into shivers.' Psa. 2; Rev. 2:27" *Civ*

EVIDENCES OF TIMES OF RESTITUTION

"The hidden things are being made manifest; and...the first work of Restitution is properly a breaking down of the old and decaying structure which stands in the place which the new is to occupy....the first work of the tenderest physician is often to open the wounds, and to cleanse and amputate according to the necessities of the patient, in order to make thorough the work of healing....the great Physician....wounds to heal, and the trouble and sifting in

the Church and the world are....a most important part of the Restitution work." *B197*

"The spirit of **liberty** throughout all the land is indeed sometimes carried to an unreasonable extent by...the hotheaded; and yet it is all part of the great unavoidable Jubilee excitement, occasioned by the ignorance and oppression of the past." *B199*

"Laws are enacted for the protection of the lives and the health of the people....These reforms are the results of the awakening of the people by the Jubilee Trump of knowledge and liberty....True, such laws and arrangements are not yet perfected, nor are they universal: but the beginnings noticed rejoice our hearts...." *B198, 199*

"Before the end of this great Jubilee every human being may go entirely free—may get back to man's first estate,...receiving back through Christ all that was lost in Adam." *B200*

ISRAEL'S RESTORATION A SIGN

"...every fresh evidence of the removal of Israel's blindness, and of divine favor toward them, is...a fresh proof that the Gospel age is closing....the measure of Israel's **cast off** condition is the measure of the time of **special** favor to others, for the calling of other people (Gentiles..., which call ends **in** the beginning of the Times of Restitution; but not...**at** the very beginning of it.)" *B211*

See also Index: **Covenants; Israel.**

ACTS 3:19,21: "Repent ye...that your sins may be blotted out, when the times of refreshing ...come...And he shall send Jesus Christ, Whom the heaven must receive until the times of restitution of all things..."

"Placing the statements of Paul and Peter...together, we learn that the time for the return of favor to Israel will be in the beginning of the Times of Restitution, at the second advent of our Lord....,when the heavens no longer retain him." *B211*

"The Apostle Paul distinctly shows that the regathering of Israel signifies a regathering of Israel or restitution, for all mankind...." *C286*

ROM. 11:12,15: "Now if the fall of them be the riches of the world, and the diminishing of them the riches of the Gentiles; how much more their fulness? For if the casting away of them be the reconciling of the world, what shall the receiving of them be, but life from the dead?"

PROCLAIMING RESTITUTION

ISA. 52:7,8: "How beautiful upon the mountains are the feet of him that bringeth good tidings, that publisheth peace; that bringeth good tidings of good, that publisheth

salvation; that saith unto Zion, Thy God reigneth! Thy watchmen shall lift up the voice; with the voice together shall they sing: for they shall see eye to eye, when the LORD shall bring again Zion."

"...all who are true watchmen can at this time see clearly, as one man, and can together harmoniously sing the new song of Moses and the Lamb — the song of Restitution, so clearly taught, not only in the Law of Moses, which was 'a shadow of the good things to come,' but also in the clearer revelations of the Lamb of God contained in the writings of the New Testament, saying..." *C237*

REV. 15:3,4: "...Just and true are thy ways....all nations shall come and worship before thee."

RESTITUTION PROMISES

GEN. 22:18: "...In thy seed shall all the nations of the earth be blessed...." (Cf. Gen. 12:3; 26:4; 28:14; Acts 3:25; Gal. 3:8,16,29.)

NUM. 14:21: "...As truly as I live, all the earth shall be filled with the glory of the Lord." (Cf. Psa. 72:19)

PSA. 72:2-4,6-8,11-15,17: "He shall judge thy people with righteousness, and thy poor with judgment. The mountains shall bring peace to the people, and the little hills, by righteousness....He shall judge the poor of the people, he shall save the children of the needy, and shall break in pieces the oppressor....He shall come down like rain upon the mown grass: as showers that water the earth. In his days shall the righteous flourish; and abundance of peace so long as the moon endureth. He shall have dominion also from sea to sea, and from the river unto the ends of the earth....Yea, all kings shall fall down before him: all nations shall serve him. For he shall deliver the needy when he crieth; the poor also, and him that hath no helper. He shall spare the poor and needy, and shall save the souls of the needy. He shall redeem their soul from deceit and violence: and precious shall their blood be in his sight. And he shall live, and to him shall be given of the gold of Sheba: prayer also shall be made for him continually; and daily shall he be praised....his name shall endure for ever: his name shall be continued as long as the sun: and men shall be blessed in him: all nations shall call him blessed."

PSA. 90:3,4: "Thou turnest man to destruction; and sayest, Return,

ye children of men. For a thousand years in thy sight are but as yesterday when it is past, and as a watch in the night."

ISA. 9:6,7: "...For unto us a child is born, unto us a son is given: and the government shall be upon his shoulder: and his name shall be called Wonderful, Counsellor, The mighty God, The everlasting Father, The Prince of Peace. Of the increase of his government and peace there shall be no end,

upon the throne of David, and upon his kingdom, to order it, and to establish it with judgment and with justice from henceforth even for ever. The zeal of the LORD of hosts will perform this." (Cf. Luke 1:32,33)

ISA. 11:3-12: "...he shall not judge after the sight of his eyes, neither reprove after the hearing of his ears: But with righteousness shall he judge the poor, and reprove with equity for the meek of the earth:....And righteousness shall be the girdle of his loins, and faithfulness the girdle of his reins. The wolf also shall dwell with the lamb, and the leopard shall lie down with the kid; and the calf and the young lion and the fatling together; and a little child shall lead them. And the cow and the bear shall feed; their young ones shall lie down together: and the lion shall eat straw like the ox. And the sucking child shall play on the hole of the asp, and the weaned child shall put his hand on the cockatrice' den. They shall not hurt nor destroy in all my holy mountain: for the earth shall be full of the knowledge of the LORD, as the waters cover the sea. And in that day there shall be a root of Jesse, which shall stand for an ensign of the people; to it shall the Gentiles seek: and his rest shall be glorious. And it shall come to pass in that day, *that* the Lord shall set his hand again the second time to recover the remnant of his people,....And he shall set up an ensign for the nations, and shall assemble the outcasts of Israel, and gather together the dispersed...from the four corners [*margin,* wings] of the earth." (Cf. Isa. 65:25; 42:1,3,4)

Isa. 25:6-9: "And in this mountain shall the LORD of hosts make unto all people a feast of fat things, a feast of wines on the lees, of fat things full of marrow, of wines on the lees well refined. And he will destroy in this mountain the face of the covering cast over all people, and the veil that is spread over all nations. He will swallow up death in victory; and the Lord GOD will wipe away tears from off all faces; and the rebuke of his people shall he take away from off all the earth: for the LORD hath spoken it. And it shall be said in that day, Lo, this is our God; we have waited for him, and he will save us: this is the LORD; we have waited for him, we will be glad and rejoice in his salvation."

ISA. 33:24: "And the inhabitant shall not say, I am sick: the people that dwell therein shall be forgiven their iniquity." (Cf. Jer. 33:16)

ISA. 35:1,2,5-10: "The wilderness and the solitary place shall be glad for them; and the desert shall rejoice, and blossom as the rose. It shall blossom abundantly, and rejoice even with joy and singing: the glory of Lebanon shall be given unto it, the excellency of Carmel and Sharon, they shall see the glory of the LORD, and the excellency of our God....Then the eyes of the blind shall be opened, and the ears of the deaf shall be unstopped. Then shall the lame

man leap as an hart, and the tongue of the dumb sing: for in the wilderness shall waters break out, and streams in the desert. And the parched ground shall become a pool, and the thirsty land springs of water:...And an highway shall be there, and a way, and it shall be called The way of holiness; the unclean shall not pass over it; but it *shall be* for those: the wayfaring men, though fools, shall not err. No lion shall be there, nor any ravenous beast shall go up thereon, it shall not be found *there*; but the redeemed shall walk *there*: And the ransomed of the LORD shall return, and come to Zion with songs and everlasting joy upon their heads: they shall obtain joy and gladness, and sorrow and sighing shall flee away."

See also Index: **Three Ways**

ISA. 40:4,5: "Every valley shall be exalted, and every mountain and hill shall be made low: and the crooked shall be made straight, and the rough places plain: And the glory of the LORD shall be revealed, and all flesh shall see it together: for the mouth of the LORD hath spoken it."

ISA. 42:6,7: "I the LORD have called thee in righteousness, and will hold thine hand, and will keep thee, and give thee for a covenant of the people, for a light of the Gentiles; To open the blind eyes, to bring out the prisoners from the prison, and them that sit in darkness out of the prison house."

ISA. 49:6,8-13: "And he said, It is a light thing that thou shouldest be my servant to raise up the tribes of Jacob, and to restore the preserved of Israel: I will also give thee for a light to the Gentiles, that thou mayest be my salvation unto the end of the earth....I will...give thee for a covenant of the people, to establish the earth, to cause to inherit the desolate heritages; That thou mayest say to the prisoners, Go forth; to them that *are* in darkness, Show yourselves. They shall feed in the ways, and their pastures *shall be* in all high places. They shall not hunger nor thirst; neither shall the heat nor sun smite them: for he that hath mercy on them shall lead them, even by the springs of water shall he guide them. And I will make all my mountains a way, and my highways shall be exalted. Behold, these shall come from far: and, lo, these from the north and from the west; and these from the land of Sinim. Sing, O heavens; and be joyful, O earth;...for the LORD hath comforted his people, and will have mercy upon his afflicted."

ISA. 52:9,10: "Break forth into joy, sing together, ye waste places of Jerusalem: for the LORD hath comforted his people, he hath redeemed Jerusalem. The LORD hath made bare his holy arm in the eyes of all the nations; and all the ends of the earth shall see the salvation of our God."

ISA. 65:16-25: "...He who blesseth himself in the earth shall bless himself in the God of truth; and he that

sweareth in the earth shall swear by the God of truth because the former troubles are forgotten and because they are hid from mine eyes. For, behold, I create new heavens and a new earth: and the former shall not be remembered, nor come into mind. But be ye glad and rejoice forever in that which I create: for, behold, I create Jerusalem a rejoicing, and her people a joy. And I will rejoice in Jerusalem, and joy in my people: and the voice of weeping shall be no more heard in her, nor the voice of crying. There shall be no more thence an infant of days nor an old man that hath not filled his days: for the child shall die an hundred years old; and as a sinner shall be accursed, he who dieth at a hundred years old." *(Leeser)*

"And they shall build houses, and inhabit them; and they shall plant vineyards, and eat the fruit of them. They shall not build, and another inhabit; they shall not plant, and another eat: for as the days of a tree are the days of my people, and mine elect shall long enjoy the work of their hands. [*margin*] They shall not labour in vain, nor bring forth for trouble; for they are the seed of the blessed

of the LORD, and their offspring with them. And it shall come to pass, that before they call, I will answer; and while they are yet speaking, I will hear. The wolf and the lamb shall feed together, and the lion shall eat straw like the bullock: and dust shall be the serpent's meat. They shall not hurt nor destroy in all my holy mountain, saith the LORD." *(King James)*

JER. 31:15-17: "Thus saith the LORD; A voice was heard in Ramah, lamentation, and bitter weeping; Rachel weeping for her children refused to be comforted for her children, because they *were* not. Thus saith the LORD; Refrain thy voice from weeping, and thine eyes from tears: for thy work shall be rewarded, saith the LORD; and they shall come again from the land of the enemy. And there is hope in thine end, saith the LORD, that thy children shall come again to their own border." (Cf. Matt. 2:16-18)

RESTITUTION SPOKEN OF BY THE MOUTH OF ALL GOD'S HOLY PROPHETS SINCE THE WORLD BEGAN. ACTS 3:21

PROPHET SCRIPTURE

l. Enoch Jude 14,15 2. Jacob Gen.49:10 Shiloh (King of Peace) 3. Moses Deut.18:15; Gen.22:15-18; Lev.25:9,10 4. Samuel 1 Sam.2:6 5. Job Job 14:13-15;33:19,20 6. David Psa. 30:5; 49:14;90:3,4 7. Solomon Prov. 2:21; 11:31; Eccl.1:4 8. Isaiah Isa. 2:2-4; 25:6-10; 35:8-10 9. Jeremiah Jer. 24:7; 31:16,29; 31:34 10. Ezekiel Ezek.10:2-5;16:16-63;36:26,27,35

11. Daniel Dan. 2:44; 7:27 12. Hosea Hos. 13:14 13. Joel Joel 2:22,32 14. Amos Amos 9:11,12 15. Obadiah Obadiah 21 16. Jonah Jonah 4:11 17. Micah Micah 4:1-5,7,8 18. Nahum Nahum 2:3-6 19. Habbakuk Hab. 2:14 20. Zephaniah Zeph. 2:11;3:8,9 21. Haggai Hag. 2:7 22. Zechariah Zech. 2:11;3:10;8:3,12,20-23 23. Malachi Mal. 4:2;3:11 24. John the Baptist John 1:29;(Luke 16:16)

See also *Bible Students Manual, page 318*; Acts 3:21 "of all things."

RESTORATION OF SODOM AND SAMARIA

EZEK. 16:55,60-63: "When thy sisters, Sodom and her daughters, shall return to their former estate, and Samaria and her daughters shall return to their former estate, then thou and thy daughters shall return to your former estate....Nevertheless I will remember my covenant with thee in the days of thy youth, and I will establish unto thee an everlasting covenant. Then thou shalt remember thy ways, and be ashamed, when thou shalt receive thy sisters, thine elder and thy younger: and I will give them unto thee for daughters, but not by thy covenant. And I will establish my covenant with thee; and thou shalt know that I *am* the LORD: That thou mayest remember, and be confounded, and never open thy mouth any more because of thy shame, when I am pacified toward thee for all that thou hast done, saith the Lord GOD." (Cf. Jer. 48:47; 49:39; Joel 3:1)

MATT. 10:15; 11:24: "Verily I say unto you, It shall be more tolerable for the land of Sodom and Gomorrha in the day of judgment, than for that city....But I say unto you, That it shall be more tolerable for the land of Sodom in the day of judgment, than for thee."

THE KINGDOM

DAN. 2:44,45,35: "And in the days of these kings shall the God of heaven set up a kingdom, which shall never be destroyed: and the kingdom shall not be left to other people, but it shall break in pieces and consume all these kingdoms, and it shall stand for ever. Forasmuch as thou sawest that the stone was cut out of the mountain without hands, and that it brake in pieces the iron,....and the stone that smote the image became a great mountain, and filled the whole earth."

DAN. 7:13,14,27: "...one like the Son of man came....And there was given him dominion, and glory, and a kingdom, that all people, nations, and languages, should serve him: his dominion *is* an everlasting dominion, which shall not pass away, and his kingdom *that* which shall not be destroyed....And the kingdom and dominion, and the greatness of the kingdom under the whole heaven, shall be given to the people of the saints of the most High, whose kingdom *is* an everlasting kingdom, and all dominions shall serve and obey him."

THE SPIRIT UPON ALL FLESH

JOEL 2:28: "And it shall come to pass afterward, that I will pour out my spirit upon all flesh...."

UNIVERSAL PEACE

MICAH 4:1-4: "But in the last days it shall come to pass, *that* the mountain of the house of the LORD shall be established in the top of the mountains, and it shall be exalted above the hills; and people shall flow unto it. And many nations shall come, and say, Come, and let us go up to the mountain of the LORD, and to the house of the God of Jacob; and he will teach us of his ways, and we will walk in his paths: for the law shall go forth of Zion, and the word of the LORD from Jerusalem. And he shall judge among many people, and rebuke strong nations afar off; and they shall beat their swords into plowshares, and their spears into pruninghooks: nation shall not lift up a sword against nation, neither shall they learn war any more. But they shall sit every man under his vine and under his fig tree; and none shall make *them* afraid: for the mouth of the LORD of hosts hath spoken *it*." (Cf. Isa. 2:2-4)

SERVING WITH ONE ACCORD

ZEPH. 3:9: "For then will I turn to the people a pure language, that they may all call upon the name of the LORD, to serve him with one consent."

GREAT JOY TO ALL PEOPLE

LUKE 2:10,11,13,14: "And the angel said unto them, Fear not: for, behold, I bring you good tidings of great joy, which shall be to all people. For unto you is born this day in the city of David a Saviour, which is Christ the Lord....And suddenly there was with the angel a multitude of the heavenly host praising God, and saying, Glory to God in the highest, and on earth peace, good will toward men."

ALL TO BE RAISED

JOHN 5:28,29 *Diag.*: "Wonder not at this; Because an Hour comes in which ALL those in the TOMBS will hear his voice, and will come forth; THOSE HAVING DONE GOOD

things, to a Resurrection of Life: and THOSE HAVING DONE EVIL things, to a Resurrection of Judgment."

1 COR. 15:20-23,54: "But now is Christ risen from the dead, *and* become the firstfruits of them that slept. For since by man came death, by man *came* also the resurrection of the dead. For as in

Adam all die, even so in Christ shall all be made alive. But every man in his own order: Christ the firstfruits; afterward they that are Christ's at his coming. [**in the presence** (*Parousia*) **of him**, *Diag.*]....So when this corruptible shall have put on incorruption, and this mortal shall have put on immortality, then shall be brought to pass the saying that is written, Death is swallowed up in victory."

HOSEA 13:14: "I will ransom them from the power of the grave; I will redeem them from death: O death, I will be thy plagues; O grave, I will be thy destruction:"

PHIL. 2:9,10, *Diag.*: "And therefore God supremely exalted Him, and freely granted to him THAT Name which is above Every Name; in order that in the NAME of Jesus Every Knee should bend, of those in heaven, and of those on earth, and of those beneath [**underground**, *interlineary*]; and Every Tongue confess that Jesus Christ is Lord, for the Glory of God the Father."

1 TIM. 2:4-6: "Who will have all men to be saved, and to come unto the knowledge of the truth. For *there is* one God, and one mediator between God and men, the man Christ Jesus; Who gave himself a ransom for all, to be testified in due time."

DAN 12:2,3: "And many of them that sleep in the dust of the earth shall awake, some to everlasting life, and some to shame *and* everlasting contempt. And they that be wise shall shine as the brightness of the firmament; and they that turn many to righteousness as the stars for ever and ever."

REV. 15:3: "And they sing the song of Moses the servant of God, and the song of the Lamb, saying, Great and marvellous *are* thy works, Lord God Almighty; just and true *are* thy ways, thou King of saints." [AO King of the nations," *Diag*.; or Aages," according to some *MSS*.]

REV. 15:4: *Diag*. "Who shall not fear, O Lord, and glorify thy NAME? Since thou alone art bountiful; For All the NATIONS shall come and worship in thy presence; Because thy RIGHTEOUS ACTS were made manifest."

SATAN BOUND

REV. 20:2,3: "And he laid hold on the dragon, that old serpent, which is the Devil, and Satan, and bound him a thousand years, And cast him into the bottomless pit, and shut him up, and set a seal upon him, that he should

deceive the nations no more, till the thousand years should be fulfilled..."

HELL DESTROYED

REV. 20:12-14: "And I saw the dead, small and great, stand before God; and the books were opened: and another book was opened, which is *the book* of life: and the dead were judged out of those things which were written in the books, according to their works. And the sea gave up the dead which were in it; and death and hell delivered up the dead which were in them: and they were judged every man according to their works. And death and hell [*hades*] were cast into the lake of fire...."

GOD'S TABERNACLE WITH MEN

REV. 21:3-5: *Diag. footnotes*: "And I heard a loud Voice out of the THRONE, saying, 'Behold! the TABERNACLE of GOD (is) with MEN, and he will tabernacle with them, and they shall be his Peoples, and GOD himself will be with them....And he will wipe away every Tear from their EYES: and DEATH will be no more nor Mourning nor Crying, neither will there be any Pain; Because the FORMER things passes away.' And HE who SITS on the THRONE said, 'Behold! I make All things new:' And he says (to me), 'Write; Because These WORDS are faithful and true."

THE WATER OF LIFE

REV. 22:1,2,17, *Diag.*: "And he showed me a pure River of Water of Life, clear as Crystal, proceeding from the THRONE of GOD and the LAMB. In the Midst of its BROAD PLACE, and of the RIVER, on this side and on that, was a Wood of Life, bearing twelve Fruits, yielding for each Month its OWN FRUIT; and the LEAVES of the WOOD were for the HEALING of the NATIONS....And the SPIRIT and the BRIDE say, 'Come!' and let HIM who HEARS say, 'Come!' And let HIM who is THIRSTY come,— let him who WISHES take freely of the Water of Life." (Cf. Ezek. 47:1-12; Zech. 14:8)

NO MORE CURSE—NO NIGHT

REV. 21:24-26; 22:3, *Diag.*: "And the NATIONS will walk by means of its LIGHT, and the KINGS of the EARTH bring their GLORY into it; and its GATES shall not be shut by Day; for there will be no Night there; and they shall bring the GLORY and the HONOR of the NATIONS into it....and there will be no more any Accursed thing [curse, A.V.]...." (Cf. Gen. 3:17-19)

THE LOST HERITAGE RESTORED

REV. 21:7;22:3-5, *Diag.*: "The CONQUEROR shall inherit these things; and I will be to Him a God, and shall be to Me a SON....and the THRONE of GOD and of the LAMB will be

in it, and his SERVANTS will serve him; and will see his FACE; and his NAME will be on their FOREHEADS....the Lord GOD will shine on them; and they will reign for the AGES of the AGES." (Cf. Matt.. 25:34)

RESURRECTION

"The Bible, from first to last, holds out a doctrine found nowhere else, and in opposition to the theories of all the heathen religions—that a future life for the dead will come through a **RESURRECTION OF THE DEAD**." *A60*

1 COR. 15:16-18: "For if the dead rise not, then is not Christ raised: and if Christ be not raised, your faith *is* vain; ye are yet in your sins. Then they also which are fallen asleep in Christ are perished."

RESURRECTION NECESSARY

1 COR. 15:22: "For as in Adam all die, even so in Christ shall all be made alive."

"The penalty...being death, it was necessary that Christ...**die**." *F695*

1 COR. 15:3: "...for our sins according to the scriptures..."

"...but if he never arose...even if mankind were freed from...the **death** sentence, it still would...need...the great Restorer." *F695*

1 COR. 15:20: "But now is Christ risen from the dead, *and* become the firstfruits of them that slept."

DEATH CALLED SLEEP

"On this basis of faith we...think of our race as...sleeping." *F696*

JOHN 11:11-14: "These things said he: and after that he saith unto them, Our friend Lazarus sleepeth; but I go, that I may awake him out of sleep. Then said his disciples, Lord, if he sleep, he shall do well. Howbeit Jesus spake of his death: but they thought that he had spoken of taking of rest in sleep. Then said Jesus unto them plainly, Lazarus is dead."

MATT. 9:18,24,25: "While he spake these things unto them, behold, there came a certain ruler, and worshipped him, saying, My daughter is even now dead: but come and lay thy hand upon her, and she shall live. He said unto them, Give place: for the maid is not dead, but sleepeth. And they laughed him to scorn. But when the people were put forth, he went in, and took her by the hand, and the maid arose."

PSA. 13:3: "Consider and hear me, O LORD my God: lighten mine eyes, lest I sleep the *sleep of* death..."

JOB 7:21: "And why dost thou not pardon my transgression, and take away mine iniquity? for now shall I sleep in the dust; and thou shalt seek me in the morning, but I *shall* not *be*."

JOB 14:12-15: "So man lieth down, and riseth not: till the heavens be no more, they shall not awake, nor be raised out of their sleep. O that thou wouldest hide me in the grave, that thou wouldest keep me secret, until thy wrath be past, that thou wouldest appoint me a set time, and remember me! If a man die, shall he live *again*? all the days of my appointed time will I wait, till my change come. Thou shalt call, and I will answer thee: thou wilt have a desire to the work of thine hands."

2 CHRON. 12:16: "And Rehoboam slept with his fathers, and was buried in the city of David: and Abijah his son reigned in his stead."

AWAKENINGS BY JESUS

1 COR. 15:21: "For since by man *came* death, by man *came* also the resurrection of the dead."

JOHN 6:51: "...my flesh...I will give for the life of the world..."

JOHN 11:25: "...I am the resurrection, and the life..."

ALL COUNTED AS DEAD

"...from the Lord's standpoint the entire race of Adam is dead; not merely those who have gone into the tomb, but those also who are on their way thither...." *F697*

MATT. 8:22: "...let the dead bury their dead."

EPH. 2:1,5,6: "And you *hath he quickened,* who were dead in trespasses and sins:....Even when we were dead in sins, hath quickened us together with Christ, (by grace ye are saved;) And hath raised *us* up together, and made us sit together in heavenly *places* in Christ Jesus..."

ANASTASIS—RESTANDING—RESURRECTION

"Lazarus and...others...were...merely awakened." *F702*

"The word ***anastasis***...signifies to **stand again**....

"Only two men ever possessed life:...Adam, before...the sentence of death and its process of dying; and...Christ Jesus..." *F703*

"While **anastasis** signifies raising again...it in no sense...limits the process so as to make it either instantaneous or gradual....Neither does **anastasis** change the nature of the being...." *F706*

HEB. 11:35: "Women received their dead raised to life again: and others were tortured, not accepting deliverance; that they might obtain a better resurrection..."

"Because such an interpretation would not so well agree with the argument of the Apostle in Heb. 11. The argument set forth is the faith of the ancient worthies in God and in a future resurrection, which should be rewarded after the

glorification of the Church, as specified in verse 40. The 'Better resurrection' which they might hope for, and which constituted the basis of their faith, is still future, as declared in verse 39—they 'received not the promise'—they did not receive the reward; hence, any **awakening** of their sleeping ones was not the reward, not the promise for which they were seeking. The Apostle has been mentioning Gideon, Balak, Samson, Jephthah, David, Samuel and the prophets, who accomplished wonderful things under the Lord's power and in accord with their faith, hazarding, and in many instances sacrificing, their lives in the Lord's service. The women had less opportunity in these respects, and yet the "postle would have us know that the wives, mothers and daughters in Israel, whose faith in the Lord was such as to lead them to sympathize and cooperate with the men who engaged in these warfares and sacrifices, were participants with their husbands, sons and fathers; and by encouraging them to faithfulness became sharers with them in the sacrifices of faith, and by faith looked forward into the future and realized the better resurrection that would ultimately come to the Lord's faithful. Looking by the eye of faith down into the future, they **in faith** received their dead **raised to life again**, or 'By resurrection.' (RV.)" *F705*

1 COR. 15:36-38: "...that which thou sowest is not quickened, except it die:...thou sowest not that body that shall be, but bare grain, it may chance of wheat, or of some other *grain:* But God

giveth it a body as it hath pleased him, and to every seed his own body."

THE FIRST RESURRECTION

"Our Lord Jesus changed his nature...when he sacrificed himself as a man, and was begotten as a New Creature **at** the **time of his baptism**.... this New Creature...heavenly,...was resurrected on the third day and received...as it pleased the Father—a spirit body, a body of suitable kind....completely out of death to perfection of life on the plane to which he was...begotten....the Church...is to have part in the same resurrection...

ROM. 6:5: "'...His resurrection...'

ROM. 20:5: "'...the first resurrection.'

1 PET. 1:3: "'...begotten...again....'

"'begotten of the Spirit' as New Creatures—therefore their different resurrection." *F706*

1 COR. 15:48-50: "As is the earthy, such are they also that are earthy: and as is the heavenly, such are they also that are heavenly. And as we have borne the image of the earthy, we shall also bear the image of the heavenly. Now this I say, brethren, that flesh and blood cannot inherit the kingdom of God; neither doth corruption inherit incorruption."

"...the world in general, who will experience restitution to human perfection, will be like...Adam before he sinned....We rejoice...in the...promises made to..." *F721*

ROM. 8:28: "...the called according to his purpose."

1 JOHN 3:2: "...we shall be like him; [the glorified 'changed' Jesus] for we shall see him *as he is*." *F722*

1 TIM. 6:16: "Who only hath immortality, dwelling in the light which no *man* can approach unto; whom no *man* hath seen, nor can see..."

HEB. 1:3: "...**the express image of his** ['the Father's**] person**...."

1 TIM. 1:17: "...the King eternal,...invisible...."

EXOD. 33:20: "And he said, Thou canst not see my face: for there shall no man see me, and live."

1 COR. 15:50: "Now this I say, brethren, that flesh and blood cannot inherit the kingdom of God..."

"So long as we are in the flesh we cannot constitute the Lord's Kingdom in any actual sense...." *F723*

"NOT ALL SLEEP"

1 COR. 15:51,52: "Behold, I show you a mystery; We shall not all sleep, but we shall all be changed, In a moment, in the twinkling of an eye, at the last trump..." (the seventh trumpet) *F723*

"...many...have supposed...that the saints remaining over until the presence of the Lord would be changed without dying....Dying was a momentary act,...sleep, or unconsciousness continued...." *F723*

"It will not be necessary that the Lord's people who remain over until his second presence shall **sleep** in unconscious death even for a moment. They will **die**, however...." *F724*

PSA. 82:6,7: "I have said, Ye *are* gods; and all of you *are* children of the most High. But ye shall die like men, and fall like one of the princes."

"The world...dies like Prince Adam,...but the faithful in Christ Jesus die with...Prince Jesus...." *F724*

ISA. 9:6: "The Prince of Peace."

ACTS 3:15: "...the Prince of life...."

ACTS 5:31: "Him hath God exalted...a Prince and a Saviour...."

2 TIM. 2:11: "...If we be **dead with *him*** we shall **also live with *him***."

"The death of these will mean no sleep of unconsciousness— the very moment of dying will be the very moment of 'change,' or clothing upon with the..." *F724*

2 COR. 5:2: "...house...from heaven."

"These last members of the body will not need to sleep—not need to wait for the Kingdom to come, for it will then be set up...." F724

THE CELESTIAL GLORY

"They will not all have the same degrees of glory, though they will all have the same **kind** of glory—will all be celestial or heavenly beings....The Church shall..." *F725*

MATT. 13:43: "...shine forth as the sun...."

DIFFERENCES IN GLORY

"There will be differences..., as...

1 COR. 15:41: "'...star differeth from...star in glory.'

"'He who had been faithful in the use of his pound, so as to gain ten pounds, was to receive rulership over ten cities; and he who was faithful...to the gaining of five pounds... proportionately.'...Luke 19:11-27" *F726*

NO JEALOUSY

1 COR. 12:18: "...God hath set the members...in the body, as it hath pleased him."

"All who will constitute the 'little flock' will be so filled with the Lord's Spirit as in honor to prefer one another....(Luke 12:32; Rom. 12:10)" *F726*

RESURRECTION CHANGE

"Describing the difference between present conditions and...future, the apostle says,..." *F726*

1 COR. 15:42,43: "...It is sown in corruption; it is raised in incorruption: It is sown in dishonour; it is raised in glory: it is sown in weakness; it is raised in power..."

"...it is raised a spiritual body....'It' the New Creature...." *F726*

"The word here rendered incorruption is **aphtharsia**, and signifies that which is **deathproof**...." *F727*

ROM. 2:7: "To them who by patient continuance in well doing seek for glory and honour and immortality, eternal life..."

2 PET. 1:4: "Whereby are given unto us exceeding great and precious promises: that by these ye might be partakers of the divine nature..."

PHIL. 3:21, *Diag.*: "Who will transform the BODY of our HUMILIATION into a conformity with his GLORIOUS BODY...."

THE GREAT MULTITUDE

"The great company, although they cannot be counted in as participants of the First Resurrection....nor...the ancient worthies, must...be counted as overcomers even though... through great tribulation. And...they must be esteemed to pass from death unto

life, and therefore to be subjects of an instantaneous resurrection....” *F707 footnote*

THE ANCIENT WORTHIES

“...perhaps properly to be called another order or band—will be the overcomers of the period previous to Pentecost, the faithful ancient worthies....Their shortcomings went before to judgment....” *F699*

HEB. 11:39,40: “And these all,...obtained a good report through faith....”

“Their resurrection, therefore, will be an instantaneous one....”

“...to full perfection of human mind and body....” *F699*

HEB. 11:35, *Diag.*: “Women received their DEAD by a Resurrection; but others were beaten to death, not accepting the DELIVERANCE...that they might obtain a better Resurrection.”

“This will permit them to be...made ‘princes...in all the earth....’“ *F707*

PSA. 45:16: “Instead of thy fathers shall be thy children, whom thou mayest make princes in all the earth.”

THE WORLD’S ANASTASIS

“Following the resurrection of the ancient worthies...we may expect resurrection work to commence with the...people of the earth...C really nine-tenths dead, but...called alive...They will be from the divine standpoint **dead**, and the life-giving, or restitution processes will...begin with them....Only those who choose life, by obedience to the voice of the Son of Man...will ever attain to full restitution...**life**.” *F699*

“After these shall have started in the way to life, some of those in the great prison-house of death, the tomb, will be called forth, awakened, to be treated in the same manner.” *F700*

THE WORLD’S RESURRECTION

“The **anastasis** of the world in general will be dependent, in the case of each individual upon his own progress on the ‘highway’ of holiness....” *F708*

ISA. 35:8-10: “And an highway shall be there, and a way, and it shall be called The way of holiness; the unclean shall not pass over it; but it *shall be* for those: the wayfaring

men, though fools, shall not err *therein*. No lion shall be there, nor *any* ravenous beast shall go up thereon, it shall not be found there;....And the ransomed of the LORD shall return, and come to Zion with songs and everlasting joy upon their heads: they shall obtain joy and gladness, and sorrow and sighing shall flee away.”

JOHN 5:25,28,29: “...The hour is coming...when the dead shall hear the voice of the Son Of God, and they that hear [‘obey’ *F709*] shall live....the hour is coming, in the which all that are in the graves shall hear his voice, and shall come forth; they that have done good, unto the resurrection of life; and they that have done evil unto the resurrection of [*Diag. and RSV.*] judgment.”

“...the coming forth is merely the awakening in the case of those whose...trial shall not have been previously passed successfully;...the remainder...will come forth...to a resurrection by judgment.” *F708*

OBEY AND LIVE

“...the whole world is dead from the divine standpoint....” *F708*

ISA. 11:9: “...the earth shall be full of the knowledge of the LORD, as the waters cover the sea.” (Cf. Hab. 2:14)

JER. 31:34: “And they shall teach no more every man his neighbour, and every man his brother, saying, Know the LORD: for they shall all know me, from the least of them unto the greatest of them...”

“The obedient will gradually come to a clearer...appreciation of...divine love and justice and provision. But those who will obey...will not then receive persecutions and oppositions, as...now, for then Satan will be bound, and... those...in accord with righteousness will be blessed and uplifted, and those who would fight against the Kingdom...will, after a reasonable trial,...be cut off...” *F709*

ACTS 3:23: “...every soul, which will not hear that prophet, shall be destroyed from among the people.”

ISA. 65:20: *Leeser*: “There shall no more come thence an infant of few days, nor an old man that shall not have the full length of his days; for as a lad shall one die a hundred years old; and as a sinner shall be accursed he who (dieth) at a hundred years old.”

“THEY THAT HAVE DONE GOOD”

“...those that have done good, who shall come forth unto ‘the resurrection of life’—...fully alive—can refer only to...the Church, the ancient worthies, and the great company. These...passed divine approval...not...done perfectly...in thought, word, and deed, because...” *F709*

ROM. 3:10: “There is none righteous, no, not one.”

“The nearest approach...is purity of heart—righteousness of intention.” *F709*

“THEY THAT HAVE DONE EVIL”

“This includes...all...who...have not consecrated ...fully....” *F710*

“...this class includes many...

LUKE 16:15: “‘...highly esteemed among men....’

“...both in and out of nominal church systems—many of the noble, the wise, the rich, the great, and the learned....” *F710*

“A PURE LANGUAGE”

“It will be...a pure message that will be given to them....” *F710*

ZEPH. 3:9: “For then will I turn to the people a pure language, that they may all call upon the name of the LORD, to serve him with one consent.”

“...it will be entirely their own fault if they do not...step by step...gain victories over... imperfections, until...they shall have attained... perfection....” *F710*

“NOT A TRIAL FOR PAST SINS”

“There is no question respecting the guilt of our race, and no trial...is proposed to ascertain whether man was guilty of disobedience, nor...whether...God’s penalty...was a just one...

“The...trial...will be...to ascertain which...after having suffered the wages of sin, death...have learned the lesson of the exceeding sinfulness of sin, and the great blessing that attends righteousness, and shall desire to be conformed to the will of God....” *F711*

“...in the end...will come a...test...in respect to their **heart loyalty** ...all...not found thoroughly loyal...will be cut off in...” *F712*

REV. 20:14: “...the second death.”

ACCOUNTED WORTHY TO ATTAIN RESURRECTION

"The obedient only will be permitted to **attain** to resurrection, being lifted fully...out of death—a gradual...attainment...." *F713*

LUKE 20:35: "...they which shall be accounted worthy to obtain that world, and the resurrection from the dead..."

"Extremely few...are counted worthy to attain that world and the 'better' resurrection in advance...." *F712*

ADVANTAGE OF GRADUAL RESURRECTION

"Adam, as a perfect being, received a very brief trial...." *F713*

"The world coming forth in practically the same...condition in which they entered the tomb, would...identify themselves personally and in relationship to others." *F714*

ECCL. 11:3: "...where the tree falleth, there shall it be."

IMPERFECT, BUT WHOLE

"...we must suppose that the coming forth of the world will be with what would now be considered average health...such...as the Lord was pleased to grant to those whom he healed at his first advent....

"The threads of existence being taken up just where...dropped in death,...the individual will neither lose his identity, nor be lost to the world...of which he has been a part...past experiences with sin and selfishness will constitute a valuable asset of knowledge....It will be to his advantage, too, that he must...accept Christ,...acknowledging his own imperfection.... that he must take steps in...the attainment of perfection...." *F715*

TO LIFE VS. TO SHAME

DAN. 12:2: "...many,...that sleep in the dust... shall awake, some to everlasting [lasting] life, and some to shame and everlasting [lasting] contempt."

"One class is awakened to...lasting life; the other...When awakened...is still in death, because...not vitally connected with the Son....

1 JOHN 5:12: "'He that hath the Son hath life; *and* he that hath not the Son of God hath not life.'

"...they may gradually...attain to life....

"If they came forth perfect they would not be in a shameful and contemptible condition.... they may...attain resurrection, perfection, under the...judgments...— rewarding their obediences...." *F716*

SINS OF THE PRESENT LIFE

"Adam's sin...and all additional sins...resulting from Adam's sin, are all included in the atonement...The sins....such as do not directly result from the Adamic fall....must all be punished...." *F718*

1 TIM. 5:24: "Some men's sins are open beforehand, going before to judgment; and some men they follow after."

"...in proportion as truth, light, knowledge, and conscience may be violated, in that same proportion character is undermined; and to whatever extent this proceeds, restitution will be more difficult...." *F720*

THE REST OF THE DEAD

REV. 20:5: "But the rest of the dead lived not [again] until the thousand years were finished...."

(Omitted by *Sinaitic, Syriac,* and *Vatican 1160 MSS. Alexandrian MS.* omits 'again.')

"...nevertheless it is in full accord with what we are here presenting, for the term ('lived not') should be understood to refer not to awakening but to full restitution to life in the perfect degree." *F721, footnote*

See list of spurious and doubtful passages.

"In this sense of the word it will...be a fact that 'the rest of the dead' will **live** not 'until the thousand years are finished'...

"...they will not be raised up completely **out of death** until then...." *F721*

See also Index: **Begotten and Born of the Spirit; Grace, Free; High Calling; Immortality vs. Mortality; The Judgment Day; Kingdom of God; Mediator; Natures Distinct; Restitution; Two Salvation; Three Ways; Universal Salvation.**

RETURN OF CHRIST

ACTS 3:20,21: "...he shall send Jesus Christ, which before was preached unto you: Whom the heaven must [indeed] receive until the times of restitution of all things..."

"...though the Church has been blessedly conscious of the Lord's...care and love, yet she longs for his...personal return, for when he said, 'If I go, I will come again' (John 14:3), he certainly referred to a **second personal coming**." *A89*

THE WORLD NOT CONVERTED BEFORE CHRIST RETURNS

MATT. 24:14: "And this gospel of the kingdom shall be preached in all the world for a witness unto all nations; and then shall the end come."

"This witness has already been given. In 1861 the reports of the Bible Societies showed that the Gospel had been published in every language of earth....The text says nothing about how the testimony will be received....Yet...the gospel has been preached in all the world for a **witness**—to every **nation**." *A91, 92*

"...at the time of our Lord's second coming the world will be far from converted...." *A90*

2 TIM. 3:1,2,4,13: "...in the last days perilous times shall come. For men shall be...lovers of pleasures more than lovers of God;....But evil men and seducers shall wax worse and worse, deceiving, and being deceived."

LUKE 21:34,35: "And take heed to yourselves, lest...your hearts be overcharged...and...that day come upon you unawares. For as a snare shall it come on all them that dwell on the face of the whole earth."

SITTING AT GOD'S RIGHT HAND WHEN COMING

PSA. 110:1: "...Sit thou at my right hand, until I make thine enemies thy footstool."

"The...idea...that Christ sits on a material throne...in the heavens until the work of subduing...is accomplished....is a misconception ...if 'right hand'...refers...to...authority...the test...would in no wise conflict with..." *A92*

PHIL. 3:20,21, *Diag.*: "...Our POLITY begins in the Heavens, from whence also we are expecting a Savior...who will transform... according to the ENERGY by which he is ABLE even to subject ALL things to himself."

MATT. 26:64: "...Hereafter shall ye see the Son of man sitting on **the right hand of power**, and coming in the clouds of heaven."

"He will be on the right hand when coming,...during the Millennial age, and forever." *A93*

WORK BETWEEN FIRST AND SECOND ADVENTS

"This period between the first and second advents...is for the trial and selection of the Church; otherwise...the work which will be done during...his second presence, in the Millennium, would have followed the resurrection of Jesus. Or,...the first advent... would have occurred at the time of the second....For God has evidently designed the **permission** of evil for six thousand years, as well as that...restitution...shall be...during the seventh...." *A94*

NATIONS ANGRY—NOT CONVERTED— WHEN HE RETURNS TO RESTORE

ACTS 3:21: "Whom the heaven must receive until the times of restitution..."

REV. 11:18: "And the nations were angry...."

"God has not...exhausted his power for the world's conversion....He has not yet even attempted the world's conversion." *A95*

COMES TO REIGN A THOUSAND YEARS

"Christ comes again to reign...for a thousand years...." *B105, 106*

1 COR. 15:25,26: "For he must reign, till he hath put all enemies under his feet. The last enemy that shall be destroyed is death."

PROPHECY COVERS PERIOD OF PRESENCE

"...as...prophecy touches the various...points.... from Bethlehem...to the cross, the tomb and the resurrection, so...prophecy...touches various points of the thousand years of the second presence...." *B106*

"It should be thought of as a **period of presence** as was the first advent...." *B107*

OUR LORD A SPIRIT BEING

"...our Lord is no longer a human being...." *B107*

2 COR. 5:16: "...though we have known Christ after the flesh, yet now henceforth know we *him* no more."

1 PET. 3:18, ***RSV***.: "...Christ also suffereth for sins once, the righteous for the unrighteous ...being put to death in the flesh, but made alive in the spirit."

HOW MANIFESTED AFTER RESURRECTION

ACTS 10:40, *Diag.*: "Him GOD raised up the THIRD DAY, and permitted him to become manifest...."

"Mary supposed him to be 'the gardener.' To the two on their way to Emmaus he was 'a stranger!'...also...to the fishermen on the sea of Galilee....he was recognized by his actions, his words, or...his voice." *B125*

JOHN 20:11-18: "But Mary stood without at the sepulchre weeping: and as she wept, she stooped down, *and looked* into the sepulchre, And seeth two angels in white sitting, the one at the head, and the other at the feet, where the body of Jesus had lain. And they say unto her, Woman, why weepest thou? She saith unto them, Because they have taken away my Lord, and I know not where they have laid him. And when she had thus said, she turned herself back, and saw Jesus standing, and knew not that it was Jesus. Jesus saith unto her, Woman, why weepest thou? whom seekest thou? She, supposing him to be the gardener, saith unto him, Sir, if thou have borne him hence, tell me where thou hast laid him, and I will take him away. Jesus saith unto her, Mary. She turned herself, and saith unto him, Rabboni; which is to say, Master. Jesus saith unto her, Touch me not; for I am not yet ascended to my Father: but go to my brethren, and say unto them, I ascend unto my Father, and your Father; and *to* my God, and your God. Mary Magdalene came and told the disciples that she had

seen the Lord, and *that* he had spoken these things unto her."

LUKE 24:13-31,36,37: "And, behold, two of them went that same day to a village called Emmaus, which was from Jerusalem *about* threescore furlongs. And they talked together of all these things which had happened. And it came to pass, that, while they communed *together* and reasoned, Jesus himself drew near, and went with them. But their eyes were holden that they should not know him. And he said unto them, What manner of communications *are* these that ye have one to another, as ye walk, and are sad? And the one of them, whose name was Cleopas, answering said unto him, Art thou only a stranger in Jerusalem, and hast not known the things which are come to pass there in these days? And he said unto them, What things? And they said unto him, Concerning Jesus of Nazareth, which was a prophet mighty in deed and word before God and all the people: And how the chief priests and our rulers delivered him to be condemned to death, and have crucified him. But we trusted that it had been he which should have redeemed Israel: and beside all this, to day is the third day since these things were done. Yea, and certain women also of our company made us astonished, which were early at the sepulchre; And when they found not his body, they came, saying, that they had also seen a vision of angels, which said that he was alive. And certain of them which were with us went to the sepulchre, and found *it* even so as the women had said: but him they saw not. Then he said unto them, O fools, and slow of heart to believe all that the prophets have spoken: Ought not Christ to have suffered these things, and to enter into his glory? And beginning at Moses and all the prophets, he expounded unto them in all the scriptures the things concerning himself. And they drew nigh unto the village, whither they went: and he made as though he would have gone further. But they constrained him, saying, Abide with us: for it is toward evening, and the day is far spent. And he went in to tarry with them. And it came to pass, as he sat at meat with them, he took bread, and blessed *it*, and brake, and gave to them. And their eyes were opened, and they knew him; and he vanished out of their sight....And as they thus spake, Jesus himself stood in the midst of them, and saith unto them, Peace *be* unto you. But they were terrified and affrighted, and supposed that they had seen a spirit."

JOHN 21:1-12: "After these things Jesus showed himself again to the disciples at the sea of Tiberias; and on this wise showed he *himself*. There were together Simon Peter, and Thomas called Didymus, and Nathanael of Cana in Galilee, and the sons of Zebedee, and two other of his disciples. Simon Peter saith unto them, I go a fishing. They say unto him, We also go with thee. They went forth, and entered into a ship immediately; and that night they caught nothing. But when the morning was now come, Jesus stood on the shore: but the disciples knew not that it was Jesus. Then Jesus saith unto them, Children, have ye any meat? They answered him, No.

"And he said unto them, Cast the net on the right side of the ship, and ye shall find. They cast therefore, and now they were not able to draw it for the multitude of fishes. Therefore that disciple whom Jesus loved saith unto Peter, It is the Lord. Now when Simon Peter heard that it was the Lord, he girt *his* fisher's coat *unto him*, (for he was naked,) and did cast himself into the sea. And the other disciples came in a little ship; (for they were not far from land, but as it were two hundred cubits,) dragging the net with fishes. As soon then as they were come to land, they saw a fire of coals there, and fish laid thereon, and bread. Jesus saith unto them, Bring of the fish which ye have now caught. Simon Peter went up, and drew the net to land full of great fishes, an hundred and fifty and three: and for all there were so many, yet was not the net broken. Jesus saith unto them, Come and dine. And none of the disciples durst ask him, Who art thou? knowing that it was the Lord."

See also Luke 24:13-31,36,37.

"When Thomas declared that only the proof which addressed his natural sight and touch would be acceptable to him, the Lord, though he granted that demand, gently reproved him, saying,..." *B125*

JOHN 20:29: "...because thou hast seen me, thou hast believed: blessed are they that have not seen, and yet have believed."

"He thus showed...that he now had power to appear in a variety of...forms, but also that no one of those bodies...was his spiritual...body....:

"The creating of the body and clothing in which he appeared...in the very room in which they were...was proof...that Christ was no longer a human being, though...the body which they saw...was a mere vision....As a human being he could not come into the room without opening the door, but as a spirit...he could..." *B126*

ENTERED WITH DOORS SHUT

JOHN 20:19,26: "...when the doors were shut...came Jesus and stood in the midst, Peace be unto you. And after eight days again his disciples were within, and Thomas with them: then came Jesus, the doors being shut, and stood in the midst, and said, Peace be unto you."

VANISHED AT EMMAUS

LUKE 24:31: "...he vanished out of their sight."

THUS JESUS WAS BORN OF THE SPIRIT

JOHN 3:6,8: "That which is born of the flesh is flesh; and that which is born of the Spirit is spirit....The wind bloweth where it listeth, and thou hearest the sound thereof, but canst not tell whence it cometh, and whither it goeth: so is every one that is born of the Spirit."

SPIRIT, NOT FLESH AND BONES

LUKE 24:39: "...a spirit hath not flesh and bones...."

"The human body of flesh and bones, etc., and its clothing, which **appeared** suddenly... **disappeared**...**vanished**...

"The power manifested by our Lord and the angels...to create and dissolve the clothing in which they appeared, was just as superhuman as the creating and dissolving of their assumed human bodies..." *B127*

JESUS NOW A SPIRIT BEING

1 COR. 15:45,47-49: "...the last Adam *was made* a quickening spirit....the second man *is* the Lord from heaven....As *is* the heavenly, such *are* they also that are heavenly....we shall also bear the image of the heavenly."

1 JOHN 3:2: "...it doth not yet appear what we shall be: but...we shall be like him; for we shall see him as he is."

INVISIBLE TO MAN

JOHN 14:19: "...the world seeth me no more..."

HEB. 1:3: "...the brightness of his glory and the express image of his person...."

1 TIM. 6:16: "...dwelling in the light which no man can approach unto; whom no man hath seen, nor can see...."

RANSOM NOT TAKEN BACK

JOHN 6:51: "...my flesh I will give for the life of the world."

FLESH AND BLOOD NOT TO INHERIT THE KINGDOM

1 COR. 15:50: "...flesh and blood cannot inherit the kingdom of God...."

INVISIBLY PRESENT

LUKE 17:20,21,26-30: "...The kingdom of God cometh not with observation: [margin, outward show] Neither shall they say, Lo here! or, lo there! for, behold, the kingdom of God is within you. [*margin*, among]....And as it was in the days of Noe, [Matt. 24:38] so shall it be also in the days of the Son of man.[Matt. 24:37, *Diag*.: the PRESENCE of the SON of MAN.] They did eat, they drank, they married wives,...[Matt.24:39 And knew not] until the day that Noe entered into the ark, and the flood came, and destroyed them all. Likewise also as it was in the days of Lot; they did eat, they drank, they bought, they sold, they planted, they builded; But the same day that Lot went out of Sodom it rained fire and brimstone from heaven, and destroyed *them* all. Even thus shall it be in the day when the Son of man is revealed."

HOW REVEALED

2 THES. 1:8: "...In flaming fire, taking vengeance...."

"...consuming wrath, as indicated, by the symbol, **fire**, and..." *B151*

MAL. 4:1: "...shall leave them neither root nor branch."

NOT LITERAL FIRE

ZEPH. 3:8: "...all the earth shall be devoured with the **fire of my jealousy**."

"...not the literal, physical earth...but the existing **order of things** ...in the symbolic fire... the great trouble of the Day of the Lord...." *B162*

THIEF-LIKE PRESENCE

REV. 16:15: "...I come as a thief...."

1 THES. 5:2,3: "...the day of the Lord so cometh as a thief in the night. [*Diag.*:] When they may say, 'Peace and Safety,' then sudden Destruction impends over them...."

2 PET. 3:10: *Diag.*: "But the DAY of the Lord will come as a Thief, in which the HEAVENS shall pass away with a rushing sound, and the Elements burning intensely shall be dissolved, and the Earth and the WORKS in it shall be burned up [*Sinaitic* and *Vatican MSS*; **discovered**]."

IN LIKE MANNER

ACTS 1:11: "...this same Jesus, which is taken up from you into heaven, shall so come in like manner as ye have seen him go into heaven."

"...the passage...does not say that those who saw him go...nor...anyone else will **see** him come.... it does say...that the **manner** of his coming will be **like** the **manner** of his going....Was it with great splendor, and...demonstration?...trumpet... and voices and...shout...and the Lord's person shining in supernatural glory...?...was it not as quietly and secretly as was possible....? None saw him...except his faithful followers....in **like manner** as he went away (quietly, secretly....) **so** in this manner, he comes again." *B153, 154*

THE BRIGHT SHINING

MATT. 24:27, *Diag.***; LUKE 17:24**: "For as the LIGHTNING [Gr. ***astrape***] emerges from the East, and shines to the West, so will be the PRESENCE [Gr. ***parousia***] of the SON of MAN."

"The Greek word ***astrape***, here used, is...found in Luke 11:36, where it...is rendered 'bright shining.'" *B155,156*

LUKE 11:36: "...The bright shining [Gr.,'***astrape***'] of a candle [*Diag*., '**lamp**'] doth give thee light. [*Margin*, 'by its bright shining']"

"...translators...supposed that he would be revealed suddenly, like a flash of lightning, and not gradually, like the dawning sunlight. But how beautiful is the figure of sunrise, as illustrating the gradual dawning of truth and blessing in the day of his presence....the Prophet, using the same figure, says,..." *B156*

MAL. 4:2: "But unto you that fear my name shall the Sun of righteousness arise with healing in his wings..."

"The Lord associates the overcomers with himself in this figure saying,..." *B156*

MATT. 13:43: "Then shall the righteous shine forth as the sun in the kingdom of their Father...."

PAROUSIA

"An imperfect translation of the word ***parousia*** has...tended to obscure the sense [of Matt. 24:27]. In the *Emphatic Diaglott* and in *Prof. Young's translation* it is rendered **presence** [also in Rotherham's later

edition]....The Revised Version...in the marginal reading, it acknowledges **'presence**' to be the true definition of the Greek.... ***parousia***...signifies... presence, as having come, having arrived; never...to be on the way....The text [Matt.24:27] ...teaches that as the **sunlight** gradually dawns, shall the presence of the Son of man be gradually manifested...." *B157*

"...with this illustration our Lord coupled words of caution...." *B157*

MATT. 24:26: "...if they shall say...he is in the desert; go not forth: behold, *he is* in the secret chambers; believe *it* not."

THE FEET ON THE MOUNT OF OLIVES

ZECH. 14:3,4: "Then shall the LORD [Jehovah] go forth,....And his feet shall stand... upon the mount of Olives..."

"...the 'feet' in this passage are figurative,...as in Psalm 91:12; Isa. 52:7; Psa. 8:6;110:1; Eph. 6:15; Deut. 33:3....Christ Jesus...the highly exalted king comes as the sunlight, making his presence and influence felt the world over." *B157*

OTHER FIGURES OF SPEECH

1 THES. 4:16: "...the Lord himself shall descend from heaven with [Gr., 'in'] a shout, with ['in'] the voice of the archangel [Gr., 'chief messenger'] and with ['in'] the trump of God....."

WITH A SHOUT

"The Greek word...***keleusma***...signifies a **shout of encouragement** ....

"The shout of encouragement started by the increase of knowledge...has already encircled the earth, and...men are banding...together...to... strive for both real and fancied rights...and...the shout...will...result...in the great time of trouble...." *B146* [Written in 1889]

ISA. 13:4: "The noise of a multitude in the mountains, [kingdoms] like as of a great people; a tumultuous noise of the kingdoms of nations gathered together: the LORD of hosts mustereth the host of the battle."

VOICE OF THE ARCHANGEL

"...'archangel' signifies chief messenger; and our anointed Lord himself is Jehovah's Chief Messenger....

MAL. 3:1: "'...the Lord, whom ye seek, shall suddenly come to his temple, even the messenger of the covenant...'

JUDE 9: "'...Michael the archangel....'

"Michael...signifies, **who as God**....the voice of the Archangel represents Christ's authority and command..." *B147*

DAN. 12:1: "And at that time shall Michael stand up, the great prince which standeth for the children of thy people: and there shall be a time of trouble, such as never was since there was a nation...."

"To stand up signifies to assume authority, to give commands....

"...the earth (organized society) will melt, or disintegrate under the change of administration going into effect when the new King utters his voice of command...." *B147* [written in 1889]

THE TRUMP OF GOD

"...refers to...'The Seventh Trumpet,' the 'Last Trump' in a **series** of symbolic trumpets....the seventh refers specially to the Lord's work and covers the 'Day of the Lord.'...Since the six preceding trumpets were symbols...it would be a violation of reason...to expect the seventh...to be a literal, audible sound...." *B148*

REV. 11:15,18 ***Diag.***: "And the SEVENTH Angel sounded...And the NATIONS were enraged and thy WRATH came."

THE HARVEST

"The 'Shout,' the 'Voice of the Archangel,' and the 'Trump of God,'...are all instrumentalities for the accomplishment of the harvest work of the Gospel age....

"...each of the three prophecies just referred to (Dan. 12:1; Rev. 11:15; 1 Thes. 4:16) declares the Lord's **presence** at the time when the events mentioned transpire. They were foretold for the very purpose of indicating the manner in which his **invisible presence** would be manifested.... indications....that he has come...and that the harvest work...is already under way. This...is... proved by time prophecies...." *B149*

REV. 14:14: *Diag.*: "And I saw, and behold! a white Cloud, and on the CLOUD one sitting like a Son of Man, having on his HEAD a golden Crown, and in his HAND a sharp Sickle."

"...the harvest work in actual progress is proof of the Lord's presence...." *B150*

THE FINAL CONFLICT

"He...is shown in symbol....as the one whose sword went forth out of his mouth...." *B100,101*

REV. 19:15: *Diag.*: "...that with it he may smite the NATIONS and he shall rule them with an Iron Sceptre...."

EVERY EYE TO SEE HIM

MATT. 24:30; MARK 13:26; LUKE 21:27: "...They shall see the Son of man coming in the clouds of heaven with power and great glory."

REV. 1:7, *Diag.*: "Behold! he is coming with the CLOUDS and Every Eye shall see him...."

"...all...texts generally cited as proof of an outward, visible manifestation are in **highly figurative language**, except the one which says that he will come in like manner as he went away...." *B144*

Liddel and Scott, "Horao....III....—2 metaphorically horao is used of mental sight, **to discern, perceive**...."

See also *Young's* and *Strong's* (3708) *Concordance— lexicons.*

"Some will discern the new Ruler sooner than others, but ultimately 'every eye shall see [***horao***—**discern**] him...and while the clouds of trouble are heavy and dark, when the mountains (kingdoms of this world) are trembling and falling, and the earth (organized society) is being shaken, or is integrated, melted, some will begin to realize what we now proclaim...C that Jehovah's Anointed is taking to himself his great power and beginning his work of laying justice to the line and righteousness to the plummet...." *B138*

OTHER OBJECTIVES

RESTITUTION

ACTS 3:21: "Whom the heaven must receive until the times of restitution of all things,...."

TO REWARD

REV. 22:12: "And, behold, I come quickly; and my reward is with me..."

REV. 11:18: "...that thou shouldest give reward unto thy servants the prophets, and to the saints, and them that fear thy name, small and great..."

TO RECEIVE HIS FAITHFUL

JOHN 14:3: "...I will come again, and receive you unto myself; that where I am, there ye may be also."

TO EXALT, JUDGE AND REWARD THEM

REV. 3:21: "To him that overcometh will I grant to sit with me in my throne..."

REV. 2:26,27: "...to him will I give power over the nations:...And he shall rule them..."

See also Rev. 2:7,11,17; 3:4,5,12; Matt. 25:14-30; Luke 19:12-27

2 TIM. 4:8: "Henceforth there is laid up for me a crown of righteousness, which the Lord, the righteous judge, shall give me at that day: and not to me only, but unto all them also that love his appearing."

TO BLESS ALL NATIONS

GAL 3:8,16,29: "...In thee shall all nations be blessed....Now to Abraham and his seed were the promises made....which is Christ....And if ye be Christ's, then are ye Abraham's seed, and

heirs according to the promise."

WITH RESTITUTION

ACTS 3:21: "...of all things."

INCLUDING THE DEAD

JOHN 5:25: "...the dead shall hear the voice of the Son of God: and they that hear shall live."

TO TEACH

ACTS 3:22: "...A prophet shall the Lord your God raise up unto you of your brethren, like unto me; him shall ye hear in all things whatsoever he shall say unto you."

TO JUDGE

JOHN 5:22: "For the Father...hath committed all judgment unto the Son."

See also Matt. 25:31-46

TO DESTROY THE INCORRIGIBLE

ACTS 3:23: "...every soul, which will not hear that prophet, shall be destroyed from among the people."

TO DESTROY THE ANTICHRIST

2 THES. 2:8, *Diag.*: "...(whom the LORD JESUS will consume with the BREATH **[Gr. Pneumatic, spirit]** of his MOUTH, and annihilate by the APPEARING of his PRESENCE;)...."

See also Index: **Ages and Dispensations; Antichrist; Chronology; Day of Vengeance; Days of Daniel; Five World Empires; Harvest; Judgment Day; Kingdoms of This World.**

SABBATH

GEN. 2:2,3: "And on the seventh day God ended his work which he had made; and he rested on the seventh day from all his work which he had made. And God blessed the seventh day, and sanctified it: because that in it he had rested from all his work which God created and made. [*margin*, 'created to make.']"

EXOD. 20:8-11: "Remember the sabbath day, to keep it holy. Six days shall thou labor and do all thy work: But the seventh day is the sabbath of the LORD thy God: *in it* thou shalt not do any work, thou, nor thy son, nor thy daughter, the manservant, nor thy maidservant, nor thy cattle, nor thy stranger that *is* within thy gates: For in six days the Lord made heaven and earth, the sea, and all that in them *is*, and rested the seventh day: wherefore the Lord blessed the sabbath day, and hallowed it."

HEB. 4:3,10: "For we which have believed do enter into rest....For he that is entered into his rest he also hath ceased from his own works, as God *did* from his."

"**Sabbath**"—(Heb.) "***Shabbath***"—"**Cessation sabbath**": Greek, "***Sabbata,***" "***Sabbaton***"—(Greek) "**Sabbath**"— *Young*

"***Shabath***" (Heb.) "**Repose,**" i.e. "**Desist;**" "**Sabbath,**" "**Intermission,**" i.e. (spec.) "the **sabbath;**"—Greek, "***Sabbaton,***" the "**Sabbath,**" "or day of weekly **repose.**"...by (extension, "a sennight"—(seven-night)— *Strong*

JESUS' SABBATH KEEPING

"Jesus in the days of his flesh kept the seventh day of the week...in accordance with the Mosaic Law though not...with some of the perverted conceptions of the Scribes and Pharisees. This was because...he was a Jew; born under the Mosaic Law, and, therefore, subject to its every requirement, which he fulfilled.... **COL. 2:14**: '...nailing it to his cross;'...

"...thus making a full end of it as respected himself and...all Jews coming unto the Father through him...." *F379*

ROM. 10:4: "For Christ *is* the end of the law for righteousness to every one that believeth."

GENTILES NOT UNDER LAW

"Gentiles...were never under the Mosaic Law..." *F380*

WHY APOSTLES PREACHED ON SABBATH

"The...Sabbath...a day of...cessation from toil,... came to be used...for the reading of the Law and the prophets and for exhortation in the synagogues....Jewish converts coming

into Christianity would very naturally gather...on the Sabbath for the study of the Law and the prophets from the new standpoint of their fulfillment begun in Christ, and...

HEB. 10:25: "'...exhorting *one another*....'

"The apostles...found the most hearing ears... amongst the Jews...and...their best opportunity for reaching these at their usual seventh-day gatherings." *F381*

"The fact that the apostles were willing to use the Sabbath day and the Jewish synagogues in...the promulgation of the Gospel...was in no sense an indorsement of...the Jewish Law as a rule or bondage upon the New Creation..." *F382*

THE CHURCH NOT UNDER THE LAW

"...the Church is...under the original Covenant; and....is...

ROM. 6:14: "'...not under the law, but under grace.'

COL. 2:16,17: "'Let no man therefore judge you in meat, or in drink, or in respect of an holy day, or of the new moon, or of the sabbath....Which are a *shadow* of things to come; but the body *is* of Christ.'" *F382*

THE SABBATH A "SHADOW"

"...feasts and fasts and times, and seasons and days...were only shadows of better things coming....To the Jews these things were realities, fixed...by divine decrees; to the New Creation they are shadows...pointing us to the grand fulfillment, and nothing more...." *F382*

THE FIRST DAY

"As respects the first day of the week...as a...rest day, it is quite an error to claim that this day was...made a...Sabbath by...the Roman Catholic Church....in Constantine's time....a rule was promulgated amongst nominal Christians...that they should observe the first day...,...prohibiting manual labor, except...where the gathering of the crops might be...a...necessity....this small beginning of bondage and intimation that the first day...had...superseded the seventh... gradually led...to the thought that every command....respecting the seventh day applied to...the first day...." *F382*

"But a proper observance of the first day...had its beginning long before...not as a bondage, but as a...privilege....our Lord arose... **LUKE 24:1**: '...upon the first day of the week....'

"...on the day of his resurrection he met with and expounded the Scriptures to his faithful..." *F383*

LUKE 24:32: "...He talked with us by the way, and...opened to us the scriptures."

"...on the same first day...he was seen by the two Marys, appeared to Mary Magdalene...and made himself known at the general gathering of the apostles....the following first day of the week...again he appeared to the eleven....so far as we are aware, nearly all of our Lord's appearances...were on the first day of the week. It is not surprising...that without any command ...the early Church fell into the custom of meeting...on the first day...." *F383, 384*

"They even continued...the 'breaking of bread'...on this day—not as the Passover Supper, or Lord's Supper....C not as a remembrancer of his death, but of his resurrection....not his broken body...but the **refreshing truth** which he broke to them...the joyful hopes...guaranteed...by his resurrection.... (The 'cup' is never mentioned...with these references to the 'breaking of bread.')" *F384*

FIRST DAY REPLACING SEVENTH

"As...the Church became free from close association with Judaism...the influence of the seventh-day Sabbath waned, and more or less became attached to the first day of the week and the spiritual rest and refreshment of the New Creation dating from our Lord's resurrection..." *F384*

FALSE CONCEPTION LEADS TO BONDAGE

"Not appreciating...the perfect Law of Liberty...to the elect....because lacking the Spirit of the Lord, it is not surprising...that forms and ceremonies,...holy days and sabbath days, became...chains upon...Christendom. Nor...that some of the Lord's true people...became so entangled...as to be deprived of a large measure of the true liberty of the sons of God." *F385, 386*

ADVANTAGE OF GENERAL SABBATH OBSERVANCE

"...the Lord's consecrated few have... advantages...of which they might to a large extent be deprived were the observance of the day less general. The New Creation...may surely rejoice...that they have the opportunity of setting apart one day in seven...for worship,...fellowship, etc...." *F386*

ADVANTAGE AS A REST DAY

"...a rest every seven days is advantageous, not only to the humankind, but also to the beasts of burden....it is claimed by some that...necessity for rest...applies to some inanimate things....the rolling stock of railways, etc." *F387*

PERIOD OF SEVEN DAYS A LAW OF NATURE

"In France, following the Commune and its...infidelity, it was determined to obliterate the...one day in seven—

and...to have one day in ten as a rest day but this was found to work unsatisfactorily....they soon discovered...that Nature stamps the number 7 with its approval in some...manner..." *F388*

NOT GOOD TO BE ABANDONED

"So far, then from advocating an abandonment of the Christian Sunday, we urge that it be retained as an advantage to the natural man as well as...the New Creation." *F388*

PROPER OBSERVANCE

"...many...would lose respect for...children of God who neglected...to utilize the first day of the week for worship...or used it...for...business. We advise...that those who...discern the liberty wherewith Christ makes free shall not misuse their liberty so as to stumble others; but...to grow in grace, knowledge, and all the fruits of the Spirit....that within all reasonable bounds the Lord's consecrated people, and, so far as their influence extends, their families...keep Sunday faithfully...." *F386, 387*

"The New Creation...Walking not after the flesh but after the Spirit...will...use such a favorable opportunity to glorify God....Praise, thanksgiving, meditations, and exhortations... will be in order. Nor do we urge that...Sunday must be used exclusively for...worship. God has not so commanded....However, where our heart is...there we will delight to be, and we may safely conclude that every member...will find his chiefest joy...in fellowship...with the Lord and with the brethren, and...rarely forget to assemble...with them..." *F389*

HEB. 10:25: "Not forsaking the assembling of ourselves together, as the manner of some is; but exhorting one another: and so much the more, as ye see the day [the Millennial day, the 'times of restitution spoken by the mouth of...the holy prophets' *F389*] approaching."

CHILDREN OF THE FAMILY

"What we do voluntarily...is all the more evidence of our love and loyalty....Many...of the New Creation have children..., and these

should be...instructed respecting the proprieties of the day and its advantages, and the...liberties they may enjoy. Nothing in the Word...supports the Puritanical Sabbath....in getting far away from this...do not get to the other extreme... sanctioning hilarious conduct...or labor of any sort which might be done on another day. The children of the New Creation should...reflect the spirit of a sound mind, which God has promised to their parents....” *F389*

SABBATH “A SHADOW OF GOOD THINGS TO COME”

“Israel...got their first lesson in the observance of a day of rest in...the gathering of the manna, before...the Decalogue....The only previous mention of...’sabbath’...is in...the creation, where...God rested on the seventh...seventhousand year day.” *F390, 391*

“God identified their...24-hour period with his own rest on a larger...scale; and this leads us to infer that...there was...a...lesson...for the New Creation....” *F391*

“The seventh day,...month, and...year were all prominent under the Law. The seventh day as a period of...physical rest; the seventh month... in which the atonement...was effected, that they might have rest from sin; and the seventh year, ...in which came release from...servitude...the seventh year, multiplied by itself (7 x 7 equals 49) led up to the...Jubilee year, in which...every family was permitted to return to its own estate....the antitype...will be the...” *F391*

ACTS 3:21: “...times of restitution of all things, which God hath spoken by the mouth of...his holy prophets....”

THE SEVENTH DAY

“...the...seventh day...leads (7 x 7 equals 49) to a fiftieth or Jubilee Day, which expresses the same thought as the seventh day; viz., **rest** but emphasizes it.” *F391*

THE NEW CREATION’S SABBATH REST

“What blessing to spiritual Israel...was typified by natural Israel’s seventh day Sabbath....?” *F391*

HEB. 4:1-11: “Let us therefore fear, lest, a promise being left *us* of entering into his rest [Sabbath], any of you should seem to come short of it. For unto us was the gospel preached, as well as unto them: but the word preached did not profit them, not being mixed with faith in them that heard it. For we which have believed do enter into rest [the keeping of the Sabbath]....Seeing therefore it remaineth that some must enter therein, and they to whom it was first preached entered not in because of unbelief:...There remaineth therefore a rest to the people of God. For he that is entered into his rest, he also hath ceased from his own works, as God *did* from his. Let us labour therefore to enter into that rest, lest any man fall after the same example of unbelief.”

“...it is our privilege now to enter into rest; and..., all who have truly accepted the Lord, and are properly resting...in him, are thus enjoying the...Sabbath, or rest, at the present time—the rest of faith....In order to maintain this present rest, and to insure entrance into the eternal Sabbath ‘rest that remains for the people of God,’ the heavenly Kingdom,

it will be necessary...continually to exercise toward him faith and obedience.” *F392*

HOW WE ENTER THIS REST

“...the rest of faith....started with our full acceptance of...the redeemer...; it increased as we recognized him as the Head of the New Creation, and heir of the Abrahamic promise, and ourselves as being called of God to be his joint-heirs in that Kingdom of blessing. The **perfect rest**, or Sabbath enjoyment, came when we submitted our **all** to the Lord, accepting joyfully his promised guidance through a ‘narrow way’ to the Kingdom. There we **rested from our own works**, from all effort to justify ourselves; we confessed ourselves imperfect and unworthy of divine grace, and unable to make ourselves worthy. There we gratefully accepted divine mercy...in the redemption...and...

HEB. 4:16: “‘...grace to help in time of need....’

“And undertook to be disciples of Jesus—followers in his steps even...

REV. 2:10: “‘...unto death.’...” *F392, 393*

“...we entered into rest as God rested from his...creative work....He has since permitted sin and death to mar his fair creation; yet has not raised his arm...to prevent....God is resting,... leaving the entire matter for Messiah to accomplish. We enter by faith into God’s rest when we discern Christ to be God’s Anointed One...to do this...work, not for us...only, but a work of...restitution for the world....

“...the apostles enjoyed a measure of rest...while the Lord was with them....But not the full rest. They rejoiced...in him, though they understood not the lengths and breadths of his love and service. When the Master died, their rest and joy and peace were broken; and...they were disappointed....

LUKE 24:21: “‘...we trusted that it had been he which should have redeemed Israel.’

“When he had risen...and proved his resurrection, their doubts and fears began to give way to hopes; but their joy and peace did not come back in full. They were in perplexity. They...,however,...heeded his admonition to tarry...until...endued with power.” *F393*

LENGTH OF WAITING TIME — HOW REST CAME TO THE APOSTLES

“...they waited for seven times seven days—forty-nine days, and the day following, the fiftieth day, the Jubilee Sabbath day, God...granted that those who had accepted Jesus should enter into his rest C...the higher Sabbath of the New Creation...by the Pentecostal blessing which, spoke ‘peace through Jesus Christ’—which informed them that although

Jesus had died for sinners, and...ascended up on high and absent from their sight, yet he was approved of Jehovah, his sacrifice made acceptable for sin that they might thus **rest in the merit of the work which he had accomplished** C...rest assured of the forgiveness of their own sins and of their own acceptance with the Father....that the exceeding great and precious promises centered in Jesus will all be accomplished, and that they shall share a glorious part...if they prove faithful....” *F394*

OUR SABBATH KEEPING

“...the New Creation....instead of keeping...a seventh day of physical rest,...keep a perpetual rest of heart, of mind, of faith in the Son of God....The grand ‘rest that remaineth for the people of God’ will come at the end—to all those who shall finish their course with joy. Meantime **the rest of faith** must continue, for it is

our earnest, or assurance, of the rest beyond. Its maintenance will require not only obedience to the extent of ability in thought, word, and deed, but also trust in the Lord's grace....Our rest and trust must be that he is both able and willing to bring us off...

ROM. 8:37: "'...more than conquerors....'

"And grant us a share in the work of the Antitypical Jubilee." *F394*

See also Index: **Chronology; Covenants; Creation and Fall.**

SALVATION BY WORKS

EPH. 2:8-10: "...**by grace are ye saved through** faith; and that not of yourselves: *it is* the gift of God: **Not of works**, lest any man should boast. For we are his workmanship, created in Christ Jesus **unto good works**, which God hath before ordained that we should walk in them."

"As members of the fallen race we were incapable of doing any work which our holy God could accept....Our present standing, therefore, as New Creatures, is not the result of anything that the old creature did, or could have done. It is not of ourselves; it is a gift of God. This lesson must be thoroughly appreciated, else we shall be continually in danger of falling.

"So far from considering the New Creature as an evolution of the old creature, the apostle would have us understand distinctly that it is a new and separate creation. We were created in Christ Jesus, God's workmanship—prepared **for** good works, but not **by** good works." *R3166:4; Manna, March 29*

NOT BY OUR WORKS

"The apostle...guards us against the thought that any of these blessings have come to us on account of our own merit. He reiterates...

EPH. 2:5,8: "'...by grace ye are saved;...'

ROM. 11:6: "'And if by grace, then is it no more of works: otherwise grace is no more grace.'" *R3166:4*

NOT BY EVOLVING

"If our present standing were the result of our own...'works,' there would probably be some room for boasting;—it would imply that we were not so fallen that we could not have lifted ourselves out of the miry clay of sin,—on the line of the Evolution theory. But such theories are not recognized in the divine Word and must not be recognized by any who would maintain their standing as new creatures **in Christ**...." *R3166:4*

PROGRESS IN GOOD WORKS

JAS. 2:26: "...as the body without the spirit is dead, so faith without works is dead also."

"God foreordained that this new creation should progress in good works. To become new creatures in Christ we gladly surrendered our all to the Lord, that we might know his will and do it; and having accepted us in Christ, he informs us that it is his good pleasure that our entire life should be renewed; that we should discard entirely from our

hearts,...everything sinful,...unholy, and that so far as possible our mortal bodies should be brought into subjection to our new minds, and that we should walk in newness of life, even on this side the vail—thus giving evidence of our sincerity, developing character, and becoming meet for...

COL. 1:12: "'...the inheritance of the saints in light...'

"In glory. Whoever is not disposed to walk in the Lord's way of holiness and opposition to sin, and in cultivation of....The Spirit of the Lord, the 'holy spirit,' surely deceives himself, if he thinks he has passed....[**1 JOHN 3:14:]** '...from death unto life....'

"And that he is a new creature in Christ Jesus." *R3166:5*

FAITH MANIFESTED BY WORKS

"Abraham's experience is recorded as an evidence of his faith. It would have been vain for him to have pleaded great faith in the Lord and to have said, The Lord is as able to bless me and to use me in Chaldea,...as in any other place; and since what he seeks is...my faith, he can just as well see that I have it here. Some...seem to reason after this manner, but they make a great mistake. It is true that...

1 SAM. 16:7: "'...the Lord looketh on the heart'

"and that it is our faith, and not our imperfect works, which commends us to him, but...if we have the faith, it will...manifest itself in works;...if we have the faith and fail to act in harmony with it, to the extent of our ability, the faith will die out. Perfect works are not demanded..., because we are imperfect through the fall; but any who would maintain a justified standing...through faith, must manifest works in harmony with their faith to the extent of ability, for faith without works is....thenceforth dead, worthless. Jas. 2:17" *R2847:3*

JUSTIFICATION BY WORKS

"Justification is a free gift....But...sanctification... selfsacrifice, such...works must be forthcoming." *R2847:4*

2 COR. 6:1: "We...beseech *you* also that ye receive not the grace of God in vain."

NOT WORKS OF THE LAW

GAL. 3:2,5,10: "...Received ye the Spirit by the works of the law, or by the hearing of faith?.... He...that ministereth to you the Spirit, and worketh miracles among you, *doeth he it* by the works of the law, or by the hearing of faith?....For as many as are of the works of the law are under the curse: for it is written, Cursed *is* every one that continueth not in all things which are written in the book of the law to do them."

ROM. 3:20,28: "Therefore by the deeds of the law there shall no flesh be justified in his sight:...Therefore we

conclude that a man is justified by faith without the deeds of the law." (Cf. Gal. 2:16)

JUSTIFIED BY WORKS

JAS. 2:14-25: "What *doth it* profit, my brethren, though a man say he hath faith, and have not works? can faith save him? If a brother or sister be..destitute....And one...say... be ye warmed and filled; notwithstanding ye give them not those things...needful...what doth it profit? Even so faith, if it hath not works, is dead, being alone. Yea, a man may say, Thou hast faith, and I have works: show me thy faith without thy works, and I will show thee my faith by my works....But wilt thou know, O vain man, that faith without works is dead? Thou believest that there is one God; thou doest well: the devils also believe, and tremble. Was not Abraham our father justified by works, when he had offered Isaac his son upon the altar? Seest thou how faith wrought with his works, and by works was faith made perfect? And the scripture was fulfilled which saith, Abraham believed God, and it was imputed unto him for righteousness:....Ye see then how that by works a man is justified, and not by faith only. Likewise also was not Rahab the harlot justified by works, when she had received the messengers, and had sent *them* out another way?"

"...this class, now justified by its faith, must not...deny its faith by willfully contrary works... while God is...dealing with them from the standpoint of faith,...not according to...actual performances—nevertheless, he will expect that the flesh will be brought into subjection to the new mind so far as possible." *F106*

ROM. 12:18: "...as much as lieth in you...."

"...and that it will cooperate in all good works to the extent of its opportunity, and possibilities. In this sense and in this degree our works have to do with our justification—as corroborative testimony, proving the sincerity of our devotion..." *F108, 109*

OUR JUDGMENT BY FAITH

"Nevertheless our judgment...is not according to works but...faith; if judged according to our works we would...

ROM. 3:23: "'...all come short of the glory of God...'

"But if judged according to our hearts, our intentions, the New Creature can be approved by the divine standard under the terms of the Grace Covenant, by which the merit of Christ's sacrifice covers their unintentional blemishes. And surely none could object to the Lord's expecting us to bring forth such fruits of righteousness as may be possible for us under present imperfect conditions. More, he does not ask, and less...we should not expect him to... reward." *F109*

NOT ALL WORKS ACCEPTABLE

MATT. 7:21-23: "Not every one that saith unto me, Lord, Lord, shall enter into the kingdom of heaven; but he that doeth the will of my Father which is in heaven. Many will say to me in that day, Lord, Lord, have we not prophesied in thy name?...and in thy name done many wonderful works? And then will I profess unto them, I never knew you: depart from me, ye that work iniquity."

"Our Lord implies that a great number of nominal followers devoid of his Spirit, not bringing forth the fruitage that he desires, not...called and chosen and faithful..., though... nominally all of these....says...many....'in that day,' in the closing of this age, in the testing time....will profess that they know the Lord,...are prophesiers or teachers,...casting out devils, opposing sin and...evil, and carrying on mighty works, benevolent institutions,... seminaries, etc., in his name. The Revised Version gives, 'by thy name,' intimating that the name of Christ is used rather as a charm, to conjure by,...to increase their influence, to... make themselves believe that in doing their own wills they are working the will of God.... Recognizing more or less clearly the divine opposition to their sectarian spirit and creeds and methods and organizations—they, nevertheless, are not satisfied unless they somehow connect the name of Christ with their institutions and arrangements.

"But the...Lord...will not be deceived; yea, he will expose the bad fruit....It will be shown that many...are false prophets, whose teachings have misguided....deceiving and being deceived, sectarian fruitage, and not the...Holy Spirit, have been cultivated.

"The Lord never...recognized them...." *R3747:6-3748:1,2*

WORLD TO BE JUDGED BY WORKS

"Christ and the Church...will perform justifying (restoring) work upon the world during the Millennial age...C justification by works...although mixed with faith the final testing will be...

REV. 20:12: "'...according to their works.'

"When the **knowledge** of the Lord shall fill the whole earth....there

will be upon man a... test...of works—of obedience; for...

ACTS 3:23: "'...it shall come to pass, *that* every soul, which will not hear [obey] that prophet, shall be destroyed from among the people.'" *F112*

"Obedience will be required...to the extent of ability and increasing ability will be the reward of every effort until, at the close of the Millennial age, all who will may...have attained full perfection..." *R3580:1*

MATT. 25:40: "...as ye have **done** *it* unto one of the least of these my brethren ye have done *it* unto me." (Cf. vs. 45)

See also Index: **Faith; Hell; "Jehovah's Witnesses," Day of Judgment; Responsibility to the Truth.**

TWO SALVATIONS

"...through Jesus, God has made a provision for the recovery of mankind out of the sin and death condition into which he fell,...this salvation...has...begun in that Christ has...given his life a ransom-price....

"But the world has not yet been saved...to effect this salvation Messiah...will set up a...reign of righteousness....it shall destroy sin, death and everything opposed to...righteousness....

"...eventually, there will be two classes of saved ones...: (1) The church changed from earthly to divine nature....(2) the willing and obedient of the world, who, during the thousand years of Messiah's glorious reign, will be gradually changed, not to a different nature, but from the imperfection to the perfection of human nature...." *R5078:1,2,5*

SALVATION OF THE CHURCH

1 COR. 15:51,53: "...we shall all be changed,...For this corruptible must put on incorruption, and this mortal *must* put on immortality."

1 COR. 15:42-45,47-50: "...It is sown in corruption; it is raised in incorruption: It is sown in dishonour; it is raised in glory: it is sown in weakness; it is raised in power: It is sown a natural body; it is raised a spiritual body....the last Adam *was made* a quickening spirit....the second man *is* the Lord from heaven....As *is* the earthy, such *are* they also that are earthy: and as is the heavenly, such are they also that are heavenly. And as we have borne the image of the earthy, we shall also bear the image of the heavenly.....flesh and blood cannot inherit the kingdom of God; neither doth corruption inherit incorruption."

LIKE JESUS

1 JOHN 3:2: "Beloved, now are we the sons of God, and it doth not yet appear what we shall be: but...we shall be like him; for we shall see him as he is."

DIVINE BEINGS

HEB 1:3,4: "Who being the brightness of *his* glory, and the express image of his person,...sat down on the right hand of the Majesty on high; Being made so much better than the angels, as he hath by inheritance obtained a more excellent name than they."

1 TIM. 6:16: "Who only hath immortality, dwelling in the light which no man can approach unto; whom no man hath seen, nor can see...." (Cf. 1 Peter 3:22; Col. 1:15-18 following.)

1 PET. 3:22: "Who is gone into heaven, and is on the right hand of God; angels and authorities and powers being made subject unto him."

COL. 1:15-18: "Who is the image of the invisible God, the firstborn of every creature: For by him were all things created, that are in heaven, and that are in earth, visible and invisible, whether *they be* thrones, or dominions, or principalities, or powers: all things were created by him, and for him: And he is before all things, and by him all things consist. And he is the head of the body, the church: who is the beginning, the firstborn from the dead; that in all *things* he might have the preeminence."

COL. 3:4: "When Christ, *who is* our life, shall appear, then shall ye also appear with him in glory."

PRECIOUS PROMISES

2 PET. 1:4: "Whereby are given unto us exceeding great and precious promises: that by these ye might be partakers of the divine nature..."

REV. 2:10: "Be thou faithful unto death, and I will give thee a crown of [the] life." (Cf. *Diag. Interlineary.)*

REV. 3:21: ***Diag.*** "The CONQUEROR, I will give to him to sit down with me in my THRONE, as I also conquered, and AM sat down with my FATHER in his THRONE." (Cf. interlineary.)

REV. 20:6: "Blessed and holy *is* he that hath part in the first resurrection: on such the second death hath no power, but they shall be priests of God and of Christ, and shall reign With him [the] thousand years. ['the' — *Sinaitic MS*.]"

"SO GREAT SALVATION"

HEB. 2:3: "How shall we escape, if we neglect so great salvation; which at the first began to be spoken by the Lord, and was confirmed unto us by them that heard *him*..."

LIFE AND IMMORTALITY

2 TIM. 1:10: "...our Saviour Jesus Christ, who hath abolished death, and hath brought life and immortality to light through the gospel..."

OUR CALL VS. THE WORLD'S SALVATION

"Our treasure is in heaven....Our calling is not only to the spiritual nature, but to the highest order of the spiritual, the divine nature....

"This heavenly calling is confined to the Gospel age: it was never made before it, and it will cease with its close. An earthly calling was made, though imperfectly understood, before the heavenly calling, and we are told that it will be continued after the Gospel age. Life (for those restored as

human beings) and immortality (the prize for which the body of Christ is running) have both been brought to light during this age....Both the human and spiritual natures will be glorious in their perfection, yet distinct and separate..." *A203*

THE EARTHLY SALVATION

1 COR. 15:45,47,48: "...the first man Adam was made a living soul....the first man *is* of the earth, earthy....As *is* the earthy, such *are* they also that are earthy...."

MATT. 25:34: "...Come ye blessed of my Father, inherit the kingdom prepared for you from the foundation of the world."

"The human nature is a perfect earthly image of the spiritual..., having the same faculties, but confined to the earthly sphere...." *A201*

GREAT COMPANY SPIRITUAL BUT NOT DIVINE

1 COR. 5:5: "To deliver such an one unto Satan for the destruction of the flesh, that the spirit may be saved in the day of the Lord Jesus."

1 COR. 3:13,15: "Every man's work shall be made manifest: for the day shall declare it, because it shall be revealed by fire; and the fire shall try every man's work of what sort it is....If any man's work shall be burned, he shall suffer loss: but he himself shall be saved; yet so as by fire." ("through a Fire," — *Diag.*)

REV. 7:15-17: "Therefore are they before the throne of God, and serve him day and night in his temple: and he that sitteth on the throne shall dwell among [tabernacle — over, *Diag*.] them. They shall hunger no more, neither thirst any more; neither shall the sun light on them, nor any heat. For the Lamb which is in the midst of the throne shall feed them, and shall lead them to Fountains of Waters of Life [*Diag.*]: and God shall wipe away all tears from their eyes."

Contrast:

EARTHLY PROMISE

REV. 21:3: "...Behold, the tabernacle of God is with men, and he will dwell with them..." ("tabernacle with them" *Diag*.)

SANCTIFICATION

"Sanctification signifies **a setting apart** or separating." *E241* "Sanctification signifies setting apart to holy service." *F121* **1 COR. 6:11**: "...but ye are washed, but ye are sanctified, but ye are justified, in the name of the Lord Jesus, and by the Spirit of our God."

SANCTIFIED BY THE SPIRIT

"The evidence...of our justification and sanctification comes to us through the Word, and is called the 'seal' and 'witness' of the Spirit in us....

1 THES. 5:23: "'And the very God of peace sanctify you wholly...'

"It is God who sanctifies, and the...channel is his holy Spirit..." *E242*

1 PET. 1:2: "Elect...through sanctification of the Spirit, unto obedience...."

"...if the Holy Spirit of God (influence of the Truth) operating upon them shall bring them to...full obedience (sanctification) to the Father's will and plan and providence, then they shall constitute the elect....

EPH. 5:25,26: "'...Christ also loved the church, and gave himself for it; That he might sanctify and cleanse it with the washing of water by the word...'

"...it is the Holy Spirit of God, operating through the Word of his truth, that...shall produce in us cleansing, justification, sanctification....

JOHN 17:17: "'Sanctify them through thy truth: thy word is truth.'

"Sanctification...is accomplished by the Spirit of the Truth...through the Word of God...All...thus sanctified are thenceforth '**new creatures in Christ Jesus**.'...

1 COR. 1:2: "'...them that are sanctified in Christ Jesus....'

"Yet this sanctification in Christ is not aside from the Spirit of God, nor...the Word of God; for it is by...our acceptance of the divine plan and provision...our coming to the point of sanctification of the Spirit, that we are one with Christ our Lord....

HEB. 2:11: "'For both he that sanctifieth...they who are sanctified *are* all of one...'

"...['of one spirit, of one mind, begotten of the Spirit of Truth], for which cause he is not ashamed to call them brethren'...Thus...we are...[**1 COR. 6:11**:] '...washed,...sanctified,... justified holy in the name of the Lord Jesus, and by the Spirit of our God.'" *E243*

ORDER IN PROCEDURE

"...the call to repentance, the...good tidings unto justification and the invitation to sanctify or consecrate...are all...parts of the...plan which God is now working out —...the development of the New Creation....

"In God's order, we must learn first of...the provision...for our sins, and...accept his forgiveness...through Christ, before we... consecrate, or...sanctify ourselves to his service.... as our High Priest...

HEB. 9:14: "'...offered himself...to God....'

"The under-priesthood must all **offer up** themselves...also...." *F122*

ROM. 12:1: "I beseech you therefore, brethren, by the mercies of God, that ye present your bodies a living sacrifice, holy, acceptable unto God, *which is* your reasonable service."

"As the Lord said to the typical Israelites,...

LEV. 20:7,8; EXOD. 31:13: "'Sanctify yourselves....I... sanctify you.'

"So he directs the spiritual Israelite to consecrate himself..." *F123*

TWO CONSECRATIONS

"...two consecrations are...shown. (1) the general consecration of all the Levites; (2) a special consecration of the...**sacrificers** or priests. The first represents the...consecration to holy living and obedience...all believers make, and which... through Christ, accomplishes...reckonedly, **justification**....This...all true believers... experience...But....

1 TIM. 1:5, *Diag.*: "'...the END of the COMMANDMENT is Love, from a Pure Heart....'

"...our compliance with our first consecration,... with the terms of our justification...will...lead... to...consecration...for sacrifice.

"Because holy living and obedience to God includes...Love for God...'with all our heart, mind, being and strength;' and such love...will appeal for service, saying...

ACTS 9:6: "'...Lord what wilt thou have me to do?....'

"...to such the Lord gave the....call, to consecrate to death, to sacrifice their earthly interests for the heavenly,..." *F124*

"All...**marked** by the holy spirit...[JOHN 17:16:] '...not of the world....'

"Although these marks of sanctification may, to some extent, be discerned by the world, we are not...to expect...the world's...approval." *F132*

PROGRESSION

JOHN 15:19: "If ye were of the world, the world would love his own: but because ye are not of the world, but I have chosen you out of the world, therefore the world hateth you."

"Sanctification has not only two parts, namely, man's part of entire consecration, and God's part of entire acceptance, but it has additionally an element of progression. Our consecration...while it must be...entire,...to be accepted..., is... accompanied by a comparatively small amount of knowledge and experience; we are, therefore, to grow in sanctification...as we grow in knowledge. Our hearts were filled at the beginning, casting out all self-will, but...as they grow...sanctification must keep pace, filling every part...

EPH. 5:18: "'...be filled with the Spirit...'

"The provision made for this enlargement...is expressed in....

JOHN 17:17: "'Sanctify them through thy truth; thy Word is truth.'

"...the Word,....the '**wisdom**' of God through Christ...which...led...to...consecration...is to enlarge our hearts as well as to fill them. But while it is for God to supply the truth that is to fill and sanctify us, it is for us to manifest that consecrated

condition of heart in which we will hunger and thirst after that sanctifying truth — will feed upon it daily, and thus be enabled to grow strong in the Lord and in the power of his might....we...must be...disciplined and tried in order to the bringing forward and developing of...character, and each feature submitted to a thorough proof of loyalty...to insure that,...these New Creatures...be found faithful....” *F133*

DIFFERENCES IN EXPERIENCE

“A full consecration...brings...rest of heart, as we realize...that,...

ROM. 8:28: “‘All things work together for good to them that love God, to...the called according to his purpose.’

“...there will...be differences of experience in connection with this full consecration. To some a full surrender...will bring merely a satisfying peace,...to others...jubilation....Let the... exuberant...learn...moderation...; and let the brethren who...are rather too cold...pray and seek for a greater appreciation of, and...liberty in showing...

1 PET. 2:9: “‘...forth the praises of him who hath called...[us) out of darkness into his marvelous light...’

“...the Lord showed...appreciation of the warm, ardent, temperament....zeal is pleasing to the Lord, and means

closeness to him; but...it must always reverence the Head and be guided by his Word and Spirit.” *F134*

NOT HUMAN PERFECTION

“Sanctification does not mean human perfection,...does not change...our brains, not remove the blemishes of our bodies....It is consecration...of the **will**, which through Christ is accepted of the Lord as perfect: it is a consecration of the body to sacrifice — ‘even unto death’ — and that body,...is not made actually perfect...The new will...should seek to bring every power, every talent, every opportunity...to the Lord, and...to exercise an influence in the same direction upon all...This will not mean that...it will be able to bring its...imperfect body...to perfection....

“...heart-loyalty to the Lord will mean continual effort to bring all the conduct of our lives, yea, the very thoughts and intents of our hearts, into subjection to the divine will.

HEB. 4:12: “‘For the word of God...*is* a discerner of the thoughts and intents of the heart.’

1 THES. 4:3: “‘For this is the will of God, *even* your sanctification....’

1 PET. 1:16: “‘It is written, Be ye holy; for I am holy.’

“Absolute holiness is to be the standard which our **minds** can...live up to but to which we will never attain...physically so long as we are subject to the frailties of our fallen natures and the besetments of the world and the Adversary. But...as we are...

JOHN 6:45: “‘...taught of God....’

“As we come to a fuller knowledge of his glorious character, and as the appreciation of it more and more fills our hearts, the New Mind will more and more gain...power, over the weaknesses of the flesh...” *F136*

“True sanctification of the heart to the Lord will mean diligence in his service;...declaration of the good tidings to others;...building up one another in the most holy faith;...that we...do good unto all men as we have opportunity, especially to the household of faith;...that in these...ways our lives...shall be laid down for the brethren...day by day, opportunity by opportunity,...that our love for the Lord, for the brethren, for our families, and, sympathetically, for the world...will increasingly fill our hearts, as we grow in grace, knowledge and obedience....all these exercising of our energies for others are merely so many ways in which...**our own sanctification may be accomplished**....our energies on behalf of others bring blessings to ourselves..., while we should more and more come to that grand condition of loving our neighbors as ourselves — especially the household of faith — yet the mainspring back of all this should be our supreme love for

our Creator and Redeemer, and our desire to be and to do what would please him. Our sanctification, therefore, must be primarily toward God and first affect our own hearts and wills, and, as a result of such devotion to God, find its exercise in the interest of the brethren and of all men.” *F137*

1 JOHN 3:16: “...we ought to lay down our lives for the brethren.”

SANCTIFIED TO THE TRUTH

“...the sanctification essential to attainment of a place in the New Creation — will not be possible to any except those who are in the school of Christ, and who learn of him — are ‘sanctified through the truth.’ Error will not sanctify, neither will ignorance...,we are not to make the mistake of supposing that all truth tends to sanctification...it is only ‘**Thy** truth!...’

1 COR. 1:21: “‘...the world by wisdom knew not God...’

“...in a few short years of the present life, and in our...fallen...condition, our capacity is...too small to...take in the entire realm of truth on every subject....

1 TIM. 6:20: “‘...avoiding...oppositions of science falsely so called...’

“...although there is some truth connected with all these sciences, yet the human theories called sciences are not truth — not absolutely correct. they are merely the best guesses...and...from time to time contradict each other....” *F137*

“The Apostle Paul...exhorts us to lay...

HEB. 12:1,2; *Diag.*: “‘...aside every Encumbrance, and the CLOSE-GIRDING Sin...run with Patience the COURSE MARKED OUT for us, looking away to the LEADER...of the FAITH, Jesus....’

“...until he shall become the finisher of it.... And...holds up his own experience to us, saying,...

PHIL. 3:13: “‘...this one thing I do, forgetting those things which are behind...’

“...my former ambitions as a student,...a Roman citizen...more than average education;... allurements of the...sciences...and reaching forward to these things which are before [keeping the eye of my faith and hope and love and devotion fixed upon...joint-heirship with my Lord in the divine nature, and in the great work of...the blessing of the world]...

PHIL. 3:14: “‘...I press [down] upon the mark for the prize of the high calling...’” *F139*

EMOTION NOT SANCTIFICATION

“Some mistakenly expect an outward manifestation, such as...Pentecostal blessing. Others expect some inward, joyous sensation, which expectation, if not realized, causes disappointment and....doubt respecting their acceptance....Their

expectations are built largely upon the testimonies of brethren who have experienced such exuberance....the Scriptures nowhere warrant us in such expectations...we...

EPH. 4:4: "'...are all called in one hope of...[our] calling...'

"And...the same promises of forgiveness..., of the smile of the Father's countenance, of his favor assisting us...to attain the prize...— grace...for every...need — belong alike to all coming under...the call....Some are more...emotional than others,....more demonstrative...if describing the...same experiences. Besides, the Lord's dealings...vary to some extent....Jesus, when...he made a full consecration...and...was anointed with the holy spirit without measure, was not, so far as we are informed, granted any exuberant experiences. Doubtless...he was filled with the realization...was the right...one; that the Father approved it, and that it would have the divine blessing....Nevertheless, instead of being taken to the mountain top of joy, our Lord was led by the Spirit into the wilderness; and his...experiences...were those of severe temptation. The Adversary...sought to move him...by suggesting...plans which would not involve...sacrificial death...some of the Lord's followers...and...after, their consecration...are assailed with doubts and fears, suggestions... impugning divine wisdom or divine love for the necessity of our sacrificing earthly things....if one can rejoice in an ecstasy of feeling let all the others...rejoice with him....If another,...finds himself in trial...let the others sympathize... and...rejoice, too, as they realize how his experience is like that of our Leader." *F140*

"Those...reared under the...influences of a Christian home,...and who,...had ever sought to know and to do the divine will, should not expect that upon...making a consecration...they would have the same overflowing joy... experienced by another who had...been...a foreigner to holy things.

"The conversion of the latter would mean a radical change,...but the former...could feel no such abrupt change....These...may now appropriate to themselves...the...promises...which belong to the consecrated....If..., they are then granted a clearer insight into the divine plan, or even into the beginning of it, they should consider this an evidence of divine favor...in connection with the high calling...and...rejoice therein...." *F141, 142*

2 COR. 5:7: "...we walk by faith, not by sight..."

"Is applicable to the entire church of this Gospel age. The Lord's desire...that we should learn to trust....faith may be developed...to a degree...impossible if signs and wonders were granted..." *F142*

"The exuberance...which comes...is not infrequently lost...but...they may have perpetually...the **joys of faith**...except, perhaps, for a moment, as...our Lord...cried,

MATT. 27:46: "'...My God, my God, why hast thou forsaken me?'" *F143*

HELP FOR SOUL—SICKNESS

HEB. 4:16: "Let us...come boldly unto the throne of grace...to help in time of need."

"...those...rightly exercised...grow stronger...in the Lord...in a manner that they could not do were they freed from trials....Every time the New Creature finds it necessary to seek mercy and help, he has a fresh reminder...of the Redeemer's ...work...that...his one sacrifice...not willingly,...ours....and his present work as... Deliverer.

"Many...are rather inclined to say...'I have failed again. I cannot approach the throne of...grace until I have demonstrated...my good intentions by gaining a victory.' Thus they defer what should be their very first procedure....harassed by their previous weakness...in no...condition to...

1 TIM. 6:12: "'Fight the good fight of faith....'

"...and defeat is tolerably sure...and...a gradual cessation of appealing to the Lord, and... submission to...clouds...they gradually come to esteem as in **their case** unavoidable." *F145*

"We are not to think of our Lord as...inclined to judge us harshly;...he was prompted to provide for redemption...

ROM. 5:8: "'...while we were yet sinners....'

"If they decline the invitation...to come to the throne...they will ultimately be counted unworthy....

HEB. 11:6: "'...without faith *it is* impossible to please *him*....'

1 JOHN 5:4: "'...this is the victory that overcometh the world, *even* our faith.'" *F146*

"...in putting off our visit to the throne...until we can bring something...to justify ourselves, is to show...we do not fully appreciate...that we cannot do the things we would; therefore, it was necessary that the Redeemer should come....Our reckonings with the Lord should be day by day; and if...the heart...is very tender...waiting not even for the close the day....

"...some....after they do come...do not realize the blessing they seek....they may lack the faith....

MATT. 9:29: "'...According to your faith be it unto you.'

"Their difficulty may be...that they have not made amends for injury done to another; or...are seeking peace without making confession...and asking...forgiveness....In not a few cases...the difficulty has been that the suppliants never had made a proper **consecration**...." *F147*

"The...remedy for lack of faith would be...study of God's Word, thinking upon his goodness..., striving to realize that he is gracious...

EPH. 3:20: "'...exceeding abundantly above all that we ask or think....'

"The remedy for the third difficulty would be to make a full consecration....

"...in some instances,...faith...removing...fear...left them...more exposed to temptation....their lives seem to be a succession of failures and repentances...." *F148*

"...desiring...in prayer the aid...promised....

2 COR. 12:9: "'...My grace is sufficient for thee: for my strength is made perfect in weakness....'

"...they should not only make amends to those injured, but...confession to the Lord....

"Thus watching and praying, and setting guards upon the action and words..., and...

2 COR. 10:5: "'...bringing into captivity every thought to the obedience of Christ.'

"...it will surely not be long until they can assure themselves and the brethren respecting the sincerity of their **hearts**...." *F149*

"...so long as they give evidence of repentance... and a desire...to go in the right way and of continued faith...— however necessary

to restrict fellowship..., they are still to be encouraged to believe that the Lord is very merciful..., although they cannot...expect that they could ever be...of the over-coming class...their flesh will show....subjection to the New Mind....

"...some...consecrated people...desiring a fullness of fellowship with him...seek for something...to satisfy...worldly entertainments, etc....some...who had settled down to seeming indifference to spiritual things after have vainly tried...to find some soul satisfaction;...receiving 'Present Truth'...blossomed forth in the spiritual graces...in a most remarkable manner." *F150*

JUSTIFICATION SHOULD MERGE INTO SANCTIFICATION (F151)

"Joy and peace come from the moment of... acceptance of...atonement, and the resolve to follow righteousness....until the...pursuit of righteousness involves self denial and self sacrifice, and this sacrifice is not made...." *F153*

See also Index: **Consecration**

ERRONEOUS VIEWS OF SANCTIFICATION

"...one erroneous view...is the claim of actual holiness...that they 'have not sinned for years'....

"These...have their minds turned...to a considerable degree away from faith in the Lord — faith in his redemptive work....A proper... estimate of themselves would...convince them... that they come far short of the divine standard...." *F157*

"Another class...claim holiness, entire sanctification, etc., on the ground of seeking to avoid sin....all the truly consecrated must seek to avoid sin to the extent of their ability. The mistake...is that they consider...this...the sole object...of their consecration....no creature...had a right to sin....God's Word does not...call upon us to sacrifice sins....These....have gone only so far as all the justified should go; and have not yet entered the low gate of self sacrifice...of those things which are **right, lawful,** and **proper** — ...that we may the better serve the Lord...." *F158*

See also Index: **Baptism; Begotten and Born of the Spirit; Grace: Once In Grace Always in Grace; Great Company; High Calling; Salvation By Works; Tabernacle; Three Ways.**

SATAN

Definition: Satan: "Adversary, opposing spirit" — *Young*

"The Apostle writes — 'Your adversary, the devil,' as though he would have us understand that we have much more to contend with than the weaknesses of our own flesh and the imperfections of fellow men....that we have a...'wily' foe in Satan, and that we must keep close to our Shepherd if we would be delivered out of temptation and from the power of the Evil One. Let us note some of the many scriptures which refer to this Adversary whose very existence is now being denied by many." *F610*

SOME TEXTS ABOUT SATAN

JOB 1:6-12; 2:1-7: "...there was a day when the sons of God came to present themselves before the LORD, and Satan came also among them. And the LORD said unto Satan, Whence comest thou? Then Satan answered the LORD, and said, From going to and fro in the earth, and from walking up and down in it. And the LORD said unto Satan, Hast thou considered my servant Job, that *there is* none like him in the earth, a perfect and an upright man, one that feareth God, and escheweth evil? Then Satan answered the LORD, and said, Doth Job fear God for nought? Hast not thou made an hedge about him, and about his house, and about all that he hath on every side? thou hast blessed the work of his hands, and his substance is increased in the land. But put forth thine hand now, and touch all that he hath, and he will curse thee to thy face. And the LORD said unto Satan, Behold, all that he hath *is* in thy power; only upon himself put not forth thine hand. So Satan went forth from the presence of the LORD....AGAIN there was a day when the sons of God came to present themselves before the LORD, and Satan came also among them to present himself before the LORD. And the LORD said unto Satan, From whence comest thou? And Satan answered the LORD, and said, From going to and fro in the earth, and from walking up and down in it. And the LORD said unto Satan, Hast thou considered my servant Job, that *there is* none like him in the earth, a perfect and an upright man, one that feareth God, and escheweth evil? and still he holdeth fast his integrity, although thou movedst me against him, to destroy him without cause. And Satan answered the LORD, and said, Skin for skin, yea, all that a man hath will he give for his life. But put forth thine hand now, and touch his bone and his flesh, and he will curse thee to thy face. And the LORD said unto Satan, Behold, he *is* in thine hand; but save his life. So went Satan forth from the presence of the LORD, and smote Job with sore boils from the sole of his foot unto his crown."

ZECH. 3:1,2: "**AND** he showed me Joshua the high priest...before the angel of the LORD, and Satan standing at his right hand to resist him. And the LORD said unto Satan, The LORD rebuke thee, O Satan; even the LORD that hath chosen Jerusalem rebuke thee..." (Cf. Jude 9)

MATT. 4:1: "THEN was Jesus led up of the Spirit into the wilderness to be tempted of the devil."

LUKE 8:12: "Those by the way side are they that hear; then cometh the devil, and taketh away the word out of their hearts..."

LUKE 10:18: "...I beheld Satan as lightning fall from heaven."

JOHN 8:44: "Ye are of *your* father the devil, and the lusts of your father ye will do. He was a murderer from the beginning, and abode not in the truth, because there is no truth in him. When he

speaketh a lie, he speaketh of his own: for he is a liar, and the father of it."

JOHN 13:2: "...Supper being ended, the devil having now put into the heart of Judas Iscariot, to betray him..."

ACTS 26:16-18: "...I have appeared unto thee for this purpose,...I send thee,...To open their eyes, *and* to turn *them* from darkness to light, and *from* the power of Satan unto God..."

ROM 16:20: "...the God of peace shall bruise Satan under your feet shortly..."

1 COR. 5:5: "To deliver such an one unto Satan for the destruction of the flesh..."

2 COR. 2:11: "Lest Satan should get an advantage of us: for we are not ignorant of his devices."

2 COR. 11:14: "...Satan himself is transformed into an angel of light."

EPH. 2:2: "Wherein in time past ye walked according to the course of this world, according to the prince of the power of the air, the spirit that now worketh in the children of disobedience..."

EPH 4:27: "Neither give place to the devil."

1 TIM. 1:20: "Of whom is Hymenaeus and Alexander; whom I have delivered unto Satan, that they may learn not to blaspheme."

1 TIM. 3:6,7: "...lest...he fall into condemnation of the devil....lest...he fall into...the snare of the devil."

1 TIM. 5:14,15: "...give none occasion to the adversary to speak reproachfully. For some are already turned aside after Satan."

HEB. 2:14: "...that through death he might destroy him that had the power of death, that is, the devil."

JAS. 4:7: "...Resist the devil, and he will flee from you."

1 JOHN 3:8,10: "He that committeth sin is of the devil; for the devil sinneth from the beginning. For this purpose the Son of God was manifested, that he might destroy the works of the devil....In this the children of God are manifest, and the children of the devil: whosoever doeth not righteousness is not of God, neither he that loveth not his brother."

1 JOHN 5:18,19; *Diag.*: "...EVERYONE who has been BEGOTTEN by GOD does not sin; but the one BEGOTTEN by GOD guards himself and the EVIL one does not lay hold of him. We know That we are from God, and that the whole WORLD lies under the EVIL one."

JUDE 9: "Yet Michael the archangel, when contending with the devil he disputed about the body of Moses, durst not bring against him a railing accusation, but said, The Lord rebuke thee."

REV. 2:10: "...behold, the devil shall cast *some* of you into prison, that ye may be tried..."

REV. 20:2,3: "And he laid hold on the dragon, that old serpent, which is the Devil, and Satan, and bound him a thousand years,...that he should deceive the nations no more, till the thousand years should be fulfilled..."

"AS A ROARING LION"

1 PET. 5:8: "Be sober, be vigilant; because your adversary the devil, as a roaring lion, walketh about, seeking whom he may devour..."

"Peter's declaration...seems to teach that he is not...[the Church's] adversary alone, but that of all mankind. Our Lord makes a direct assertion to that effect...." *F611*

PRINCE OF THIS WORLD

JOHN 12:31: "Now is the judgment of this world: now shall the prince of this world be cast out."

JOHN 14:30: "HEREAFTER I will not talk much with you: for the prince of this world cometh, and hath nothing in me."

JOHN 16:8,11: "When he [the Comforter, vs. 7] is come, he will reprove the world of sin, and of righteousness, and of judgment:...Of judgment, because the prince of this world is judged."

A MALEVOLENT FOE

"Our own flesh opposes the New Creature, not from any bitterness or hatred,...cravings of the fallen flesh are...at variance to the best interests of the New Creature....the opposition of the world is...a selfish one, because...seeing things in different lights and...selfish differences of interest.

Satan alone is the willful, intelligent ...schemer who uses a superhuman intelligence and, so far as permitted, superhuman powers, to inveigle our fallen flesh, through depraved appetites, etc., and...uses the worldly as his tools...in opposing righteousness and truth and those who are of the Truth." *F611*

"FROM THE BEGINNING"

JOHN 8:44: "Ye are of *your* father the devil, and the lusts of your father ye will do. He was a murderer from the beginning, and abode not in the truth, because there is no truth in him. When he speaketh a lie, he speaketh of his own: for he is a liar, and the father of it."

"Satan began the rebellion...and seduced our first parents into disobedience, through his own ambition for power; and...since man's fall...has been the implacable opponent of God, of righteousness and of truth; and not only the ensnarer of mankind, but the opposer of the great plan of Atonement which God...is prosecuting through Christ...." *F612*

ORIGINALLY PERFECT

"...he was created perfect...in the image of God; because all of God's work is perfect...." *F612*

DEUT. 32:4: "...his work is perfect..."

FREE MORAL AGENCY

"But to be created perfect, and to remain perfect, are two...different propositions." *F612*

ISA. 14:12-17: "How art thou fallen from heaven, O Lucifer, son of the morning! how art thou cut down to the ground, which didst weaken the nations! For thou hast said in thine heart, I will ascend into heaven, I will exalt my throne above the stars of God: I will sit also upon the mount of the congregation, in the sides of the north: I will ascend above the heights of the clouds; I will be like the most High. Yet thou shalt be brought down to hell [sheol], to the sides of the pit. They that see thee shall narrowly look upon thee, *and* consider thee, *saying*, *Is* this the man that made the earth to tremble, that did shake kingdoms; *That* made the world as a wilderness, and destroyed the cities thereof; *that* opened not the house of his prisoners?"

See also Index: **Hell and Purgatory**

BINDING AND DESTRUCTION

"Satan himself shall first be bound during the thousand years of the reign of the Redeemer and the lifting of the curse, and the blessing of the world, but subsequently...he is to be destroyed...." *F619*

MATT. 25:41: "...Depart from me, ye cursed, into everlasting fire, prepared for the devil and his angels..."

HEB. 2:14: "Forasmuch then as the children are partakers of flesh and blood, he also himself likewise took part of the same; that through death he might destroy him that had the power of death, that is, the devil..."

REV. 20:10: "And the devil that deceived them was cast into the lake of fire...."

See also Index: **Hell and Purgatory.**

"God...has been pleased to create all the morally intelligent of his creatures...with...liberty to follow...the good...; but with power also...to become rebels against...righteousness. God, however,...can destroy any..., if they refuse to...obey his righteous requirements...." *F612*

"Then...one of...high rank, harboring selfish and ambitious thoughts, concluded that if he could...capture the...human pair, and alienate them from God, then he could...set up a... dominion of his own....his prosecution of this...ambition...gave to him his present name, Satan — adversary....He did not...attempt to usurp God's dominion over the angels...all of the angels...knew Satan as one of themselves. Hence, they would not have...become his servants...being...satisfied with...the just, loving, and wise administration of Jehovah...." *F613*

See also Index: **Spiritism**

"No doubt Satan justified his own course..., reasoning...that...creating mankind on a lower plane...was with a view to having them the more fully enslaved....

"Perhaps...with the false idea that he was doing justice to the oppressed...Satan approached mother Eve...and suggested to her that the...divine decree respecting one of the trees...was the exercise...of unwarranted, autocratic powers — to restrain them from liberties which should...be theirs....He even suggested...that God falsified...when he stated that the eating of the fruit...would result in... death. Satan had never seen death amongst any of God's creatures made in his own likeness, endowed with reason; and hence, in his perverse attitude...assumed that he had...lied...to further his own plans of keeping them in...ignorance, and under...despotic authority." *F614*

"The mind of...Eve...was poisoned with the thought that she was...being deprived of... knowledge...which God...was misrepresenting... — threatening...death — whereas...Satan...jealous for their welfare...assured them that the eating of the...fruit would not...bring...death, but... increase...knowledge....selfishness and acquisitiveness were aroused in...Eve....

"He staked his all upon his ability to capture the new human race as his...kingdom; or, as perhaps he would have expressed it,...his effort to liberate the new human family....When he saw...the human pair...cast out of Eden, and shut off from its life-sustaining trees, that they...began to...perish, no doubt he was disappointed....

1 TIM. 2:14: "'...Adam was not deceived....'

"His share in the transaction was a voluntary one....Inspired by the thought that his wife must die...he resolved to die with her. Had he understood better the divine character, as it has since been manifested...in...the Atonement, he would doubtless have trusted God for help...." *F615*

DELUSIONS

"Satan: Having chosen an evil course,...while his first lie...

GEN. 3:4: "'...Ye shall not surely die.'

"...may have been uttered with considerable candor, yet...he endeavors...to deceive mankind into believing...that when they die they are more alive than ever....None now know better than Satan the reality of death...and...that if the human family clearly...understood the matter..., its penalty, the ransom, and the resultant restitution, the influence...would be to draw mankind toward their just, yet merciful Creator....

"He...attempts to blind the minds of mankind. ...Instead of having men see that death and... sufferings incident to death...are the results of disobedience..., the results of following his falsehood, he...would have them think... Jehovah...purposed...that...millions...should be eternally tormented....

2 COR. 4:4: "'...the god of this world hath blinded the minds of them which believe not, lest the light of the glorious gospel of Christ, who is the image of God, should shine unto them.'" *F616*

"The Truth...would...prevail...were it not for his...'wily tactics, by which he is continually... bringing forward new deceptions to uphold his old lie, and to deceive,'...

MATT. 24:24: "'...if it were possible,...the very elect.'

"One of the...most successful...efforts...to make ...error appear...plausible, was the development of...Papacy...mankind looks back to the period of its dominion...as 'the Dark Ages.'..." *F617*

See also Index: **Antichrist; Babylon.**

HIS ASSOCIATES — DEMONS

"...it does not appear that Satan had any... associate conspirators...in his...rebellion at its beginning." *F619*

THEIR FALL

See also Index: Spiritism; Christian Science; Mormonism.

NOT WITH FLESH AND BLOOD

EPH. 6:12: "...we wrestle not against flesh and blood, but against principalities, against powers, against the rulers of the darkness of this world, against spiritual wickedness [margin, **wicked spirits in high**] [margin, **heavenly**] [**places or positions**.]"

"...fallen man is so incompetent to defend himself against this wily Adversary, and...the people of the Lord can escape...only in proportion...are thoroughly loyal to the Lord and attentive to his Word....Why does God permit this great Adversary thus to compass men about with delusive errors...and, to some extent, with miracles in support of these?" *F626*

MINISTRY OF EVIL TO THE WORLD

"God, in the present time, is not...attempting to bring all mankind into harmony with himself, but,...merely selecting...the New Creation....during the Millennial age...All shall...see...the delusive and...degrading influences of every other course then...

righteousness, and....how thoroughly they have been...led....

2 TIM. 2:26: "'...captive by him [the devil] at his will.'

"...they...will have learned...that God is the true friend of all his creatures, and his laws are...for their well-being....the insidious character of evil....that they cannot trust to their own judgment implicitly; and that...it is possible for light to appear darkness...to appear...light...so... all...will learn to trust...the divine wisdom,... goodness and power." *F627*

TO THE SAINTS

"...these oppositions of Satan and his associates...and...of the world...through their...delusions, are directed against the Truth, against...its servants...these...oppositions of the world, the flesh, and the devil are...implements of the Lord...in the development of the New Creation." *F627*

2 COR. 4:17: "For our light affliction, which is but for a moment, worketh for us a far more exceeding *and* eternal weight of glory."

"So far from desiring...vengeance...they may very properly love...them, realizing...those... opposing the...Truth...are...Satan's...tools — often unwittingly." *F628, 629*

ACTS 3:17: "...I wot that through ignorance ye did *it*, as *did* also your rulers."

"...we may entertain...hope for...opposers of the Truth — Evolutionists, Theosophists, Spiritualists, Christian

Scientists, Romanists and Protestants...less in the case of those who have been enlightened on these subjects by the Present Truth, but who,...in their desire to be somebodies, have become opponents of the Lord's work. Such fall generally into the errors of Universalism,...become blinded as respects the Lord's presence, and even...the ransom....It is for us...to withdraw...from...those who...hold not...

JUDE 3: "'...the faith which was once delivered unto the saints.'

2 THES. 3:6: "'Now we command you, brethren,...that ye withdraw yourselves from every brother that walketh disorderly, and not after the tradition which he received from us.'" *F629*

SATAN'S BESETMENTS

"One besetment...is the argument that...their temporal interests would all be prospered...." "...that sickness...is a mark of God's disfavor; that to use remedies would evidence lack of faith...that...the prayer of faith should be relied on...." *F630, 631*

"...our Lord...was...**HEB. 4:15**: '...touched with the feeling of our infirmities..'" *F632*

See also Index: **Three Sources of Temptations.**

"We, as the under-priests, must also be 'touched' and brought into sympathy with the world to whom we shall shortly be kings, priest and judges." *F632*

SATAN'S HOUSE DIVIDED

MATT. 12:25,26,29: "...Every kingdom divided against itself is brought to desolation; and every city or house divided against itself shall not stand: And if Satan cast out Satan, he is divided against himself; how shall then his kingdom stand?....Or else how can one enter into a strong man's house, and spoil his goods, except he first bind the strong man? and then he will spoil his house." (Cf. Luke 11:21,22)

"When...the Pharisees charged our Lord with casting out devils by Satanic power, his answer clearly implied that such action on Satan's part...would be a proof that his power was on the wane..." *F638*

CURRENT DECEPTIONS

2 THES. 2:9: "...power and signs and lying wonders."

"...are to be expected...as tests in this 'harvest' time of the age...." *F638*

2 THES. 2:11,12: "...God shall send them strong delusions, that they should believe a lie: That they all might be [**judged** — *Diag*.] who believed not the truth, but had pleasure in unrighteousness."

2 COR. 11:14: "...Satan himself is transformed into an angel of light."

See also Index: **Christian Science; Creation and Fall.**

HOW TO TEST DELUSIONS

ISA. 8:20: "To the law and to the testimony: if they speak not according to this word, *it is* because *there is* no light in them."

"The great mass of them may...be seen to be spurious by noting that they are out of accord with,...the **ransom**. They may not claim to deny the ransom;...However,...remember that the Greek word rendered ransom...signifies 'a **corresponding price**.' This touchstone...will quickly show that evolution is the opposite of the truth, because evolution denies the fall and all need for redemption from it. It...condemns Christian Science...in that it denies sin and death and all evil, claiming that they are... delusions. It condemns the theory that God was the instigator...of sin...by showing that he has always opposed sin, and has...a plan for releasing man...through the **redemption**,... whose fruitage will come by...restitution." *F639*

ETERNAL TORMENT BLASPHEMY

"...those...teaching...an eternity of torment...If such...do cures...We must not suppose....that the Lord is now endorsing their false doctrines.... With such doctrines of devils...we must conclude that their faith-cures and wonderful works are...works of the devil as...Spiritism, Christian Science, Mormonism, etc....

"Suppose...they display great zeal in sending out missionaries...What advantage can accrue to the heathen from giving them the **false doctrines**...?" *F640*

WORKING IN THE PULPITS

"Satan is doing a great business in...churches... and...pulpits...." *F640*

NEW DELUSIONS

"The lifting of...ignorance...makes it impossible to use the old superstitions as formerly....this necessity for his playing reformer and good physician is an evidence that the fall is near...." *F641*

OUR PROTECTION

EPH. 6:13-18: "Wherefore take unto you the whole armour of God, that ye may be able to withstand in the evil day, and having done all, to stand. Stand therefore, having your loins girt about with truth, and having on the breastplate of righteousness; And your feet shod with the preparation of the gospel of peace; Above all, taking the shield of faith,

wherewith ye shall be able to quench all the fiery darts of the

wicked. And take the helmet of salvation, and the sword of the Spirit, which is the word of God: Praying always with all prayer and supplication in the Spirit, and watching thereunto with all perseverance and supplication for all saints..."

See also Index: **Angels; Christian Science; Divine Healing; Evolution; Fall; Hell and Purgatory; Immortality; Mormonism; Permission of Evil; Sin; Spiritism; Temptations.**

SECOND DEATH

REV. 20:14: "...death and hell were cast into the lake of fire. This is the second death."

"The...state of condemnation, the result of Adam's transgression...the dying condition of those now called the living and the oblivious sleep of the fully dead...shall be...swallowed up by the Second Death...." *E380*

NOT FOR ADAMIC SIN

JER. 31:29,30: "In those days they shall say no more, The fathers have eaten a sour grape, and the children's teeth are set on edge. But every one shall die for his own iniquity: every man that eateth the sour grape, his teeth shall be set on edge."

Cf. **EZEK. 18:2,3**: "What mean ye, that ye use this proverb concerning the land of Israel, saying, The fathers have eaten sour grapes, and the children's teeth are set on edge? As I live, saith the Lord GOD, ye shall not have *occasion* any more to use this proverb in Israel."

"The day in which 'every man [who dies] shall die for his own sin,' only, is the Millennial or Restitution day." *A109*

WHO SHALL BE CUT OFF

REV. 21:8; 22:15, *Diag.*: "But [as] for the COWARDS, and Unbelievers, and the Abominable, and Murderers, and Fornicators, and Sorcerers,...and ALL LIARS, — their PORTION [will be] in THAT LAKE which BURNS with Fire and Sulphur which is the SECOND DEATH...Without are the DOGS, and the SORCERERS, and the FORNICATORS, and the MURDERERS, and the IDOLATERS, and EVERY [ONE] who LOVES and practices Falsehood."

ISA. 26:10: "Let favour be showed to the wicked, *yet* will he not learn righteousness: in the land of uprightness will he deal unjustly, and will not behold the majesty of the LORD."

"...those who persistently **continue** enemies of God and righteousness...

2 THES. 1:9: "'...shall be punished with everlasting destruction from the presence of the Lord, and from the glory of his power...'

"...(a destruction from which there shall be no resurrection)..." *B152*

DESTRUCTION — NOT TORTURE

ACTS 3:23: "...it shall come to pass, *that* every soul, which will not hear that prophet, shall be destroyed from among the people."

PSA. 9:17: "The wicked shall be [re-] turned into hell, [*sheol, oblivion] and* all...nations that forget God."

"The Hebrew word *shub* in this text is properly translated 'returned'...some...will be returned to oblivion on account of wickedness and forgetfulness of God...those once awakened and brought to a knowledge of the truth, who then are willfully perverse, will be returned again to oblivion — 'the Second Death,' from which there is to be no ransom and no restitution..." *E361*

PSA. 37:9,10,20: "...evildoers shall be cut off:...For yet a little while, and the wicked *shall* not be: yea, thou shalt diligently consider his place and it *shall* not *be*...the wicked shall perish..."

PSA. 145:20: "...all the wicked will he destroy."

SECOND DEATH IN GOSPEL AGE

1 JOHN 5:16: "If any man see his brother sin a sin...not unto death, he shall ask, and he shall give him life for them that sin not unto death. There is a sin unto death: I do not say that he shall pray for it."

"That sin is described in the Scriptures as...against the **Holy Spirit** of God—not undesignedly nor ignorantly, but the result of persistence in that which...was clearly recognized...but which, through self-will persisted in...became a gross deception—the Lord giving over the willful ones to the error which they preferred..." *F165*

2 THES. 2:11,12: *Diag.*: "...God will send to them an Energy of Delusion, to their BELIEVING the FALSEHOOD...that All THOSE may be judged who BELIEVED not the TRUTH, but approved the INIQUITY."

JUDE 4,5,10-13,16: "There are...certain men crept in...ungodly men, turning the grace of our God into lasciviousness, and denying the only Lord God, and our Lord Jesus Christ....the Lord, having saved the people out of...Egypt,...destroyed them that believed not....these speak evil of those things which they know not: but what they know...in those...they corrupt themselves....they have gone in the way of Cain,...and...after the error of Balaam for reward, and perished in the gainsaying of Core....feeding themselves without fear: clouds...without water, carried about of winds; trees...without fruit, twice dead, plucked up by the roots; Raging waves...foaming out their own shame; wandering stars, to whom is reserved the blackness of darkness for ever....These are murmurers, complainers, walking after their own lusts; and their mouth speaketh

great swelling *words*, having men's persons in admiration because of advantage."

2 PET. 2:1,10,12,20-22: "...false teachers...shall bring in...heresies, even denying the Lord that bought them...Presumptuous..., selfwilled,...not afraid to speak evil of dignities...of the things that they understand not; and shall utterly perish in their own corruption...after they have escaped the pollutions of the world...they are again entangled therein...it had been better...not to have known the way of righteousness, than, after...to turn from the holy commandment.... But...The dog *is* turned to his own vomit again; and the sow that was washed to her wallowing in the mire."

WILLFUL SINNERS

HEB. 10:26-29,31,38: "...if we sin willfully after that we have received the knowledge of the truth, there remaineth no more sacrifice for sins, But...fearful looking for of...fiery indignation, which shall devour the adversaries. He that despised Moses' law died without mercy....Of how much sorer punishment...shall he be thought worthy, who hath trodden under foot the Son of God, and hath counted the blood of the covenant, wherewith he was sanctified, an unholy thing, and hath done despite unto the Spirit of grace?....*It is* a fearful thing to fall into the hands of the living God....if *any man* draw back, my soul shall have no pleasure in him."

"...the death sentence upon...Those who despised Moses and the Law...was not... everlasting...but those who despise the antitypical Moses, and who thus despise the privilege of communion in Christ's blood...shall be counted worthy of...death...from which there will be **no redemption**, no resurrection,... Second Death...." *F168*

HEB. 6:4-6, *Diag.*: "For THOSE once ENLIGHTENED, and having tasted the HEAVENLY GIFT, and became Partakers of the holy spirit, and having tasted the Good Word of God and the Powers of the Coming Age, and having fallen away, it is impossible to renew again to reformation, they having re-crucified and are exposing to contempt the SON of GOD."

"...some...fall away into sin—not through unavoidable weakness...and allurements of the Adversary, but by willingly knowingly abandoning righteousness. These...it will be impossible to renew unto repentance. Having had their share of the benefits...from the great ransomsacrifice,...these have used up...their share in the atonement...and having taken their position willfully, the appeals of righteousness will...be of no effect...." *F166*

FORGIVABLE SINS

"Not infrequently a conscientious person realizes that he has committed a sin, and that it had some wilfulness in it....he falls into... sadness...believing that he has committed the sin unto death....their sorrow for sin and their desire to return to divine favor are proofs that they have not committed sin unto death; for...those who commit sin of this sort cannot be renewed unto repentance....Penitents, then, may always feel confident that their sins were... not unto death, but requiring forgiveness and stripes." *R2612:3*

GEHENNA

"Grecian mode of spelling the Hebrew words...translated 'Valley of Hinnom.' This...lay just outside...Jerusalem, and served the purpose of...garbage burner to that city.... fires were kept...burning to **consume**...all things deposited therein, brimstone being added....But no living thing was...cast into **Gehenna**. The Jews were not allowed to **torture** any creature....

"...the most serious sentence was death; but certain very obnoxious criminals were... cast...into **Gehenna**, there to be consumed.... The destruction of the body in **Gehenna** after death (figuratively) implied the loss of hope of...resurrection. Thus...**Gehenna** represented the second death....

MATT. 5:22: "'...whosoever shall say, Thou fool, shall be in danger of hell [Gehenna] fire.'

"'Thou shalt not kill,' reached much farther than... supposed... **malicious anger** and vituperation 'shall be' considered a violation...under the New Covenant; and...such as, under the favorable conditions of that new age, will not reform...will be counted worthy of...the second death...." *R2601:2,5,6*

MATT. 5:29,30: "...it is profitable for thee that one of thy members should perish, and not *that* thy whole body should be cast into hell. [*Gehenna*]"

"It is better that you should deny yourselves sinful gratification than that you should lose all future life, and perish in the second death....

MATT. 10:28; LUKE 12:5: "'...fear him which is able to destroy both soul and body in hell....which after he hath killed hath power to cast into hell [*Gehenna*]...'

"...have...deference to God...who is able to **destroy** in ***Gehenna***, the second death...." *R2602:3,5*

UNDYING WORMS; QUENCHLESS FIRES

MATT. 18:8,9; MARK 9:43-48: "...it is better...to enter into life...maimed, rather than having two hands or two feet to be cast into everlasting fire...to enter into life with one

eye,...than having two eyes to be cast into hell [*Gehenna*] fire. [Mark 9:46-48 and last part of vs. 45 not in oldest Ms. See Diag. footnote and R.V. margin.]

"In...Gehenna...bodies...frequently fell upon... rocks and not into the fire kept burning below...these would breed worms and be destroyed by them....This would not imply a never ending fire, nor everlasting worms....the worms did not die off and leave the carcasses there, but...completed the destruction. So with the fire: it was not quenched....

ISA. 66:24: "'And they shall go forth, and look upon the carcasses of the men that have transgressed against me: for their worm shall not die, neither shall their fire be quenched...'

MATT. 23:15,33: "'...ye make him twofold more the child of hell [*Gehenna*] than yourselves....how can ye escape...hell [*Gehenna*]?'

"...the sense is this, — Although you boast of your piety, you will surely be destroyed in Gehenna, unless you change your course." *R2603:1,3,4*

SET ON FIRE OF GEHENNA

JAS. 3:6: "...the tongue *is* a fire...and setteth on fire the course of nature; and...is set on fire of hell [*Gehenna*]."

"...for a tongue to be set on fire of ***Gehenna*** signifies that it is set going in evil by a perverse disposition...which... unless...reformed, will be... **destroyed**... — 'second death,' the real... —

"LAKE OF FIRE"

REV. 19:20; 20:10,14,15; 21:8: "And the beast was taken, and with him the false prophet that wrought miracles before him, with which he deceived them that had received the mark of the beast, and them that worshipped his image. These both were cast alive into a lake of fire burning with brimstone....And the devil that deceived them was cast into the lake of fire and brimstone, where the beast and the false prophet *are*, and shall be tormented day and night for ever and ever....And death and hell were cast into the lake of fire. This is the second death. And whosoever was not found written in the book of life was cast into the lake of fire....But the fearful, and unbelieving, and the abominable, and murderers, and whoremongers, and sorcerers, and idolaters, and all liars, shall have their part in the lake which burneth with fire and brimstone: which is the second death." *R2603:1,3,4*

See also Index: **Hell.**

"THAT WISE AND FAITHFUL SERVANT"

A remarkable prophecy given as one of the signs (evidences) of the Lord's second presence.

MATT. 24:45-47: "Who then is a faithful and wise servant, whom his lord hath made ruler over his household, to give them meat in due season? Blessed *is* that servant, whom his lord when he cometh shall find so doing. Verily I say unto you, That he shall make him ruler over all his goods."

LUKE 12:42-44: "And the Lord said, Who then is that faithful and wise steward, whom *his* lord shall make ruler over his household, to give *them their* portion of meat in due season? Blessed *is* that servant, whom his lord when he cometh shall find so doing. Of a truth I say unto you, that he will make him ruler over all that he hath."

"THAT SERVANT" NOT A CLASS BUT AN INDIVIDUAL

MATT. 24:42-51: "Watch therefore: for ye know not what hour your Lord doth come. But know this, that if the goodman of the house had known in what watch the thief would come, he would have watched, and would not have suffered his house to be broken up. Therefore be ye also ready: for in such an hour as ye think not the Son of man cometh. Who then is a faithful and wise servant, whom his lord hath made ruler over his household, Blessed *is* that servant, whom his lord when he cometh shall find so doing. Verily I say unto you, That he shall make him ruler over all his goods. But and if that evil servant shall say in his heart, My lord delayeth his coming; and shall begin to smite *his* fellowservants, and to eat and drink with the drunken; The lord of that servant shall come in a day when he looketh not for *him*, and in an hour that he is not aware of, And shall cut him asunder, and appoint *him* his portion with the hypocrites: there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth."

"In our examination of this text [Matt. 24:42-51] we seem to have treated the term 'that servant' as though the Spirit had erred in saying 'that servant' when it meant servants (plural), and we applied it to *all true* servants of God. Since then we have been met from various quarters with objections to so general an application, and the suggestion that it would be wrong to allow modesty or any other consideration, good or bad, to warp our judgment in the exposition of the inspired Word; to which proposition we agree. God evidently has some purpose in all that he caused to be written for our admonition; and faithfulness as servants requires that we deliver to the household the Lord's word, as he gives it....

"...the Lord's words clearly...distinguish between his 'household' (his faithful people in general), the 'fellowservants'(plural), and '*that servant*' specially indicated as the Lord's agent in dispensing present truth as food to his *'fellow-servants'* (plural) and the 'household.'...if neither the 'household' nor 'fellow-servants' were mentioned, it might be questionable whether the expression *'that servant'* referred to one or to all faithful servants; but that when *'that* servant' and *'his fellow*-servants' and the 'household' are all mentioned in one connection, and in *contrast*, it would be a perversion of the rules of language and interpretation to mix and confound that which the holy spirit has so emphatically marked as distinct....to apply the term 'his household' to nominal Christian professors in general could not be correct, because the 'meat in due

season' is intended only for the Lord's truth-hungry, 'watching' people; and hence among these must be sought the 'household' to be fed...." *R1946:1,2* [See the entire article]

SERVED BY THE LORD

LUKE 12:35-37: "Let your loins be girded about, and *your* lights burning; And ye yourselves like unto men that wait for their lord, when he will return from the wedding; [FEASTS, *Diag.*] that when he cometh and knocketh, they may open unto him immediately. Blessed *are* those servants, whom the lord when he cometh shall find watching: verily I say unto you, that he shall gird himself, and make them to sit down to meat, and will come forth and serve them."

"Those who will hear the knock will be such only as are awake and ready....These will receive a special spiritual feast....on a special occasion and intended as a special reward for their manifestation of interest and devotion....also, because the Master...turned to be its servant, would have all the keys to all the riches of grace and blessing, and...will bring forth...things new and old...." *R3355:1*

A CHANNEL TO BE USED

"The intimation...seems to be that...during the Lord's **presence** ...our Lord...will make a choice of **one channel** for dispensing the meat in due season, though other channels...will be used in bringing the food to the 'household.' But the servant is merely a steward, and liable to be removed at any moment, should he fail to...acknowledge in every particular...the great Servant of God and his people... — Christ." *D613*

"We would naturally enough endeavor to interpret our Lord's words as signifying a composite steward...a...class of brethren...." *R3355:6*

"(1) To suppose such a class...would be to...recognize a clerical or authoritative class as distinct...from the remainder of the church....The church of Christ...is not composed of clergy and laity: but...'one is your Master.'...There would be no violation of principle, however, in supposing that the Lord...would...use one member...as the...instrument through which he would send...spiritual nourishment appropriate at that time; because...in the past the Lord has used individuals in such a manner. For instance, Peter used the 'keys' of the kingdom...at Pentecost, and again at the home of Cornelius....

"(2)...the various items stated would not fit to a company of individuals....in the 42nd verse...Greek text...the emphasis is there...in double form — the faithful, the wise steward...since the servant mentioned is to dispense food to the other members of the body, his fellow-servants, the term seems to be limited to some particular individual." *R3356:1*

NOT A LORD OVER GOD'S HERITAGE

"...in no sense...would this constitute him a lord, or dictator, or master, or imply his inspiration....it would be one who would be privileged to be a servant, and not many seem anxious to fill such a position in the true sense of the word....

"RULER OVER ALL HIS GOODS"

"The expression...should...be understood to apply...merely to a more general charge or stewardship as respects the dispensing of the Lord's 'goods' or truths due to be protected or disbursed during the remainder of this 'harvest' time...." *R3356:1,2,4*

USE OF A "SERVANT" THE LORD'S METHOD

"...it is with the Lord...to determine who and when and what shall be provided for the 'household...;' and...to decide whether he will send that spiritual food through one channel or...many..." *R4483:3*

"Peter also reminds us that the trial of our faith is much more precious than that of gold that perisheth, and that the end sought through such trial is that we may be 'found unto praise and honor and glory at the appearing of Jesus Christ.' (1 Pet. 1:7) It would be idle for any of the Lord's consecrated people to hope to be made meet for the glorious inheritance of the saints without the refining processes of fiery trial; for Paul tells us that 'the fire shall try *every man's work* of what sort it is.' 'If ye receive not chastisement [discipline, fiery trial], whereof all are partakers, then are ye bastards, and not sons.' (1 Cor.3:13; Heb. 12:6-8) And through the Prophet Isaiah the Lord tells his spiritual Israel, as well as his typical fleshly Israel, 'I

will turn my hand upon thee, and purely purge away thy dross and take away all thy sin.' (Isa. 1:25) The Prophet Malachi, making special reference to the last days of this age, the days of the Lord's presence, and the great refining work to be accomplished then, says: 'Who may abide the day of his coming? and who shall stand when he appeareth? for he is like a refiner's fire and like fullers soap. And he shall sit as a refiner and purifer of silver; and he shall purify the sons of Levi and purge them as gold and silver' — Mal. 3:2,3.

"Fiery trials are therefore to be expected by all of the Lord's people, especially in this day of the Lord. As surely as we are sons of God we shall have them; and when they come we should promptly recognize their mission to us and see that we are exercised by them unto godliness, sobriety and deep and fervent piety. 'Now no chastening [discipline] for the present seemeth to be joyous, but grievous: nevertheless, afterward, it yieldeth the peaceable fruit of righteousness unto them which are exercised thereby.' — Heb. 12:11.

"It is in the school of experience that we learn our most valuable lessons; and the ripest saints, in whom we find the deepest sympathy, the most patient forbearance, and the most tender helpfulness and consideration, are those who have been through the fire of affliction, and who have been rightly exercised thereby. It was when the cross grew heaviest and the clouds were darkest, and when the tempest was highest, that the Master's presence was most sensibly realized, and the blessed lessons of faith and trust and of the Lord's tender, personal love were sealed upon the hearts of the disciples. It is under such discipline that the soul is mellowed to a loving submission that calmly says, I can do all things, bear all things, through Christ who strengtheneth me. As gradually the dross of the old nature is consumed, and the gold becomes more and more manifest, these precious souls become ever dearer to their loving Lord. So dear are they to him that in every affliction he is near with his grace to sustain and his presence to cheer; and the deepest shades of sorrow become memory's most hallowed resting places, where the Day Star shines the brightest.

"Whenever a new trial is presented to the Christian, if he will but call to mind this precept of the Lord, 'I counsel thee to buy of me gold tried in the fire,' it will stimulate courage, nerve to patient endurance and quicken to self-sacrifice. 'Gold tried in the fire!' How can it be tried without the crucible and the flame? How otherwise can the dross be eliminated? There is no other way.

'Wherefore, think it not strange:' let the fire burn; let the dross be consumed, and see to it, beloved, that in the heat of the flame you remove not the 'living sacrifice' from the altar. Remember that the eye of the great Refiner is upon you; and as the refiner of gold watches the metal in the crucible to see his image reflected in it, so the Lord, the great Refiner, has his eye upon you. He is watching to see how the precious metal of your character reflects his image. Or, in plain language, in every trial he watches to see what influences control our actions, whether they be influences of present advantage or worldly policy, or personal friendship, or earthly loves—of husband or wife, or children, or houses, or lands, or whether they be honor among men, or love of ease, or love of peace at any cost; or whether, on the other hand, we are controlled by the naked principles of truth and righteousness; and whether we will defend these principles with zeal and energy at any cost of labor or suffering, or both, and so fight the good fight of faith to the bitter end— even unto death." *R1944:3,4,5*

TO BE REMOVED IF UNFAITHFUL

MATT. 24:48-50: ***Diag.***: "But if that Servant should WICKEDLY say in his HEART, My MASTER delays; and should begin to beat his FELLOW-SERVANTS, and should eat and drink with the INTEMPERATE; the MASTER of that SERVANT will come [*arrive*] i.e., *be present* — Strong] in a Day when he does not expect him and at an Hour of which he is not aware, and will cut him off, and will appoint his PORTION with the HYPOCRITES; there will be the WEEPING and the GNASHING of TEETH."

LUKE 12:45,46: "But and if that servant say in his heart, My lord delayeth his coming; and shall begin to beat the menservants and maidens, and to eat and drink, and to be drunken; The lord of that servant will come in a day when he looketh not for him, and at an hour when he is not aware, and will cut him in sunder, and will appoint him his portion with the unbelievers."

"...if unfaithful he will be deposed entirely and put into outer darkness, while presumably another would take the place, subject to the same conditions." *B163 [See* all of *B163, 164]*

NOT INSPIRED NOR INFALLIBLE

"To our understanding this would not imply that 'that servant' or steward, used as a channel for the circulation of the 'meat in due season,' would be the **originator** of that meat, nor inspired, nor **infallible**. Quite to the contrary, we may be sure that whoever the Lord will so use, as a truthdistributing agent, will be very humble and unassuming, as well as very zealous for the Master's glory; so that he would not think of claiming authorship or ownership of the truth, but would merely dispense it zealously, as his Master's gift, to his Master's 'servants' and 'household.'" *D613*

OTHER TITLES

MAN ON THE WATCH TOWER

HAB. 2:1-3: ***Leeser***: "Upon my watch will I stand, and place myself upon the tower, and will watch to see what he will speak with me, and what I shall answer to my reproof. And the Lord answered me, and said, Write down the vision, and make it plain upon tables, that every one may read it fluently. For there is yet a vision for the appointed time, and it speaketh of the end, and it will not deceive: though it tarry, wait for it, because it will surely come, it will not be delayed."

MAN WITH THE WRITER'S INKHORN

EZEK. 9:2,4: "...and one man among them *was* clothed with linen, with a writer's inkhorn by his side....And the LORD said unto him, Go through the midst...of Jerusalem, and set a mark upon the foreheads of the men that sigh and that cry for all the abominations that be done in the midst thereof."

EZEK. 9:1-11; 10:1-7: "He cried also in mine ears with a loud voice, saying, Cause them that have charge over the city to draw near, even every man *with* his destroying weapon in his hand. And, behold, six men came from the way of the higher gate, which lieth toward the north, and every man a slaughter weapon in his hand; and one man among them *was* clothed with linen, with a writer's inkhorn by his side: and they went in, and stood beside the brazen altar. And the glory of the God of Israel was gone up from the cherub, whereupon he was, to the threshold of the house. And he called to the man clothed with linen, which *had* the writer's inkhorn by his side; And the LORD said unto him, Go through the midst of the city, through the midst of Jerusalem, and set a mark upon the foreheads of the men that sigh and that cry for all the abominations that be done in the midst thereof. And to the others he said in mine hearing, Go ye after him through the city, and smite: let not your eye spare, neither have ye pity: Slay utterly old *and* young, both maids, and little children, and women: but come not near any man upon whom is the mark; and begin at my sanctuary. Then they began at the ancient men which *were* before the house. And he said unto them, Defile the house, and fill the courts with the slain: go ye forth. And they went forth, and slew in the city. And it came to pass, while they were slaying them, and I was left, that I fell upon my face, and cried, and said, Ah Lord GOD! wilt thou destroy all the residue of Israel in thy pouring out of thy fury upon Jerusalem? Then said he unto me, The iniquity of the house of Israel and Judah *is* exceeding great, and the land is full of blood, and the city full of perverseness: for they say, The LORD hath forsaken the earth, and the LORD seeth not. And as for me also, mine eye shall not spare, neither will I have pity, *but* I will recompense their way upon their head. And, behold, the man clothed with linen, which *had* the inkhorn by his side, reported the matter, saying, I have done as thou hast commanded me....Then I looked, and, behold, in the firmament that was above the head of the cherubims there appeared over them as it were a sapphire stone, as the appearance of the likeness of a throne. And he spake unto the man clothed with linen, and said, Go in between the wheels, *even* under the cherub, and fill thine hand with coals of fire from between the cherubims, and scatter *them* over the city. And he went in my sight. Now the cherubims stood on the right side of the house, when the man went in; and the cloud filled the inner court. Then the glory of the LORD went up from the cherub, *and stood* over the threshold of the house; and the house was filled with the cloud, and the court was full of the brightness of the LORD'S glory. And the sound of the cherubims' wings was heard *even* to the outer court, as the voice of the Almighty God when he speaketh. And it came to pass, *that* when he had commanded the man clothed with linen, saying, Take fire from between the wheels, from between the cherubims; then he went in, and stood beside the wheels. And one cherub stretched forth his hand from between the cherubims unto the fire that *was* between the cherubims, and took *thereof*, and put it into the hands of *him that was* clothed with linen: who took *it*, and went out."

THE ANGEL OF THE CHURCH OF THE LAODICEANS

REV. 3:14: ***Diag.***: "And by the MESSENGER of the CONGREGATION in Laodicea write...."

REV. 3:14-22: "And unto the angel of the church of the Laodiceans write; These things saith the Amen, the faithful and true witness, the beginning of the creation of God; I know thy works, that thou art neither cold nor hot: I would thou wert cold or hot. So then because thou art lukewarm, and neither cold nor hot, I will spue thee out of my mouth. Because thou sayest, I am rich, and increased with goods, and have need of nothing; and knowest not that thou art wretched, and miserable, and poor, and blind, and naked: I counsel thee to buy of me gold tried in the fire, that thou mayest be rich; and white raiment, that thou mayest be clothed, and *that* the shame of thy nakedness do not appear; and anoint thine eyes with eyesalve, that thou mayest see. As many as I love, I rebuke and chasten: be zealous therefore, and repent. Behold, I stand at the door, and knock: if any man hear my voice, and open the door, I will come in to him, and will sup with him, and he with me. To him that overcometh will I grant to sit with me in my throne, even as I also overcame, and am set down with my Father in his throne. He that hath an ear, let him hear what the Spirit saith unto the churches."

ANGEL SHOWING JOHN [Class Tarrying Till Christ's Return] THESE THINGS

REV. 22:8, ***Diag.***: "...I fell down to worship before the FEET of...[the] ANGEL who SHOWED me these things [the one showing to me these things]." (See Diag.)

REV. 22:8: "...I fell down to worship before the feet of the angel which shewed me these things [the one showing to me these things]." Cf. Diag. interlineary.

SIN

1 JOHN 3:4: "...sin is the transgression of the law."

Definitions of words translated 'sin,' as —

Noun: *Young* (from Hebrew and Aramaic): guilt, sin, error,

failure, iniquity, trespass, transgression . (from Greek): sin, error, fall, offense, trespass.

Strong (from Hebrew and Chaldea): guilt, guiltiness, fault, crime, offense, perversity, (moral) evil, revolt (from Greek): a side-slip (lapse or deviation), (unintentional) error, or (willful) transgression.

Verb: *Young* (Heb.): to sin, err, miss the mark, go astray (Gr.): to sin, err, miss the mark.

Strong (Heb.): to stray, sin (Gr.): to sin, err, miss (the mark).

WHY PERMITTED

"God designed to **permit evil**, because having the remedy provided...,would be to lead him, through experience, to a full appreciation of 'the exceeding sinfulness of sin' and of the matchless brilliancy of virtue...thus teaching him the more to love and honor his Creator,...and forever to shun that which brought so much woe..." *A124*

GOD NOT ITS AUTHOR

"...a wide distinction should be observed between the...fact that God has permitted sin, and the serious error...which charges God with being the...instigator of sin...." *A124*

THE MORAL SENSE

"...for every right principle there is a...wrong principle....We distinguish these...principles as **right** and **wrong**, by their effects...." *A118*

"This faculty of discerning between right, and wrong...is... **conscience**....The lower orders of God's creatures are not endowed with this...." *A119*

VIOLATION OF CONSCIENCE — SIN

ROM. 14:14, 20,21: "...to him that esteemeth any thing to be unclean, to him *it is* unclean....All things indeed *are* pure; but *it is* evil for that man who eateth with offense. *It is* good neither to eat flesh, nor to drink wine, nor *any thing* whereby thy brother stumbleth, or is offended, or is made weak."

AVOID STUMBLING OTHERS

1 COR. 10:28,29: "...if any man say...,This is offered...unto idols, eat not for his sake..., and for conscience sake...not thine own, but of the other...."

ORIGINAL SIN

"It was...disobedience that brought exclusion from Paradise..., and...brought the dying conditions which still prevail...." *F332*

ROM. 5:12: "...by one man sin entered into the world, and death by sin; and...death passed upon all men, for that [or '*in whom;' margin* and *Diag.*] all...sinned."

OF THE DEVIL

JOHN 8:44: "Ye are of *your* father the devil. ...He was a murderer from the beginning....he is a liar, and the father of it."

MATT. 13:38: "...the tares are the children of the wicked *one*."

2 COR. 11:3: "...the serpent beguiled Eve through his subtilty...." (Cf. Gen: 3:1-6)

GEN. 3:1-6: "Now the serpent was more subtle than any beast of the field which the LORD God had made. And he said unto the woman, Yea, hath God said, Ye shall not eat of every tree of the garden? And the woman said unto the serpent, We may eat of the fruit of the trees of the garden: But of the fruit of the tree which *is* in the midst of the garden, God hath said, Ye shall not eat of it, neither shall ye touch it, lest ye die. And the serpent said unto the woman, Ye shall not surely die: For God doth know that in the day ye eat thereof, then your eyes shall be opened, and ye shall be as gods, knowing good and evil. And when the woman saw that the tree *was* good for food, and that it was pleasant to the eyes, and a tree to be desired to make *one* wise, she took of the fruit thereof, and did eat, and gave also unto her husband with her; and he did eat."

ALL HAVE SINNED

ISA. 53:6: "All we like sheep have gone astray."

ROM. 3:9,10,23: "...both Jews and Gentiles... are all under sin; As it is written [Psa. 14:1-3; 5:9; 143:3; 10:2-11; 36:1-4; Prov. 1:16] There is none righteous, no, not one....For all have sinned, and come short of the glory of God." (Cf. also vss. 11-18)

PSA. 14:1-3; 5:9; 143:3; 10:2-11; 36:1-4: "To the chief Musician, A Psalm of David. The fool hath said in his heart, *There is* no God. They are corrupt, they have done abominable works, *there is* none that doeth good. The LORD looked down from heaven upon the children of men,

to see if there were any that did understand, *and* seek God. They are *all* gone aside, they are all together become filthy: *there is* none that doeth good, no, not one.....For *there is* no faithfulness in their mouth; their inward part is very wickedness; their throat *is* an open sepulchre; they flatter with their tongue....For the enemy hath persecuted my soul; he hath smitten my life down to the ground; he hath made me to dwell in darkness, as those that have been long dead....

"The wicked in *his* pride doth persecute the poor: let them be taken in the devices that they have imagined. For the wicked boasteth of his heart's desire, and blesseth the covetous, *whom* the LORD abhorreth. The wicked, through the pride of his countenance, will not seek *after God*: God *is* not in all his thoughts. His ways are always grievous; thy judgments *are* far above out of his sight: *as for* all his enemies, he puffeth at them. He hath said in his heart, I shall not be moved: for *I shall* never be in adversity. His mouth is full of cursing and deceit and fraud: under his tongue is mischief and vanity. He sitteth in the lurking places of the villages: in the secret places doth he murder the innocent: his eyes are privily set against the poor. He lieth in wait secretly as a lion in his den: he lieth in wait to catch the poor: he doth catch the poor, when he draweth him into his net. He croucheth, *and* humbleth himself, that the poor may fall by his strong ones. He hath said in his heart, God hath forgotten: he hideth his face; he will never see it....To the chief Musician, A Psalm of David the servant of the LORD. The transgression of the wicked saith within my heart, *that there is* no fear of God before his eyes. For he flattereth himself in his own eyes, until his iniquity be found to be hateful. The words of his mouth are iniquity and deceit: he hath left off to be wise, *and* to do good. He deviseth mischief upon his bed; he setteth himself in a way *that is* not good; he abhorreth not evil."

PROV. 1:16, 11-18: "For their feet run to evil, and make haste to shed blood....If they say, Come with us, let us lay wait for blood, let us lurk privily for the innocent without cause: Let us swallow them up alive as the grave; and whole, as those that go down into the pit: We shall find all precious substance, we shall fill our houses with spoil: Cast in thy lot among us; let us all have one purse: my son, walk not thou in the way with them; refrain thy foot from their path: For their feet run to evil, and make haste to shed blood. Surely in vain the net is spread in the sight of any bird. And they lay wait for their *own* blood; they lurk privily for their *own* lives."

ECCL. 7:20: "*There is* not a just man upon earth, that doeth good, and sinneth not."

1 JOHN 1:8: "If we say that we have no sin, we deceive ourselves, and the truth is not in us."

BY INHERITANCE

PSA. 51:5: "Behold I was shapen in iniquity...."

SIN'S PENALTY

GEN. 2:17: *margin*: "...**dying thou shalt die**..."

GEN. 3:19: "...dust thou *art*, and unto dust shalt thou return."

ROM. 1:18: "For the wrath of God is revealed from heaven against all ungodliness and unrighteousness of men, who hold the truth in unrighteousness..."

ROM. 6:23: "For the wages of sin *is* death...."

EZEK: 18:4,20: "...the soul that sinneth, it shall die."

1 COR. 15:21,22: "...by man *came* death....in Adam all die...."

THE STING OF DEATH

1 COR. 15:56: "The sting of death *is* sin; and the strength of sin *is* ..."

THE LAW

ROM. 7:7-25: "...*Is* the law sin?...Nay, I had not known sin, but by the law....without the law sin *was* dead....but when the commandment came, sin revived, and I died....For sin,...by it slew *me*....The law *is*...good. Was then that which is good made death unto me? God forbid. But sin, that it might appear sin, working death in me by that which is good; that sin by the commandment might become exceeding sinful. For...the law is spiritual: but I am carnal, sold under sin. for...what I hate, that do I...it is no more I that do it, but sin that dwelleth in me....I see another law in my members, warring against the law of my mind, and bringing me into captivity to the law of sin which is in my members....who shall deliver me from the body of this death? I thank God through Jesus Christ our Lord. So then with the mind I...serve the law of God: but with the flesh the law of sin."

SIN IN THE HEART

MATT. 5:22,28,32: "...whosoever is angry with his brother...[lightly (?)] shall be in danger of the judgment: and whosoever shall say to his brother, Raca, shall be in danger of the council: [Sanhedrin]: but whosoever shall say, Thou fool, [(Gr.) or 'rebel' (Heb.)] shall be in danger of...[Gehenna] fire....whosoever looketh on a woman to lust after her hath committed adultery with

her already in his heart....But I say unto you, That whosoever shall put away his wife, saving for the cause of fornication, causeth her to commit adultery: and whosoever shall marry her that is divorced committeth adultery."

1 JOHN 3:15: "Whosoever hateth his brother is a murderer...."

JAS. 2:9,10: "But if ye have respect to persons, ye commit sin, and are convinced of the law as transgressors. For whosoever shall keep the whole law, and yet offend in one *point*, he is guilty of all."

ROM. 13:9,10: "...Thou shalt not commit adultery, Thou shalt not kill, Thou shalt not steal, Thou shalt not bear false witness, Thou shalt not covet; and if *there be* any other commandment, it is briefly comprehended in this saying..., Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself. Love worketh no ill to his neighbour: therefore love *is* the fulfilling of the law."

JESUS WAS SINLESS

2 COR. 5:21, *Diag.*: "For HIM who KNEW no Sin, he made a sin-offering on our behalf..."

HEB. 4:15, *Diag.*: "For we have not a High-priest unable to sympathize with our WEAKNESSES; but one having been tried in all respects like ourselves, apart from Sin."

HEB. 7:26: "For such an high priest became us, *who* is holy, harmless, undefiled, separate from sinners..."

HEB. 9:14: "How much more shall the blood of Christ, who through the eternal Spirit offered himself without spot to God, purge your conscience from dead works to serve the living God?"

1 JOHN 3:5: "And ye know that he was manifested to take away our sins; and in him is no sin."

"Scientists find abundant...proof...that **life**...comes...from the male." *E100*

"...in the case of Jesus a **perfect life** not...from the Adamic fountain was **transferred**...from a pre-existent condition to the embryo human condition, was born 'holy' (pure and perfect), though of an imperfect mother." *E103*

JOHN 1:14: "...the Word was made flesh, and dwelt among us, (and we beheld his glory, the glory as of the only begotten of the Father,) full of grace and truth."

JOHN 1:2: "The same was in the beginning with God."

LUKE 1:34,35: "Then said Mary unto the angel, How shall this be, seeing I know not a man? And the angel answered...The Holy Ghost [Spirit] shall come upon thee, and the power of the Highest shall overshadow thee: therefore also that holy thing which shall be born of thee shall be called the Son of God."

MAN'S PENALTY PAID BY JESUS

ROM. 6:23: "...the gift of God *is* eternal life through Jesus Christ our Lord."

ROM. 5:18,19: "Therefore as by the offense of one *judgment came* upon all men to condemnation; even so by the righteousness of one *the free gift came* upon all men unto justification of life. For as by one man's disobedience many were made sinners, so by the obedience of one shall many be made righteous."

EPH. 1:7: "In whom we have redemption through his blood, the forgiveness of sins..."

1 TIM. 2:6: "Who gave himself a ransom for all...."

HEB. 2:9: "...we see Jesus, who was made a little lower than the angels for the suffering of death, crowned with glory and honour; that he by the grace of God should taste death for every man."

1 JOHN 2:2: "And he is the propitiation for our sins: and not for ours only, but also for *the sins of* the whole world."

TRESPASSES

1 JOHN 5:17: "All unrighteousness is sin: and there is a sin not unto death."

"A trespass is a sin in a certain sense, but one committed without intention....

1 JOHN 1:8-10: "'If we say that we have no sin, we deceive ourselves, and the truth is not in us. If we confess our sins, he is faithful and just to forgive us *our* sins, and to cleanse us from all unrighteousness. If we say that we have not sinned, we make him a liar, and his word is not in us.'

JAS. 3:2,10,14: "'...in many things we offend all. If any man offend not in word, the same is a perfect man, *and* able also to bridle the whole body....Out of the same mouth proceedeth blessing and cursing. My brethren, these things ought not so to be....if ye have bitter envying and strife in your hearts, glory not, and lie not against the truth.'

"...there are many who for a time are guilty of evil-speaking and evil-thinking, but who are unconscious of having done wrong, these transgressions...are trespasses....

"But if any man sin, it is a different matter. In proportion as he willfully violates the divine law...he shall suffer stripes. Sins leave their mark on the character....if one of these deliberately sins, he commits the sin unto...second death." *R5750:3,6*

1 JOHN 2:1: "My little children, these things write I unto you, that ye sin not. And if any man sin, we have an advocate with the Father, Jesus Christ the righteous..."

"The text...evidently refers to trespasses and not to deliberate, or willful sins; for...the same Apostle writes...

1 JOHN 3:8; 5:18: "'He that committeth sin is of the devil....whosoever is born [begotten] of God sinneth not....'

"Except under...strong temptation of the flesh, he could not sin knowingly....So long as the holy Spirit abides in him he could not willfully, intelligently, commit sin. He might be overcome by the weaknesses of the flesh, and...give a measure of consent...for that portion which would involve the consent...he would receive stripes....

"Our unintentional trespasses, properly striven against, evidently, do not interfere with the development of character....these...show him what points...need to be strengthened." *R5751:1*

SIN AGAINST THE HOLY SPIRIT

MATT. 12:31,32: "...All manner of sin and blasphemy shall be forgiven unto men: but the blasphemy *against* the *Holy* Ghost [Spirit] shall not be forgiven unto men. And whosoever speaketh a word against the Son of man, it shall be forgiven him: but whosoever speaketh against the Holy Ghost [Spirit], it shall not be forgiven him, neither in this world, ['AGE' Diag.], neither in the *world* [*age*] to come."

"Jesus had just been using...divine power...to cast out a devil. The Pharisees who saw the miracle...sought to turn aside its force by claiming that it was...Satanic power....It was...evident that the

power....which had possessed the afflicted one was devilish,...and that any power which would dispossess it must be out of harmony with that evil disposition, so that these...were inexcusable, when they claimed...that the miracle was...by the power of Satan.

"...although they had not intentionally blasphemed Jehovah, nor...particularly blasphemed himself, they had blasphemed...the holy **power** which was operating in him....after they had witnessed the manifestation of divine power in...the relief of one...from the power of the devil — to blaspheme this holy power, meant a degree of wickedness and animosity of heart of much deeper dye....

"Sins of ignorance may be forgiven men...because the ignorance came through the fall....But sins against clear manifestations of divine grace cannot be attributed to...heredity, but must be...charged...as **willful** viciousness of the heart,...unforgivable.

"Willful...evil will never have forgiveness...in this age, nor in the coming age...If...they sinned against clear light,...**to the full** ...we...should... expect them to perish in the Second Death...

"If...against a measure of light, then 'stripes'...will result...; if...against a larger measure of light and a greater favor in

connection with the holy power of God, then a greater measure of stripes; but if the transgression involves a full, clear conception of right and wrong, and full, knowing opposition to the holy power of God, it would mean everlasting destruction....the **forgiveness**... secured by the ransom covers sins of ignorance or weakness resulting from the fall, and not...deliberate sins against light....To the proportion of its ignorance and weakness any sin is **forgivable** ..." *E270, 271, 272, 273*

LUKE 12:47,48: "And that servant, which knew his lord's will, and prepared not *himself*, neither did according to his will, shall be beaten with many *stripes*. But he that knew not, and did commit things worthy of stripes, shall be beaten with few *stripes*...."

HEB. 10:26,27: "For if we sin willfully after that we have received the knowledge of the truth, there remaineth no more sacrifice for sins, But a certain fearful looking for of judgment and fiery indignation, which shall devour the adversaries."

HEB: 6:4-6: "For *it is* impossible for those who were once enlightened, and have tasted of the heavenly gift, and were made partakers of the Holy Ghost [Spirit], And have tasted the good word of God, and the powers of the world to come ['**Age**,' *Diag.*], If they shall fall away, to renew them again unto repentance; seeing they crucify to themselves the Son of God afresh, and put *him* to an open shame."

HOPE FOR THE PENITENT

"Penitents, then, may...feel confident that their sins were in part, at least, results of the fall, and hence not unto death....

"...their sorrow for sin and their desire to return to divine favor are proofs...." *R2612:3*

LAY ASIDE SIN

HEB. 12:1: "...let us lay aside every weight, and the sin which doth so easily beset *us*, and let us run with patience the race that is set before us..."

FALLING AWAY

PROV. 14:12: "There is a way which seemeth right unto a man, but the end thereof *are* the ways of death."

JAS. 1:15: "...when lust hath conceived, it bringeth forth sin: and sin, when it is finished, bringeth forth death."

PSA. 19:12,13: "Who can understand *his* errors? cleanse thou me from secret *faults*. Keep back thy servant also from presumptuous *sins*; let them not have dominion over me: then shall I be upright, and I shall be innocent from the great transgression."

"It would appear...that every intelligent Christian would continually pray this inspired prayer, for cleansing from secret faults that he might thus be restrained from presumptuous sins: and thus praying heartily, he would also watch against these beginnings of sin and keep his heart in a cleansed and pure condition, by going continually to the fountain of grace for help in every time of need. He who seeks to live a life of holiness and nearness to the Lord by merely guarding against *outward* or presumptuous sins,...in the secrets of his own mind, is attempting a right thing in a very foolish and unreasonable way." *Manna, Aug. 12; R2249:1*

2 PET. 2:20-22: "...if after they have escaped the pollutions of the world through the knowledge of the Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ, they are again entangled therein, and overcome, the latter end is worse with them than the beginning. For it had been better for them not to have known the way of righteousness, than, after they have known *it*, to turn from the holy commandment delivered unto them. But it is happened unto them according to the true proverb, The dog *is* turned to his own vomit again; and the sow that was washed to her wallowing in the mire."

JEALOUSY

"Jealousy is sin in thought...and is very apt to lead speedily to sin...in action.....to the extent that its presence had defiled the heart even for a moment, a cleansing of the spirit of holiness and love should be invoked...." *Manna, Sept.5; R3231:5*

"LET US CLEANSE OURSELVES"

2 COR. 7:1: "**HAVING** therefore these promises, dearly beloved, let us cleanse ourselves from all filthiness of the flesh and spirit, perfecting holiness in the fear of God."

"While all the condemnation is reckoned as having passed from us, we still have the opportunity of showing the Lord...our intention...by striving against sin in our minds and in our flesh...."

"We are to cast out everything...that is sympathetic with sin. We are not to...ruminate on what is sinful...." *R5738:3,6*

COL. 3:2: "Set your affection on things above, not on things on the earth."

ROM. 12:2: "And be not conformed to this world: but be ye transformed by the renewing of your mind, that ye may prove what *is* that good, and acceptable, and perfect, will of God."

"...the New Creation will...be composed...of those who, because of faithfulness...will be counted overcomers....Each time...they have transgressed they should...make amends to those injured,...also make confession to the Lord, and by

faith obtain his forgiveness — ...promise greater diligence..., and... **increase the limitations of their own liberties** along the lines of weakness...." *F149*

JUDGING OTHERS

MATT. 7:1,2: "**JUDGE** not, that ye be not judged. For with what judgment ye judge, ye shall be judged: and with what measure ye mete, it shall be measured to you again."

"The New Creatures are not competent to be judges one of another for two reasons:

"(1) Few of them fully comprehend and appreciate the divine Law of Love governing all.

"(2) Evidently few can read their own hearts unerringly; many either judge themselves too severely or too leniently, and, hence, should modestly decline to sit in judgment of the heart of another whose motives may be far from appreciated. It is because of our incompetence for judging that the Lord—while assuring us that this shall be one of our future functions in the Kingdom, after being qualified by participation in the First Resurrection—forbids all private judgment amongst his followers now; and threatens them that if they persist in judging each other they must expect no more mercy and leniency than they show to others. (Matt. 7:2; Luke 6:38) The same thought is enforced in the sample prayer given us, 'Forgive us our debts [trespasses] as we forgive our debtors.' — Matt. 6:12" *F403*

MATT. 6:12,14,15: "...forgive us our debts [trespasses], as we forgive our debtors....For if ye forgive men their trespasses, your heavenly Father will also forgive you: But if ye forgive not men their trespasses, neither will your Father forgive your trespasses."

COVERED SINS TO BE BLOTTED OUT

ROM. 4:7,8; PSA. 32:1,2: "...Blessed *are* they whose iniquities are forgiven, and whose sins are covered. Blessed *is* the man to whom the Lord will not impute sin."

"Blessed *is he whose* transgression *is* forgiven, whose sin *is* covered. Blessed is the man unto whom the LORD imputeth not iniquity, and in whose spirit *there is* no guile."

"...every transgression of the flesh is charged to the new creature, who owns the flesh and is using it. This obligates repentance, prayer, etc....To whatever extent the new creature gives consent or sympathy to the sin of his flesh he is worthy of 'stripes,' which correctively will assist in his character development....

HEB. 12:7: "'...what son is he whom the father chasteneth not?'

"The new creature only is given the....robe of Christ's righteousness, as a covering for his imperfect flesh...." *R4842:6*

1 COR. 15:42,43: "So also *is* the resurrection of the dead. It is sown in corruption; it is raised in incorruption: It is sown in dishonour; it is raised in glory: it is sown in weakness; it is raised in power..."

"The church's sins will be instantly blotted out in the moment of the resurrection...." *R2195:4*

CHURCH SHARES IN SIN OFFERING

HEB. 13:11-13: "For the bodies of those beasts, whose blood is brought into the sanctuary by the high priest for sin, are burned without the camp. Wherefore Jesus also, that he might sanctify the people with his own blood, suffered without the gate. Let us go forth therefore unto him without the camp, bearing his reproach."

"Thus is furnished unquestionable evidence not only that the followers of Jesus are represented by this 'Lord's goat,' but also that their sacrifice, reckoned in with their Head, Jesus, constitutes part of the world's sin-offering..." *T62*

"...the merit, the value, all proceeded from the one man — the man Christ Jesus....

"It is the merit of Jesus which now temporarily is loaned in justification by faith to the church and which must be sacrificed again by us as his 'members' — that is to constitute eventually the ransom-price of the whole world of mankind...." *R4536:4*

"Thus, it is **his death** that blesses the world, **through** his Body, the Church." *T78*

SINS BORNE BY SCAPEGOAT CLASS

"The Lord...keeps a very strict account of all the world's affairs....the...tribulation which came upon the Jewish nation in the close of its harvest time was a retributive experience. In that awful trouble...the Lord required...

MATT. 23:35: "'...from the blood of righteous Abel...'

"...down to about that time....The 'great company,' failing to sacrifice during the acceptable time, will be permitted to share a considerable measure of that trouble coming upon the world to cancel, if you please, a measure of the troubles due to come upon humanity in general...." *R4428:5*

A LESSON TO US STILL IN THE FLESH

HEB. 12:4: "Ye have not yet resisted unto blood, striving against sin."

See also Index: **Permission of Evil; Hell and Purgatory; Judgment Day; Justification; Ransom; Salvation By Works; Second Death; Sin Offering; Tabernacle; Temptations; Universal Salvation.**

SIN OFFERING

"...the sin-offering, or the sacrifice of atonement... commenced with the Head, and we, the members of the Body, fill up the measure of the sufferings of Christ which are behind. And these sufferings require all of the gospel Age to complete them." *T50*

COL. 1:23, 24: "...I Paul...now rejoice in my sufferings for you, and fill up that which is behind of the afflictions of Christ in my flesh for his body's sake, which is the church."

THE BULLOCK

"...represented Jesus at the age of thirty years — the **perfect** MAN who...died on our behalf...." *T51*

1 TIM. 2:6: "Who gave himself a ransom for all...."

AN EXACT EQUIVALENT

"A man had sinned, and the penalty was **death**; and if our Lord would pay the penalty it was essential that he should be of the same nature but...

HEB 7:26: "'...holy, harmless, undefiled, separate from sinners....'

"...and die as Adam's **substitute**....Jesus made sacrifice '**of all that he had**'...**life as a perfect man**....he had exchanged his spiritual...existence for the human, which he made 'a sin-offering.' ..." *T52*

JOHN 1:14: "And the Word [Logos] was made flesh, and dwelt among us, (and we beheld his glory,...as of the only begotten of the Father,) full of grace and truth."

ISA. 53:10: "...thou shalt make his soul an offering for sin..."

THE NEW NATURE — THE PRIEST

"The **new** nature which our Lord received instead of the human...is...typified by the Priest. While...the sacrifice of the **human** was not finished until the cross, and...the **divine** nature, was not fully received until the resurrection... the death of Jesus (the bullock) was reckoned as complete when Jesus **presented himself a living sacrifice**, symbolizing his death in baptism....There he reckoned himself **dead** — dead to all human aims, to hopes of human glory, honor or life — in the same sense that we, his followers, are exhorted to reckon ourselves dead indeed to the world, but alive as **new** creatures unto God....

"This acceptance of Jesus' sacrifice...was indicated by the anointing with the holy Spirit...." *T53*

THE BULLOCK SLAIN

"...the death of the bullock typified the offering by Jesus of himself....

HEB. 10:7: "'...Lo, I come (in the volume of the book it is written of me,) to do thy will, O God.'

"To die and redeem many. There...

HEB. 10:9: "'...He taketh away the first [i.e. set aside the typical sacrifice,] that he may establish [or fulfil] the second.[...the real sacrifice for sins.]'" *T53*

IN THE COURT AND THE HOLY

LEV. 16:3,6,11-13: "Thus shall Aaron come into the holy...[and Most Holy] with a young bullock for a sin offering, and a ram for a burnt offering....And Aaron shall offer his bullock of the sin offering, which *is* for [represents] himself, and make an atonement for himself [the members of **his body** — the under-priests], and for his house [all believers, the entire 'household of faith' — the Levites]....and shall kill the bullock of the sin-offering which *is* for [represents] himself. And he shall take a censer full of burning coals of fire from off the altar before the LORD, and his hands full of sweet incense beaten small [powdered] and bring *it* within the veil [the first veil or 'door']: And he shall put the incense upon the fire before the LORD, [the censer of coals of fire was set into the top of the golden altar in the 'Holy,' and the incense crumbled over it gradually yielded a smoke of sweet perfume] that the cloud of the incense [penetrating beyond the second veil] may cover the mercy seat that *is* upon [covers] the testimony, [the Law], that he die not: [by infracting these conditions, upon which alone he may come into the divine presence acceptably]." *T55*

HOW FULFILLED

"When the man Christ Jesus had consecrated himself he immediately, as the new creature, ...took the sacrificed human life (blood of the bullock) to present it before God as the ransom-price....Spirit-begotten, he was...in the first 'Holy,' where he must...offer his incense upon the fire of trial — he must demonstrate his loyalty...by the things suffered....before entering the 'Most Holy,' the perfect spiritual condition...." *T56*

THE INCENSE

"The High Priest took with him...fire from off the altar, and...incense to cause the perfume; and so...Jesus' fulfillment of...consecration...was a sweet...perfume to the Father....The sweet incense...represented the perfection of...Jesus. The fire...represented the trials...; and its being carried along by the Priest signifies that our Lord must, by...faithfulness, bring his persecutions upon himself....the

perfection of his being (incense)...in contact with the trials... (fire),...yielded perfect obedience...— a sweet perfume...'two hands full'...representing our Lord's full capacity...." *T56*

THREE BURNINGS

"But while Jesus, as a 'new creature,'...within the 'Holy,' enjoying the light of the golden candlestick, fed by the bread of truth, and offering...incense....in the court....the fat.... burning furiously....a 'sweet savor to God,' rises....

"This represents how Jesus' sacrifice appeared to (**believing men**). They saw the devotion, the self-sacrifice, the loving zeal (fat)....

"...'outside the camp'...the body of flesh is being destroyed....

LEV. 16:27: "'And the bullock *for* the sin offering, and the goat *for* the sin offering, whose blood was brought in to make atonement in the holy place, shall one carry forth without the camp; and they shall burn in the fire their skins, and their flesh, and their dung.'

"This represents Jesus' work as viewed by the world. To them it seems foolish that he should spend his life in sacrifice....To them his sacrifice...is offensive...." *T57*

ISA. 53:3: "He is despised and rejected of men; a man of sorrows, and acquainted with grief: and we hid as it were *our* faces from

him; he was despised, and we esteemed him not."

"His sacrifice...was, in the sight of the world, foolish and detestable; in the sight of believers, a sacrifice acceptable to God; in the sight of Jehovah, 'a sweet incense.'" *T58*

END OF THESE BURNINGS

"They all ended...at the cross,....The bullock was entirely disposed of, the fat fully consumed, and the incense all offered, when Jesus cried, ('**It is finished!**') and died....

"...he passed beyond the 'Second Veil,' death; then he arose in the perfection of the divine nature....

"...our Lord Jesus, after forty days, ascended up on high..." *T58*

HEB. 9:24: "...to appear in the presence of God for us."

THE LORD'S GOAT

LEV. 16:5, 7-9: "And he shall take of the congregation of the children of Israel two kids of the goats for a sin offering, and one ram for a burnt offering....And he shall take the two goats, and present them before the LORD *at* the door of the tabernacle of the congregation. And Aaron shall cast lots upon the two goats; one lot for the LORD, and the other lot for the scapegoat. [Agoze] And Aaron shall bring the

goat upon which the LORD'S lot fell, and offer *him* for a sin offering."

"These two goats, taken from Israel and brought into the 'Court,'...represented all who, coming from the world, and accepting Jesus' redemption, fully consecrate their lives even unto death, to God's service, during this Gospel age....from the 'Camp' or world condition, 'sinners, even as others,' they were brought into, the 'Court,' the faith or justified condition. There they present themselves before the Lord (...at the door of the Tabernacle), desiring to become dead with their Redeemer...as **human** beings; and to enter the...spiritual conditions...the spiritbegotten...spiritual mind, and...the spirit-born...spiritual body....the 'Holy' and the 'Most Holy.'..." *T59*

THE COST OF SACRIFICE

"...some who say, '...I consecrate my all,' promise more than they are willing to perform. ...self-denial, to take up the cross daily and to follow...Jesus [**the bullock**]...

"[to the utter disregard and destruction of the human hopes, etc.]

"...only the first class, 'the Lord's goat'...are a part of the '**sin-offering**'..." *T60*

NOT THE PRIEST'S CHOICE

"The casting of lots...indicated that God has no choice as to which of those who present themselves shall win the prize..." *T60*

2 TIM. 2:11,12: "...if we be dead with *him*, we shall also live with *him*. If we suffer, we shall also reign with *him*...."

ROM. 8:17: "And if children, then heirs; heirs of God, and joint-heirs with Christ; if so be that we suffer with *him*, that we may be also glorified together."

SACRIFICE OF THE GOAT

"After having sprinkled the 'Mercy Seat' [...Propitiatory, or place where satisfaction is made] with the blood of the bullock seven times [perfectly],...

LEV. 16:14,15: "'And he shall take of the blood of the bullock, and sprinkle *it*...upon the mercy seat eastward; and before the mercy seat...seven times. Then shall he kill the goat of the sin offering, that *is* for the people, and bring his blood within the veil,...and sprinkle it upon the mercy seat, and before the mercy seat...'

"...all that was done with the bullock was repeated with the 'Lord's goat'...our Lord Jesus, as represented by the bullock, had a great abundance of the fat, of zeal and love for his sacrifice, while his followers, represented by the goat, are lean in comparison...." *T61*

WE SHARE IN THE SIN OFFERING

HEB. 13:11-13: "For the bodies of those beasts, whose blood is brought into the sanctuary by the high priest for sin, are burned without the camp. Wherefore Jesus also, that he might sanctify the people with his own blood, suffered without the gate. Let us go forth therefore unto him without the camp, bearing his reproach."

"...only those animals which were **sin-offerings** were burned outside the camp....the **followers** of Jesus are represented by this 'Lord's goat'...their sacrifice, reckoned in with...Jesus, constitutes part of the world's sin-offering." *T62*

OUTSIDE THE CAMP

"The **burning** 'outside the camp' represents the dis-esteem in which the offering will be viewed by those...not in covenant relationship with God...., as the consuming of...

1 COR 4:13: "'...the filth of the world, *and* the offscouring of all things....'" *T62*

DIFFERING VIEWS OF OUR SACRIFICES

"Those who recognize the sacrifices of the saints,...the fat of the 'Lord's goat' of the sin-offering on the Brazen Altar, and who realize their self-denials as acceptable to God...occupy the 'Court'...'the household of faith.'...

"Those who recognize the sacrifices of the Body of Christ...as sweet incense to God...are themselves in the 'Holy'...

EPH. 2:6: ***Diag.***: "'...seated...together in the HEAVENLIES...'

"...with Christ..." *T62*

SACRIFICES OF ALL COMPLETED BEFORE BLOOD IS PRESENTED

"The Lord's goat represented...each one and his sacrifice, except that the whole must be completed...before the 'blood'...will be presented...." *T63*

THE SIGN OF A CROSS

"The blood sprinkled on and before the 'Mercy Seat' was in the design of a cross, with...top...on the 'Mercy Seat.'" *T63*

LEV. 16:14: "He shall sprinkle *it*...upon the mercy seat eastward; [toward the 'Veil']; and before [across, in front of] the mercy seat...."

HOW APPLIED

"Thus were completed the sin-offerings...— the bullock for the **under priests**, the High Priest's 'body,' and for the Levites, the 'household of faith' of the present age; the goat

'for the people,' Israel...all the world who...will become God's people." *T63*

See also Index: **Tabernacle Types and Shadows; Ransom.**

THE APOSTLE PAUL, AN EXAMPLE

"...the Apostle Paul, when possessed of the spirit of the...Head, could...

PHIL 3:8,9: "'...count all things but loss...[and dross that he might]...win [a membership in] Christ, And be found in him....'

"...he could say:

GAL. 2:20: "'I am crucified with Christ: nevertheless I ["the new creature"] live; yet not I...'

"...the old creature...the goat....being consumed with the reproach...of the world — outside the camp....Paul's **earthly** affections and powers had all been presented...a living sacrifice. Thereafter it was Christ living in him...the **Christ mind**, crucifying and keeping under the depraved and justified human nature and its will....

GAL. 2:20: "'...nevertheless I live; yet not I, but Christ liveth in me: and the life which I now live in the flesh I live by the faith of the Son of God....'

"...living in the 'Holy'...feeding on the 'shew-bread,' and enlightened...by...the 'Golden Candlestick,'...he was able to offer 'incense' acceptable...because of Jesus' merit...he kept the goat nature always **sacrificed**;...the fleshly **will** dead,...so far as possible he kept the fleshly body 'under'...the new will..." *T65*

PURPOSE OF OUR SACRIFICE

"As the goat filled up that which was behind of the sin offering...begun by the bullock, so does the 'little flock,' following after Jesus." *T66*

COL. 1:24: "...fill up that which is behind of the afflictions of Christ...."

"Not that our sacrifices are inherently valuable, as was our Lord's....the acceptableness of our offerings is through his merit...we, as members of his Body,...share in the sufferings of Christ, that we may...share his glory also — sharing in...blessing all...with restitution privileges..." *T66*

PASSING THE SECOND VEIL

"The body of the Priest passing through the second 'Veil,' bearing the blood of the goat, represented the passing of the Body of Christ...beyond human conditions into...the divine nature...." *T66*

1 JOHN 3:2: "...we shall be like him...."

ACCEPTANCE MANIFESTED

"The 'Most Holy' reached, the evidence of the sacrifice of the **Body** 'for the people,' will be presented, as typified by the blood of the goat sprinkled on the 'Mercy Seat.'...

"...it will be accepted '**for** the people,' as that of our glorious Leader was accepted 'for himself [his Body], and his house, [the household of faith]'...giving to the world the grand results...will speedily follow — just as the blessing of Pentecost came upon the 'Body' and its reflex influence came upon the 'household,' speedily after the acceptance of Jesus' sacrifice — after he passed beyond the 'Veil' of flesh and presented our ransom-sacrifice before God." *T67*

FULL SATISFACTION

"The sprinkling of all things with the blood showed that the blood is full satisfaction...." *T67*

SOUL

Definitions: Heb., "***nephesh:***" "**a breathing creature**." Gr. " ***psuche:***" "**breath, the animal sentient principle**." *Strong* Heb., " ***nephesh:***" "**animal soul**." Gr., "***psuche:***" "**animal soul**." *Young* "...the bringing together of an **organism** and the **breath of life** produced a **sentient being or soul**..." *E344*

MAN IS A SOUL

GEN. 2:7: "...the Lord God formed man of the dust *of* the ground, and breathed into his nostrils the breath of life [more literally, 'lives,' *Rotherham footnote*]; and man became a living soul [being, RSV.]."

1 COR. 15:45: "...The first man Adam was made a living soul...."

WHAT IS A SOUL?

"The word 'soul;' as found in the Scriptures, signifies **sentient being**; that is a being possessed of....senseperception....(1) The organism or **body** was formed; (2) the **spirit** of life, called 'breath of life,' was communicated; (3) **living soul**, or sentient being, resulted....the body is not the soul, nor is the spirit or breath of life the soul; but...when these two were united..., the resultant...condition was...living being — a living soul, possessed of perceptive powers....There is...no intimation that a spark of divinity was infused into humanity, any more than into the lower animals...." *E322*

A SOUL MAY BE A BEAST

NUM. 31:28: "...levy a tribute unto the LORD of the men of war which went out to battle: one soul of five hundred, *both* of the persons, and of the beeves, and of the asses, and of the sheep."

"...the word **soul** properly and Scripturally applies to creatures on the lower planes as well as to man....we do not say that they **have** souls, in the ordinary and mistaken sense of that term, yet they all do **have** souls, in the sense of having **life, being, existence** — they **are** living souls." *E323*

NEPHESH (SOUL) TRANSLATED LIFE

GEN. 1:20: "...Let the waters bring forth abundantly the moving creature that hath life..."

GEN. 1:30: "...to every beast of the earth, and to every fowl of the air, and to every thing that creepeth upon the earth, wherein *there is* life, I *have given* every green herb for meat..."

GEN. 9:4: "...flesh with the life thereof, *which is* the blood thereof, shall ye not eat."

NEPHESH TRANSLATED CREATURE

GEN. 1:21,24: "...God created...every living creature that moveth, which the waters brought forth abundantly...Let the earth bring forth the living creature...."

GEN. 2:19: "...out of the ground...every beast of the field, and every fowl of the air;...;and whatsoever Adam called every living creature, that *was* the name thereof."

GEN. 9:9,10: "I establish my covenant with you....And with every living creature that *is* with you, of the fowl, of the cattle, and of every beast."

GEN. 9:12,15,16: "And God said, This is the token of the covenant which I make between me and you and every living creature that is with you, for perpetual generations:...And I will remember my covenant, which is between me and you and every living creature of all flesh; and the waters shall no more become a flood to destroy all flesh. And the bow shall be in the cloud; and I will look upon it, that I may remember the everlasting covenant between God and every living creature of all flesh that is upon the earth."

NEPHESH TRANSLATED PERSONS

GEN. 14:21: "...Give me the persons [*nephesh*, soul], and take the goods to thyself."

GEN. 36:6: "And Esau took his wives, and his sons, and his daughters, and all the persons [*nephesh*, souls] of his house..."

BEASTS NOT NECESSARILY CREATED TO LIVE FOREVER

"But let no one misunderstand us to teach that because all living, moving creatures...are **living souls**...all...must have a future life...by a transfer to spirit conditions or by a resurrection...." *E326*

DIFFERENCE IS IN BODY

"Man as a soul is differentiated from the lower animals or souls by reason of his higher **organism**:...It is in his mental and moral endowments rather than in physical form that man was created in divine likeness. While many of the lower orders of animal soul or being possess **reasoning powers**...yet each has a level beyond which no progress can be made; but man's reasoning powers are almost unlimited, because he was created an **image** of God!" *E326*

"...these differences are not by reason of the lower animals having a different kind of **breath** or spirit of life, for...'they

have all **one breath**'...nor because man is a soul and the...beast is not, for...they are all souls...." *E327*

ECCL. 3:19,20: "For that which befalleth the sons of men befalleth beasts; even one thing befalleth them: as the one dieth, so dieth the other; yea, they have all one breath; so that a man hath no preeminence above a beast....All go unto one place; all are of the dust, and all turn to dust again."

"...not size and weight give...superiority....the excellence is in the ' **organic quality**,' represented chiefly in brain structure and functions." *E327*

HUMAN SOULS NOT IMMORTAL

"...our Lord...[**ISA. 53:12**:] '...poured out his soul (being) unto death:...'...made [**ISA. 53:10**:] '...his soul an offering for sin....'

"This was necessary, because it was Adam's **soul** that was sentenced to death, and the promise to mankind is a redemption of **soul** or being, from the power of death....all souls are thus redeemed...." *E328*

PSA. 49:15: "...God will redeem my soul from the power of the grave: [sheol — the condition of death]..."

EZEK. 18:4,20: "...the soul that sinneth, it shall die."

MATT. 10:28: "...fear not them which kill the body, but are not able to kill the soul..."

"...fear not them which take away the present life, which is...under sentence of death...; but remember that you have been redeemed, and that a future life is a possibility to you, and that no man can rob you of that...provided...through the redemption...." *E322*

MATT. 10:28, continued: "...but rather fear him which is able to destroy both soul and body in hell. ['*Gehenna,*'...'the Second Death,' — utter destruction]...." *E332*

See also Index: **Hell and Purgatory.**

SOME OTHER TRANSLATIONS

"...the Hebrew word ***neh-phesh***, which is generally rendered 'soul' (436 times) throughout the Old Testament, and which has the signification of 'sentient being,' is translated in thirty-six different ways...: 'any,' 4 times; 'appetite,' 2; 'beast,' 1; 'body,' 4; 'breath,' 1; 'creature,' 9;...'dead,' 5; 'deadly,' 1; 'desire,' 3; 'discontented,' 1; 'fish,' 1 (Isa. 19:10); 'ghost,' 2; 'greedy,' 1; 'hath,' 1; 'he,' 1 (Psa. 105:18); 'heart,' 15; 'hearty,' 1; 'herself,' 1; 'her,' 1; 'himself,' 4; 'life,' 100; 'lust,' 2; 'man,' 2; 'me,' 3 (Num. 23:10; Judges 16:30; 1 Kings 20:32); 'mind,' 15; 'mortally,' 1; 'myself,' 1 (Psa. 131:2); 'one,' 1 (Lev. 4:27); 'own,' 1 (Prov. 14:10); 'person,' 24 (Gen. 14:21; 36:6; Num. 31:19; 35:11,15,30; Deut. 10:22; 27:25; Josh. 20:3,9); 'pleasure,' 3; 'self,' 21;

'slay,' 1; 'thing,' 2 (Lev. 11:10; Ezek. 47:9); 'will,' 3; 'your,' 3." *E334*

TRANSLATIONS OF "PSUCHE"

"The Greek word, ***psuche*** (sentient being), of the New Testament corresponding to ***neh-phesh***, is translated 'soul,' fifty-six times;... 'mind,' three times (Acts 14:2; Phil. 1:27; Heb. 12:3); 'heart,' one (Eph. 6:6); 'life,' forty-one times." *E335*

MATT. 2:20: "...they are dead which sought the young child's **life** [*psuche* — soul, being]."

MATT. 6:25:...[Cf. **Luke 12:22,23**]: "...Take no thought for your **life** [*psuche* — soul, being], what ye shall eat....Is not the **life** [*psuche* — soul, being] more than meat....?"

MATT. 16:25: "...whosoever will save his **life** [*psuche* — soul, being] shall lose it: and whosoever will lose his **life** [*psuche* — soul, being] for my sake shall find it."

MATT. 20:28;...MARK 10:45: "...the Son of man came...to give his **life** [*psuche* — soul, being] a ransom for many."

MARK 3:4; (Cf. **Luke 6:9**): "...Is it lawful...to save **life** [*psuche* — soul, being] or to kill?...."

MARK 8:35-37; (Cf. **Matt. 10:39; Luke 9:24,25; Luke 17:33**) "'...whosoever will save his **life** [*psuche* — soul, being] shall lose it; but whosoever shall lose his **life** [*psuche* — soul, being] for my sake and the gospel's,...shall save it. For what shall it profit a man, if he...gain the whole world and lose his own **soul** [*psuche* — life, being]? Or what shall a man give in exchange for his **soul** [*psuche* — life, being]?' [...'life' and 'soul' each used twice in this scripture, are from the same Greek word *psuche*]." *E335*

RESURRECTION OF SOUL

"The call of this Gospel age is to lay down our lives in the Lord's service, as living sacrifices....all...who do so...shall be granted a share...in the divine nature, through...the first resurrection. Thus they will get back...their soul, being, existence...." *E336*

DESTRUCTION VS. SALVATION

LUKE 9:56: "...the Son of man is not come to destroy men's **lives** [*psuche* — souls, beings], but to save *them*."

LUKE 14:26: "If any *man* come to me, and hate not [love not less]...his own **life** [*psuche* — soul, being]...he cannot be my disciple."

JOHN 10:11: "...the good shepherd giveth his **life** [*psuche* — soul, being] for the sheep."

JOHN 10:15: "...I lay down my **life** [*psuche* — soul, being] for the sheep."

JOHN 10:17: "...I lay down my **life**, [*psuche* — soul, being] that I might take it again [through the resurrection]." *E337*

JOHN 12:25: "He that loveth his **life** [*psuche* — soul, being] shall lose it; and he that hateth his **life** [*psuche* — soul, being] in this world shall keep it unto life eternal."

SACRIFICING THE SOUL

"...faithfulness...means dissatisfaction with present conditions, and a willingness to sacrifice them all in the service of God and righteousness and our fellow creatures — and thus,...to be accounted worthy of **existence** [soul, being] under the more favorable conditions of...to come. He who...values the enjoyments...of the present time higher than...righteousness and obedience to God, will thus be proving himself unworthy...to have his soul, his being, restored in the first resurrection." *E337*

PSUCHE TRANSLATED LIFE

JOHN 13:38, 15:13: "...Wilt thou lay down thy **life** [*psuche* — soul, being]...for his friends."

ACTS 15:26: "Men that have hazarded their **lives** [*psuche* — soul, beings] for the name of our Lord Jesus Christ."

ACTS 20:10: "...Trouble not yourselves; for his **life** [*psuche* — soul, being] is in him."

"...[he has not expired or breathed out existence."] *E337*

ACTS 20:24: "...neither count I my **life** [*psuche* — soul, being] dear unto myself, so that I might finish my course with joy...." (Cf. Phil. 3:8-10)

ACTS 27:10: "...Sirs, I perceive that this voyage will be with hurt and much damage, not only of the lading and ship, but also our **lives** [*psuche* — soul, beings]."

ACTS 27:22: "...there shall be no loss of *any man's* **life** [*psuche* — soul, being]..."

ROM. 11:3: "...I am left alone, and they seek my **life** [*psuche* — soul, being]."

ROM. 16:4: "Who have for my **life** [*psuche* — soul, being] laid down their own necks...."

PHIL. 2:30: "Because for the work of Christ he was nigh unto death, not regarding his **life** [*psuche* — soul, being], to supply your lack of service toward me."

1 JOHN 3:16: "...because he laid down his **life** [*psuche* — soul, being] for us: and we ought to lay down our **lives**, [*psuche* — souls, beings] for the brethren."

REV. 8:9: "...the third part of the creatures which were in the sea, and had **life** [*psuche* — soul, being], died...."

REV. 12:11: "...they loved not their **lives** [*psuche* — soul, beings]

unto the death."

WHAT IS DEATH?

"...if the breath or spirit of life be withdrawn, death results....Does the breath or spirit of life die? Surely not; it never had sentient being, it is a principle or power, like electricity; it has no thought, no feeling; it could not die....

"What, then, dies? We answer that it is the soul that dies — the sentient being ceases....the sentient being was produced by the union of the breath or spirit of life with an organism, and...the separation...of these two causes the cessation of the being, the soul — death. That this is true of...animals, none would...question; but is it not equally true of man, the highest animal...?" *E341*

CANDLE ILLUSTRATION

"...an unlighted candle would correspond to an inanimate human body,...the lighting of the candle would correspond to the spark of life originally imparted by the Creator; the flame or light corresponds to sentient being, or intelligence, or soul quality; the oxygenized atmosphere which unites with the carbon of the candle in supporting the flame corresponds to the **breath** of life or spirit of life which unites with the physical organism in producing soul or intelligent existence. If an accident should occur which would destroy the candle, the flame, of course, would cease; so if a human or animal body be destroyed, as by disease or accident, the **soul**, the **being**, intelligence, personality, **ceases**. Or if the supply of air were cut off from the candle flame...by submerging the candle in water, the light would be extinguished even though the candle remained unimpaired. So the **soul**, life, existence, of man or animal would cease if the breath of life were cut off by drowning or asphyxiation, while the body might be comparatively sound.

"As the lighted candle might be used...to light other candles, but the flame once extinguished the candle could neither relight itself nor other candles, so the human or animal body while alive, as a living soul or being can...start or **propagate** other souls or beings — off-spring: but so soon as the spark of life is gone, soul or being has ceased, and all power to think, feel, and propagate has ceased....we read...of Jacob's children:" *E342*

EXOD. 1:5: "...all the souls that came out of the loins of Jacob were seventy souls..."

"A candle might be relighted....but...the human body bereft of...life cannot re-enkindled except by divine power....The promise of a **resurrection** is...a promise of relighting, a reenkindling of animal existence or soul; and since there can be no being or soul without a body and restored life-power

or spirit,...a... resurrection...of soul or being **implies** new bodies...." *E343*

SOULS RESURRECTED OR REVIVED

1 COR. 15:37,38: "...thou sowest not that body that shall be, but bare grain, it may chance of wheat, or of some other *grain*: But God giveth it a body as it hath pleased him, and to every seed his own body."

A SOUL'S RETURN?

1 KINGS 17:21,22: "...let this child's soul come into him [margin, *into* his *inward parts*] again....and the soul of the child came unto him again...."

"The Hebrew word here translated *soul*, is *nephesh*; it signifies *being* or *life*, or *existence*...." *R366:6*

THE SOUL, NOT THE BODY RESURRECTED

"Our bodies are being changed and renewed, science tells us, every seven years. The body in which Adam sinned, therefore, passed away — and many other bodies — during the nine hundred and thirty years of his experience. But his soul, his personality, himself, died but once, nine hundred and thirty years old. It is the soul that dies,...and that is to be resurrected..." *R5578:5*

"It was Adam's soul that needed to be redeemed, and not merely his body, because if the soul were redeemed God could give it a new body as it pleased him. God's proposition is not to give back...the same bodies....It was the soul...that was redeemed; it was the soul of our Lord Jesus that was given as a ransom price for the soul of Adam; and the result is that the souls of Adam and his posterity are all guaranteed a resurrection."

"...the Apostle Paul....recognized that it was Christ's soul that died — that his very existence had ceased in death; that not merely his body, but himself, was absolutely dead three days, and this is our Lord's own statement..." *R2794:5,6*

REV. 1:18: "I *am* he that liveth, and was dead...."

WE SEEK FOR IMMORTALITY

ROM. 2:5-7: "...God...will render....To them who by patient continuance in well doing seek for...immortality, eternal life..."

See also: *E320-353; 388 par. 2; 398 par. 6; R1880-1882; R4002-4003; R4045:1,2; R4773-4775; R4994; R5611-5612*

See Also INDEX: **Incarnation; Ransom; Reincarnation and Transmigration; Resurrection.**

IMMORTALITY OF

See also Index: **Immortality Versus Mortality.**

SPIRITISM

"The *claim* of spiritists is that these manifestations and communications from unseen intelligences are from human beings, who once lived in this world, but who, when *seeming to die*, really became more alive, more intelligent, freer, and every way more capable...than they had ever been....that the purpose of these manifestations is to prove the *dead* are *not dead*, but alive; that there is no need of a resurrection...." *R2170:2*

THE DEAD ARE DEAD

1 COR. 15:13,18: "...if there be no resurrection of the dead, then is Christ not risen:....Then they also which are fallen asleep in Christ are perished."

ECCL. 9:5,6,10: "...the dead know not any thing...Also their love, and their hatred, and their envy, is now perished;...*there is* no work, nor device, nor knowledge, nor wisdom, in the grave, [Sheol, A.R.V.] whither thou goest."

PSA. 146:4: "His breath goeth forth, he returneth to his earth; in that very day his thoughts perish."

JOB 14:21: "His sons come to honour, and he knoweth *it* not; and they are brought low, but he perceiveth *it* not of them."

SOURCE OF COMMUNICATIONS

"...all, of these spirits are 'evil spirits,' 'lying spirits,' 'seducing spirits.'...these demons...are...

JUDE 6: "'...the angels which kept not their first estate, [*margin*, **principality**] but left their own habitation, he hath reserved in everlasting [**perpetual**, *Diag.*] chains under darkness unto the judgment of the great day.'

"...some of the angels to whom was committed the supervision of mankind in the period before the flood, for the purpose of permitting them to endeavor to *lift mankind out of sin*; that by their failure all might learn that there is but one effectual remedy for sin; *viz.*, that provided in Christ. These angels, instead of uplifting humanity, were themselves enticed into sin, and misused the power...of materializing in human form, to start another race." *R2171:3*

SCRIPTURAL ACCOUNT

GEN. 6:1,2,4,5; 7:23: "And it came to pass, when men began to multiply on the face of the earth, and daughters were born unto them, That the sons of God saw the daughters of men that they were *fair*; and they took them wives of all which they chose....There were giants in the earth in those days; and also after that, when the sons of

God came in unto the daughters of men, and they bare *children* to them, the same *became* mighty men which *were* of old, men of renown. And God saw that the wickedness of man *was* great in the earth, and *that* every imagination of the thoughts of his heart *was* only evil continually....And every living substance was destroyed which was upon the face of the ground, both man, and cattle, and the creeping things, and the fowl of the heaven; and they were destroyed from the earth: and Noah only remained *alive*, and they that *were* with him in the ark."

THEIR PUNISHMENT

2 PET. 2:4; *Diag.*: "...GOD did not spare the Angels who sinned, but having confined them in Tartarus [from *tartaroo*, '**to hurl** or **cast into *Tartarus*'** — *Liddell and Scott*; *Tartarus*: '**a dark abyss** ...., the prison of Saturn, the Titans, etc.' — idem] with Chains of Thick darkness, delivered them over into custody for judgment."

EXPLANATION

(1) "They are imprisoned in *Tartarus*, restrained, but not destroyed. *Tartarus* is nowhere else rendered 'hell,' (as in A.V.)....It does not signify the grave, neither does it signify the second death....

(2) "They have some liberties in this imprisoned condition, yet they are chained, or restrained,... not permitted to exercise their powers in the light being 'under chains of *darkness*.'

(3) "This restriction was to continue *until* 'the judgment of the great day,' the great Millennial Day....it is possible that this should be understood to mean that some of these limitations as to '*darkness*' may ere long be removed, gradually. If so...it would permit these evil spirits to work deceptions or 'lying wonders' in the daylight (as they are now attempting to do) to the delusion of mankind more than ever....since the flood....

"...evil beings apparently always prefer to make game of the purer, and apparently take pleasure in corrupting and degrading them. The history of these demons...would seem to show that the evil concupiscence which led to their fall, before the flood, still continues with them. They still have their principal pleasure in that which is lascivious and degrading; and the general tendency...is toward working mischief against the well-disposed, and debauchery of those over whom they gain absolute control." *R2171:4,5*

JESUS' PREACHING TO THEM

1 PET. 3:18-20 *ASV.*: "...Christ also suffered for sins once, the righteous for the unrighteous...; being put to death in the flesh, but made alive in the spirit; in which also he went and preached unto the spirits in prison, that aforetime were

disobedient, when the longsuffering of God waited in the days of Noah, while the ark was a preparing...."

"*...his course* was preaching a good sermon to those angels....In Jesus they saw exemplified obedience even unto death, and its reward — resurrection — to spiritual being of the divine nature...." *R1679:4*

SPIRITISM A SNARE

"As soon as the unbeliever...has been convinced that an unseen intelligence communicates through the medium, he is all interest. Nothing else offers such proofs from invisible sources as...spiritism; and man seem...to walk by sight rather than by faith. Every one has friends who have died, and thousands are anxious to communicate with them if possible, and to receive...some message or some advice...." *R2170:3*

METHOD OF ATTRACTION

"They visit a medium for the purpose of holding communication with the dead. The medium describes the hair, the eyes, etc., and certain peculiarities...(which the father or son or sister or wife identifies as the description of the loved one deceased) and delivers

a message which, however vague or indefinite, is construed to be very important. The novices are filled with a sort of reverent joy....akin to some kinds of *religious feelings*, and...are ready to...obey the advice....” *R2170:3*

THE INFLUENCE DEMORALIZING

“It is claimed...that the influence of Spiritism is elevating; but those who have passed through the various stages of experience...have found...that its influence is...demoralizing.” *R2171:1*

SPIRITISM VALUELESS

“‘According to the theory of Spiritualists, there are a hundred times as many disembodied spirits about us as there are men in the flesh. Among them are all the poets, authors, orators, musicians and inventors of the past....They have had...slates...pens...pianos...violins...; and what have we to show for it?...they have told us many things which we knew before; many things which we do not know yet, and many other things which it was no matter whether we knew or not; but when we came to real instruction, reliable information, or profitable and valuable knowledge, Spiritualism is as barren as Sahara, as empty as a hollow gourd.’ — Horace L. Hastings” *R2171:2*

SPIRITISM IN TIMES PAST

ISA. 8:19,20: “And when they shall say unto you, Seek unto them that have familiar spirits, and unto wizards that

peep, and that mutter: should not a people seek unto their God? for the living to the dead? To the law and to the testimony: if they speak not according to this word, *it is* because *there is* no light [*margin,* ‘**no morning’**] in them.”

KING SAUL AND THE WITCH

1 SAM. 28:7,11,13-16,19: “Then said Saul..., Seek me a woman that hath a familiar spirit... Then said the woman, Whom shall I bring up unto thee? And he said, Bring me up Samuel.... And the woman said,...I saw gods ascending out of the earth....An old man cometh up;...covered with a mantle. And Saul perceived that it *was* Samuel,...And Samuel said...Why hast thou disquieted me, to bring me up? And Saul answered,...God is departed from me, and answereth me no more, neither by prophets, nor by dreams: therefore I have called thee,... Then said Samuel, Wherefore then dost thou ask of me,....the LORD will also deliver Israel with thee into the hand of the Philistines: and to morrow *shalt* thou and thy sons *be* with me.”

“The methods used by the evil spirits...were similar to those in use today. They caused to pass before the medium’s mental vision the familiar likeness of...Samuel, wearing...a long mantle. When she described the mental (or ‘astral?’) picture, Saul...saw nothing — he ‘perceived,’ from the description, that it was Samuel....Saul did not...question how...Samuel looked as old...as...in the present life....nor... why he wore the same old mantle in the spirit world....Saul...was now easily deceived by these ‘lying spirits,’ who personated the prophet and spoke to Saul...through their ‘medium’...

“The fallen spirits...are adept in deceit....The... style...of the dead prophet were assumed..., to deceive. (Thus these ‘lying spirits’...counterfeit the face, manner and disposition of the dead.) The response was, ‘Why hast thou disquieted me to bring me up?’ This answer corresponds to the Jewish belief — that when a person died he became unconscious in ‘sheol,’...waiting for a resurrection...Hence the representation is that Samuel was brought up...not down from heaven; and that his rest...was...’disquieted.’...” *R2172:2*

JOB 14:12-14: “So man lieth down, and riseth not: till the heavens *be* no more, they shall not awake, nor be raised out of their sleep. O that thou wouldest hide me in the grave, [Heb. *sheol*] that thou wouldest keep me secret, until thy wrath be past, that thou wouldest appoint me a set time, and remember me! If a man die, shall he live *again?* all the days of my appointed time will I wait, till my change come.”

OBSESSION AND RESISTANCE

“In the days of our Lord and the early church the method...of these demons had changed somewhat from...the

days of Saul, and we read...about persons possessed by devils — obsession....our Lord cast out devils...The same power was...exercised by the Apostle Paul.... Apparently the human will must consent before these evil spirits have power to take possession. But when they do...apparently the will power is so broken down, that the individual is almost helpless to resist....Our Lord intimates such a condition...suggesting that, even after an evil spirit had been cast out and the heart swept and garnished, if it were still empty, there would be danger of the...evil spirit with others to re-possess themselves of the man; — hence the necessity for having Christ enthroned within, if we would be kept for the Master’s use, and be used in his service.” *R2173:2,3*

MATT. 12:43-45: “When the unclean spirit is gone out of a man, he walketh through dry places, seeking rest, and findeth none. Then he saith, I will return into my house from whence I came out; and when he is come, he findeth *it* empty, swept, and garnished. Then goeth he, and taketh with himself seven other spirits more wicked than himself, and they enter in and dwell there: and the last *state* of that man is worse than the first....”

AN EXAMPLE OF OBSESSION

LUKE 8:27-33: “...there met him...a...man, which had devils long time, and ware no clothes, neither abode in *any* house, but in the tombs. When he saw Jesus, he cried out, and fell down before him, and with a loud voice said, What have I to do with thee, Jesus, *thou* Son of God most high? I beseech thee, torment me not. (For he had commanded the unclean spirit to come out of the man. For oftentimes it had caught him: and he was kept bound with chains and...fetters; and he brake the bands, and was driven of the devil into the wilderness.) And Jesus asked him, saying, What is thy name? And he said, Legion: because many devils were entered into him. And they besought him that he would not command them to go out into the deep [ABYSS, *Diag.*]. And there was there an herd of many swine feeding on the mountain: and they besought him that he would suffer them to enter into them. And he suffered them. Then went the devils out of the man, and entered into the swine: and the herd ran violently down a steep place into the lake, and were choked.”

SUNDRY EARTHLY OBLIGATIONS

"But we are not to be content with the barest necessities unless these are the best results obtainable from a reasonable and judicious use of opportunities and talents which the Lord has given us, consistent...to his service. 'Be content with such things as ye have' does not ignore talents and opportunities, for these are part of the things which we have — the things which, as stewards, we are bound to use to the best of our judgments." *R3129:6*

"What do you possess?...A dead man does not own anything....All that the old creature possesses of time, influence, money, property....God owns it because it was to God that you gave your old human nature as a sacrifice, and God has given these things into the custody of the new creature...the steward. So...it is for you and me to see how we are using...selling those things that we have...how much we are getting out of our time, whether we are wasting any upon light...novel reading,...as respects games or other folly...." *CR4:6*

"It is God's will that we should recognize these mortgages [wife, children, aged parents, others dependent]...not forgetting that we are expected not to be wasteful of the Lord's means, but to seek to turn as much as possible of it into such channels as would be specially useful in the promotion of religious truth...." *F577*

"...if they have helpless fathers or mothers, or children dependent upon them, it is not for them to forsake the obligation of nature. This is the first mortgage and you have no right to dispose of them, only your own equity. Every obligation to wife or children, or those who are helpless or dependent,...come in as mortgages and the Lord wishes us to recognize these first." *CR298:1*

RIGHTS

"You have a right to demand justice, but you may forego these rights." *Q333*

"It is the Lord's will I want to be done, and He says He will not allow anything to happen to His children that He will not overrule for good. If the Lord thinks it is good for me to break my leg this afternoon, I hope I will break it.

"All their burdens are harder after they have grunted over them for a while..." *Q334*

PROV. 10:22: "The blessing of the LORD,... maketh rich, and he addeth no sorrow with it."

"Many Christians...allow conflicting earthly interests to separate them from the blessings of God's greater favor." *R5171:1*

STEWARDS

"...if we would be wise stewards...meet the Master's approval when we come to render up our accounts, we must study the best ways and means for investing our talents so as to have them yield the largest possible increase." *R1075:1*

"As the Lord's stewards we are to seek continually to know what would please him, obtaining our instructions from his Word." *F576*

"The money and goods you possess should be reckoned as the Lord's and you should use it as his word directs — neither wastefully, nor carelessly, nor grudgingly..." *R186:5*

ROM. 12:17: "Recompense to no man evil for evil. Provide things honest in the sight of all men."

1 TIM. 5:8: "'But if any provide not for his own, and specially for those of his own house, he hath denied the faith, and is worse than an infidel.' — This relates primarily to a Christian husband and his duty toward his wife and children." *R4854:1*

"Providing for those who are not able to provide for themselves is one thing, and giving away money we have is another thing. We are to give an account to God and not to our children." *Q144*

"SEEK FIRST THE KINGDOM OF HEAVEN"

"The proper thought...is that it is right to economize and...'to lay by in store' for our own future needs or that we may have to lend to others, in need. God's people are to be frugal, to avoid debts, to be 'forehanded,' and with some reserve of capital." *R4567:2*

"...every member of the New Creation should, as respects earthly things, live within his means. If he can earn but a dollar a day he should not for a moment think of spending more than that, except upon the direst necessity...

"Economy is a part of the divine arrangement, as exemplified by our Lord and the apostles, and particularly illustrated in the matter of the saving of the fragments by order of him who had power to create out of nothing food for a multitude." *F564*

MATT. 6:19,20: "Lay not up...treasures upon earth,...But lay up for yourselves treasures in heaven..."

"A treasure may be of any sort — money, children, wife, flowers, birds, horses, cattle, or self, or business — anything. That which fills the largest place in our hearts is

treasure....The heart's treasure is that for which we would and do make the **greatest** sacrifices of time, strength, convenience, etc." *R874:2*

"Use earthly things — Money, talents, reputation, all, as means to help you make your calling and election sure, just as a man seeking earthly wealth uses every ability for the accomplishment of his ends." *R187:4*

"It means that nothing of an earthly kind should become our **treasure**...." *F573*

"Think not when you are spending all your energies for self and money making, that you are following the instructions of Jesus, denying self and walking in his footsteps. He spent his time and energy in teaching and doing good to others." *R186:3*

"To the mothers and housewives...remember the words of Paul regarding the dress, the hair, etc., both of yourself and your children, and so order your time that you will have some of it for partaking of spiritual food and some for ministering to others.

"If you have means and can employ servants and thereby have **your own time** to spend in the work of the Lord, we would suggest that as a wise use of time and money to God's glory." *R187:2*

WEALTH

"...those who possess riches of any kind, have... much more than they otherwise would have to offer...as a sacrifice in his service, to glorify his name, to advance his truth, to bless his people. But the consecrated should keep...in mind that this is the only value of any kind of riches to them; they are...to seek opportunities for using them wisely, — spending them all to the...last farthing." *R2761:6*

"If you have wealth and beautiful things...they draw the heart more in that [earth's] direction and it is all the more difficult to set your affections on things above. So the person who has little in some respects has the advantage. But if the person who has the disadvantage prove the victor over it, we may suppose that the Lord will appreciate the victory...all the more." *CR5:3*

"...each member of the New Creation possessing wealth should consider carefully the responsibilities of the stewardship, and be prompt to use it according to his judgment of the divine will." *F597*

"I would suggest that you stop at once the work of money gathering and 'heaping treasure for the last days,'...go into the Lord's service with the same talents used in the service of self, and see if you can spend it as freely and as rapidly as you could make it." *R187:1*

"Better not have any fortune. Better enter into the Kingdom bankrupt to some extent as far as earthly things are concerned than having much riches to be cast out as unfit for a place in the Kingdom." *CR364:4*

"The poor man who comes to the Lord must give up the idols of his **imagination** and **ambition**, his covetousness for earthly wealth which he has not yet attained." *F575*

MATT. 6:34: "Take...no [burdensome] thought for...morrow...."

"We should recognize a wide difference between carelessness and anxious care." *F573*

"Let us then cast off all anxious care respecting food and raiment and all matters pertaining to these which the world in general are worried about. To be without worry would not mean to be without proper concern and due diligence to find work and to do it." *R4567:5*

ROM. 13:8: "Owe no man any thing, but to love one another..."

"...if he [a Christian] borrows with a specific understanding respecting the time of return of the money or goods, he should be prompt to meet the obligation....Indeed,...it would be to ...the advantage of every child of God if he would put into practice the Apostle's words...in the most absolute sense, and never borrow anything; never owe anything; paying for what he needs at the time of purchase, or...waiting for it until, in the Lord's providence, he is able to pay for it in advance." *R3180:2*

"...the Christian should strive 'to have need of nothing' — So far as possible not to be dependent upon charity — but,...should 'labor, working with his hands at useful employment [not to accumulate great wealth, but] that he may have to give to him that needeth.'" *R2196:6*

DEBT

"...to go into debt, I would advise that all the Lord's people avoid it." *Q143*

"...buying on credit; which should be avoided by the Lord's people..." *R2196:6*

"If...the debt were...a loan of money or of credit, on which the friend expected and received no gain or profit...should be considered as continuing so long as life would last, and endeavors to make it good should always have an important bearing upon the affairs of the debtor...

"'Owe no man anything' would not necessarily apply to the placing of a mortgage upon one's property....This would not be borrowing in the forbidden sense, but merely the making of a temporary sale of a portion of the equity involved..." *F566*

"...lending, to assist a brother in necessity, should be done freely and without hope of reward...(usury), but merely for the return of the principle within the specified time." *F567*

LUKE 6:35: "But love ye your enemies, and do good, and lend, hoping for nothing again; and your reward shall be great, and ye shall be the children of the Highest: for he is kind unto the unthankful and to the evil."

"We should also have that beneficent disposition which desires to do good to all men, especially those of the household of faith. But we should use wisdom and discretion." *Q135*

DEUT. 15:6: "For the LORD thy God blesseth thee, as he promised thee: and thou shalt lend unto many nations, but thou shalt not borrow; and thou shalt reign over many nations, but they shall not reign over thee."

"...lenders, not borrowers...comparatively few... of the Lord's people or of the world strenuously endeavor to follow an invariable rule of life." *F564*

"...if we should see a brother or sister suffering want, it would be an un-Christian course...to refuse aid, no matter if they have been foolish in some respects in the past." *Q276*

"'Give to everyone that asketh of thee, and of him that taketh away thy goods ask them not again.'...Be generous, tender-hearted, err on the side of too great generosity rather than to be hard-hearted, selfish." *R5005:6*

"If the bond were for a sum that one would be willing to lend to the brother, or to give him in case of necessity, then the bond or security or indorsement would be allowable...never to the jeopardy of one's own credit, nor to the risk of one's own business, nor the impoverishment of one's own family." *F568*

"There is a kind of petty borrowing....The New Creatures...must deprecate in their hearts such petty annoyances...as to make such borrowing an extremely rare matter — a matter of absolute necessity in case of sickness or other extremity." *F569*

"Some are quite careless in regard to the rights of others; for instance, they would take without permission an umbrella belonging to another saying, 'I want it only for an hour or so, and I will bring it back.' Such a person is not properly conscientious about small things. One who would take an umbrella for even an hour has not sufficient principle to be trusted in larger things. Others will borrow articles, and forget or neglect to return them promptly, thus putting the owner to great inconvenience and annoyance. At best the habit of borrowing is deplorable." *R5740:2*

"How is...your relationship to your brothers and sisters? When they borrow...things without leave, do you

retaliate...thus keep up a continual fret and vexation of spirit in the family? Or do you practice the Golden Rule of justice, and do nothing to your brother and sister, or their belongings, that you would not wish them to do to you or your things?" *OV232*

ROM. 13:8: "...owe...but...love..."

"...it is...part of Christian duty to discharge this obligation daily. A parent or member of the family is to see that he does his part in support of the home and its comforts and privileges and quiet and harmony, that his influence in his neighborhood amongst his

friends and acquaintances shall be for good and not...evil, for peace and not for strife." *R3180:3*

"The Apostle speaks of some as laying by that they might have to give to them that are in necessity. Now I think that would apply to yourself, to have something laid by so that you would not have to go out and beg, and that you might have something to give to your neighbor ...that you might be in a place to render aid to others." *Q143*

HOSPITALITY

"Given to hospitality"

"Hospitality is the 'reception and entertainment of strangers or guests without reward, or with kind...gracious liberality.'...The Apostle Paul says, 'Be not forgetful to entertain strangers;... thereby some have entertained angels unawares.' And the Apostle Peter exhorts the brethren to 'use hospitality one to another without grudging.'" *R917:4*

"Hospitality does not signify lavish expenditure beyond one's means, nor that better...be provided for a guest than for one's own family. It does signify, however, a willingness to share such things as we have with others." *F570*

"We have the right to give and to be generous, but are not authorized to request or require such things from others." *F571*

"...literally, it signifies following after hospitality — going out after, or seeking for opportunities for the exercise of hospitality.... Some...are inclined to give better than they have, and perhaps would go into debt in order to entertain more lavishly than their circumstances would justify. This is wrong." *R2214:1*

"Lydia...considered that it would be a great favor to entertain...representatives of the Lord. ...It is manifest...that they did not intrude, and were not in haste even to accept the proffered hospitality. They questioned the convenience and ability of the sister to thus entertain them; for it was not until she constrained or urged them that they accepted her invitation." *R1546:4*

MATT. 10:41: "He that receiveth a prophet in the name of a prophet shall receive a prophet's reward; and he that receiveth a righteous man in the name of a righteous man shall receive a righteous man's reward."

ROM. 12:13: "Distributing to the necessity of saints; given to hospitality."

1 TIM. 3:2: "...given to hospitality...."

HEB. 13:2: "Be not forgetful to entertain strangers: for thereby some have entertained angels unawares."

EXAMPLE: Shunammite woman of **2 Kings 4:10**: "Let us make a little chamber, I pray thee, on the wall; and let us set for him there a bed, and a table, and a stool, and a candlestick: and it shall be, when he cometh to us, that he shall turn in thither."

"Her wisdom, too, was exemplified in the moderation and simplicity of the arrangements provided — they were comfortable, but not extravagant....

"Hospitality and faith may not always be... promptly rewarded in the present time; the Lord's people may even suffer evil for good and be persecuted and hated by those whom they seek to serve and benefit. But a blessing, nevertheless is sure to be theirs...." *R3432:2,5*

"...there should be a special exercise of hospitality, and that without grudging. It should be hearty, and not merely because the Lord commends and commands it. Hospitality...is...an element of character which should be cultivated toward all men....There are some who...recognize...hospitality quite keenly, and who, if hospitality be denied them, will be inclined to berate the brethren for their lack of the proper spirit. Such and all should inquire for themselves to what extent they have ever exercised hospitality and generosity to others; and anyone who realizes that he has received more from the brethren than he has given them should feel ashamed....Let each of us seek to enjoy the blessing which comes from a liberal interpretation of this word hospitality." *R3247:5*

RECEIVING

"They [disciples] were not to be fastidious, but to accept such hospitalities as were offered them..." *R3348:2*

"Another lesson for us is the propriety of using hospitality as a channel for the advancement of the truth — the homes of those who have consecrated...should be consecrated homes, in which the first consideration should be the service of the Master; and its influence should be to draw out friends to the Lord, that they might be taught of him." *R2591:3*

"There is probably nothing better calculated to cement and knit together the body of Christ than Christian hospitality....some of those in less favored circumstances might hesitate to show the hospitality they feel toward those more favored...class distinctions...find no recognition in the body of Christ, where all are one. And those in humble circumstances will have no pride of rivalry, etc., to sustain, but in simplicity and love will delight to manifest the hospitality they feel toward those in more and those in less favored circumstances — to minister to them both of their temporal and their spiritual good things according to their several needs, as good and faithful stewards of the manifold grace of God." *R1188:1,4*

"The Apostle...urges that the Lord's people always be on the alert to show hospitality.... The Lord's consecrated people will do well to cultivate hospitality...without waiting for it to be requested." *R2856:6*

"[Lydia] seems properly to have realized that, instead of honoring them, she was honoring herself and her home by having such guests — the ministers of God, the brethren of Christ — under her roof." *R4399:6*

"We are glad to note the growth of a hospitable spirit amongst all the dear friends....We would not say a word in restraint of this, believing that it signifies an enlargement of heart that is pleasing to the Lord and profitable to the individuals themselves.

"We urge,...that at Convention times you seek to have everything as simple and plain as possible, that your mind may be given to the spiritual food and to the arrangement of the bridal dress....

"It would be well for visiting friends...if they lodge with others, to do their share or a little more in the way of lightening the home burdens, that all may rejoice together and have a spiritual feast." *R4034:1,4*

INSURANCE

"...it is purely a matter of business judgment, and not a religious question, whether or not the Lord's people shall avail themselves of insurance opportunities." *F578*

"Life insurance is equivalent to the laying aside in a savings bank

of a small sum, regularly, for the benefit of some dependent ones." *R521:2*

"...the so-called mutual insurance companies will fail sooner than those styled 'old line' insurance companies, which have the backing of vast accumulations of money and the support of the more wealthy. The mutual companies will fail first, because, as times get hard, many will be unable to pay their assessments and drop out and thus make the assessments larger for those who remain in. And, as the pinch

continues, these also will withdraw and the mutual companies will fail." *R4699:2*

AGREEMENTS; CONTRACTS

"Once such an absolute contract has been made, no child of God should think of breaking it, unless it should develop that he had been the subject of fraud and misrepresentation and through this had been induced to sign." *R3109:6*

UNIONS

"To whatever extent...unions may extend to anything illegal or do harm to some non-union man, to that extent you and I as followers of Jesus could not be in harmony with them, and if any union plotted to blow up buildings or destroy life or produce riots, you and I would be bound to say, 'Brethren, we cannot stand with you. We stand for righteousness and truth. We must withdraw.'" *Q675*

ORGANIZATIONS

"Free Masons, Odd Fellows, Knights of Pythias, etc., perform certain rites and ceremonies of a religious kind....We place upon one level all of those which have any religious ceremonies, teachings, etc., and consider them all as parts of Babylon,...contrary to the divine intention, as displayed in the organization of the primitive Church. We admonish the New Creation to have nothing whatever to do with any of these semi-religious societies, clubs, orders, churches..." *F580,581*

"...neither consecrated time, money, nor influence could be thus devoted without interference with the saints' consecration vow to use **all** their time, **all** their money, **all** their influence, not only not against the Lord but in his service....The same argument holds true exactly against every sectarian society called a church." *R521:1*

BUSINESS

"If your business is meeting expenses and a reasonable profit, endeavor to keep it there, but do not push it in the endeavor to become 'rich;' for 'they that **will** [to] be rich fall into temptation and a snare.' (1 Tim. 6:9) We should avoid any dishonorable competition or meanness toward competitors, and any misrepresentations of goods to customers." *R2033:1*

"If you are devoting more time to your business than is needful for your **necessities** and the **proper** support of those who are dependent upon you, and the various avenues you may have for money in the Lord's service, then I should say stop some of your business and use the talent which would go to laying up treasure on earth in some branch of the Lord's service." *R186:6*

"He [a man receiving the truth] would not be a brother in Christ while in a business repugnant to his conscience and injurious to his fellow-creatures." *R5498:4*

"I think my conscience would not permit me to sell liquor for intoxicating purposes....I would not be a party in the liquor business or anything else that would injure my neighbor..." *Q617*

1 THES. 4:11: "...study to be quiet, and to do your own business..."

BUSYBODYING

"A busybody is a person who meddles with the affairs of others with which he properly has nothing whatever to do." *R5167:6*

1 TIM. 5:13: "And withal they learn to be idle, wandering about from house to house; and not only idle, but tattlers also and busybodies, speaking things which they ought not."

1 PET. 4:15: "But let none of you suffer as a murderer, or as a thief, or as an evildoer, or as a busybody in other men's matters."

"'Busybodying in other men's matters' is severely reproved by the Apostle, as wholly inconsistent with the new minds of the New Creation." *F583*

"Our experience is that busybodying is a fruitful source of difficulty in the church — in all...ecclesias. A clear knowledge of present truth seems rather to increase this difficulty.

"Whoever...is a faultfinder and busybody in the affairs of the brethren is doing this against the flesh of Jesus." *R5274:2,3*

"...they have still less time than the world for meddling...their time being not their own, because of their full consecration of time, talent, influence, all to the Lord and his service.

"...the Golden Rule,...of the New Creation, prohibits everything akin to busybodying." *F583*

"He should educate his conscience to discriminate between brotherly duty and busybodying...

"In our intercourse with the world we will generally find upon careful examination that it is not our business to chide or reprove or rebuke them." *F584*

"'Speak evil of no man.' Busybodying — thinking and talking about the private affairs of others, with which we have no direct concern — leads to evil speaking and backbiting, and engenders anger, malice, hatred, strife, and various works of the flesh and of the devil..." *F585*

"BLESSING GOD AND CURSING MEN"

JAS. 3:9: "Therewith bless we God, even the Father; and therewith curse we men, which are made after the similitude of God."

"We must see to it that we learn this great lesson in the School of Christ, that out of the mouth which praises God there shall not come forth that which would be injurious to the brethren — or anyone." *R4381:6*

"The Christian who merely has attained to the standard of not stealing from his neighbor, or not murdering him but who commits depredations upon that neighbor with his tongue wounding or slaying...his reputation, his good name — is a Christian who has made very little progress in the right way, and who is still far from the Kingdom of heaven...." *F586*

"The only way by which to have our tongues brought into subjection to the divine will and made useful as servants of truth and righteousness and love is by having them converted.

"...we may know that if with our tongues we are doing injury to our fellowmen we are deceiving ourselves with respect to our real attitude toward God. We may know that God will reject the prayers

and worship coming from a heart full of bitterness, anger, malice, hatred, envy, strife, and manifesting itself in acrimonious speech." *R5021:1,4*

"...let none of you suffer as...busybodies...

"The saints seem as liable as others to become busybodies and to suffer for so doing. We have sometime thought that the Lord's consecrated people are more inclined to be busybodies than are others....There is continually a temptation... not to be content with minding one's own business, but to advise and to seek to regulate everybody and everything." *R5274:1*

"It was Carlyle who described sarcasm as being 'the natural language of the devil.' It was Faber who wrote, 'No one was ever corrected by sarcasm; crushed, perhaps, if the sarcasm was clever enough, but drawn nearer to God, never.'" *R5021:4*

"The bitter word of sarcasm or insinuation is shot out often unthinkingly, but the terrible poison goes from heart to heart and fresh roots of bitterness are scattered abroad, which a lifetime of holy living cannot fully counteract." *OV208*

"Each member of the New Creation should educate his conscience to discriminate between brotherly-love and busybodying, and should learn to apply the rules of justice and love to every act, word and thought...." *R5167:6*

"...one who spends considerable time in correcting others...is prone to forget himself.

"Observation in life leads one to believe that fully one-half of the world are meddlesome busybodies, and that many of their trials stem from this weakness. It would appear that in nearly every family, there is someone,...who takes advantage of the kindness and generosity of the others and rules the house. This course of conduct demonstrates a lack of faith....

"It behooves each one who would have the approval of God to study his conduct, not only toward the world and the brethren, but also toward the members of his own family, that he may be sure that he is minding his own business...." *R5168:1,2,4,5*

"'Kind words...never die,' and it would be equally true to say, 'Unkind words never die.' Indeed, the latter live much...longer in a majority of cases....Let us each and all redouble our energy in subjugating our tongues, that they may always bless and 'minister grace to the hearers.'" *R2157:4*

EPH. 4:29: "Let no corrupt communication proceed out of your mouth, but that which is good to the use of edifying, that it may minister grace unto the hearers."

PROV. 16:28: "A froward man soweth strife: and a whisperer separateth chief friends."

"A froward man is a bad man, whose acts and words tend to produce envy, bitterness, misunderstanding, strife. A whisperer is a busybody or slanderer." *Q45*

"If we have not sufficient of our own business... to fill our hands and moments and mouths, there is something wrong with us that needs careful prayer and study of the divine Word to set right." *R3593:6*

"The Christian of advanced experience emphasizes the fact that he has quite a sufficiency of knowledge of evil in himself and his environment without making special search for the weaknesses and blemishes of others...." *R4282:1*

"It is a wholly mistaken idea that any of us is commissioned to set everybody else right. It betokens a great deal of pride to have such an impression." *R5275:4*

"The speaking of anything that is prejudicial to the character of another, whether it be truth or falsehood, is evil-speaking in the proper acceptance of that term." *R4281:2*

SOCIAL OBLIGATIONS

"...we do not company with evildoers...." *F588*

"...the Spirit of the Lord...would imply that our sentiments toward our relatives should be specially considered, and be,

to the extent of our opportunities, helpful. Nevertheless, it would not be wise...for us to extend a very special fellowship to our earthly relatives; or to receive them or treat them better than, or even as well as, we would treat the household of faith." *F589*

HONOR ALL MEN

"He should be glad to recognize and acknowledge fully and freely the earthly rights and claims of others — his own rights and claims of an earthly kind having been renounced in favor of the spiritual, the heavenly." *F590*

"'Fret not thyself because of evildoers.' He perceives that God's judgment in the matter...is correct and unalterable; and he waits patiently for the Lord to bring about the transformation of matters according to his divine will...." *F591*

"Nor does it seem to the New Creation to be either necessary or prudent to endeavor to alarm the world respecting coming distress." *F592*

ROM. 13:7: "Render, therefore, to all their dues..."

"...to all men as well as to all rulers — in financial as well as political matters." *R3179:6*

"Our hearts should be so unselfish that we would take pleasure in seeing honor and prosperity come to another, and rejoice in it...." *R2213:3*

POLITICS

"Honoring men, respecting them according to their character or office, and obeying the laws, does not necessarily mean a participation with the world in the functions of government...our advice would be that they maintain a strict neutrality in respect to politics, and...voting altogether." *F593*

1 PET. 2:11: "Dearly beloved, I beseech *you* as strangers and pilgrims, abstain from fleshly lusts, which war against the soul..."

"Our preferable position...toward society and toward ourselves — would be...the position of aliens." *F593*

"...if 'our citizenship is in heaven.'...If we see clearly that present governments are those of the 'prince of this world' and must all be shattered and give place to the Kingdom of God for which we pray, 'Thy Kingdom come,' then we shall have no further desire to be mixed up with them in any way." *R424:3*

"The Lord's people are not to forget that while they should live up to the spirit of the world's best laws, they may go much farther than these in many respects." *R3113:2*

"...we, like our Lord, have nothing...to do with political revolutions." *R2785:6*

"The patriotism of the Christian should embrace the interests of all humanity. We are to be in it [the world], not as citizens, but

as...law-abiding aliens, rendering unto Caesar the things that are Caesar's,...owing no man anything but to love one another; rendering to all their dues...custom to whom custom, fear to whom fear, honor to whom honor, and being subject...to the higher powers. Rom. 13:1,7,8." *R2002:1,4*

"The safe plan is to take no part in politics.... The Quakers take note of the fact that God's people are not to engage in carnal warfare, but they overlook the fact that when they vote for a government they ought to support it by words and deeds. Thus our Lord said, 'If my kingdom were of this world, then would my servants fight.'" *R2037:6*

"There were many moral, social and political reforms possible in the days of our Lord and his apostles, but we do not read of any effort on their part either to inaugurate or to assist in such movements." *R1564:1*

"...our covenant with the Lord, and our fidelity to him, practically make us aliens in our relations to all human governments,...we would best take no part in the election of officers or in the management of the affairs of this world." *R1531:5*

"If Caesar merely gives us the liberty to vote it is not at all necessary that we should accept or use that liberty; should he by and by command us to vote, it would be proper for us to comply and use our best judgment." *R3853:4*

"...voting brings a measure of responsibility for the upholding of the party with which we have affiliated and voted and a partial responsibility for its right and wrong use of power, and might imply a certain responsibility to bear arms, etc." *R4156:1*

"'Do not be conformed to this world...' Rom. 12:2. That is to say, do not become entangled with the things of this world...."Ye are not of this world,'..."My kingdom is not of this world,'...the chief duty of the Christian is to avoid entangling alliance with worldly systems, and to devote himself to preparing for the kingdom of our Lord...." *Q850*

"If laws should be passed commanding...to vote...it would not mean a violation of the writer's [CTR] conscience to obey....although we prefer to have nothing to do with the electing the rulers of this world and would be unwilling to shed blood to maintain them in office....In this connection we should but follow the Lord's direction, 'If any man *compel* thee to go a mile, go with him twain.' Matt. 5:41.

"...in such an event it would be the duty of each to vote according to his *conscientious judgment....*" *R2052:6, 2053:1*

"...he who votes at an election is morally bound to sustain the government he has participated in making — even to the giving of his life in its defense. On the contrary, soldiers of the cross are not to battle with carnal weapons, but have consecrated their lives even unto death in the service of another kingdom...." *R1564:4*

MILITARY

"...those who enter the Army — they are required to swear allegiance to the king and obedience to the officers of the king in all things. This oath...is objected to by Bible Students...because they have already given allegiance to the higher power..." *R5928:3*

"Bible students are to remember that they are citizens of the heavenly kingdom and are not to specially insist upon their earthly rights, except such as might be reasonably expected by foreigners. Messiah's kingdom is not to be established by the sword of Bible students...." *R5929:3*

"...even if compelled to serve in the ranks and to fire our guns we need not feel compelled to shoot a fellow-creature." *F594*

"The Master's own example and words would seem to teach that although they may invoke every legal protection, barricade their homes, etc., against the enemy, such saints would not be disposed to take the lives of others — even in self-defense." *Q731*

"If they were ever drafted into the army they should go. If they could be sent to the Quartermaster's Department to take care of the food, that would be desirable, or into the hospital work. They should endeavor to get to such positions. They could not be expected to do service in the way of killing. If they were obliged to go on the firing line, they could shoot over the enemy's head." *CR477:2*

"Obedience to the laws of the land might at some time oblige us to bear arms, and in such event...it would not be our duty to volunteer. There could be nothing against our consciences in going into the army. If it came to the point of battling we above all others need have no fear of death, but we, assuredly, would be obliged to draw the line when commanded to fire, and we could not, in harmony with the divine program, fire upon a fellow-creature with the intention of taking his life." *R3179:6, 3180:1*

"Q: Would it be committing suicide to refuse military service, if by so doing one knew he would be court-martialed and shot?

"A: In my judgment, it would not be....Hence for us to say, 'Our King whom we serve has instructed us not to take life, and we cannot, therefore, engage in warfare, and if you think on that account we should be put to death, we are

willing to die,' would be a noble witness. We are willing to be such witnesses." *Q731*

"...we are not to have any liberty at all for military duty." *Q491*

"The brethren of the London Office...have sent out letters...advising...the regularly-elected elders of the class may properly claim exemption from military duty as ministers of the Gospel, and... that...they so report when called upon and that...classes, report the names of their elders." *R5929:5*

COURT

"The commands of the judge or court are to be obeyed....Christians are never to be found in contempt of court, but are to obey its rules to the very letter, whether they consider them just or unjust, because the judge is the representatives of the law, and God permits the law and the judge, and commands us to be subject to whatever he permits." *R3180:2*

"Serving on a jury is in no sense taking part in political affairs. A jury has nothing to do with politics. As far as judging is concerned, the Apostle Paul remarked that, since we are to be judges on the weighty affairs of the next age, we ought to be able to judge in the small matters of the present. When called to serve as a juror it becomes a duty to respond and one should ask to be excused only in a case of necessity." *R1531:4*

"We are not...objecting to solemn affirmations or legal oaths as required by law." *R5020:2*

MORAL REFORMS

"If, therefore, he is disposed to gluttony or drunkenness or filthy habits of any kind, it is for him to consider carefully and

prayerfully if in all things he is glorifying the Lord and using his influence to the largest extent possible before his fellowmen." *F595*

CLOTHING

"The New Creatures should not adorn their mortal bodies lavishly, extravagantly...(1)...leads to more or less of pride;...(2) The spirit of love...would prompt...not to provoke...to covetousness, envy, etc....(3) The pattern set is that of **sacrifice**...." *F596*

"To our understanding proper dressing is that which is neat, appropriate to the surroundings... and...unobtrusive to the eye and in reasonable accord with...financial means." *F598*

TABERNACLE TYPES AND SHADOWS

TYPES OF GOOD THINGS TO COME

"SHADOWS" — HEB. 12:1: "Wherefore seeing we also are compassed about with so great a cloud of witnesses, let us lay aside every weight, and the sin which doth so easily beset *us*, and let us run with patience the race that is set before us..."

COL. 2:16,17: "Let no man therefore judge you in meat, or in drink, or in respect of an holyday, or of the new moon, or of the sabbath *days*: Which are a shadow of things to come; but the body *is* of Christ."

"EXAMPLES" — HEB. 8:5: "Who serve unto the example and shadow of heavenly things, as Moses was admonished of God when he was about to make the tabernacle: for, See, saith he, *that* thou make all things according to the pattern showed to thee in the mount."

"TYPES" — 1 COR. 10:11: *Diag.* "But these things occurred to them typically, and were written for our Admonition, on whom the ENDS of the AGES have come."

"PATTERNS" — HEB. 9:22,23: "And almost all things are by the law purged with blood; and without shedding of blood is no remission. *It was* therefore necessary that the patterns of things in the heavens should be purified with these; but the heavenly things themselves with better sacrifices than these."

"COPIES" — HEB. 9:22,23: *R.V.* "Indeed, under the law almost everything is purified with blood, and without the shedding of blood there is no forgiveness of sins. Thus it was necessary for the copies of the heavenly things to be purified with these rites, but the heavenly things themselves with better sacrifices than these."

"FIGURES" — HEB. 9:24; 9:8,9: "For Christ is not entered into the holy places made with hands, *which are* the figures of the true; but into heaven itself, now to appear in the presence of God for us:....The Holy Ghost this signifying, that the way into the holiest of all was not yet made manifest, while as the first tabernacle was yet standing: Which *was* a figure for the time then present, in which were offered both gifts and sacrifices, that could not make him that did the service perfect, as pertaining to the conscience..."

"A type must not be used to teach a doctrine but merely to illustrate one that is already taught in plain terms." *Berean Topical Index Page 25*

OBJECT OF STUDYING THE TABERNACLE SHADOWS

"That we may be edified by understanding the substance from an examination of the shadow." *T12*

"THE CAMP"

"**The Camp** represented the **condition** of the world of mankind in sin, needing atonement and desiring it and its blessings...." *T18*

HEB. 11:12: "Therefore sprang there even of one, and him as good as dead, *so many* as the stars of the sky in multitude, and as the sand which is by the sea shore innumerable."

HEB. 2:9: "But we see Jesus, who was made a little lower than the angels for the suffering of death, crowned with glory and honour; that he by the grace of God should taste death for every man."

"THE COURT"

"**The court** represented the **condition** of Justification entered through faith in Christ, the 'gate.' In the 'Court' all things were of copper, to indicate that the class admitted were justified **men**." *T19*

ROM. 8:30: "...whom he called, them he also justified..."

"Whom he also (previously) justified (because he could not consistently call to honor and glory those who were under his own sentence of death as sinners....)" *R3282:1*

"THE HOLY"

"**The Holy** represented the present condition of those begotten of God through the word of truth." *T20*

JAS. 1:18: "Of his own will begat he us with the word of truth..."

"THE MOST HOLY"

"The '**Most Holy**' represented the perfected condition of those new creatures who, faithful unto death, gain the great prize of our high calling through a share in the first resurrection." *T21*

"THE VEILS"

The first veil represented the giving up of the human will, accepting the divine will and spirit begettal.

The second veil represented the giving up of the human body in death and the receiving of the divine body.

HEB. 6:19,20: "Which *hope* we have as an anchor of the soul, both sure and steadfast, and which entereth into that within the veil; Whither the forerunner is for us entered,

even Jesus, made an high priest for ever after the order of Melchisedec."

HEB. 9:24: "For Christ is not entered into the holy places made with hands, which are the figures of the true; but into heaven itself, now to appear in the presence of God for us..."

HEB. 10:19,20: "Having therefore, brethren, boldness to enter into the holiest by the blood of Jesus, By a new and living way, which he hath consecrated for us, through the veil, that is to say, his flesh..."

ISRAELITES, LEVITES, AND THE PRIESTHOOD

"Israel...typified **the whole world of mankind**." *T26*

1 JOHN 2:2: "And he is the propitiation for our sins: and not for ours only, but also for *the sins of* the whole world."

"The tribe of **Levites** typified the 'household of faith,' or all believers in Jesus and his ransom." *T26*

"The **Priesthood**, one body under one chief or High priest, was typical of the 'little flock,' who...with its [their] 'Head' or High Priest, is a royal Priesthood,...[who] after the present time of sacrificing, are to be **kings and priests** unto God, and to reign on the earth." *T26*

REV. 5:10: "And hast made us unto our God kings and priests: and we shall reign on the earth."

HEB. 3:1: "Wherefore, holy brethren, partakers of the heavenly calling, consider the Apostle and High Priest of our profession, Christ Jesus..."

"**The Aaronic priesthood** typified chiefly the humiliation and sufferings of Christ, less his future glory, — Melchisedec being the type of the Christ as a kingly or royal priesthood." *T26*

HEB. 6:20: "...Jesus, made an high priest for ever after the order of Melchisedec."

THE ANOINTING

"Under the law, the **anointing** was the ceremony by which the priests were installed in their office. They were anointed to office with a peculiar ointment, called the 'Holy Anointing Oil.'..." *T28*

ACTS 10:38: "How God anointed Jesus of Nazareth with the Holy Spirit and with power..."

1 JOHN 2:27: "But the anointing which ye have received of him abideth in you..."

THE GARMENTS

"After being washed, Aaron was clothed with the holy garments of 'glory and beauty' and lastly the anointing oil

was poured on his head. [They represented] qualities and powers of the Great Deliverer....The white linen 'coat' represented the High Priest's purity, while its embroidery showed the outgrowth of that pure character in works of grace." *T29*

EXOD. 28:39: "And thou shalt embroider the coat *of* fine linen, and thou shalt make the mitre of fine linen, and thou shalt make the girdle *of* needlework."

"The **mitre**, a strip of fine linen (typical of righteousness), worn around the forehead, to which the golden plate or 'crown,' was fastened with a blue lacer, showed that the crown was **righteously** his." *T29* [This mitre was an official turban.]

EXOD. 28:36-39: "And thou shalt make a plate *of* pure gold, and grave upon it, *like* the engravings of a signet, **HOLINESS TO THE LORD**. And thou shalt put it on a blue lace, that it may be upon the mitre; upon the forefront of the mitre it shall be. And it shall be upon Aaron's forehead, that Aaron may bear the iniquity of the holy things, which the children of Israel shall hallow in all their holy gifts; and it shall be always upon his forehead, that they may be accepted before the LORD. And thou shalt embroider the coat of fine linen, and thou shalt make the mitre *of* fine linen, and thou shalt make the girdle *of* needlework."

"The **Linen Girdle** indicated a righteous servant: linen — righteousness, girdle — servitude." *T30*

(Exod. 28:39) Needlework — blue, purple, etc., no golden threads. (Exod. 39:29).

"**The 'Upper Robe' of blue** represented his faithfulness. The fringe of it was made of golden bells and pomegranates." *T30*

EXOD. 39:24,25: "...pomegranates *of* blue, and purple and scarlet *and* twined *linen*....bells of pure gold."

Bells typified the proclamation of the rich fruit of Christ's sacrifice.

1 TIM. 2:5,6: "...to be testified in due time."

"The **Ephod** typified the **two great covenants** — the Abrahamic Covenant represented by the front part and the New Covenant represented by the back, both of which are thus shown to be **dependent** on our High Priest." *T30*

ISA. 9:6: "...the government shall be upon his shoulder...."

"The '**Curious Girdle**' seems to say....this one is 'the Messenger of the Covenant;' whom ye delight in...(Mal. 3:1)." *T33*

"**The Breastplate of Judgment**...This **breastplate** beautifully represented **the Law**." *T34*

THE UNDERPRIESTS

"...the **Body**, or members of the High Priest, again individually typified by the **under-priests**, who each wore a bonnet,....God gave Jesus 'to be the **Head** over all things to the church, which is his body.'...(Eph. 1:22,23)" *T36*

THE ANOINTING

"As Aaron had the **holy oil** poured upon his head, so our Head, the Lord Jesus, was **anointed** with the antitypical oil — the Holy spirit — ...at the time of his consecration." *T37*

PSA. 45:7: "...God, hath anointed thee with the oil of gladness above thy fellows."

"A **measure of the spirit** is given to every member who thus consecrates; but Jehovah gave 'not the Spirit by measure *unto Him* .' (John 3:34)." *T37*

"We thus see that Aaron, **robed and anointed**, represented the entire Christ — the complete Seed of Abraham, in which God is about to bless all the families of the earth." *T38*

CONSECRATING THE PRIESTHOOD

See LEV. 8:14-33

"The consecration of the Priesthood was typical of the consecration of the human nature of the Lord Jesus and His Body, the church, to the will of Jehovah — the obedience of Jesus even unto death, and the obedience of the members of his Body, suffering for righteousness' sake 'even unto death' with him....[They are] **consecrated**, [that is, adequately trained,] by the antitypical sacrifices being made during the Gospel Age....for their future work as kings and priests, to restore and rule over and bless mankind." *T39*

"**Aaron's four sons** at first represented the under priesthood, but two of these were destroyed [typically] — corresponding to the... Second Death [Class and the Great company Class.]" *T40*

"The **typical consecration service**...shows the two parts of the consecration — our part in surrendering the human nature and its rights and God's part in accepting our sacrifice, and setting us apart and recognizing us as new creatures. The **new** spiritual nature was represented in Aaron and his sons; the earthly nature sacrificed was represented in the bullock and the rams offered on the altar." *T41*

"The **bullock** for the sin-offering was brought 'and Aaron and his sons laid their hands upon the head' of it, thus saying, This sacrifice represents us. From that moment, all that happened to the bullock represented what was to be

done to Jesus and to his body, the church, as human beings." *T41*

"The **ram for the burnt offering** — Aaron and his sons laid their hands upon its head, thus indicating that it represented them." *T42*
"The burning of the offering on the altar shows how God accepts the sacrifice as 'a sweet smelling savor.'" *T45*

"The...**ram of consecration** showed what effect the sacrifice will have upon us, as the first showed how God receives our sacrifice." *T45*

ATONEMENT DAY SACRIFICES

"The **great Day of Atonement**" —

See LEV. 16:3-33

"The Day of Atonement as a type should be considered as separate from and yet a part of and related to other Tabernacle types." *T49*

THE FIRST ATONEMENT DAY SACRIFICE — THE BULLOCK

"The bullock represented Jesus at the age of thirty years — the **perfect man**, who gave himself and died on our behalf. The High Priest....represented the 'new' nature of Jesus, the anointed Head and all the members of his Body, foreknown to God." *T51*

"The Bullock was **slain in the 'Court,'** which we have seen typified the condition of faith in harmony with God, the highest attainment of the flesh, the human nature. Jesus was in this condition, a perfect man..." *T54*

"When the man Christ Jesus...consecrated himself, he immediately, as the new creature, begotten by the Holy Spirit, took the sacrificed human life (**blood of the bullock**) to present it before God as the ransom price, '...for our sins and not for ours only, but also for the sins of the whole world.' (1 John 2:2)" *T56*

THE SECOND ATONEMENT DAY SACRIFICE — THE LORD'S GOAT (T59)

"Every **believer**, every **justified** one (Levite) in the 'Court,' who presents himself during the Atonement Day, the Gospel age, is acceptable as a sacrifice — Now is the acceptable time. And he who keeps his covenant and performs the sacrifice is typically represented in the '**Lord's goat**.' Those who do not yield themselves willing sacrificers, 'loving the present world,' are represented in the 'scape goat.'" *T61*

THE CHURCH SHARES

Scriptures which show that the **Church has a share in the Sin Offering**:

l. — **HEB. 13:11-13**: "For the bodies of those beasts, whose blood is brought into the sanctuary by the high priest for sin, are burned without the camp. Wherefore Jesus also, that he might sanctify the people with his own blood, suffered without the gate. Let us go forth therefore unto him without the camp, bearing his reproach."

2. — **HEB. 10:19,20**: "Having therefore, brethren, boldness to enter into the holiest by the blood of Jesus, By a new and living way, which he hath consecrated for us, through the veil, that is to say, his flesh..."

3. — **HEB. 6:19,20**: "Which *hope* we have as an anchor of the soul, both sure and steadfast, and which entereth into that within the veil; Whither the forerunner is for us entered, even Jesus, made an high priest for ever after the order of Melchisedec."

4. — **ROM. 6:10,11**: "For in that he died, he died unto sin once: but in that he liveth, he liveth unto God. Likewise reckon ye also yourselves to be dead indeed unto sin, [**by sin**, *Diag*. — **for a sin offering**] but alive unto God through Jesus Christ our Lord."

5. — **1 COR. 10:16,17**: "The cup of blessing which we bless, is it not the communion of the blood of Christ? The bread which we break, is it not the communion of the body of Christ? For we *being* many are one bread, [*Diag*. **loaf**] *and* one body: for we are all partakers of that one bread."

6. — **MATT. 20:22**: "But Jesus answered and said, Ye know not

what ye ask. Are ye able to drink of the cup that I shall drink of, and to be baptized with the baptism that I am baptized with? They say unto him, We are able."

7. — **ROM. 6:3**: "Know ye not, that so many of us as were baptized into Jesus Christ were baptized into his death?"

8. — **MATT. 26:26-28**: "And as they were eating, Jesus took bread, and blessed *it*, and brake *it*, and gave *it* to the disciples, and said, Take, eat; this is my body. And he took the cup, and gave thanks, and gave *it* to them, saying, Drink ye all of it; For this is my blood of the new testament, which is shed for many for the remission of sins."

9. — **1 COR. 15:29**: "Else what shall they do which are baptized for the dead, if the dead rise not at all? why are they then baptized for the dead?"

10. — **COL. 1:24**: "Who now rejoice in my sufferings for you, and fill up that which is behind of the afflictions of Christ in my flesh for his body's sake, which is the church..."

11. — **HEB. 9:23**: "*It was* therefore necessary that the patterns of things in the heavens should be purified with these; but the heavenly things themselves with better sacrifices than these."

"[Aaron's] work was to present the **blood of the bullock** (Lev. 16:14) — the price of our redemption — to God on man's behalf — for ye were redeemed...with the precious blood (sacrificed life) of Christ. (1 Pet. 1:19)" *T59*

LEV. 16:14: "And he shall take of the blood of the bullock, and sprinkle *it* with his finger upon the mercy seat eastward; and before the mercy seat shall he sprinkle of the blood with his finger seven times."

1 PET. 1:19: "But with the precious blood of Christ, as of a lamb without blemish and without spot..."

"Thus were completed the sin offerings for the sins of Israel — the **bullock for the underpriests**, the High Priest's 'body,' and for the Levites the 'household of faith' of the present age, and the **goat [was the sin offering] 'for the people,' Israel** — a type of all the world who, under the knowledge and opportunities of the future age will become God's people." *T63*

THE BURNT OFFERING

"THE ATONEMENT DAY BURNT OFFERINGS" ***T72***

"As the sin offerings illustrated the sacrificial death of the Redeemer so the **burnt offering** following, illustrated God's manifested acceptance of the **same** sacrifice. Let us not forget that God thus indicates that he will not **manifest his acceptance** of the 'better sacrifices' than bulls and goats, until the sacrifices for sins are complete and the true High Priest is robed in the honor and glory of his office, represented in the change of garments." *T73*

"ANOTHER TYPE OF THE ATONEMENT SACRIFICES — LEVITICUS 9" T79

"The record of the ninth chapter relates to the consecration of the priests. The service there pictured represents the consecration of Aaron, and was to be repeated only when a high priest should die and his successor in the office should be inaugurated.

"And Moses said unto Aaron, Go unto the altar and offer thy sin offering and burnt offering and make an atonement for thyself [those to be called to be members of his body required it] and for the people [the world]." *R5391*

JESUS' MERIT SUFFICIENT

"This type illustrated the fact that our Lord Jesus (**the bullock sacrificed for sins**) was sufficient to redeem both 'His body'...and also the whole world of mankind." *T79*

"Thus the **burnt offering** of Jesus has been burning all through the Gospel age, giving evidence to all in the 'Court' **condition** (the justified) of God's acceptance of him and the acceptance of all the members of 'his Body' — laid to the Head on the altar." *T81*

PEACE OFFERINGS

"He slew also the bullock and the ram for a sacrifice of peace offerings which was for the people." *T81*

"But as our sin sacrifices are better than the typical ones, so with the peace offering or covenant established by these sacrifices; it is a better covenant,...(Heb. 8:6-13) under which all the people shall be blessed with restitution...." *T82*

HEB. 8:6-13: "But now hath he obtained a more excellent ministry, by how much also he is the mediator of a better covenant, which was established upon better promises. For if that first *covenant* had been faultless, then should no place have been sought for the second. For finding fault with them, he saith, Behold, the days come, saith the Lord, when I will make a new covenant with the house of Israel and with the house of Judah: Not according to the covenant that I made with their fathers in the day when I took them by the hand to lead them out of the land of Egypt; because they continued not in my covenant, and I regarded them not, saith the Lord. For this *is* the covenant that I will make with the house of Israel after those days, saith the Lord; I will put my laws into their mind, and write them in their hearts: and I will be to them a God, and they shall be to me a people: And they shall not teach every man his neighbour, and every man his brother, saying, Know the Lord: for all shall know me, from the least to the greatest. For I will be merciful to their unrighteousness, and their sins and their iniquities will I remember no more. In that he saith, A new *covenant*, he hath made the first old. Now that which decayeth and waxeth old *is* ready to vanish away."

THE BLESSING

"And Moses and Aaron went into the tabernacle of the congregation and came out and blessed the people." *T82*

"Moses and Aaron came out and together blessed the people. So in the incoming age, the Christ will bless all the families of the earth (Gal. 3:8,16,29); yet not by...ignoring the Law of God, and excusing sin, but by gradually restoring man to human perfection, in which condition he will be able to keep the perfect law of God and be blessed by it." *T83*

GAL. 3:8,16,29: "And the scripture, foreseeing that God would justify the heathen through faith, preached before

the gospel unto Abraham, *saying*, In thee shall all nations be blessed. Now to Abraham and his seed were the promises made. He saith not, And to seeds, as of many; but as of one, And to thy seed, which is Christ. And if ye *be* Christ's, then are ye Abraham's seed, and heirs according to the promise."

THE GLORY REVEALED

"And the glory of the Lord appeared unto all the people....The people — the world in general — will recognize God's gracious love more and more...." *T83*

"SACRIFICES SUBSEQUENT TO THE DAY OF ATONEMENT"

"The sacrifices offered by the people (Israel — the world) on their own individual account, after the Day of Atonement sacrifices, typified by the general offerings of Israel, belong to the next age, and will then be presented to the glorified royal priesthood." *T93*

"The Atonement Day sacrifices represented the cancellation of Adamic sin by the sacrifice of the Christ, but during the Millennium, while the benefits of the atonement are being applied to the world, while they are being gradually resorted to actual perfection and life and harmony with God, errors will be committed for which they will be in some measure responsible. For such they must make amends, accompanied by repentance, before they can be again in harmony with God through Christ, their Mediator." *T94*

"Consecration will be in order in the next age...it will be unto life....Consecration must always be a voluntary presentation of one's powers..." *T94*

"THE PEOPLE'S BURNT OFFERINGS"

"The burnt offerings of the priests were to be kept up continually on the altar, and the fire never suffered to die out. (Exod. 29:38-42)" *T97*

EXOD. 29:38-42: "Now this *is that* which thou shalt offer upon the altar; two lambs of the first year day by day continually. The one lamb thou shalt offer in the morning; and the other lamb thou shalt offer at even: And with the one lamb a tenth deal of flour mingled with the fourth part of an hin of beaten oil; and the fourth part of an hin of wine *for* a drink offering. And the other lamb thou shalt offer at even, and shalt do thereto according to the meat offering of the morning, and according to the drink offering thereof, for a sweet savour, an offering made by fire unto the LORD. *This shall be* a continual burnt offering throughout your generations at the door of the tabernacle of the congregation before the LORD: where I will meet you, to speak there unto thee."

"Thus was represented to the mind of each offerer the fact that the altar was already sanctified or set apart, and that their offerings would be acceptable because of God's acceptance of the Atonement Day sacrifices." *T97*

The burnt offerings of the Israelites as individuals — **LEV. 1:3-9**: "If his offering *be* a burnt sacrifice of the herd, let him offer a male without blemish: he shall offer it of his own voluntary will at the door of the tabernacle of the congregation before the LORD. And he shall put his hand upon the head of the burnt offering; and it shall be accepted for him to make atonement for him. And he shall kill the bullock before the LORD: and the priests, Aaron's sons, shall bring the blood, and sprinkle the blood round about upon the altar that *is* by the door of the tabernacle of the congregation. And he shall flay the burnt offering, and cut it into his pieces. And the sons of Aaron the priest shall put fire upon the altar, and lay the wood in order upon the fire: And the priests, Aaron's sons, shall lay the parts, the head, and the fat, in order upon the wood that *is* on the fire which *is* upon the altar: But his inwards and his legs shall he wash in water: and the priest shall burn all on the altar, *to be* a burnt sacrifice, an offering made by fire, of a sweet savour unto the LORD."

"To this altar, the Israelite brought his free will offering....This would serve to typify a thankful prayer to Jehovah — an acknowledgment of his mercy, wisdom and love, as manifested in the broken body of the Christ — their ransom [sin-offering (editors note)]." *T97*

"THE PEOPLE'S PEACE OFFERINGS"

"This offering was to be of the herd or flock; and it could be made either in fulfillment of a vow (covenant), or as a willing 'thank offering.'" *T98*

"THE PEOPLE'S MEAT OFFERINGS"

"These were accepted by the priests. They probably represented praises and worship offered to the Lord by the world, through his church." *T98*

"THE PEOPLE'S TRESPASS OR SIN OFFERINGS"

"If a soul (being) commit a trespass and sin through ignorance in the holy things of the Lord...if he sin and commit any of these things which are forbidden to be done by the commandments of the Lord, though he wist it not, yet is he guilty, and shall bear his iniquity. And he shall bring a ram without blemish out of the flock, and money according to the priest's estimation of the trespass with a fifth more and this shall be his offering. And the Priest shall make an atonement for him....This teaches that for

every wrong restoration must then be made, with interest, and accompanied with repentance." *T99*

"THE ASHES OF A HEIFER SPRINKLING THE UNCLEAN"

The **Red Heifer** represents the Ancient Worthies. See *T106, 107*

"But while these Ancient Worthies are not in any sense part of the sin offering, they are nevertheless connected with the **cleansing from sin**: their ashes (the knowledge and remembrance of their faithfulness unto death) mingled with the water of truth, and applied with the purgative, cleansing hyssop, is valuable, purifying, sanctifying all who desire to come into full harmony with God, — and 'sprinkling the unclean, sanctifieth to the purification of the flesh.' Not however, of themselves would these lessons of faithfulness in the past be valuable to us, but only by, through and associated with the sin offerings of the Day of Atonement, to which the Apostle refers in the same connection — 'the blood of bulls and goats.' And not only are the remembrance and the lessons of faithfulness of the ancient worthies (typified by the **ashes** of the red heifer) of sanctifying power to us now, but in a much larger sense they will be applicable and a blessing to the world of mankind in general during the Millennial age." *T108, 109*

"OTHER SIGNIFICANT TYPES" T113

COURT POSTS — Justified Believers

WHITE CURTAINS — Justification

SILVER HOOKS — The aid of the Truth in connection with justification.

DOOR POSTS OF THE HOLY — Wood overlaid with gold set in copper sockets — New Creatures with justified human bodies.

DOOR POSTS IN MOST HOLY — Wood overlaid with Gold in sockets of silver. Really and truly new creatures with divine bodies. *T113*

THE GOLDEN TABLE — In the Holy bearing the shewbread and representing the church as a whole, "holding forth the word of

life" Phil 2:16 *T115*

THE GOLDEN CANDLESTICK — or lampstand gave light to all in the Holy. Was made of gold — all one piece hammered out. It represented the complete church. *T115*

ANTITYPICAL PRIESTS VERSUS ANTITYPICAL LEVITES — The former can see the deeper spiritual truths of the Bible and have made a full covenant of sacrifice to be baptized into Christ's death. *T117*

"THE GOLDEN ALTAR IN THE HOLY...represents the Little Flock, the consecrated Church in the present sacrificing condition. From this altar ascends the sweet incense, acceptable to God by Jesus Christ — the willing services of the priests: their praises, their willing obedience — all things whatsoever they do to the glory of God." *T120*

"THE ARK OF THE COVENANT was the only article of furniture in the Most Holy. Its name suggests that it illustrated the embodiment of Jehovah's plan. It represented the eternal purpose of God — his foreordained arrangement of riches of grace for mankind in the Christ (Head and Body) the hidden mystery. It therefore represents Christ Jesus and his bride, the little flock to be partakers of the divine nature and to be imbued with power and great glory — the prize of our high calling." *T121*

"AARON'S ROD THAT BUDDED" [IN THE ARK OF THE COVENANT] **— NUM. 17:8**: "And it came to pass, that on the morrow Moses went into the tabernacle of witness; and, behold, the rod of Aaron for the house of Levi was budded, and brought forth buds, and bloomed blossoms, and yielded almonds."

"...the meaning of the budded rod will be seen to be Jehovah's acceptance of Aaron and his sons — the typical priesthood, representatives of Christ and the Church, — as the only ones who might perform the priest's office of mediator. That rod, therefore, represented the acceptableness of the 'Royal Priesthood' — The Christ, Head and Body." *T122*

"THE GOLDEN POT OF MANNA" [IN THE ARK OF THE COVENANT] — EXOD. 16:32: "And Moses said, This *is* the thing which the LORD commandeth, Fill an omer of it to be kept for your generations; that they may see the bread wherewith I have fed you in the wilderness, when I brought you forth from the land of Egypt."

"...represented immortality as being one of the possessions of the Christ of God. 'To him that overcometh will I give to eat the **hidden manna**.'" *T122*

REV. 2:17: "He that hath an ear, let him hear what the Spirit saith unto the churches; To him that overcometh will I give to eat of the hidden manna, and will give him a white stone, and in the stone a new name written, which no man knoweth saving he that receiveth *it*."

"THE TABLES OF THE LAW" [IN THE ARK OF THE COVENANT] — DEUT: 31:26: "Take this book of the law, and put it in the side of the ark of the covenant of the LORD your God, that it may be there for a witness against thee."

"...showed how the Christ would meet...all the requirements of God's perfect Law and also that legal authority would be vested in him as the Law-executor." *T121*

"THE MERCY SEAT" — a slab of solid gold, on the two ends of which and of the same...metal, were formed **two cherubim**, with wings uplifted as if ready to fly, their faces looking inward toward the center of the plate on which they stood. Between the cherubim, on the 'Mercy Seat,' **a bright light represented Jehovah's presence**.

"As the Ark represented the Christ, so the 'Mercy Seat,' (justice), the Glory Light (wisdom) and the two cherubim (love and power)...represented Jehovah God." *T123, 124*

"THE PRIEST UNBLEMISHED" — "This teaches that every member of the body of Christ glorified will be complete — lacking nothing; and also that there will be in that 'little flock' neither one too many nor one too few, but exactly the foreknown and the foreordained number." *T127*

THE THREE FIRES OF LEVITICUS 16 (T55, 59, 62)

I — MATERIAL BURNED — HIS SACRIFICE OF PERFECT MANHOOD

1. Sweet incense — powdered — 2 hands full (full cap. of perf. man) 2. Fat and life producing organs — brazen altar 3. Skin, flesh and dung — outside the camp

II —KINDS OF ODORS — APPRECIATION

l. olden altar in Holy — Cloud of incense — sweet perfume 2. Brazen altar in Court — Cloud of smoke — sweet savor to God 3. Outside of camp — cloud of smoke — A STENCH

III — DIFFERENT CLASSES

1. Brethren — Most Holy (Divine family) Holy (Fellow Saints) 2. Approaching justification — household of faith (Believers) Court 3. Blinded by Satan — unbelieving world of mankind outside camp

IV — SOURCES OF FIRES — THE SAME TRIALS AS THEY APPEAR TO:

1. FULL APPRECIATION — Divine family in Most Holy and Saints result of belief in ransom, doing God's will 2. SOME APPRECIATION — Unconsecrated believers — result of redeeming world 3. NO APPRECIATION — Unbelieving world — result of misguided zeal and foolishness

V — BURNING DEVICES

1. Fire from brazen altar — Censer placed on incense altar — Holy 2. Brazen altar — A furnace altar well equipped with draft — Court 3. Just plain ground — outside the camp

SACRIFICING OF ANIMALS WERE TYPES

Chapter 3 — Consecrating the Priesthood — Leviticus 8

SO = Sin Offering — Bullock **BO** = Burnt Offering — Ram **WO** = Wave Offering — Rump, kidneys, etc. **(Gospel Age) CO** = Consecration — Ram **JU** = Justification — Unleavened cakes **SA** = Sanctification — Oiled cakes **GL** = Glorification — Wafer **Chapter 4 — Great Atonement Day — Leviticus 16**

SO = Sin Offering — Bullock **SO** = Sin Offering — Lord's goat **(Gospel Age and INIQ** = Iniquities of Israel — Scapegoat **part of Mill. age) BO** = Burnt Offering — 2 rams **Chapter 5 — Another type of Atonement — Leviticus 9**

SO = Sin Offering — Bullock — Lev. 9:2 **BO** = Burnt Offering — Ram — Lev. 9:2 **(Gospel age and SO** = Sin Offering — Goat — Lev. 9:3 **development of church) BO** = Burnt Offering — Calf — (bullock) and Ram (lamb) Lev. 9:3 **MO** = Meal (Meat) Offering — flour — Lev. 9:4 **PO** = Peace Offering — Calf (Bullock) and ram (lamb) Lev. 9:4 **Chapter 6 — Subsequent Sacrifices —**

Note: These typify the millenium age. **BO** = Burnt Offering — an

animal **PO** = Peace Offering — an animal **MO** = Meal (Meat) Offering — flour Unleavened cakes with oil Ram Money and 20%

COMPARATIVE STUDY OF TABERNACLE SHADOWS. LEVITICUS CHAPTERS 8, 9, 16

No. Item for Comparison Chapter 8 Chapter 9 Chapter 16

1 When Offered Consecration of High Priest
Consecration of High Priest
Annually

2 Animals Furnished by Aaron 1 Bullock 1 Ram 1 Bullock 1 Ram
Animals Furnished by Moses 1 Bullock 2 Rams
Animals Furnished by People 2 Bullocks 2 Rams 1 Goat
2 Goats 1 Ram
Total Animals 3 7 5

3 Aaron Washed By Moses Self (Aaron)

4 Aaron's Sons Washed By Moses

5 Garments Worn Glorious Sacrificial Sacrificial

6 Anointing of High Priest By Moses

7 First Sin Offering Bullock Bullock Bullock

a. Incense Burnt In Holy

b. Blood Applied On Brazen Altar & Ground
Brazen Altar & Ground
7 Times On & Before Mercy Seat

c. Fat & Organs Burnt On Brazen Altar Brazen Altar Brazen Altar

d. Hide, Flesh & Refuse Burnt Outside Camp Outside Camp Outside Camp

e. Simultaneous Fires 2 2 3

8 First Burnt Offering (Note 1) Ram Ram Ram

a. Blood Sprinkled On Brazen Altar Brazen Altar Brazen Altar

No. Item for Comparison Chapter 8 Chapter 9 Chapter 16

b. Inward & Legs Washed & Laid
To Head To Head To Head

c. Other Pieces Laid with Above & All
Burnt Burnt Burnt

9 Casting of lots on Goats by Aaron

10 Second Sin Offering Goat Goat

a. Incense Still Burning In Holy — see 7a

b. Blood Applied On Brazen Altar & Ground
7 Times on & before Mercy Seat

c. Fat & Organs Burnt On Brazen Altar Outside Camp

d. Hide, Flesh & Refuse Burnt Outside Camp Outside Camp

e. Simultaneous Fires 2 3

11 Atonement for Holies & Brazen Altar by
Aaron

No. Item for Comparison Chapter 8 Chapter 9 Chapter 16

12 Scape Goat Laden with Sin Sent To
Wilderness

13 Garments Changed & Person Washed By (Note 1)
Self (Aaron)

14 Second Burnt Offering Bullock & Ram
Ram

a. Blood Sprinkled On Brazen Altar Brazen Altar

b. Inwards & Legs Washed & Laid To
Head Head

c. Other Pieces Laid with Above & All
Burnt Burnt

15 Meal Offering Burnt With Oil

16 Peace Offering Bullock & Ram

a. Blood Sprinkled On Brazen Altar

b. Fat, Organs & Rump Burnt

c. Breast & Right Shoulder Waved By
Aaron

17 Ram of Consecration Slain By Moses

a. Blood Applied On Brazen Altar

b. Blood Applied on Rt. Ear, Thumb & Toe of
Aaron & Sons

c. Fat, Organs, Rump & Right Shoulder With 3 Cakes Waved By Aaron & Sons

d. Breast Waved By Moses

e. Waved Parts Burnt On Brazen Altar

f. Sprinkling of Mingled Blood & Oil On
Aaron & Sons

g. Eating of Boiled Flesh Left From Sacrifice
Aaron & Sons

h. Flesh Not Eaten Burnt

No. Item for Comparison Chapter 8 Chapter 9 Chapter 16

18 First Blessing of People by Aaron (1 hand)

19 Moses & Aaron Enter Tabernacle

20 Second Blessing of People by (Note 2)
Moses & Aaron

21 Fire From Lord Consumes Burnt Offering

22 People See, Fall on Faces And Shout

Additional Noted and Items

23 Who Offered Sacrifices Moses Aaron Aaron

24 Hands Laid on Heads of Animals By
Aaron & Sons

Note 1: In Leviticus 16, No. 8 was offered after No. 13.

Note 2: Glory of the Lord did not appear unto all the people and they did not shout and fall upon their faces until after the second blessing was given (two handed blessing).

THREE SOURCES OF TEMPTATIONS

OUR LORD AND THE NEW CREATION

HEB. 4:15: "For we have not an high priest which cannot be touched with the feeling of our infirmities; but was in all points tempted like as *we are, yet* without sin."

"...this is not that our Lord was tempted...like as the world...but like as...his followers...not...along the lines of depraved appetites...but being, holy, harmless, undefiled and separate from sinners, he was tempted...as his followers...who walk not after the flesh but after the spirit; and who are judged not according to the infirmities of their flesh, but...according to their new wills...Rom. 8:4; 2 Cor. 5:16; John 8:15." *E110*

THE FLESH

MATT: 4:3,4: "...the tempter...said, If thou be the Son of God, command that these stones be made bread. But he answered and said, It is written, Man shall not live by bread alone, but by every word that proceedeth out of the mouth of God."

DEUT. 8:3: "And he humbled thee, and suffered thee to hunger, and fed thee with manna, which thou knewest not, neither did thy fathers know; that he might make thee know that man doth not live by bread only, but by every *word* that proceedeth out of the mouth of the LORD doth man live."

"(1) The first was Satan's suggestion that he use the divine power...in ministering to his own wants....Our Lord had been forty days without food....the suggestion...would...seem reasonable; but our Lord at once discerned that such a use of his spiritual gift would be...a misuse...for which it was not intended, and hence he rejected the suggestion, saying, 'It is written, Man shall not live by bread alone, but by every word that proceedeth out of the mouth of God.' The Lord's 'brethren' sometimes have similar temptations...to use spiritual gifts for the furtherance of temporal interests. Suggestions of this kind are insidious,...channels through which God's consecrated people not infrequently are led astray...to greater and greater misuse of divine blessings." *E110*

THE WORLD

MATT. 4:5-7: "Then the devil taketh him up into the holy city, and setteth him on a pinnacle of the temple, And saith unto him, If thou be the Son of God, cast thyself down: for it is written, He shall give his angels charge concerning thee: and in *their* hands they shall bear thee up, lest at any time

thou dash thy foot against a stone. Jesus said unto him, It is written again, Thou shalt not tempt the Lord thy God." Cf. Deut. 6:16

PSA. 91:11,12: "For he shall give his angels charge over thee, to keep thee in all thy ways. They shall bear thee up in *their* hands, lest thou dash thy foot against a stone."

"(2) The Adversary suggested...that he leap from a pinnacle of the temple...in the sight of the multitude; so that their seeing him survive uninjured would be proof...of his superhuman power, which would lead them at once to accept him as the Messiah, and to cooperate with him....But our Lord saw...that such methods were wholly out of harmony with the divine arrangement, and even the misapplication of a Scripture by the Adversary (**apparently** in favor of the wrong) did not swerve him....He... replied...that such a procedure...would be a tempting of divine providence, wholly unwarranted, and hence not to be considered.... Where duty called or danger the Master did not hesitate, but realized the Father's ability to keep every interest; but true confidence in God does not involve a reckless exposure to danger, without divine command, and merely for a show....

"The Lord's brethren have temptations along this line also, and need to remember this lesson and example set before them by the Captain of our Salvation. We are not to rush unbidden into dangers, and esteem ourselves thus valiant soldiers of the cross. 'Daredevil deeds'...are wholly improper in the children of God. The latter have a warfare which requires still greater courage...which the world does not applaud, nor even appreciate, but often persecutes....to endure ignominy, and the scoffs of the world; yea, and to have the uncircumcised of heart 'say all manner of evil' against them falsely for Christ's sake. In this...the followers of the Captain of our Salvation...walk in the footsteps of their Captain. And it requires greater courage to ignore the shame and ignominy of the world...than to perform some...wonderful feat, that would cause...man to wonder....

"One of the chief battles of those who walk this narrow way is against self-will; to bring their wills into fullest subjection to the Heavenly Father's will, and to keep them there; to rule their own hearts, crushing out the rising ambitions...presenting their bodies and all earthly interests living sacrifices in the service of the Lord and his cause....'Greater is he that ruleth his own spirit...than he that taketh a city:'...than he who, with a false...faith, would leap from the pinnacle of a temple, or do some other foolhardy thing. True faith..., consists not in blind credulity...respecting...providential care: it consists...of...confidence in all the...promises which God has made,...which enables the faithful to resist the...world, the

flesh and the devil...and which follows...the lines...marked out...in the divine Word." *E111, 112*

THE DEVIL

MATT. 4:8-10: "Again, the devil taketh him up into an exceeding high mountain, and showeth him all the kingdoms of the world, and the glory of them; And saith unto him, All these things will I give thee, if thou wilt fall down and worship me. Then saith Jesus unto him, Get thee hence, Satan: for it is written, Thou shalt worship the Lord thy God, and him only shalt thou serve."

"(3) The third temptation...was to offer earthly dominion and speedy success in the establishment of his kingdom, without suffering and death, without the cross, upon condition of a compromise with the Adversary. The Adversary claimed, and his claim was not disputed, that he held control of the world, and that by his cooperation the Kingdom of Righteousness...could be quickly established. Satan's intimation was that he had become weary of leading the world into sin, blindness, superstition, ignorance, and that he...had a sympathy with our Lord's mission,...to help the...race. What he wanted to retain...was a...controlling influence...and hence...the price of his cooperation with the Lord Jesus...turning the world over to a righteous course...was, that the latter should recognize him...as the ruler of the world, in its reconstructed condition....

"...Satan's rebellion...was instigated by ambition. ...(Isa.

14:14)...this was the primary motive of his...attack...in Eden....We can...suppose that he would prefer...happier subjects...possessed of everlasting life. It would appear that...he does not recognize...that everlasting life and true happiness are impossible except in harmony with Divine law....” *E112, 113*

“The peculiar temptation...was, that it seemed... a new solution of...the recovery of man...And... a partial repentance on the part of Satan....

“Our Lord Jesus...had...confidence that the Father’s wisdom had adopted the best...plan.

“Here...we see one of the special besetments of the Adversary against the Lord’s ‘brethren.’ He succeeded in tempting the nominal Church...to abandon the way of the cross, the narrow way of separateness from the world, and to enter into a league with the civil power, and thus...to become influential in the world’s politics. By cooperation with the princes of this world,...she sought to establish the reign of Christ... through...a pope....this counterfeit Kingdom... became really a kingdom of the devil....

“...the Adversary...presented the same temptation before the Reformers, and...they resisted it only in part...the

combination of the Church and the world...in Protestantism...is... injurious...the...conflict of the ‘brethren’ is to stand fast in the liberty wherewith Christ has made us free — not of the world, but separate....” *E114*

“...in slightly modified form from time to time...the great Adversary...attempts...to present himself as a leader along the lines of reform...appearing...in...sympathy with...blessing the world...’social uplift.’...He suggests now, that...the whole matter may be...quickly accomplished, and the world...lifted up...in **social** and **political** movements... no longer... individual conversion...salvation... and... consecration...his proposition is a social uplift, which shall ignore individual...sins...and make society outwardly ‘clean.’ He would have us disregard the Lord’s teaching,...that only those who come unto the Father through him are... ‘brethren:’ instead...that God is the Father of all...that none are ‘children of wrath’...of their ‘father, the devil.’ He would...have us...deny **man’s fall**...and deny the **ransom**....” *E115*

“...the ‘brethren’...have faith in the...divine plan of the ages...and know...that the work of the present age is the selection of the ‘brethren’ of Christ, and their testing, and finally their glorification with the Lord...to bless the world....” *E116*

“Those who have become his ‘brethren’...have lost the disposition...to do injury....

“And though there remains in the flesh of these ‘new creatures’...a weakness of heredity...these unintentional weaknesses are not counted unto them...as the acts of the ‘new creature.’...It is the ‘new creature’...that is being tried...and not the...flesh...” *E117*

See also Index: **Babylon; Churchianity**

THREE WAYS

MATT. 7:13,14, *Diag.*: “...wide is the GATE of DESTRUCTION, and broad THAT WAY LEADING thither; and MANY are they who enter through it. How narrow is the GATE of LIFE! how difficult THAT WAY LEADING thither! and how FEW are they who FIND it.”

ISA. 35:8,9: “And an highway shall be there, and a way, and it shall be called The way of holiness; the unclean shall not pass over it; but it *shall be* for those: the wayfaring men, though fools, shall not err *therein.* No lion shall be there, nor *any* ravenous beast shall go up thereon, it shall not be found there; but the redeemed shall walk there...”

“Three ways, the ‘broad road,’ the ‘narrow way’ and the ‘highway,’ are thus brought to our attention in the Scriptures.” *A205*

THE BROAD ROAD TO DESTRUCTION

“...is most easy to the degenerate human race.... condemned to destruction....As years...have rolled on, the downward path has become more and more smoothly worn, and the race has sped more and more rapidly to destruction...not only does the way grow more slippery, but mankind daily loses the power of resistance....” *A205*

“...not until the Gospel age was a way of escape brought to light.” *A206*

2 TIM. 1:10: “...our Saviour Jesus Christ,...hath abolished death, and hath brought life and immortality to light through the gospel...”

MANKIND IN GENERAL DOES NOT HEED

“...the great mass of mankind heeds not the good tidings, because depraved by sin and blinded by the Adversary.” *A206*

See also Index: **Creation and Fall**

THE NARROW WAY

“...a new way which has been opened up....our Lord called, ‘the narrow way to life.’” *A206*

See Matt. 7:13,14 quoted from *Diaglott* at beginning of this topic.

THE REWARD

“Life is a broad...term, but here our Lord uses it in reference to that highest form of life,...the divine nature — immortality....” *A207*

FEW OBTAIN IT

“...not all,...who are nominally of the Church...but only that ‘little flock’ of overcomers who so run as to obtain it; who follow closely in the Master’s footsteps; who, like him, walk the narrow way of sacrifice, even unto death....” *A211*

LIKE HIM

1 JOHN 3:2: “Beloved, now are we the sons of God, and it doth not yet appear what we shall be: but we know that, when he shall appear, we shall be like him; for we shall see him as he is.”

THE GLORY TO FOLLOW

COL. 1:27: “...God would make known what *is* the riches of the glory of this mystery among the Gentiles; which is Christ in you, the hope of glory...”

2 COR. 4:17: “For our light affliction, which is but for a moment, worketh for us a far more exceeding *and* eternal weight of glory...”

JOHN 17:22: "And the glory which thou gavest me I have given them; that they may be one, even as we are one..."

1 PET. 5:10: "But the God of all grace, who hath called us unto his eternal glory by Christ Jesus, after that ye...suffered a while, make you perfect, stablish, strengthen, settle *you*."

2 THES. 2:14: "Whereunto he called you by our gospel, to the obtaining of the glory of our Lord Jesus Christ."

THE ONLY WAY NOW OPEN

"This, the only way of life now open, because of its difficulty, finds few who care to walk in it. The masses of mankind...prefer the broad, easy way of self-gratification." *A211*

LIFE THROUGH DEATH

"The narrow way, while it ends in life..., might be called a way of death, since its prize is gained through the sacrifice of the human nature even unto death. It is the narrow way of death to life. Being reckoned free from the Adamic guilt and the death penalty, the consecrated voluntarily... **sacrifice** those human rights, reckoned theirs, which... they, with the world in general, would have...received. As 'the man Christ Jesus,'...sacrificed his life for the world, so these become joint-sacrificers with him. Not that his sacrifice was insufficient and that others were **needed**; but...these are permitted to serve and to suffer with him in order to become his bride and joint-heir....They sacrifice and die **with** him as human beings, in order to become partakers of the divine nature and glories **with** him..." *A212*

2 TIM. 2:11,12: "...For if we be...**with** *him*, we shall also live **with** *him*: If we suffer **with** *him*, we shall also...."

ROM. 8:17: "...be...glorified together."

END OF THE NARROW WAY

"With the end of the Gospel Age, the narrow way to immortality will close, because the select 'little flock' that it was designed to test...will have been completed....Death, as the Adamic penalty, will not be permitted forever; it will be abolished during the Millennial age; as a sacrifice it will be acceptable and rewarded only during the Gospel age." *A212*

THE FLESH DIES; THE NEW CREATURE LIVES

"It is only as '**new creatures**' that the saints...are on the way to life; and only as human beings are we consecrated to destruction, as sacrifices....The...transformed mind is the germ of the new nature." *A213*

ROM. 8:13,14: "For if ye live after the flesh, ye shall die: but if ye through the Spirit do mortify the deeds of the body, ye shall live. For as many as are led by the Spirit of God, they are the sons of God."

"...if we have covenanted with God to sacrifice the human nature, and if that sacrifice was accepted by him, it is useless to attempt to take it back. The human is reckoned...dead now, and must actually die, never again to be restored. All that can be gained, then, by turning back to live after the flesh, is a little human gratification at the expense of the new spiritual nature." *A213*

RESULT OF COMPROMISE

"There are...many consecrated ones desirous of the 'prize' and...begotten of the Spirit,... partially overcome by the allurements of the world, the desires of the flesh, or the arts of the devil. They partially lose sight of the prize...and try to walk upon a middle road — to keep favor of God and...of the world, forgetting that...

JAS. 4:4: "'...The friendship of the world is enmity with God....'

"...and that the instructions to those running the race for the prize are,..." *A213*

1 JOHN 2:15: "Love not the world, neither the things *that are* in the world. If any man love the world, the love of the Father is not in him."

SEEK HONOR FROM GOD ONLY

JOHN 5:44: "How can ye believe, which receive honour one of another, and seek not the honour that *cometh* from God only?"

DESTRUCTION OF UNSACRIFICED FLESH

"These, who love the present world, but who have not wholly forsaken the Lord and despised their covenant, receive a...purifying by the fire of affliction....they are delivered over...

1 COR. 5:5: "'...unto Satan for the destruction of the flesh, that the spirit [the newly begotten nature] may be saved in the day of the Lord Jesus.'

"And if rightly exercised by the discipline, they will finally be received into the spiritual condition. They will have everlasting spirit life as angels have it,....will serve God in his temple, and stand **before** the throne having palms in their hands (Rev. 7:9-17); but...not be...kings and priests unto God, seated with Jesus **in the throne** as his bride and joint-heir...crowned with immortality." *A214*

See also Rev. 20:6; 21:9; Rom. 8:17.

ENCOURAGING WORDS

"Ours is a rugged, steep, narrow way, and were it not that strength is furnished for each successive step of that journey, we could never reach the goal. But our Captain's word is encouraging:...

JOHN 16:33: "'...be of good cheer; I have overcome the world.'

2 COR. 12:9: "'...My grace is sufficient for thee; for my strength is made perfect in weakness....'" *A214*

PURPOSE OF DIFFICULTIES

"The difficulties of this way are to act as a separating principle to sanctify and refine a 'peculiar people' to be..." *A214*

ROM. 8:17: "...heirs of God, and joint-heirs with Christ..."

GRACE TO HELP

HEB. 4:16: "Let us therefore come boldly unto the throne of grace, that we may obtain mercy, and find grace to help in time of need."

THE FIGHT OF FAITH

1 TIM. 6:12: "Fight the good fight of faith, lay hold on eternal life, whereunto thou art also called, and hast professed a good profession before many witnesses."

1 PET. 5:4: "And when the chief Shepherd shall appear, ye shall receive a crown of glory that fadeth not away."

2 TIM. 4:8: "Henceforth there is laid up for me a crown of righteousness, which the Lord, the righteous judge, shall give me at that day: and not to me only, but unto all them also that love his appearing."

See also Index: **High Calling**

THE HIGHWAY OF HOLINESS

"...the age to come is...different. As a different hope is held out, so

also a different **way** leads to it....the way to human perfection, to restitution, the hope of the world, requires only the putting away of sin: not the sacrifice of human rights and privileges, but their proper enjoyment. It will lead to personal purification and restoration to the image of God...enjoyed by Adam before sin entered the world." *A215*

THE WAY MADE PLAIN

"The way back to actual human perfection is to be made very plain and easy;...that...

ISA. 35:8, *Leeser*: "'...the wayfaring man, and those unacquainted (therewith), shall not go astray.'

"...that none will need to teach his neighbor...

JER. 31:34: "'...saying, Know the LORD: for they shall all know...[the Lord] from the least of them unto the greatest of them....'

"Instead of being a narrow way that few can find; it is termed 'a highway,' a public roadway...for **easy** travel...for the...comfort of the travelers....,open to all....for whom Christ died, who will...avail himself of the opportunities...purchased by the precious blood...to...restitution to human perfection and everlasting life." *A215*

"...to **actual** perfection, as a result of endeavor and obedience, to which all things will be made favorable....aided by the wise...administration of the new kingdom. This...is the...result of the ransom....On the highway...only sinful things will be prohibited, while those who travel the narrow way must deny themselves and sacrifice many things not sinful, as well as war continually against besetting sins...." *A216*

EVIL SUPPRESSED

ISA. 35:9: "No lion shall be there, nor *any* ravenous beast shall go up thereon, it shall not be found there; but the redeemed shall walk *there*..."

"How many...lions are now in the way of those who would be glad to forsake sinful ways, and to pursue righteousness!...degenerate public sentiment, which deters many from venturing to obey the dictates of conscience...strong drink....No giant corporations, organized to advance selfish...interests at the expense of the general good, will be tolerated....

ISA. 11:9: "'They shall not hurt nor destroy in all my holy mountain: [kingdom]....'

"Though there will be difficulties...in overcoming propensities to evil, etc., yet, in comparison with the narrow

way..., that will be an easy way. The stones (stumbling-stones) shall be gathered out, and the standard of truth shall be lifted up for the people....

ISA. 62:10: "'Go through, go through the gates; prepare ye the way of the people; cast up, cast up the highway; gather out the stones; lift up a standard for the people.'

"Ignorance and superstition will be things of the past, and righteousness will receive its due reward, while to evil will be meted out its just deserts....

MAL. 3:15,18: "'And now we call the proud happy; yea, *they that* work wickedness are set up; yea, they that tempt God are even delivered....Then shall ye return, and discern between the righteous and the wicked, between him that serveth God and him that serveth him not.'

"By wholesome chastisements...and plain instructions...mankind will be trained and disciplined up to the grand perfection from which father Adam fell. Thus...

ISA. 35:10: "'...the ransomed of the LORD **shall return**, and come to Zion with songs and everlasting joy upon their heads: they shall obtain joy and gladness, and sorrow and sighing shall flee away.'

"Our Lord referred to but two of these ways, because the third was not yet due to be opened up — just as when...he said, 'This scripture is fulfilled in your ears,' but omitted...the 'day of vengeance,' because it was not then due. (Compare Luke 4:19 and Isa. 61:2)." *A217*

SUMMARY

"Thus we have found a 'Broad Road,' on which...the masses of mankind travel, deluded by the 'prince of this world' and led by perverted tastes....opened up...

ROM. 5:19: "'...by one man's disobedience...'

"We have found that the 'Highway of Holiness' is to be opened up by our Lord, who gave himself a ransom for **all** and redeems all from the destruction to which the "Broad Road' leads, and that it will, 'in due time,' be accessible and easy for all....We have found...that the present 'Narrow Way,' opened up by the merit of the same precious blood, is a special way leading to a special prize, and is made specially narrow and difficult as a **test** and discipline for those now being selected to be made partakers of the **divine** nature and joint-heirs with our Lord Jesus in the Kingdom of glory soon to be revealed for the blessing of all. Such as have **this hope** — who see this prize — may count all other hopes but loss and dross in comparison. — Phil. 3:8-15" *A218*

PHIL. 3:7,10,11,13-15: "But what things were gain to me, those I counted loss for Christ.... That I may know him, and the power of his resurrection, and the fellowship of his

sufferings, being made conformable unto his death; If by any means I might attain unto the resurrection of the dead....Brethren, I count not myself to have apprehended: but *this* one thing I *do*, forgetting those things which are behind, and reaching forth unto those things which are before, I press toward the mark for the prize of the high calling of God in Christ Jesus. Let us therefore..., be thus minded..."

TITHING

"To give a tenth" — *Young's Concordance*; "To take or give a tenth" — *Strong's Concordance*

BEFORE THE LAW COVENANT

GEN. 14:18-20: "...Melchizedek...Blessed... Abram,...And he gave him tithes of all...."

HEB. 7:1,2: "...Melchisedec...met Abraham...To whom also Abraham gave a tenth part of all..."

GEN. 28:20,22: "And Jacob vowed....of all that thou shalt give me I will surely give the tenth unto thee."

UNDER THE LAW

LEV. 27:30-32: "And all the tithe of the land,...of the seed of the land, *or* of the fruit of the tree, *is* the LORD'S: *it is* holy unto the LORD. And if a man will at all redeem *ought* of his tithes, he shall add thereto the fifth *part* thereof. And concerning the tithe of the herd, or of the flock, *even* of whatsoever passeth under the rod, the tenth shall be holy unto the LORD."

"This tenth, called **Terumoth**, is ordered to be assigned to the Levites, as the reward of their service, and it is ordered further, that they are...to dedicate...a tenth...to the maintenance of the high priest...." *Smith's Bible Dictionary, pg.954; col. 1*

AARON'S PORTION

NUM. 18:21,23,24,26-28: "...I have given the children of Levi all the tenth in Israel for an inheritance, for...the service of the tabernacle....they have no inheritance. But the tithes of the children of Israel,...I have given to the Levites to inherit:....speak unto the Levites,...When ye take...the tithes...then ye shall offer up...a tenth....And *this*...shall be reckoned...as though *it were* the corn of the threshingfloor, and as the fulness of the winepress....and ye shall give thereof...to Aaron the priest."

TITHES TO BE BROUGHT TO JERUSALEM

DEUT. 12:5,6,18: "But unto the place which the LORD...shall choose...to put his name there,...ye shall bring...your tithes....thou must eat them....in the place which the LORD...shall choose, thou, and thy son, and thy daughter, and thy manservant, and thy maidservant, and the Levite."

LEVITES TO BE REMEMBERED

DEUT. 14:22-27: "Thou shalt truly tithe all the increase of thy seed,...year by year. And thou shalt eat before the LORD thy God, in the place which he shall choose....the

tithe of thy corn, of thy wine, and of thine oil, and the firstlings of thy herds and of thy flocks;....And if..., the place be too far...Then shalt thou turn *it* into money,...And...bestow that money for whatsoever thy soul desireth: and...eat there before the LORD thy God, and thou shalt rejoice, thou, and thine household, And the Levite...for he hath no...inheritance with thee."

ALSO THE POOR

DEUT. 14:28,29: "At the end of three years thou shalt bring forth all the tithe of thine increase the same year, and shalt lay *it* up within thy gates: And the Levite, (because he hath no...inheritance with thee,) and the stranger, and the fatherless, and the widow, which *are* within thy gates, shall come, and shall eat and be satisfied; that the LORD...may bless thee...."

DEUT. 26:12,13: "When thou hast made an end of tithing...the third year...thou shalt say,...I have...given them unto the Levite,...the stranger,...the fatherless, and to the widow...."

IN MODERN TIMES

"...because the money question has been made so prominent...by all denominations that, in our opinion, its total avoidance would be to the Lord's glory...." *F339*

IS TITHING STILL NECESSARY?

"The...tithe....is not infrequently misrepresented by a modern priesthood, which urges a similar system now...without mentioning the condition ...upon which it was founded....

"...When Israel came into...the land...the Levites...got none of it, except certain cities or villages for residence....Instead of the land, some equivalent should surely be provided them, and the **tithe** was...this reasonable...provision...." *A51*

ALL GIVEN IN CONSECRATION

"...one who has made a **full** consecration of himself...has nothing **to give** — he has already **given** all...." *F344*

"...each one is...the steward of his own time, influence, money, etc., and...to use these talents to the best of his ability....if he is in doubt...he may ask God....

"God instituted with the Jews a tithing system, under which...one-tenth...was set apart....But this was...only for '**the house of servants**.'...Does this imply that he expects less from the sons than from the servants? Nay.... the son who would be less interested in the father's business than the servant would be unworthy..." *F345*

"The Lord...needs none of our efforts, none of our money; but because it will...assist in our development, he permits his work to be in such a condition that it will have need of all the efforts of those who are truly his, and...all the means which they will be prompted to use...." *F346*

JESUS AND THE WIDOW OUR EXAMPLES

LUKE 21:1-4: "*And* he...saw the rich men casting their gifts into the treasury. And...a certain poor widow casting in...two mites. And he said,...this poor widow hath cast in more than they all: For all these have of their abundance cast in...but she of her penury hath cast in all the living that she had."

"Very few require to be cautioned against giving all of their living." *F344*

"Selfishness and meanness are to be overcome; godliness and liberality and generosity, both of heart and deed, are to be diligently cultivated...." *F340*

PROV. 11:24: "There is that scattereth, and yet increaseth; and *there is* that withholdeth more than is meet, but *it tendeth* to poverty."

1 COR. 13:3: "...though I bestow all my goods to feed *the poor* ...and have not charity, it profiteth me nothing."

OTHER MEANS OF GIVING

"...if one found himself possessed of a talent for presenting the Truth, and also a talent for...money-making, our advice would be that he...exercise the money-getting talent to a limited degree only,...to give as much...as possible to...ministering the Truth. And this would apply...considerable degree also to the ministries...through the printed page, colporteuring, etc." *F341*

JESUS' ADMONITION

ACTS 20:35: "...It is more blessed to give than to receive."

MATT. 10:8: "...freely ye have received, freely give."

GIFT OF TONGUES

"...some earnest people...are evidently ensnared by the adversary into believing that they are enjoying a restoration of the gifts whereby God blessed and established the Christian church in the first century. Their strong delusions continue to increase under a spirit power which, we believe, is not from God, nor from the dead, but from the fallen spirits, the fallen angels....

"The fallen angels are evidently desirous of deluding the whole world. They have certainly had great success, so far as many of the false doctrines are concerned...." *R4877:3*

TRY THE SPIRITS

1 JOHN 4:1: "Beloved, believe not every spirit, but try the spirits whether they are of God: because many false prophets are gone out into the world."

MANIFESTATIONS IN PREVIOUS AGES

ISA. 8:19,20: "And when they shall say unto you, Seek unto them that have familiar spirits, and unto wizards that peep, and that mutter: should not a people seek unto their God? for the living to the dead? To the law and to the testimony: if they speak not according to this word, *it is* because *there is* no light in them." [Margin, **no morning**]

GIVEN BY LAYING ON OF THE APOSTLES HANDS

ACTS 8:14,15,17,18: "Now when the apostles which were at Jerusalem heard that Samaria had received the word of God, they sent unto them Peter and John: Who, when they were come down, prayed for them, that they might receive the Holy Ghost:....Then laid they their hands on them, and they received the Holy Ghost.... through laying on of the apostles' hands the Holy Ghost was given...."

ROM. 1:11: "...I long to see you, that I may impart unto you some spiritual gift, to the end ye may be established..."

2 COR. 12:12: "Truly the signs of an apostle were wrought among you...."

1 TIM. 4:14: "Neglect not the gift that is in thee, which was given thee by prophecy, with the laying on of the hands of the presbytery."

2 TIM. 1:6: "...stir up the gift of God, which is in thee by the putting on of my hands."

NOT POSSESSED BY ALL IN EARLY CHURCH

1 COR. 12:30: "...do all speak with tongues?..."

GIFT OF TONGUES ABUSED IN EARLY CHURCH

1 COR. 14:2-16: "...he that speaketh in an *unknown* tongue speaketh not unto men, but unto God: for no man understandeth *him*;....But he that prophesieth speaketh unto men *to* edification, and exhortation, and comfort. He that speaketh in an *unknown* tongue edifieth himself; but he that prophesieth edifieth the church. I would that ye all spake with tongues, but rather that ye prophesied: for greater *is* he that prophesieth than he that speaketh with tongues, except he interpret, that the church may receive edifying. Now, brethren, if I come unto you speaking with tongues, what shall I profit you, except I shall speak to you either by

revelation, or by knowledge, or by prophesying, or by doctrine? And even things without life giving sound, whether pipe or harp, except they give a distinction in the sounds, how shall it be known what is piped or harped? For if the trumpet give an uncertain sound, who shall prepare himself to the battle? So likewise ye, except ye utter by the tongue words easy to be understood, [*margin, significant*] how shall it be known what is spoken? for ye shall speak into the air. There are, it may be, so many kinds of voices in the world, and none of them *is* without signification. Therefore if I know not the meaning of the voice, I shall be unto him that speaketh a barbarian,...unto me. Even so ye, forasmuch as ye are zealous of spiritual *gifts*, seek that ye may excel to the edifying of the church. Wherefore let him that speaketh in an *unknown* tongue pray that he may interpret.

For if I pray in an *unknown* tongue, my spirit prayeth, but my understanding is unfruitful. What is it then? I will pray with the spirit,...and I will sing with the understanding also. Else when thou shalt bless with the spirit, how shall he that occupieth the room of the unlearned say Amen at thy giving of thanks..."

TONGUES TO CEASE

"The scriptures clearly testify that those who possessed the gifts of the Spirit in the early church received them from the Apostles by the laying on of hands, so that when the Apostles were dead and also those upon whom they had laid their hands and communicated the gifts, it ended those 'gifts' in the church...." *R4877:3,6*

SINCE ONLY TWELVE APOSTLES

REV. 21:14: "And the wall of the city had [having] twelve foundations, and in them the [twelve] names of the twelve apostles of the Lamb."

1 COR. 13:8: "...Whether *there be* tongues, they shall cease..."

1 COR. 14:16-19,21-25: "...seeing he understandeth not what thou sayest? For thou verily givest thanks well, but the other is not edified. I thank my God, I speak with tongues more than ye all:...Yet in the church I had rather speak five words with my understanding, that...I might teach others also, than ten thousand words in an unknown tongue....In the law it is written, With *men of* other tongues...will I speak unto this people; and yet for all that will they not hear me, saith the Lord. Wherefore tongues are for a sign, **not to them that believe**, but to them that believe not: but prophesying *serveth* not for them that believe not, but for them which believe.

"If therefore the whole church be come together into one place, and all speak with tongues, and there come in *those that are* unlearned, or unbelievers, will they not say that ye are mad? But if all prophesy, and there come in one that believeth not; or *one* unlearned, he is convinced of all,...and so falling down on *his* face he will worship God, and report that God is in you of a truth."

TRINITY

"...those who hold to the doctrine of the Trinity, in attempting to explain their own thought, hopelessly entangle themselves....They declare...that there is only one God..., yet in the same breath they declare that there are three Gods (because...committed by 'traditions...' handed down from earliest Papacy)." *E54*

"It was not until the beginning of the fourth century that the Trinitarian view began to be **elaborated** and formulated into a doctrine, and **an endeavor made to reconcile it with the belief of the Church in one God**....Out of the attempt to solve this problem sprang the doctrine of the Trinity....Trinity is a very marked feature in Hinduism, and is discernible in Persian, Egyptian, Roman, Japanese, Indian and the most ancient Grecian mythologies quoted from 'The Religious Dictionary,' of which the Rev. Dr. Lyman Abbott, a professed Trinitarian, was one of the compilers and editors — (p.944)" *E63*

JESUS' ACCEPTING WORSHIP SUPPOSED BY SOME TO BE PROOF THAT HE IS JEHOVAH

"It is claimed by some that the fact that our Lord Jesus received worship without rebuke signifies that he is JEHOVAH.

"Our Lord's words...

MATT. 4:10: "'...Thou shalt worship the Lord thy God, and him only shalt thou serve.'

"...are supposed to imply that for any being but Jehovah to receive worship would be wrong.... Our Lord Jesus....knew that the angelic messengers of Jehovah had in the past been **worshiped as representatives of Jehovah**; that he himself was the chief messenger....

"The Hebrew word rendered **worship** in the Old Testament...occurs 170 times and only about one-half...refer to the worship of God. But this fact is hidden...by...its having been 74 times translated **bow down, bowed himself, did reverence, did obeisance**, etc...when referring to homage to great earthly beings." *E72*

EXAMPLES:

GEN. 23:7,12: "And Abraham...**bowed himself** to the people of the land..."

GEN. 27:26,29: "...Isaac said....let thy mother's sons **bow down** to thee..."

1 SAM. 24:8: "David...cried after Saul, saying, My lord the king. And when Saul looked... David....**bowed himself**."

1 SAM. 25:23: "...Abigail...fell before David on her face and **bowed** herself to the ground."

"...it will be apparent...that the prohibition of the First Commandment...

EXOD. 20:5: "'Thou shalt not **bow down** thyself to them, nor serve them...'

"...was not...meant to be understood, as a prohibition of **reverence** ...to those in honored positions among men....such reverence was... never reproved. The Commandment warns against image worship or any worship of any rival gods." *E73*

NAMES AND TITLES — JEHOVAH, GOD, LORD — TO WHOM APPLIED

"It is claimed that our Lord Jesus is spoken of as God, and that there is but one God, and that hence God the Father and God the Son must be two names for the one person.

"The name **JEHOVAH** is properly rendered only four times...(Exod. 6:3; Psa. 83:18; Isa. 12:2; 26:4; it is rendered **God** 298 times and **Lord** over 5,000 times." *E65*

"The title *Adonai*, generally properly rendered **Lord**, is once rendered God. (Hab. 3:19)

"The title ***Adon*** is rendered **Sir, Master, Lord**.

"The word ***elohim***, with its modification ***eloah, elah***, and ***el***, occurs over 2,500 times....Scripture illustrations... prove....that ***elohim*** signifies **mighty**. It is properly applied to Jehovah, because he is **All-mighty**, all-powerful. It is properly applied to any angel, for they are **mighty**....Great, influential men were also properly described as ***elohim*** — **mighty**." *E66*

ELOHIM TRANSLATED ANGELS

PSA. 8:5: "...thou [Jehovah, vs. 1] hast made him a little lower than the **angels**...."

"That this is a proper rendering of ***elohim*** is proven by the fact that the inspired Apostle translated it thus into the Greek, ***angelos***...." *E67*

HEB. 2:7,9: "Thou madest him a little lower than the angels...."

ELOHIM TRANSLATED GODS

"In referring to false gods of the heathen,... ***elohim***...is used 196 times; and quite properly, too..." *E67*

"JEHOVAH THE [ALL-MIGHTY] ELOHIM CONTRASTED WITH OTHER ELOHIM [MIGHTY ONES]" E67

PSA. 86:6,8: "...O JEHOVAH....Among the gods [*elohim* — **mighty ones**] *there is* none like unto thee..."

PSA. 95:3: "...JEHOVAH *is* a great God [*el* — mighty one], and a great King above all **gods** [*elohim* — **mighty ones**]."

PSA. 50:1: "THE mighty God [literally **God of gods** — *El elohim* — the **mighty of the mighty**]. JEHOVAH, hath spoken...."

PSA. 29:1: "GIVE ear unto JEHOVAH, O ye **mighty** [*el* — **gods**]..."

PSA. 96:4: "...JEHOVAH...*is* to be feared above all **gods** [*elohim* — **mighty ones**]." *E67, 68*

ELOHIM APPLIED TO MEN

GEN. 23:5,6: "And the children of Heth answered Abraham....my lord: thou are a **mighty** [*elohim*] prince among us..."

EXOD. 22:28: "Thou shalt not revile **the gods** [*elohim* — margin, **judges**]..."

"Note the apostles' sanction of this translation...

ACTS 23:5: "'...Thou shalt not speak evil of the ruler of thy people.'" *E68*

ELOHIM — OTHER TRANSLATIONS

"This word is sometimes rendered **strong, power, great**, etc., in connection with inanimate things...." *E69* See...

1 SAM. 14:15: "...**great** [*elohim* — **mighty**] trembling."

GEN. 30:8: "...**great** [*elohim* — **mighty**] wrestlings...."

PSA. 36:6: "...**great** [*el* — **mighty**] mountains..."

EZEK. 32:21: "The **strong** [*el*] among the mighty..."

GEN. 31:29: "...in the **power** [*el*] of my hand..."

"IN THE NEW TESTAMENT"

"In the New Testament nothing whatever in the **words** used distinguishes the Father from the Son in the words rendered Lord and God. The matter is...indicated only by the construction of the sentence—except that where the word **Theos** is used twice in the same clause the Greek **Prepositive Article** is sometimes used, so as to give the effect of **the God** in contrast with **a God**.

"An illustration of this is found in John 1:1...

JOHN 1:1: ***Diag. interlineary***: "'...The Word was with **the** God [*ho Theos*], and the Word was **a** God [**Theos**].'" *E69,70*

"The Greek article ***ho*** precedes the first word 'God,' in this verse, and does not precede the second word 'God,' thus intentionally indicating God the Father and God the Son in a case where without the article the reader would be left in confusion. Similarly the article precedes the word 'God' in the second verse." *E86*

"The word God in our New Testament, whether in referring to our Heavenly Father or to his Heavenly Son, our Lord Jesus, or to false gods, is almost invariably the translation of the Greek word *Theos*. Exceptions are that...***kurios*** [**Lord**] is once translated **God**...in Acts 19:20; and in Acts 17:18 **daimonion** is rendered **gods**, and should be **demons**." *E70*

USE OF THE WORD "LORD" IN THE NEW TESTAMENT

"The title 'Lord,' whether applied to Jehovah, or Christ, or man, or angels, is generally the translation of the Greek word **kurios**, signifying Master, or Lord. It is frequently translated **Sir** and **Master**. Exceptions are that...

"***Rabboni*** [**Master**] is once rendered **Lord**. — Mark 10:51

"***Kurieno*** [**to be lords**] is once rendered **lords**. — 1 Tim. 6:15

"In five places Lord is the translation of ***despotes*****... Sovereign** or **Autocrat**." *E70,71*

The five instances quoted in E70, paragraph 3, to E71, paragraph 1, are as follows: Luke 2:29; 2 Pet. 2:1; Jude 4; Rev. 6:10; Acts 4:24. In the latter verse, the second word "**Lord**" translates "*kurios*."

THE GODHEAD

"The translators...were...unfortunate in...using... 'godhead'...to translate three...words—none of which have any such significance as...a God with several bodies and but one head...." *E71*

Following are the three instances:

ACTS 17:29: "...we ought not to think that the **Godhead** [*Theios* — **Deity**] is like unto gold, or silver or stone...."

"The same word is translated **divine** in the only two other instances...in the New Testament; viz., 2 Pet. 1:3,4.

ROM. 1:19,20: "'...God hath shewed *it* unto them....his eternal power and **Godhead** [*Theiotes* — **Deity**]....'

COL. 2:9: "'For in him dwelleth all the fulness of the Godhead [*Theotes* — **Deity**] bodily.'" *E71*

TEXTS THOUGHT TO SUPPORT THE TRINITY EXPLAINED, SHOWING THE TRUTH IN THE LIGHT OF THE WORD OF GOD

"We are asked to consider as a proof that the name Jehovah properly belongs to our Lord Jesus; the fact that he is named..." *E42*

ISA. 9:6: "...The mighty God, The everlasting Father..."

"...if such had been the thought, no better place...could have been found for adding the name Jehovah among the other titles. But, on the contrary, the very next verse declares,...

ISA. 9:7: "'...The zeal of the LORD [Jehovah] of hosts will perform [accomplish] this [prophecy].'

JER. 23:6: "'...this *is* his name whereby he shall be called, **THE LORD OUR RIGHTEOUSNESS**.'

"...the name in the Hebrew is **Jehovah — Tsidkenu**....

"...this same name precisely, **Jehovah Tsidkenu**, occurs again in the writings of the same Prophet....the connections show that **Jehovah Tsidkenu** will be the name of the entire Church, the New Jerusalem...

JER. 33:16: "'...this *is the name* wherewith she shall be called [**Jehovah Tsidkenu**], the LORD our righteousness [our Righteousness of Jehovah].'" *E42*

UNITY OF SPIRIT DOES NOT MEAN BEING THE SAME PERSON

JOHN 10:30: "I and *my* Father are one."

JOHN 17:11: "...Holy Father, keep through thine own name those whom thou hast given me, that they may be one, as we *are*."

JOHN 10:38: "...the Father *is* in me, and I in him."

JOHN 17:23: "I in them, and thou in me..."

JOHN 14:9: "...he that hath seen me hath seen the Father..."

2 COR. 4:11: "For we which live are alway delivered unto death for Jesus' sake, that the life also of Jesus might be made manifest in our mortal flesh."

MATT. 16:16,17: "...Thou art the Christ, the Son of the living God. And Jesus answered... Blessed art thou,...for flesh and blood hath not revealed it unto thee, but my Father which is in heaven."

"...the very words 'Father' and 'Son' imply a difference, and contradict the thoughts of the Trinity and oneness of person, because the word 'father' signifies **life-giver**, while the word 'son' signifies the **one who has received life** from another...." *E60*

MATT. 26:39: "And he went a little farther, and fell on his face,...saying, O my Father, if it be possible, let this cup pass from me..."

MATT. 26:42: "He went away again the second time, and prayed, saying, O my Father, if this cup may not pass away from me, except I drink it, thy will be done."

MARK 13:32: "But of that day and *that* hour knoweth no man, no, not the angels which are in heaven, neither the Son, but the Father."

LUKE 23:46: "...Jesus...said, Father, into thy hands I commend my spirit..."

JOHN 5:19,20: "...The Son can do nothing of himself, but what he seeth the Father do: for what...he doeth, these also doeth the Son likewise. For the Father loveth the Son, and sheweth him all things that himself doeth..."

JOHN 5:36-38: "...the works which the Father hath given me to finish,...bear witness of me, that the Father hath sent me. And the Father himself, which hath sent me, hath borne witness of me. Ye have neither heard his voice.. nor seen his shape....whom he hath sent, him ye believe not."

JOHN 7:16: "Jesus...said, My doctrine is not mine, but his that sent me."

JOHN 8:26-29: "...he that sent me is true; and I speak...those things which I have heard of him. They understood not that he spake to them of the Father....I do nothing of myself; but as my Father hath taught me, I speak these things....I do always those things that please him."

JOHN 8:42: "...I proceeded forth and came from God; neither came I of myself, but he sent me."

JOHN 14:16: "...I will pray the Father, and he shall give you another Comforter..."

JOHN 14:21,23: "...he that loveth me shall be loved of my Father, and I will love him,...If a man love me, he will keep my words: and my Father will love him, and we will come unto him..."

JOHN 14:28: "...If ye loved me, ye would rejoice, because I said, I go unto the Father: for my Father is greater than I."

JOHN 15:1: "I *am* the true vine, and my Father is the husbandman."

JOHN 15:9,10: "As the Father hath loved me, so have I loved you:...If ye keep my commandments, ye shall abide in my love; even as I have kept my Father's commandments, and abide in his love."

JOHN 16:23,26-28: "...Whatsoever ye shall ask the Father in my name, he will give *it* you....ye shall ask in my name: and I say not unto you, that I will pray the Father for you:

For the Father himself loveth you, because ye have loved me, and have believed that I came out from God. I came forth from the Father, and am come into the world: again, I leave the world, and go to the Father."

JOHN 17:1-8: "...Father,...glorify thy Son, that thy Son also may glorify thee: As thou hast given him power over all flesh, that he should give eternal life to as many as thou hast given him. And this is life eternal, that they might know thee the only true God, and Jesus Christ, whom thou hast sent. I have glorified thee on the earth: I have finished the work which thou gavest me to do. And now, O Father, glorify thou me with thine own self with the glory which I had with thee before the world was. I have manifested thy name unto the men which thou gavest me out of the world: thine they were, and thou gavest them me; Now they have known that all things whatsoever thou hast given me are of thee. For I have given unto them the words which thou gavest me; and they have received *them*, and have known surely that I came out from thee, and they have believed that thou didst send me."

JOHN 17:20-26: "Neither pray I for these alone, but for them also which shall believe on me through their word; That they all may be one; as thou, Father, *art* in me, and I in thee, that they also may be one in us:...And the glory which thou gavest me I have given them; that they may be one, even as we are one: I in them, and thou in

me, that they may be made perfect in one; and that the world may know that thou hast sent me, and hast loved them, as thou hast loved me. Father, I will that they also, whom thou hast given me, be with me where I am; that they may behold my glory, which thou hast given me: for thou lovedst me before the foundation of the world. O righteous Father, the world hath not known thee: but I have known thee, and these have known that thou hast sent me. And I have declared unto them thy name, and will declare *it*: that the love wherewith thou hast loved me may be in them, and I in them."

JOHN 20:17: "...I am not yet ascended to my Father...I ascend unto my Father, and your Father; and to my God, and your God."

ACTS 2:22,24,25,27,30-32: "...Jesus...a man approved of God...by miracles....which God did by him...God hath raised up, having loosed the pains of death....For David speaketh concerning him,...thou wilt not leave my soul in hell....knowing that God had sworn with an oath to him, that...he would raise up Christ to sit on his throne; He...spake of the resurrection of Christ, that his soul was not left in hell,...This Jesus hath God raised up..."

ACTS 2:34,35: "For David is not ascended into the heavens: but he saith himself, The LORD said unto my Lord, Sit thou on my right hand, Until I make thy foes thy footstool."

ACTS 2:36: "...God hath made that same Jesus...both Lord and Christ."

See also **ACTS 3:13,15,20,26; 4:10,29,30; 5:30,31; 10:40,42; 13:23,34**.

ACTS 13:33: "...he hath raised up Jesus again; as it is also written in the second Psalm, Thou art my Son, this day have I begotten thee."

ACTS 17:30,31: "...God...hath appointed a day, in the which he will judge the world in righteousness by *that* man whom he hath ordained; *whereof* he hath given assurance unto all *men*, in that he hath raised him from the dead."

See also **ROM. 1:1,3,4,7,8; 4:23,24; 5:1,10,11; 6:4,9,10,23; 8:11**.

ROM. 8:16,17: "...we are the children of God: And if children, then heirs; heirs of God, and joint-heirs with Christ; if so be that we suffer with *him*, that we may be also glorified together."

See also **ROM. 16:27; 1 COR. 1:1; 3:23**.

1 COR. 8:6: "But to us *there is but* one God, the Father, of whom *are* all things,...and one Lord Jesus Christ,..., and we by him."

1 COR. 11:3: "...the head of every man is Christ...and the head of Christ *is* God."

1 COR. 15:24-28: "Then *cometh* the end, when he shall have delivered up the kingdom to God, even the Father; when he shall have put down all rule and all authority and power. For he must reign, till he hath put all enemies under his feet. The last enemy *that* shall be destroyed *is* death. For he hath put all things under his feet. But when he saith all things are put under *him*, *it is* manifest that he is excepted, which did put all things under him. And when all things shall be subdued unto him, then shall the Son also himself be subject unto him that put all things under him, that God may be all in all."

See also **2 COR. 1:1-3**.

2 COR. 5:18: "...God...hath reconciled us to himself by Jesus Christ..."

See also **2 COR. 5:20,21; GAL. 1:3,15,16; EPH. 1:1-6,9,10,15-20; 2:4,5,10**.

EPH. 3:9: "...God...created all things by Jesus Christ..."

See also **EPH. 3:11,14,21**.

EPH. 4:32: "...God for Christ's sake hath forgiven you."

See also **EPH. 5:5,20; PHIL. 1:2**.

PHIL. 2:5,6: "Let this mind be in you, which was also in Christ Jesus: Who, being in the form of God, thought it not robbery to be equal with God..."

"Was the apostle seeking to have the church... grasp after the honor of the Father...? Surely not! On the contrary he is urging against vain-glory...and that each should esteem the other **better than himself**....If the mind which was in Christ Jesus was to grasp the Father's glory and honor, and to think it not robbery to do so, then the same mind in the Lord's church would mean that each one of us should be grasping after all the glory and honor possible...and that we thus would have the mind...which Christ manifested." *E79*

"Note the following translations...by eminent scholars of various denominations:

"'Did not think it a matter to be earnestly desired.' ***Clarke***

"'Did not think of eagerly retaining.' ***Wakefield***

"'Did not regard...as an object of solicitous desire.' ***Stewart***

"'Who in God's form subsisting, not a thing to be seized on esteemed the being equal with God.' ***Rotherham***

"'Who being [*margin*, **originally**] in the form of God, counted it not a prize [*margin*, **a thing to be grasped**] to be on an equality with God.' ***Revised Version***

"'Who existing in the form of God, ***counted not*** the being on an equality with God ***a thing to be grasped***.' ***Amer. Rev. Committee***

"'Thought not...a thing to be seized.' ***Sharpe***

"'Did not eagerly grasp.' ***Neeland***

"'Did not violently strive.' ***Dickenson***

"'Did not meditate a usurpation.' ***Turnbull***

PHIL. 2:6,7: *Diag.*: "'Who, though being in God's form YET did not meditate a Usurpation to BE like God, but divested Himself, taking a Bondman's form...'" *E80,81*

PHIL. 2:9,11: "...God also hath highly exalted him, and given him a name which is above every name:...*that* every tongue should confess that Jesus Christ *is* Lord, to the glory of God the Father."

See also **PHIL. 3:3,14; 4:7,19; COL. 1:3; 2:12,13**.

COL. 1:12,13,15,19,20,27: "Giving thanks unto the Father...Who...has translated *us* into the kingdom of his dear Son:...Who is the image of the invisible God, the firstborn of every creature....it pleased *the Father* that in him should all fulness dwell; And, having made peace through the blood of his cross, by him to reconcile all things unto himself....God would make known what *is* the riches of the glory of this mystery among the Gentiles; which is Christ in you, the hope of glory..."

COL. 3:1: "...Christ sitteth on the right hand of God."

COL. 3:3: "...your life is hid with Christ in God."

See also **1 THES. 1:1; 4:14; 2 THES. 1:1,2; 2:16; 1 TIM. 1:2**.

1 TIM. 2:5: "For *there is* one God, and one mediator between God and men, the man Christ Jesus..."

See also **2 TIM. 1:1,2; 4:1; TITUS 1:1,4; 3:4-6; PHILEMON 3**.

HEB. 1:1-6,8,9,13: "God,...Hath...spoken unto us by *his* Son, whom he hath appointed heir of all things, by whom also he made the worlds; Who being the brightness of *his* glory, and the express image of his person, and upholding all things by the word of his power, when he had by himself purged our sins, sat down on the right hand of the Majesty on high; Being made so much better than the angels, as he hath by inheritance obtained a more excellent name than they. For unto which of the angels said he at any time, Thou art my Son, this day have I begotten thee? And again, I will be to him a Father, and he shall be to me a Son? And again, when he bringeth in the firstbegotten into the world, he saith, And let all the angels of God worship him....Thy throne, O God [mighty one], *is* for ever and ever: a sceptre of righteousness *is* the sceptre of thy kingdom. Thou hast loved righteousness, and hated iniquity; therefore God, *even* thy God, hath anointed thee with the oil of gladness above thy fellows....But to which of the angels said he at any time, Sit on my right hand, until I make thine enemies thy footstool?"

HEB. 2:9-13: "But we see Jesus, who was made a little lower than the angels for the suffering of death, crowned with glory and honour; that he by the grace of God should taste death for every man. For it became him, for whom *are* all things, and by whom *are* all things, in bringing many sons unto glory, to make the captain of their salvation perfect through sufferings. For both he that sanctifieth and they who are sanctified *are* all of one: for which cause he is not ashamed to call them brethren, Saying, I will declare thy name unto my brethren, in the midst of the church will I sing praise unto thee. And again, I will put my trust in him. And again, Behold I and the children which God hath given me."

HEB. 5:5-8,10: "...Christ glorified not himself to be made an high priest; but he that said unto him, Thou art my Son, to day have I begotten thee. As he saith also in another *place*, Thou *art* a priest for ever after the order of Melchisedec. Who in the days of his flesh, when he had offered up prayers and supplications with strong crying and tears unto him that was able to save him from death, and was heard in that he feared; Though he were a Son, yet learned he

obedience by the things which he suffered;...Called of God an high priest after the order of Melchisedec."

HEB. 7:25: "Wherefore he is able also to save them to the uttermost that come unto God by him, seeing he ever liveth to make intercession for them."

See also **verse 28**

HEB. 9:14: "How much more shall the blood of Christ, who through the eternal Spirit offered himself without spot to God, purge your conscience...?"

HEB. 9:24: "For Christ is not entered into the holy places...but into heaven itself, now to appear in the presence of God for us..."

See also **HEB. 10:29; 12:2**.

HEB. 12:22-24: "...ye are come...to God the Judge of all...And to Jesus the mediator of the new covenant..."

See also **HEB. 13:15,20,21; JAS. 1:1**.

1 PET. 3:18: "For Christ also hath once suffered for sins, the just for the unjust, that he might bring us to God..."

See also **1 PET. 5:10; 2 PET. 1:1,2; 1 JOHN 1:1-3,5,7**.

1 JOHN 2:1: "...we have an advocate with the Father, Jesus Christ the righteous."

See also **1 JOHN 2:24; 3:8,23; 4:9,10,14**.

1 JOHN 4:15: "Whosoever shall confess that Jesus is the Son of God, God dwelleth in him, and he in God."

"There is one statement found in the Scriptures, and only one, which seems in the slightest degree to even imply the doctrine of a Trinity of Gods; and that passage is now admitted by all scholars to be spurious — an interpolation...

1 JOHN 5:7,8: "'For there are three that bear record **in heaven, the Father, the Word, and the Holy Ghost [Spirit]: and these three are one. And there are three that bear witness in earth**, the Spirit, and the water, and the blood: and these three agree in one.'

"...with these words [the ones in bold] remaining in the text, the sense would be that the Father and the Son and the holy Spirit agreed in bearing one testimony in heaven, namely, that Jesus is the Christ. How absurd! Who is there in heaven ignorant of the fact that Jesus is the Christ?

"Not only does the *Revised Version* omit this verse, but so also do all modern translations — *The Emphatic Diaglott*, *Young's Bible translation*, *The Improved Version*. The latter says:

"'This text...is not contained in any Greek MS....earlier than the fifth century. It is not cited by any of the Greek ecclesiastical writers; nor by any of the early Latin fathers,

even when the subjects...treated would naturally have led them to appeal to its authority: it is, therefore, evidently spurious.'

"*Lang's Critical Commentary*...says:

"'Said words are wanting in all the Greek codices; also in the Codex Sinaiticus....and in all the ancient versions, including the Latin, as late as the eighth century; and...since that time they are found in three variations. Notwithstanding the Trinitarian controversies, they are not referred to by a single Greek Father, or by any of the old Latin Church Fathers.'" *E55,56,57*

See also **1 JOHN 5:5,9-11,20; 2 JOHN 3,9; JUDE 1,4,21**.

REV. 1:1: "The Revelation of Jesus Christ, which God gave unto him...."

See also **Rev. 1:4,5; 3:12,14**.

REV. 3:21: "To him that overcometh will I grant to sit with me in my throne, even as I also overcame, and am set down with my Father in his throne."

See also **REV. 5:13**.

See also Index: **The Creator; Holy Spirit**

TYPES AND SYMBOLS: SYMBOLS

The word **symbol** does not occur in the New Testament, nor does the word ***sumballon***, "**a sign by which one knows or infers a thing**" (*Liddell and Scott*). Nevertheless the Bible contains much symbolic language. The word ***tupos*** is translated **ensamples** five times, **example** (*margin* **figure** once), and **figure** two other times, **pattern** and **print**, twice, and **fashion, form**, and **manner**, once each, and **figure** once in the *margin*, and types once, in the *margin* **1 Corinthians 10:11**: "Now all these things happened unto them for **ensamples**" (*margin*, **types**).

SYMBOLS

AIR (Power of the)

"**Spiritual rulership**" *C238*

"The 'change' to these 'feet' members will bring them into the same fellowship and glory and power already entered by the members who slept: they will be 'caught away' from earthly conditions to be united 'Together' 'with the Lord in the **air**' — in the spiritual rulership of the world. As already shown, the 'air' here mentioned symbolizes **spiritual rule** or power. Satan has long occupied the position of 'prince of the power of the air' (Eph. 2:2), and has used for his co-workers and joint-rulers in it many of the great ones of Babylon, who, under his blinding errors, verily think they are doing God service. But in due time the present 'prince of the air' shall be bound, and shall deceive no more; and the present heavens, the great Antichrist system, will 'pass away with a great noise,' while the new prince of the air, the true spiritual ruler, Christ Jesus, will take the dominion and establish the 'new heavens,' uniting with himself in this power or 'air' his bride, the 'overcomers' of the Gospel age. Thus the 'new heavens' will supersede the present 'air' powers." *C238*

EPH: 2:2: "Wherein in time past ye walked...according to the prince of the power of the air, the spirit that now worketh in the children of disobedience."

ARM

"**Support, strength**" *R1936:4*

"Hear them — 'With whom my hand [my power, dominion, kingdom] shall be established: mine arm [of support and strength] also shall strengthen him [to perform the great preparatory work of sacrifice]. The enemy shall have no advantage over him, nor the son of iniquity have power to hurt him. [All things, even the deep and wicked designs of

the adversary, shall be so overruled by God as to work together for good to this David class].'" *R1936:4*

EXOD. 6:6: "...I will redeem you with a stretched out arm...."

DEUT. 33:27: "...underneath are the everlasting arms...."

BABYLON

"**Christendom**...**confusion**...." *D26*

"The fact that Christendom does not accept the Bible term 'Babylon,' and its significance, confusion, as applicable to her, is no proof that it is not so. Neither did ancient Babylon claim the Bible significance — confusion. Ancient Babylon presumed to be the very 'gate of God;' but God labeled it Confusion (Gen. 11:9); and so it is with her antitype today. She calls herself Christendom, the gateway to God and everlasting life, while God calls her Babylon — confusion." *D26*

"...**the Church of Rome**....a general or family name for all the nominal Christian systems...." *C154*

"The name Babylon originally signified **God's gateway**; but afterward, in derision, it came to mean **mixture** or **confusion**. In the book of Revelation this name is applied specifically to the church nominal, which, from being the gate-way to glory, became a gate-way to error and confusion, a miserable mixture composed chiefly of tares, hypocrites — a confused mass of worldly profession in which the Lord's jewels are buried, and their true beauty and luster hidden. In symbolic prophecy, the term Babylon is applied at times only to the Church of Rome, called 'Babylon the Great, the Mother of Harlots.' The name could apply only to her for centuries, so long as she was the only mixed system and would tolerate no others; but other ecclesiastical systems, not so great as the 'mother,' nor yet so wicked, nor so radically wrong, sprang up out of her, through various attempted though imperfect reforms. Errors, tares and worldliness in these also largely predominating, the name Babylon is used as a general or family name for all the nominal Christian systems, and now includes not only the Church of Rome, but all Protestant sects as well; for, since Papacy is designated the mother system, we must regard the various Protestant systems which descended from her as the daughters — a fact very generally admitted by Protestants, and sometimes with pride." *C154*

JER. 51:7: "Babylon *hath been* a golden cup in the LORD'S hand, that made all the earth drunken..."

REV. 17:5: "And upon her forehead...a name written, **MYSTERY, BABYLON THE GREAT, THE MOTHER OF HARLOTS AND ABOMINATIONS OF THE EARTH**."

BAPTISM

"'**Buried into' ('Christ's death')**." *F441*

"But when we understand this verse, in harmony with the two preceding it, to refer to baptism **into death**, to planting **in death**, in the likeness of **Christ's death**, then all is plain, all is reasonable. Having been called of the Lord to be joint-heirs with his Son, and to suffer with him and to be dead with him, to live with him and to reign with him, how sure we may feel that if we are faithful to this call, if we are planted or buried into his death, like as he was buried into death — as faithful soldiers of God and servants of the Truth — we shall eventually get the full reward which God promises to such, viz., a share in the First Resurrection — to glory, honor and immortality." *F441*

ROM. 6:4: "...we are buried with him by baptism into death...."

BEAST

"**Papacy**" *B271; C112*

"This character is very forcibly delineated even in the names applied to it by the inspired writers. Paul calls it 'That Wicked One,' 'The Man of Sin,' 'The Mystery of Iniquity,' 'The Antichrist,' and 'The Son of Perdition;' the Prophet Daniel calls it 'The Abomination that maketh desolate' (Dan. 11:31; 12:11); and our Lord refers to the same character as 'The Abomination of Desolation, spoken of by Daniel the prophet' (Matt. 24:15), and again as a 'Beast' (Rev. 13:1-8). This same character was also

prefigured by a little horn, or power, out of a terrible beast that Daniel saw in his prophetic vision, which had eyes, and a mouth that spoke great things, and which prospered and made war with the saints, and prevailed against them. (Dan. 7:8,21) John also saw and warned the Church against this character, saying, 'Ye have heard that Antichrist shall come.' He then advises how to escape Antichrist's influence. (1 John 2:18-27) The book of Revelation, too, is in large part a detailed symbolic prophecy concerning this same Antichrist — though this we shall merely glance at here, leaving its more particular examination for a succeeding volume." *B271*

"Thus, the same kind of union between church and state which had worked such injury to the truth before, in Papacy, was the snare by which the adversary impeded and obstructed the 'cleansing of the sanctuary,' so nobly begun. Reformation and cleansing for a time ceased, and, instead of progressing with the cleansing, the reformers gave attention to organizing themselves, and to revamping and repolishing many of the old papal dogmas, at first so loudly condemned. Thus did Satan decoy the reformers into the very 'Harlotry' (union of church and state) which they had denounced in the Church of Rome. And thus the deadly

wound which Papacy had received was for a time healed. Rev. 13:3" *C112*

REV. 13:2: "And the beast which I saw was like unto a leopard...."

"**Universal empires**" *A257; B354*

"But now, calling to mind the difference of standpoint, let us look at the same four universal empires of earth from the standpoint of God and those in harmony with him, as portrayed in vision to the beloved prophet Daniel. As to us these kingdoms appear inglorious and beastly, so to him these four universal empires were shown as four great and ravenous wild beasts. And to his view the coming Kingdom of God (the stone) was proportionally grander than as seen by Nebuchadnezzar. Daniel says: 'I saw in my vision by night, and behold the four winds of heaven strove upon the great sea. And four great beasts came up from the sea, diverse one from another. The first was like a lion and had eagle's wings;...and behold another beast, a second, like a bear;...and lo another, like a leopard....After this I saw in the night visions, and behold a fourth beast, dreadful and terrible, and strong exceedingly; and it had great iron teeth. It devoured and brake in pieces, and stamped the residue with the feet of it; and it was diverse from all the beasts that were before it, and it had ten horns.' Dan. 7:2-7" *A257*

"**Holy Roman Empire**" *B354*

"Although Papacy was organized, as a religious system, long before, and was even 'Set up' in temporal power in A.D. 539, yet it was Charlemagne who first actually bestowed and formerly recognized the **temporal dominion** of the pope. As Charlemagne was the first emperor over the 'Holy Roman Empire,' A.D. 800, so Francis II was the last, and he voluntarily surrendered his title in A.D. 1806. As, prior to the year 800, Papacy was rising, supported by the Roman 'Beast' (people) and by its 'Horns' (powers), so since 1800 it has been cast off from temporal authority over kings and peoples, and has been torn and pillaged by those who formally gave it support. (Rev. 17:16,17) Today, though still the recipient of honors, and still possessed of a wide influence over the consciences of the people, Papacy bemoans its loss of everything resembling temporal dominion." *B354*

BEHEADED

"**Their own wills...surrendered**" *R2845:1*

"The apostle gives us the key, saying, 'The head of every man is Christ; the head of the woman is the man; and the head of Christ is God.' (1 Cor. 11:3) As a woman who becomes a wife accepts her husband as the head of the family, so the church accepts Christ as its Head, and each member of the church thus comes into relationship with the

Lord as a member of his body — not the Head; and all of these, to be acceptable as members of the figurative body of Christ, must be will-less, headless: their own wills must be surrendered, so that, like their Lord, they can say, 'Not my will, but thine, be done.' They must be headless in the sense of ignoring their own wills, being dead to self and actuated henceforth by the will of the head of the body, Christ Jesus. His will, his mind, his Spirit, must dwell in each member of the body, and abound, if it would abide a member of his body, the church. Thus, as the wife loses her own name, and accepts the name of her husband and his headship, so each member of the bride of Christ must lose his or her individuality in order to be accepted as the bride of Christ. It is this self-surrender to Christ on the part of his church that is represented in the symbolism of the text before us." *R2845:1*

REV. 20:4: "...The souls of them that were beheaded for the witness of Jesus and for the word of God...."

BLOOD

"**Consecrated life**" *T45*

"The second ram, 'The ram of consecration,' showed what effect the sacrifice will have upon us, as the first showed how God receives our sacrifice. Aaron and his sons laid their hands upon the head of the ram of consecration, showing thus that it represented them. And Moses slew it and took its blood (consecrated **life**) and put it upon each separately, thus showing that our consecration is an individual work. And he put it upon the tip of the right ear, and upon the thumb of the right hand, and upon the great toe of the right foot. Thus by our consecration we are enabled to have the ' **Hearing of faith**,' and to appreciate God's promises as none but the consecrated can. Our hands are consecrated, so that whatsoever our hands find to **do** we do it with our might as unto the Lord. Our feet are consecrated, so that henceforth we '**Walk** not as other Gentiles' but '**Walk** in newness of life,' '**Walk** by faith,' '**Walk** in the spirit,' '**Walk** in the light' and even 'as we received Christ, so **walk** in him.' [Lev. 8] Verses 23,24" *T45*

LEV. 8:23,24: "...Moses took of the blood...and put *it* upon the tip of Aaron's right ear, and upon the thumb of his right hand, and upon the great toe of his right foot. And he brought Aaron's sons, and Moses put of the blood upon the tip of their right ear, and upon the thumbs of their right hands, and upon the great toes of their right feet: and Moses sprinkled the blood upon the altar round about."

BLUE

"**Faithfulness**" *T34*

"The scarlet, blue, purple, etc., which composed the ephod, indicated the conditions of the two covenants. The **scarlet**

shows how God provides redemption from the Adamic curse through the blood of the ransom. The **white linen** indicates the restoration of man to his original purity. The **blue** vouchsafes to him the aid, the ability, faithfully to maintain his righteous character. The **purple** proclaims the royal power of the Kingdom

cooperating. All of these blessings woven together are made sure by the divine power of the anointed Priest, represented in the interwoven thread of **gold**. Thus Jehovah has laid both of these covenants, as they relate to men, upon one who is both mighty and willing to execute these glorious covenanted blessings — 'in due time.'" *T34*

EXOD. 28:6: "And they shall make the ephod *of* gold, *of* blue, and *of* purple, *of* scarlet, and fine twined linen...."

NUM. 15:38,39: "...bid them...make them fringes...and...put upon the fringe...a ribband of blue...that ye may look upon it, and remember all the commandments...and do them...."

BONNET

"**To indicate that he was not the head**..." *T36*

"We see the **Body**, or members of the High Priest, again individually typified by the under-priests, who each wore a 'Bonnet,' covering his head, to indicate that he was not the head of the Priesthood, but merely a member of the Body. God gave Jesus 'To be the **Head** over all things to the Church, which is his Body.' (Eph. 1:22,23) It is for this reason that Paul insists that a woman's head should be covered as indicating that she is not the head; the husband and wife being typical of Jesus and his Bride — the Church of the First-born." *T36*

LEV. 8:13: "And Moses brought Aaron's sons...and put bonnets upon them."

BRIMSTONE

"...**intensifies the thought of destruction**." *A318*

"...when **brimstone** is added to **fire** in the symbol, it intensifies the thought of destruction; for nothing is more deadly to all forms of life than the fumes of sulphur." *A318* (For quote see **SYMBOLS: Earth**)

REV. 20:10: "And the devil...was cast into the lake of fire and brimstone...."

ISA. 30:33: "For Tophet *is*...for the king... prepared...the breath of the LORD, like a stream of brimstone, doth kindle it."

CITY

"...**religious government**" *D25*

"In symbolic prophecy a 'city' signifies a religious government backed by power and influence. Thus, for

instance, the 'Holy city, the new Jerusalem,' is the symbol used to represent the established Kingdom of God, the overcomers of the Gospel Church exalted and reigning in glory. The Church is also, and in the same connection, represented as a woman, 'The bride, the Lamb's wife,' in power and glory, and backed by the power and authority of Christ, her husband. 'And there came unto me one of the seven angels...saying, Come hither, **I will show thee the bride, the Lamb's wife**. And he...**showed me that great city, the holy Jerusalem**.' Rev. 21:9,10" *D25*

REV. 21:9,10: "And there came unto me one of the seven angels...saying,...I will shew thee the bride, the Lamb's wife. And he...shewed me that great **city**, the holy Jerusalem...."

CLAY

"'**Imitation of stone**;' '**counterfeit**' '**Kingdom of God**'" *A253, 254*

"The iron empire, Rome, was by far the strongest, and endured longer than its predecessors. In fact, the Roman Empire still continues, as represented in the nations of Europe. This division is represented in the ten toes of the image. The clay element blended with the iron in the feet represents the mixture of church and state. This mixture is in the Scriptures termed 'Babylon' — confusion. As we shall presently see, **stone** is the symbol of the true Kingdom of God, and Babylon substituted an imitation of stone — clay — which it has united with the fragmentary remains of the [iron] Roman Empire. And this mixed system — church and state — the Church nominal wedded to the kingdoms of this world, which the Lord calls Babylon, confusion, presumes to call itself Christendom — Christ's Kingdom. Daniel explains: 'Whereas thou sawest iron mixed with miry clay, they shall mingle themselves with the seed of men [church and world blend — Babylon], but they shall not cleave one to another, even as iron is not mixed with clay.' They cannot thoroughly amalgamate. 'And in the days of these kings [the kingdoms represented by the toes, the so-called "Christian kingdoms" or "Christendom"] shall the God of heaven set up a kingdom which shall never be destroyed; and the kingdom shall not be left to other people, but it shall break in pieces and consume all these kingdoms; and it shall stand forever.' Dan. 2:43,44

"Daniel does not here state the time for the end of these Gentile governments: that we find elsewhere; but every foretold circumstance indicates that today the end is nigh, even at the doors. The Papal system has long claimed that it is the kingdom which the God of heaven here promised to set up, and that, in fulfillment of this prophecy, it did break in pieces and consume all other kingdoms. The truth, however, is that the nominal Church merely united with earthly empires as the clay with the iron, and that Papacy

never was the true Kingdom of God, but merely a counterfeit of it. One of the best evidences that Papacy did not destroy and consume these earthly kingdoms is that they still exist. And now that the miry clay has become dry and 'Brittle,' it is losing its adhesive power, and the iron and clay show signs of dissolution, and will quickly crumble when smitten by the 'Stone,' the true Kingdom." *A253, 254*

DAN. 2:41: "And whereas thou sawest the feet and toes, part of potters' clay, and part of iron, the kingdom shall be divided; but there shall be in it of the strength of the iron, forasmuch as thou sawest the iron mixed with miry clay."

COPPER ("Brass")

"**Human nature in its perfection**" *T18*

"It is noticeable that all the furniture inside the Tabernacle was of gold, or covered with gold, while in the 'Court' everything was of copper. Wood, which was the base covered with these metals, was used, we believe, to make the articles of lighter weight, more easily portable, than if of solid metal. This was an important consideration when they traveled. The vessels of the Temple, representative of the same things, were of solid metals. (1 Kings 7:47-50) These two metals, gold and copper, were used, we think, to represent two different natures — copper representing the **human** nature in its perfection, a little lower than the angelic nature; and gold representing the **divine** nature, far above angels, principalities and powers. As gold and copper are much alike in their appearance, yet different in quality, so the human nature is an image and likeness of the divine, adapted to earthly conditions." *T18*

EXOD. 27:1-4,6: "...thou shalt make an altar... and thou shalt

overlay it with brass....all the vessels thereof thou shalt make *of* brass. And...a grate of...brass; and...brasen rings....And... staves..., and overlay them with brass."

CROWN

"**Power to govern**" *B83*

"But though the crown was removed, i.e., though the **power** to govern even themselves was taken from them, the **right** to rule (the scepter), conveyed originally in God's promise, was not removed. Though universal dominion was given to Nebuchadnezzar and his successors, as illustrated in the great image, and by the four great beasts, yet it was to continue only a limited period. The original promise to Israel must be fulfilled — the crown was removed, but the scepter remained until Shiloh came. This was even pointed out in the decree against Zedekiah: Take off the crown — I will overturn it, **till** he come whose **right it is**, and I will give it unto him." *B83*

EZEK. 21:26,27: "Take off the crown:...*abase him that is* high. I will overturn, overturn, overturn it: and it shall be

no *more*, until he come whose right it is; and I will give it *him*."

CUP

"The **experiences and discipline** of life, as prepared by the Father for his children." *Berean Topical Index*; *R2468:6,2469:1; R2780:1*

"How the grace of humility shines out in all the little affairs of our dear Redeemer's ministry; even at this moment of his surrender to his enemies he does not boast that his course is a voluntary one, nor seek praise as a martyr! He declares the simple truth, that the Father required this of him as an evidence of his personal loyalty to him. He confesses himself a servant of God, a son who learned obedience by the things which he suffered. 'The cup which the Father hath given me, shall I not drink it?' Indeed, this was the strength of his victory — his will was fully submitted to the Father's will, and his faith grasped the fact that the Father permitted no unnecessary evils to come upon him, but only such as he could and would overrule for good." *R2468:6, 2469:1*

"The Cup Which the Father Pours"

"Our Golden text is the cream of this whole lesson. It expresses most beautifully, most concisely, most forcefully, the principles which underlay our Master's obedience to the heavenly Father, and which enabled him in all things to come off conqueror and 'overcomer;' and all who are seeking to follow in the footsteps of Jesus, to be his disciples in deed, will do well to ponder the thought expressed in these words: 'The cup which my Father hath given me, shall I not drink it?' The thought is clear: It is that he recognized the circumstances and conditions in which he found himself, as being not of those of his own making, nor yet those made for him by his enemies. He recognized the divine supervision of all of his affairs, and knew that nothing could possibly come upon him except as the Father would permit; and because the Father had so arranged it, had poured out this cup for him, therefore it was his duty on his part to drink it.

"We should not undertake to say that the Lord's people should never look for ways of escape from impending trials and difficulties; for we have the Lord's promise to this effect that he will not suffer us to be tempted above that we are able to endure, but will with the temptation provide a way of escape from those features of it which would be beyond the possibility of endurance. When therefore, we feel that our submission to evil has about reached its climax, where succor must come or we must utterly fall, that is the time for us to look about us to see what way of escape the Lord is opening for us. But we are to be sure that the way of **escape** which we take is not of our own, but of the Lord's provision; for if we should run away from duty and trial and

testing in one place, it would merely be to fall into other trials and testings, perhaps severer, in another quarter. We are to know in advance that trials, difficulties, persecutions, slanders, are all a part of the portion which the Father has poured out, not only for the Head of the body, but also for all the members. We are therefore to be prepared to endure hardness as good soldiers; not fleeing, but courageously accepting as of the Lord's providence whatever he may permit to come to us, unless we shall see a reasonable, proper, honorable way of escaping from it, which will not be in violation of our covenant, nor in violation of any law of righteousness.

"No other lesson, perhaps, is more needed by the Lord's followers than the one of willingness to drink the cup which the Father pours — a recognition that the Father is guiding and directing in our affairs because we are his, as members of the body of the Anointed One. In these respects the consecrated children of God occupy a very different position from the world, with whom the Father is not dealing as sons, who are not on trial for glory, honor and immortality, and for whom, consequently, he is not now pouring cups of trial, testing, endurance, etc. 'The cup which we drink, is it not the communion of the blood of Christ?' — a share in his sufferings? 'If we suffer with him we shall also reign with him; if we be dead with him we believe that we shall also live with him." *R2780:1*

JOHN 18:11: "...the cup which my Father hath given me, shall I not drink it?"

MATT. 20:23: "...Ye shall drink indeed of my cup...."

DANCE

"Expressive symbol of **joy**." *R2003:5*

"'And it was so that when they that bare the ark had gone six paces he [David] sacrificed oxen and fatlings, and David danced before the Lord with all his might [another expressive symbol of joy], and David was girded with a linen ephod. So David and all the house of Israel brought up the ark of the Lord with shouting and with the sound of the trumpet.' 2 Sam. 6:13-15." *R2003:5*

2 SAM. 6:14: "...David danced before the LORD with all *his* might...."

DAY

"**A day for a year**" (**360 days**) *B91*

"In proof that a day for a year is **Bible usage** in symbolic prophecy, we cite the following instances thus fulfilled: (a) The spies were caused to wander forty days searching Canaan, typical of Israel's forty years wandering in the wilderness. (Num. 14:33,34) (b) When God would announce to Israel by Ezekiel a period of adversity, he had the

prophet symbolize it, declaring, 'I have appointed thee each day for a year.' (Ezek. 4:1-8) (c) In that notable and already fulfilled prophecy of Daniel 9:24-27, examined in the preceding chapter, in which the time to the anointing of our Lord is shown, and also the seven years of favor to Israel thereafter, in the midst of which Messiah was 'cut off,' symbolic time is used: Each day of the seventy symbolic weeks represented a year, and was so fulfilled. (d) Again, in Dan. 7:25 and 12:7, the period of Papacy's triumph is

given as three and a half times, and this we know (and will show in this volume) was fulfilled in twelve hundred and sixty years (360 x 3 = 1260). The same period is mentioned in the book of Revelation: In chapter 12:14 it is called three and a half times (360 x 3 = 1260); in chapter 13:5 it is termed forty-two months (30 x 42 = 1260); and in chapter 12:6 it is called twelve hundred and sixty days. The fulfillment of these prophecies will be particularly examined hereafter. Suffice it now to note that the use by the Spirit of the word 'Time,' elsewhere, agrees with the present use of that term — that in symbolic prophecy a 'Time' is a symbolic year of three hundred and sixty years; and the fact that three and a half times, applied as a measure to the triumph of the apostate church, has been fulfilled in twelve hundred and sixty years, establishes the principle upon which the **seven times** of Gentile dominion are reckoned (360 x 7 = 2520) and proves their end to be A.D. 1914; for if three and a half times are 1260 days (years), seven times will be a period just twice as long, namely, 2520 years." *B91*

NUM. 14:34; EZEK. 4:6: "...Each day for a year."

DOGS

"**Gentiles**" *R2604:2; R3786-87*

"Lazarus represented the outcasts from divine favor under the law, who, sin-sick, hungered and thirsted after righteousness. 'Publicans and sinners' of Israel, seeking a better life, and truth-hungry Gentiles who were 'feeling after God' constituted the Lazarus class. These, at the time of the utterance of this parable, were entirely destitute of those special divine blessings which Israel enjoyed. They lay at the gate of the rich man. No rich promises of royalty were theirs; not even typically were they cleansed; but, in moral sickness, pollution and sin, they were companions of 'dogs.' Dogs were regarded as detestable creatures in those days, and the typically clean Jew called the outsiders 'heathen' and 'dogs,' and would never eat with them, nor marry, nor have any dealings with them. — John 4:9." *R2604:2*

See also *R3786-87*

MATT. 15:26,27: "But he answered and said, It is not meet to take the children's bread, and cast *it* to dogs. And she

said, Truth, Lord: yet the dogs eat of the crumbs which fall from their masters' table."

DOOR

"'**The first veil**,' into 'the Holy' — 'our full consecration'" *T20*

"The 'Court,' the justified human condition, is entered by faith only; but while we must retain the faith that justifies, we must do more, if we would experience a change of nature and become 'new creatures,' 'partakers of the heavenly calling,' to be 'partakers of the divine nature.' Entering the 'Holy,' therefore, implies our full consecration to the Lord's service, our begetting of the spirit and our start in the race for the prize of the divine nature — the terms of which are, faithfulness to our vow, crucifying the justified flesh, presenting our human wills and bodies living sacrifices to God; no longer to seek human pleasure, honor, praise, etc., but to be dead to these and alive to the heavenly impulses. Yet, into this condition, also, we still come through Christ Jesus our Lord, who not only opened for us the 'Gate' of justification through faith in his blood, but who also opened the 'door' (the first veil) into the Tabernacle, 'a new way of life,' as spirit beings, through and beyond the second veil, by the sacrifice of our justified flesh." *T20*

Christ the Door:

JOHN 10:7: "...I am the door of the sheep."

DOVE

"**Peace and salvation**....the meek and quiet Spirit...of all who possess the Spirit of holiness unto the Lord." *R2565:5*

"A dove was a favorite figure with the Jews as an emblem of peace and salvation. Indeed, Noah's dove, with its olive branch, seems to have become a symbol to all civilized peoples. It was most appropriate, therefore, that since some figure was to be used as an outward evidence of divine blessing, the dove should be that figure. Yet we are not to suppose that the holy spirit is a dove, nor that it has bodily shape like a dove, but as instructed in all the Scriptures, that it is a divine power or influence. The dove represented fittingly the meek and quiet spirit which is one of the striking ornaments of all those who possess the spirit of holiness unto the Lord. Such experiences as these which our Lord enjoyed are not granted to his followers nor to be expected today, — neither the voice nor the opened heavens, nor the dove. The coming of the holy spirit to the church at Pentecost was signalized by an outward demonstration, **which serves the entire church** throughout the age. Such outward demonstrations were essential at the beginning, as assurances to us that we are not following some vain imaginations of our own or other men's minds in respect to the holy spirit, and now we

merely have the realities, which at first were symbolized or represented in tangible form. All who, after believing unto repentance, are justified from their sins, and subsequently present themselves to the Lord to be baptized into his death (Rom. 6:3), receive an opening of the heavens before them in the sense of an opening of their minds to see heavenly things, to appreciate spiritual matters; as the Apostle declares, 'God reveals them unto us by his spirit; for the spirit searcheth all things, yea, the deep things of God,' — things which 'eye hath not seen, nor ear heard, neither hath entered into the heart of [the natural] man.' (1 Cor. 2:10) They also by faith hear the voice of the Father, speaking unto them, saying that, having thus come unto him through Jesus, and having thus consecrated their lives to him, they are now beloved sons, accepted in the well-beloved One. They also receive the blessing of the holy spirit, in the shedding abroad in their hearts of the peace-giving, meek and gentle spirit of holiness, and this becomes more and more a reality with them as they become more and more 'filled with the spirit.'" *R2565:5,6*

GEN. 8:11: "...the dove came in...and, lo, in her mouth...an olive leaf...so Noah knew that the waters were abated...."

MATT. 3:16: "...Jesus, when he was baptized went up...out of the water: and, lo, the heavens were opened unto him, and he saw the Spirit of God descending like a dove and lighting upon him...."

EARTH

"**Society**" *A318, 323*

"Throughout the Scriptures, **earth**, when used symbolically, represents society; **mountains** represent kingdoms; **heavens**, the powers of spiritual control; **seas**, the restless, turbulent, dissatisfied masses of the world. **Fire** represents the destruction of whatever is burned — tares, dross, earth (social organization), or whatever it may be. And when **brimstone** is added to **fire** in the symbol it typifies the thought of destruction; for nothing is more deadly to all forms of life than the fumes of sulphur.

"With this thought in mind, if we turn to Peter's symbolic

prophecy of the Day of Wrath, we find it in perfect accord with the above testimony of the prophets. He says: 'The world that was, being overflowed with water, perished. [Not the literal earth and literal heavens ceased there, but that dispensation or arrangement of things, existing before the flood, passed away.] But the heavens and the earth which are now [the present dispensation] by the same word [of divine authority] are kept in store, reserved unto fire.'

"The fact that the water was literal leads some to believe that the fire also must be literal, but this by no means follows. The temple of God once was of literal stones, but that does not set aside the fact that the Church, which is

the true temple, is built up a spiritual building, a holy temple, not of earthly material. Noah's ark was literal, too, but it typified Christ and the power in him which will replenish and reorganize society.

"'The Day of the Lord will come as a thief in the night [unobservedly], in the which the heavens [present powers of the air, of which Satan is the chief or prince] shall pass away with a great [hissing] noise, and the elements shall melt with fervent heat; the earth [social organization] also, and the works that are therein [pride, rank, aristocracy, royalty], shall be burned up. The heavens being on fire shall be dissolved and the elements shall melt with fervent heat. Nevertheless we, according to his promise, look for new heavens [the new spiritual power — Christ's kingdom] and a new earth' [earthly society organized on a new basis — on the basis of love and justice, rather than of might and oppression]. 2 Peter 3:6,7,10-13" *A318*

"David, the prophet through whose Psalms God was pleased to foretell so much concerning our Lord at his first advent, gives some vivid descriptions of this Day of Trouble by which his glorious reign will be introduced; and he uses these various symbols — fire, storm and darkness — alternately and interchangeably, in his descriptions. Thus, for instance, he says (Psa. 50:3): 'Our God shall come, and shall not keep silence: a fire shall devour before him, and it shall be very tempestuous round about him.' In Psa. 97:2-6: 'Clouds and darkness are round about him: righteousness and justice are the support of his throne. A fire goeth before him and burneth up his enemies round about. His lightnings give light to the world; the earth seeth it and trembleth. The mountains melt away like wax at the presence of the Lord, at the presence of the Lord of the whole earth. The [new] heavens [then] tell of his righteousness, and all the people see his glory.' Psa. 46:6: 'The peoples raged, the kingdoms were moved: he uttered his voice, the earth melted.' Again (Psa. 110:2-6), 'Rule thou in the midst of thine enemies....The Lord at thy right hand shall crush kings in the day of his wrath. He will judge among the nations — there shall be a fulness of corpses. He crusheth the heads [rulers] over many countries.' Again (46:1-5), 'God is **our** protection;...therefore **we** will not fear when the earth [society] is transformed, and when the mountains [kingdoms] are swept into the midst of the sea [swallowed up by the turbulent masses], when the waters thereof roar and are troubled [infuriated], when the mountains shake with the swelling thereof.... God will help her [the Bride, the faithful "little flock"] at the dawning of the morning.'

"And in the same Psalm, verses 6-10, the same story is restated in other symbols: 'The peoples rage, kingdoms are displaced: he letteth his voice be heard, the earth [society]

melteth. Jehovah of hosts is with **us**, a Tower for us is the God of Jacob.' Then, viewing the results of that time of trouble from beyond it, he adds: 'Come ye, behold the deeds of the Lord — what desolations he hath made in the earth....Desist [from your former ways, O people] and know [come to the knowledge] that I am God. I will be exalted among the peoples, I will be exalted in the earth.' The 'new earth' or new order and arrangement of society will exalt God and his law, as over and controlling all." *A323*

PSA. 46:1,2,6: "GOD *is* our refuge....Therefore will not we fear, though the earth be removed....the earth melted."

HEB. 12:26: "Whose voice then shook the earth: but now he hath promised,...Yet once more I shake not the earth only, but also heaven."

EARTHQUAKE

"**Revolution**" *A336*

"The deliverance of Israel from Egypt and from the plagues which came upon the Egyptians seems to illustrate the coming emancipation of the world, at the hands of the greater than Moses, whom he typified. It will be a deliverance from Satan and every agency he has devised for man's bondage to sin and error. And as the plagues upon Egypt had a hardening effect as soon as removed, so the temporary relief from the pains of this Day of the Lord will tend to harden some, and they will say to the poor, as did the Egyptians to Israel, 'Ye are idle,' and therefore dissatisfied! and will probably, like them, attempt to increase the burden. (Exod. 5:4-23) But in the end such will wish, as did Pharaoh in the midnight of his last plague, that they had dealt more leniently and wisely long ago. (Exod. 12:30-33) To mark further the similarity, call to mind that the troubles of this Day of the Lord are called 'seven vials of wrath,' or 'seven last plagues,' and that it is not until the last of these that the **great earthquake** (revolution) occurs, in which every mountain (kingdom) will disappear. Rev. 16:17-20" *A336*

REV. 16:18: "...there was a great earthquake, such as was not since men were upon the earth, so mighty an earthquake,...so great."

EGYPT

"**The world of mankind**" *C315*

"The Great Pyramid, however, proves to be a storehouse of important truth — scientific, historic and prophetic — and its testimony is found to be in perfect accord with the Bible, expressing the prominent features of its truths in beautiful and fitting symbols. It is by no means an addition to the written revelation: that revelation is complete and perfect, and needs no addition. But it is a strong **corroborative witness** to God's plan; and few students can carefully

examine it, marking the harmony of its testimony with that of the written Word, without feeling impressed that its construction was planned and directed by the same divine wisdom, and that it is the pillar of witness referred to by the prophet in the above quotation.

"If it was built under God's direction, to be one of his witnesses to men, we might reasonably expect some allusion to it in the written Word of God. And yet, since it was evidently a part of God's purpose to keep secret, until the Time of the End, features of the plan of which it gives testimony, we should expect that any reference to it in the Scriptures would be, as it is, somewhat under cover — to be recognized only when due to be understood.

"Isaiah, as above quoted, testifies of an altar and pillar in the land of Egypt, which 'shall be for a **sign** and for a **witness** unto the Lord of hosts in the land of Egypt.' And the context shows that it shall be a witness **in the day** when the great Savior and Deliverer shall come to break the chains of oppression and to set at liberty Sin's captives — of which things our Lord preached at his first advent. (Luke 4:18) The scope of this prophecy is but dimly seen, however, until Egypt is recognized as a symbol or type of the world of mankind, full of vain philosophies, which only darken their understandings, but ignorant of the true light. As Israel typified the world which shall be delivered from the bondage of Sin by the great antitype of Moses, and whose sin-offering has been given by the antitype of Aaron, so Egypt represents the empire of Sin, the dominion of death (Heb. 2:14), which for so long has held in chains of slavery many who will be glad to go forth to serve the Lord under the leadership of one like unto but greater than Moses. Acts 3:22,23" *C315*

HOS. 11:1: "When Israel *was* a child, then I loved him, and called my son out of Egypt."

ISA. 19:19-21,24,25: "In that day shall there be an altar to the LORD in the midst of the land of Egypt, and a pillar at the border thereof to the LORD. And it shall be for a sign and for a witness unto the LORD of hosts in the land of Egypt: for they shall cry unto the LORD because of the oppressors, and he shall send them a saviour, and a great one, and he shall deliver them. And the LORD shall be known to Egypt, and the Egyptians shall know the LORD in that day, and shall do sacrifice and oblation; yea, they shall vow a vow unto the LORD, and perform *it*....In that day shall Israel be the third with Egypt and with Assyria, *even* a blessing in the midst of the land: Whom the LORD of hosts shall bless, saying, Blessed *be* Egypt my people, and Assyria the work of my hands, and Israel mine inheritance."

EYE

"**Wisdom**" *R1490:6; 2240-42*

"Using another symbol, a stone, the Chief Corner Stone, to represent this coming One, verse 9 [Zech. 3] declares: 'Behold the stone that I have laid **before** Joshua [the type]. Upon that one stone rest seven eyes [perfect or divine wisdom, seven representing perfection and an eye representing knowledge.] Behold, I will engrave the engraving thereof, saith Jehovah of hosts. [God is superintending the engraving of his character and law upon all the "living stones" of the church — the body of Christ — as surely as he superintended the trial development of our Lord, the Chief Corner Stone: as it is written, They shall be all taught of God.]' 1 Pet. 2:4-7" *R1490:6*

See also *R2240-42*

PSA. 32:8: "I will instruct thee and teach thee in the way which thou shalt go: I will guide thee with mine eye."

ZECH. 3:9: "...upon one stone *shall be* seven eyes...."

REV. 5:6: "And...in the midst of the throne...stood a Lamb...having...seven eyes, which are the seven Spirits of God sent forth into all the earth."

FALSE PROPHET

"'**The Image of the Beast**,' — '**vitalized**' — which has taken the form of Church Federation." *Dvii-x*

"In order to see why the Protestant Federation of Churches should be symbolized as the Image of the Beast and as the False Prophet, we must examine other symbolical Scriptures. In Rev. 17:5, our attention is called to a great 'mystery.' The word 'Harlot' in Scriptural symbolism does not mean an immoral person. It refers to the Church, which was to be the Kingdom of God, but which lost her virginity and became united to an earthly husband, instead of her Heavenly Husband. To what earthly husband did the Church unite? To the Roman Empire. In the minds of Luther and other reformers there was no doubt that there was a close union between the Church and the world. The Church for a time claimed to be waiting for Christ to set up His Kingdom. Finally she said, 'I will not wait until the Second Coming of Christ, I will unite with the Roman Empire.'

"All know the result. The Roman Catholic Church was exalted, and reigned as a queen for centuries. This union of Church and State is represented in a famous picture found in Italy. On a throne the Pope and the Emperor sit side by side. On one side are cardinals, bishops, the lower clergy and the laity, in order of rank. On the other side are generals, lieutenants, soldiers, etc., down to the common people. Thus the union of Church and State was recognized.

"On the basis of this union all earthly governments are called Christian; for they claim unity as part and parcel with the Church. History tells us that for centuries the Church appointed the earthly kings. Whosoever the Pope desired was crowned. In proof of the supremacy of the Church a story is told in regard to Emperor Henry IV of Germany, who had incurred the Papal displeasure and who as a punishment was compelled to stand for three days without the castle gates of Canossa, barefooted, and clad only in the haircloth shirt of a penitent, exposed to the inclemency of mid-winter. Then he was forced to crawl on hands and knees into the presence of the Pontiff, whose silk stocking was removed in order that the emperor might kiss the Pope's great toe, in fulfillment of Psa. 2:12, 'Kiss the Son, O ye kings of the earth.'

"To our understanding this is a mistaken application of Scripture. 'The Son' is not the Pope. The 'holy hill' is the Kingdom of God. His agency is symbolized as the holy Mount Zion. The great Messiah will completely overthrow all the things of the present time, and will establish the Kingdom of Righteousness and Truth, which will uplift mankind out of sin and degradation.

"Roman Catholics believe that the Pope is the vicegerent of Christ, reigning in His stead. They believe that the present is the time when Satan is loosed to deceive the nations; that very shortly the Church will again get full power in the world; and that as a result every one who does not obey them will be destroyed. This interpretation points us to Revelation 13th and 20th Chapters. Protestants do not appreciate the situation. Doubtless all thinking people have noticed that overtures for union come from Protestantism, but never from Catholicism.

"The question now arises, Why should the Scriptures picture Protestantism as an Image of the Beast? When and how did this come about? From the time of the Reformation, Protestants had been striving individually to get out of the darkness of the past and thus had formulated many creeds and had organized many denominations. But about the middle of the last century the leaders began to see that if every one continued to study the Bible individually the time would come when each one would have an individual creed. To prevent what seemed to them a loss of power, they planned a union of Protestants in a system called the Evangelical Alliance.

"The Evangelical Alliance, an organization of the different Protestant denominations, was formed in 1846 for the very purpose of doing in their own way the same thing that Catholicism would do in its own way. Seeing the great power that Roman Catholics would exercise because of a united system, Protestants said, 'We are divided. We have

no power. We will organize.' Then and there, according to the Scriptures, they made an Image of the Beast.

"The Bible says, however, that before the Image can do any particular harm it must receive life from the two-horned Beast. (Rev. 13:15) This two-horned Beast with horns like a lamb, but a voice like a dragon, we believe represents the Church of England, which is not a party to the Evangelical Alliance. The Church of England makes the claim which the Church of Rome makes — that she is the true Church; that all others are wrong; that she has the original apostolic succession; and that no one is commissioned to preach unless he has had divine, apostolic hands laid upon him. This has been the contention of the Church of England for centuries, and constitutes the difference between that Church and all other Protestant denominations." *Dix,x*

REV. 16:13; 19:20: "And I saw three unclean spirits like frogs *come* out of the mouth of the dragon,...beast, and...false prophet....And the beast was taken, and with him the false prophet that wrought miracles before him...."

FAT

"**Loving zeal**" *T57,61*

"It was the Priest's 'two hands full' which he offered, thus representing our Lord's full capacity and ability of righteousness — required and yielded.

"But while Jesus, as a 'new creature,' was thus within the 'Holy,' enjoying the light of the golden candlestick, fed by the bread of truth, and offering acceptable incense to Jehovah, let us look out into the 'Court,' and yet farther out, beyond the 'Camp,' and see another work progressing simultaneously. We last saw the bullock dead, in the 'Court,' representing the man, Jesus, consecrated at thirty years of age, at his baptism. Now the fat of it has been placed upon the 'Brazen Altar,' and with it the kidneys and various life-producing organs. They are burning furiously, for a bullock has much fat. A cloud of smoke, called a 'Sweet savor to God,' rises in the sight of all who are in the 'Court,' the Levites — the household of faith, believers.

"This represents how Jesus' sacrifice appeared to **believing men**. They saw the devotion, the self-sacrifice, the loving zeal (fat) ascending to God as a sweet and acceptable sacrifice, during the three and a half years of our Lord's ministry. They well knew that with him the Father was ever well pleased. They knew from what they saw in the 'Court'(in the flesh) that he was acceptable, though they could not see the sacrifice in its full grandeur and perfection as it appeared in Jehovah's sight (in the 'Holy'), a sweet incense on the 'Golden Altar.'

"And while these two fires are burning (in the 'Court' the 'Fat,' and in the 'Holy' the 'Incense,' and their perfumes

ascending **at the same time**) there is another fire 'outside the camp.' There the body of flesh is being destroyed. [Lev. 16] (Verse 27) This represents Jesus' work as viewed by the world. To them it seems foolish that he should spend his life in sacrifice. They see not the necessity for it as man's ransom-price, nor the spirit of obedience which prompted it, as the Father saw these. They see not our Lord's loving perfections and self-denials as the believers (in the 'Court' condition) see them. No, nor did they in his day or since see in him their ideal hero and leader; they saw chiefly only those elements of his character which they despise as weak, not being in condition to love and admire him. To them his sacrifice was and is offensive, despised: he was despised and rejected of men, and as it were they blushed and hid their faces from him, as, in the type the Israelites turned disgusted from the stench of the burning carcass." *T57*

T61 **See TYPES: Lord's Goat**.

LEV. 3:14: "And he shall offer...the fat that covereth the inwards, and all the fat that *is* upon the inwards..."

FEET

"**The last members of the body**" *R3298:4*

"Rightly Dividing the Word of Truth"

"The scripture quoted by Satan [Psa. 91:11,12] we may now understand clearly, and this proves that the due time for its comprehension has come. We now see that the Psalm from which this is taken refers to the whole church of this Gospel Age — Jesus the Head, and his faithful, the members of the body. We now see that while there have been feet members in some respects all the way down through this Gospel age, yet in a particular sense the Lord's people of this present time are the 'feet of him that bringeth good tidings of peace.' (Isa. 52:7) We see that as the feet, the last members of the Jewish house, stumbled over Christ as the stone of stumbling and rock of offense in the end of the Jewish age, so now we see the feet members of the spiritual Israel in the harvest or end of this Gospel age will be in danger of stumbling over the rock of offense. As it is written, 'He shall be for a stone of stumbling and for a rock of offense to both the houses of Israel' — the fleshly and the spiritual. (Isa. 8:1,4) We see that as the fleshly house stumbled over the cross (1 Cor. 1:23), so the spiritual house is to stumble over the same obstacle — the cross." *R3298:4*

PSA. 91:12: "They shall bear thee up in *their* hands, lest thou dash thy foot against a stone."

ISA. 52:7: "How beautiful upon the mountains are the feet of him that bringeth good tidings..."

FEET-WASHING

"**Humility, service**" *R3536:4*

"The washing of the feet in olden times in oriental lands was very necessary to the comfort and hence to wash one another's feet would signify to comfort and refresh one another even in the most menial services. This is the essence of our Lord's lesson to us, that we should be glad for any opportunity for serving one another, for comforting and helping one another, however menial the service. Apply this now to the expression of our lesson. Mary washed our Lord's feet with perfume, and the Mary class, the most loving and devoted class in the church, are to help one another, to wash one another's feet; and they are to do so not in the rudest and clumsiest manner imaginable, but inspired by love and devotion one to another, they are to wash one another's feet with the kindness and sympathy and love and appreciation symbolized by Mary's spikenard; and their comforting of one another is to be with that love and solicitation which was represented by Mary's using the very locks of her head for her Master's feet." *R3536:4*

JOHN 13:14: "If I then, your Lord and Master, have washed your

feet; ye also ought to wash one another's feet."

FIELD

"**The civilized world**." *C140; D609*

"The civilized world is the 'field' of the parable. In it, during the Reformation, the winds of doctrinal strife, from one quarter and another, threw wheat and tares together into great batches (denominations), inclining some in one direction (doctrinally), and some in another. This huddled wheat and tares closely together, and took away much of the individuality of all. The doctrinal storms are long past, but the **divisions** continue from force of habit, and only here and there has a head of wheat attempted to lift itself to uprightness from the weight of the mass." *C140*

"'The field is the world,' our Lord explained; and in this discourse it represents a condition outside the nominal 'House' — outside of Babylon. Thus we are taught that not all 'come-outers' will be 'gathered,' but that the 'jewels' will be sought wherever they may be — 'The Lord knoweth them that are his,' and in this harvest gathering he is making up his jewels — gathering his 'elect,' to be joint-heirs in his Kingdom." *D609*

MATT. 13:38: "The field is the world...."

MATT. 24:40: "...two be in the field; the one shall be taken, and the other left."

FIG TREE

"**Jewish nation**" *D604*

"The sprouting of the fig tree may have been but a casual remark, but we incline to think that it was not. The peculiar circumstance narrated of our Lord's curse upon a fig tree which bore no fruit, and which withered away directly (Matt. 21:19,20) inclines us to believe that the fig tree in this prophecy may be understood to signify the Jewish nation. If so, it is being signally fulfilled; for not only are thousands of Israelites returning to Palestine, but the Zionist movement, as all know, has now assumed such proportions as to justify Conventions of representatives from all parts of the world to meet year by year to put in practical shape the proposal for the reorganization of a Jewish state in Palestine. These buds will thrive, but will bear no perfect fruit before October 1914 — the full end of 'Gentile Times.'" *D604*

JER. 24:5,6,8,9: "...Like these good figs, so will I acknowledge them that are carried away captive of Judah,....and I will bring them again to this land: and I will build them, and not pull them down; and I will plant them, and not pluck them up....And as the evil figs,...So will I give Zedekiah...and the residue of Jerusalem,... to be removed into all the kingdoms of the earth...."

MATT. 24:32: "Now learn a parable of the fig tree; When his branch is yet tender, and putteth forth leaves, ye know that summer is nigh..."

LUKE 13:6-9: "...A certain *man* had a fig tree...and he...sought fruit thereon, and found none. Then said he unto the dresser of his vineyard,...cut it down;....And he answering said...,let it alone this year also, till I shall dig about it, and dung it: And if it bear fruit, well: and if not...cut it down."

FIR

"**Man possessed of life everlasting**" *R3597:5*

"In grandly poetic language mountains and hills and trees and fields are represented as all rejoicing in that glorious day when Satan shall be bound, when the knowledge of the Lord shall fill the earth, when the darkness of sin shall have fled away before the glorious beams of the Sun of righteousness. Instead of the thorns of the present time, the wicked who lurkingly seek to injure the unwary foot, there shall then be the fir tree, an evergreen — symbolical of a man possessed of life everlasting. Instead of the briar with its thorns reaching forth to attack and ensnare those attracted by its sweet odor, shall come up the myrtle tree, beautiful and harmless. Thus does the Lord contrast the condition of the world today, full of men and women who are really thorns and briars in word and deed, injuring others, and the peaceable, strong, stalwart ones full of life and vigor in the next age." *R3597:5*

ISA. 55:13: "Instead of the thorn shall come up the fir tree...."

FIRE

"**Trouble, destruction, [trials]**" *R2604:4-2605:1,4; A318*

See *R2604:4-2605:1,4.*

"Throughout the Scriptures, **earth** when used symbolically represents society; **mountains** represent kingdoms; **heavens**, the powers of spiritual control; **seas**, the restless, turbulent, dissatisfied masses of the world. **Fire** represents the destruction of whatever is burned — tares, dross, earth (social organization), or whatever it may be. And when **brimstone** is added to **fire** in the symbol, it intensifies the thought of destruction; for nothing is more deadly to all forms of life than the fumes of sulphur." *A318*

ZEPH. 3:8: "...all the earth shall be devoured with the fire of my jealousy."

ZECH. 13:9: "...I will bring the third part through the fire and will refine them as silver...and...as gold is tried...."

FLESH AND BLOOD

"**Humanity**" *R3175:1*

"When, in the 50th verse, the Apostle declares that flesh and blood cannot inherit the kingdom of God, we are not to delude ourselves, as some dear Adventist friends are inclined to do, — by saying that 'flesh and blood' cannot inherit the kingdom of God, but flesh and bones can. We are to recognize that the Apostle, in the use of these words, 'flesh and blood,' signifies **human nature**, as when our Lord Jesus, for instance, said to Peter, '**Flesh and blood**' [humanity] hath not revealed it unto thee.' The Apostle's declaration thus properly understood, is that **human** nature cannot inherit the kingdom of God. This is in full accord with his own statements and the statements of other apostles, to the effect that we must become 'new creatures in Christ' — 'partakers of the **divine** nature,' if we would be sharers with our Lord in the coming kingdom, and its great and glorious work. Our Lord's words to Nicodemus are in full accord with this, when he declared, 'Except a man be born again [begotten now to a new nature, and born in the resurrection] he cannot enter the kingdom of God,' and cannot even see it. (John 3:3) Earthly beings of human nature, flesh and blood, can see earthly beings, but as 'no **man** hath seen God at any time,' likewise no **man** can see the glorified Son of God; and for similar reasons none will be able with the natural eye to see the glorified church — for all these in their resurrection change will be spirit beings, and like their Lord, 'the express image of the Father's person.' We must keep in memory the fact that the church is entirely separate and distinct from the world; and

that the hopes of the church are to be differentiated from those of the world in every particular." *R3175:1*

1 COR. 15:50: "...flesh and blood cannot inherit the kingdom of

God."

FLOOD

"**Deluge of truth**." *C65*

"...Many of the **truths** which then swept as a 'Flood' over France, deluging it with blood, are now very generally accepted among all civilized peoples; but they were too strong, and too suddenly put, for that time." *C65* (For quote see **SYMBOLS: Water**.)

REV. 12:15,16: "And the serpent cast out of his mouth water as a flood after the woman, that he might cause her to be carried away of the flood. And the earth helped the woman, and the earth opened her mouth, and swallowed up the flood which the dragon cast out of his mouth."

FORTY

"**Period of testing and sifting**" *R3574:5*

"The Number Forty"

"When we turn back to the early history of the typical kingdom, we find that Saul, David and Solomon each reigned 40 years. It is clear that the reign of Saul represents the Jewish age, that of David the Gospel age, and that of Solomon the Millennial age. The fact that the duration of each reign was 40 years indicates that it represented a complete period of testing and sifting. This would appear to be the thought underlying the number 40 in all the instances in which it is used in the Scriptures. For instance, there were the 40 years' temptation of the children of Israel in the wilderness, Christ's 40 days' temptation, etc. They all seem to foreshadow the 40 years of harvest at the end of the Jewish, of the Gospel, and (possibly) of the Millennial ages." *R3574:5*

HEB. 3:8,9: "...the day of temptation in the wilderness: When your fathers tempted me, proved me, and saw my works forty years."

GATE

Entrance to court of tabernacle; "justification through faith" *T20*

"Yet, into this condition, also, we still come through Christ Jesus our Lord, who not only opened for us the 'Gate' of justification through faith in his blood, but who also opened the 'Door' (the first veil) into the Tabernacle, 'A new way of life,' as spirit beings, through and beyond the second veil, by the sacrifice of our justified flesh." *T20*

JOHN 10:9;14:6: "...by me if any man enter in, he shall be saved....I am the way...."

GIRDLE

"**Diligence, service**" *R2374:4; T30*

"The girdle figuratively represents mercy, diligence, service, and the proclamation here is that the Messiah shall be a faithful, a diligent servant of Jehovah, in accomplishing all the work entrusted to his care." *R2374:4*

ISA. 11:5: "...Righteousness shall be the girdle of his loins...."

JOHN 13:4,5: "He...girded himself....and began to wash the disciples' feet."

LUKE 12:37: "...He shall gird himself...and will...serve them."

1 PET. 1:13: "...Gird up the loins of your mind, be sober, and hope to the end...."

GOLD

"**Divine nature**" *T18* (For quote see **SYMBOLS: Copper**)

REV. 3:18: "I counsel thee to buy of me gold tried in the fire, that thou mayest be rich..."

GRASS

"**People**" *R1379:4*

"[ISA. 40] Verses 6-8. 'A voice saith, Proclaim; and he saith, What shall I proclaim? [The answer is, Proclaim that] All flesh is grass, and all the goodliness thereof is as the flower of the field. The grass withereth the flower fadeth; because the breath of the Lord bloweth upon it: surely the people is grass. The grass withereth the flower fadeth; but the word of our God will stand firm forever.'" *R1379:4*

ISA. 40:6,7: "...All flesh *is* grass...the people *is* grass."

HAIL

"**Hard, cutting truth**" *R2814:1*

"But the Lord's answer is No! This very error shall work your ruin, and the overthrow of your system, and all identified therewith shall suffer loss. [Isa. 28] (Vs. 18: 1 Cor. 3:15) I have laid the only sure foundation, Christ Jesus, and he that trusteth him, and he alone, shall not fall, but 'be able to stand' in the great time of testing, near at hand. For 'judgment also will I lay to the line and righteousness to the plummet: and the hail [hard, cutting truth] shall sweep away the refuge of lies, and the waters [truth] shall overflow the hiding place,' and force you to show your subterfuges. (Verse 17) The falsehood respecting death and the death-condition will fall with all that you so carefully built with this hay, wood and stubble of falsehood. The **fire** of that day shall test it and destroy it; and when it goes down you will go down with it, and will no longer have influence and preferment with the people. — Verse 18." *R2814:1*

ISA. 28:17: "...The hail shall sweep away the refuge of lies."

HAND

Uplifted — "manifested power" *R2821:6*

"In line with the foregoing, the Apostle, in the lesson before us, is pointing to Jesus, ascended and in the heavens, as the antitype of the earthly high priests when they went into the 'most holy' on the day of atonement to sprinkle the blood of the atonement upon the mercy seat. It will be remembered that on the day of atonement the high priest put on his linen garments (not his glorious garments) and with the blood of the sacrifice went into the most holy to present it as the ransom price — the atonement. While he was within, the people had no evidence of divine favor resulting from his sacrifice, but waited on their faces in the dust, representing the prostrate and helpless condition of mankind in degradation, needing and waiting for the divine blessing. So now, our Great High Priest comes forth with the promised blessings, the blessings of restitution until all the work of atonement be accomplished, and until all the members of his body shall, with their Head, have put on the garments of glory and beauty, typifying honor, majesty and authority. Then the blessing will quickly follow, from the uplifted hands (manifest power), of our great High Priest; then indeed restitution blessings will prevail toward the whole creation now groaning and travailing in pain together. — Rom. 8:22" *R2821:6*

LEV. 9:22: "And Aaron lifted up his hand toward the people, and blessed them...."

EXOD. 3:20: "...I will stretch out my hand and smite Egypt...."

EXOD. 7:5: "And the Egyptians shall know that I *am* the LORD, when I stretch forth mine hand upon Egypt, and bring out the children of Israel...."

Right hand — "condition of favor" *R2606:5; A92*

"This work of separating sheep and goats will require all of the Millennial age for its accomplishment. During that age, each individual, as he comes gradually to a knowledge of God and his will, takes his place at the right hand of favor or the left hand of disfavor, according as he improves or misimproves the opportunities of that golden age. By the end of that age, **all the world** of mankind will have arranged themselves, as shown in the parable, into two classes." *R2606:5*

"The other text is, 'Sit thou at my right hand, until I make thine enemies thy footstool.' (Psa. 110:1) The vague, indefinite idea regarding this text seems to be that Christ

sits on a material throne somewhere in the heavens until the work of subduing all things is accomplished for him through the Church, and that then he comes to reign. This is a misconception. The throne of God referred to is not a material one, but refers to his supreme authority and rulership; and the Lord Jesus has been exalted to a share in that rulership. Paul declares, 'God hath highly exalted him [Jesus] and given him a name above every name.' He hath given him **authority** above every other, next to the Father. If Christ sits upon a material throne until his enemies are made his footstool [all subdued], then of course he cannot come until all things are subdued. But if 'right hand' in this text refers, not to a fixed locality and bench, but, as we claim, to power, authority, rulership, it follows that the text under consideration would in no wise conflict with the other scripture which teaches that he comes to 'subdue all things unto himself' (Phil. 3:21), by virtue of the power vested in him. To illustrate: Emperor William is on the throne of Germany, we say, yet we do not refer to the royal bench, and as a matter of fact he seldom occupies it. When we say that he is on the throne, we mean that he rules Germany. Right hand signifies the chief place, position of excellence or favor, next to the chief ruler. Thus Prince Bismarck was exalted or seated at **the right hand of power**, by the German Emperor; and Joseph was at the right hand of Pharaoh in the kingdom of Egypt — not literally, but after the customary figure of speech. Jesus' words to Caiaphas agree with this thought: 'Hereafter shall ye see the Son of Man sitting on the right hand of power, and coming in the clouds of heaven.' (Matt. 26:64) He will be on the right hand when coming, and will remain on the right hand during the Millennial age, and forever." *A92*

PSA. 16:11: "...At thy right hand *there are* pleasures for evermore."

PSA. 110:1: "...Sit thou at my right hand...."

Laying on of hands — "endorsement" *F284*

"We thus aggregate the inspired testimony respecting laying on of hands in the **Ecclesia** of the New Creation. In the last three [1 Cor. 12:5,6,7 the reference to the imparting of the 'gifts' common in the early Church is evident. Apostolic hands were thus laid on all consecrated believers and some one or more gifts followed — 'tongues,' etc. 'A measure of the Spirit is given to every man to profit withal.' The first four texts [1 Cor. 12:1,2,3,4] may be grouped together as of one general teaching; namely, as a mark of approval or indorsement — but not as a sign of permission or authorization.

"(1) Timothy, Paul's adopted 'Son' in the ministry, had already been baptized and had already received a gift of the holy Spirit at the hands of the Apostle Paul [1 Cor. 12:7] when he went with Paul to Jerusalem. (Acts 21:15-19)

Doubtless, there and then 'James and all the elders,' apostolic-elders, recognizing Timothy's devotion and close affiliation with Paul, unitedly blessed him, laying their hands upon him by way of indorsement; and the account implies that they did this, not according to a usual custom nor to all of Paul's companions, but 'By prophecy' — indicating that they were led to do it by some prediction by, or instruction from, the Lord." *F284*

1 TIM. 4:14: "...the laying on of the hands of the presbytery."

ACTS 6:6: "...they laid *their* hands on them."

ACTS 13:3: "...they...laid *their* hands on them, they sent *them* away."

1 TIM. 5:22: "Lay hands suddenly on no man, neither be partaker of other men's sins...."

"**Stretching out the hand**" — ("**To elect**") *F276*

"'And when they had ordained them elders in every church [Ecclesia], and had prayed with fasting, they commended them to the Lord.' Acts 14:23

"The form of this statement, with other frequent references to elders in connection with all churches, justifies the inference that this was the **invariable** custom in the early Church. The term 'elders,' as seen in the text, includes evangelists, pastors, teachers, and prophets (or public exponents); hence, it is important that we learn what is meant by this word 'ordained.' At the present time this word is generally used in reference to a ceremony of installation; but this is not the significance of the Greek word **kirotoneo** used in this text. It means, '**To elect by stretching out the hand**,' still the usual form of voting. This definition is given in Prof. Young's Analytical Bible Concordance. As that may be considered a Presbyterian authority, we will give also the definition set forth in '*Strong's Exhaustive Concordance*,' which may be considered a Methodist authority. The latter defines the root of the word —'A hand-reacher, or voter (by raising the hand).'" *F276*

ACTS 14:23: "...they had ordained them elders...."

LEV. 8:14,18,22: "...Aaron and his sons laid their hands upon the head of the bullock....the ram."

HEAVENS

"**Powers of spiritual control**" *A318*

"Throughout the Scriptures, **earth**, when used symbolically, represents society; **mountains** represent kingdoms; **heavens**, the powers of spiritual control..." *A318* (For quote see "**SYMBOLS: Earth**.")

HAG. 2:6; HEB. 12:26: "...I will shake the heavens...."

2 PET. 3:5,7,13: "...the heavens were of old,... the heavens and the earth which are now...we... look for new heavens...."

HILLS

"**'Highest peaks'** or **kingdoms**" *D628; R3114:1*

"'It shall come to pass in the last days, that the mountain [Kingdom] of the Lord's house shall be established in the top of the mountains [as a Kingdom overtopping or overruling all kingdoms], and shall be exalted above the hills [the highest peaks]; and all nations shall flow unto it. And many people shall go and say, Come ye, and let us go up to the mountain [Kingdom] of the Lord, to the house of the God of Jacob; and **he will teach us of his**

ways, and we will walk in his paths. For out of Zion [the spiritual Kingdom — the glorified Christ, head and body] shall go forth the law, and the word of the Lord from Jerusalem [the seat of the earthly representative government in the hands of the "Princes"]. And [previously — in the great time of trouble] he shall judge among the nations, and shall rebuke many people. And [as a result of the Lord's rebukes and subsequently his law and Word] they shall beat their swords into plowshares, and their spears into pruning hooks: nation shall not lift up sword against nation, neither shall they learn war any more.' Isa. 2:2-4; Micah 4:1-4" *D628*

"Instead of this restless sea of humanity he will found the new earth, the new order of things; yea, and he will firmly **establish it** upon [in place of] the floods; there he will establish his kingdom 'which cannot be moved.' (Heb. 12:28) And he will set his King upon his holy hill of Zion and give to him the nations for his inheritance, and the uttermost parts of the earth for his possession. (Psa. 2:6,8) Then, indeed, shall the King, the Lord's anointed, reign in righteousness and princes shall decree justice (Isa. 32:1); and in consequence there shall be abundance of peace so long as the moon endureth. — Psa. 72:7

"There will then be but one kingdom (mountain or hill) in all the world — the kingdom of God; and his anointed will be king in all the earth in that day. (Zech. 14:9) This hill or kingdom of the Lord is that to which the Psalmist refers when he raised the question, 'Who shall ascend into the hill of the Lord, and who shall stand in his holy place?' To ascend into the hill of the Lord is to come into his kingdom as loyal and obedient subjects, as true citizens, worthy of all its blessings and privileges; and not as aliens and foreigners, having no part nor lot in the common interests and inheritance of all the true and loyal people of God, viz., eternal life and all its blessings of righteousness, peace and everlasting joy. Who indeed shall be counted worthy thus to ascend into the mountain of the Lord? 'And who shall stand in his holy place?' The reference here is to the antitype of the typical temple of God, which, standing upon the top of

Mount Zion, prefigured the glorious true temple, the church of the living God, in kingdom power and glory. Who shall stand in that holy place in that age of glory and blessing now so near at hand? — who shall be counted worthy to reign with Christ in his kingdom?" *R3114:1*

"**Smaller governments**" *R5990:2*

"The Mountain (Kingdom) of the Lord's House is now being established in the top of the mountains, superseding the great kingdoms of this world, and is being exalted above the hills — the smaller governments. (Isaiah 2:2) Clouds and darkness, trouble and perplexity and distress of nations are round about; and the thunderings and lightnings are making all the earth to tremble as did Israel at Mt. Sinai. (Exodus 19:1-25) And now — since the Spring of 1878 — God has 'Set His King upon His Holy Hill of Zion.' (Psalm 2:6) Therefore, if those who refused to obey Moses, and presumptuously disgraced the ceremonies of the occasion at Sinai, met with instant death, how can we escape if we disregard the voice of the great Mediator of the New Covenant, and the remarkable circumstances which now accompany its establishment?" *R5990:2*

PSA. 2:6: "Yet have I set my king upon my holy hill of Zion."

ISA. 2:2; MICAH 4:1: "...the mountain of the LORD's house shall be established in the top of the mountains, and shall be exalted above the hills...."

HORN

"**Power**" *C76; T42; A258*

"Justinian was far from Rome, with his capital at Constantinople. Rome, and Italy in general, was under the sway of another kingdom — the Ostrogoths — who did not recognize the bishop of Rome as supreme pontiff; for they were mainly Arians in faith. Papacy, therefore, was exalted and advantaged in name only, by the emperor's recognition, until the fall of the Ostrogothic Monarchy, when its exaltation became an actual fact. Indeed, as if by a preconcerted arrangement, the emperor at once (A.D. 534) sent Belisarius and an army into Italy, and in six years after the pope's recognition by the emperor, the Ostrogothic power was vanquished, and their king Vitiges and the flower of his army were taken with other trophies to Justinian's feet. This was in A.D. 539, which is therefore the point of time from which we should reckon the 'Desolating Abomination **set up**.' Papacy there had its small beginning. There the little, peculiar 'Horn' noted in Daniel's prophecy (Dan. 7:8,11,20-22,25), just began to push itself up, upon the Roman beast. It began to form or take root two centuries before, and in two centuries after its small appearance its 'look was more stout than its fellows' — the other horns, authorities or powers, in the territory of

the old empire — and its eyes, and its mouth speaking great swelling words, began to develop; and it lorded it over the other horns, claiming divine right to do so." *C76*

"The 'Finger' of the '**Law**' thus pointed out that the altar of earthly sacrifices was acceptable to God by reason of the shed blood, (the life given), and that all who realize the power of the altar (horns are symbols of power) must first recognize the blood which sanctifies it. The blood poured at the base of the altar showed that through the blood of the sacrifice (life given) even the **earth** was purchased back from the curse. 'Unto the redemption of the **purchased** possession.' See Eph. 1:14." *T42*

"Of the fourth beast, Rome, Daniel says: 'After this I saw in the night visions, and behold a fourth beast, dreadful and terrible, and strong exceedingly;...and it had ten horns. I considered the horns, and, behold, there came up among them another little horn, before whom there were three of the first horns plucked up by the roots; and, behold, in this horn were eyes, like the eyes of man, and a mouth speaking great things.' Dan. 7:7,8" *A258*

LEV. 8:15: "...Moses took the blood and put it upon the horns of the altar...."

"**King**" *C97*

"And it came to pass when I, even I, Daniel, had seen the vision, that I sought to understand it; and behold there stood before me as the appearance of a man. And I heard a man's voice between the banks of the [river] Ulai, which called and said, 'Gabriel, make this man to understand the vision.' So he came and stood near where I stood; and when he was come, I fell upon my face, trembling, and he said unto me, 'Mark well, O son of man! because for the Time of the End is the vision.' Now as he was speaking unto me, I fell down in amazement on my face to the ground; but he touched me and set me upright, where I had been standing. And he said, 'Behold, I will make known to thee what is to come to pass to the end of these evil predictions; for it pertaineth to the appointed Time of the End.'

"'The ram which thou hast seen, him with the two horns, (signifieth) the kings of Media and Persia. And the shaggy he-goat is the king of Greece; and the great horn that is between his eyes is the first king. But that it was broken, and that four sprung up in its stead, (signifieth that) four kingdoms will spring up out of the nation, but not with his power. And in the latter time of their kingdom, when the transgressors have filled their measure of guilt [Compare Gen. 15:16], there will arise a king [Papacy] of an impudent [or shameless] face, and understanding deep schemes. And his power shall be strengthened [made mighty], but not with his own force. [Papacy strengthened itself by using the force of the various nations of Europe.] And he will destroy

wonderfully, and do more than can be believed; and he shall destroy [or corrupt] the mighty ones and the holy [saintly] people. And by his cunning skill he shall cause deceit to prosper (him) in his power; and in his heart he shall magnify himself, and by prosperity shall he corrupt [destroy] many: he shall also stand up [as Antichrist] against the Prince of princes; and he shall be broken without hand. And [that part of] the vision concerning the evenings and mornings which hath been told [that there would be 2300, till the cleansing] is correct; but shut thou up the vision, for it will be fulfilled after many days.'

"We do not enter into a detailed explanation of the ram, goat, horns, etc., mentioned in these and the preceding verses believing that they have already been made clear. (See page 27) We have already seen that Rome, which is treated as a separate beast with its own horns, in chapter vii, and as the legs and feet of the image, in chapter ii, is here (chapter viii) treated as one of the horns of the Grecian 'goat,' which, after becoming great toward the South and toward the East, as civil or imperial Rome, underwent a change, and, becoming papal Rome, "Became great even unto the host of heaven; i.e., it became an ecclesiastical power or empire, over the host or people. And this same method of treating the Roman empire as a branch or development out of one of the divisions of the Grecian empire, is followed in the historical prophecy of chapter xi." *C96-97*

DAN. 7:24; REV. 17:12: "...the ten horns...are ten kings...."

HORSES

"**False doctrinal 'hobbies'**" *C316*

"Isaiah (31:1,3), referring to the great trouble now impending, says, 'Woe unto them that go down to Egypt [to the world] for help [for worldly ideas and plans, and for counsel as to how they should act in the crisis of this great day]; and stay on horses [who endeavor still to ride the old, false doctrinal hobbies], and trust in chariots [worldly organizations] because they are many; and in horsemen [the great leaders in false doctrines] because they are very strong; but who look not unto the Holy One of Israel, neither seek the Lord [for the safety and victory in this day of trouble will not be with the multitude]!...Now the Egyptians are men, and not God, and their horses flesh, and not spirit. When the Lord shall stretch out his hand [his power — the power of the truth and other agencies — as he will do shortly], both he that helpeth shall fall, and he that is helped [by the powers of Egypt — the world's ideas] shall fall down, and they all shall fail together.'" *C316*

ISA. 31:1,3: "Woe to them that go down to Egypt for help: and stay on horses, and trust in chariots....Now the

Egyptians are men, and not God; and their horses flesh, and not spirit...."

IMAGE ("of the beast")

"**The consolidation, federation, and unification of Protestants**" *R3531:3; Dviii-ix*

"During the past twenty-five years we have several times called attention to the Scriptures which speak of the Day of the Lord and declare that in it the 'heavens shall roll together like a scroll.' (Isa. 34:4) We have pointed out that this means a coming together of the extremes of Christianity, Roman Catholicism and Protestantism. Other Scriptures show us that the consolidation, federation and unification of Protestants is now in order. This is already well under way and constitutes in the symbolic book of Revelation the 'image of the beast' — the symbolic beast itself represented by Papacy. We might here remark that nothing in this word 'beast' is specially derogatory or invidious — neither in our use of the word nor in the Scriptural use. Throughout the Scriptures, in the symbolisms of Daniel and the Apocalypse, beasts are freely used as symbols for nations, governments, earthly power, though never used as representing the divine power — the true church, the true kingdom, which shall ultimately prevail." *R3531:3*

Dviii-ix (For quote see **SYMBOLS: False Prophet**.)

REV. 13:14,15: ***Diag.*** "...an Image to the BEAST,...And it was given him to give Breath to the IMAGE of the BEAST..."

JEWELS

"**The little flock**" *T35;36*

"This Law emblem (the breastplate) was one of the most beautiful of the High Priest's garments. It was made of the same materials as the ephod. It had in it, set in gold, twelve precious jewels, in which were engraved the names of the twelve tribes. It was bound on his heart, indicating that it was precious to him. As a 'Breastplate of righteousness' it covered his heart. That which condemned all imperfection was his pleasure — 'I delight to do thy will, O my God: yea, thy **Law** is within my heart.' Psa. 40:8...

"The fact that it was double and that the parts were of the same size represented the **letter** and the **spirit** of the Law. The front part contained the jewels, and was hung by the gold chain to the gold clasps of the ephod. The underpart was fastened to the ephod. This under half, tied to the ephod (Covenant), seems to represent the Law in letter, as presented to fleshly Israel. The front part seems to illustrate the spirit of the Law **fulfilled in us**, 'Who walk not after the flesh, but after the spirit.' (Rom. 8:4) The two

are really one when rightly seen, yet the front part, only, bears the precious jewels." *T35*

"Pure gold being a symbol of **divine** things, the dependence of this part of the Law by a gold chain, from the gold clasps, seems to teach that the Law is **divine**; and we know, also, that it is by Divine aid that we are enabled to walk — not after the flesh but after the spirit. It is this phase of the Law which bears the 'jewels,' set in gold, representative of the true Israel, the Lord's 'little flock.' 'They shall be mine, saith the Lord of hosts, in that day when I make up my jewels.' (Mal. 3:17) Thus embedded in gold (the divine nature) and upheld by the golden chain of Divine promises, what wonder that 'The righteousness of the law is fulfilled in us!' Rom. 8:1,4" *T36*

MAL. 3:17: "And they shall be mine...when I make up my jewels...." [special possession, *R.S.V.*]

KEY

"**Authority, control**" *R2827:2,4; 3570:2*

"It is not strange that John in vision fell down as dead at this glorious symbolical representation of Christ. John may be considered as a representative of the Lord's consecrated ones, who in his presence feel their own deadness. Upon all such he places his hand (his power), and to them gives his message, 'Fear not, I am the first and last, I am he that liveth and was dead, and behold I am alive forevermore, and have the keys of hell and of death.' — [Rev. 1] Vss.17,18" *R2827:2,4*

"(3) We must recognize him as the one who was dead, the one who really died for our sins, but who as really was raised out of death by the power of the Father. (4) We must realize that he is alive forevermore, that death has no more dominion over him, that the work is finished, that neither sacrifices of the mass nor death in any other sense or form has dominion over him nor ever will have, nor will ever be needed; his work is perfect, and, as he cried on the cross, 'It is finished.' (5) We must recognize that he has the keys, the authority, the power over the tomb, to deliver from it all who are there imprisoned. We must also realize that he has the 'key,' the power over death, so that those whom he liberates from the prison-house of death, the tomb like those who have not yet gone into it, but who are under the sentence of death, may all be ultimately delivered, set free from the dominion of sin and death, delivered into the full liberty of the sons of God, righteousness and life eternal." *R3570:2*

MATT. 16:19: "...I will give unto thee the keys of the kingdom of heaven: and whatsoever thou shalt bind on earth shall be bound in heaven: and whatsoever thou shalt loose on earth shall be loosed in heaven."

REV. 1:18: ***Diag.*** "...I have the KEYS of DEATH and of HADES."

LUKE 11:52: "...you have taken away the KEY of KNOWLEDGE, you entered not yourselves, and THOSE APPROACHING, you hindered."

LAKE OF FIRE

"'**Second death**,' final and [everlasting] utter destruction" *E380*

"Great confusion must necessarily come to all who would attempt to interpret **hades** as meaning a place of eternal torment, when considering this passage of Scripture, but how reasonable and harmonious it is from the correct standpoint! The lake of fire (**gehenna**) represents utter destruction, the Second Death, which shall utterly destroy all evil things. The 'death and **hades**' here pictured as destroyed in the Second Death are the same as we have just described in connection with the preceding 13th verse. The present state of condemnation, the result of Adam's transgression, is styled 'death and **hades**' — the dying condition of those now called the living and the oblivious sleep of the fully dead." *E380*

REV. 20:14: "And death and hell were cast into the lake of fire. This is the second death."

REV. 21:8: "...the lake which burneth with fire and brimstone: which is the second death."

LAMP

"**The Scriptures**" *C92,93; A20; T115,116*

PSA. 119:105: "Thy Word is a lamp unto my feet...."

See **MATT. 25:1-13**

"The virgins of the parable are shown as all having lamps trimmed and giving them light. These lamps represent the Scriptures ('Thy word is a lamp to my feet'); and such a **general** trimming of lamps — searching the Scriptures — by all classes of Christians probably never before took place. The oil represents the spirit of the truth. It was manifest, then, in the lamps of all; but all had not the spirit of the truth in themselves — the 'vessels.'

"The disappointment of 1844 is briefly recorded in the parable, by the statement that 'the Bridegroom tarried' — i.e., he seemed to the expectant ones to tarry. And the confusion and darkness experienced by all, and the many false and visionary views entered into by some who were there disappointed, are shown in the parable by the statement: 'While the Bridegroom tarried, they all **slumbered** and slept.' Yea, and in their darkness and slumber many of them dreamed strange, unreasonable things.

"But the parable shows a second movement, similar, and yet different, among the same virgins. The same general class is referred to but not necessarily the same individuals. As the first movement was the result of light upon the prophecy, regarding the time for Messiah's second advent as the Bridegroom of the Church, so was the second movement. But there are several differences. In the first, the lamps of all the virgins burned alike, and the company expecting the Bridegroom was mixed; whereas in the second movement, while all will be aroused, only those will be led out who have the spirit of the truth in their hearts, as well as a knowledge of the Bible — a trimmed lamp. Disappointment was predicted for the first movement, and waiting for the 1335 days was necessary; but the second was not a disappointment, and a waiting was no longer necessary; for fulfillment came exactly at the close of the 1335 prophetic days — in October 1874...." *C92, 93*

"Those who will turn away from the mere speculations of men, and devote time to searching the Scriptures, not excluding reason, which God invites us to use (Isa. 1:18), will find that a blessed bow of promise spans the heavens. It is a mistake to suppose that those without faith, and consequent justification, should be able to apprehend clearly the truth: it is not for such. The Psalmist says, 'Light [truth] is sown for the righteous.' (Psa. 97:11) For the child of God a lamp is provided whose light dispels from his pathway much of the darkness. 'Thy word is a lamp unto my feet, and a light unto my path.' (Psa. 119:105) But it is only 'The path of the just' that 'Is as the shining light, that shineth more and more unto the perfect day.' (Prov. 4:18) Actually, there is none just, 'none righteous, no, not one' (Rom. 3:10); the class referred to is 'justified by faith.' It is the privilege only of this class to walk in the pathway that shines more and more — to see not only the present unfoldings of God's plan, but also things to come. While it is true that the path of each individual believer is a shining one, yet the special application of this statement is to the just (justified) as a class. Patriarchs, prophets, apostles and saints of the past and present have walked in its increasing light; and the light will continue to increase beyond the present — 'unto the perfect day.' It is one continuous path, and the one continuous and increasing light is the Divine Record, illuminating as it becomes due." *A20*

"**The Golden Candlestick** or lampstand, which stood opposite the Golden Table, and gave light to all in the 'Holy,' was of gold — all of one piece hammered out. It had seven branches, each of which held a lamp, making seven lamps in all — a perfect or complete number. This represented the complete Church, from the Head, Jesus, to and including the last member of the 'little flock' that he is taking out from among men, to be partakers of the divine (gold)

nature. Our Lord says, 'The seven candlesticks which

thou sawest are the seven churches' (Rev. 1:20) — the one Church whose seven stages or developments were symbolized by the seven congregations of Asia Minor. (Rev. 1:11) Yes; that candlestick represented the entire Church of the Firstborn — not the nominal, but the true Church, whose names are written in heaven — the true light-bearers — the 'Royal Priesthood.'...

"The light from this lamp was from olive oil, 'beaten' or refined; and the lamps were kept always lighted. This oil was symbolic of the holy Spirit, and its light represented holy enlightenment — the spirit of the truth. Its light was for the benefit of the priests only, for none others were ever permitted to see it or to profit by its light. Thus was represented the spirit or mind of God given to enlighten the Church, in the deep things of God, which are entirely hidden from the natural man (1 Cor. 2:14), even though he be a believer — a justified man (a Levite). None but the truly consecrated, the 'Royal Priesthood,' are permitted to see into this deeper light, hidden in the 'Holy.' The priests (the consecrated Body of Christ) always have access to the 'Holy;' it is their right and privilege; it was intended for them. (Heb. 9:6) The Levite class cannot see in because of the veil of human-mindedness which comes between them and the sacred things; and the only way to set it aside is to consecrate and sacrifice wholly the human will and nature.

"The lights were to be trimmed and replenished every morning and evening by the High Priest — Aaron and his sons who succeeded him in office. (Exod. 27:20,21; 30:8) So our High Priest is daily filling us more and more with the mind of Christ, and trimming off the dross of the old nature — the wick through which the holy Spirit operates." *T115, 116*

LEAVEN

Sin, malice, hypocrisy, false doctrine. *R2635:1*

"In this parable we have brought to our attention the Lord's provision for the necessities of his people during this Gospel age — he did not leave them without a proper supply of food. The three measures of meal, equivalent to one ephah, constituted a good, liberal household supply. Like all of the Lord's provisions, it was good and pure, but as in the other parables the adversary introduced impurity, falsity, etc., so in this one leaven is introduced into the meal. Leaven represents corruption throughout the Scriptures: in every other instance of its Scriptural use it is represented as an evil, an impurity, something that is defiling. For instance, the Israelites were to put away all leaven, all impurity, at the time of the Passover, that they might come the nearer to the Lord in holiness, etc. Again, our Lord Jesus refers to leaven as a corruption, bidding his disciples 'Beware of the leaven of the scribes and Pharisees' — beware of the false doctrines, the corrupt influence, proceeding from the scribes

and Pharisees. Again, the Apostle Paul represents the leaven as an evil thing, saying, 'Purge out the old leaven.' — Exod. 13:7; Luke 12:1; 1 Cor. 5:7." *R2635:1*

1 COR. 5:7,8: "Purge out...the old leaven,...let us keep the feast, not with old leaven, neither with the leaven of malice and wickedness; but with the unleavened bread of sincerity and truth."

EXOD. 13:7: "Unleavened bread shall be eaten seven days; and there shall no leavened bread be seen with thee, neither shall there be leaven seen with thee...."

MATT. 13:33: "...The kingdom of heaven is like unto leaven, which a woman took, and hid in three measures of meal, till the whole was leavened."

LUKE 12:1: "...Beware ye of the leaven of the Pharisees, which is hypocrisy."

LEAVES

"**Professions**" *T122*

"'**Aaron's Rod that budded**' showed the elect character of all the Body of Christ as members of the 'Royal Priesthood.' By reading Numbers XVII, the meaning of the budded rod will be seen to be Jehovah's acceptance of Aaron and his sons — the typical priesthood, representatives of Christ and the Church — as the only ones who might perform the priest's office of mediator. That rod, therefore, represented the acceptableness of the 'Royal Priesthood' — the Christ, Head and Body. The rod budded and brought forth almonds. A peculiarity about the almond tree is that the fruit-buds appear before the leaves. So with the 'Royal Priesthood': they sacrifice or begin to bring forth **fruit** before the leaves of professions are seen." *T122*

MARK 11:13,14,20: "...seeing a fig tree afar off having leaves, he came, if haply he might find anything thereon: and when he came to it, he found nothing but leaves....And Jesus...said unto it, No man eat fruit of thee hereafter forever.... and in the morning...they saw the fig tree dried up from the roots."

LEPROSY

"**Sin**" *R3439:3,4*

"Leprosy is used in the Scriptures to symbolize sin, and was sometimes inflicted by the Lord as a punishment for sin, as, for instance, in the case of Miriam, Moses' sister, who was smitten with leprosy because of her improper attitude and disrespectful language to and about her brother Moses, in answer to whose prayer she was healed. Sin is an incurable disease, and therefore well represented by leprosy; like leprosy it doth eat like a canker and all having it are 'unclean.'..." *R3439:3,4*

LUKE 17:12,14: "...there met him ten... lepers...he said unto them, Go shew yourselves unto the priests....as they went, they were cleansed."

2 KINGS 5:1,10,14: "Now Naaman, captain of the host...of Syria,...was a leper....Elisha sent a messenger...saying, 'Go and wash in Jordan seven times,...and thou shalt be clean.'...and his flesh came again like unto the flesh of a little child, and he was clean."

LIGHT

"**Truth**" *A20* (For quote see **SYMBOLS: Lamp**)

PSA. 97:11: "Light is sown for the righteous...."

ISA. 8:20: "To the law and to the testimony: if they speak not according to this word, *it is* because *there is* no light in them."

LINEN

"**Righteousness**" *T36;114*

"The under-priests were robed in linen garments and wore girdles. Their robes represented the **righteousness** of Jesus, imputed to them, and their girdles represent them as **servants** of righteousness. The High Priest wore very similar garments during the time of sacrificing (the Day of Atonement) and put on the glorious garments after making atonement." *T36*

"**The white curtain**, which, sustained by those posts, formed the 'Court,' well illustrated the same justification or purity. Thus, justified ones should continually hold up to the view of the world (the 'Camp') the pure linen, representing Christ's righteousness as their covering." *T114*

REV. 19:8: "...for the fine linen is the righteousness [righteous acts, *Diag.*] of saints."

LORD'S SUPPER

"**Christ's death, and the church's participation in his sufferings.**" *F466*

"We, Being Many, Are One Loaf"

"The cup of blessing which we bless, is it not the communion of the blood of Christ? The bread which we break, is it not the communion of the body of Christ? For we, being many, are one bread [loaf] — one body; for we are all partakers of that one bread." 1 Cor. 10:16,17

"The Apostle, under the guidance of the holy Spirit, here sets before us an additional thought respecting this Memorial instituted by our Lord. He does not deny, but affirms, that primarily the bread represents our Lord's broken body, sacrificed on our behalf; and that the cup represents his blood, which seals our pardon. But now, in

addition, he shows that we, as members of the **Ecclesia**, members of the body of Christ, the prospective First-borns, the New Creation, become participators with our Lord in his death, sharers in his sacrifice; and, as he has elsewhere stated, it is a part of our covenant to 'fill up that which is behind of the afflictions of Christ' (Col. 1:24) The thought here is the same as that expressed by the words, 'We are baptized into **his death**.' Thus, while our Lord's flesh was the loaf broken for the world, the believers of this Gospel age, the faithful, the elect, the New Creation, are counted in as parts of that one loaf, 'members of the body of Christ;' and hence, in the breaking of the loaf, after recognizing it as the sacrifice of our Lord on our behalf, we are to recognize it, further, as the breaking or sacrificing of the whole Church, of all those consecrated to be dead with him, to be broken with him, to share his sufferings.

"This is the exact thought contained in the word 'communion' — common-union, common-participation. Hence, with every annual celebration of this Memorial we not only recognize the foundation of all our hopes as resting in the dear Redeemer's sacrifice for our sins, but we revive and renew our own consecration to 'be dead with him, that we may also live with him' — to 'suffer with him, that we may also reign with him.'..." *F465,466*

1 COR. 11:24-26: "...he brake *it*, and said,...this is my body, which is broken for you: this do in remembrance of me. After the same manner also *he took* the cup,...saying, 'This cup is the new testament in my blood: this do ye,...in remembrance of me.' For as often as ye eat this bread, and drink this cup, ye do show the Lord's death...."

1 COR. 10:16,17: *Diag.* "The CUP of BLESSING...is it not a Participation of the BLOOD of the ANOINTED one? The LOAF which we break, is it not a Participation of the BODY of the ANOINTED one? Because...One Loaf,...One Body the many we are [*interlineary*]; for we ALL partake of the ONE Loaf."

MAMMON

"**Selfishness**" *R3386:5*

"Let us not too quickly suppose that we are not in danger along the lines of Jeroboam's fall. Let us note carefully the Golden Text applied by the Apostle, under divine guidance, to the new creatures of this Gospel dispensation, 'Keep yourselves from idols.' On every hand policy suggests the setting up of idols — that we love or respect or serve some one or some thing or some system in an improper spirit or degree, and allowing such to take the place in our hearts which properly belongs to the Lord only. Some have their chief temptation from one quarter and others from another quarter. Some are disposed to idolize husband or wife, or child, and really, in their affection and interest and

devotion, give these a place superior to that accorded to the Lord. Others are inclined to idolize wealth and to devote themselves to it, continually serving it, seeking it as though it were the most important thing in the world. Others are disposed to worship fame, desiring to be thought some great one either in the church or in the world, to attain a position, a pre-eminence; they hunger and thirst more after the preeminence than after righteousness — they worship it, it becomes their idol; in their hearts and time and affections it takes to a considerable extent the place belonging to God, whose will and service is correspondingly neglected. Others set up selfishness pure and simple as their idol; they serve self, minister to self, comfort self, please self, etc., instead of God. In many respects this idol of self is the most horrible one of all — the meanest looking. Others, disdaining personal ambition and selfish consolations, take on in some respects a nobler thought, yet are deceived by the adversary in worshiping a sect, a party, a faction. To it they will sacrifice, to it they will yield their lives, for it they would yield their reputations, and the while — like the Apostle, before his name was changed from Saul to Paul — they would verily think that they did God service. Let us, dear brethren and sisters, keep ourselves from all idols, and, as the Apostle exhorts, sanctify the Lord God in our hearts. 'The Lord your God will prove you, to know whether ye love the Lord your God with all your heart and with all your soul.' — Deut. 13:3." *R3386:5*

MATT. 6:24: "No man can serve two masters. ...Ye cannot serve God and mammon."

MANTLE

"**Authority and dignity**" *R3429:1*

"Elijah's mantle, symbolical of his authority and dignity, did fall to Elisha, as was prophetically implied ten years before when he was invited to become Elijah's servant. Elisha took off his own outer garment or mantle and tore it in two parts, an act in that day symbolical of grief, sorrow, mourning, and then instead of his own he appropriated Elijah's mantle." *R3429:1*

2 KINGS 2:14: "...he took the mantle of Elijah that fell from him, and smote the waters...."

1 KINGS 19:19: "So he...found Elisha...and cast his mantle upon him."

MEAT IN DUE SEASON

"**Dispensational truth**" *D613*

"Dispensing of Food to the Household"

"'Who then is the faithful and prudent servant, whom his Master has placed over his household to give them food in due season? Happy that servant whom his Master, on

coming, shall find thus employed! Indeed I say to you that he will appoint him over all his stores of provisions.' Matt. 24:45-51; Luke

12:42-46

"The intimation here seems to be, that at the particular time indicated by the prophecy — namely, during the Lord's **presence**, and at the time of the gathering of the elect — our Lord, the great Servant of his people, will make choice of **one channel** for dispensing the meat in due season, though other channels or 'fellow-servants' will be used in bringing the food to the 'household.' But the servant is merely a steward, and liable to be removed at any moment, should he fail to fully and duly acknowledge in every particular, the Master — the great Servant of God and his people — 'the Messenger of the Covenant' — Christ.

"Faithfulness on the part of said steward (both to the 'Master' and to 'his fellow-servants' and 'the household') will be rewarded by his continuance as steward; so long as he serves faithfully, he may continue, and may serve the household of faith with things new and old — meat in due season — to the end; bringing forth all the precious things of divine provision. But if unfaithful he will be deposed entirely and put into outer darkness, while presumably another would take the place, subject to the same conditions.

"To our understanding this would not imply that 'that servant' or steward, used as a channel for the circulation of the 'meat in due season,' would be the **originator** of that meat, nor **inspired**, nor **infallible**. Quite to the contrary, we may be sure that whoever the Lord will so use, as a truth-distributing agent, will be very humble and unassuming, as well as very zealous for the Master's glory; so that he would not think of claiming authorship or ownership of the truth, but would merely dispense it zealously, as his Master's gift, to his Master's 'servants' and 'household.'" *D613*

MATT. 24:45-47: "Who then is a faithful and wise servant, whom his lord hath made ruler over his household, to give them meat in due season? Blessed *is* that servant, whom his lord when he cometh shall find so doing. Verily I say unto you, That he shall make him ruler over all his goods."

LUKE 12:42-44: "And the Lord said, Who then is that faithful and wise steward, whom his lord shall make ruler over his household, to give them their portion of meat in due season? Blessed is that servant, whom his lord when he cometh shall find so doing. Of a truth I say unto you, that he will make him ruler over all that he hath."

MILK

"**First principles of the doctrine of Christ**" *A24; R3340:5*

"God's Word is a great storehouse of food for hungry pilgrims on the shining pathway. There is milk for babes, and strong meat for those more developed (1 Pet. 2:2; Heb. 5:14); and not only so, but it contains food adapted to the different seasons and conditions; and Jesus said the faithful servant should bring forth meat **in due season** for the household of faith — 'Things new and old,' from the storehouse. (Luke 12:42; Matt. 13:52) It would be impossible to bring forth such things from any sectarian creed or storehouse. We might bring forth some things old and good from each, but nothing new. The truth contained in the creeds of the various sects is so covered and mixed with error that its inherent beauty and real value are not discernible. The various creeds continually conflict and clash; and as each claims a Bible basis, the confusion of thought, and evident discord, are charged to God's Word. This has given rise to the common proverb: 'The Bible is an old fiddle, upon which any tune can be played.'" *A24*

"The foregoing special lessons were to the apostles apart from the multitude; but later on Jesus began to teach the multitude as well as his disciples some of the deep things pertaining to his mission and the conditions upon which any might become his disciples. There is a lesson in this also for us: We are not to put tests of discipleship to the forefront in the preaching of the Gospel. We are not to meet inquirers with the announcements of the 'strait gate and narrow way' and the lessons of self-sacrifice, as they come to us to hear something about the Gospel of God's dear Son. There are primary lessons for them to learn first. They should be instructed respecting the goodness, love and mercy of God, respecting the redemption accomplished through the blood of Jesus and that it is free and for all, respecting the glorious times of restitution which God hath spoken by the mouth of all the holy prophets since the world began, and respecting the call of this Gospel age to association in the kingdom. They should know these things with considerable clearness before being informed of the cost — the self-sacrifice even unto death which is the price of joint-heirship in the Kingdom. This appears to have been the Lord's method, and we cannot do more wisely than follow it.

"The time had come when not only the twelve apostles but all of the people, who were deeply impressed with the teachings of Jesus, should know what it meant to be his followers. In other words, a time of sifting had come — the time for presenting doctrines that would shake off, sift out, from close sympathy, fellowship and discipleship all except the Israelites in whom there was no guile. We remember

that while there were thousands who attended the Lord's ministry and were miraculously fed by him — amongst all the thousands upon thousands who heard him and profited by his healing, his teaching, and the wonderful words which proceeded out of his mouth, only 'about five hundred brethren' (1 Cor. 15:6), true disciples, remained faithful to the end. The remainder were all sifted out by such teachings as these that were now for the first time promulgated...." *R3340:5,6*

1 PET. 2:2: "As newborn babes, desire the sincere milk of the word, that ye may grow thereby..."

HEB. 5:12,13: "...when for the time ye ought to be teachers, ye have need that one teach you again which *be* the **first principles of the oracle of God**: and are become such as have need of milk, and not of strong meat. For everyone that useth milk *is* unskilful in the word of righteousness: for he is a babe."

MOON

"**Light of the Mosaic Law**" *D590*

"The **sun** as a symbol represents the Gospel light, the truth — and thus Christ Jesus. The **moon** as a symbol represents the light of the Mosaic Law. As the moon is a reflection of the light of the sun, so the Law was the shadow or reflection beforehand of the Gospel. The **stars** as symbols represent the inspired teachers of the church — the apostles. The **heavens**, as already shown, represent the ecclesiastical powers of Christendom. A combination of these symbols is found in Revelation (12:1) where the 'Woman' symbolizing the early Church is represented as clothed with the **sun**, that is, resplendent in the full, clear light of the unclouded Gospel. The **moon** under her feet represents that the Law which supports her is nevertheless not the source of her light. The twelve stars about her head as a crown represent her divinely appointed and inspired teachers — the twelve apostles." *D590*

REV. 12:1: "...a woman clothed with the sun, and the moon under

her feet....”

MORNING

“**The Millennial Age**” *A9*

“THE TITLE of this series of Studies — ‘The Divine Plan of the Ages,’ suggests a progression in the Divine arrangement, foreknown to our God and orderly. We believe the teachings of Divine revelation can be seen to be both beautiful and harmonious from this standpoint and from no other. The period in which sin is permitted has been a dark night to humanity, never to be forgotten; but the glorious day of righteousness and divine favor, to be ushered in by Messiah, who, as the Sun of Righteousness, shall arise and shine fully and clearly into and upon all, bringing healing and blessing, will more than counterbalance the dreadful night of weeping, sighing, pain, sickness and death, in which the groaning creation has been so long....

PSA. 30:5: “‘...weeping may endure for a night, but joy *cometh* in the MORNING.’” *A9*

“...evening came first, gradually accomplishing the divine purpose to its completion....” *F31*

“‘Evening and morning — Day One.’ As with the Hebrew solar days, so also with these epoch-days, the evening came first, gradually accomplishing the divine purpose to its completion, when another 7,000-year day, apportioned to another work, would begin darkly, and progress to perfection. This period, or ‘Day,’ is scientifically described as Azoic, or lifeless.” *F31*

MOUNTAINS

“**Kingdoms**” *A318*

“Throughout the Scriptures, **earth**, when used symbolically, represents society; **mountains** represent kingdoms...” *A318* (For quote see **SYMBOLS: Earth**.)

ISA. 2:2,3; MICAH 4:1: “...the mountain of the Lord’s house shall be established in the top of the mountains,....and many people shall go and say, Come ye, and let us go up to the mountain of the LORD....”

ISA. 11:9: “They shall not hurt nor destroy in all my holy mountain...”

PSA. 46:2,3,6: “Therefore will not we fear,...though the mountains be carried into the midst of the sea; *though* the mountains shake with the swelling thereof....The heathen raged, the kingdoms were moved....”

DAN. 2:35,44,45: “...the stone that smote the image became a great mountain....The God of heaven shall set up a kingdom....as...the stone....”

NIGHT

“**The 6,000 years of sin’s reign**.” *A9*

“...The period in which sin is permitted has been a dark night to humanity...” *A9* (For quote see **SYMBOLS: Morning**.)

PSA. 30:5: “...weeping may endure for a night....”

OIL

“**The Holy Spirit**” “**of the truth**” *C92-93; T37; R3868:5-3869:1*

C92,93 (See quote under **SYMBOLS: Lamp**)

“As Aaron had the holy oil poured upon his head, so our Head, the Lord Jesus, was anointed with the antitypical oil — the holy Spirit — when he was thirty years of age, on the banks of Jordan, at the time of his consecration. There he was ‘Anointed with the oil of gladness above his fellows’ — as **Head** over all his joint-heirs. A **measure** of the spirit is given to every member who thus consecrates; but Jehovah gave ‘not the Spirit by measure unto him.’ (John 3:34) John saw and bore record that our High Priest was thus anointed, and Peter adds his testimony, ‘how God **anointed** Jesus of Nazareth with the holy Spirit and with power.’ John 1:32; Luke 4:1; Acts 10:38 The anointing oil was poured **only** upon the **head**. The under-priests were not anointed individually.* [*Exodus 30:30 refers to the anointing of Aaron and **his sons**. The thought is that each of Aaron’s sons who succeeded to the High Priest’s office was to be anointed in his turn, as Aaron himself was anointed at the beginning.] They were recognized as members of the High Priest’s body, and received their anointing only in him as their head. Hence also the antitypical priests are merely partakers of the spirit of Christ, and only those who are in Christ Jesus are partakers of the anointing which seals all those who will be recognized as the heirs of God’s promises, and joint-heirs with Jesus Christ their Lord. Eph. 1:13,14; 4:30

“The oil ‘ran down...to the skirts of his [the High Priest’s] garments’ (Psa. 133:2), thus representing how all the members of Christ’s Body are to be partakers of the same anointing **after** their Head. ‘The anointing which ye have **received of him** abideth in you.’ (1 John 2:27) This oil began to reach **the Body** on the day of Pentecost, and flowed on down through this Gospel age, anointing all who are truly baptized **into Christ**, constituting them, with their Head, kings and priests unto God, to reign a thousand years. Rev. 20:6

“We thus see that Aaron, robed and anointed, represented the entire Christ — the complete Seed of Abraham, in which God is about to bless all the families of the earth. But let us not forget that we have been viewing the Great Deliverer from God’s standpoint, and with him looking down to the time of his manifestation — the dawn of the Millennial Day — when all the members shall have come into the Body, and when the ‘Holy oil’ shall have run down ‘to the skirts of his garments,’ anointing every member. (Lev. 10:7) Then he will begin the work of blessing mankind. For the glorious reign of this Kingly Priest we constantly pray, ‘Thy Kingdom come, thy will be done on earth.’” *T37*

See also *R3868:5-3869:1*

MATT. 25:3,4,8: “They that *were* foolish took their lamps, and took no oil with them. But the wise took oil in their vessels....the foolish said...’Give us of your oil.’...”

HEB. 1:9; PSA. 45:7: “...God, hath anointed thee with the oil of gladness....”

ACTS 10:38: “...God anointed Jesus...with the Holy Ghost.”

PSA. 133:2: “...the precious ointment upon the head, that ran down...”

EXOD. 30:31; 35:8: “...holy anointing oil....oil for the light....”

OLIVE

“**Light, peace, divine blessing**” *D650-651*

“The **olive** is a symbol full of meaning: in olden times it was the source of artificial light, its oil being generally used for this purpose. (Exod. 27:20) Indeed, in the Hebrew the olive tree was called **shemen** or oil tree. Olive oil was also used as the basis of many of the precious ointments of olden time — such as that used in anointing the priests and kings, typifying the holy Spirit upon

the antitypical 'royal priesthood.' (Exod. 30:24) And from time immemorial the olive branch has been used as a symbol of peace. Gen. 8:11; Neh. 8:15

"If then the olive be the symbol of **light, peace** and **divine** blessing through the holy Spirit, and if mountain be considered as elsewhere the symbol for a Kingdom, the significance here of the term Mount of Olives is easily seen to be — the Kingdom of Light, Peace and Divine Blessing. And the standing or establishment or fixing of Jehovah's 'feet' upon it, signifies that the divine favor and law will be re-established in the earth by and through the holy Kingdom." *D650-651*

ZECH. 14:4: "And his feet shall stand...upon the mount of Olives...and the mount...shall cleave in the midst...."

GEN. 8:11: "And the dove came in...in her mouth *was* an olive leaf...."

RAIN

"**Blessing**" *R1415:4*

"When men come to realize these blessings and to recognize the righteous authority by which they are secured to them, what wonder if many of their hearts are won, and their loyalty evinced by hearty co-operation, as indicated by [Psa. 72] verses 10,11,17! Truly, in view of all that the prophets have to say of the blessed times of refreshing under the reign of Christ, we see the force of the Psalmist's joyful expression: 'He shall come down like rain upon the mown grass, as showers that water the earth.' — [Psa. 72] Verse 6. 'His name shall be as of a son continuing his father's name forever; it shall increase as the sun [as the sun's brightness increases to full noon-day glory, so shall the honor of Messiah grow brighter and brighter as the mists and gloom of sin are driven away]. Men shall bless themselves **through him** [**they** shall wash their robes, but it will be in and by the blood of the Lamb that this

opportunity for cleansing shall come to them] and all people shall honor him.'" *R1415:4*

PSA. 72:6: "He shall come down like rain upon the mown grass: as showers *that* water the earth."

ZECH. 14:17: "...whoso will not come up...to worship the King,...upon them shall be no rain."

ROCK

"**Christ**" *R1922:4*

"...Our attention is called to the necessity of doing, as well as hearing, the words of the Lord. To do as the Lord indicated, signified, not an insincere outward show of righteousness (calling attention to one's own good deeds by contrasting them with the failures of others, and at the same time being blind to deeper and graver personal faults), but it signified radical and thorough reform, a digging down deep through all the rubbish of pride and conceit and laying well the foundations of a sincere and righteous character. Digging deep for a sure foundation upon which to rear such a superstructure, we find nothing solid until we come to Christ the rock. (1 Cor. 10:4; Rom. 9:33; 1 Pet. 2:7,8.) In ourselves we find no ground of stability upon which to rear our building of character and faith. Nor is there stability in anything which other men can furnish. Human resolutions and human theories are all sandy foundations which cannot insure permanence in the storms of life. But those who are rooted and grounded in Christ and built up in him — in his doctrine, his love, and his character — shall never be moved. When the floods of temptation rise and in a steady stream beat against that house, it shall not be moved; for its strength is in Christ, the solid rock upon which it is founded, and not upon the sand of human tradition." *R1922:4*

1 COR. 10:4: "...They drank of that spiritual Rock...and that Rock was Christ."

MATT. 16:18: "...upon this rock I will build my church...."

1 COR. 3:11: "For other foundation can no man lay than...Christ."

The Creator

DEUT. 32:4,31: "*He is* the rock....their rock *is* not as our Rock...."

ROD

"**Chastisement, discipline,**" "**Help, defense**" *R3269:6*

"'His rod and his staff, they comfort me.' As the Shepherd's crook was used to assist the sheep out of difficulties, to defend it from its too powerful enemies and to chasten it when inattentive, and as all of these uses of the rod were for the sheep's interest and welfare, so with the Lord's little

flock and their Shepherd and his rod of help, defense and chastisement. The true sheep learn to love the providences of the Shepherd and are comforted by them. Knowing the Shepherd's power and his watchful care, they realize that all things are working together for good to them because they are his sheep. Why should they not be comforted; strengthened, encouraged?" *R3269:6*

PSA. 23:4: "...thy rod and thy staff they comfort me."

SALT

"**The church**" *R3736:5,6*

"The declarations, 'Ye are the salt of the earth,' and 'the light of the world,' may be very properly applied to such of the Lord's followers as give heed to his teachings and cultivate the blessed state he has described foregoing. All such blessed ones in proportion as they have attained such conditions are indeed the salt of the earth and the light of the world. As salt is useful in arresting decomposition, so the influence of these, though they be few in the world, is preservative. Looking back along the aisles of history, we can see that a good influence extended from the Law Covenant God made with Israel.

"As the Jews scattered more or less amongst other nationalities they carried with them more or less clear conceptions of the divine standards as represented in the law, and these wherever they went had a preservative and corrective influence amongst men. But it was Jesus and his higher law of love, exemplified in his own life and in the lives of his apostles and all his followers, who became the real salt of the earth, in a period when without it we know not what might have been the result. As it is not only the spot upon which the candle or lamp rests that is enlightened by it, but as the rays extend out in every direction, so is the influence extending from every true Christian. It touches not merely his own person or home but to some extent radiates throughout his vicinity. Similarly it is not merely the spot that is touched by the lump of salt that is preserved, but the influence of that lump spreads over a considerable space round about it, and all with preservative influence.

"At the time of our Lord's first advent the world was in a condition in which it would probably have hastened to degeneracy and corruption, but the introduction of the body of Christ and the beneficial influence extending from each member of that body

were potent for the arrest of the demoralizing tendency of the times. The light which shone out from Jesus, the Light of the world, and from his followers, had undoubtedly a beneficial effect upon the then center of the civilized world. That influence is still manifest in so-called Christendom. And even today, although the truly consecrated believers in the great Redeemer are

confessedly very few in number, yet the general influence, the saltiness from the teachings of the Savior, exercise a wide influence throughout Christendom. Without this, doubtless, corruption and a complete collapse would have come long ago. In spite of it we see very corrupting and corrupt influences at work in every direction and the wider our horizon, the more general our information, the more this fact will be appreciated.

"Before very long we expect that all of the overcoming members of the body of Christ will be changed, glorified, and the body completed on the other side the veil will be without members on this side. The lights will have gone and the darkness will hold fuller sway than ever; the salt will be gone and the corruption will take hold swiftly, and the result will be the great time of trouble such as was not since there was a nation.

"Meantime we are to let our lights shine and thus to glorify the Father, whether men heed or forbear to heed; we are to exercise our salt or preservation influence, our influence for righteousness and truth, whether men hear or forbear, though we clearly see that it is not God's purpose to enlighten the world through the church in its present humble position. The matter will test us and prove whether or not we are worthy to be members of the glorified body of Christ, which shortly shall shine forth as the Sun in the glory of the Father, and enlighten the whole world in a manner with which our little lamps of the present time will in no sense compare." *R3736:5,6*

MATT. 5:13: "Ye are the salt of the earth...."

"**Fidelity, loyalty, and incorruption**" *R508:5*

"Now, after this obnoxious and corrupting part has been separated and taken away, let us observe the Apostle's exhortation, and 'present our bodies (now reckoned perfect human) a living sacrifice;' but when presenting them, let us remember that in the type, SALT was required to be offered with the sacrifice. 'With all thine offerings thou shalt offer **salt**.' (Lev. 2:13.) Here it is, doubtless, used as a **type** of and in the **text** under consideration, as the **symbol** of fidelity, loyalty and incorruption." *R508:5*

MARK 9:50: "...Have salt in yourselves, and have peace one with another."

LEV. 2:13: "...with all thine offerings thou shalt offer salt."

SCARLET

"**The ransom**" *T34;109*

T34 (For quote see **SYMBOLS: Blue**)

"The burning of the heifer was **witnessed** by a priest, who took cedar wood and a sprig of hyssop and a scarlet string and cast them into the midst of the burning cow. The

hyssop would represent purging or cleansing, the cedar wood or evergreen would represent everlasting life, and the scarlet string would represent the blood of Christ. The casting of these three into the midst of the burning would imply that the ignominy heaped upon the ancient worthies who were stoned, sawn asunder, etc., and of whom the world was not worthy, permitted the merit of the precious blood, the cleansing of the truth, and the gift of everlasting life to be accounted to them through faith; and that subsequent to their death they would be recognized as cleansed, justified, accepted." *T109*

EXOD. 28:6: "And they shall make the ephod *of* gold, *of* blue, *of* purple, *of* scarlet, and fine twined linen...."

"**Sins**" *C255*

"My father took the greatest pains to procure a white cock, and avoided a red one altogether; and when I asked him his reason for doing so, he told me that a red cock is already covered with sin, for sin itself is red, as it is written: 'Though your sins be as scarlet, they shall be as white as snow; though they be red like crimson, they shall be as wool.' (Isa. 1:18) He continued: 'You will find that the Rabbis have laid it down in the Talmud, if the cock be white, he is infected with no sin, and can therefore bear the sins of the Jews; but if he be red, he is altogether covered with sins, and is unfit for bearing our iniquities.'" *C255*

ISA. 1:18: "...though your sins be as scarlet, they shall be as white as snow; though they be red like crimson, they shall be as wool."

SCEPTER

"**Right to rule**" *B83*

"But though the crown was removed, i.e., though the **power** to govern even themselves was taken from them, the **right** to rule (the scepter), conveyed originally in God's promise, was not removed...." *B83* (For quote see **SYMBOLS: Crown**)

GEN. 49:10: "The sceptre shall not depart from Judah, nor a lawgiver from between his feet, until Shiloh come; and unto him *shall* the gathering of the people *be*."

SEA

"**Restless, turbulent, dissatisfied masses** of the world" *A318; D596; R2832:3*

A318 (For quote see **SYMBOLS: Earth**.)

"The roaring sea and waves symbolize the restless masses of humanity, curbed, but not fully restrained, by the laws and regulations of society. Every one has heard some of this 'roaring' for the past twenty years, with occasional stormy outbreaks dashing like tidal waves against the earth [social

order] and seeking to swallow it up. Restrained for a time, these waves are gathering weight and force; and, as prophetically shown, it is only a question of a few years until all the mountains [kingdoms] are 'removed and carried into the midst of the sea,' in anarchy. (Psalm 46:1,2) Every newspaper, not under the control of wealth, voices the roar of the restless 'Sea' class; and the others, though unwillingly, must give the echo of the roaring as matters of news. This it is, that in a period of comparative peace, is causing 'Distress of nations with perplexity.'" *D596*

"It is to this new heavens and new earth condition, this paradise, that our lesson introduces us. As the 'new heavens' does not mean a new place of God's throne, and a new throne of God, but new conditions, and signify the spiritual power and control of Christ and his Church in glory, so the 'new earth' does not mean another planet, but a new social heavens and former earth (which are now) will then have passed away and be no more. All present institutions are to utterly perish in the great time of trouble with which this age is very shortly to end. 'And there shall be no more sea.' As we have already seen, the sea is a symbol of the masses of people in a restless and unstable anarchistic condition, just as the land

represents the social order, and as the mountains represent the kingdoms of the present time. As there is no reference to the physical earth and physical sea being destroyed, so there is no reference to the physical sea being obliterated. The symbol signifies that under the new arrangement, under the control of the new heavens or spiritual powers, the reconstructed social order will be so satisfactory, so complete, so thorough, that there will be no more sea-class, no more restless people, no more dissatisfaction, no more anarchists; everything will be reduced to law and order; and law and order will under the new regime secure justice to every creature, obliterating the differences of wealth and power as they now exist." *R2832:3*

ISA. 57:20: "But the wicked *are* like the troubled sea, when it cannot rest, whose waters cast up mire and dirt."

ISA. 60:5: "...the abundance of the sea shall be converted unto thee, the forces of the Gentiles shall come unto thee."

LUKE 21:25: "...distress of nations with perplexity; the sea and the waves roaring...."

REV. 21:1: "...there was no more sea."

SEED

"**The Word of God, the truth**;" "the message of the kingdom...springing up in believers and constituting them...heirs of the kingdom." *R2633:6*

"Here the good seed or the message of the kingdom which our Lord planted is represented as springing up in believers, and constituting them children or heirs of the

kingdom. It is very proper here to note that there is no other method at present of becoming a child of God, an heir of the kingdom, except through the acceptance of the kingdom message, with all that it implies of consecration to the Lord, even unto death — 'if so be that we suffer with him, that we may be also glorified together' in his kingdom. — Rom. 8:17." *R2633:6*

"**Or, 'error' which 'distorted...truth'**" *F60*

"This misleading is not intentional, for both teachers and authors, we should suppose, set forth to their readers the best they possess. The fountainhead of the trouble is a long way off. Over 1800 years ago, when the apostles 'fell asleep,' the enemy, Satan, got a free hand in the Church, the Lord's wheat-field; and as our Lord's parable prophesied, he sowed the tares of error unstintingly. (Matt. 13:24,36-43) Those errors more or less twisted and distorted every truth of the divine revelation, with the result that before the fourth century had dawned the Lord's wheat-field had practically become a tare-field with only a proportionately small minority of true wheat in it. The darkness of error more and more settled down upon the Church, and for ten centuries the 'Mystery of Iniquity' prevailed, and gross darkness covered the people. Those ten centuries are today denominated the 'Dark Ages' by a large proportion of the most intelligent people of the 'Christian world,' and we are to remember that it was in the midst of this gross darkness that the Reformation Movement had its start. The light of the Reformers began to shine amidst the darkness, and, thank God, it has been growing brighter and brighter ever since! We can not wonder, however, that the Reformers themselves, educated in that gross darkness, were more or less contaminated with it, and that they did not instantly succeed in purging themselves of its defiling errors: rather we would have considered it nothing short of a miracle had they slipped from the gross darkness into the full, clear light of the divine character and plan." *F60*

LUKE 8:11: "...The seed is the Word of God."

MATT. 13:38: "...the good seed are the children of the kingdom; but the tares are the children of the wicked *one*."

SERPENT

"**Sin and its consequences, evil in general**" *R4058:4; R3101:6*

"A rod symbolizes authority. Moses' rod was frequently used in connection with the plagues, as well as in connection with the signs, as signifying divine authority. A serpent is a symbol of evil — of sin and all its consequences, evil in general. The lesson for the spiritual Israelite today is that he is now to understand that all the evil there is in the world is the result, directly or indirectly, of God's having let go of his rod or authority; and they are to understand

further that it is God's intention or purpose, as it is also his promise, to take hold upon the present evil conditions, which have lasted now more than six thousand years, and to bring order out of confusion — to reestablish his authority in his own hand." *R4058:4*

"We are not to question the meaning of this as a type, for our Lord himself in our Golden Text declares it. The serpent on the pole represented Christ on the cross. True, the serpent represents sin, vileness, evil, pain, suffering; while our Lord Jesus could be our Redeemer only because he was holy, harmless, separate from sinners. The question arises then, Why was the serpent used to represent our Lord? Why was not Moses instructed to make a brazen dove, or a brazen lamb — as representative of the meekness and harmlessness and purity of him who died for us? We answer that a correct appreciation of the answer to this question is the key to an understanding of the great atonement provided by God for man, through the 'Man Christ Jesus: who gave himself a ransom for all, to be testified in due time.' (1 Tim.2:5,6) The serpent represented the atonement transaction better than any other emblem could. The serpent in Eden was Satan's agent and representative in the alluring of our first parents into sin: in this sense of the word the bite of that serpent, the devil, upon our race through our first parents, is destroying all the human family in death, — with the attendant pains, and sufferings on account of which the Apostle declares, 'The whole creation groaneth and travaileth in pain together.' (Rom. 8:22) It is impossible to get rid of the sin virus of 'that old serpent;' there is no remedy that we can apply: mankind can only look to God for help: and the help which God provides is through the sending of his Son, the undefiled One. Nor will it do that that undefiled One should visit us and know our troubles and sympathize with us, and counsel us how to get rid of sin. No, this is not sufficient, he may not contradict or undo the Father's decrees, tho he may fulfil them — he may take our place, he may bear our penalty. And thus the Apostle expresses it, 'He who knew no sin **was made sin for us**,' that we might be made right in the sight of God through him. The serpent then represented sin, in every sense of the word; and as the whole world was serpented or inoculated our Lord must take the place of the sinner in order that the sinner might get free from the sentence; and this is why it was a serpent that was raised on the pole. 'He was made sin for us' — treated as the one in whom centered the sin of the whole world." *R3101:6*

See also **TYPES: Brazen Serpent**

"**Satan**" *F610*

"'He laid hold on the dragon, that old serpent, which is the devil, and Satan, and bound him a thousand

years,...that he should deceive the nations no more till the thousand years should be fulfilled.' Rev. 20:2,3" *F610*

"**Civil power — Dragon**" *Dvi*

"Practically all Bible exegetes agree that the Dragon of the Revelation represents the purely civil power, wherever it may be found. We do not understand this to mean that all the powers of the world are evil or of the Devil, but that the Dragon is the symbol which the Lord is pleased to use to represent civil power." *Dvi*

REV. 12:9: "...the great dragon was cast out, that old serpent, called the Devil...."

REV. 20:2: "And he laid hold on the dragon that old serpent which is the Devil...."

EXOD. 4:3: "And he said, 'Cast it on the ground,...' and it became a serpent."

SEVEN

"**[Perfect], complete, the whole**" *T47*

"The **seven days** of consecration [Exod. 29] (verses 33,35) showed again that we are consecrated to God's service, not for a part of our time only, but for all of it. Seven, in Scripture, is a complete number, and signifies **all** or the **whole** of whatever it applies to. ('Seven seals,' 'Seven trumpets,' 'Seven plagues,' etc.) [Exod. 29] Verse 36 shows the completion of the work of consecration." *T47*

REV. 1:20: ***Diag.***: "...SEVEN Stars...SEVEN GOLDEN Lampstands...."

SHEKINAH LIGHT

"**Representing God's presence**" *R2822:4; T123*

"To impress the foregoing lessons, the Apostle, in [Exod. 29] vss.24-28, contrasts the work of Christ in the true Tabernacle or 'Holies' with the work of the typical high priest of the Aaronic order in the typical tabernacle or temple. Jesus could not have been an earthly High Priest, because, according to the Law, the priests could only be of the tribe of Levi, whereas our Lord sprang from Judah. Thus he could not, and did not enter into 'holy places' made with hands, the typical; but his is a higher priesthood, after the order of Melchisedec, as the Apostle elsewhere explains, and the Temple in which he offers is an antitypical one, and hence it is that in entering the 'Holy of Holies' he entered heaven itself there to appear in the actual presence of God on our behalf, as the earthly priests once every year, on the day of atonement, went into the typical presence of God, into the typical 'Most Holy,' appearing before the Shekinah glory (representing God) over the mercy seat." *R2822:4*

"'**The Mercy Seat**' — a slab of solid gold, on the two ends of which, and of the same piece of metal, were formed two cherubim, with wings uplifted as if ready to fly, their faces looking inward toward the center of the plate on which they stood. Between the cherubim, on the 'Mercy Seat,' a bright light represented Jehovah's presence. As the Ark represented the Christ, so the 'Mercy Seat,' Glory-light and Cherubim together represented Jehovah. God — 'The Head of Christ is God.' (1 Cor. 11:3) As with Christ, so with Jehovah, he is here represented by things which illustrate attributes of his character. The light, called the 'Shekinah glory,' represented Jehovah himself as the Light of the universe, as Christ is the Light of the world. This is abundantly testified by many scriptures. 'Thou that dwellest between the cherubim, shine forth.' Psa. 80:1; 1 Sam. 4:4; 2 Sam. 6:2; Isa. 37:16" *T123*

PSA. 80:1: "...O Shepherd of Israel,...thou that dwellest *between* the cherubims, shine forth."

PSA. 99:1: "The LORD reigneth...he that sitteth *between* the cherubims...."

SILVER

"**Truth**" *T114;115*

"**The silver hooks**, by which the posts held up the curtain, were symbolic of **truth**. Silver is a general symbol of truth. The justified believers, represented by the posts in the 'Court,' can thus really and **truth**fully claim that Christ's righteousness covers all their imperfections. (Exod. 27:11-17) Again, it is only by the aid of the truth that they are able to hold on to their justification." *T114*

"**The door posts of the 'Most Holy'** were just inside the second 'Veil,' and represented those who pass beyond the flesh (veil) entirely, into the perfection of the spiritual condition. These posts were so constructed as fully to illustrate this. Covered with gold, representing divine nature, but no longer set in sockets of copper — no longer dependent on any human condition — they were set in sockets of silver (reality, truth, verity) seeming to say to us, When you come inside this veil you will be perfect — really and truly new creatures. Exod. 26:32" *T115*

EXOD. 27:11,17: "...the hooks of the pillars and their fillets *of* silver."

PSA. 12:6: "The words of the LORD *are* pure words, *as* silver tried in a furnace of earth, purified seven times."

"**Great Company**" *R3684:5*

"We may even go further than this and understand that the living members of the Royal Priesthood will be subjected to fiery trials, as the Apostle points out. The fire of this day, he says, shall try each man's work of what sort it is, and

shall prove which have built their faith with gold, silver and precious stones, and which have built with the wood, hay, stubble of profession and outward show the theories of men. (1 Cor. 3:12) All of the gold class will be purified, the little flock; all of the silver class will be purified, the great company, to the intent that the offerings that they made to the Lord may be fully accepted of him, even as the Apostle exhorts us, 'I beseech you, brethren, by the mercies of God, that ye present your bodies living sacrifices, holy, acceptable to God, your reasonable service.' If it is our privilege to have some share in the fiery trials at the close of this age, and at the inauguration of the new dispensation, let us rejoice in whatever will bring us nearer to our Lord, in whatever will bring us closer into harmony with him and his service, purifying our hearts and arousing our faith and making us all that would be acceptable and pleasing in the sight of the Lord." *R3684:5*

MAL. 3:3: "And he shall sit *as* a refiner and purifier of silver: and he shall purify the sons of Levi, and purge them as gold and silver..."

SIX

"**Imperfection and evil**" *R3164:1*

"Returning to the narrative, We note our Lord's command to the servants to 'fill the water-pots with water.' remembering the statement of the prophet, corroborated by our Lord's own words

'without a parable spake he not unto them,' we are inclined to surmise that this, his first miracle, contains some spiritual lesson for us. Endeavoring to draw such a lesson from this miracle, in harmony with the general testimony of the Word, we reason thus: The waterpots symbolize the Lord's people; their number, six, might indicate that it refers to the Lord's people in the present time of evil, because the number six is a symbol for imperfection and evil condition, as seven is the symbol for completeness and perfection. Thus six days of the week are set apart for labor, while the seventh is set apart for rest and refreshment: likewise the six thousand years of the world's history are permitted by the Lord to be evil, through man's disobedience and fall; while in the seventh thousand God proposes to bring in his Millennial kingdom, — his reign of everlasting righteousness." *R3164:1*

JOHN 2:6: "And there were set there six waterpots of stone, after the manner of the purifying of the Jews..."

EXOD. 20:9: "Six days shalt thou labour, and do all thy work..."

SMOKE

"**Remembrance**" *R2609:6*

"Rev. 19:3, speaking of one of these systems, says, 'Her **smoke** rose up forever and ever.' That is to say, the

remembrance ('**smoke**') of the **destruction** of these systems of deception and error will be lasting, the lesson will never be forgotten — as smoke, which continues to ascend after a destructive fire, is testimony that the fire has done its work. — See also Isa. 34:8-10." *R2609:6*

REV. 19:3: "...And her smoke rose up forever and ever."

ISA. 34:10,11,13: "It shall not be quenched night nor day; the smoke thereof shall go up for ever: from generation to generation it shall lie waste...But the cormorant and the bittern shall possess it;...And thorns shall come up in her palaces..."

"...the Temple shall be filled with his glory..."

"**From the glory of God**" *R5822:6*

"That meantime the chiseling, shaping and polishing of consecrated believers in Christ's atonement for sin, progresses; and when the last of these 'living stones,' 'elect and precious,' shall have been made ready, the great Master Workman will bring all together in the First resurrection; and the Temple shall be filled with his glory, and be the meeting place between God and men throughout the Millennium. — Rev. 15:5-8" *R5822:6*

REV. 15:8: "...the temple was filled with smoke from the glory of God and from his power; and no man was able to enter...."

1 KINGS 8:10-12: "...the cloud filled the house of the LORD,....So that the priests could not stand to minister....Then spake Solomon, The LORD said that he would dwell in the thick darkness."

STARS

"**Light-bearers**"

"**The twelve apostles**" *D590*

"The **stars** as symbols represent the inspired teachers of the church — the apostles....The twelve stars about her head as a crown represent her divinely appointed and inspired teachers — the twelve apostles." *D590* (For quote see **SYMBOLS: Moon**.)

REV. 12:1: "...a woman...and upon her head a crown of twelve stars."

"**'Wandering stars,' 'false teachers'**" *D593*

"All the others of God's people are during this age to be burning and shining lamps, and are not to put their lamps under a bushel, but to so shine as to glorify their Father in heaven. The word **star** (Greek *aster*) is not used respecting any of the faithful (outside the apostles) in referring to them in this present life; but it is used with reference to those who depart from the truth, and become 'heady,' false teachers, 'vainly puffed up,' aspiring to be considered

authorities in the same sense as the apostles, and who are styled 'wandering stars,' 'false apostles.' 2 Cor. 11:13; Rev. 2:2; Jude 13" *D593*

JUDE 13: "...wandering stars...."

"**Seven stars**"

"Special servants of the church in each epoch." *R2826:6*

"The hand, in which were seven stars, is similarly to be understood as a symbolical part of the vision, representing the Lord's **power** in his church. The stars, as he explains [Rev. 1] (vs. 20; chap. 2:1,8,12,18, etc), are the angels or messengers or special servants of the church in each epoch. The intimation is that the Lord would recognize in his church, in each of its seven stages or developments, one representative to whom he would specially address himself, and through whom he would specially instruct the church, and whom he would specially hold or keep as his instrument by his own power or hand. This would not necessarily mean that one individual of the church must be used of the Lord, even should he become unfit for the service, but would imply that one servant would be recognized in each epoch. If that servant for any cause or in any manner seemed to be an unsuitable one another might take his place, and be the star or messenger of the church of that epoch." *R2826:6*

REV. 1:20: "...The seven stars are the angels [messengers, *Diag*.] of the seven churches...."

"**Ancient worthies**" *A290*

"These are the class referred to in Chapter VIII (page 145), whose judgment day was previous to the Gospel age. Having been tried and found faithful, in the awakening they will not be brought forth to judgment again, but will at once receive the reward of their faithfulness — an instantaneous resurrection to perfection as **men**. (Others than these and the spiritual class will be **gradually** raised to perfection during that Millennial age.) Thus this class will be ready at once for the great work before it as the human agents of the Christ in restoring and blessing the remainder of mankind. As the spiritual nature is necessary to the accomplishment of the work of Christ, so perfect human nature is appropriate for the future accomplishment of the work to be done among men. These will minister among and be seen of men, while the glory of their perfection will be a constant example and an incentive to other men to strive to attain the same perfection. And that these ancient worthies will be in the human phase of the kingdom and seen of mankind is fully attested by Jesus' words to the unbelieving Jews who were rejecting him. He said, 'Ye shall see Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob, and all the prophets, in the Kingdom of God.' It should be noticed also, that the Master does not mention that he or the apostles

will be visible with Abraham. As a matter of fact, men will see and mingle with the earthly phase of the kingdom, but not with the spiritual; and some will, no doubt, be sorely vexed to find that they

rejected so great an honor." *A290*

DAN. 12:3: "...they...shall shine...that turn many to righteousness as the stars for ever and ever."

STONE

"**of stumbling**" Christ (and the cross) *B237*

"The **presence** was one of the main points of testing there, and the **cross** was the other. John the Baptizer cried to them, 'There standeth one **among you** whom ye know not.' Yet only the Israelites indeed were able to realize the fact of Messiah's presence; and of these many stumbled over the cross; for though willing to accept Messiah as a Deliverer, their pride made them unwilling to receive him as **Redeemer**, also. So here, likewise, the **presence** of Christ, the 'Harvest' in progress, and the rejection of the nominal mass of professors, stumble many; and the great Deliverer, for whose coming and kingdom many have prayed (as did the Jews), they are unready to acknowledge. Again it is true, 'There standeth one among you whom ye know not.' And again the **cross** of Christ becomes a test and a stone of stumbling or trial as none could have expected; and many, many are now falling over it, saying, We will accept Christ as our **Deliverer** but reject him as our Redeemer or Ransomer." *B237*

MATT. 21:42; PSA. 118:22: "...The stone which the builders rejected...is become the head of the corner."

1 PET. 2:6,8: "...Behold, I lay in Sion a chief corner stone, elect, precious....a stone of stumbling, and a rock of offense *even to them* which stumble at the word...."

"**Kingdom of God**" *A255*

"Continuing his interpretation, Daniel states: 'Forasmuch as thou sawest that the stone was cut out of the mountain without hands, and that it brake in pieces the iron, the brass, the clay, the silver and the gold, the great God hath made known to the king what shall come to pass hereafter; and the dream is certain and the interpretation thereof sure.' Verse 45 [Dan. 2]

"The stone cut out of the mountain without hands, which smites and scatters the Gentile powers, represents the true Church, the Kingdom of God. During the Gospel age this 'Stone' kingdom is being formed, 'cut out,' carved and shaped for its future position and greatness — not by human hands, but by the power or spirit of the truth, the invisible power of Jehovah. When complete, when entirely cut out, it will smite and destroy the kingdoms of this world. Not the people, but the governments, are symbolized by the image, and these are to be destroyed that the people

may be delivered. Our Lord Jesus came not to destroy men's lives, but to save them. John 3:17" *A255:1,2*

DAN. 2:44,45: "...in the days of these kings shall the God of heaven set up a kingdom, which shall never be destroyed:...it shall break in pieces and consume all these kingdoms, and it shall stand for ever. Forasmuch as thou sawest that the stone was cut out of the mountain without hands, and that it brake in pieces the iron, the brass, [or copper] the clay, the silver, and the gold..."

"**Living stones**" *R2656:6; A83*

"The Lord did not propose to build his church upon Peter, but upon the great truth which the Father had laid as a foundation for his plan and had revealed to Peter and which Peter had so nobly expressed. But Peter, indeed, might be one of the living stones of the spiritual temple erected upon this great foundation-fact. Peter himself gives us this interpretation of the matter in his Epistle (1 Pet. 2:4-7), assuring us that the whole church as a building of God is growing more and more complete through the addition of each member, who, as a living stone, is built up into and under the headship of Christ, the great chief corner-stone and capstone of the whole — the figure being that of a pyramid.— See *MILLENNIAL DAWN, Vol., 1, Chap. v.; Vol. 3., Chap. x*." *R2656:6*

"Jesus, the perfect one, has been highly exalted, and now we present ourselves to him that we may be formed and shaped according to his example, and that we may be built up as a building of God. In an ordinary building there is no **chief** corner-stone; but in our building there is one chief corner-stone, the 'top-stone,' as it is written: 'Behold, I lay in Zion a chief corner-stone, elect, precious' — 'To whom coming as unto a living stone...ye also as lively [living] stones are built up a spiritual house, a holy priesthood, to offer up sacrifices acceptable to God by Jesus Christ.' (1 Pet. 2:4-6) And very soon, we trust, the union between Jesus, the 'Head,' and 'The Church, which is his body,' will be complete." *A83*

1 PET. 2:4,5: "To whom coming, *as unto* a living stone...Ye also, as lively [living] stones, are built up a spiritual house...."

SUN

"**Gospel light**" *D590*

"The **sun** as a symbol represents the Gospel light, the truth — and thus Christ Jesus...." *D590* (For quote see **SYMBOLS: Moon**.)

REV. 12:1: "...a woman clothed with the sun...."

SUN OF RIGHTEOUSNESS

"**The glorified Christ, (Head and body)**" *A292; R2833:6*

"But great as will be the accumulating glory of those perfect men who will constitute the earthly phase of the kingdom, the glory of the heavenly will be the glory that excelleth. While the former will shine as the stars forever, the latter will shine as the brightness of the firmament — as the sun. (Dan. 12:3) The honors of heaven as well as of earth shall be laid at the feet of the Christ. The human mind can approximate, but cannot clearly conceive, the glory to be revealed in the Christ through the countless ages of eternity. Rom. 8:18; Eph. 2:7-12" *A292*

"The Heavenly City Resplendent"

"Here our lesson turns to a consideration of the city, the glorified church, the kingdom class, who, during the Millennial age, will be 'kings and priests unto God, and reign upon the earth,' 'a thousand years.' (Rev. 5:10; 20:4) This city, class, the glorified church, it is declared will have no need of the sun or the moon. Nothing in this statement indicates that the world will not have and need both sunlight and moonlight during the Millennial age, and subsequently, 'as long as the sun and moon endure.' (Psa. 72:5) And while it will be true that the church, as spirit beings, will not have need of literal sunlight and literal moonlight, nevertheless, this is not the thought. The sun and the moon here are symbolical, as in [Rev.] Chapter 12:1; the sun signifies the light of this Gospel age; the moon signifies the typically reflected light of the Gospel in the law and the prophets of the previous dispensation. The glorified church will have no need of the light which in the present time she so much enjoys through the Word and Spirit, and the law and the prophets. She will have, instead of these, a much more excellent glory to which the Apostle refers when he says, 'Now [with all the light, privileges and opportunities which we enjoy, both as respects the representations of God through the law and the

prophets, and through the instructions and leadings of the Spirit in the present] we see through a glass darkly, but then face to face; now we know in part; then we shall know even as we are known.' — 1 Cor. 13:12

"The church, the temple of God, will be so filled with all the fulness of God, when made like unto the glorious Lord, that nothing could add to their blessing of knowledge and divine favor; — will be so filled with the glory of God that from her, as from the Sun of Righteousness, shall proceed the light of the glory of God, which shall heal and bless the world during the Millennial age. This is the Sun of Righteousness to which our Lord referred in Matt. 13:43, 'Then shall the righteous shine forth as the sun in the kingdom of their Father' — our Lord Jesus, the Head of the church, of course being included. The same Sun of

Righteousness is mentioned by the Prophet, saying, 'The Sun of Righteousness shall arise with healing in his beams.' (Mal.4:2) Nevertheless, while so filled with the Lord's glory we are not to lose sight of the fact which the Apostle impresses upon us saying that Christ is the Head of the church, even as the Father is the Head of Christ Jesus. Hence the Lord Almighty and the Lamb will always be an inner Temple in this great Temple, which God has provided for the world's blessing during restitution times. [Rev. 21] Verse 22." *R2833:6*

MAL. 4:2: "But unto you that fear my name shall the Sun of righteousness arise with healing in his wings...."

DAN. 12:3: "...they that be wise shall shine as the brightness of the firmament...."

MATT. 13:43: "Then shall the righteous shine forth as the sun in the kingdom of their Father....."

SWORD

"**Truth, the Word of God**" *B100; R3570:5*

"But our examination, in the preceding volume, of the great difference in character between the Kingdom of God and the beastly kingdoms of earth, prepares us to see also a difference in modes of warfare. The methods of conquest and breaking will be widely different from any which have ever before overthrown nations. He who now takes his great power to reign is shown in symbol (Rev. 19:15) as the one whose sword went forth **out of his mouth**, 'That with it he should smite the nations; and he shall rule them with a rod of iron.' That sword is the TRUTH (Eph. 6:17); and the living saints, as well as many of the world, are now being used as the Lord's soldiers in overthrowing errors and evils. But let no one hastily infer a **peaceable conversion** of the nations to be here symbolized; for many scriptures, such as Rev. 11:17,18; Dan. 12:1; 2 Thes. 2:8; Psalms 149 and 47, teach the very opposite." *B100*

"No part of the description could more thoroughly convince us that the description of our Lord here given is a symbolical one than does this statement that out of his mouth proceeded a two-edged sword. As a symbolic picture, however, it is full of meaning to us. It speaks of the Word of the Lord as the sword of the spirit, 'sharper than any twoedged sword.' It reminds us that our Lord's words are not one-sided, not merely directed against sin in one class, that his word is sharp and cutting in every direction, that sin is reproved by him as much when found in his most earnest followers as when found elsewhere. It assures us that none need attempt to pluck out the mote from his brother's eye without getting rid of the beam in his own eye. It assures us that if we do not show mercy to those who are our debtors we must not expect mercy from him who has proposed to extend his mercy to us.

"How heart-searching is the Word of God when we get to understand it — not merely as a compendium of rules and regulations, but when we come to catch the spirit of it, when we come to see that its requirement is love out of a pure heart, first to the Father, secondly to our Lord and Head, and thirdly to all his brethren, fourthly to the world in general, groaning and travailing in pain, waiting for the glorious blessings of the coming day, and fifthly, sympathetically toward our enemies also, realizing that they are warped and twisted and blinded through the deceitfulness of sin and through the machinations of the great adversary." *R3570:5*

EPH. 6:17: "And take...the sword of the Spirit, which is the word of God."

REV. 1:16; 19:15,21 ***Diag.***: "...out of his MOUTH proceeds a sharp two-edged Broad sword..."

HEB. 4:12: "For the Word of God *is*...sharper than any twoedged sword...."

TARES

Children "of error" *R3770:1*

"Passing from the parable picture to the reality, we find the good seed, the gracious promises of the kingdom, which the Lord showed has brought forth the children of the kingdom — true Christians who appreciate the kingdom, who have thankfully accepted the Lord's proposition of their becoming heirs with him in that kingdom and heartily lay hold upon the terms of joint-heirship, that they must suffer with him if they would reign with him. (Rom. 8:17.) These Christians as they develop bring forth much fruit, some thirty, some sixty and some an hundred grains, representing the fruits and graces of the holy Spirit — representing them as New Creatures in Christ Jesus, 'God's workmanship created in Christ Jesus unto good works' — begotten of the Spirit through the Word of truth. (Eph. 2:10). Contrariwise the darnel class are those not begotten of the truth but of error — misled into forms of godliness without its real power." *R3770:1*

MATT. 13:38: "...the tares are the children of the wicked *one*."

THRONE

"**Authority, rulership**" *A92*

"'Hereafter shall ye see the Son of Man sitting on the **right hand of power**, and coming in the clouds of heaven.' (Matt. 26:64) He will be on the right hand when coming, and will remain on the right hand during the Millennial age, and forever." *A92* (For quote see **SYMBOLS: Hand: Right Hand**.)

HEB. 1:8; PSA. 45:6: "...Thy throne, O God, *is* for ever and ever...."

REV. 3:21: "To him that overcometh will I grant to sit with me in my throne, even as I also overcame, and am set down with my Father in his throne."

VEIL

"**Flesh**" *T66; T20*

"The hour must some time come when the sacrifice of the **last** members of this 'Lord's goat' will be consumed and the sin-offering forever ended. That we are now in the close of the 'Day of Atonement,' and that the last members of this 'Lord's goat' class are now sacrificing, we firmly believe, upon evidences

elsewhere given. Soon the last members of this class, the Body of Christ, will pass beyond the second 'Veil' — beyond the flesh — into the perfection of the spiritual nature already begun in the new mind or will which now controls their mortal bodies. And not only so, but such faithful ones are promised the very highest of spirit natures — 'the divine nature.' 2 Pet. 1:4 The passing of the second 'Veil' means to the Body what it meant to the Head: it means, in the presenting of the blood of the goat, what it meant in the presenting of the blood of the bullock. The body of the Priest passing through the second 'Veil,' bearing the blood of the goat, represented the passing of the Body of Christ entirely beyond human conditions into the perfection of the divine nature, when we shall be like Christ Jesus, who is now 'the express image of the Father's person.' O blessed hope! 'I shall be satisfied when I awake in thy likeness,' was spoken prophetically for Jesus; and how sublime the promise that 'we shall be like him!' Heb. 1:3; Rom. 8:29; Psa. 17:15; 1 John 3:2" *T66*

T20 (For quote see **SYMBOLS: Door**.)

First veil — fleshly mind

Second veil — fleshly body

HEB. 10:20: "By a new and living way,...through the veil, that is to say, his flesh."

Moses' veil — earthly phase of the kingdom. *D630*

"Continuing the examination of this illustration, we note that after this Moses went up into the Mount (Kingdom) and was glorified in type; that is, the skin of his face did shine so that Israel could not look at him. This would seem to typify the completion of the Church (Christ, head and body) in glory. And the veil which Moses afterward wore before the people, but laid off when with the Lord in the Mount would seem to typify the earthly phase of his Kingdom, the 'Princes in all the earth' through whom the Christ will speak to the people and be represented, the glory being hidden. This seems to be a striking illustration

of the intimate relationship which will exist between the earthly 'Princes' and the heavenly Kings and Priests. Moses' going up into the mount to commune with God while the mountain was clothed in clouds flashing with lightning, and the earth quaked as the thunder rolled, represented the fact that the Body of Christ will be completed, the last members 'changed' and received into the Kingdom at the time when the present order of things is being changed, in the midst of a great time of trouble such as earth has never yet experienced." *D630*

"When the glory of the Lord shall be revealed, the glory of the spiritual persons cannot be seen. They will speak through the veil — **under the cover**." *B134*

"Moses, coming down from the mount to communicate to Israel the Law Covenant, was a type of the greater Lawgiver and Mediator of the New Covenant, who at his second advent shall come forth to rule and bless the world. Moses typified, therefore, the entire Church, of which our Lord is the Head. Moses' face was caused to shine, so that the people could not look at him, and he must thereafter wear a veil, as a type of the spiritual glory of Christ, an illustration of the point we are now examining. Christ has the real glory and brightness, the express image of the Father's person, and we shall be like him, and no man can behold that glory; hence whatever manifestation of the Law-giver there will be to the world when the glory of the Lord shall be revealed, the glory of the spiritual persons cannot be seen. They will speak through the veil — under the cover. This, as well as more, was meant by Moses' veil. Exod. 34:30-33" *B134*

"**Prejudice**" *R2605:2*

"Though for centuries the Jews have been bitterly persecuted by pagans, Mohammedans and professed Christians, they are now gradually rising to political freedom and influence; and although much of 'Jacob's trouble' is just at hand, yet as a people they will be very prominent among the nations in the beginning of the Millennium. The 'vail' (2 Cor. 3:13-16) of prejudice still exists, but it will be gradually taken away as the light of the Millennial morning dawns; nor should we be surprised to hear of great awakenings among the Jews, and many coming to acknowledge Christ. They will thus leave their **hadean** state (national death) and torment, and come, the first of the nations, to be blessed by the true seed of Abraham, which is Christ, Head and body. Their bulwark of race prejudice and pride is falling in some places and the humble, the poor in spirit, are beginning already to look upon him whom they have pierced, and to inquire, Is not this the Christ? And as they look the Lord pours upon them the spirit of favor and supplication. (Zech. 12:10) Therefore, 'Speak ye comfortably to Jerusalem, and cry unto her that

her appointed time is accomplished.' — Isa. 40:2,3, margin." *R2605:2*

2 COR. 3:13-16: "...Moses,...put a veil over his face, that the children of Israel could not steadfastly look to the end of that which is abolished: But their minds were blinded: for until this day remaineth the same veil untaken away in the reading of the old testament; which *veil* is done away in Christ. But even unto this day, when Moses is read, the veil is upon their heart. Nevertheless when it shall turn to the Lord, the veil shall be taken away."

EXOD. 34:35: "...the skin of Moses' face shone: and Moses put the veil upon his face...."

1 JOHN 3:2: "...the skin of Moses' face shone: and Moses put the veil upon his face...."

HEB. 1:3: "Who being the brightness of *his* glory, and the express image of his person...."

1 TIM. 6:16: "...dwelling in the light which no man can approach unto; whom no man...can see...."

ISA. 2:3; MICAH 4:2: "...out of Zion shall go forth the law, and the word of the LORD from Jerusalem."

VALLEY

"**The meek and humble**" *R1379:3*

"[Isa. 40] Verse 4. 'Every valley [the meek and humble] shall be exalted, and every mountain and hill [present great ones of earth] shall be made low: and the crooked [the crooked ruts in which the present evil order of things are running] shall be made straight, and the rough places [the errors, inconsistencies, false doctrines and stumbling-stones of a perverted public sentiment, shall be made] plain.'" *R1379:3*

ISA. 40:4: "Every valley shall be exalted...."

"[**Place**] **of blessing**" *D653*

"'Passing through the valley of mourning, They change it into a place of (joy) springs — [Valley of Blessings]. The Autumn rain brings them blessings [Joel 2:28]: They go from strength to strength That each of them may be presented (perfect) Before God in Zion.'

"The Eighty-fifth Psalm also pictures the return of divine clemency and blessing under the Millennial Kingdom — the Olive Mountain (Kingdom) of two parts. The removal of one part of the mountain to the north and the other to the south is significant; the North is the direction of the group Pleiades, the celestial center of the universe, the supposed seat of divine empire. This would seem to indicate the '**change**' of the Gospel Church at this time, from human to spirit conditions as 'partakers of the divine nature': and the removal of the other half of the mountain would seem to

signify the complete restitution, to perfect human conditions, of those ancient worthies accounted worthy to constitute the earthly representatives of God's Kingdom.

"The valley thus produced would be one full of light — free from shadows: for the sun would stream through it from east to west. This speaks symbolically of the Sun of Righteousness and its full light of divine truth and blessing scattering the shadows of sin, ignorance, superstition and death, and healing and restoring the willing and obedient of humanity who will flee to this valley of blessings, the valley of mercy. The valley of mercy, **between** and under the care of the spiritual and human phases of the Kingdom of Light and Peace (the establishment of Jehovah's feet) will surely be a 'Valley of Blessings' to all who enter it with broken and contrite hearts." *D653*

ZECH. 14:4: "...the mount of Olives shall cleave in the midst thereof...a very great valley...."

PSA. 84:6: ***R.S.V.*** "...As they go through the valley of Baca [weeping, Peloubet's Bible Dictionary] they make it a place of springs...."

VESSELS

The Lord's consecrated people. *C92; R2498:1*

"It was manifest, then, in the lamps of all; but all had not the spirit of the truth in themselves — the 'vessels.'" *C92* (For quote see **SYMBOLS: Lamp**.)

ACTS 9:15: "...he is a chosen vessel unto me...."

DAN. 5:3: "Then they brought the golden vessels that were taken out of the temple...."

MATT. 25:4: "...the wise took oil in their vessels...."

2 TIM. 2:21: "...a vessel unto honour...."

Their "natural body" *E306*

"Another text frequently misapplied to the world, which belongs to the Lord's consecrated people, says, 'we have this treasure in earthen vessels, that the excellency of the power may be of God, and not of us.' (2 Cor. 4:7) Here the Church alone is referred to — those who have received the treasure of the new mind, the new nature. They have this treasure, or new nature, in the natural body, which is reckoned as dead, and here denominated an 'earthen vessel.' The illustration is quite a correct one for the class to whom it is applied, the Church; but it is wholly incorrect to apply it to mankind in general, and to suppose that every human being has a heavenly treasure or new nature, and that thus every human body is an earthen vessel or receptacle for such new nature. The world has but one nature — the human nature: it has no new nature, either as a treasure or in any other sense; nor is there any promise that it will ever

have. Quite to the contrary, the highest possible aspiration ever to be opened to humanity, according to the divine Word of promise, is '**restitution**' — to be restored to the full perfection of the human nature, lost in Eden, redeemed at Calvary. Acts 3:19-23" *E306*

2 COR. 4:7: "But we have this treasure in earthen vessels..."

VINE

"**True vine**" — "elect [true] church" *F169*

"Our Lord refers to the elect Church, the New Creation, in his parable of The Vine, telling us that he is the Vine and that his faithful consecrated followers who walk in his footsteps are the branches. He assures us that being branches will not mean immunity from trials and difficulties; but that, on the contrary, the Father, the great Husbandman, will see that we do have trials of faith and patience and devotion, that these may prune us so that our affections shall take less hold upon earthly things and hopes and ambitions — to the intent that they may bring forth a richer fruitage of the Spirit — meekness, patience, gentleness, longsuffering, brotherly kindness, love — and that these things may be in us and abound more and more — and that so an abundant entrance may be administered to us into the everlasting Kingdom of our Lord and Savior Jesus Christ, as members of the New Creation. 2 Pet. 1:11" *F169*

"**True vine...true church**" *R2464:6*

"'I am the **true** vine,' institutes a comparison, and suggests to the mind a counterfeit or false vine; and this reminds us of the fact that our Lord, through this same writer, subsequently explained that there would be two harvests — a gathering of the fruit of the true Vine, and subsequently a gathering of the clusters of the 'vine of the earth.' (Rev. 14:18-20) If, as we shall see, the true Vine represents the true church, then the vine of the earth represents a false church, an untrue, ungenuine one." *R2464:6*

JOHN 15:1,5: "I AM the true vine....ye *are* the branches."

"**Vine of the earth**"

"**False church**" *R2464:6;* (See above ref.) *D18; D51*

"The treading of the winepress is the last feature of harvest work. The reaping and gathering is all done first. So this treading of the winepress of the wrath of God into which 'the vine of the **earth**' (the false vine which has misappropriated the name Christian and Christ's Kingdom) is cast when its iniquitous clusters are fully ripe (Rev. 14:18-20), represents the last work of this eventful 'Harvest' period. It pictures to our minds the last features of the great time of trouble which shall involve all nations, and of

which we are so abundantly forewarned in the Scriptures." *D18*

"This is indeed true: the law of cause and effect is nowhere more prominently marked than on the pages of history. According to this law, which is God's law, the seeds of past sowing must of necessity germinate, develop and bring forth fruitage; and a harvest at some time is therefore inevitable. In Vol. II, we have shown that the harvest time of the Gospel age is already come; that it began in 1874, when the presence of the Lord of the harvest was due; and that, while a great harvest work has been in progress ever since that date, we are now fast nearing the latter end of the harvest period, when the burning of the tares and the gathering and treading of the fully ripe clusters of the '**vine of the earth**' (the matured fruits of the false vine — 'Babylon') are due. Rev. 14:18-20" *D51*

REV. 14:19: "And the angel...gathered the vine of the earth..."

VINEYARD

"**The Jewish people**" *R2904-05; R1982-83 (See references)*

ISA. 5:7: "...the vineyard...*is* the house of Israel...."

MATT. 20:1: "...kingdom of heaven is like unto a man...which went out...to hire labourers into his vineyard."

MATT. 21:33: "There was a certain householder, which planted a vineyard...."

VIRGIN

"**True church**" *D25; F74; C91-93*

"This same method of interpretation applies to mystical Babylon, the great ecclesiastical kingdom, 'that great city' (Rev. 17:1-6), which is described as a harlot, a fallen woman (an apostate church — for the true Church is a virgin), exalted to power and dominion, and backed, to a considerable degree, by the kings of the earth, the civil powers, which are all more or less intoxicated with her spirit and doctrine. The apostate church lost her virgin purity. Instead of waiting, as an espoused and chaste virgin, for exaltation with the heavenly Bridegroom, she associated herself with the kings of the earth and prostituted her virgin purity — both of doctrine and character — to suit the world's ideas; and in return she received, and now to some extent exercises, a present dominion, in large measure by their support, direct and indirect. This unfaithfulness to the Lord, whose name she claims, and to her high privilege to be the 'chaste virgin' espoused to Christ, is the occasion of the symbolic appellation, 'Harlot,' while her influence as a sacerdotal empire, full of inconsistency and confusion, is symbolically represented under the name Babylon, which, in its widest

sense, as symbolized by the Babylonian empire, we promptly recognize to be Christendom; while in its more restricted sense, as symbolized by the ancient city Babylon, we recognize to be the **nominal** Christian Church." *D25*

"Another figure showing the intimate relationship between Christ and his Church, is that of the captain and his soldiers; another that of the shepherd and the sheep; and though all of these figures bring us precious thoughts of the consecrated relationship of the Head of the New Creation to his brethren, the Church, none perhaps gives us a fuller and more complete view of the Master's interest in us and love for us than the figure of the Bridegroom and the Bride. A noble Bridegroom surely is the Only Begotten One to all whose eyes of understanding are open to behold his grandeur of character and his faithfulness! Well is it expressed prophetically as the sentiment of his Church, his body, that he is 'the chiefest among ten thousand, the one altogether lovely.' The Apostle using this figure and addressing the Church declares, 'I have espoused you to one husband that I may present you as a chaste virgin to Christ.' (2 Cor. 11:2) He here refers to the Jewish custom of marriage, quite different from the usage of the present day throughout 'Christendom.' Today an espousal is merely a tentative engagement subject to change if either of the parties concludes that the engagement was unwise or unprofitable; but the Jewish marriage engagement was evidently intended of the Lord to be a type of the engagement between Christ, the Bridegroom, and the Church, his Bride. In the Jewish custom the espousal is the real marriage; it is accompanied by a definite contract, usually in writing, in which the representatives of the bridegroom and the bride mutually agree as to dower, etc., and the matter becomes absolutely binding forthwith, although it is the usual custom to defer the wedding festivities and the actual union for nearly a year. So is the agreement, or contract, between the Lord, the heavenly Bridegroom, and those who are accepted of him in espousal. Neither on his part nor on ours is it a slack contract; but a positive union of heart, of interest, of love, of devotion; and any abrogation of this our covenant would be a serious matter, and of the Bridegroom the Apostle assures us: 'Faithful is he that calleth you, who also will do it.' (1 Thes. 5:24) The entire stress of the matter, therefore, rests upon us." *F74*

The Parable of the Ten Virgins Matt. 25:1-12 "This parable begins with 'Then,' thus indicating that it was not applicable at once, in the Lord's day, but sometime in the future. '**Then** shall the Kingdom of heaven [in its embryo condition — represented by some or all of the holy people, probationers for heirship in that Kingdom] be likened unto ten virgins, who took their lamps and went forth to meet

the Bridegroom. And five of them were wise and five were foolish.'

"The numbers are not significant; neither are the proportions. The parable teaches a movement among the heirs of the Kingdom, in expectation of meeting the Bridegroom — a movement in which two classes would be manifested, here styled 'Wise' and 'Foolish.' The word 'virgin' signifies pure; so these represented in the parable, both the wise and the foolish, represent 'holy people.' In fact, no lovers of the Bridegroom, longing to meet him, can be lovers of sin, even though many of them are 'Foolish.'..." *C91-93* (For quote see **SYMBOLS: Lamp**.)

2 COR. 11:2: "...I have espoused you to one husband, that I may present you as a chaste virgin to Christ."

MATT. 25:1,2: "Then shall the kingdom of heaven be likened unto ten virgins, which...went forth to meet the bridegroom. And five of them were wise, and five *were* foolish."

WATER

"**Truth**" *C65*

"In symbol, water generally represents **truth**, and the symbol preserves its meaning even though it be said to issue from the mouth of the dragon or serpent. The thought conveyed by this symbol is that **truth** would issue forth through evil agencies, and with an evil intent. And just this we find: the strength of the French revolution lay in the fact that it was instigated by many stern **truths**, regarding priest-craft and king-craft, and regarding the individual rights and liberties of all. 'The Rights of Man' was indeed the watchword of that revolt against civil and ecclesiastical oppression. Truths regarding human rights were seen and expressed there which cause us surprise when we consider the ignorance, superstition and servility of that day, under which the masses had so long rested. Many of the **truths** which then swept as a 'flood' over France, deluging it with blood, are now very generally accepted among all civilized peoples; but they were too strong, and too suddenly put, for that time." *C65*

EPH. 5:26: "That he might sanctify and cleanse it with the washing of water by the word..."

"**Restitution blessings**" *D655*

"The reference to the rivers of living waters flowing from Jerusalem, during this Millennial Day of the re-establishment of Jehovah's feet upon his footstool (Zech. 14:8,9), reminds us of the corresponding testimony of Ezekiel (47:1-12) and of John's Revelation (22:1,2) which, under this same symbol of living waters proceeding from the throne of the Millennial Kingdom, show us the restitution blessings under the symbols of 'waters of life,' to

which whosoever will may come and drink freely, and fruitful trees of life everlasting whose leaves will heal the repentant peoples of earth of all imperfections." *D655*

REV. 22:1,17: "And he showed me a pure river of water of life....whosoever will, let him take the water of life freely."

WATERS

REV. 17:15: "...The **waters** which thou sawest,...are **peoples**, and **multitudes**, and **nations** and **tongues**."

WHEAT

"**Children of the truth**" *R3769-71* (See reference)

MATT. 13:30,38: "...gather the wheat into my barn....the good seed are the children of the kingdom."

WINDS

Blowing, "Seem to be...**a symbol for wars**...." *R2334:4*

"(1) The mighty winds rending the very rocks. Blowing winds seem to be used in Scripture as a symbol for wars. And Revelation (7:1-3) teaches us that the wars, whose dark clouds have threatened the civilized world so ominously for the past thirty years, have been miraculously hindered to give opportunity for 'sealing' the Lord's consecrated people in their foreheads (intellectually) with the present truth. We are therefore to expect that when these winds of war shall be let loose, it will mean a cataclysm of warfare which shall divide kingdoms (mountains) — prefigured by the mighty wind shown to Elijah, which rent the rock. But God's kingdom will not follow the epoch of war: the world will not thus be made ready for the reign of Immanuel. No, a further lesson will be needed and will be given. It is represented in (2) An earthquake. Throughout the scriptures an earthquake seems always to represent **revolution**, and it is not unreasonable to expect that an era of general warfare would so arouse the lower classes of Europe and so discontent them with their lot (and especially with the conditions which would follow such a war) that **revolution** would be the next thing in order. If so, the earthquake made known to God's people is the one referred to in Revelation 16:18. But severe tho those revolutionary experiences will be to the world they are not sufficient to prepare men to hear the voice of God...." *R2334:4*

1 KINGS 19:11: "...The LORD passed by, and a great and strong wind rent the mountains, and brake in pieces the rocks before the LORD...."

WINDS, FOUR

"**From every quarter**" *D600*

"This work will be in progress in the interim, the 'Harvest.' The angels (messengers of the new King of earth) will do a

separating work, not between the church and the world, but a separating work in the nominal church — among nominal professors, the present 'Heavens.' This work is represented under various symbolic descriptions — it is the gathering of the wheat from the tares into the barn (Matt. 13:30); it is the gathering of the good fish into baskets and the casting of the unsuitable fish caught in the gospel net back into the sea (Matt. 13:47-49); it is the gathering of his jewels (Mal. 3:17); it is the calling of 'my [*Vol. II, Chap. 5.] people' out of Babylon (Rev. 18:4); it is the midnight cry to the virgins, which separates the wise from the foolish (Matt. 25:6); and in this prophecy it is the gathering of the 'elect' from all the non-elect of Christendom, from the four winds — from every quarter." *D600*

MATT. 24:31: "And he shall send his angels with a great...trumpet, and they shall gather together his elect from the four winds, from one end of heaven to the other."

WINE

"**Doctrine and Spirit, true or false**" *C160; D265, 266; R3104*

"Our Lord's new doctrines were the new wine, while the Jewish sects were the old wine-skins. Suppose that our Lord had joined one of those sects and had begun a reform in it: what would have been the result? There can be no doubt that the new truths, if received, would have broken up that sect completely. The power of its organization, built largely upon sectarian pride, and cemented by errors, superstitions and human traditions, would forthwith have been destroyed, and the new doctrines would have been left stranded — hampered, too, by all the old errors and traditions of that sect, and held responsible for its past record by the world in general." *C160*

"Hear,...the more sober testimony of Archdeacon Farrar. On resigning his position as editor of **The Review of the Churches**, he made this remarkable statement: 'The whole cause of the Reformation is going by default, and if the alienated laity do not awake in time and assert their rights as sharers in the common priesthood of all Christians, they will awake too late, to find themselves members of a church which has become widely popish in all but name.'

"While we see that, in this country, the church nominal, both Papal and Protestant, is seeking the protection and cooperation of the state, that the various sects are associating themselves together for mutual cooperation and defense, ignoring their doctrinal differences and emphasizing their points of agreement, and that all are anxious for a speedy union at any price which will not affect their policy, in Europe the case is somewhat reversed. There the civil powers feel their insecurity and danger most, and they consequently look to the ecclesiastical

powers for what assistance they may be able to render. Here the languishing eye of the church looks imploringly to the state, while there the tottering thrones seek props from the church.

"Such is the unhappy condition of that great system which is now brought to judgment before the assembled world — that system which proudly styles itself Christendom (Christ's Kingdom), but which Christ promptly and emphatically disowns, and most appropriately names 'Babylon.' How manifest the absurdity of applying the name Christendom to the kingdoms of this world! Do the prophets portray any such condition of things in the glorious Kingdom of God? Will the great Prince of Peace go about imploring the nations to recognize his authority and grant him his rights — of territory, of wealth, or of dominion? Will he beg a pittance from the poorest peasant or court the favor of the affluent? Or will he implore his subjects to bestir themselves and exert their dying energies to support his tottering throne? Oh, no; with dignity and authority, when the appointed time comes, he will take unto himself his great power and begin his glorious reign; and who shall hinder or obstruct his way?" *D265*

"...this is a prophecy belonging specially to our day — whatever may have been the force, meaning or application in the day in which it was written. The whole tenor of this chapter [Isa. 28:1-7] as well as the following one, the twenty-ninth, in our judgment, proves this. Ephraim, used by the prophet as a name for the ten tribes of Israel in contradistinction to the two tribes called Judah,

would seem to represent in our day nominal Christendom, and the drunkards of Ephraim would represent the intoxication of Christendom — not literal alcoholic intoxication, but the intoxication of error, of false doctrine, of human schemes and plans, the spirit of man and of the adversary in contradistinction to the spirit, the teaching of the Lord. This intoxication is referred to later on by the same prophet, saying, 'They are drunken, but not with wine; they stagger but not with strong drink. for the Lord hath poured out upon you the spirit of deep sleep [spiritual stupor], and hath closed your eyes.' (Isa. 29:9-12) It is again referred to as the wine of Babylon with which all people have been intoxicated. — Rev. 17:2; 18:3.

"The fall of nominal spiritual Israel, the fall of Babylon in the great time of trouble now approaching, is described in [Isa. 28] verses 2,3. All who do not get rid of this intoxication of error, even tho members of the spiritual house, will have their portion with the world and with hypocrites in this coming storm, which will wreck completely our present civilization, social, political, financial and ecclesiastical. The glory of Babylon at the present time is as that of a beautiful flower, but it shall

quickly fade, its riches and its pride will cause it to be the more quickly devoured — as are the first fruits of the summer — by the lawless ones, the anarchists, who will be bred of discontent, and who will be developed rapidly as a result of the iniquity that will prevail because of this drunkenness of Babylon with false doctrines and false expectation and blind stupor to the great changes of dispensation now taking place.

"The explanation of a blindness, stupor and drunkenness so general as to affect not only the priests and prophets but all the people of Christendom, is referred to in [Isa. 28] verse 7. Babylon has had indeed the golden cup of the Lord's Word in her hands and has affected to give from it to the people the spirit of the Lord, but instead she has filled the cup and presents as the teaching of God's Word intoxicating errors which have misled the so-called Christian world. Thus the Adversary has used the nominal church of God as his tool to deceive all that dwell upon the face of the whole earth — to misrepresent the divine character and plan. (Rev. 14:18) Thank God for the promise that the time is coming when that old serpent, the devil, Satan, shall be bound a thousand years that he shall deceive the nations no more until the thousand years are finished! — Rev. 20:3.

"In the midst of such a general declaration of the drunkenness of mystic Babylon and the storm of divine indignation about to overflow churchianity, it is comforting to find that the Lord breaks in upon the narrative, suggesting that in the midst of such general intoxication of error there will be a residue of God's people whom he can approve and bless. [Isa. 28] Verses 5,6, call the little flock to our attention — the Lord's jewels. In the midst of all this confusion incidental to the fall of Babylon, the Lord himself will crown his faithful with glory and beauty. Even in the present life his truth in their hearts shall cause their faces to shine, and their table shall be spread even in the midst of those who are their enemies, who the world knoweth not of and that they have a filling of the Lord's spirit that gives them joy and peace even in the midst of trials and difficulties. It will be more than this; for very shortly it will mean that they shall receive at the Lord's hands the crown of life — be changed and receive the fulness of divine favor and blessing — glory, honor, immortality and joint-heirship with their Redeemer in his kingdom.

"These enlightened by the Lord and filled with his spirit will have sounder judgment even in the present life and be able to do valiantly in disputing and disproving the spirit of error and its proud and boastful claims; and by and by, when changed and made partakers of the kingdom glories, the Apostle assures us that these shall be amongst the judges of the world, saying, 'Know ye not that the saints shall judge the world?' They will then with their dear

Redeemer occupy the place of judgment during the Judgment day, the Millennial age, and overcome all the forces of error and darkness and evil, so that eventually the Lord shall bruise Satan under their feet, wholly overthrow his kingdom and influence, and establish in its stead the kingdom of God under the whole heavens, destroying all who would corrupt the earth, bringing it, in harmony with the Lord's prayer, to that condition in which God's will shall be done on earth even as it is done in heaven." *R3104:2,3,5,6*

ISA. 5:11,12: "Woe unto them that rise up early in the morning, *that* they may follow strong drink; that continue until night, *till* wine inflame them! And the harp, and wine, are in their feasts: but they regard not the work of the LORD, neither consider the operation of his hands."

MATT. 9:17: "Neither do men put new wine into old bottles: else the bottles break, and the wine runneth out, and the bottles perish: but they put new wine into new bottles, and both are preserved."

REV. 17:2: "...the inhabitants of the earth have been made drunk with the wine of her fornication."

WOMEN

"**In the church; symbol of church separate from the Lord**" *F271; B277;329*

Let Her Be Covered

"We have already pointed out that the High Priest who typified Christ, the High Priest of our Profession, alone went with uncovered head when in priestly attire; and that all of the under-priests, who typified the Church, 'The Royal Priesthood,' wore head coverings called 'Bonnets.' The teaching of this type is in full accord with what we have just seen, for in the gatherings of the Ecclesia of the New Creation, the Lord, the antitypical High Priest, is represented by the brethren, while the Church or Royal Priesthood is represented by the sisters, who the Apostle declares should likewise wear a head covering as indicating the same lesson — the subserviency of the Church to the Lord. The Apostle details this in 1 Cor. 11:3-7,10-15.

"Some have inferred that as the Apostle mentions a woman's long hair being given her by nature as a covering, that he meant nothing more than this; but verse 6 clearly shows to the contrary — that he meant that women should not only let their hair grow long as nature provided for, but, additionally, should wear a covering, which in verse 10 he declares is a **sign**, or symbolic recognition of being subject to, or under the authority of man; symbolically teaching that the entire Church is under law to Christ. The record of verse 4 seems at first to be in conflict with the requirement that women keep silence in the **ecclesias**. Our thought is

that while at the general Church service women are not to take a public part, yet in social meetings for prayer and testimony, and not for doctrinal teaching, there could be no objection to the sisters participating with their heads covered.

"Respecting this matter of perpetuating the typical covering of

their heads by the sisters, the Apostle urges it, but he does not state it to be a divine command. On the contrary, he adds, 'If any man seemeth to be contentious [on the subject] we have no such custom [positive law in the Church].' It should not be considered a vital subject; though all who are seeking to do the Lord's will should be particular in this as well as in other regards from the time they discern its appropriateness as a symbol. The words, 'Because of the angels,' seem to refer to the chosen **elders** of the Church, who specially represent the Lord, the Head, in the **ecclesias**. Rev. 2:1" *F271*

"...a **woman** is always the symbol used for a church separate from its head and lord. The true Church is symbolized by a 'chaste virgin,' while the apostate church, which has fallen away from primitive purity and fidelity to the Lord, is symbolically called 'a harlot.' As the true 'virgin' Church continues to be such to the end of the age, when she is to be united to her Lord and take his name — Christ — so the apostate church was not the Antichrist, or Man of Sin, until she united with her lord and head, the pope, the claimed vicegerent of Christ, and became a religious **empire**, falsely styled Christendom — which signifies Christ's Kingdom." *B277*

"In the first flush of papal exaltation, the people as a whole were nominally members of the church or else pagans; and all who professed Christ were expected to conform to the usages and regulations of the gradually self-exalting hierarchy. Error, always more popular than truth, when exalted to influence and power, hunted down, proscribed and made disreputable the truth, and all who held it. This was the time when, as pictured in Revelation, the true Church (woman) fled into the wilderness — into solitude Rev. 12:6) — an outcast because of her fidelity to the truth, and to the true Lord and Head of the Church. In this time, when apostates were being exalted as princes, the true, humble saints were experiencing what the Lord had warned them, and all who will live godly (in this present time), to expect, viz., persecution. The mother-in-law was against the daughter-in-law, father against son, and mother against brother; and a man's foes were often indeed they of his own household. Could anything be conceived of more likely to **wear out** or **crush** the saints of the Most High than such a course, persisted in for centuries?" *B329*

2 COR. 11:2: "...I am jealous over you with godly jealousy: for I have espoused you to one husband, that I may present *you as* a chaste virgin to Christ."

REV. 12:6: "And the woman fled into the wilderness, where she hath a place prepared of God, that they should feed her there a thousand two hundred *and* threescore days."

Head Covering

"Subserviency of the Church to the Lord" *F271* (reference quoted above)

1 COR. 11:3,5,7,10,15: "...the head of every man is Christ; and the head of the woman *is* the man; and the head of Christ *is* God....But every woman that prayeth or prophesieth with *her* head uncovered dishonoreth her head: for that is even all one as if she were shaven....a man...is the...glory of God: but the woman is the glory of the man. For this cause ought the woman to have power on *her* head because of the angels....But if a woman have long hair, it is a glory to her: for *her* hair is given her for a covering."

"**Symbolic also of Protestant Sects**" *C42; R3600:1,2*

[DAN. 11:] "Verse 37: 'He shall neither regard the god [ruler] of his fathers, nor the desire of women, nor regard any god [ruler]; for he shall exalt himself in opposition to all.'

"Not only did Napoleon not respect the god of his fathers, Papacy, but neither did he regard favorably any of the Protestant sects, here represented as women. In fact, nothing but his own personal ambition controlled him." *C42*

"Who are They who are 'Defiled' by Babylon?

"*Question.* — You have already suggested that the expression, 'These are they which were not defiled by women' (Rev. 14:4) symbolically refers to earthly church organizations, represented as women — Babylon, mother and daughters. Now, I want to enquire, Have not all or nearly all of us who now enjoy the light of present truth been at one time or another in Babylon, connected with some of these church systems or 'women?' If so, have we not all been thus defiled? If not, what is signified by the defilement?

"*Answer*. — To our understanding, the point where defilement begins is after the light of truth has reached the Lord's people, and opened the eyes of their understanding to see the difference between the church whose names are written in heaven and the human organizations whose memberships are written on earth. After we have come to see something at least of the lengths and breadths and heights and depths of the divine character and plan, and to appreciate something at least of how the Lord and his plan have been misrepresented by these women (systems) and

his character traduced, and after we have heard thus the voice of conscience and of the Lord's Word, saying to us, 'Come out of her my people, that ye be not partakers of her sins and that ye receive not of her plagues;' — then it is that our defilement of conscience begins, if we refuse to obey the light that God has granted us, and the voice of his truth. Whoever, for social or financial or other mercenary reasons, holds to that which he sees is built upon a wrong principle, and upholding wrong theories, in defamation of the divine character, is defiling his conscience, will be unworthy to be counted an overcomer, and will fail to have a part in the first resurrection.

"That this is so — that God does not reckon us defiled by our contact with Babylon up to the point of our enlightenment and our intelligent acquiescence in Babylon's wrong condition and course — is evidenced by the Scripture which says, 'Babylon in fallen, is fallen [rejected]. Come out of her, my people [this shows that the Lord's people have mainly been in Babylon], that ye be not partakers of her sins [they are not reckoned to this point as being "defiled"], and that ye receive not of her plagues [all who thus defile themselves with Babylon after seeing her true character prove themselves unworthy of being classed amongst the overcomers, and at very most could only hope to be of those who would come up through great tribulation, and wash their robes (of defilements) and make them white in the blood of the Lamb].'" *R3600:1,2*

Woman with Leaven

"**Roman Catholic System**" *R2635:1,4*

"The Parable of the Leaven"

"Here again we have a word-picture of the Lord's church during this Gospel age of her development and preparation for the kingdom glory to follow..." *R2635:1* (For more of this quote see **SYMBOLS: Leaven**)

"It would not seem reasonable that our Lord should use the word

leaven here as Christian people generally suppose, in a good sense, as implying some grace of the holy Spirit. On the contrary, we recognize consistency in all of his teachings, and we may be as sure that he would not use leaven as a symbol of righteousness as that he would not use leprosy as a symbol of holiness.

"How then shall we apply this parable? We answer, that the grace of God given to his people in the beginning of the age, (1) the faith once delivered to the saints, (2) the hope set before us in the Gospel, (3) love, the bond of perfectness, summed up the three measures of the Lord's provision for his people, — in partaking of which they were to become strong in the Lord and in the power of his might. But gradually a woman arose, a false woman, represented in Revelation as a harlot, and as 'that woman Jezebel.' This

Roman Catholic system obtained great power over the three measures of meal provided for God's household, and proceeded to mix therewith the leaven of her own impurity. The result was that all the family food, all the holy doctrines were contaminated with her false doctrines — nothing was left pure and clean, as handed to us originally by the apostles. The faith once delivered to the saints was distorted out of all semblance to its original simplicity; the hope set before us in the Gospel was changed to another hope entirely, unlike the original; the spirit of the Lord, love, was perverted to a selfish love of creeds of men and human institutions. Alas! no wonder all Christendom is spiritually sick, because of this adulteration in its food supply.

"From this standpoint we readily see the force and meaning of the Master's declaration, that at his return he would gird himself, and come forth and serve his people, and that he would send forth at the hands of his servants things both new and old from the storehouse of his grace, 'meat in due season.'" *R2635:1,4*

MATT. 13:33: "Another parable spake he unto them; The kingdom of heaven is like unto leaven, which a woman took, and hid in three measures of meal, till the whole was leavened."

"**Clothed with the Sun**" *D590*

"A combination of these symbols is found in Revelation (12:1) where the "Woman" symbolizing the early Church is represented as clothed with the **sun**, that is, resplendent in the full, clear light of the unclouded Gospel." *D590* (For quote see **SYMBOLS: Moon**.)

REV. 12:1: "And there appeared a great wonder in heaven; a woman clothed with the sun, and the moon under her feet, and upon her head a crown of twelve stars..."

See also **SYMBOLS: sun, moon**, and twelve **stars**.

WOOD, HAY, STUBBLE

"**Traditions of men** and correspondingly **unstable characters**" *A320*

"Paul refers to this same fire, and this refining process affecting believers in the Day of the Lord (1 Cor. 3:12-15), and in such a manner as to leave it beyond all question that the symbolic fire will **destroy** every error, and thus effect purification of faith. After declaring that he refers only to those building their faith upon the only recognized foundation, Christ Jesus' finished work of redemption, he says:

"'Now if any man build [character] upon **this** foundation, gold, silver, precious stones [divine truths and corresponding character, or] wood, hay, stubble [traditional errors and corresponding unstable characters], every man's work shall be made manifest; for THE DAY shall declare it, because it shall be revealed by FIRE; and so every one's work [2 Pet. 1:5-11], whatever it is, the same fire will prove.' Surely even the most prejudiced will concede that the fire which tries a spiritual work is not literal fire; fire is an appropriate symbol to represent the utter destruction of conditions represented here by wood, hay and stubble. This fire will be powerless to destroy the faith-and-character structure built with the gold, silver and precious stones of divine truth, and founded upon the rock of Christ's ransomsacrifice." *A320*

1 COR. 3:12,13: "Now if any man build upon this foundation gold, silver, precious stones, **wood, hay, stubble**; Every man's work shall be made manifest: for the day shall declare it, because it shall be revealed by fire; and the fire shall try every man's work of what sort it is."

YOKE

"**Servitude**" *R2625:3*

"A yoke is a symbol of servitude, and so our Lord implies that those who are set free (either from the yoke of the Law Covenant, as were the believing Jews, or from the yoke of Satan, as were the believing Gentiles) should become his servants, should take his yoke, should learn to do his will. A yoke generally is arranged for two, and our Lord speaks of it as his yoke, by which we are to understand that he also is a servant; having come to do the Father's will, and having put on the yoke of servitude, he invites us to become true yoke-fellows with himself in the doing of the Father's will, co-laborers together with Christ in the great work of the world's deliverance from sin and death." *R2625:3*

MATT. 11:29: "Take my yoke upon you, and learn of me; for I am meek and lowly in heart: and ye shall find rest unto your souls."

TYPES AND SYMBOLS: TYPES

Greek, ***tupos***: a **die**,...(by implication) a **stamp**,...by analogy a **shape**, that is a **statue**,... figuratively... **resemblance**; ("**type**,") that is a model (for imitation) or **instance** (for warning).

"A type is a figure,...a picture....A figure is...much less exact...than a type.

"A parable is a figure...a word-picture but....has not the exactness of a type. A type is an exact pattern of its antitype, just as a printer's type corresponds to the matter printed....

"A type...is very clearly defined and implies divine foreknowledge and arrangement. God gives types. Men may give pictures, figures, or parables." *R5966:3,6*

LAW SHADOWS (AND SUBSTANCE)

HEB. 10:1: "FOR the law having a shadow of good things to come, *and* not the very image of the things, can never with those sacrifices which they offer year by year continually make the comers thereunto perfect."

MATT. 5:18: "...Till heaven and earth pass, one jot or one tittle shall in no wise pass from the law, till all be fulfilled."

"An antitype never follows its type but takes its place upon the same date." *B181*

TYPES

AARON

"...**the royal priesthood...Lord's consecrated people**"

"[**The Christ**],...Head and...body....still in the flesh...." *T29; 36; R4058:3*

"After being washed, Aaron was clothed with the holy garments of 'glory and beauty' (Exod. 28), and lastly the anointing oil was poured on his head. (Exod. 29:7) Each article of this glorious apparel was typical of qualities and powers of the Great Deliverer — Head and Body — as Jehovah discerned them, looking down into the future to the time for 'the manifestation of the Sons of God,' and the fulfillment in them of his promises." *T29*

"As Aaron stood there clothed in those beautiful robes so typically significant, and was anointed with the holy oil, his head represented Jesus, the Head of the Priesthood, while his body represented the Church, complete in Christ. How impressive and significant a type of the world's High Priest, undefiled, and clothed with power and authority to fulfil Jehovah's covenants!" *T36*

"(2) At Moses' second presentation to Israel he did not address them personally and directly, as at the first, God having said to him 'Aaron shall be thy prophet or mouthpiece, and thou shalt be a god unto Aaron.' This item of the type would seem to imply just what we see to be the fact of the case now, viz., that the Lord Jesus does not address himself to the true Israelites in person now, as at the first advent, but through his agent, through a mouthpiece. Aaron, the mouthpiece or agent of the Lord, we would understand to represent the royal priesthood — those of the Lord's consecrated people still in the flesh, still sacrificing, — who have not yet passed beyond the vail into glory. The type, then, seems to say that the signs or testimonies which will convince all true Israelites now living respecting the presence of the Lord and his mighty power to deliver, his ultimate victory over Satan, sin and death will be of or from our present Lord, but by or through the living members of his Body, his brethren, represented in Aaron." *R4058:3*

LEV. 8:12: "And he poured of the anointing oil upon Aaron's head, and anointed him, to sanctify him."

AARON'S ROD

Elect character of the Christ. *T122*

T122 For quote see **TYPES: Ark of the Covenant**.

NUM. 17:8: "...The rod of Aaron...was budded, and...yielded almonds."

AARON'S SONS

Mystical "body" of Christ. *T36;T40*

"We see the **Body**, or members of the High Priest, again individually typified by the under-priests, who each wore a 'bonnet,' covering his head, to indicate that he was not the head of the Priesthood, but merely a member of the Body. God gave Jesus 'to be the **Head** over all things to the Church, which is his Body.' (Eph. 1:22,23) It is for this reason that Paul insists that a woman's head should be covered as indicating that she is not the head; the husband and wife being typical of Jesus and his Bride — the Church of the First-born.

"The under-priests were robed in linen garments and wore girdles. Their robes represented the **righteousness** of Jesus, imputed to them, and their girdles represent them as **servants** of righteousness. The High Priest wore very similar garments during the time of sacrificing (the Day of Atonement) and put on the glorious garments after making atonement." *T36*

"That some who consecrate to sacrifice, and thus join the 'royal priesthood,' will not reach the future royal service is also shown in these types, as well as expressly declared in

the New Testament. One class will be 'saved so as by fire,' 'coming up through great tribulation,' but missing the prize for which they started out in consecration, because not sufficiently appreciative of their privilege of sacrificing as priests — not sufficiently zealous to 'suffer with him,' the High Priest. These we will consider particularly later on, when examining the sacrifices of the Atonement Day.

"Another class of those who consecrate as priests, which will not gain the **royal** blessings promised to these priests, will be destroyed in the Second Death. These, clearly brought to our notice by the New Testament (Heb. 6:4-6; 10:28-31; 1 John 5:16), are pictured also in these types or shadows of the Tabernacle service.

"Aaron's four sons at first represented the under-priesthood, but two of these were destroyed — corresponding to the two classes above described, both of which fail, as respects the royal priesthood; one of them suffering the Second Death, the other saved from it only 'so as by fire — tribulation, purgation. And as Aaron and the two remaining sons were forbidden to make lamentation for their brethren who were thus cut off, this signifies that all the faithful of the priests will recognize the justice of the Divine decisions, and will bow to them in humble submission, saying, 'Just and true are thy ways, thou King of saints.' Indeed, it brings a blessing to the faithful, leading them to greater zeal, saying, 'Let us fear lest a promise being left us of entering into his rest any of us should seem to come short of it.' Lev. 10:1-7; Rev. 15:3; Heb. 4:1" *T40*

LEV. 8:30: "And Moses took of the anointing oil, and of the blood...., and sprinkled *it* upon Aaron...and upon his sons...and sanctified Aaron...and his sons...."

ABEL

The consecrated, "the 'wheat'" *R2778:3,4*

"While these pictures and lessons relate chiefly to the church as a whole, rather than to each member of it as an individual, nevertheless, individual lessons may be gleaned from them also, for although Cain and Abel, Ishmael and Isaac, Esau and Jacob, represented particularly natural Israel and spiritual Israel, we may nevertheless, find similar characters and similar individual conditions today, in the 'tares' and 'wheat' of the Gospel church. The tares, like Cain, have the spirit of the wicked one, the spirit of ambition and of pride, and as a rule they occupy very leading positions in nominal churchianity. They bring to the Lord offerings, and not without a certain form of godliness, yet their hearts are far from the attitude which would be pleasing to the Lord, for the offerings which they present are of their own works — they come not to the Lord solely

in the name and merit of the great sacrifice for sins finished at Calvary, and God cannot accept their offerings.

"The wheat class of this Gospel age, corresponding to Abel, come before the Lord in greater humility; not trusting in any righteousness or works of their own for their acceptance with him, they present to him, according to his own appointment, the sacrifice of blood — Christ's sacrifice, and these are accepted and God's favor is manifested to them; but so far from this awakening in the tare-class a spirit of contrition, and a desire to learn the way of the Lord more perfectly, it seems to awaken in them hatred, animosity, chagrin, that they, worldlywise and of worldly influence and fame, should be rivalled and outdone in divine favor and acceptance by those that are nought in their estimation and from the worldly standpoint. And the wheat-class, represented in Abel, must be ready to lay down their lives as the price of their fidelity to the Lord. To these the Lord speaks individually, saying, 'Be thou faithful unto *death*, and I will give thee a crown of life.' (Rev. 2:10) Their faithfulness is sure to lead to consecration to death which ultimately finishes in literal death; for only by thus proving their faithfulness and following the footsteps of their Master to the end of the way can they be accepted of the Lord to joint-heirship with him." *R2778:3,4*

GEN. 4:4: "And Abel...brought...of his flock....And the LORD had respect unto Abel and to his offering."

HEB. 11:4: "By faith Abel offered unto God a more excellent sacrifice...by which he obtained witness that he was righteous, God testifying of his gifts...."

ABRAHAM

Jehovah *R1386:3;R3601:1;R3867:6*

"Both of the objecting friends recognize the force of the type to which we long ago called attention — that Abraham, Isaac and Rebecca represent Jehovah, Christ and the bride. But both seem to have forgotten that a *type* must not be used to teach a doctrine, but merely to *illustrate* one that is already taught in plain terms." *R1386:3*

"The Apostle is discussing Abraham and God's promises to him, one of which is 'I have made thee a father of many nations.' The Apostle calls attention to the fact that Abraham, in this matter, was a type of God, and that these words, therefore, imply that many nations would become children of God. The thought is somewhat beclouded by the translation, 'before him whom, he believed.' If this were rendered, 'foreshadowing him whom he believed,' or 'typifying him whom he believed,' the thought would be clearer to many." *R3601:1*

"Throughout the Scriptures the church is represented as a bride in preparation for her marriage. The Bridegroom

uniformly is the Lord Jesus, to whom belongs the entire inheritance, and the opportunity granted to the Lord's followers in the present time is that of becoming his bride and joint-heirs. They have no status or relationship to the King eternal except as they obtain it by union with the King's Son. The type of this in the Old Testament is a very beautiful one: Abraham typified the Heavenly Father, very rich; Isaac typified our Lord Jesus, the seed of promise, the heir of all; Abraham's servant sent to call a wife for Isaac, beautifully typified the holy Spirit, which, during this Gospel age, has been selecting the church, of which the Apostle says, I have espoused you as a chaste virgin unto one husband, which is Christ. — 2 Cor. 11:2." *R3867:3*

ROM. 4:17: "...I have made thee a father of many nations."

GAL. 4:22: "...Abraham had two sons, the one by a bondmaid, the other by a freewoman."

ADAM

Christ (?) *R86:5; E138;139*

"...men are sometimes used as types of Christ, and that the type is always inferior to the antitype. For instance: Adam was a type, as the head of the human family; David was the first king who ever 'sat on the throne of the Lord;' Moses was a figure of him that was to come, as it is written: 'A prophet shall the Lord your God raise up unto you *like unto me.'*

"If Christ is a prophet like unto one after the order of Moses, does it prove that Moses was not a man — that Moses must have been Christ? If David (the name means the anointed — the Christ) was a type of Christ, and called 'the Lord's anointed,' does it prove that he was not a man? If Adam was the head of the race was he really not a man, was he Christ in some previous manifestation? By no means. Adam, David, Moses, Aaron, as well as Solomon, Isaac, Jacob, Melchisedec, etc. were but figures of the true *Head*, *King*, *Prophet*, *Priest*, and Melchisedec, as a type, showed how the kingly and priestly offices (separate under the law) would both unite in him, so that he would be a 'Priest upon his throne.' All the types are natural, representing things higher. First, the *natural* head, king, prophet and priest: afterward, the spiritual." *R86:5*

"And so it is written, 'The first Adam was made a living soul [an animal being], the last Adam a quickening spirit. However, the spiritual was not first, but the animal — afterwards the spiritual.' (1 Cor. 15:45-47 — See ***Diaglott***.) Verily our Lord Jesus in the days of his flesh did take hold on or become identified with the **first Adam and his race**, through the seed of Abraham (Heb. 2:16), and was made 'lower than the angels, for the suffering of **death**...that he by the grace of God might taste death for every man.' But having accomplished that object he was raised from the

dead a partaker of the divine nature, the purchaser of the human family, but no longer of it — no longer 'of the earth earthy,' but the heavenly Lord — the Second Adam, a **life-giving spirit**." *E138*

"The first Adam was the original 'root' out of which the entire

human family has been produced, and hence our Lord Jesus in the flesh, son of Mary, son of David, son of Abraham, was in the same sense a shoot or branch out of Adam (but supplied, as we have seen, with an unimpaired life from above, which still kept him separate from sinners). It was his **sacrifice** of himself as the **man** (in obedience to the Father's plan) that not only secured his own exaltation to the divine nature, but purchased to him all the race of Adam and Adam's right as father or 'root' of the race. Thus by purchasing Adam's place and rights, our Lord is the Second Adam. As he gave his own human life for that of Adam, so he sacrificed also the possibilities of a race which he might have produced in a natural way, for Adam's children — that he may in due time accept 'whosoever will' of Adam's family as his own children, **regenerating** them, giving them everlasting life under reasonable terms. No longer a 'branch,' out of the root of Jesse and David, our Lord is a new root, prepared to give **new** life and sustenance to mankind — Adam, Abraham, David and every other member or branch of the sin-blighted human family who will accept it on the terms of the 'Oath-bound Covenant.'" *E139*

"**We are not sure that the Lord's Word speaks of him as a type** ...." *R5967:2*

"The Apostle does not contrast Adam and Jesus, but speaks of the first Adam and the Second Adam. Christ is very unlike Adam. Adam disobeyed God, while Christ was wholly obedient. Adam failed while Jesus succeeded. St. Paul says (1 Cor. 15:47) that the Second Man is the Lord from heaven. The first Adam continues to be the head of the human family. We still speak of him as Father Adam. The Second Adam will not begin his work until the Millennial age, when he will become the second Father to the race, taking the place of the first Adam. He is not the Second Adam as yet. He is to be the Second Adam.

"The various titles that belong to our Lord Jesus include that of the Everlasting Father. And the Everlasting Father will be the successor of Adam, who was only the temporary father of the race and who failed to give his posterity life. In due time the Second Adam will be the regenerator of the human family." *R5967:2*

ROM. 5:14: "...death reigned from Adam to Moses, even over them that had not sinned after the similitude of Adam's transgression, who is the figure of him that was to come."

1 COR. 15:45: "...The first man Adam was made a living soul; the last Adam *was made* a quickening spirit."

ALTAR — BRAZEN

Christ — [earthly rights and requirements] the "ransom." *T22*

"(1) By faith in Christ's ransom-sacrifice, represented in the Brazen Altar, we enter the 'Gate' to the 'Court' — the veil of unbelief and sin is passed. This step is one which our Lord Jesus never took, because not being of Adamic stock, but holy, harmless, separate from sinners, he never was outside the Court condition." *T22*

HEB. 13:10: "We have an altar, whereof they have no right to eat which serve the tabernacle."

ALTAR — CHRIST (?)

"**The 'little flock,' the consecrated Church in the present sacrificing condition**....Our Lord...kept the incense continually burning...." *T120*

"The fact that all things in the Tabernacle were made of **gold**, representative of the divine nature, implies that it represented the condition of such only as are called to the divine nature. Only those of the Levites who were consecrated to the work of sacrificing (the Priests) had access to the Tabernacle; so only those of the household of faith who are consecrated to sacrifice, even unto death, enter the divine conditions represented in the Tabernacle." *T120*

ARK OF THE COVENANT

"**The Christ, the embodiment of Jehovah's plan.**" *T121-124*

"'**Aaron's Rod that budded**'...the budded rod will be seen to be Jehovah's acceptance of Aaron and his sons — the typical priesthood, representatives of Christ and the Church — as the only ones who might perform the priest's office of mediator....[For quote of *T122* see **SYMBOLS: Leaves**]

"**The Golden Pot of Manna** represented immortality as being one of the possessions of the Christ of God. Our Lord Jesus doubtless refers to this when he says: 'To him that overcometh will I give to eat of the **hidden manna**.' Rev. 2:17

"Manna was the bread which came down from heaven as a life-sustainer for Israel. It represented the living bread, supplied to the world by God through Christ. But as the Israelites needed to gather this supply of manna daily or else want and starve, so it will be necessary for the **world** ever to seek supplies of life and grace if they would live everlastingly.

"But to those who become Christ's joint-heirs, members of the Anointed Body, God makes a special offer of a peculiar sort of manna, the same and yet different from that given to others — 'the hidden manna.' One peculiarity of this pot of manna was that it was **incorruptible**; hence it well illustrates the immortal, incorruptible condition promised to all members of the 'Seed' — which is the Church. The manna or life-support fed to Israel was **not incorruptible**, and must therefore be gathered daily. So all the obedient of mankind who shall by and by be recognized as Israelites indeed, will be provided with life everlasting, but conditional, supplied and renewed life; while the 'little flock,' who under present unfavorable conditions are faithful 'overcomers,' will be given an **incorruptible** portion — immortality. [*A185*] Rev. 2:17

"Here, then, in the golden Ark, was represented the glory to be revealed in the divine Christ: in the budded rod, God's chosen priesthood; in the tables of the Law, the righteous Judge; in the incorruptible manna in the golden bowl, immortality, the divine nature. Above this Ark, and constituting a lid or head over it, was '**The Mercy Seat**'...

"As the Ark represented the Christ, so the 'Mercy Seat,' Glory-light and Cherubim together represented Jehovah God — 'the Head of Christ is God.' (1 Cor. 11:3)...[For quote of *T123* see **SYMBOLS: Shekinah Light**.]

"Humanity cannot enter Jehovah's presence: hence the royal priest, Head and Body, represented by Aaron, must become **new** creatures, 'partakers of the **divine nature**' (having crucified and buried the human), before they can appear in the presence of that excellent glory." *T121-124*

EPH. 3:3-11: "How that by revelation he made known unto me the mystery; (as I wrote afore in few words, Whereby, when ye read, ye may understand my knowledge in the mystery of Christ) Which in other ages was not made known unto the sons of men, as it is now revealed unto his holy apostles and prophets by the Spirit;

That the Gentiles should be fellowheirs, and of the same body, and partakers of his promise in Christ by the gospel: Whereof I was made a minister, according to the gift of the grace of God given unto me by the effectual working of his power. Unto me, who am less than the least of all saints, is this grace given, that I should preach among the Gentiles the unsearchable riches of Christ; And to make all *men* see what *is* the fellowship of the mystery, which from the beginning of the world hath been hid in God, who created all things by Jesus Christ: To the intent that now unto the principalities and powers in heavenly *places* might be known by the church the manifold wisdom of God, According to the eternal purpose which he purposed in Christ Jesus our Lord..."

[Eph. 3] Vs. 9: "...the fellowship of the mystery...." **Vs. 11**: *Diag.:* "...according to a Plan of the AGES, which he formed for the ANOINTED Jesus our LORD...."

"**JEHOVAH'S divine presence**" *R1857:2; R2002:3*

"The *Golden Text* [Isa. 43:2] emphasizes the sentiment of this lesson to the children of God.

As Israel in passing through Jordan had nothing to fear because the ark of the Lord, the symbol of the divine presence stood in the midst of the threatening danger, so the Christian has nothing to fear so long as he realizes the divine presence and approval. Through rivers and seas of trouble he may wade, and through fiery furnaces of affliction he may pass, but none of these things can harm him while the Lord is with him." *R1857:2*

See also *R2002: "The Ark Brought to Jerusalem"*

"**The Lord himself, his grace, his goodness, his promises**" *R3086:4*

"In this view of the matter, we see how appropriate it was that the Ark of God's covenant, representing the Lord himself, his grace, his goodness, his promises, should stand in the midst of Jordan — effecting a cancellation of the sentence of death — in order that the Millennial blessings might be attained by all under the lead of Joshua's antitype. That the Ark of God was borne by the high-priest and the under-priests, and that these first passed into Jordan, is also significant: it represented how our great High Priest and the royal priesthood, his church, must first pass into Jordan before any of the people could pass over. And the fact that the high-priest and the under-priests stood in the midst of Jordan while the people all crossed over, illustrates how the passing over, free from divine condemnation, will be effected by the work of the great High-Priest, and his associate 'brethren.' He gave himself for our sins; he became a curse for us; he, as the man Christ Jesus, stopped in the midst of Jordan, that the world might pass over; the royal priesthood are following him in this sacrifice, and they too are stopping in the midst of Jordan; they also, as joint-heirs with their Lord, lay down their lives on behalf of the brethren, — to the intent that the whole world of mankind, or as many as will, may enter into the glorious kingdom privileges, according to the divine arrangement." *R3086:4*

EXOD. 25:22: "And there I will meet with thee, and I will commune with thee from above the mercy seat, from between the two cherubims which *are* upon the ark of the testimony, of all *things* which I will give thee in commandment unto the children of Israel."

ARK — NOAH'S

"**The Lord's protecting care**" See *R2842-2844*

"Noah's ark...typified **Christ and the power in him which will replenish and reorganize society**." *A318*

A318 For quote see **SYMBOLS: Earth**.

HEB. 11:7: "By faith Noah, being warned of God of things not seen as yet, moved with fear, prepared an ark to the saving of his house..."

1 PET. 3:20: "...the longsuffering of God waited in the days of Noah, while the ark was a preparing..."

BALAAM

"**Class who fall away through covetousness.**" *R2342:5*

"[Question:] Jude intimates, in his epistle, that the falling away during the Gospel age will be on three lines: — typified by Cain, Balaam and Korah. Does this mean (1) approaching God under the cover of a different sacrifice to the one he had appointed, (2) covetousness, and (3) envy?

"[Answer:] I think that you correctly interpret Jude's teaching. And who cannot see that these three points are the causes of stumbling in nearly every instance — and especially among those who have talents and who aspire to be used in the Lord's service. Let us beware of these seductions of the adversary, (1) a rejection of the ransom, (2) covetousness of wealth or honor or fame, (3) envy, malice, hatred, strife as against others more liberally endowed with talents or more favorably situated for service. — EDITOR]." *R2342:5*

JUDE 11: "...they...ran greedily after the error of Balaam for reward...."

BODY

The church *T36*

T36 For quote see **TYPES: Aaron; Body**.

EPH. 1:22,23; 4:12: "And hath put all things under his feet, and gave him to be the head over all things to the church, Which is his body....the body of Christ...."

1 COR. 12:27: "Now ye are the body of Christ, and members in particular."

BRAZEN SERPENT

Christ *R3101:6; R3102:1*

"We are not to question the meaning of this as a type, for our Lord himself in our Golden Text [John 3:14,15] declares it. The serpent represents sin, vileness, evil, pain, suffering; while our Lord Jesus could be our Redeemer only because he was holy, harmless, separate from sinners. The question arises then, Why was the serpent used to represent our Lord? Why was not Moses instructed to make a brazen dove, or a brazen lamb — as representative of the meekness and harmlessness and purity of him who died for us? We

answer that a correct appreciation of the answer to this question is the key to an understanding of the great atonement provided by God for man, through the 'Man Christ Jesus; who gave himself a ransom for all, to be testified in due time.' (1 Tim. 2:5,6) The serpent represented the atonement transaction better than any other emblem could. The serpent in Eden was Satan's agent and representative in the alluring of our first parents into sin: in this sense of the word the bite of that serpent, the devil, upon our race through our first parents, is destroying all the human family in death, — with the attendant pains, and sufferings on account of which the Apostle declares, 'The whole creation groaneth and travaileth in pain together.' (Rom. 8:22) It is impossible to get rid

of the sin virus of 'that old serpent;' there is no remedy that we can apply: mankind can only look to God for help; and the help which God provides is through the sending of his Son, the undefiled One. Nor will it do that that undefiled One should visit us and know our troubles and sympathize with us, and counsel us how to get rid of sin. No, this is not sufficient, he may not contradict or undo the Father's decrees, tho he may fulfil them — he may take our place, he may bear our penalty. And thus the Apostle expresses it, 'He who knew no sin was *made sin for us*,' that we might be made right in the sight of God through him. The serpent then represented sin in every sense of the word; and as the whole world was serpented or inoculated our Lord must take the place of the sinner in order that the sinner might get free from the sentence; and this is why it was a serpent that was raised on the pole. 'He was made sin for us' — treated as the one in whom centered the sin of the whole world." *R3101:6*

JOHN 3:14; 12:32: "...as Moses lifted up the serpent in the wilderness, even so must the Son of man be lifted up....And I, if I be lifted up from the earth, will draw all *men* unto me."

2 COR. 5:21: "For he hath made him *to be* [a] sin [offering] for us, who knew no sin."

BULLOCK

Perfect sacrifice — Of Christ *T51, 53, 55, 56, 57, 58*

"The bullock represented Jesus at the age of thirty years — the **perfect** MAN who gave himself and died on our behalf. The High Priest, as we have already seen, represented the 'new' nature of Jesus, the anointed Head and all the members of his Body foreknown of God. The distinction which is here made between the **human** and '**new** creature' should be clearly understood and remembered. [See *A,Chapt. X; B126*] 'The **man** Christ Jesus who gave himself' at thirty years of age, was he who previously was rich (of a higher nature), but who for our sakes became poor; that is, became **a man**, that he might give the only possible ransom for men — a perfect man's life. 1 Cor. 15:21" *T51*

"Thus considered, we see that the death of the bullock typified the offering by Jesus of himself, when he consecrated himself. This is in harmony with the Apostle's statement respecting Jesus' consecration or offering of himself. He quotes the Prophet, saying, 'Lo I come to do thy will, O God, as in the volume of the Scriptures it is written of me' — to die and redeem many. **There**, says the inspired writer, 'He took away the first [i.e., set aside the typical sacrifices] that he might establish [or fulfil] the second [the antitype, the real sacrifice for sins].' Heb. 10:7,9,14" *T53*

"'Thus shall Aaron come into the Holy [and Most Holy] with a young bullock for a sin-offering, and a ram for a burnt-offering. And Aaron shall offer his bullock of the sin-offering which is for [represents] himself, and make an atonement for himself [the members of **his body** — the under-priests] and for his house [all believers, the entire "household of faith" — the Levites]. And he shall kill the bullock of the sin-offering which is for [represents] himself. And he shall take a censer full of burning coals of fire from off the altar before the Lord, and his hands full of sweet incense beaten small [powdered], and bring it within the veil [the first veil or "door"]. And he shall put the incense upon the fire before the Lord [the censer of coals of fire was set into the top of the golden altar in the "Holy," and the incense crumbled over it gradually yielded a smoke of sweet perfume], that the cloud of the incense [penetrating beyond the second veil] may cover the mercy seat, that is upon [covers] the testimony [the Law], that he die not [by infracting these conditions, upon which alone he may come into the divine presence acceptably].' [Lev. 16] Verses 3,6,11-13" *T55*

"Looking through the type to the antitype, let us now, step by step, compare the doings of Jesus with this prophetic picture of his work. When the man Christ Jesus had consecrated himself he immediately, as the new creature, begotten by the holy Spirit, took the sacrificed human life (blood of the bullock) to present it before God as the ransom-price 'for our sins, and not for ours only, but **also** for the sins of the whole world.'...

"We see, then, how Jesus' life for three and a half years filled all three of these pictures: His sacrifice of perfect manhood was, in the sight of the world, foolish and detestable; in the sight of believers, a sacrifice acceptable to God; in the sight of Jehovah, 'a sweet incense.' They all ended at once — at the cross. The bullock was entirely disposed of, the fat fully consumed, and the incense all offered, when Jesus cried, '**It is finished!**' and died. Thus the **man** Christ Jesus gave himself a ransom for all...." *T55-58*

See also **SYMBOLS: Fat**

HEB. 9:12-14: "Neither by the blood of goats and calves, but by his own blood he entered in once...having obtained eternal redemption....For if the blood of bulls...sanctifieth to the purifying of the flesh: How much more shall the blood of Christ...."

Of restored humanity *T96*

"When those of the world of mankind, willing to accept God's grace, shall have been brought to perfection, at the close of the Millennium, there will be no longer any **poor** in the sense of inability to offer a **bullock** — in the sense of deficiency of mental, moral or physical ability. All will be perfect men, and their offerings will be their **perfect** selves typified by **bullocks**. David, speaking of this, says: 'Then shalt thou be pleased with sacrifices of righteousness [of right doing] with burnt-offering and whole burnt-offering; then shall they offer **bullocks** [perfect sacrifices] upon thine altar.' (Psa. 51:19) Yet that David's language should not be understood to teach the restoration of the literal, bloody, typical sacrifices, is evident, for in the same connection he says, 'Thou desirest not sacrifice [either typical or antitypical — full atonement for sin having been accomplished by that time — once for all"]...The sacrifices of God are a broken spirit; a broken and a contrite heart, O God, thou wilt not despise.' All these sacrifices must be of the free will and desire of the offerer. Lev. 1:3" *T96*

PSA. 51:19: "Then shalt thou be pleased with the sacrifices of righteousness...then shall they offer bullocks...."

CAIN

"Rejected sacrificers," rejecters of the ransom; those with pride and ambition: unbelieving fleshly Israel; the "tares" *R2342:5; R2776-2778*

R2342:5 See **TYPES: Balaam**

JUDE 11: "...they have gone in the way of Cain...."

HEB. 11:4: "...Abel offered unto God a more excellent sacrifice than Cain...."

1 JOHN 3:12: "...Cain...was of that wicked one, and slew his brother....Because his own works were evil, and his brother's righteous."

CANAAN

"**Millennial kingdom**" [**New earth**] *R3086:6*

"We have already seen that the land of Canaan prefigures the Millennial kingdom with its rich blessings which may be secured by all who, under the command of the greater Joshua — Jesus and his glorified royal priesthood, desire to be the Lord's people. The renewal of circumcision on entering the land, would thus signify that one of the first institutions of the Millennial age will be a consecration to

the Lord — to put away sin, to live separate from sin as the Lord's assisting grace will enable. The renewal of the passover would symbolize that in the Millennial dispensation the important work of redemption by the precious blood will again be brought prominently to the attention of all who desire to be God's people, and that they can only be his people by a full recognition of the Lamb that was slain, and by an eating of his flesh — partaking of the mercies and blessings flowing from his sacrifice...." *R3086:6*

JOSH. 1:2: "...go over this Jordan, thou, and all this people, unto the land which I do give to them...to the children of Israel."

"Newness of life" of the consecrated. *R3087:2*

"Another thought respecting Canaan: we have already noted that the royal priesthood may in some sense of the word be said to be already in the land of Canaan throughout this Gospel age — by faith — already in the place or condition which Israel after the flesh and the mass of mankind 'entered not into because of unbelief.' (Heb. 4:3,6,10) To this class, Jordan would fitly represent consecration unto death; and Canaan would represent our present newness of life while still in the flesh....To these the capture of Jericho and all the battlings with the Canaanites represent victories of the 'new creatures' over the flesh; not accomplished by their own strength, but accomplished for them by the Lord in recognition of their faith and trust in him." *R3087:2*

HEB. 4:3,10: "For we which have believed do enter into rest....He that is entered into His rest...hath ceased from his own works, as God *did* from his."

CANDLESTICK (Lampstand)

The true church *R2827:2; T115*

"Seven, as a symbolic number, represents perfection or completeness, and thus the seven candlesticks, the seven churches, represent the complete church, and this union of seven as one was most beautifully typified in the golden candlestick (lamp-stand) of the 'most holy' of the Tabernacle and subsequently of the Temple. That candlestick or lampstand was one, but there were seven branches or lights; while in this symbolical picture of the church in Revelation each is represented separately, and our Lord's messages are directed to the seven churches of the seven epochs separately; nevertheless, in reality the church is all one. (1 Cor. 12:12) The union and the separateness are merely as we view the matter from two different standpoints. It is the one high priest who cares for all the lamps, and the one holy oil that in every stage of the church has given light to all of the consecrated class, the 'royal priesthood,' who have access to the 'holy place' and are seated with Christ in heavenly places (conditions). — Eph. 2:6." *R2827:2*

T115 For quote see **SYMBOLS: Lamp.**

EXOD. 25:31,37: "And thou shalt make a candlestick *of* pure gold....and...seven lamps thereof...."

REV. 1:20; 2:1: "...The seven candlesticks...are the seven churches....He...walketh in the midst of the seven golden candlesticks...."

CHERUBIM

"**Jehovah's...love and power.**" *T125*

"**The Two Cherubim** represented two other elements of Jehovah's character, as revealed in his Word, viz., divine Love and divine Power. These attributes, Justice, the foundation principle, and Love and Power of the same quality or essence, and lifted up out of it, are in perfect harmony. They are all made of **one piece**: they are thoroughly one. Neither Love nor Power can be exercised until Justice is fully satisfied. Then they fly to help, to lift up and to bless. They were on the wing, ready, but waiting; looking inward toward the 'Mercy Seat,' toward Justice, to know when to move." *T125*

EXOD. 25:18: "And thou shalt make two cherubims *of* gold, *of* beaten work...in the two ends of the mercy seat."

CIRCUMCISION

"'Circumcision of the heart;' full consecration...and a separation from the filth of the flesh and sin...." *R2116:1*

"In the type only the circumcised were allowed to eat of the Passover supper. Circumcision of the heart is the antitype, as the Apostle explains, and signifies a full consecration to the Lord and a separation from the filth of the flesh and sin in general. Let us note, also, that none but those consecrated to be broken with him, and to share his cup of suffering and self-denial, are truly 'disciples,' and invited to 'do *this.*' — See Matt. 20:22,23" *R2116:1*

ROM. 2:29: "...Circumcision *is that* of the heart, in the spirit, *and* not in the letter...."

CITIES OF REFUGE

"**Christ**" *R3093:1*

"Our Golden Text [Psa. 46:1] draws to our attention an antitypical significance of these cities of refuge: 'God is our refuge and strength, a very present help in time of trouble.' From the time we become acquainted with the real facts of our case, we realize that a death sentence has been issued which involves each one of us. We realize, too, that justice has a full right to pursue us unto death because we have 'all sinned and come short of the glory of God;' and because the 'wages of sin is death.' The Apostle Paul points out this matter distinctly (Rom. 5:12), saying 'By one man ['s

disobedience] sin entered into the world and death by sin; and so [thus] death passed upon all men, for that all have sinned.' From the moment, therefore, that we recognize that we are sinners—that we could not stand approved in the divine presence, — from that moment we realize that the avenger, Justice, is upon our trail, and that it is only a question of time when we will be overtaken and destroyed unless we reach some place of refuge. As we flee we see finger-posts which God has set for our instruction pointing us to Christ as the only place of refuge, and to him we have to flee." *R3093:1*

JOSH. 20:2,3: "...Appoint...cities of refuge...that the slayer that killeth...unawares *and* unwittingly may flee thither: and they shall be your refuge from the avenger...."

ROM. 8:1: "*There is*...no condemnation to them which are in Christ Jesus, who walk not after the flesh, but after the Spirit."

HEB. 6:18: "That...we might have a strong consolation, who have fled for refuge to lay hold upon the hope set before us...."

CYRUS

"**Christ**" *R2498:4; 3643:2,4*

"It will be noticed, further, that, as literal Babylon sat upon the literal River Euphrates, so mystic Babylon is said to sit upon the waters, peoples. It should be noticed, also, that as the literal city was captured by the diversion of the literal waters, so symbolic Babylon is to fall by reason of the diversion of the symbolic Euphrates, which in Rev. 16:12, it is foretold, shall be 'dried up — that the way of the kings of the East might be prepared.'

"The kings of the East, or kings from the sunrising, are, we understand, the kings of Christ's kingdom, who are also priests — the body of Christ, the royal priesthood. 'Thou has made us unto our God kings and priests, and we shall reign on the earth.' From this standpoint of view, Cyrus and his army, overthrowing literal Babylon, was a figure or illustration of Messiah, King of kings and Lord of lords, who with his faithful will shortly overthrow mystic Babylon, and take possession of the world in the name of Jehovah, to establish the Kingdom for which he taught us to pray, 'Our Father....thy kingdom come, thy will be done on earth as it is done in heaven.'" *R2498:4*

"We are interested in the affairs of this narrative sympathetically, and also because we realize that the Lord's providences control in respect to all the affairs of Israel, his people. But we have greater and more profound interest in the events here narrated now that our eyes have been opened to see that the seventy years of desolation of the land of Palestine represent the seventy jubilee cycle

appointed to them in the time the fulfillment of which we are now living. Our interest is still further awakened when we remember that in this long interim of time God's favor was transferred from the Jewish house of servants to the Gospel house of sons, and that an antitypical Babylon has carried away captive the Lord's people and all the golden vessels of truth. Spiritual Israel in captivity has been waiting for the glorious deliverance to be brought about by Immanuel, the Deliverer greater than Cyrus....

"Our antitypical Cyrus, our present Lord, has permitted us to bring back the golden vessels, the golden truths which for so long have been misappropriated, misapplied, misunderstood, misused in Babylon." *R3643:2,4*

ISA. 44:28;45:1,13: "That saith of Cyrus, *He is* my shepherd,...saying to Jerusalem, Thou shalt be built; and to the temple, Thy foundation shall be laid....Thus saith the LORD to his anointed, to Cyrus, whose right hand I have holden, to subdue nations before him;...to open before him the...gates....he shall let go my captives...."

DAVID

"Beloved" — "God's people," Christ and the church, "in the present militant condition." *R3259:2*; *B255*

"All who are of the Davidic character, of the disposition *beloved* of the Father — acceptable members of his dear, beloved Son — will, as soon as they learn of the divine purpose, promptly submit themselves, and cooperate in the divine plan. That plan in the type was that David, as the man of war, battling for the right, and severely tried and disciplined, should represent the saints of God in the present militant condition, warring with the world, the flesh and the devil, and becoming in their own hearts and faith strong in the Lord and in the power of his might. According to the same type it is the mission of the present time to prepare the gold, silver and precious things for the future temple — ready for its construction....As David and his work of preparing for the temple, typifies the church in this present time, and our work of preparing ourselves and each other for the glories to follow, so Solomon's kingdom which followed represents the kingdom of the glorified Christ — the real Kingdom, of which the present is but the embryo, and the construction of Solomon's Temple typifies the resurrection of the church, in which all the members shall come together in glorious completeness, in the morning of the Millennial day. Psa. 46:5" *R3259:2*

"A **woman** is the figure used when the Church alone is referred to, separate from her Lord and Head. Separate and distinct from her Lord, the Bridegroom, she is an espoused virgin. But in this instance a man, Elijah, is the figure used, because the work prefigured is not the work of the Church separate from her Lord, but the one work of both.

Our Lord was the Head and Forerunner of the Church in the flesh (the Elijah), as truly as he is Head of the Church triumphant — the Christ. Other instances in which a man is the figure used, when a joint work of Christ Jesus and his body, the Church, is typified, are numerous: for instance, Aaron and all his successors in the office of Chief Priest represented the Lord and the under-priests, members of his body; Melchisedec similarly represented the **whole body** in glory; so did Moses, David and Solomon. Hence the use of Elijah as a figure, in representing a **united** work of Christ and the Church, is in harmony with the Scripture usage....." *B255*

See also **TYPES: Elijah and Elisha**

1 SAM. 13:14,16: "...the LORD hath sought him a man after his own heart....Samuel.... anointed...David...."

DAY OF ATONEMENT

"**Gospel age**" *T76*

"The antitype of the 'Day of Atonement' is this Gospel age, during which Jesus and 'his Body,' the Church (by virtue of the redemption and consequent justification), make sacrifice to Justice, in full satisfaction of the Adamic sin. When the work of reconciliation is complete, God will recognize the world of mankind, and place his sanctuary among men. Then will be fulfilled that which was written: 'The Tabernacle of God [God's dwelling, the glorified Church] is with men, and he will dwell with them, and they shall be [become] his people, and God himself shall be with them and be their God. And God shall wipe away all tears from their eyes; and there shall be no more death, neither sorrow, nor crying, neither shall there be any more pain, for the former things [the reign of Satan, sin and death] are passed away. And he that sat upon the throne said, Behold, I make all things new.' Rev. 21:3-5" *T76*

LEV. 16:30,33: "...on that day shall *the priest* make an atonement for....the priests, and for all the people...."

DAYS OF NOAH (and LOT)

Beginning of Christ's second presence. *D606*

"**As in the Days of Noah, 'They Knew Not.'** 'But as the days of Noah were, so shall also the presence [Greek **parousia**] of the Son of Man be. For as in the days that were before the flood they were eating and drinking, marrying and giving in marriage, until the day that Noah entered into the ark, and KNEW NOT,...**so shall also the presence of the Son of Man be**.' Matt. 24:37-39 The real point of this illustration is overlooked by many who presuppose, without any authority in the Master's words, that the similarity here being pointed out is the **wickedness** of Noah's day and that of

the day of Christ's presence. But while such a comparison might have been

justifiable and proper, the fact remains that such comparison was not made, but avoided. The comparison made is **similarity of ignorance**.

"Only Noah and his family knew; the people KNEW NOT, but proceeded as usual — marrying, planting, building, eating and drinking. Similarly, **during the time of Christ's presence** in the end of this age, and while the great time of trouble is impending, the only ones who will know of his **presence** or have a clear apprehension of what is coming, or why, or the outcome, will be the Lord's people. Others will '**know not**.'

"In Luke (17:26-29) the same lesson is taught; and both Noah's and Lot's neighbors are shown to have been **ignorant** of their impending troubles **in the days** of Noah, and **in the days** of Lot, as people here will be ignorant of the coming trouble **in the days of the Son of Man** — after he has come and is present. We see this clearly fulfilled about us today. The world is fearful and perplexed; but it knows not of the **presence** of the Son of Man, and the 'harvest' reckoning now in progress. Even though they may approximately surmise the trouble coming, they cannot guess the blessing that is beyond it." *D606*

LUKE 17:26: "And as it was in the days of Noe, so shall it be also in the days of the Son of man."

DEAD SEA

"**Dead World**" *R3625:4*

"It would not at all surprise us if in the beginning of the Millennial age, not only the nation of Israel would receive the blessing of the Lord lost at the beginning of this Gospel age and become his representative people in the world — the church having been taken from the world, glorified spirit-beings — but neither would it surprise us if, in the Lord's providence, some miracle were wrought by which the Dead Sea would become connected with the Mediterranean, possibly refreshed also by some such river as is here described by Ezekiel, a picture of the symbolical river of life flowing from the New Jerusalem. But however interested we might be in the thought of such a literal fulfillment of this prophecy, our interest is still greater in the fulfillment of it as a symbol in accord with the river of Revelation. From this symbolical standpoint, the Dead Sea represents the dead world, and the coming of life-giving waters would represent the resurrection power of the Lord and the church exercised amongst men during the Millennial age. As the Apostle expresses it, it would mean, for the Gentiles, life from the dead." *R3625:4*

EZEK. 47:8: "...These waters...go into the sea: *which being* brought forth into the sea, the waters shall be healed."

EGYPT

See **SYMBOLS: Egypt**

EGYPTIAN PLAGUES

"**The first three and 'the seven last plagues'**" *F175; R2910:3*

"In declaring of Pharaoh that he had raised him up for this very purpose, we are not, therefore, to understand God to mean that he had effected in Pharaoh a bad character — that he had 'raised him up' in the sense of compelling him to be a bad character. We are to understand that amongst the various heirs to the throne of Egypt, according to the customs of that people, God so ordered, through the death of some of the intervening members of the royal family, that this particular Pharaoh should come to the throne **because he possessed such an obstinate character** that his fight against God and Israel would justly call for the plagues — which God had foreordained not only as a mark of his favor toward Israel and of his faithfulness to the promises made to Abraham, Isaac and Jacob, but, additionally, because these plagues upon Egypt were intended in some measure to foreshadow, to illustrate, the plagues with which this Gospel age will end — the first three and 'the seven last plagues.' Rev. 15:1" *F175*

"He who sees, in the narrative of the ten plagues upon Egypt, and Israel's deliverance thereby, nothing beyond what is contained in the simple story recognizes only the shell, and not the kernel of the lesson. In the type it was typical Israel alone that was delivered by Moses and the first-born; in the antitype it will be 'the groaning creation' that will be delivered — all such who will accept deliverance, under the leadership of the antitypical Moses, Christ, and his royal priesthood, — the elect church of this Gospel age. In the type it was Pharaoh and his coadjutors that were first chastened by the plagues and subsequently destroyed in the Red Sea. Their antitype is Satan and all his coadjutors, — all who profit by evil; and in the beginning this will include many who unwittingly are under his blinding influence; but ultimately it will include only such as are willful and deliberate servants of sin and lovers of unrighteousness — injustice, etc." *R2910:2*

EXOD. 3:20: "And I will...smite Egypt with all my wonders...."

ELIEZER [Abraham's Servant]

"**The Holy Spirit**" *R3867:3*

"Throughout the Scriptures the church is represented as a bride in preparation for her marriage. The Bridegroom uniformly is the Lord Jesus, to whom belongs the entire inheritance, and the opportunity granted to the Lord's followers in the present time is that of becoming his bride

and joint-heirs. They have no status or relationship to the King eternal except as they obtain it by union with the King's son. The type of this in the Old Testament is a very beautiful one: Abraham typified the Heavenly Father, very rich; Isaac typified our Lord Jesus, the seed of promise, the heir of all; Abraham's servant, sent to call a wife for Isaac, beautifully typified the holy Spirit, which, during this Gospel age, has been selecting the church, of which the Apostle says, I have espoused you as a chaste virgin unto one husband, which is Christ. — 2 Cor. 11:2" *R3867:3*

GEN. 24:2,4: "And Abraham said unto his eldest servant...thou shalt...take a wife unto my son Isaac."

ELIJAH

Christ and the church *B249-266*

B249-266 See **TYPES: David; TYPES: Herod; TYPES: John the Baptist**

"**Elias Shall First Come**"..."'Behold, I will send you Elijah the prophet before the coming of the great and dreadful day of the Lord. And he shall turn the heart of the fathers to the children, and the heart of the children to their fathers, lest [i.e., or else] I come and smite the earth with a curse.' Mal. 4:5,6...

"This prophecy was not **fulfilled** at the first advent of our Lord — neither the portion which relates to Messiah nor that which refers to Elijah. The reference of the prophecy is evidently to the second advent; to the coming of the 'Messenger of the Covenant' in glory and power; and to the testing and great trouble of the Day of the

Lord at that time. However, Christ's presentation to typical Israel, and the great trouble which came upon them as a nation when they rejected him, was, as God had foreseen and intended, another shadow which further illustrated in many particulars the things presented in this prophecy. John the Immerser, in the spirit of Elijah, did a work for Israel similar to that of the Elijah promised, but failed of success; and, as a result, trouble (a curse) upon that nation followed. The real Elijah referred to by the prophet was to do a great work for the whole 'earth,' to prepare all mankind for the second advent; and he will for a time also fail of success, and as a result the great time of trouble (the curse) will smite the whole earth....

"It is thus seen that the **Church in the flesh** (the Christ in the flesh, Head and body) is the Elijah or forerunner of the **Church in glory**, Jehovah's Anointed. Not the nominal church, but the really consecrated Church, which on the other side of the tomb will be the great Anointed Deliverer — these constitute the Elijah. Their mission is to reprove error and sin, and to point to the coming Kingdom of glory. Our Lord Jesus and the apostles, and all the faithful in Christ Jesus since, are of this great antitypical Elijah,

prophet or teacher — the same class (Head and body) which shall shortly compose the King of Glory. The work in which the Church is now engaged is merely preliminary to its future work, so far as the reforming of the world is concerned. In its kingly office the Church shall accomplish for the world what it fails to do as the Elijah teacher....

"Before leaving this subject we will point out some features and incidents in the life of the Prophet Elijah, the type, comparing them with the history of the Church, the antitypical Elijah, which will certainly astonish all who have not noticed them heretofore. That the comparison may be readily seen, we will place these in parallel columns....

ELIJAH: TYPE AND ANTITYPE CHART

"ELIJAH" "THE CHURCH"

"Elijah was persecuted for fidelity to truth and righteousness.

"The Church was persecuted for fidelity to truth and righteousness.

"His principal persecutor was Jezebel, the wicked queen of Israel, who is mentioned by name as the type of the enemy of the saints. Rev. 2:20

"The principal persecutor was the apostate Church of Rome, which claims to be a 'queen' and ruler over spiritual Israel. Rev. 18:7

"Jezebel's persecuting power was exercised through her husband, Ahab, the king.

"Papacy's persecuting power was exercised through the Roman Empire, to which she was joined.

"Elijah fled from Jezebel and Ahab, into the wilderness, to a place prepared of God, where he was miraculously nourished. 1 Kings 17:5-9

"The true Church fled into the symbolic wilderness — or condition of isolation — to her place, prepared of God, where she was sustained. Rev. 12:6,16

"Elijah was 'three years and six months' in the wilderness, and during that time there was no rain, and a great famine was in the land. James 5:17; 1 Kings 17:7; 18:2

"The Church was three and a half symbolic years (a day for a year — 1260 literal years) in the wilderness condition, during which there was a spiritual famine because of the lack of truth — the living water. Comp. Rev. 12:6; 11:3; Amos 8:11.

"After the three and a half years, 1260 days, when Elijah returned from the wilderness, the errors of Jezebel's priests were manifested, the true God was honored, and copious rains followed. 1 Kings 18:41-45

"At the end of 1260 years the power of the truth and its witnesses was manifested (A.D. 1799); and since then the truth has flowed at the rate of millions of Bibles every year, refreshing the world and bringing forth fruit.

"The king and the people at first rejoiced, and Elijah and his God were honored; but the spirit of Jezebel was unchanged. She still sought Elijah's life, and he was again compelled to flee into the wilderness. 1 Kings 18:40,45,46; 19:1-4

"The Bible has brought such blessings that the empires of earth recognize the Lord's hand; yet the **principles** of Papacy — Jezebel — in so-called Protestant sects compel the saints again to flee into the wilderness condition.

"Elijah's career ended by his being taken from the earth."

"The saints will be changed from earthly to heavenly conditions."

"A depth of significance is found in the meaning of the name **Elijah**. It signifies God [mighty-one] **of Jehovah**. It is thus a fitting name for the Lord's Anointed, whose grand work will be to restore all things which God hath spoken by the mouth of all his holy prophets since the world began...." *B249-266*

1 KINGS 17:1: "And **Elijah**...said...there shall not be dew nor rain these years, but according to my word."

ELIJAH AND ELISHA

"Concluding this subject, we notice briefly the fact that in the close of the Prophet Elijah's career he called Elisha, who, after sacrificing, left all and followed with Elijah, and became his successor as prophet when Elijah was taken away in the whirlwind — receiving his mantle of authority and a large degree of his spirit and power. (2 Kings 2:9-16) And since Elijah represented the Body of Christ in the flesh — the overcoming Church, a company, a number — it is but reasonable that we should conclude that Elisha represented a class also; a class which will come into deep sympathy with the Elijah class, and follow the Lord's leading with it; and yet a class which will not be expecting to be glorified. These will be separated, by the 'whirlwind' of trouble, from the Elijah class, yet nevertheless will retain an interest and will receive a blessing. After Elijah was gone, Elisha became bold and powerful, so that the theologians of that day ('sons of the prophets') said, The spirit of Elijah rests upon Elisha now!

"The meaning of the name **Elisha** is **mighty deliverer**, and the career of Elisha was one of restitution work. This doubtless foreshadows a work by a class which in the future will be the active agents among men in carrying on the restitution work in the power of the then glorified Church. Among other wonderful works, Elisha healed the waters, so that there should not be thence any more death or barren land; he increased the poor widow's oil to cancel her debt; he raised the Shunamite's son to life; and when there was famine in the land, and the mess of pottage for the theologians ('sons of the prophets') was found to be poisoned, so that none could eat of it, Elisha healed it and made it wholesome for food. He caused bread sufficient for only a few to more than supply a large number. He healed the leprosy of Naaman. He was

also God's agent in the anointing of Jehu, at whose hands, according to the word of the Lord by Elijah, the royal family of Ahab, including Jezebel, was entirely cut off, and all her priests as well. 2 Kings 2:19-22; 4:1-7,18-44; 5:1-14; 9:1-37; 10:28

"It is not difficult to trace in these works of Elisha what bears a close resemblance to the very restitution work which may be expected ere long, when the waters of truth shall no longer be brackish with error, being healed at the very spring by a clearer understanding of the Word of God; when the poor shall be helped to secure the oil of joy for the spirit of heaviness; when the dead shall be restored; when in the famine the food (truth) shall be made wholesome and plentiful; and when the powers and systems represented by Ahab and Jezebel, and all who unite with them against the Lord, shall be fully and finally overthrown." *B249-266*

EPHOD

Covenants *T30;33;36*

"The 'Ephod' was made of cloth of purple, blue, scarlet, white and gold threads, skillfully and beautifully interwoven. It was of two parts, one hanging in front and the other over the back. These two parts were fastened together by two gold clasps which rested on the shoulders. The ephod typified the **two great covenants** — the Abrahamic Covenant represented by the front part, and the New Covenant represented by the back, both of which are thus shown to be **dependent** on our High Priest. Both of these covenants are laid on him: if he fails to support them, fails to carry out their terms and conditions, they fall to the ground — fail. But, thank God, these covenants are united and firmly clasped on him by the gold clasps (divine power), as well as bound to him by the 'curious girdle' — a cord made of the same material as the ephod." *T30*

"One part of the Ephod which represents the New Covenant was guaranteed at Calvary: for was not our Lord's death 'the blood of the New Covenant' in which his members share? Matt. 26:28; 1 Cor. 10:16" *T33*

T36 For quote see **TYPES: Aaron**.

EXOD. 28:4: "And these *are* the garments which they shalt make; a breastplate, and an ephod...."

EPHRAIM

"**Nominal Christendom**" *R3104:2*

"Ephraim, used by the prophet as a name for the ten tribes of Israel in contradistinction to the two tribes called Judah, would seem to represent in our day nominal Christendom, and the drunkards of Ephraim would represent the intoxication of Christendom — not literal alcoholic intoxication, but the intoxication of error, of false doctrine, of human schemes and plans, the spirit of man and of the adversary in contradistinction to the spirit, the teaching of the Lord. This intoxication is referred to later on by the same prophet, saying, 'They are drunken, but not with wine; they stagger but not with strong drink. For the Lord hath poured out upon you the spirit of deep sleep [spiritual stupor], and hath closed your eyes.' (Isa. 29:9-12) It is again referred to as the wine of Babylon with which all people have been intoxicated. — Rev. 17:2; 18:3." *R3104:2*

ISA. 28:1: "WOE to the crown of pride, to the drunkards of Ephraim...."

ESAU (EDOM)

"**Fleshly Israel**"

ROM. 9:2-4,6,13: "...I have....sorrow...for... Israelites....they *are* not all Israel which are of Israel....As it is written Jacob have I loved and Esau have I hated."

"**Christendom**" *R2778:3*; *D15*

"While these pictures and lessons relate chiefly to the church as a whole, rather than to each member of it as an individual, nevertheless, individual lessons may be gleaned from them also, for although Cain and Abel, Ishmael and Isaac, Esau and Jacob, represented particularly natural Israel and spiritual Israel, we may, nevertheless, find similar characters and similar individual conditions today, in the 'tares' and 'wheat' of the Gospel church. The tares, like Cain, have the spirit of the wicked one, the spirit of ambition and of pride, and as a rule they occupy very leading positions in nominal churchianity. They bring to the Lord offerings, and not without a certain form of godliness, yet their hearts are far from the attitude which would be pleasing to the Lord, for the offerings which they present are of their own works — they come not to the Lord solely in the name and merit of the great sacrifice for the sins finished at Calvary, and God cannot accept their offerings." *R2778:3*

"Edom, it will be remembered, was the name given to Esau, the twin brother of Jacob, after he sold his birthright. (Gen. 25:30-34) The name was also subsequently applied both to the people descended from him and to the country in which they settled. (See Gen. 25:30; 36:1; Num. 20:18,20,21; Jer. 49:17.) Consequently, the name Edom is an appropriate symbol of a class who, in this age, have similarly sold their birthright; and that, too, for a consideration as trifling as the mess of pottage which influenced Esau. The name is frequently so used by the prophets in reference to that great company of professed Christians which is sometimes called 'the Christian World,' and 'Christendom' (i.e., Christ's Kingdom)...

"The fitness of the symbolic name 'Edom' in its application to Christendom is very marked. The nations of so-called Christendom have had privileges above all the other nations, in that, to them, as to the Israelites of the previous age, have been committed the oracles of God. As a result of the enlightening influences of the Word of God, both directly and indirectly, have come to these nations all the blessings of civilization; and the presence in their midst of a few saints (a 'little flock'), developed under its influence, has been as 'the salt of the earth,' preserving it to some extent from utter moral corruption. And these, by their godly examples, and by their energy in holding forth the Word of life, have been 'the light of the world,' showing men

the way back to God and righteousness. But only a few in all these favored nations have made proper use of their advantages, which have come to them as an inheritance by reason of their birth in the lands so blessed with the influences of the Word of God, direct and indirect." *D15*

JER. 49:17: "Also Edom shall be a desolation...."

EVE

The church (?) See also **TYPES: Adam** *E140*

"The fallen root, Adam (with the first Eve, his helpmate,) generated the human family in bondage to sin and death; the Second Adam, Christ, (with his Bride and helpmate), having bought the rights of the first as well as him and his race, will be prepared to regenerate all the willing and obedient. This is termed 'restitution' (Acts 3:19-23) — giving back to the worthy the earthly privileges and blessings lost in the first Adam, that, as the

Lord's vine, humanity restored may bear much fruit to God's praise. But be it noted, this privilege of becoming the 'root' is confined to the Christ, Head and body, 'elect according to the foreknowledge of God through sanctification of the spirit and the belief of the truth' during this Gospel age. (1 Pet. 1:2) David and other worthies of the past (who died before the 'branch' was buried and became the 'root') can never become parts of the root; nor will the faithful of the Millennial age. All, however, will be **satisfied** when they attain his **likeness**, whether it be the earthly or the heavenly. Mankind will be privileged to attain his likeness as the perfect **man** Christ Jesus, the holy 'branch,' while the Church, his 'bride,' his 'body,' his faithful under-priests, who now fill up that which is behind of the sufferings of Christ and are 'planted with him in the likeness of his death,' shall bear his heavenly image. 1 Cor. 15:48,49; Heb. 11:39,40" *E140*

2 COR. 11:3: "But I fear, lest by any means, as the serpent beguiled Eve through his subtlety, so your minds should be corrupted from the simplicity that is in Christ."

FIERY SERPENTS

"**Sin**"* [*The Lord did not send sin — only its penalty, death.] *R3101:5,6*

See also **TYPES: Brazen Serpent; SYMBOLS: Serpents**

NUM. 21:6: "And the LORD sent fiery serpents among the people, and they bit the people; and much people of Israel died."

GIDEON

"**our Lord Jesus**" *R3686:6;4082:6*

"The day of Midian was the day of Gideon and his little band, when suddenly at the breaking of the pitchers and

the blowing of the rams' horns the Lord overwhelmed the powerful hosts of the enemies of his people and granted them a great and miraculous deliverance. Gideon evidently prefigured our Lord Jesus, as Gideon's little band prefigured the little flock of Christ, the saints, the very elect. It was after the testing, the sifting, of this little company that the Lord granted the great deliverance. And thus it will be in the end of this age: as soon as the Gideon band, the Royal Priesthood under the captaincy of the glorified Christ, shall have given their message and let their feeble lights shine out that the Lord will grant the great victory for truth and righteousness through a time of trouble which shall come upon the world but which will eventuate in a great blessing upon all people, the binding of Satan and the release of all the oppressed....The picture shows us the world cleansed of every evidence of opposition to the divine government and law of righteousness, and accords well with the statement, 'All voices in heaven and earth and under the earth and in the sea heard I saying, Blessing and glory and honor and dominion and right and power unto him that sitteth on the throne and unto the Lamb.' — Rev. 5:13." *R3686:6*

"After receiving the Lord's invitation to be the deliverer of his people, Gideon also received a test; he was to hew down the trees constituting the grove of Baal and was to overthrow the statue and was to offer to the Lord sacrifices upon a rock, using the wood from Baal's grove and image as the fuel....The citizens of his clan demanded his life, appealing the matter to his father, who evidently was a chief amongst them; but the wise decision of the father was that if Baal could not defend himself against his son, there was certainly no need of any one taking up the cause of Baal." *R4082:6*

See also **JUDGES 7**

HEB. 11:32,34: "...Gideon...waxed valiant in fight, turned to flight the armies of the aliens."

GIRDLE

Servitude *T30;33*

"The 'Linen Girdle' indicated a righteous servant: linen — righteousness, girdle — servitude." *T30*

"This 'Curious Girdle' seems to say, This is a **servant**, and as this is the girdle of the Ephod it tells us that this one is 'The Messenger [servant] of the Covenant whom ye delight in.' Mal. 3:1" *T33*

See also under **SYMBOLS: Girdle**.

EXOD. 28:4: "And these *are* the garments;... and a girdle...."

GOLDEN CALF

Idolatry of wealth. *R3047:3*

"This incident well illustrates the general tendency, more or less, of fallen man to substitute something of his own creation, either as instead of the Lord or in addition to the Lord, as an object of worship. The worship of the golden calf symbolizes or pictures in a general and very forceful way the worship of the mammon of wealth, of earthly riches, honor, influence, etc. At our Lord's first advent he found Israel nominally worshiping Jehovah, nominally very zealous of his worship, but really worshipers of mammon, worshipers of riches and honor of men, of dignities and titles, of place and position....As Moses, the typical mediator, called for those who were on the Lord's side to come to him, so Christ called for all the 'Israelites indeed,' the household of faith, the royal priesthood, to come to him; and as there was in the type a destruction of the leaders of the remainder, so there came a time of trouble in the complete overthrow of their national polity, the destruction of their city, etc. And as the typical mediator then went up into the mountain to make reconciliation for their sins, so Christ as the High Priest ascended to make atonement for the sins of the people." *R3047:3*

EXOD. 32:1-8: "And...he had made it a molten calf: and they said, These *be* thy gods...."

1 COR. 10:7: "Neither be ye idolaters...."

LUKE 16:13,14, *Diag.*: "....You cannot serve God and Mammon. and the PHARISEES, being moneylovers...ridiculed him."

COL. 3:5: "Mortify...your members which are upon the earth...and covetousness, which is idolatry."

HAGAR

Law covenant *R2778:2; 3916:2*

"Also in Galatians 4:22-31 the Apostle explains in detail how Ishmael represented Israel after the flesh, born of the Law Covenant, represented by Hagar, and how, as such, they could not be heirs of the Abrahamic Covenant. He then shows Christ, the son of the free woman, the Abrahamic Covenant, represented by Sarah, and he not only represents the Lord Jesus as being the Isaac seed of promise, but in so many words declares that the elect church of Christ in this Gospel age is also of this Isaac seed, and heirs with Jesus, and, through his merit, to all the promises made to Abraham — that they should be God's agency in bringing blessing to all the families of the earth. The Apostle's words are, 'So, then brethren, we are not children of the bondwoman [the Law Covenant] but of the free [Abrahamic covenant, typified by Sarah.]' 'Stand fast, therefore, in the liberty wherewith Christ hath made us free.'" *R2778:2*

"The Apostle explains to us that although this Oath-Bound Covenant is the real, genuine first one, nevertheless it was not time for it to go into operation at once; but instead the Law Covenant was added, and developed during the Jewish age and Jewish nation, as a typical people of God under the Law Covenant, with Moses as it mediator, which was typical of the New Covenant, with Christ as its mediator. The Apostle points out that this covenant failed to bring forth any children of God — it brought forth only servants — and that with its failure it was set aside when our Lord Jesus at his first advent, by his obedience, proved his right to be heir to the Abrahamic Covenant. The Apostle points out that Sarah, Abraham's wife, typified that Oath-Bound Covenant, which for more than 2,000 years was barren — did not bring forth the spiritual seed of Abraham to bless the world. He declares that Hagar, the bondwoman of Abraham's family, represented the Law Covenant, that her child Ishmael represented the Jews, and that the casting off of the Jewish nation and the setting aside of their Law Covenant was typified in Abraham's dealing with Hagar — 'Cast out the bondwoman and her son, for he shall not be heir with the son of the free woman.' — Gal. 4:30." *R3916:2*

GAL. 4:24,25: "...these are the two covenants; the one from the mount Sinai, which gendereth to bondage, which is Agar....and answereth to Jerusalem which now is, and is in bondage with her children."

HEROD

"**Civil government**" [**civil powers**] *B261-263; R1754:2,4*

"John's liberty was restrained soon after the delivery of his message, announcing the **present One** and the work before him; and he was cast into prison because he had reproved the king of improper union with a woman (Matt. 14:4). And though the faithful children of God have often pointed out that union between the Church and the civil power is out of order, being in the Scriptures termed harlotry (Rev. 17:5), and though in a great measure the world has withdrawn from the churches, the union still exists, and the Scriptures seem to point out that, in the time of trouble approaching, the nominal churches, professedly virgins of Christ, will be on the side of the kings of the earth, and united to them; and the true Church, like its type, John the Baptist, will be unpopular and restrained of liberty, because of faithfulness in opposing and condemning error.

"In John's case as well as in Elijah's it was a woman that persecuted — a king acting as her agent and tool: with the true Church it has been in the past that which these symbolize, and doubtless will be so in the future — the nominal church represented by a woman and civil government by a king....

"Not only so, but the coming struggle between the aristocracy and the masses of every civilized land will be so peculiar, so unlike any former experience, that moderate, conservative, religiously-inclined people, fearing the utter wreck of society in chaos and anarchy, will naturally prefer monarchy, oppression and bondage to anything certain to be worse. Hence such will affiliate with church and empire, with wealth and aristocracy, in the general effort to repress and prevent that irrepressible conflict — 'The battle of the great day of God Almighty.'

"Eventually, probably the only exceptions to this course, among the lovers of peace and true religion, will be those to whom the King of kings is pleased, through his Word, to reveal his plans (John 16:13), and who have full confidence in his wisdom and love, as well as in his power to make all things work out according to his promises....these will be misunderstood, and their endeavors to point out the true state of the case, and the real and only remedy, will probably be interfered with by those who do not see the grand outcome, and who, because unwilling to submit their own wills, ideas and plans, are unable to see God's plans....Yes, the time is probably not many years distant, when repressive measures may be brought to bear against every effort of the saints to spread the good news of the coming kingdom, all on the plea that the general interests and the public welfare demand such a course.

"Such a persecution would not only furnish, in the end or harvest of this age, another parallel to the harvest of the Jewish age (Acts 4:10-13,23-30; 5:29-41; 11:19), but would also give a wider and deeper significance to the words of the Apostles Paul and John (2 Tim. 4:3; Rev. 13:17), and to the typical illustrations of the close of the earthly career of the true Church, as represented in Elijah's whirlwind departure and John the Baptist's imprisonment and beheading." *B261-263*

"We, like John, must stand aloof from all those whose cry is, 'A confederacy, a confederacy!' (Isa. 8:11-13); and by our teaching and example declare *unlawful* the proposed and sure to come union between church and civil government." *R1754:2,4*

MARK 6:17,18,22,24: "**For Herod**...**laid** hold upon John and bound him in prison for Herodias' sake....For John had said...It is not lawful for thee to have thy brother's wife.... And...the daughter of...Herodias...danced, and...the king said, Whatsoever thou shalt ask of me, I will give it thee. And she...said unto her mother, What shall I ask? And she said, 'the head of John the Baptist.'"

See also **TYPES: Elijah; TYPES: John The Baptist**.

HERODIAS

[**Ecclesiastical power of Christendom or Roman Catholicism**]

See **TYPES: Herod**; also *R2280:2,4*

HUSBAND AND WIFE

"**Christ and his bride, the church**" *T36; F494*

T36 For quote see **TYPES: Aaron's Sons**.

"The Apostle distinctly points out that the marriage relationship amongst mankind is intended under divine arrangement to be a figure or illustration of the relationship between Christ and the Church, his Bride — his body. The language is most explicit: 'Wives, be in subjection to your own husbands, as unto the Lord. For the husband is the head of the wife, even as Christ is the Head of the Church: and he is the savior of the body. Therefore, as the Church is subject unto Christ, so let the wives be to their own husbands in everything. Husbands, love your wives, even as Christ also loved the Church, and gave himself for it; that he might sanctify it, having cleansed it by the washing of water by the Word, that he might present it to himself a glorious Church, not having spot, or wrinkle, or any such thing; but that it should be holy and without blemish. Even so ought husbands also to love their wives as their own bodies. He that loveth his wife loveth himself. For no man ever yet hated his own flesh; but nourisheth and cherisheth it, even as the Lord the Church: because we are members of his body. For this cause shall a man leave his father and mother and shall be joined unto his wife, and they two shall be one flesh. This is a great mystery: but I speak concerning Christ and the Church. Nevertheless, let every one of you in particular so love his wife even as himself, and the wife see that she reverence

her husband.' Eph. 5:22-33" *F494*

EPH. 5:31,32: "For this cause shall a man leave his father and mother, and shall be joined unto his wife, and they two shall be one flesh. This is a great mystery: but I speak concerning Christ and the church."

ISAAC

"**Seed of promise, the Christ**" *R2777:5; R2778:5*

"This same lesson of the first-born occupying the position of favor and opportunity, yet being unworthy and unready to use it, is illustrated in Abraham's sons. First was Ishmael, who for years was looked upon as the heir of Abraham and the promises made to him, and who continued to so regard himself even after Isaac, the child of promise, was born, — mocking and persecuting him. Similarly again, Esau, as the first-born of Isaac, held the birth-right to the same promise, yet not appreciating it rightly, sold it to Jacob for a mess of

pottage, and then strove to retain it unjustly to himself, and was angry with the one who did rightly value it." *R2777:5*

"In all of these illustrations it is well that we note the differences of spirit or disposition, that the haughty, the proud, the ambitious and self-confident spirit is the one which leads to disappointment, and is not of the Lord; and that the humble, teachable, obedient spirit or disposition is that which is recognized by the Lord; and in proportion as we are seeking, therefore, to make our calling and election sure to membership in this spiritual Seed of Abraham, represented in Isaac, represented in Jacob and represented in Abel, let us seek to bring to the Lord such sacrifices as he is pleased to receive (Heb. 13:16), and to be exercised by such a spirit of faith, of trust and of obedience as was manifested by the Head of this body, the Lord Jesus. He is our perfect Pattern; he walked this way successfully, and has not only opened it for us through the merit of his sacrifice, and accepted us as his followers in it, but also he has promised us his grace and help through the Word and by his Spirit and by his providence all the journey through; assuring us that having begun a good work in us he is both able and willing to complete it. Let us then, like him, bring unto the Father the acceptable sacrifices of our consecrated lives, made acceptable to the Lord's altar through the atonement sacrifice which our dear Redeemer gave on our behalf. Thus we see at once and always be accepted in the Beloved. — Rom. 12:1; 5:1,2." *R2778:5*

GAL. 4:23,28,31: "But he *who was* of the bondwoman *was* born after the flesh; but he of the freewoman was by promise....Now we, brethren, as Isaac was, are the children of promise....So then, brethren, we are not children of the bondwoman, but of the free."

ISHMAEL

"**Offspring under Law covenant**" *R2777:5; R2778:5*

"**Tares**" *R2778:3,5* [See also **TYPES: Isaac**]

"While these pictures and lessons relate chiefly to the church as a whole, rather than to each member of it as an individual, nevertheless, individual lessons may be gleaned from them also, for although Cain and Abel, Ishmael and Isaac, Esau and Jacob, represented particularly natural Israel and spiritual Israel, we may, nevertheless, find similar characters and similar individual conditions today, in the 'tares' and 'wheat' of the Gospel church. The tares, like Cain, have the spirit of the wicked one, the spirit of ambition and of pride, and as a rule they occupy very leading positions in nominal churchianity. They bring to the Lord offerings, and not without a certain form of godliness, yet their hearts are far from the attitude which would be pleasing to the Lord, for the offerings which they present are of their own works — they come not to the Lord solely

in the name and merit of the great sacrifice for sins finished at Calvary, and God cannot accept their offerings." *R2778:3*

GAL. 4:22: "...Abraham had two sons, the one by a bondmaid, the other by a freewoman."

See **vs. 23**, under **TYPES: Isaac**.

ISRAEL

"**World of mankind**" *T26*

"Here Israel unquestionably typified **the whole world of mankind** . The sin-offering, sacrifice, atonement, etc., made typical for them (and them only), were typical of the 'better sacrifices' and atonement, made on behalf of the whole world; for thus we read, 'He is a propitiation for our sins, and not for ours only, but also for the sins of the whole world.' 1 John 2:2; Heb. 9:23

"In a word, **Israel**, as well as the Tabernacle, Priests, Levites and sacrifices, was a type. And what was there done in symbol with and for Israel is, since the first advent of Christ, being carried out on a higher plane, and on a larger scale, the latter being the reality, of which that was the type or shadow." *T26*

The church, Spiritual Israel *T25; B201-209;228;229*

"**Israel** is used in many instances to typify the Christian Church. For instance, when they left Egyptian bondage, they were a type of God's children who hear his call to come out from the world and engage in his worship.

"The wilderness journey represented the tedious pilgrimage through which many pass, seeking the promised Canaan rest — 'Come unto me, and I will give you rest.' As in the type, so in reality, the promised Canaan of rest is not far off, if God's children had faith enough to go up and at once enter in by faith. God has made abundant provision for them: yet they journey through the Wilderness of Sin, seeking rest and finding none, because they lack faith in God's promises. Some wander thus a long time; and some never enter the Canaan rest because of unbelief. But while Israel, according to the flesh, is thus and in other ways used to typify Spiritual Israel, yet as we are now examining it, in its relation to the Tabernacle, it is a totally different type." *T25*

B201-209 See also Index: **Israel: Spiritual Israel** P. *266-273 and 282-284* of this book.

"Paul designates the Jewish Church 'Israel after the flesh,' and the Christian Church '**The** Israel of God.' (1 Cor. 10:18; Gal. 6:16) We may therefore properly designate them Fleshly Israel and Spiritual Israel. The higher plane of the spiritual house is also pointed out by the Apostle when he describes Fleshly Israel as a house [family] of **servants**, and Spiritual Israel as a house of **sons**. (Heb. 3:5,6; Rom.

8:14) The fleshly house was the honored servants of the spiritual house in various ways, but chiefly in that they unconsciously, under God's arrangement, furnished pantomime illustrations of spiritual things, which, if studied and heeded, greatly bless and enlighten the house of sons.

"In both cases there have been a Nominal Israel and a Real Israel, in God's estimation, though to men they have appeared as one; the nominal and the real not being clearly distinguishable until the end

or harvest time of their respective ages, when the truth then due and brought to light accomplishes the separation, and makes manifest which are of the real and which of the merely nominal Israel. Of the fleshly house Paul said, 'They are not all Israel which are [nominally] of Israel' (Rom. 9:6); and our Lord recognized the same fact when of Nathaniel he said, 'Behold an Israelite indeed, in whom is no guile,'...in the end of the Gospel age...only the wheat — a comparatively small number, a 'little flock' — will be separated from the masses of nominal Spiritual Israel, while the great majority, being tares and not real wheat, will be rejected as unworthy of the chief favor to which they were called, and will not be counted among the Lord's jewels. Rom. 9:27; 11:5; Luke 12:32; Matt. 3:12; 13:24-40

"The head of the fleshly house was Jacob, surnamed Israel (a prince); and through his **twelve** sons he founded the house which bore his name, the House of Jacob, the House of **Israel**. So with the Spiritual House: its founder, Christ, established it through the **twelve** apostles; and this house also bears the name of its founder — The Church of Christ. In point of time, God called Fleshly Israel first; but in point of favor, and in time of realization, Spiritual Israel comes first. Thus the first becomes last, and the last first. (Luke 13:30) The Scriptures clearly mark these two houses of Israel as being the fleshly seed of Abraham and the spiritual seed of Jehovah — the Heavenly Father whom Abraham typified...." *B205-207*

"While thus noting Israel's fall from favor and their consequent loss, and the cause of all this, let us not forget that in this also they foreshadowed nominal Spiritual Israel, and that the same prophets have foretold the stumbling and fall of **both** the houses of Israel — 'He shall be for a stone of stumbling and for a rock of offense to **both** the houses of Israel.' Isa. 8:14

"Just as truly as there was a casting off and fall of nominal Fleshly Israel, as we have seen, there is also to be a casting off and fall of nominal Spiritual Israel, the nominal Gospel Church, and for similar reasons. The casting off and fall of the one are just as vividly portrayed in the Scriptures as those of the other. And just as surely, also, as a remnant of Fleshly Israel was saved from the blindness and fall

through meekness and faith, even so also a similar remnant of nominal Spiritual Israel shall be saved from the blindness and fall of the nominal mass in the 'harvest' or close of this age. Thus the last members of the true Church, the body of Christ, are to be separated from the nominal church — to be joined to the Head, glorified. These (the remnant selected from Fleshly Israel at its fall, and the faithful few of the Gospel age, including the living remnant at its close) alone constitute the true 'Israel of God.' These are the Elect — justified by faith in Christ's redemptive work, called to joint-sacrifice and joint-heirship with Christ, chosen through belief of the truth and sanctification by the spirit of truth, and faithful even unto death. With the completion of the selection of this company, in the harvest of this age, quite a commotion may be expected among the wheat and tares; for many divine favors, specially granted because of the **faithful few**, will be withdrawn from the nominal mass, when the little flock, for whose development they were granted, has been completed.

"We should expect that the order here would be, as in the typical Jewish harvest, a separating work, fulfilling the words of the Prophet, 'Gather **my saints** together unto me, those that have made a covenant with me by sacrifice.' (Psa. 50:5) And as A.D. 33 marked the giving over of the **nominal** Jewish house, as a system, to disfavor, disruption and overthrow, so the corresponding date, A.D. 1878, marked the beginning of the disfavor, disruption and overthrow of the **nominal** Spiritual Israel, of which we shall have more to say in succeeding chapters." *B228;229*

1 JOHN 2:2: "And he is the propitiation for our sins: and not for ours only, but also for *the sins of* the whole world."

ISA. 8:14: "And he shall be for a sanctuary; but for a stone of stumbling and for a rock of offense to both the houses of Israel...."

1 COR. 10:1-6: "...all our fathers were under the cloud, and all passed through the sea; And were all baptized unto Moses in the cloud and in the sea; And did all eat the same spiritual meat; And...drink the same spiritual drink...of that spiritual Rock that followed them: and that Rock was Christ. But with many of them God was not well pleased: now these things were our examples [Gr. *tupoi*, types], to the intent that we should not lust after evil things, as they also lusted."

1 COR. 10:7-10: "Neither be ye idolaters, as *were* some of them; as it is written, The people sat down to eat and drink, and rose up to play. Neither let us commit fornication, as some of them committed, and fell in one day three and twenty thousand. Neither let us tempt Christ, as some of them also tempted, and were destroyed of serpents. Neither murmur ye, as some of them also murmured, and were destroyed of the destroyer."

1 COR. 10:11: "Now all these things happened unto them for ensamples [Gr. *tupoi*, types]."

ISRAEL PASSING THROUGH THE SEA

Baptism into Christ

See **TYPES: Israel; TYPES: The Church**

See **1 COR. 10:1,2** under **TYPES: Israel**

JACOB

Natural Israel *D625; A300, footnote.*

"While Israelites in various stages of unbelief will be gathered back to Palestine under divine favor, according to promise, yet none shall be in any degree reckoned as a part, or even as supporters of, or associated with the earthly phase of the Kingdom, except as they shall first recognize Christ Jesus as the Son of God, the only Redeemer and Deliverer for Israel and the world.

"The beginning of the earthly phase of the Kingdom in the end of A.D. 1914 will, we understand, consist wholly of the resurrected holy ones of olden time — from John the Baptizer back to Abel — 'Abraham, Isaac, Jacob and all the holy prophets.' (Compare Matt. 11:11; Luke 13:28; Heb. 11:39,40.) While these ancient worthies will have neither part nor lot in the spiritual Kingdom, because not 'called' thereto, that high or 'heavenly calling' not being possible until after the ransom had been paid by our Lord Jesus, yet they will occupy a position of preferment above the world, having attested their faith and love during the reign of evil, in a manner approved of God. Thus they were prepared and proved worthy to be the earthly ministers and representatives of the spiritual Kingdom. In harmony with this it is written in the Psalms, as addressed to the Christ — 'Instead of [being longer considered] thy fathers [they] shall be thy children, whom thou mayest make princes [chief ones, captains] in all the earth.' Psa. 45:16 These ancient worthies will be unlike the remainder of mankind, not alone in the fact that their trial is past while the trial of the world in general will just be beginning; but they will be unlike them also in

the fact that they will have attained the **reward** of their faithfulness — they will be **perfect men**, having completely restored to them all that was lost in Adam of mental and moral likeness to God, and perfection of physical powers. Thus they will not only be the 'princes' or chiefs of earth (the earthly representatives of the Heavenly Kingdom — Christ and his Church), but they, individually, will be representatives of what all the willingly obedient may attain to under the New Covenant." *D625*

Spiritual Israel is never called "Jacob." *A300, footnote*

R2778:3 For quote see **TYPES: Ishmael — Tares**

ROM. 11:26,27: "And so all Israel shall be saved: as it is written, There shall come out of Sion the Deliverer, and shall turn away ungodliness from Jacob: For this *is* my covenant unto them, when I shall take away their sins."

Spiritual Israel *R2778:3,5* For quote See **TYPES: Isaac; TYPES: Ishmael — Tares**

ROM. 9:11-16: "(For *the children* being not yet born, neither having done any good or evil, that the purpose of God according to election might stand, not of works, but of him that calleth;) It was said unto her, The elder shall serve the younger. As it is written, Jacob have I loved, but Esau have I hated. What shall we say then? *Is there* unrighteousness with God? God forbid. For he saith to Moses, I will have mercy on whom I will have mercy, and I will have compassion on whom I will have compassion. So then *it is* not of him that willeth, nor of him that runneth, but of God that showeth mercy."

Vs. 13: "...Jacob have I loved, but Esau have I hated."

JACOB, TWELVE SONS OF

Twelve Apostles *B246*

For chart on *B246* see **Index: Israel** *p. 268-272* of this book.

See also **TYPES: Israel — The Church, Spiritual Israel**

1 KINGS 18:31: "And Elijah took twelve stones, according to the number of the tribes of the sons of Jacob..."

REV. 21:14: "And the wall of the city had twelve foundations, and in them the names of the twelve apostles of the Lamb."

JERUSALEM

"The heavenly city" — "government" *R2606:3; 2832:4,5*

"Here is the New Jerusalem as John saw it (Rev. 21), 'that holy city [symbol of *government*]...coming down from God out of heaven.' During the time of trouble it will be coming down, and before the end of it, it will have touched the earth. This is the stone cut out of the mountains without hands (but by the power of God), and it will then have become a great mountain (kingdom), filling the whole earth (Dan. 2:35), its *coming* having broken to pieces the evil kingdoms of the prince of darkness. — Dan. 2:34,35." *R2606:3*

"In the symbolism of Scripture a city represents a government; as for instance, symbolic Babylon is denominated 'that great city [government] which ruleth over the kings of the earth.' The New Jerusalem, as a symbol, represents the new spiritual government of the Millennial age. It is not earthborn, it is not reared by men, but, as here pictured, it descends from God out of heaven —

it is spiritual in every sense of the word — of God and not of men. It is for this kingdom, this government, that our Lord taught us to pray, 'Thy kingdom come — thy will be done on earth as it is done in heaven.' The declaration that the city is adorned as a bride for her husband implies its grandeur and beauty and perfection, as a bride's adornment on such an occasion is particular and elaborate to the last degree. But additionally to this it reminds us that in the government of the future, the judges of the world are the saints, now being selected through faithfulness in trial and tribulation, and that these are frequently called the bride, the Lamb's wife and joint-heir in the kingdom. The Revelator elsewhere strikingly brings this thought to our attention: the angel calls to him 'Come hither, and I will show thee the bride, the Lamb's wife. And he carried me away in the spirit to a great and high mountain, and showed me that great city, the holy Jerusalem, descending out of heaven from God, having the glory of God.' — [Rev. 21] Verses 9-11...." *R2832:4,5*

Abrahamic "(Sarah) covenant" *R1389:4*

"The Hagar or Law Covenant was again fitly represented by the rocky, barren Mt. Sinai, where the law was given and where the servant house was organized as a nation. It was also represented by the capital city of the nation, Jerusalem — which was continually besieged and in captivity. So says the Apostle: the Sarah Covenant is represented in 'the *exalted* Jerusalem' — the kingdom soon to come into power to bless the world — whose offspring and heirs through Christ we already are. This is the city (i. e., government) of which Christ shall be the Head, the city of the great King and of which Jerusalem the literal was but an imperfect type. Heb. 12:18-24; Rev. 21:9-27." *R1389:4*

GAL. 4:26: "But Jerusalem which is above is free, which is the mother of us all."

REV. 3:12; 21:2, *Diag.*: "The CONQUEROR, ...I will write on him...the NAME of the CITY of my GOD, the NEW Jerusalem, — that COMING DOWN out of the HEAVEN from my GOD....and the holy city,...new Jerusalem, I saw coming down out of HEAVEN, from GOD, prepared as a Bride adorned for her HUSBAND."

JEZEBEL

"**Mystery of iniquity**," [**Roman Catholicism**] *R3399:4*

"Omri was succeeded in his kingdom by his son Ahab, the notorious. He also was an able man, skilled in statecraft and unscrupulous. He was helped along in the downward way of his father and predecessors by marrying the daughter of the king of Tyre, Jezebel, who in the Scriptures is noted as a desperate character, and in the book of Revelation is used to symbolize the great mystery of

iniquity which persecuted spiritual Israel during the dark ages, Jezebel's father was a priest of Baal, who murdered his father, the king of Tyre, and then succeeded him. Thus Jezebel inherited in a natural way her perverse and idolatrous disposition, and in marrying her Ahab secured an able accomplice in evil. Indeed the woman may be said to have been the prime mover and instigator of much of the evil later developed in that kingdom." *R3399:4*

REV. 2:20, *Diag.*: "...the WOMAN Jezebel... and she teaches and seduces My Servants, to fornicate and to eat idol sacrifices."

JOHN THE BAPTIST

"**The church, especially in harvest of Gospel age**" *B253*

"John the Baptist was not actually Elijah returned to earth, neither is the Church; but as it was true of John, that he did an Elijah work to Israel (Luke 1:17) to prepare them, and introduced the Lord in the flesh, so it is true of the Church — it does the predicted Elijah

work 'in the spirit and power of Elijah' to the world, and announces our Lord's second advent in almost the same words which John used at the first advent: 'There standeth one among you whom ye know not; He it is who, coming after me, is superior to me.' John 1:26,27

"All could not receive John's testimony nor realize that he was forerunner to the King in the flesh. Had they done so, they would have been prepared thereby to receive Jesus as their Messiah. To as many of them as could and did accept John's message and receive Christ, to these John **did do** the Elijah work. As our Lord said to them of John (Matt. 11:14), 'If ye will **receive it**, this is the Elias which was to come;' though John and his work did not complete the prediction concerning Elijah, even as our Lord in the **flesh** did not fulfil all that was predicted of Messiah. He was, to all who could receive it, Jehovah's Anointed, even before he had finished his work of sacrifice, or had been glorified, or had come again in the exercise of the great office of Messiah or Deliverer. John, at the first advent, was really a finishing out, in a measure, of the type begun in the person and work of Elijah; and John's work at the first advent foreshadowed the closing work of the Church at the second advent. These, the feet of Christ in the flesh — the feet of Elijah — announce the Kingdom. (Isa. 52:7) To those who 'can receive it' we announce, as at hand, the reign of the Christ glorified; and likewise **to those who 'can receive it'** we have pointed out the foretold antitypical Elijah. Some, probably, will not 'receive it,' but will still look for some one man to fulfil Malachi's predictions, and will 'know not the time of their visitation' until the great day of trouble is burning as an oven." *B253*

See also **TYPES: Elijah; TYPES: Herod**

MATT. 11:13,14: "For all the prophets... prophesied until John. And if ye will receive *it*, this is Elias, which was for to come."

JONAH

Christ and "the Church" See *R3568 first Article*

MATT. 12:40: "For as Jonas was...in the whale's belly; so shall the Son of man be...in...the earth."

JOHN 2:19: "...Destroy this temple, and in three days I will raise it up."

JORDAN

Death, the penalty, condemnation *R3086:4*

"What, then, does the River Jordan signify? We answer, that it would seem to stand for, represent, the divine condemnation, the curse, the sentence against our race which has for six thousand years hindered mankind from entering into the blessed kingdom conditions and opportunities and blessings which shall ultimately prevail for all. In this sense of the word death, Jordan, would stand for it well — the death sentence. This seems rather to be implied in the name of the river, which is derived from the names of the two main springs by which it is formed; viz., *jor,* signifying 'down,' and *dan,* which signifies 'judge.' The word Jordan would thus have the significance of 'judged down,' that is, condemned, and as a type it would stand for the divine condemnation which hindered even those who desired to be the servants of God from entering into peace and rest and blessing and favor with God." *R3086:4*

"**Consecration unto death**" *R3087:2*

"Another thought respecting Canaan: we have already noted that the royal priesthood may in some sense of the word be said to be already in the land of Canaan throughout this Gospel age — by faith — already in the place or condition which Israel after the flesh and the mass of mankind 'entered not into because of unbelief.' (Heb. 4:3,6,10) To this class, Jordan would fitly represent consecration unto death; and Canaan would represent our present newness of life while still in the flesh. To these, the circumcision represents, as the Apostle explains, circumcision of the heart and putting away of sin from the wills; to these the passover signifies not only the acceptance of the merit of Christ's atonement on our behalf, but also a communion and participation with him in his sacrifice. These, as justified persons, having been fed with the manna from heaven, have been strengthened and brought across Jordan; and now as new creatures they live 'by every word that proceedeth out of the mouth of God' — they live upon the divine promises — 'Thy words were found and I did eat them.' (Jer. 15:16) To these the capture of Jericho and all the battlings with the Canaanites represent victories of the 'new creatures' over the flesh; not accomplished by their own strength, but accomplished for them by the Lord in recognition of their faith and trust in him." *R3087:2*

Waters of: "Peoples" "judged down" "by the truth" *R5846:2,4*

"'Are you expecting the fiery chariot any minute now, or do you think it some little distance off — perhaps some months yet, or perhaps a year or more?' will be asked. At least a year, or probably more, is my thought. Something else is coming first, dear friends. We do not as yet see clearly just what it is; but this matter of Elijah's rolling his mantle together and smiting the waters of Jordan seems to mean something, and also the crossing of the river. This picture is not given for nothing. 'What does it mean?' you ask. Ah, we know that most prophecies are understood only after they are fulfilled! We might, however, have a suspicion. 'What would that be?' Something like this: In Bible symbolic language, water represents Truth, and it also represents peoples. Both of these are given in Scripture as being symbolized by water. (Revelation 17:1; Jeremiah 51:12,13; Revelation 17:15; 22:1,2; Ezekiel 47:1-12; Ephesians 5:26.) Furthermore, Jordan means *testing,* or *judging down*. Now who or what would be judged in the antitype?

"What Elijah's Mantle May Signify..."

"We answer, we believe that the peoples of earth, the public in general, are to be judged by the Truth. The peoples are represented by waters. It would seem that in some way the people are to be judged and tested; and that a division of public sentiment is to be caused, in connection with the Truth. Waters are to be separated from waters, people from people, the Truth being received by some and rejected by others. Elijah wrapped his mantle together and smote the waters; and they were divided. Elijah's mantle was the outward indication, or sign, of God's power with him, and represented God's power and blessing with the Church. The mantle was in Elijah's hand when he smote the waters with it. So the Church, it would seem, will use what is in their hand, the power and authority of the Truth, the power of God, in smiting the waters — peoples.

"'Do you think that this has not yet taken place?' may be a question in your minds. We think it has not as yet fully taken place. 'Do you not think that the *PHOTO-DRAMA OF CREATION* has had a part in this?' It may be. 'Will there be something more?' We do not know. We RATHER THINK THERE IS SOMETHING MORE. We do not state this positively. We are keeping watch to

see in what way God will exercise some very wonderful power causing some division as respects the Truth. We are merely thinking aloud with you. We are looking for some very pronounced

division on the subject of the Truth, something that will eventually lead up to a great hatred. You remember that in our Lord's ministry He presented certain truths that caused the Scribes and Pharisees to hate Him. It was their hatred that led up to His arrest and crucifixion. The hate was there. They said, 'We must kill Him.'" *R5846:2,4*

REV. 17:15: "...The waters which thou sawest... are peoples and multitudes, and nations, and tongues."

JOSEPH

"**Christ, Head and body**" *R2488:5*

"Yes; to our understanding Joseph was a type — various features in his history seem to be separate and distinct pictures of the experiences of Christ, Head and body. *(a)* Joseph was hated of his brethren, beloved by his father: so with Christ. *(b)* Joseph was cast into the pit by his brethren, as Jesus went into the pit of death for his brethren the Jews. *(c)* Joseph's *life was sold* into servitude to the Egyptians, but became ultimately the means of the preservation of his entire family, as well as of the Egyptians; so Christ gave himself a ransom not only for his brethren but also for all mankind; and during the Millennial age will furnish 'bread of life' to all who famish for it. *(d)* Joseph was sacrificed, sent to prison, because of his purity; so our Lord Jesus, 'holy, harmless, undefiled,' was treated as a transgressor, and went into the prisonhouse of death. *(e)* Joseph was delivered in due time from the prison, and made the associate of the king upon the throne of Egypt; so our Lord Jesus was raised up from the prisonhouse of death by the glory of the Father, to be set at his right hand in the glory of power, on the throne of earth; agent and representative of the great King for the blessing of all the families of the earth, typified by the Egyptians." *R2488:5*

See also **GEN. 37-47**

JOSHUA

"**The Christ" — Head and body**" *R3078:4,5*

"Joshua was now eighty years of age, and was accepted by the Israelites as Moses' successor without murmur. They had, doubtless, learned valuable lessons in their wilderness discipline. Joshua, it will be remembered, was Moses' companion when he went up into the mountain, Sinai, and there received the law, and indeed throughout the wilderness journey he seems to have been the one above all others upon whom Moses could thoroughly rely. He and Caleb were the two spies who brought the favorable report, declaring that by the help of the Lord Israel might go up and assuredly take possession. In the change of leadership Israel learned another great lesson; viz., that their confidence and trust must not be in man; that so long as

they recognized the Lord as their Leader they might feel safe and confident; because, although others might pass away, the Lord would abide faithful and could raise them up at any time just such leaders as he saw best. There is a lesson in this matter for spiritual Israelites as well. We are not to put our trust in leaders, but in the Lord. This does not signify that we are not to trust leaders, and not to acknowledge leaders, for all the history of the Lord's dealings with his people, the typical as well as the antitypical, shows us that he is pleased to use human agencies as his representatives in the teaching and leading of his people from grace to grace, from knowledge to knowledge. The lesson to be learned is that the Lord is thoroughly competent to manage his own work, and that while we may look for his leading through human agencies our trust is not in them, their wisdom, their strength, but in the Lord's wisdom and strength, guiding them and us through them.

"Another lesson here set forth is found in the words, 'Israel hearkened unto him [Joshua] and did as the Lord commanded Moses.' Joshua was to be followed only as the people could realize that he was following God's instructions, given through Moses — through the law. In the antitype the great Deliverer Jesus, will be the commander of the people, will bless the people during the Millennial age, and they must hear him and must obey him, but all that he will speak and all that he will order will be in full accord with the divine law, as represented by Moses. The Christ, during the Millennial kingdom, will attempt nothing on behalf of mankind in violation of the laws of righteousness, the laws of God. But everything in the way of lifting mankind up, will be by magnifying the Law of God, and making it honorable, and assisting all to conform their lives thereto, but not by that Law Covenant which is forever dead." *R3078:4,5*

JUBILEE

Restitution *B175*

"In this chapter we propose to examine that typical feature of the Mosaic Law known as the Jubilee, and to show that it was intended to foreshadow the great Restitution, the recovery of mankind from the fall, to be accomplished in the Millennial age; that in its character it was an illustration of the coming Restitution; and that in the manner of its reckoning it furnishes time regulations which, when understood and applied, indicate clearly **the time for the beginning of the antitype**, the 'Restitution of all things.' Acts 3:19-21

"Since the Jubilee was a part of the Law, and since repeating does not fulfil it, and since our Lord declared that the type could not pass away without fulfillment; and moreover, since we know that no such restitution of all

things as that foretold 'by all the holy prophets since the world began,' and prefigured in this type, has ever yet occurred, we know that it must be **fulfilled** in the future.

"Israel's Jubilee Year"

"The year of Jubilee was a Sabbath of rest and refreshing, both to the people and to the land which God gave them. It was the chief of a series of Sabbaths or rests.* [*The word 'Sabbath,' signifies **rest**.] They had a Sabbath **day** every seventh day; and once every year these typical Sabbath days reached a climax — i.e., a cycle of seven of these Sabbaths, thus marking a period of forty-nine days (7 x 7 = 49), was followed by a **Jubilee day**, the fiftieth day (Lev. 23:15,16), known among the Jews as Pentecost. It was a day of rejoicing and thanksgiving." *B175*

LEV. 25:9,10: "Then shalt thou cause the trumpet of the jubilee to sound...throughout all your land. And ye shall hallow the fiftieth year, and proclaim liberty throughout *all* the land unto all the inhabitants thereof:...and ye shall return every man unto his possession, and ye shall return every man unto his family."

ACTS 3:19-21: "...times of refreshing shall come from the presence of the Lord; And he shall send Jesus Christ,...Whom the

heaven must receive until the times of restitution of all things..."

KETURAH

Restitution or new covenant *E106; R3916:3*

"It is yet further in harmony with this same principle that though our Lord Jesus has since been highly exalted to the **divine nature**, and is no longer human, yet it is declared of him that he shall be the **life-giver** or 'father' of the whole human race, while it is also shown that his work for the race is to **restore** the perfection of **human nature**, which was lost for all through Adam's sin. Thus, while their 'father' or life-giver will be on the divine plane, his children will be on the human plane, born out of a Covenant of restitution, illustrated by Keturah, Abraham's third wife." *E106*

"Entirely separate and distinct from both of the foregoing covenants is the Lord's promise of a New Covenant. It also was represented in Abraham's family by a woman, for after the death of Sarah, Abraham married again, his wife's name being Keturah; and by her we are told that he had many sons and daughters, whereas there was but the one son by Hagar, and but one by Sarah. The intimation thus clearly is that under the New Covenant God will bring many into the relationship of sons, as it is written of Abraham, who typified God. 'I have constituted thee a father of many nations.' — Gen. 17:4" *R3916:3*

GEN. 25:1,2: "Then again Abraham took a wife, and her name *was* Keturah. And she bare him Zimran, and Jokshan, and Medan, and Midian, and Ishbak, and Shuah."

KINGS OF THE EAST

Royal priesthood *R2498:4*

"It will be noticed, further, that, as literal Babylon sat upon the literal River Euphrates, so mystic Babylon is said to sit upon the waters, people. It should be noticed, also, that as the literal city was captured by the diversion of the literal waters, so symbolic Babylon is to fall by reason of the diversion of the symbolic Euphrates, which in Rev. 16:12, it is foretold, shall be 'dried up' — that the way of the kings of the East might be prepared.

"The kings of the East, or kings from the sunrising, are, we understand, the kings of Christ's kingdom, who are also priests — the body of Christ, the royal priesthood. 'Thou hast made us unto our God kings and priests, and we shall reign on the earth.' From this standpoint of view, Cyrus and his army, overthrowing literal Babylon, was a figure or illustration of Messiah, King of kings and Lord of lords, who with his faithful will shortly overthrow mystic Babylon, and take possession of the world in the name of Jehovah, to establish the Kingdom for which he taught us to pray, 'Our Father....thy kingdom come, thy will be done on earth as it is done in heaven.'" *R2498:4*

REV. 16:12, *Diag.*: "And the SIXTH poured out his BOWL, on the GREAT RIVER, the EUPHRATES; and its WATER was dried up, so that the WAY of THOSE KINGS who are from the Sun-rising might be prepared."

LAMB

Christ *E37; F460, R2271:3*

"It is at this point that the picture we are considering (Rev. 5:9-13) shows our Lord Jesus as the Lamb that had been slain, before whom obeisance was made, and who was proclaimed, Worthy the Lamb! 'Thou art worthy to take the scroll and to open the seals thereof, because thou wast slain, and hast redeemed us to God by thy blood out of every kindred and tongue and people and nation.' Thus is pictured to us the high exaltation of the Heavenly Father's representative, the 'Messenger [servant] of the Covenant.' Because of his humility and complete submission and obedience to the Father's will he is proclaimed thenceforth the sharer of the Father's throne, and, by the Father's own arrangement, the proclamation was made throughout the heavenly hosts, 'Worthy is the Lamb that was slain, **to receive** power, and riches, and wisdom, and strength, and honor, and glory, and blessing;' and finally 'every creature' shall catch the thought that Jehovah has very highly exalted his Only Begotten Son, even to association with

himself in the Kingdom, and shout their approval, saying, 'The blessing, and the honor, and the glory, and the power be unto Him that sitteth upon the throne [of the universe — Jehovah] and unto the Lamb, for ever and ever!' No wonder, then that we are instructed that thenceforth all men shall honor the exalted Son even as they honor the Father who thus highly exalted him. John 5:23" *E37*

F460 For quote see **Index: Memorial**, *P. 347,348* of this book.

"The Jews will celebrate as a *'feast'* the Passover *week*, beginning April 7th [1898] (at 6 o'clock P.M. April 6th), the 15th of Nisan. We in the Memorial Supper do not celebrate the feast-week but the day previous, the 14th of Nisan, beginning on the evening of the 13th (April 5th, '98) which is the anniversary of the proper date for killing and eating the Paschal lamb — the anniversary of the death of our Lord Jesus; the true Lamb of God, because of whose sacrifice we the 'church of the first-born' are passed over from death unto life — already by faith or reckonedly, by and by actually in 'the first resurrection.' The antitype of the Passover Feast week is found in the rejoicing of heart of all the first born of true Israel — the seven days signifying the *perfection* or completeness of the joy and the salvation." *R2271:3*

1 PET. 1:18,19: "...ye were not redeemed with corruptible things...But with the precious blood of Christ, as of a lamb without blemish and without spot."

REV. 5:6, *Diag.*: "in the Midst of the THRONE...a little Lamb standing, as if killed..."

LEVITES

Justified believers *T26;117-119; F124,125.*

T26 For quote see **TYPES: Melchizedec**.

"Antitypical Priests and Levites"

"Are we sometimes puzzled to know why some religious people cannot see any but natural things — cannot discern the deeper spiritual truths of the Word? — why they can see restitution for natural men, but cannot see the divine, heavenly calling? These Tabernacle lessons show us why this is. They are brethren in justification, of 'the household of faith,' but not brethren in Christ — not fully consecrated — not sacrificers. They are Levites — in the 'Court': they never consecrated as priests, to sacrifice their human rights and privileges, and consequently cannot enter the 'Holy,' nor see the things prepared for the priestly class only. The natural 'eye hath not seen, nor ear heard — neither have entered into the heart of **man** the things which God hath prepared for them that love him. But God hath revealed them unto **us** [who through consecration have become "new creatures," called to become "partakers of the divine

nature,"] by his spirit [light of the lamp], for the Spirit searcheth [revealeth] all things — yea, the **deep** [hidden] things of God.' 1

Cor. 2:9,10

"The church nominal has always included both the justified and sanctified classes — Levites and priests — as well as hypocrites. In the Apostle Paul's letters certain parts were addressed to the justified class (Levites) who had not fully consecrated. Thus he writes to the Galatians that 'They that are Christ's have **crucified** the flesh with the affections and lusts.' (Gal. 5:24) He thus seems to imply that only some of them had complied with the Gospel call to sacrifice — crucifixion of the flesh.

"In the same way he addressed the Romans (12:1); 'I beseech you, therefore, brethren [believers — justified by faith in Christ — Levites], by the mercies of God [manifest through Christ in our justification], that ye present your bodies a living sacrifice [that you consecrate wholly — thus becoming priests], holy, acceptable unto God.' All who in heart renounce sin and accept God's grace in Christ are justified freely by faith in Jesus — God accepting them as reckonedly sinless or holy; and such sacrificers and their offerings God has declared himself willing to accept through Christ during this Atonement Day (the Gospel age) and until the full elect number of the royal priesthood is completed. 'Now is the **acceptable** time' — the time when such offerings will be accepted. True, as we have just seen, God will accept sacrifices of the world, and it will always be the only proper course for all to pursue — to render unto the Lord their purchased beings. But after this age is ended, none will be permitted to sacrifice unto **death** and sufferings — such sacrifices will be impossible after the new age and its regulations are inaugurated.

"It seems evident that by far the larger proportion of the early churches (much more so of the modern worldly mixture, the confused 'Babylon' of the present day) were not consecrated to death, and consequently were not of the antitypical 'royal priesthood,' but merely Levites, doing the **service** of the Sanctuary, but not **sacrificing**.

"Looking back at the type in the Law, we find that there were 8,580 Levites appointed in the typical service, while only five priests were appointed for the typical sacrificing. (Num. 4:46-48; Exod. 28:1) It may be that this, as much as the other features of the 'shadow,' was designed to illustrate the proportion of justified believers to self-sacrificing, consecrated ones....

"The fact that we see believers who are trying to put away their sins is not of itself evidence of their being 'priests;' for Levites as well as priests should practice 'circumcision of the heart' — 'putting away the filth [sins] of the flesh.' All this is symbolized in the Laver of water in the 'Court,' at which both priests and Levites washed. Nor is a spirit of

meekness, gentleness, benevolence and morality always indicative of consecration to God. These qualities belong to a perfect natural man (the **image of God**), and occasionally they partially survive the wreck of the fall. But such evidences not infrequently pass as proofs of full consecration in the nominal Church....

"Marvel not, then, that so few have ever seen the glorious beauties within the Tabernacle: only priests can see them. The Levites may know of them only as they hear them described. They have never seen the hidden light and beauty; never eaten of the 'bread of presence;' never offered the acceptable incense at the 'Golden Altar.' No: to enjoy these, they must pass the 'Veil' — into entire consecration to God in sacrifice during the Atonement Day." *T117-119*

"As the consecration of the Levites in the type was a measurable consecration to follow righteousness, but not a consecration to sacrifice, so this next step of sanctification which belongs to those who accept God's call to the Royal Priesthood was symbolized in the type by the consecration of Aaron and his sons in the priestly office — a consecration to sacrifice. It was symbolized by white linen robes representing righteousness, justification, and by the anointing oil and by the sacrificing, in which all the priests participated. Heb. 8:3

"In the Levitical types two consecrations are distinctly shown: (1) the general consecration of all the Levites; (2) a special consecration of the few Levites who were **sacrificers** or priests. The first represents the general consecration to holy living and obedience to God which all believers make, and which by God's grace, through Christ, accomplishes for them, tentatively, ' **justification** of life' and peace with God. This is what all true believers understand and experience in this age. But, as the Apostle explains, 'the **end** of the commandment is love out of a pure heart' (1 Tim. 1:5); that is to say, God foresees that our compliance with our first consecration, our compliance with the terms of our justification during the present age will, in its **end**, lead us up to the second consecration as priests for sacrifice....

"Throughout the Gospel age the same plan of procedure prevails: (1) the consecration to obedience and righteousness — as antitypical Levites; then a finding that righteousness means supreme love to God and a desire to know and do his will; then, later, a realization that now all creation is so warped and twisted and out of harmony with God that harmony with him means inharmony with all unrighteousness in our own flesh as well as in others; then a looking and crying to the Lord to know why he called us and accepted our consecration and yet seemingly has not made this possible except by self-sacrifice. In answer to this cry the Lord instructs that, 'Ye were called in one hope of

your calling' (Eph. 4:4)...It was when we heard God's call through the Apostle, 'I beseech you, brethren,...present your bodies living sacrifices, holy and acceptable unto God, and your reasonable service,' and accepted the same and consecrated ourselves **unto death**, that we were counted **priests** — of the 'Royal Priesthood,' members of the Great High Priest of our profession (or order) Christ Jesus — New Creatures.

"Surely we must conclude that those tentatively justified believers (antitypical Levites) who when they 'count the cost' (Luke 14:27,28) of discipleship to which their consecration, already made, leads, and who then decline to exercise faith in the Lord's promised aid, and refuse or neglect to go on to perform their 'reasonable service,' by making their consecration complete — even unto death — such have been favored of the Lord in vain. Surely they cannot be considered as really having justification to life; or even justification to special fellowship with God; thus they drop from the favored position of antitypical Levites and are to be esteemed such no longer." *F124, 125*

ROM. 12:1: "I BESEECH you therefore, brethren,...that ye present your bodies a living sacrifice..."

1 CHRON. 23:27,28: "...the Levites *were* numbered... because their office *was* to wait on the sons of Aaron for the service...."

"**The whole church**"

NUM. 3:12,13: "...I have taken the Levites from among the children of Israel instead of all the firstborn...therefore the Levites

shall be mine; Because all the firstborn *are* mine; *for* on the day that I smote all the firstborn in...Egypt I hallowed...the firstborn in Israel...”

DEUT. 18:1,2: “The priests...*and* all the tribe of Levi, shall have no part...with Israel.... Therefore shall they have no inheritance among their brethren....”

“**The great company**” *F126,127-129,168,169; T68-72*

See also **Index: Great Company** for reference *F126-129;T68-72*

“But amongst those who do appreciate God’s favor, and whose hearts do respond loyally to the privileges and ‘reasonable service’ of full consecration, and who undertake the covenant of obedience to God and to righteousness even unto **death**, are these two classes:

“(1) Those antitypical Levites who gladly ‘**lay down** their lives’ voluntarily, seeking ways and means for serving the Lord, the brethren and the Truth, and counting it a pleasure and an honor thus to **sacrifice** earthly comforts, conveniences, time, influence, means and all that compose **present life**. These joyful, willing sacrificers, the

antitypical priests who ere long shall be glorified and, with their Lord, constitute the ‘**Royal** Priesthood’ who, their sacrificings then completed, will be no longer typified by Aaron and his sons performing sacrifices for the people, but by Melchizedek — a priest upon his throne — distributing to the world, during the Millennium, the blessings secured by the ‘better sacrifices’ during the antitypical Atonement Day — this Gospel age.

“(2) Another class of believers at heart loyally respond and joyfully consecrate their all to the Lord and his ‘reasonable service,’ and thus demonstrate their worthiness to be of the antitypical Levites, because they receive not the grace of God in vain. But, alas, although they respond to the call and thus come into the ‘one hope of our calling,’ and into all the privileges of the elect, yet their love and zeal are not such as impel them to perform the sacrificing they covenanted to do. These, because their love and faith are not intense enough, fail to put, or to keep, their sacrifices on the altar; hence, they cannot be counted full ‘copies’ of our great High Priest, who delighted to do the Father’s will; they fail to overcome and cannot therefore be reckoned amongst the ‘overcomers’ who shall share with their Lord the heavenly Kingdom as members of the ‘Royal Priesthood;’ they fail to make their calling and election sure by full compliance with their covenant.” *F126*

“...the ‘Great Company,’ who will come up out of great tribulation and wash their robes and make them white in the blood of the Lamb; but while gaining a spiritual nature and a great blessing and a participation in the Marriage Supper of the Lamb as guests, they will, nevertheless, lose the great prize which is to go to the very elect only — the faithful overcomers, those who will follow the footsteps of Jesus rejoicingly and heartily. (Rev. 7) This Great Company fails to maintain its place in the elect — fails to be of the ‘very elect’ — because of insufficient zeal for the Lord, the Truth and the brethren — because they are partly ‘overcharged with the cares of this life.’ Nevertheless, since their hearts are loyal to the Redeemer, and since they maintain their faith in the precious blood and hold fast and do not deny the same, therefore the Lord Jesus, our Advocate, the Captain of our Salvation, who leads the very elect to glory through the steps of willing sacrifice, will lead these to a spiritual blessing — to perfection on a lower plane of spirit-being — because they have trusted in him and have not denied his name or his work....” *F168,169*

“Remember that we are now dealing with things future, **after** the ‘sin-offerings.’ The ‘Lord’s goat’ is not yet wholly consumed, consequently the ‘little flock,’ represented by the body of the Priest, has not yet gone beyond the second ‘Veil’ into the condition of spirit perfection; and the special work with the living ‘scape-goat’ will not occur until after that....

“These are in a pitiable condition: they have failed to win the prize, therefore cannot have the divine nature; nor can they have **restitution** to perfect humanity with the world; for, in their consecration, all human rights and privileges were exchanged for spiritual ones and the opportunity to run the race for the **divine** nature. But though not voluntary overcomers, the Lord loves them, and will **deliver** those who through fear of death (fear of contempt — fear of the reproach borne by the bullock and goat beyond the ‘Camp’ — in the wilderness, the separated or dead condition) were all their lifetime subject to bondage — bondage of fear of **men** and men’s traditions and opinions, which always bring a snare, and keep back from full obedience to God, even unto death. Heb. 2:15

“Through the favor of the High Priest, this great company are to go into ‘great tribulation’ and have the flesh **destroyed**. This will not make of them voluntary overcomers nor give them membership in the Body — the Bride of Christ. It will not give them a place **on the throne** of Kings and Priests, but a position ‘**before** the throne,’ as perfect spirit beings, though not of the highest order of the spiritual — the divine. Though they will not possess the **crown** of life, Immortality, yet if rightly exercised by the tribulation they will attain to a condition ‘like unto the angels.’ They will serve God **in** his Temple, though they will not be members of that symbolic Temple which is the Christ. Rev. 7:14,15

“Those of the second class are simply sent to the wilderness and there left to die unwillingly. Their love of the world’s approval perishes with the world’s neglect and scorn and reproach; and their new spiritual nature meantime ripens into life. The ‘Lord’s goat’ class lays down the human nature by the Lord’s spirit and help, **sacrificially**, willingly, voluntarily: the ‘scape-goat’ class has its flesh **destroyed** under divine providence, that the spirit may be saved.

“Not only will this be markedly accomplished shortly, with the last members of this ‘scape-goat’ class, but the same has been fulfilled to some extent throughout the entire Gospel age; for there has always been a class, and a large one, which yielded self-will to death only by **compulsion**; and, instead of willingly sacrificing, suffered ‘**destruction** of the flesh.’ (1 Cor. 5:5) The classes represented by both goats have been developing side by side throughout the age.

“When all the members of the ‘little flock’ shall have gone beyond the ‘Veil,’ divine providence, the hand of the Lord, will set free those bound ones, ‘who, through fear of death [to the world], are all their lifetime subject to bondage,’ by overthrowing the many theories, creeds and traditions of men, and great **nominal** church organizations, in and to and by which his people of the ‘scape-goat’ class are held — hindered from hearing and obeying the Lord’s voice.

“Forced into freedom by ‘Babylon’s’ fall while realizing that the **great prize** has been lost, these ‘tribulation saints’ will then hear the High Priest’s voice and find themselves forced into the

wilderness condition of separation and flesh destruction. At no previous time have there been so many CONSECRATED ones **bound** as at present; yet there have been some throughout the entire age.

"All the consecrated ones of both classes (the Lord's goat class and the scape-goat class) pass through great trials and afflictions; yet by one class they are esteemed light afflictions, taken joyfully, which they rejoice to be accounted worthy to suffer. Theirs is a **willing sacrifice**, like that of the Head. To the other class they are burdensome, great afflictions, almost without joy — an **enforced destruction** of the flesh. And proportionately different are their positions and rewards at the end of the race." *T68-72* [See also **TYPES: Scapegoat**]

REV. 7:9,14,15: ***Diag.***: "...a great Crowd which no one could have numbered...before the THRONE....These are THOSE COMING out of the GREAT AFFLICTION, and they washed their ROBES, and whitened them in the BLOOD of the LAMB: On this account they are before the THRONE of GOD, and publicly serve him Day and Night in his TEMPLE; and HE who SITS on the THRONE will tabernacle over them."

Four classes of the saved *F128,129*

"Similarly, Levi's three sons (Kohath, Gershom and Merari) seem to represent four classes. (1) Moses, Aaron and all the priest-family of Amram (son of Kohath), whose tents were in front [east] of the Tabernacle. These had full charge of all things religious — their brethren — even all the Levites — being their honored assistants or servants. (2) Camped on the south side was the Kohath family, their closest of kin, and these had charge of the most sacred articles — the Altars, the Candlestick (lampstand), the Table and the Ark. (3) Camped at the north side of the Tabernacle were the Levites of the Merari family, next in honor of service, having charge of the gold-covered boards and the posts, sockets, etc. (4) Camped at the rear, was the Gershom family of Levites, having charge of the least important services — the porterage, etc., of the cords, outer curtains, gate, etc.

"These distinct families of Levites may properly represent four distinct classes of **justified** humanity when the reconciliation is completed: the saints, or Royal Priesthood, the ancient worthies, the 'great company,' and the rescued of the world. As is not unusual in respect to types, the names seem to be significant. (1) Amram's family chosen to be priests: the name AMRAM signifies **high people**, or **exalted people**. What a fitting name for the type of the 'little flock' whose head is Christ Jesus! 'Highly exalted,'

'very high,' are the Scriptural declarations of these priests. (2) KOHATH signifies **ally**, or **comrade**. It was from the Kohath family that Amram's sons were chosen to be a new house of priests. The Kohath family of Levites might, therefore, properly represent the ancient worthies whose faith and obedience and loyalty to God and willingness to suffer for righteousness was so fully attested, and with whom we feel so close a kinship. They were, indeed, the Lord's allies and ours; and in some respects come nearer to the Christ every way than do any others. (3) MERARI signifies **bitterness**; hence, the Merari family of Levites would seem to represent the 'great company' of spirit-begotten ones who fail to win the prize of Royal Priesthood, and are 'saved so as by fire,' coming up through 'great tribulation' and bitter experiences to the position of honor and service which they will occupy. (4) GERSHOM signifies **refugees**, or **rescued**; hence, the Gershom family of Levites would seem well to represent the saved world of mankind, all of whom will be refugees succored and delivered, rescued from the blindness and slavery of Satan.

"So, then, first in order as well as in rank amongst these antitypical Levites, or justified ones, will be the Royal Priesthood, to whose care the Millennial Kingdom and every interest will be committed. On their right hand will be the closest of kin — the ancient worthies — whom they shall 'make princes in all the earth.' Next on their left will be their faithful brethren of the Great Company.* [*The Author's later thought is that certain scriptures seem to teach that the **Ancient Worthies** will not precede, but rank lower than the **Great Company** during the Millennium, but that they will be received to spirit nature and higher honors, at its close. *footnote*] And last of all will be those rescued from sin and death during the Millennium, whose loyalty will have been fully attested in the great trial with which the Millennial age will close. Rev. 20:7-9" *F128,129*

See also Index: **Great Company** (*page 168* of this book)

Ancient Worthies *R5182:4*

"A part of the evidence leading to the deduction that the ancient worthies will be made sharers of the spirit nature and become members of the great company class is built upon the fact that they seem to be represented typically by the tribe of Levi. The fact that this tribe had no inheritance in the land seems to imply that the ancient worthies will have no earthly inheritance. We might think that their exaltation to be princes in all the earth (Psa. 45:16) would be an abundant reward; but inasmuch as God will give the spirit nature to the great company, who passed through no more severe experiences than did the ancient worthies, and inasmuch as the lowest form on the human plane, it follows that the great company would receive at the hands of the

Lord a greater blessing than would the ancient worthies." *R5182:4*

See also Index: **Tabernacle Types and Shadows**

LORD'S GOAT

Little Flock *T61*

"The casting of lots to see which goat would be the 'Lord's goat' and which the 'scape-goat,' indicated that God has no choice as to which of those who present themselves shall win the prize. It shows that God does not **arbitrarily** determine which of the consecrated shall become partakers of the divine nature, and joint-heirs with Christ our Lord, and which shall not. Those who suffer with him shall reign with him: those who succeed in avoiding the fiery trials, by a compromising course, miss also the joint-heirship in glory. Rom. 8:17

"Every **believer**, every **justified** one (Levite) in the 'Court,' who presents himself during the Atonement Day, the Gospel age, is acceptable as a sacrifice — Now is the acceptable time. And he who keeps his covenant and performs the sacrifice is typically represented in the 'Lord's goat.' Those who do not yield themselves willing sacrifices, 'loving the present world,' are represented in the 'scape-goat.' To return to the High Priest: After having sprinkled the 'Mercy Seat' (literally, the **Propitiatory**, or place where satisfaction is made) with the blood of the bullock seven times (perfectly), 'Then shall he kill the goat of the sin-offering, that is **for the people**, and bring his blood within the Veil, and do with that blood **as he did** with the blood of the bullock, and sprinkle it upon the Mercy Seat and before the Mercy

Seat.' [Lev. 16:14,15]...In a word, all that was done with the bullock was repeated with the 'Lord's goat.' It was killed by the same High Priest; its blood was sprinkled just the same; its fat, etc., were burned on the altar in the 'Court' also. (It is worthy of notice that while a prime bullock is always very fat, a goat is a very lean animal. So our Lord Jesus, as represented by the bullock, had a great abundance of the fat, of zeal and love for his sacrifice, while his followers, represented by the goat, are lean in comparison.) The body of the 'Lord's goat' was burned in like manner as that of the bullock — 'outside the camp.'" *T61*

LEV. 16:9: "And Aaron shall bring the goat upon which the LORD'S lot fell, and offer him *for* a sin offering."

COL. 1:24: "Who now rejoice in my sufferings for you, and fill up that which is behind of the afflictions of Christ in my flesh for his body's sake, which is the church..."

MANNA

Christ, his human nature, and his truth *R3036:6; 3087:1*

"The lesson from the manna seems more particularly to illustrate our spiritual supplies, which come wholly from above. The manna is called in the Scriptures, 'The corn of heaven,' 'the bread of the mighty' — 'angels' food.' (Psa. 78:24,25; 1 Cor. 10:3) Our Lord interprets the manna as a symbol of himself, — the Truth, — of which a man may eat and never die. Nevertheless, this bread, although given freely, demands labor on the part of those who would appropriate it and obtain from it spiritual sustenance; it must be gathered, and it must be prepared as food. We cannot expect to come to Christ and to receive in an instant and without effort on our own part all the gracious mercy, blessing and truth that is in him. The truth is God's gift, to be sure; but it is so given as to require the putting forth of energy on our part, which will demonstrate our need, our hunger, our appreciation of the 'bread of life.' Neither can we receive enough in one day or one month or one year to sustain us perpetually. We need to come to the Lord daily, and to receive from him through his Word and spirit the life-giving forces by which we may be sustained day by day in the trials of life, — and by which we may grow strong in the Lord our God and in the power of his might." *R3036:6*

"The ceasing of the manna, and the eating, instead, of the fruits and grains of Canaan, may be understood to signify that the new dispensation will have spiritual food and sustenance of its own, and that in great variety and abundance; and that mankind will no longer be dependent upon the divine revelation contained in the Scriptures — upon the Word of God through ancient prophets and apostles. Good and necessary as these are under present conditions, they cannot be to the world all that the more direct teachings and blessings and instructions and guidance of the Millennial kingdom will be, and will, therefore, not be needed under the new conditions. Now, the Word of God is a lamp for the feet of his saints, and some of its light shines beyond his saints and others in this night time; but by and by, when the Sun of righteousness shall arise and the whole earth be flooded with the glorious light of truth and knowledge, the lamp which at present we cannot prize too highly, will cease to occupy its present exalted and indispensable position, although it will always be appreciated and reverenced." *R3087:1*

JOHN 6:31-33,35,51,63: "Our fathers did eat manna....Then Jesus said....my Father giveth you the true bread from heaven. For the bread of God is he which cometh down from heaven....I am the bread of life....the bread that I will give is my flesh, which I will give for the life of the world....the words that I speak unto you, *they* are spirit, and *they* are life."

MANNA, HIDDEN MANNA

Immortality *T122;123*

"**The Golden Pot of Manna** represented immortality..." (For quote see **TYPES: Ark of the Covenant**.)

REV. 2:17: "...To him that overcometh will I give to eat of the hidden manna..."

MELCHIZEDEC

"**The Christ glorified and reigning**" *T26; R3951:6 (last article)*

"As Israel typified the world, so the tribe of Levites typified the 'household of faith,' or all believers in Jesus and his ransom. The Priesthood, one body under one chief or High Priest, was typical of the 'little flock,' which, with its 'Head' or High Priest, is a royal priesthood, the members of which, after the present time of sacrificing, are to be **kings and priests** unto God, and to reign on the earth. (Rev. 5:10) Thus viewed, we see Jesus the High Priest, not a priest of the Aaronic order, which was but the type of a greater and grander profession or order, the Head of the real priesthood of which others were but figures. (Heb. 3:1; 4:14) The Aaronic priesthood typified chiefly the humiliation and sufferings of Christ, less his future glory — Melchisedec being the type of the Christ as a kingly or royal priesthood." *T26*

See also *R3951: last article*

HEB. 5:6,10: "...Thou art a priest for ever after the order of Melchisedec....Called of God an high priest after the order of Melchisedec."

HEB. 7:1,2,9,10,14,15,17: "...Melchisedec...King of righteousness,...King of Salem,...King of peace....Levi also, who receiveth tithes, paid tithes in Abraham. For he was yet in the loins of his father when Melchisedec met him....our Lord sprang out of Judah; of which tribe Moses spake nothing concerning priesthood...after the similitude....For he testifieth, 'Thou *art* a priest forever after the order of Melchisedec.'"

MERCY SEAT

God's justice *T123,124*

"The slab of gold called the 'MERCY SEAT' (or more properly the Propitiatory, because on it the Priest offered the blood of the sacrifices which propitiated or **satisfied** the demands of divine justice) represented the underlying principle of Jehovah's character — **justice**. **God's** throne is based or established upon **Justice**. 'Righteousness and justice are the foundation of thy throne.' Psa. 89:14; Job 36:17; 37:23; Isa. 56:1; Rev. 15:3" *T124*

"**The Mercy Seat**" — a slab of solid gold, on the two ends of which, and of the same piece of metal, were formed two cherubim..." *T123,124* (For quote see **TYPES: Ark of the Covenant; SYMBOLS: Shekinah Light**.)

Jesus — propitiatory *T124*

"The Apostle Paul uses the Greek word for Mercy Seat or Propitiatory (**hilasterion**) when referring to our Lord Jesus, saying — 'Whom God hath set forth to be a Propitiatory* [*"By some means the translators of the Common Version Bible mistranslated **hilasterion** 'propitiation.' The word **hilasmos**, signifying **satisfaction**, is properly translated 'propitiation' in 1 John 2:2 and 4:10."] [or Mercy Seat]...to declare his righteousness...that he

might be just and the justifier of him which believeth in Jesus.' (Rom. 3:25,26) The thought here is in accord with the foregoing presentation. The Justice, the Wisdom, the Love and the Power are God's own as well as the plan by which all these cooperate in human salvation: but it pleased God that in his well beloved Son, our Lord Jesus, all of his own fullness should dwell, and be **represented** to mankind. Thus in the type the High Priest, coming forth from the Most Holy, was the living representative of Jehovah's Justice, Wisdom, Love and Power to men — the living representative of divine mercy, forgiveness, appeasement. Although the divine being is veiled, hidden from human sight, his divine attributes are to be displayed to all men by our great High Priest, who, as the living Mercy Seat, will at the close of this age draw nigh to mankind and make all to understand the riches of divine grace." *T124*

PSA. 89:14: "Justice and judgment *are* the habitation of thy throne..."

MOSES

"**The Christ, Head and body**" *D629*

"That Moses, the mediator of the Law Covenant, was a type of Christ, the Mediator of the New Covenant, is clearly taught in the Scriptures and generally recognized by Bible students; but all have not recognized that Moses was a type of the entire Christ — head and body — and that in this sense the entire Gospel age has been the period of Christ's raising up. This, however, is the only application of the type which will fit in a number of cases: for instance, in Acts 3:22,23." *D629*

ACTS 3:22: "For Moses truly said unto the fathers, A prophet shall the Lord your God raise up unto you of your brethren, like unto me..."

The Law *T41*; *R3077:5*

"The **bullock** for the sin-offering was brought, 'and Aaron and his sons laid their hands upon the head' of it, thus saying, This sacrifice represents us. From that moment, all that happened to the bullock, represented what was to be done to Jesus and to his Body, the Church, as human beings. The bullock was delivered up to the 'Law'

(represented by Moses), to meet its demands against Israel, typical of mankind in general. To meet the demands of the Law it had to be slain — 'And Moses slew it.' He then applied the blood to the horns of the altar. The 'finger' of the '**Law**' thus pointed out that the altar of earthly sacrifices was acceptable to God by reason of the shed blood, (the life given), and that all who realize the power of the altar (horns are symbols of power) must **first** recognize the blood which sanctifies it. The blood poured at the base of the altar showed that through the blood of the sacrifice (life given) even the **earth** was purchased back from the curse. 'Unto the redemption of the **purchased** possession.' See Eph. 1:14." *T41*

"But even aside from the making of this type, Moses would not have gone into the land of Canaan; because, from another point of view, he was the type of the Law covenant, which must end before the people can enter into their rest. As Moses was the representative of the Law Covenant, so Joshua became the representative or type of the New Covenant and of its mediator, Jesus, the Deliverer. 'The law came by Moses but grace and truth came by Jesus Christ.' The law was a pedagogue or guide to prepare and bring the Israelites along to the borders of Canaan, but the law could never give them rest, could never take them into the land of promise. Christ, the antitype of Joshua, must do that. We are to remember, too, that Moses' error in smiting the Rock, did not involve him in the second death, nor will it work any injury to him as respects the future. It was comparatively a trivial matter, and taught him a valuable lesson which he evidently learned to the Lord's pleasement, and his failure to go into the land of promise, therefore, should not indicate a continuance of divine indignation against him, but merely a continuance of the divine purpose in making of him a type of a class who would have to do with the antitypical Rock, the antitypical water, and the antitypical smiting." *R3077:5*

LEV. 8:15: "...and Moses took the blood, and put *it* upon the horns of the altar...and purified the altar, and poured the blood at the bottom of the altar, and sanctified it..."

PRIESTHOOD

Christ and the "little flock" *T26-28; T117-119*

T26-28 For quotes see **TYPES: Israel — World of Mankind; TYPES: Melchizedec**

See also Index: **Tabernacle Types and Shadows**

"...before the under-priests, the members of the Body of Christ, the royal priesthood, will be united to their Head, and begin their reign, they must '**suffer with him**,' sharing in the antitypical sacrifices, as we shall shortly see. 2 Tim. 2:12

"The Apostle Peter shows who were typified by the Aaronic priests, when, addressing those who were **sanctified**, he says: 'Ye are...an holy priesthood to offer up sacrifices acceptable to God by Jesus Christ.' 'Ye are...a royal priesthood.' (1 Pet. 2:5,9) They are all ministers (**servants**) of the truth, though not all preachers and Doctors of Divinity: and each must do his share at self-sacrifice ere he will be accounted worthy to be a joint-heir with Christ. Only to those who suffer with him is there a promise to reign with him. Rom. 8:17

"That the Head or Chief Priest of this priesthood, this 'little flock,' is our Lord Jesus, is repeatedly mentioned by the apostles. We give but one quotation: '**Holy** brethren ["the Royal Priesthood"], partakers of the heavenly calling, consider the Apostle and High Priest of **our profession** [our order of priests, to be], Christ Jesus.' Heb. 3:1

"As we now pass to the consideration of the inauguration of the typical priesthood, we notice that the tribe of the Levites (typical of all the **justified** believers) existed before the priesthood was instituted. So in the antitype the '**Royal Priesthood**' began with the anointing of Jesus, the High Priest (at baptism, Luke 3:22; Acts 10:38); but believers, **justified** by faith in Christ, had lived long before that. For instance, Abraham believed God, and was **justified** by his faith. (Rom. 4:2,3) Though even the type had not yet come in his day, Abraham, as a justified believer, was a member of the 'household of faith,' typified by the Levites. But none of the 'Royal Priesthood' were selected until after the Chief or High Priest of this order was first initiated and installed in office. Since then the initiation and installment of the under-priests has been the special work of this Christian dispensation or Gospel Age. Thus the priests, now consecrating, being installed and offering themselves as sacrifices, are being prepared as God's instruments for the royalty of the Kingdom, and thus for the blessing of all the families of the earth.

"The Priesthood: It will be well to notice that in every ceremony

relating to the ordination and work of the priesthood the chief priest was first: and so in the antitypical priesthood, Jesus was the **first** — the Leader, Captain, Forerunner — teaching clearly that none **preceded** him. Hence we see that none of the patriarchs or prophets are of the 'little flock,' the 'royal priesthood,' otherwise called 'the Bride,' 'the Lamb's Wife.' Though they will be greatly blessed as the Lord's servants, their service will not be so grandly high as that of the priests, nor their honor so great; nevertheless, as represented in the Levites, their future work and honor will evidently be great.

"'The narrow way to life' (immortality) was not opened up until Jesus came. He was the first to walk in it. He 'brought life and immortality **to light**.' (2 Tim. 1:10) And though all

faithful believers (Levites) will become possessors of everlasting life, and the world (represented in the 'Camp of Israel') also, if they will accept it during the Millennial age, yet only the priesthood, who overcome and follow their Leader in the narrow way to life — sacrificing human interests — thus seeking glory, honor and immortality (Rom. 2:7), will ever become the possessors of that **unlimited** degree of life called immortality, originally possessed only by Jehovah God, and by our Lord Jesus Christ since his resurrection. See ***The Plan of the Ages***, *Chapters X and XI." T26-28*

T117-119: SEE **TYPES: Levites**

1 PET. 2:9: "But ye are...a royal priesthood...."

REV. 5:10, *Diag.*: "And thou didst make them to our GOD a Royalty and a Priesthood...."

REBECCA

"**The church**" *R1386-1389* (See Article); *R3867:3,6*

"Throughout the Scriptures the church is represented as a bride in preparation for her marriage. The Bridegroom uniformly is the Lord Jesus, to whom belongs the entire inheritance, and the opportunity granted to the Lord's followers in the present time is that of becoming his bride and joint-heirs. They have no status or relationship to the King eternal except as they obtain it by union with the King's Son. The type of this in the Old Testament is a very beautiful one: Abraham typified the Heavenly Father, very rich; Isaac typified our Lord Jesus, the seed of promise, the heir of all; Abraham's servant, sent to call a wife for Isaac, beautifully typified the holy Spirit, which during this Gospel age, has been selecting the church, of which the Apostle says, I have espoused you as a chaste virgin unto one husband, which is Christ. — 2 Cor. 11:2.

"Throughout the Gospel age this church, under the guidance and protection of the holy Spirit has been approaching the Father's house of many mansions, the heavenly kingdom, the glorious conditions promised in joint-heirship with the Bridegroom. If we rightly understand the matter we are now at the end of the journey, and the bride class, typified by Rebecca, is putting on the vail and alighting from the camel and being received by the heavenly Bridegroom. As the entire matter has occupied a long period of nearly nineteen centuries, so the coming features are occupying several years for their accomplishment. Soon the Bride will be with the Bridegroom and in the Sarah tent — joint heirs with him in the Abrahamic Covenant. It is in harmony with this that the Apostle assures us that 'if ye be Christ's then are ye Abraham's seed, and heirs according to the promise.' — Gal. 3:29." *R3867:3,6*

GEN. 24

See also **TYPES: Isaac**.

RED HEIFER

Ancient Worthies *T105-112*

"ONE feature of the ceremonial law of Israel, related in Numbers 19, required the killing of a red heifer (cow) — one without blemish and which had never been under the yoke of service. It was not one of the sin-offerings of the Day of Atonement, nor was it one of the offerings of the people subsequent to the Day of Atonement — indeed, it was no 'offering' at all, for no part of it was offered on the Lord's altar or eaten by the priests. It was sacrificed, but not in the same sense, nor in the same place, as these offerings — in the Court. It was not even killed by one of the priests, nor was its blood taken into the Holy and Most Holy. The Red Heifer was taken outside the camp of Israel, and was there killed and burned to ashes — flesh, fat, hide, blood, etc. — except a little of the blood taken by the priest and sprinkled seven times **toward** the front of the Tabernacle (*Revised Version and Leeser*). The **ashes** of the heifer were not brought into the Holy place, but were left outside the Camp, gathered together in a heap, and apparently accessible to any of the people who had use for them. Under the prescription of the Law, a portion of the ashes was to be mixed with water in a vessel, and a bunch of hyssop dipped into this mixture was to be used in sprinkling the person, clothing, tent, etc., of the legally unclean, for their purification.

"In view of what we have seen respecting the Day of Atonement sacrifices..., this heifer was in no sense related to these...

"What, then, did this sacrifice of the red heifer signify? — What class or persons were represented by it, as having suffered outside the 'Camp,' and in what sense of the word would their sufferings have to do with the cleansing or purification of the people of God — including those who shall yet become his people during the Millennial age?

"We answer that a class of God's people not of the 'Royal Priesthood' did suffer for righteousness' sake outside the 'Camp;' a brief history of these, and of the fiery trials which they endured, is given us by the Apostle in Heb. 11. Of these he says, after recounting the faith exploits of a number, 'What shall I say more? For the time would fail me to tell of Gideon, and of Barak, and of Samson, and of Jephtha; of David also, and of Samuel and of the prophets: who through faith subdued kingdoms, wrought righteousness, obtained promises, stopped the mouths of lions, quenched the violence of fire, escaped the edge of the sword, out of weakness were made strong, waxed valiant in fight, turned to flight the armies of aliens. Women received

their dead raised to life again: and others were tortured, not accepting deliverance; that they might obtain a better resurrection: and others had trials of cruel mockings and scourgings, yea, moreover, of bonds and imprisonment: they were stoned, they were sawn asunder, were tempted, were slain by the sword: they wandered about in sheepskins and goatskins; being destitute, afflicted, tormented, of whom the world was not worthy.' Heb. 11:32-38

"Here we have a class fitting to the account of the Red Heifer — a class which laid down their lives outside the 'Camp;' a class in every way honorable, and yet not a priestly class....It may seem to some remarkable that we should, with so much positiveness, declare that these ancient worthies were not members of the 'Royal

Priesthood,' while with equal positiveness we declare that the no more faithful servants of God of this Gospel age are members of this 'Royal Priesthood.' Our positiveness on this subject is the positiveness of the Word of God, which in the very connection with the narrative of the faithfulness of these patriarchs declares in so many words, 'These all, having obtained a good report through faith, received not the promise [received not the chief blessing], God having provided **some better thing for us**, that they without us should not be made perfect.' Heb. 11:39,40

"Our Lord himself stated this matter very pointedly, and succinctly pointed out the line of demarcation between the faithful ones that preceded him and the faithful ones who would follow after him, walking in his footsteps, and becoming his joint-heirs. Of John the Baptist he said, 'Verily I say unto you, Among them that are born of women there hath not risen a greater than John the Baptist; notwithstanding he that is least in the Kingdom of Heaven is greater than he.' (Matt. 11:11) John the Baptist belonged to this Red Heifer class which suffered outside the 'Camp,' even unto death, but he had nothing whatever to do with the still better sacrifices of the royal priesthood during the Atonement Day...

"But while these ancient worthies are not in any sense part of the sin-offering, they are nevertheless connected with the **cleansing from sin**: their ashes (the knowledge and remembrance of their faithfulness unto death), mingled with the water of truth, and applied with the purgative, cleansing hyssop, is valuable, purifying, sanctifying all who desire to come into full harmony with God — and 'sprinkling the unclean, sanctifieth to the purification of the flesh.' Not, however, of themselves would these lessons of faithfulness in the past be valuable to us, but only by, through and associated with the sin-offerings of the Day of Atonement, to which the Apostle refers in the same connection — 'the blood of bulls and goats.' And not only are the remembrance and lessons of the faithfulness of the

ancient worthies (typified by the **ashes** of the red heifer) of sanctifying power to us now, but in a much larger sense they will be applicable and a blessing to the world of mankind in general during the Millennial age. For, as we have elsewhere seen, the divine arrangement is that these ancient worthies, the greatest of whom is less in honor than the least one in the Kingdom, will nevertheless occupy a place of high honor and distinction under that Kingdom of God — as its agents and representatives....

"The burning of the heifer was **witnessed** by a priest, who took cedar wood and a sprig of hyssop and a scarlet string and cast them into the midst of the burning cow. The hyssop would represent purging or cleansing, the cedar wood or evergreen would represent everlasting life, and the scarlet string would represent the blood of Christ. The casting of these three into the midst of the burning would imply that the ignominy heaped upon the ancient worthies who were stoned, sawn asunder, etc., and of whom the world was not worthy, permitted the merit of the precious blood, the cleansing of the truth, and the gift of everlasting life to be accounted to them through faith; and that subsequent to their death they would be recognized as cleansed, justified, accepted....

"In that the red heifer never wore a yoke, it represented a class of justified persons — made free from the Law Covenant. Although most of the ancient worthies were born under the Law Covenant, and therefore legally subject to its conditions and to its condemnation through imperfection of the flesh, nevertheless, we see that God justified them through faith, as the children of faithful Abraham....The fact that this sacrifice must be a **cow** and not a **bullock** served to differentiate it from the great sacrifice of the Day of Atonement which could be a **bullock** only. That it must be a **red cow** would seem to teach that those ancient worthies were not sinless and therefore accepted of God before the great Atonement Day sacrifice, but that they were 'sinners even as others.' The fact of their cleansing or justification by **faith**, was otherwise indicated as above suggested.

"The cleansings for which these red cow ashes were prescribed, were of a peculiar kind; namely, specially for those who came in contact with **death**. This would seem to indicate that these ashes of the heifer were not designed to remove the individual's guilt — no, his moral guilt could be cleansed away only through the merit of the Atonement Day sacrifices. The cleansing of defilement through contact with the dead would seem to teach that this cleansing, affected by and through the experiences of the ancient worthies, will specially apply to the world of mankind during the Millennial age, while they are seeking to get rid of all the defilements of **Adamic death** — seeking to attain

human perfection....Exod. 12:22; Lev. 14:4,49; Psa. 51:7; Heb. 9:19" *T105-112*

See also **NUM. 19**

SCAPEGOAT

Great Company *T68-72*

"'And when he had made an end of reconciling the Holy ["Most Holy"] and the Tabernacle of the congregation [the "Holy"] and the Altar [in the "Court"] he shall bring the live goat; and Aaron shall lay both his hands upon the head of the live goat [scape-goat] and confess over him all the iniquities of the children of Israel [typical of the **world**], and all their transgressions in all their sins, putting them upon the head of the goat, and shall send them away by the hand of a **fit** man [any one convenient] into the wilderness.' [Lev. 16] Verses 20-22

"As before expressed, we understand that this 'scape-goat' which was presented for sacrifice with the other, but failed to sacrifice, and to follow the example of the bullock, represented a class of God's people, who have made the covenant to become dead to the world, to sacrifice their justified human nature, but fail to perform the sacrifices covenanted. This 'goat' does not represent 'those who draw back unto perdition,' those who return as the sow to wallowing in the mire of sin (Heb. 10:39; 2 Pet. 2:22), but a class which seeks to avoid sin, to live morally, and to honor the Lord; yet seeking also the honor and favor of the world, they are held back from the performance of the sacrifice of earthly rights in the service of the Lord and his cause.

"This 'scape-goat' **class** has existed throughout this entire Gospel age. The one goat and the work done with it, at the close of the 'Day of Atonement,' was representative in a general sense of each individual of that company during the age, though it specially represented the members of this class living in the end of the age of sacrifice. Let us look first at God's proposed dealing with members of this company who will be living when the work of sin-offering is complete — the last members of the 'scape-goat' company — and then see how the type will apply also to the preceding members of the same class." *T68-72*

See also **TYPES: Levites — The great company**

LEV. 16:21: "And Aaron shall lay both his hands upon the head of

the live goat, and confess over him all the iniquities of the children of Israel, and all their transgressions in all their sins, putting them upon the head of the goat, and shall send *him* away by the hand of a fit man into the wilderness..."

SHEKINAH GLORY

"**Jehovah...Light of the universe**" *T124,125*

T124,125 for quote see **TYPES: Ark of the Covenant; TYPES: Mercy Seat**.

PSA. 80:1: "...thou that dwellest *between* the cherubims, shine forth."

1 JOHN 1:5: "...God is light, and in him is no darkness at all."

SHEW BREAD

"**Bread of presence**" — of fellowship with God. *R2670:3*

"The apostle's words carry our attention to Israel's Tabernacle in the wilderness, and the spiritual things which it illustrated. The Court, entered through the gate, signified the state or condition of the justified, who must pass the Altar representing Christ's sacrifice for sins; secondly, approach the Laver of water for cleansing from defilements; and then be ready to pass under the first Vail into the apartment of the Tabernacle called 'The Holy.' This 'Holy' apartment represented the state or condition of God's *consecrated* people (typified by Israel's priests) while yet in the flesh, and had its Golden Candlestick for their enlightenment, its table of Shewbread, representing their privilege of fellowship with God, — drawing near to him in prayer, praise and communion." *R2670:3*

"**Spiritual food**" *T16; T20; T22*

"Within the Tabernacle, in the first apartment, the 'Holy,' on the right (north), stood the Table of 'Shewbread' — a wooden table overlaid with gold; and upon it were placed twelve cakes of unleavened bread in two piles, with frankincense on top of each pile. (Lev. 24:6,7) This bread was proper for the priests only to eat: it was holy, and was renewed every seventh or Sabbath day." *T16*

T20 see **TYPES: Tabernacle in the Wilderness**.

T22 see **TYPES: Vails of Tabernacle**.

EXOD. 25:30: "And thou shalt set upon the table showbread before me alway."

SODOM AND GOMORRAH

"**Sin**" *R2858:5*

"Supposing Sodom to represent sin, the lesson would be that all finding themselves in an evil condition of life, even tho, like Lot, their hearts be out of sympathy with it, should and must flee from it if they would avert the consequences. They must flee in haste and tarry not in all the plain. Yet it is a comforting thought that as the angel laid hold of the hands of Lot and his daughters and helped, urged and encouraged them to flee, so the Lord's providences will take hold of every one who shall seek to escape from sin, and will so cooperate with their good wills in the matter that they shall eventually be fully rescued from it." *R2858:5*

"Their destruction" — type of "second death" *R2858:4*

"Jude tells us that the destruction of Sodom was intended by the Lord to be an illustration of the fate of the wicked. But it certainly does not illustrate what that fate is generally supposed to be: it does not illustrate perpetual fire, with the Sodomites continually burning and never destroyed, and with demons poking the fires and torturing the victims. Nothing of the kind. The 'eternal fires' which God intends for the wicked, and which he illustrated in the case of the Sodomites, signify fires, whose work of destruction is complete and everlasting. It is divine vengeance or retribution against sinners — 'they shall be punished with an everlasting destruction' (2 Thes. 1:9), beyond all hope of recovery. The 'lake of fire' of Revelation, and the Dead Sea of Sodom represent in *symbol* the second death — extinction, from which there is no hope by a resurrection or otherwise. None will go into the second death on account of ignorance. All who enter it will do so because of willful, deliberate participation in sin, or because of sympathy with it." *R2858:4*

GEN. 19:24,25: "Then the LORD rained upon Sodom and upon Gomorrah brimstone and fire from the LORD out of heaven; And he overthrew those cities, and all the plain, and all the inhabitants of the cities, and that which grew upon the ground."

JUDE 7: *Diag.*: "...Sodom and Gomorrah...are placed as an Example, enduring the retributive justice of an aionian Fire."

SOLOMON

Solomon's reign represented [the reign of Christ and] the church glorified and at rest from all...enemies." *R3259:4,5,6*

"The succeeding verses of the lesson mingle and commingle the natural blessings upon David and his literal posterity and upon natural Israel, with the still greater blessings that are to uplift all who will come into covenant relationship with God through the antitypical Son of David, the glorified Christ and his Millennial kingdom. [2 Sam. 7] Vs. 10 undoubtedly had a measurable fulfillment in literal Israel, that for several hundred years they remained in their own land, under their own covenant — an experience very different from that preceding under the rule of the Judges. But the time when the Lord will plant them, and when they shall be moved no more and afflicted no more by the wicked, must apply to the grander restoration of the future, when, as he has promised, he will gather them out of all nations and peoples whither they are now scattered, and bring them into their own land. This later prophecy is in full agreement with the one made to David by Nathan. Then, as another Scripture declares, the Lord will restore to

Israel her lawgivers as at the first, and her judges as at the beginning. Then it will be, too, that the house of David will be firmly established in great David's greater Son, the glorified Christ. Here the promises to the natural and to the spiritual seeds are more or less intertwined, just as they were in the Abrahamic promise. The seed of Abraham was both an earthly seed and a heavenly, as the sand of the sea and as the stars of heaven — the natural seed and the spiritual — and as the Apostle declares, the promise is sure to both of these, its proper part to each. — Rom. 4:16. Compare Rom. 11:25-32.

"David's throne was perpetual through the line of Solomon down to Zedekiah, and when the Lord rent the kingdom from the hands of Zedekiah he did not give it to another family, but proclaimed an interregnum — a suspension of David's kingdom, which might not go to another. The language of the prophecy concerning Zedekiah is, 'O thou profane and wicked prince, whose time is come that iniquity should have an end: remove the diadem, take off the crown; this shall no more be the same. I will overturn, overturn, overturn it, until he come whose right it is, and I will give it unto him.' (Ezek. 21:27) There has been no King of Israel, from

Zedekiah's day to the present — the overturning of the kingdom has been very thorough. The kings who reigned over Israel at the time of the first advent, and previously and subsequently, were not Israelitish kings, nor of Israelitish birth, but were appointees of Gentile governments, which, from Zedekiah's day to the present, have trodden under foot the sacred land. The fulfillment of this promise to David is nevertheless secure, sure as the word and oath of the Almighty; and we who were by nature Gentiles, but who have been betrothed to Abraham's great Son and David's great Son and Lord, are still looking forward to and praying and patiently waiting for the fulfillment of this promise, saying, 'Thy kingdom come; thy will be done on earth as it is in heaven' — even as our Lord taught us to do. As soon as this antitypical David, 'Beloved,' shall have assumed the reigns of government at the time appointed of the Father, he, as the antitype also of Solomon, on the natural plane, will build the Lord's house, and his throne shall be established forever — for it is the throne of the kingdom of Jehovah: and although in its mediatorial sense it will terminate at the close of the Millennial age, yet in a still higher sense it will continue to all eternity, because David's Son and Lord has been associated with the Father in his throne, and his bride shall be with him where he is, and share his glory, according to his promise." *R3259:4,5,6*

TABERNACLE (IN THE WILDERNESS)

"Two compartments — the two conditions of all who undergo a change of nature from human to spiritual" *T19-T21; T22*

See also **SYMBOLS: Door; SYMBOLS: Gate**

"**'The Tabernacle'** building, with its two parts, represented the two **conditions** of all who undergo a change of nature from human to spiritual. The first apartment, the 'Holy,' represented the **condition** of all those who (as Levites — justified believers) have consecrated their human nature to death, that they might become partakers of the divine nature (2 Pet. 1:4), having been begotten of the Spirit. Its second apartment, the 'Holy of Holies,' beyond the 'Veil' — death — represented the **condition** of the faithful 'overcomers' who will attain to the divine nature. These, after having completed their consecration in death, will be fully changed, **born** from the dead in the First Resurrection, to the divine nature and organism. No human being, be he ever so full of faith, be he washed from every sin, and in God's sight justified freely from all things and reckoned perfect, can have any place or privilege in the spiritual things represented in the interiors of the Tabernacle and Temple. He cannot even look into spiritual things, in the sense of appreciating them. But, during the Gospel age, such are 'called' to consecrate and sacrifice their human nature in God's service, and to inherit instead the spiritual nature — as members of the Body of Christ. 'The natural man receiveth not the things of the Spirit...neither can he know them, because they are spiritually discerned.' 1 Cor. 2:14

"The fact that all things in the Tabernacle were made of **gold**, representative of the divine nature, implies that it represented the condition of such only as are called to the divine nature. Only those of the Levites who were consecrated to the work of sacrificing (the Priests) had access to the Tabernacle; so only those of the household of faith who are consecrated to sacrifice, even unto death, enter the divine conditions represented in the Tabernacle.

"The 'Court,' the justified human condition... The **'Holy'** represented the present condition of those begotten...[See **SYMBOLS: Door; Gate**]

"The **'Most Holy'** represented the perfected condition of those new creatures who, faithful unto death, gain the great prize of our high calling through a share in the first resurrection. (Rev. 20:6) Then, beyond both veils — the fleshly mind and the fleshly body — they will possess glorious spiritual bodies as well as spiritual minds. They will be like their Leader and Forerunner beyond the veil, who, having entered as our Redeemer, hath consecrated **for**

us this new and living way — or new way of life. Heb. 10:20; 1 John 3:2

"The spiritual-minded creature in the 'Holy' by **faith** looks forward through the rent 'Veil' into the 'Most Holy,' catching glimpses of the glory, honor and immortality beyond the flesh; which hope is as an anchor to the soul, sure and steadfast, entering into that which is beyond the veil. Heb. 6:19; 10:20

"We see, then, that justification by faith, our first step toward holiness, brings us into a condition of 'peace with God through our Lord Jesus Christ.' (Rom. 5:1) When our sins are forgiven, or reckonedly covered with Christ's righteousness, we are a step nearer to God, but still **human** — in the 'Court.' If we would attain the prize of the high calling which is of God **in Christ Jesus**, and enter through the 'Holy' into the 'Most Holy,' we must follow 'In the Footsteps of Jesus,' our Leader and Head — 'the High Priest of **our profession**' [i.e., the High Priest of our order of priesthood] the 'royal priesthood.' Heb. 3:1; 1 Peter 2:9" *T19-21*

T22:2,3 See **TYPES: Vails of Tabernacle**

EXOD. 25-27 Chapters

EXOD. 26:30,31,33: "And thou shalt rear up the tabernacle according to the fashion thereof which was showed thee in the mount. And thou shalt make a veil....and the veil shall divide unto you between the holy...and the most holy."

TABERNACLE OF DAVID

"...the re-establishment of royalty and dominion in the hands of some of David's posterity. **Christ Jesus** is the promised scion...and when **his authority** begins to be **established**, that will be the beginning of the raising up...of the...tabernacle of David...." *C257*

"But let us guard against a too common mistake, made by many who see something of these promises, of supposing that the statements should be taken literally, which say: 'After this I will return, and will build again the tabernacle [house] of David, which is fallen down; and I will build again the ruins thereof, and I will set it up.' 'And the Lord shall give him the throne of his father David.' 'And David, my servant, shall be king over them.' (Acts 15:16; Luke 1:32; Ezek. 37:24) While the literalness of the promised return of Israel to their own land, and the rebuilding of Jerusalem upon her own heaps, cannot be questioned, we may be equally confident that by the **house** and **throne** of David, not the literal stones, timbers, etc., are meant. The re-establishment of the house of David refers to the re-establishment of royalty and dominion in the hands of some of David's posterity. Christ Jesus is the promised scion of David's house, and the heir of his throne; and when

his authority begins to be established, that will be the beginning of the raising up (permanent establishment) of the formerly temporary house or tabernacle of David, which was overthrown, and which

for many centuries has lain in the dust. So, likewise, the 'throne of David,' upon which Messiah will sit, refers not to the wood and gold and ivory bench upon which David sat, but to the dignity, power and authority of office which he exercised. That authority, office or throne, which David occupied for some years, is to be filled on a much grander scale by Jehovah's Anointed, our Lord Jesus." *C257*

AMOS 9:11,12: "In that day will I raise up the tabernacle of David...That they may possess the remnant of Edom...."

1 CHRON. 15:1: "...prepared a place for the ark of God, and pitched for it a tent."

TABLE OF SHEW-BREAD

"**The Church as a whole**" *T115*

"**The Golden Table**, which in the 'Holy' bore the shewbread, represented the Church as a whole, including Jesus and the apostles — all the sanctified in Christ who serve in 'holding forth the word of life.' (Phil. 2:16) The great work of the true Church during this age has been to feed, strengthen and enlighten all who enter the covenanted spiritual condition. The Bride of Christ is to make herself ready. (Rev. 19:7) The witnessing to the world during the present age is quite secondary and incidental. The full blessing of the world will follow in God's 'due time,' after the Gospel age (the antitypical Day of Atonement with its sin-offerings) is ended." *T115*

PHIL. 2:15,16: "That ye may be...the sons of God...holding forth the Word of life."

TABLES OF STONE

"Two covenants" (Law and New covenants) *D631*; (also "**the original perfection of mankind**...the **first tables** which...were broken....the **second tablets**...also the second writing...the engraving of **the law of God in the very hearts** and institutions of mankind...." *R2196:4*

"As the first tables of the Law that were broken represented the failure of the Law Covenant by reason of the 'weakness of the flesh,' so the second tables represent the New Covenant, of which Christ is the Mediator, and which will not fail. This New Covenant will become operative toward the **world** after the 'Body of Christ' is complete. Meantime the electing of the members of the Great Prophet like unto Moses continues. (Acts 3:23) Now note the fact that it was when the second tables of the Law (representing the New Covenant) were delivered, that Moses was **changed** so that thereafter he wore a veil before the people, because his face shone." *D631*

"The original perfection of mankind (father Adam) and the fall were symbolically represented in the first tables of the law which God himself prepared and wrote, but which were broken, because of sin; they also represented the Law Covenant and how it was a failure, broken so far as the people of Israel were concerned. The hewing out of the new tables of stone, whereon to rewrite the law of God, symbolized the preparation of mankind, through the justification accomplished by the sacrifice of Christ. And not only was the preparation of the second tablets the work of Moses (type of Christ, Head and body), but also the second writing of the law on those tables was the work of Moses and typified the work of Christ (Head and body) during the Millennial age — the engraving of the law of God in the very hearts and constitutions of all of mankind, willing to submit to his ways." *R2196:4*

EXOD. 32:11,19; 34:28: "And Moses besought the LORD his God, and said, LORD, why doth thy wrath wax hot against thy people, which thou hast brought forth out of the land of Egypt with great power, and with a mighty hand?....And it came to pass, as soon as he came nigh unto the camp, that he saw the calf, and the dancing: and Moses' anger waxed hot, and he cast the tables out of his hands, and brake them beneath the mount. And he was there with the LORD forty days and forty nights; he did neither eat bread, nor drink water. And he wrote upon the tables the words of the covenant, the ten commandments."

DEUT. 9:11: "the LORD gave me the two tables of stone, even the tables of the covenant."

EXOD. 32:19;34:1,28: "and he cast the tables out of his hands, and brake them beneath the mount....And the LORD said...'Hew thee two tables of stone like the first....' And he wrote upon the tables the words of the covenant."

TEMPLE

The church in glory *F73*

"This pyramid picture is closely related to the temple picture; and we are assured that the temple built by Solomon was typical of this greater spiritual temple which, with still greater wisdom, God is building. (1 Pet. 2:5) We are shown that, as in the type every beam and every stone was originally marked out for its place and shaped to fit its place, so with the Church of the New Creation — its members will each be fitted and prepared for his place. As this permitted the construction of the typical temple 'without the sound of a hammer,' without jar or commotion or noise, so under the divine Architect the Church complete as the New Creation will, in the end of this Gospel age, be born from the dead as the Lord, the Head of this temple, was the 'firstborn from the dead' in his resurrection at the beginning of the age. 1 Kings 6:7" *F73*

"The Temple of the Holy Spirit," now, [individually and collectively] *R3631:5,6; 3649:5,6; 3851:4,5,6*

"Daniel's determination not to be defiled with certain food reminds us of the words of the Apostle, 'If any man defile the Temple of God, him will God destroy.' In one sense of the word the Temple of God is the church, which is now in process of construction as our Lord shapes, fashions and polishes the living stones for places therein. Whoever introduces into the church that which is defiling, whoever does injury to any of its living stones, is an evil doer in the highest sense of that term, in that he is defiling, injuring the body of Christ, which is the church. If all could realize this how careful all would be in respect to the bringing in of different errors and false doctrines, misinterpretations of Scripture, etc. How careful each then would be to see that he speaks the things which he does know, that he would confine himself to the things written in the Word of the Lord. In proportion as those who are right at heart see this they will be careful that they do nothing to defile or stumble or injure any of the Lord's little ones.

"In another phase of the subject the Apostle speaks of each body, each member of the new creation, as a temple, a tabernacle, in which for the time being the holy Spirit dwells. From this standpoint we should be careful to have our bodies as clean, as pure, as holy as possible. We cannot transform our flesh to make perfect that which was born in sin and shapen in iniquity, but in proportion as it has the control of us, in that same proportion there will be gradual transforming power of the holy Spirit to work in us to will and to do God's good pleasure. Such should remember the

instruction of the apostle to all of this class, that they should purge out the old leaven of malice, hatred, envy, etc., and again his admonition that we cleanse ourselves from all filthiness of the flesh and of the spirit — perfecting holiness in the fear of the Lord. — 2 Cor. 7:1.

"We firmly believe that all who receive that grace of God into good and honest hearts will surely experience a cleansing work — that the truth will tend to make them cleaner physically as well as mentally. We are not advocating outward cleanliness and godliness, but an inward cleanliness which will do all it can to accomplish an outward cleansing...." *R3631:5,6*

"We find the same thought abroad today, troubling those who have come out of Babylon, and who are wishing to build the true Temple of God referred to in our golden text — the holy temple, antitypical temple, 'which temple ye are.' The foundations of our temple were laid at Pentecost, under apparently very unfavorable conditions from the world's standpoint — a dead leader, and a handful of a few hundred disciples scattered and considerably discouraged. Nevertheless, those who recognize the Lord's hand in the

matter see things differently: with the eye of faith they discern in Jesus the great rock of our Salvation typified by the 'rock of the dome,' the top of Mt. Zion, on which the altar of sacrifice stood. The same eye of faith now discerns that the twelve apostles are the foundation stones of divine appointment, built upon the rock Christ Jesus; and that upon the ministries of those appointed representatives of Christ, a glorious church, a glorious temple of the Lord is being erected. Those who then had the eye of faith shouted for joy, all who since possess the same spiritual vision rejoice in the greater work which the Lord is accomplishing, as they see the preparation now of the 'living stones,' which, by and by, in the first resurrection, shall be brought together complete as the glorious temple of God, in and through which all the families of the earth may have intercourse with God to their blessing...." *R3649:5,6*

"Cleansing the Temple"

"We are still in the time when spiritual Israelites are deciding for or against Messiah — accepting him as their present Lord and King, or rejecting him; shouting in their hearts 'Hosannah to the son of David, who cometh in the name of the Lord,' or, on the other hand, amongst those who become embittered as they hear the message. Those who receive him will surely have an antitype of the blessed experiences which came to the Lord's true people at Pentecost. The antitype will be immensely greater and grander than the type, nothing short of full change from the corruptible to incorruptible conditions in the first resurrection. The others, unready of heart to receive the Lord and the blessings, will have their share in the great time of trouble with which this age will terminate and which will prepare mankind in general for the glorious Millennial reign of righteousness promptly to be ushered in.

"As soon as Jesus had sentenced the Jewish nation to destruction, saying, 'Your house is left unto you desolate: ye shall see me no more until that day when ye shall say, Blessed is he that cometh in the name of the Lord,' he ceased all efforts in connection with that nation — their trial was ended as a nation, but still he sought the individuals who were of the proper condition of heart. He proceeded to the Temple and cleansed it of its merchants and money changers, driving them out with a scourge of cords. He was backed by the authority which belonged to any Jew in any station of life, but was additionally backed by his own kingly presence and the multitude which thronged about him, which would have been ready to support him with physical force: all this, of course, aside from his heavenly power.

"The Antitypical Temple Cleansing"

"To our understanding the chief force of this feature was its typical one — illustrative of a great truth now applicable to

spiritual Israel. The Temple built by Herod was only the type. The true temple is the church of the living God. This church temple may be considered from two standpoints: (1) The church of glory in the future, of which the Lord's faithful ones of the present time are the living stones, now being chiseled, prepared. (2) The church in its present condition of humiliation, imperfection, more properly the tabernacle in which the Lord dwells. As there were strict regulations governing the worship and worshipers in the types, so there are positive regulations in God's Word for those who constitute the priests and Levites doing the services of the tabernacle in the present time, preparatory to the establishment of the glorious temple of the future.

"The Scriptures clearly indicate that in the end of this Gospel age God purposes a cleansing of his sanctuary, his temple — Christendom....He will therefore present the truth in such a form that it will be a blessing to the proper class, and separate all of the improper class by a measure of odium in connection with the King and his faithful. At the present time the Lord, the truth, with a whip of small cords, is injurious only to those who are in the temple for purposes of merchandise, and not injurious to others. There are money changers today in the nominal temple who are robbing the people by accepting salaries for that which is not food, who, while professing to teach the way of the Lord and receiving honor of men and other emoluments, are really misrepresenting the Lord and his truth. All such will be separated from the true Temple class, all such will be angry with the Master and his followers, as were the merchants and money-changers in the typical Temple, and they will have their sympathizers also, as they did." *R3851:4,5,6*

Nominal Church *R3259:1*

"The spirit of David in this matter — his desire to honor the Lord and to build him a great house or temple — finds its parallel in the heart sentiments of every true Christian. We do not refer to those who merely take pleasure in erecting grand temples of stone, but specially to those whose ambition it would be to organize the church of the present time — to glory in its grandeur and completeness of organization and function and service for the Lord. Those not in the right condition of heart, heady, self-willed, confident that their good intentions must be pleasing to the Lord, have proceeded to build various structures, each claiming his to be the temple of the Lord. As they have neither sought nor received divine instruction on the subject, but are following their own ideals, there is necessarily considerable diversity in these buildings, each seeming to its builders to be the right, proper and appropriate temple of God. These temples now number hundreds, the larger and more imposing ones being the

Roman Catholic temple, The Greek Catholic temple, the church of England temple, the Methodist temple, the Lutheran temple, the Presbyterian temple, the Baptist temple, the Congregational temple, etc., etc." *R3259:1*

Cleansing *R3463:2,4*

"Spiritual lessons for the church may be drawn from this narrative. The antitype would not be the cleansing and care of church buildings, chapels, cathedrals, etc., although it is certainly proper enough that any building used for the Lord's worship should be respected and kept in decency and in order. The antitype of the Jewish temple is the spiritual temple of which the Apostle speaking says, 'Whose temple ye are if so be that the Spirit of God dwelleth in you.' Applying the lesson in an individual manner it would mean that if any of the Lord's people have in any measure fallen into worldliness, sin, the worship of Mammon — idolatry — the neglect of the worship and service of the true God in any measure or degree, there should be first of all a cleansing to the best of our ability, a reformation, and secondly an appeal to God for at-one-ment with him for forgiveness of sins. It is not necessary that we should offer bullocks, goats and rams, but it is necessary that in such a reformation, such a preparation for divine forgiveness, we should come before the Lord in the merit of the great sacrifice for sins which he has appointed and which already has been made — 'once for all.'

"Applying the lesson on a larger scale to the church as a whole, we look back in history and see the time that the temple of God was completely given over to idolatry, when the 'continual sacrifice' was set aside, and masses, fresh sacrifices, 'abominations' in God's sight were substituted, and even the form of godliness was almost obsolete and supplanted by heathen festivals and carnivals and image worship, wholly misunderstanding the divinely arranged faith worship. In the Lord's providence a great reformation came in the days of Luther, Melancthon and others, and this cleansing of the Lord's temple is still in progress, because, alas, all of the debris of antichrist has not been removed." *R3463:2,4*

C95-120 See also **Index: Mass, the; SYMBOLS: Horn — King**.

God and the Lamb *R2834:1*

"This is the Sun of Righteousness to which our Lord referred in Matt. 13:43, 'Then shall the righteous shine forth as the sun in the kingdom of their Father' — our Lord Jesus, the head of the church, of course being included. The same Sun of Righteousness is mentioned by the Prophet, saying, 'The Sun of Righteousness shall arise with healing in his beams.' (Mal.4:2) Nevertheless, while so filled with the Lord's glory we are not to lose sight of the fact which

the Apostle impresses upon us saying that Christ is the Head of the church, even as the Father is the Head of Christ Jesus. Hence the Lord Almighty and the Lamb will always be an inner Temple in this great Temple, which God has provided for the world's blessing during restitution times...[Rev. 21] Verse 22." *R2834:1*

1 COR. 3:16: "Know ye not that ye are the temple of God, and *that* the Spirit of God dwelleth in you?"

2 COR. 6:16: "...ye are the temple of the living God...."

REV. 11:19: "And the temple of God was opened in heaven...."

VAILS OF TABERNACLE

First — Will of the flesh *T20; T22*

T20 See **SYMBOLS: Door**

"Renouncing our justified human wills, and all our human aspirations and hopes, we pass the first veil, or veil of human-mindedness — counting the human will as dead; henceforth consulting not it, but the will of God only. We now find ourselves as **'new creatures' in the 'Holy'** — in the first of the 'Heavenlies' or Holies (Eph. 2:6 — *Diaglott*), and begin to be enlightened by the 'Golden Candlestick' (God's Word) respecting spiritual things — 'the deep things of God,' and to be refreshed and strengthened daily with the truth, as represented in the 'shew-bread,' lawful for only the Priests to eat. (Matt. 12:4) And thus enlightened and strengthened, we should daily offer up sacrifices at the 'Golden Altar,' acceptable to God through Jesus Christ — a sweet perfume to our Father. 1 Pet. 2:5* [*The word **spiritual** in this text is omitted by the oldest Greek MS, the Sinaitic, with evident propriety. Not spiritual but human rights, privileges, life, etc., are sacrificed.] Thus all the saints, all the consecrated, are in a 'heavenly' or 'holy' **condition now** — 'seated [at rest and in communion] with Christ in [the first of these] heavenly places,' but not yet entered into the 'holiest of all.' No, another veil must first be passed. As the passing of the preceding veil represented the **death** of the HUMAN **will**, so the passing of the second veil represented the death of the HUMAN **body**; and both are requisite to complete our '**sacrifice**.' Both fleshly mind and fleshly body must be left behind before we can enter into the 'holiest of all' — perfected as partakers of the divine nature and its spirit conditions: for flesh and blood cannot inherit the Kingdom of God. (1 Cor. 15:50) Compare John 3:5,8,13." *T22*

Christ...the "Door" *T20* ***See Above***

Second — Body of flesh *T22;T66*

T22 — **See Above**

"The passing of the second 'Veil' means to the Body what it meant to the Head: it means, in the presenting of the blood of the goat, what it meant in the presenting of the blood of the bullock. The body of the Priest passing through the second 'Veil,' bearing the blood of the goat, represented the passing of the Body of Christ entirely beyond human conditions into the perfection of the divine nature, when we shall be like Christ Jesus, who is now 'the express image of the Father's person.' O blessed hope! 'I shall be satisfied when I awake in thy likeness,' was spoken prophetically for Jesus; and how sublime the promise that 'we shall be like him!' Heb. 1:3; Rom. 8:29; Psa. 17:15; 1 John 3:2" *T66*

ROM. 6:4-6: "...we are buried with him in baptism into death: that like as Christ was raised up from the dead by the glory of the Father, even so we also should walk in newness of life. For if we have been planted together in the likeness of his death we shall be also *in the likeness* of *his* resurrection: Knowing this, that our old man is crucified with *him* that the body of sin might be destroyed, that henceforth we should not serve sin."

HEB. 10:20: "By a new and living way, which he hath consecrated for us, through the veil, that is to say, his flesh..."

VAIL OF MOSES

See **SYMBOLS: Veil**.

ZERUBBABEL

See **SYMBOLS: Zerubbabel**

ZION

Spiritual Israel *T33*

"Concerning the natural seed of Abraham, and as proving that they will not be members of the Priest who will do the blessing, the Apostle says: 'As concerning the Gospel [the spiritual part of the Covenant] they [the literal seed] are enemies for your sakes; but as touching the election they are [still] beloved for the fathers' sakes.

For the gifts and callings of God are not things he will repent of. For this is **my Covenant** TO THEM — There shall come out of Zion [the spiritual Church] the Deliverer [this great High Priest, the Servant of the Covenant — Jesus, the Head, and the "little flock," his Body], and shall turn away ungodliness from Jacob.' They are to be **first** blessed by the spiritual or true Seed and may later become associate laborers. Rom. 11:26-29" *T33*

Glorified Church *A297*

"'Behold, I create Jerusalem a rejoicing, and her people a joy.' 'Rejoice ye with Jerusalem and be glad with her,...that ye may be delighted with the abundance of her glory; for saith the Lord, Behold, I will extend peace to her like a

river, and the glory of the Gentiles like a flowing stream.' 'At that time they shall call Jerusalem the throne of the Lord, and all nations shall be gathered unto it.' 'And many people shall go and say, Come ye, and let us go up to the mountain [kingdom] of the Lord, to the house of the God of Jacob; and he will teach us of his ways, and we will walk in his paths; for out of Zion [the spiritual phase] shall go forth the law, and the word of the Lord from Jerusalem' — the earthly phase. Isa. 52:9; 65:18; 66:10-12; Jer. 3:17; Isa. 2:3" *A297*

Nominal Church *R1648:6*

"The symbolic travail, in the above prophecy, is a reference to the great time of trouble — the travail that is to come upon the nominal Gospel church, great 'Babylon,' from which some are to be counted worthy to escape. (Luke 21:36) This is indicated by the preceding verse which locates the time of this prophecy as synchronous with that wherein is heard 'a voice of noise [confusion] from the city' (Babylon), and 'a voice [of truth and warning] from the temple' (the elect little flock of consecrated and faithful ones), and 'a voice of Jehovah that rendereth recompense to his enemies' — in the great time of trouble." *R1648:6*

ROM. 11:26: "...There shall come out of Sion the Deliverer...."

ISA. 2:3: "And many people shall go and say, Come ye, and let us go up to the mountain of the LORD, to the house of the God of Jacob; and he will teach us of his ways, and we will walk in his paths: for out of Zion shall go forth the law, and the word of the LORD from Jerusalem."

MICAH 4:2: "And many nations shall come, and say, Come, and let us go up to the mountain of the LORD, and to the house of the God of Jacob; and he will teach us of his ways, and we will walk in his paths: for the law shall go forth of Zion, and the word of the LORD from Jerusalem."

ISA. 66:8: "...as soon as Zion travailed, she brought forth her children."

See also Index: **Tabernacle Types and Shadows**

UNITY OF THE FAITH

EPH. 4:11-13: "...he gave some, apostles; and some, prophets; and some, evangelists; and some, pastors and teachers; For the perfecting of the saints, for the work of the ministry, for the edifying of the body of Christ: Till we all...[attain unto]...**the unity of the faith**, and of the knowledge of the Son of God,...[unto a full-grown man (*Diag.*)],...unto the measure of the stature of the fulness of Christ..."

OUR AIM

"...the endeavor of each...must be to do everything in his power for the upbuilding of the body, for the strengthening of the members and for their perfection in the graces of the Spirit — 'till we all come to the unity of the faith'" *F239*

LIBERTY IN UNITY

"Unity of the faith is desirable; it is to be striven for....along the lines of 'the faith once delivered unto the saints' in its purity and simplicity, and with full liberty to each member to take different views of minor points, and with no instruction whatever in respect to human speculations, theories, etc." *F240*

FUNDAMENTALS

"The Scriptural idea of unity is upon the foundation principles of the Gospel. (1) Our redemption through the precious blood, and our justification by faith therein. (2) Our consecration, sanctification, setting apart to the Lord, the Truth, and their service — including the service of the brethren. (3) Aside from these essentials, upon which unity must be demanded, there can be no Scriptural fellowship — upon every other point fullest liberty is to be accorded, with, however, a desire to see, and to help others to see, the divine plan in its every feature and detail. Thus each member of the body of Christ, maintaining his own personal liberty, is so thoroughly devoted to the Head and to all the members that it will be his pleasure to lay down all, even life itself, on their behalf." *F240*

DIVISIONS

"...it is the Lord's pleasure that there be no schism in the body — no splits, no divisions. With human methods divisions are unavoidable — except as in Papacy's period of triumph, when the nominal system became powerful and used drastic methods of persecution in dealing with all not fully in accord with itself. That...was a **unity of force**,...not...of...heart. Those whom the Son makes free can never participate heartily in such unions, in which personal liberty is...destroyed. The difficulty with the Protestant

denominations is not that they are too liberal and...have separated into many fragments, but...that they still have much of the spirit...without...the power...for... suppressing liberty of thought....instead of having too many...splits...the real need...is **still more liberty** until each...member shall stand free...of all...bonds, creeds,...etc....With each... Christian standing fast in the liberty wherewith he was made free...(Gal. 5:1; John 8:32), and each...united...to the Lord and to his Word... the...unity...inculcated would be discerned and all true children of God...drawn...and bound each to the other by the cords of love far more strongly than...in earthly systems and societies...." *F241*

2 COR. 5:14: "...the love of Christ **constraineth** us [**holds us**

together — *Young's Concordance*]"

UNIVERSAL SALVATION

(NOT UNIVERSALISM)

Universal Salvation is not **Universalism**. Universalism teaches that mankind will be coerced into righteousness against their free will.

"...the general salvation, which will come to every individual, consists of light from the true light, and an opportunity to choose life; and, as the great majority of the race is in the tomb, it will be necessary to bring them forth from the grave in order to testify to them the good tidings of a Savior; also..., a full release from the thraldom of sin, and the corruption of death, into the glorious liberty of children of God....if any, enlightened by the truth, and brought to a knowledge of the love of God, and restored (either actually or reckonedly to human perfection...'draw back' (Heb. 10:38,39), they...will be destroyed from among the people. (Acts 3:23) this is the second death." *A107*

"UNIVERSALISM — Pastor Russell's belief."

"*Question* (1909) — 1 — *Do you believe in universal salvation?*

"Answer. — I believe that the world was universally lost through Adam. I believe in a universal redemption, that Christ by the grace of God tasted death for every man.

"I believe in a universal opportunity, for this is the very reason that God gave His son to die for the world, and all, whoever will have it on God's terms of a perfect heart and love for God and man, may have it. Whoever will not have it on God's terms cannot have it at all, but will be destroyed from the presence of the people." *Q724*

A RANSOM FOR ALL

LUKE 2:10,11: "And the angel said unto them, Fear not: for, behold, I bring you good tidings of great joy, which shall be to **all people**. For unto you is born this day...Saviour..."

JOHN 1:8,9: "He...*was sent* to bear witness of that Light. *That* was the true Light, which lighteth **every man** that cometh into the world."

JOHN 3:16,17: "For God so loved the world, that he gave his only begotten Son, that **whosoever** believeth in him should not perish, but have everlasting life. For God sent not his Son into the world...; but that the **world** through him might be **saved**."

ROM. 5:18: "Therefore as by the offense of one *judgment came* upon all men to condemnation; even so by the righteousness of one *the free gift came* upon **all men** unto justification of life."

ROM. 8:21: "...the creature itself also shall be delivered from the bondage of corruption into the glorious liberty of the children of God."

1 COR. 15:22: "For as in Adam all die, even so in Christ shall all be made alive."

1 TIM. 2:4-6: [God (vs. 3)] "...will have **all men** to be saved, and to come unto the knowledge [accurate Knowledge (*Diag.*)] of the truth. For *there is* one God, and one mediator between God and men, the man Christ Jesus; Who gave himself a ransom for **all**, to be testified in due time."

HEB. 2:9: "...we see Jesus, who was made a little lower than the angels for the suffering of death, crowned with glory and honour; that he by the grace of God should taste death for **every man**."

1 TIM. 4:10: "...we trust in the living God, who is the Saviour of

all men, specially of those that believe."

NOT UNIVERSAL ETERNAL SALVATION

"Many...are inclined...to accept in some...form the doctrine of universal everlasting salvation." *E466*

"...a few take hold of it because of **faith in the ransom**....This class is very apt to...satisfy themselves with the following...reasoning: If God wills to have all men to be saved, that settles it; for...his will shall be done on earth as in heaven. Therefore, say they,...the ransom given **for all**...is to secure the will of God by securing the salvation of all....since God accepted the ransom-sacrifice of Jesus, he is bound **in justice** to save all the sinners, and to give back to them again the eternal life lost in Eden.

"The difficulty...is that...It takes hold of a few points of the Scripture, and neglects many....Besides, it only partially quotes, and misinterprets the Scriptures supposed particularly to support it." *E467*

"...[1 Tim. 4:10] indicates merely that it is the will of God that...mankind should be saved from the ignorance and blindness and degradation which has come upon the race as a result of Adam's sin. There is no reference here to an **everlasting salvation**, but merely to a recovery from the loss sustained through Adam....Adam did not lose **eternal** life, for although he had a perfect life, and was free from all elements of death, he was...placed in Eden **on probation**, to see whether, by obedience to God, he would develop a character in harmony with God, and so be accounted worthy of everlasting life. Consequently, when Adam and his race are redeemed from the curse of death, this redemption or salvation from the sentence of death does not entitle them to everlasting life, but merely entitles them to the favorable conditions of Father Adam, and to a fresh trial as to worthiness for everlasting life." *E468*

See also Index: **Second Death** for texts proving some will be eternally destroyed.

WALKING IN THE LIGHT

"'Light is sown for the righteous....' (Psa. 97:11) 'Thy Word *is* a lamp unto my feet, and a light unto my path.' (Psa.119:105) But it is only 'the path of the just' that 'is...the shining light, that shineth more and more unto the perfect day.' (Prov. 4:18)...the class referred to is 'justified by faith.' It is the privilege only of this class...to see not only the present unfoldings of God's plan, but also things to come....The path of each...is a shining one, yet the special application...is to the just (justified) as a class. Patriarchs, prophets, apostles, and saints of the past and present have walked in its increasing light; and the light will continue to increase...'unto the perfect day.'...the one continuous and increasing light is the Divine Record, illuminating as it becomes due." *A20*

FROM WHENCE THE LIGHT COMES TO US

"The Spirit of God, given to guide the church into truth, will take of the things written and show them unto us: but beyond what is written we need nothing, for the Holy Scriptures are able to make us wise unto salvation, through faith which is in Christ Jesus." *A21*

2 TIM. 3:15: "...the holy scriptures...are able to make thee wise unto salvation through faith which is in Christ Jesus."

HOW THE LIGHT INCREASED

"Looking into the past we find that then the light shone but feebly. Dim and obscure were the promises of past ages. The promises made to Abraham and others...gave but a vague idea of God's...gracious designs. As we reach the days of Jesus the light increases. The height of expectancy...had been that God would bring a deliverer to save Israel from their enemies, and to exalt them as the chief nation...in which position...God would use them...for the blessing of all....The offer...of heirship in the kingdom of God was so different, in the conditions demanded, from what they had expected, and the prospects of the class being selected ever attaining to the greatness promised were,... humanly considered, so improbable, that all but the few were...blinded....And their blindness and hostility to it were naturally increased when...the due time came for...making the invitation to share in the promised kingdom applicable to every creature under heaven who should by the exercise of faith be reckoned a child of faithful Abraham....

"But when the gospel...came to be understood... it was seen...that the blessings for the world were to be...enduring...and that...the Kingdom would be...composed of...a 'little flock'...from among both Jews and Gentiles to be exalted to spiritual nature and power. Hence we read..." *A21,22*

2 TIM. 1:10: "...our Saviour Jesus Christ... brought life and immortality to light through the gospel."

"And since Jesus' day yet more light shines, as he foretold....

JOHN 16:12,13: "I have yet many things to say unto you, but ye cannot bear them now. Howbeit when he, [masculine to agree with the noun ***parakletos***; the neuter article is used with ***pneuma***, spirit, in these verses], the Spirit of truth, is come, he* [it] will guide you into all truth:..and he* [it] will show you things to come."

*There is no pronoun in the Greek expressed here. See *Diaglott*. We have used the neuter, "It" because in English "It" is used for things of neuter gender. The masculine pronoun is used with nouns in that gender in Greek even though they refer to things of neuter

gender in English as in the first "He" in verse 13.

"A FALLING AWAY"

"...after the apostles fell asleep....the majority of the church began to neglect the lamp, and to look to human teachers....by degrees there came into existence a special class called 'the clergy,' who...were regarded...as the proper guides... aside from the Word of God. Thus in time... Papacy was developed by an undue respect for the teachings of fallible men and a neglect of the Word of the infallible God." *A22*

THE REFORMATION

"...a bold and blessed strike for liberty and the Bible was made, in...The Reformation. God raised up bold champions for his Word....These called attention to the fact that Papacy had laid aside the Bible and substituted the decrees and dogmas of the Church, and pointed out a few of its erroneous teachings and practices....Many faithful souls in the days of the Reformation walked in the light, so far as it was...shining. But since their day Protestants have made little progress, because, instead of walking in the light, they have halted around their favorite leaders, willing to see as much as they saw but nothing more. They set boundaries to their progress....hedging in, with the little truth they had, a great deal of error brought along from the 'mother' church. For the creeds thus formulated many years ago, the majority of Christians have a superstitious reverence, supposing that no more can be known of God's plans now than was known by the Reformers.

"This mistake has been an expensive one; for...there are special features of truth constantly becoming due, and of these Christians have been deprived by their creed fences....It was...truth in Noah's day...that a flood was coming....there are other dispensational truths constantly becoming due, of which, if walking in the light of the lamp,

we shall know; so, if we have all the light which was due several hundred years ago, and that only, we are measurably in darkness.

"God's Word is a great storehouse of food for hungry pilgrims on the shining pathway. There is milk for babes, and strong meat for those more developed." *A23,24*

1 PET. 2:2: "As newborn babes, desire the sincere milk of the word, that ye may grow thereby..."

HEB. 5:14: "But strong meat belongeth to them that are of full age, *even* those who by reason of use have their senses exercised to discern both good and evil."

"God's Word...contains food adapted to... different seasons and conditions; and Jesus said the faithful servant should bring forth meat **in due season**, for the household of faith...." *A24*

LUKE 12:42: "...Who then is that faithful and wise steward, whom *his* lord shall make ruler over his household to give *them their* portion of meat in due season?"

MATT. 13:52: "...every scribe *which is* instructed unto the kingdom of heaven is like unto a man *that is* an householder, which bringeth forth out of his treasure *things* new and old."

"It would be impossible to bring forth such things from any sectarian creed or storehouse. We might bring forth some things old and good....but nothing new. The truth contained...is so...mixed with error that its inherent beauty and real value are not discernible. The various creeds...clash; and as each claims a Bible basis, the confusion...and evident discord, are charged to God's Word...." *A24*

2 TIM. 3:16,17: "All scripture...given by inspiration of God, and...profitable for doctrine, for reproof, for correction, for instruction in righteousness: That the man of God may be perfect, [*Diag*., complete] thoroughly furnished unto all good works."

"Only this one storehouse contains an exhaustless supply of things both new and old — meat in due season for the household. Surely no one who believes...that 'the path of the just shineth more and more unto the perfect day' will claim that the perfect day came in Luther's time; and if not, we do well that we take heed to our lamp...

2 PET. 1:19: "'...as unto a light that shineth in a dark place, until the day dawn,....'

"...we must '**walk in the light**,'...else the light, which does not stop, will pass on and leave us in darkness. The difficulty with many is that they sit down, and do not follow on in the path of light....

"Perfection of knowledge is not a thing of the past, but of the future...and until we recognize this fact we are unprepared to appreciate and expect fresh unfoldings of our Father's plan. True, we still go back to the words of the prophets and apostles for all knowledge of the present and the future; not...because they always understood God's plans...better than we, but because God used them...**to communicate to us**, and to all the church throughout the Christian Age, truth relative to his plans, as fast as it becomes due.

1 PET. 1:10,12: "'Of which salvation the prophets have inquired and searched diligently, who prophesied of the grace *that should come* unto you:....Unto whom it was revealed, that not unto themselves, but unto us they did minister the things, which are now reported unto you by them that have preached the gospel unto you with the Holy Ghost sent down from heaven; which things the angels desire to look into.'

"This shows us clearly that neither the prophets nor the angels understood the meaning of the prophecies uttered....God told them that the truths covered up in their prophecies were not for themselves, but for us of the Christian Age.

"Peter...exhorts the Church to hope for still further...knowledge...

"...it was to be a gradual unfolding....we cannot suppose that the early church saw as deeply...into God's plan as it is possible to see today. It is evident, too, that the different apostles had different degrees of insight...though **all their writings** were guided and inspired of God, as truly as were the words of the prophets." *A25, 26*

"...we call to mind the last book of the Bible — Revelation....

"During the Christian Age, some of the saints sought to understand the church's future by examining this symbolic book....The book kept opening up...and in the days of the Reformation was an important aid to Luther in deciding that the Papacy...was indeed the 'Antichrist.'..." *A27*

See also Index: **Antichrist**

"Thus gradually God opens up his truth and reveals the exceeding riches of his grace; and consequently much more light is due now than at any previous time...." *A27, 28*

GOING OUT OF THE LIGHT

"The two classes to be thus cast out by the Lord are — first, those who have taken off the wedding garment of Christ's

righteousness...and secondly, the unfaithful servants who bury their consecrated talents in earthly things....

"...we can only expect that such will...claim that instead of going into the outer darkness of the world they are

following new light....Let the truth make the separation. Speak the truth in love, and stand firmly by it." *R1279:5,6*

1 JOHN 2:19: "They went out from us, but they were not of us; for if they had been of us, they would *no doubt* have continued with us: but *they went out*, that they might be made manifest that they were not all of us."

2 THES. 2:10,11: "...they received not the love of the truth, that they might be saved. And for this cause God shall send them strong delusion, that they should believe a lie:"

STANDING STEADFASTLY

1 JOHN 4:1: "**BELOVED**, believe not every spirit, but try the spirits whether they are of God: because many false prophets are gone out into the world."

"This does not signify, however, that we are to be 'blown about by every wind of doctrine.' [Eph. 4:14]. We should know in whom we have believed; and having been once convinced, we should not be easily turned aside from a properly grounded faith.

"If we are satisfied that we have been building upon the Rock Foundation furnished us in the divine Revelation, we should expect that any further light coming to us would not be contradictory to what we have found to be Scriptural and harmonious with the divine character." *R5913:5,6*

A WARNING

"**TRUE LIGHT** is in harmony with all previous **light**, or truth.

"We should scrutinize closely everything presented as **light** which shines only as it is able to extinguish previous **light**.

"Remember, too, that now ('the evil day') is not so much a time of attack and advance, as of watching and **withstanding** the attacks of error." *R46:3,6*

EPH. 6:13: "Wherefore take unto you the whole armour of God, that ye may be able to **withstand** in the **evil day**, and having done all, to **stand**."

See also index: **New Light**

SCRIPTURE INDEX

OLD TESTAMENT

GENESIS

1:1 53,59
1:2 53,132,152,157
1:2,3 53,132,152,157
1:6-8 53
1:9-11 53
1:14-16 53
1:19-31 . 53,54,55,100,176,209,233,283 284,325
1:20 53,283,284,325
1:20,21 53,283,284,325
1:21,24 53,283,284,325
1:24,25 53,283,284,325
1:26 54,233,283,284
1:26-28 . . 54,100,176,209,233,283,284
1:28 54,100,176,209,283,284
1:30 283,284,325
1:31 55,233,283,284
2:2 35,298
2:2,3 35,53,298
2:3 53,298
2:4 132,198
2:7 54,230,231,325
2:8 1
2:17 55,163,199,318
2:18 209
2:19 325
3:1-6 55,163,310,318
3:3 163,318
3:4 55,163,310,318
3:8 5
3:15 24
3:17-19 163,230,289,318
3:19 163,230,289,318
3:24 5
4:4 387
5:1,2 55
5:3,9,12,15,18,21,25,28 28
5:5 55
6:1,2,4,5 6,61,231,328
6:2 6,61,231,328
6:2,4 6,61,231,328
6:6 57
6:17 131
7:6 28
7:15 131
7:21,22 230
7:23 328
8:1 131
8:11 358,372
8:21 131
9:1-5 197,283,325
9:3 283
9:4 197,325
9:9,10 325
9:12,15,16 325
11:1-9 16,354
11:9 16,354
11:10,12,14,16,18,20,22 28
11:24,32 28
12:1-3 25,47,286
12:3 25,47,286
12:4 34,175
12:7 173
13:14 48,169,173,175,185
13:14,15 48,169,173,175,185
13:14-17 48,169,173,175,185
14:18-20 347
14:21 325,326
15:5 109
15:7 173
15:13 174,175
15:16 175,366
15:18 173
17:4 52,403
17:8 173,175,185
18:1,2 4,235
18:2 4,235
19:1-5 4
19:15 109
19:24,25 196,411
20:17 80
21:4 34
21:5 34
21:15,16 268,271
22:11 133
22:15 133,288
22:15-18 3,47,133,166,286,288
22:16-18 3,47,166,286,288
22:17 3,47,166,288
22:17,18 3,47,166,286,288
22:18 47,166,286,288
23:5,6 350
23:7,12 349
24: 109,133,271,393
24:2,4 393
24:7 133
24:55 271
24:61 109
25:1,2 403
25:26 34
25:30 70,395
25:30-34 70,395
26:4 286
26:35 131
27:26,29 349
27:34 109
28:12 5
28:14 3,286
28:20,22 347
30:8 350
31:29 350
32:9-12,24-30 166,274
32:24,26,28 166,274
35:10,12 173
35:18 109
36:1 70,167,395
36:6 325,326
37-47: Chapters 33,34,120,185,187
37:35 120
42:38 120
44:29 120
46:3 33,185,187
47:28 34
49:10 175,203,288,373
49:28 33,185,187
49:28,29,33 33,185,187

EXODUS

1:5 327
2: 21
3:13,14 57
3:20 363,393
4:3 375
5:4-23 359
6:3 14,350
6:6 354
7:5 363
7-11 Chapters 393
7:20,21 222
8:6 222
8:17 222
8:24 222
9:3,6 222
9:10 222
9:16 102
9:23,25 222
9:34 102
10:13,15 222
10:22,23 222
10:27 102
12:3,5-8,11-13,15 217
12:22 410
12:29 71,222
12:29-36 71,222,359
12:30-33 71,359
12:40 174,175
12:40-42,51 34,174,175
12:41 34,175
12:41-43,47,50,51 34,175
12:49 23,50,57
13:7 368
14:21-23,28 217,222
14:21-27 217,222
15:8 131
15:10 131
16:14,15 221
17:1,4-6 222
17:2 155
18:13-26 50
19:1-25 49,169,365
19:5,6 49,169,365
19:6 49,169,365
19:7,8 49,365
20:1-17 14,48,49,269,298,349,376
20:2-5 14,48,49,349
20:5 14,48,49,349
20:8-11 48,49,298,376
20:9 48,49,298,376
20:12 48,49,269
21:10 211
21:23 57,166,280
21:23,24 57,166,280
21:23,24-27 50,57,166,280
21:26,27 50
22:21,22 23,50,58
22:21-25 23,50,58
22:25 23,50,58
22:28 350
23:4,5 23,50,57
23:9 50,58
23:9,12 50,58
23:12 50
23:30,31 173
24:2 216
24:8 49
25-27: Chapters 5,356,368,371,375,389 391,411,412
25:18 5,391
25:22 389
25:30 411
25:31,37 391
26:30,31,33 412
26:32 375
27:1-4,6 356
27:11,17 375
27:20 368,371
27:20,21 368,371
28: . . . 45,132,337,356,373,395,396,404
28:1 404
28:3 132
28:4 395,396
28:6 356,373
28:36-39 337
28:39 337
28:41 45
29:7 142,386
29:9 197
29:24-28 142,197,340,386
29:33,35,36 142,197,340,386
29:38-42 340
30:8 368
30:23,24 142,372
30:23-25 142,372
30:24 142,372
30:30 45,142,371
30:31 371
31:2,3 132,143
31:3 132,143
31:6 132
31:13 305
32:1-8 396
32:11-13 274,413
32:11,19 274,413
32:19 413
33:19 102
33:20 291
34:1,28 413
34:6,7 58,199
34:7 58,199
34:15,16 210
34:28 413
34:30-33 379
34:35 379
35:8 371
35:30,31,32-34 132
35:35 132
37:7 5
39:24,25 337
39:29 337

LEVITICUS

1:3 340,390
1:3-9 340,390
2:13 373
3:14 361
4:27 326
6:30 129
8: 45,142,338,355,356,364,365,386,387 408
8:12 45,142,386
8:13 356
8:14,18,22 338,364
8:14-33 338,355,364,365,387,408
8:15 338,365,408
8:23,24 338,355
8:30 338,387
9: 186,341,363
9:2 341
9:3 341
9:4 341
9:22 363
9:23 186
10:1 109,221,386

10:1,2 109,221,386
10:1-7 109,221,371,386
10:7 371,386
11:10 326
11:13 272
14:4,49 410
15:10 285
16: . . 107,110,129,322,323,338,339,392 407,410
16:3-33 . 107,110,129,322,323,338,339 392,407,410
16:3,6,11-13 322,338
16:5,7-9 323,338,407
16:9 323,338,407
16:10 110,338
16:14 323,338,339,407
16:14,15 323,338,339,407
16:20-22 107,110,338,410
16:21 107,110,338,410
16:27 129,322,338
16:30,33 338,392
18:5 49
18:23 284
19:13,14,32,34 23,51,58,269
19:13,14,32-34 23,51,58,269
19:18 23,58
19:32 23,51,58,269
20:7,8 305
23:15,16 179,402
23:17 110
23:22 23
24:6,7 411
24:19-21 57
24:22 51,57
25: 23,32,33,58,288,402
25:8-10 23,32,33,58,288,402
25:9,10 23,32,33,58,288,402
25:9,13-23,27-30,36,37 . 32,58,288,402
25:10 23,32,33,288,402
26: 30,31,33,172,176,180
26:17,18,24,28 31,176
26:18,21,24,28 31,176
26:31-39 30,33,172,180
26:33-35 30,33,172,180
26:33-35,43 30,33,172,180
26:40-45 30,33,172
27:30-32 347

NUMBERS

3:6 110
3:12,13 404
4:46-48 404
5:4 216
10:11-13 29
11:2 216
11:16,17 51,133
11:17 51,133
11:27-29 23
12:13 80
13:3-26 29
13:31 110
14:13-20 58,274
14:18 58,274
14:21 286
14:33,34 31,53,79,357,358
14:34 31,53,79,357,358
15:38,39 356
16:18,19,27,32,35 220
16:30 120
16:33 120
17: 220,341,386
17:8 220,341,386
18:21,23,24,26-28 232,347
18:23,24,26,28 232,347
19: 340
20:7,8,10,11 222
20:18,20,21 70,395
21:6 396
21:9 220
22:22-31 234
23:10 326
26:52-56 58
31:19 326
31:28 230,325
32:8-13 29
33:3 29
34:1-13 173
35:11,15,30 326

DEUTERONOMY

1:1 173
1:7,8 173
1:15 23,51
1:15-17 23,51
2:4-9 174
2:18,19 174
3:8 174
3:12 174
3:13 174
3:20 174
3:25-29 174
5:1-3 48,186
5:5 49
5:6-21 48,49
6:4,5 14,23,58
6:5 14,23,58
6:6,7 266,270
6:7 266,270
6:16 155,343
7:3 210
7:6 172
8:2 29
8:3 343
9:11 413
10:12 58
10:22 326
11:24 174
12:5,6,18 347
13:3 369
14:22-27 23,51,58,347
14:27 23,51,58,347
14:28,29 232,347
15:6 331
18:1,2 44,405
18:15 25,288
19:21 57,166
22:10 23,51,58
24:1-4 212
24:14,15 23,51,58
25:4 23,51,58
26:5 33,185,187
26:12,13 347
27:25 326
28:1,2,4,5 49
29:22-28 172
30:6 58
31:6 44
31:9-27 51,341
31:26 51,341
32:3,4 54,57,233,309,372
32:4 54,57,233,309,372
32:4,31 54,57,120,233,309,372
32:22 120
32:24,25 120
32:26-43 14,120,372
32:35,36 14,120
33:3 296
33:27 354

JOSHUA

1:2 174,391
1:4 174
1:1-9 174,391
1:10-12 174
1:14 174
3:5-17 174,221
3:14-17 174,221
5:13,14 4
6:20 221
10:12,13 222
10:42 222
11:23 29
13:7,8 174
13:14 174
13:23,24,29,32 174
13:33 174
14:7,10 29
20:2,3 326,391
20:3,9 326,391
24:15 43,270

JUDGES

3:8,14 31
4:2,3 31
6:11-22 235
7: 396
9:7-15 259
10:7,8 31
13:1 31
13:3,6 4
13:11,16,20 4,235
13:20 4,235
14:14 260
16:30 326

RUTH

1:8,9 271
1:16,17 211

1 SAMUEL

1:11 46,264
1:11,24-28 46,264
2:6 120,288
2:11,18,19 264
4:4 375
10:19 60
11:6 133
13:14,16 392
14:15 350
16:7 302
16:13,14 133
24:8 349
25:23 349
28:7,11,13-16,19 329

2 SAMUEL

6:2 375
6:6,7 221
6:13-15 357
6:14 357
12:1-6 260
14:6-11 260
22:6 120
22:8-18 120
23:2 133

1 KINGS

2:6,9 120
6:1 29,30
6:7 413
6:23 5
7:47-50 356
8:10-12 376
8:22-53 274
17:1 394
17:5-9 221,394
17:6 221,394
17:7 394
17:16 222
17:17-23 81,223,327
17:17,19,21,22 81,223,327
17:21,22 81,223,327
18:2 394
18:3 110
18:4 24,37
18:4,10,17,18 24,37
18:13 257
18:21 43
18:30,33-38 221,275
18:31 169,400
18:36-39 221,275
18:40,45,46 394
18:41-45 394
19:1-4 37,394
19:2 37,394
19:5-8 223
19:10 24
19:11 223,382
19:11,12 223,382
19:19 369
20:29,30 223
20:32 326
20:35-40 260
21:25 37
22:19-23 260
22:24-27 257

2 KINGS

1:9,13,14 223
2:1 110
2:8 221,223
2:8,11,12,14 221,223,369,394
2:9-16 221,223,369,394
2:11 221,223,394
2:14 221,223,369,394
2:19-22 223,395
2:21,22 223,395
2:23,24 223
3:9,14,17,20,22-24 223
4:1-7 223,395
4:1-7,18-44 81,220,223,395
4:10 332
4:14,16-20,25,29,32-36 81,223,395
4:20-37 81,223,395
4:39-41 220,395
4:42-44 223,395
5:1-14 223,368,395
5:1,10,14 223,368,395

5:10,14-16,21,22,25-27 . . . 223,368,395
6:5,6 223
6:15-17 4,5,133,223,234
6:17 4,5,133,223,234
6:17,18 4,5,133,222,223,234
6:18-20 222,223
6:31 257
9:1-37 395
10:28 395
13:21 81,223
14:9 260
19:14-19 275
19:35 5,132,224
20:5 80
20:9-11 224
24:12,13 177
24:14-16 177
25:8 98,99
25:8-11 98,99

1 CHRONICLES

11:17-19 198
15:1 413
16:16,17 85
16:31-34 59,200
16:34 59,200
23:27,28 404
29:27 30

2 CHRONICLES

7:14 273
9:30 30
12:13 30
12:16 290
13:2 30
14:11,12 275
16:13 30
20:5-12 275
20:31 30
21:20 30
22:2,12 30
24:1 30
24:20,21 257
25:1 30
26:3 30
26:16-20 224
27:1 30
28:1 30
29:1 30
33:1,21 30
34:1 30
34:28 163
36:5,11 30
36:7 177
36:10 99
36:16 257
36:20,23 30,31,32
36:20-23 30,31,32

EZRA

NEHEMIAH

1:4-11 275
2:17 60,92
8:15 372
13:25-27 210

ESTHER

JOB

1:6 6,308
1:6-12 6,308
2:1 6,308
2:1-7 6,308
7:9 120
7:21 290
9,10,16: Chapters 163,215
9:33 215
10:19 163
11:8 120
12:10 131
13:15 95
14:12-14 120,288,290,329
14:12-15 120,288,290,329
14:13 120,288,290,329
14:13-15 120,288,290,329
14:14,15 120,288,290,329
14:21 328
17:13,14 121
17:15,16 121
21:13 121
23:10 57
24:19 121
26:6 121
26:13 132
33:19,20 288
33:24,25 280
36:17 407
37:23 407
38:4-8 6,59,277
38:6,7 6,59,277
38:7 6,59,277
38:31 277
42:1,2 57

PSALMS

2: 37,97,99,206,250,360,365
2:1-6,10-12 37,97,99,206,360,365
2:2 37,99,206
2:6 97,99,206,365
2:6-8 97,99,206,250,365
2:6,8 97,99,206,250,365
2:8 97,250,365
2:12 99,206,360
5:9 318
6:5 121
8:1 59
8:1,3,4 4,59,272
8:3,4 4,59,272
8:4,5 4,55,59,233,272,350
8:5 4,55,233,350
8:5,6 4,55,233,296,350
8:5-8 4,55,233,296,350
8:6 55,233,296
9:17 121,312
10:2-11 60,318
10:6 60,318
12:6 375
13:3 290
14:1 13,57,318
14:1-3 13,57,318
16:10 121,123,163
16:11 364
17:15 379,415
18:5 121
18:30 54
19:1,2 59
19:12,13 320
22:23-31 172
23: 14,142,240,372
23:1 14,240
23:4 372
23:5 142
25:14 134,143,247
27:5 60
29:1 350
30:3 121,163
30:5 288,371
31:17,18 121
32:1,2 321
32:8 136,360
33:6 132
33:9 132
34:7 5,133,234
34:11 270
34:19 60,92
34:20 25
36:1-4 318
36:6 350
37:9 1,152,312
37:9-11 1,152,232,312
37:9,10,20 1,152,232,312
37:10 152,232,312
40:7,8 43,44,87,137,366
40:8 43,44,87,137,366
41:1 60
41:13 13
45: 3,106,107,108,109,110,130,167,211 250,292,338,371,378,399,406
45:3-5 250
45:6 378
45:7 338,371
45:10,11 130,211
45:10-16 . . 3,106,107,108,109,110,130 167,211,250,292,399,406
45:14 . . . 106,107,108,109,110,211,250
45:14,15 . 106,107,108,109,110,211,250
45:16 3,167,211,292,399,406
46:1 44,359,373,391
46:1,2 44,359,371,373,391
46:1-5 44,77,359,371,373,391,392
46:1,2,6 25,44,359,371,373,391
46:2,3,6 25,359,371,373
46:4,5 77,392
46:5 77,392
46:6 25,359,371
46:6-10 25,77,359,371
46:6,9,10 25,77,359,371
46:8-10 25,77
47: 44
48:2 4
49:7 280
49:14 121,288
49:14,15 121,163,288,325
49:15 121,163,325
50:1 350
50:3 359
50:4 14
50:5 43,114,399
51:1-19 . . . 43,56,131,276,318,390,410
51:5 56,276,318
51:7 276,410
51:11 131,276
51:17 43,276
51:19 276,390
53:1 13,57
55:15 121
63:3 58
67:6 236
68:18 149
72:2-4,6-8,11-15,17 1,286,365,372
72:5 377
72:6 286,372
72:7 1,286,365
72:10,11,17 286
72:19 286
73:24 136
76:10 203
78:1-8 270
78:18,41 155
78:24,25 407
80:1 375,411
82:6,7 291
83:18 14,57,350
84:6 380
85: 350
86:6,8 350
86:13 121
88:3 60,121
88:5 163
89:14 57,407,408
89:27 14
89:48 121,163
90:1,2 13,57,59
90:2 13,57,59
90:3,4 286,288
91: 5,44,133,296,343,361
91:11 5,44,133,343,361
91:11,12 5,44,133,296,343,361
91:12 5,296,343,361
94:13 60
95:3 350
95:8-10 29,53
96:4 350
97:2-6 359
97:11 367,368,418
98:1 71
98:9 199
99:1 375
102:13-28 172,271
102:28 172,271
103:2-4,8-14,17,18 58,83,271
103:3 58,83
103:17,18 58,271
104:30 132
105:18 326
105:26 216
106:16 216
106:23 216
106:48 13
107:26 60
107:39 60
110:1 294,296,364
110:2-6 359
111:10 268
112:6 3
115:6 131
115:17 178,251
115:25 131,178,251
116:3 121
116:12-14 43
118:22 103,237,258,277,377
118:22,23 103,237,258,277,377
118:22-24 103,237,258,277,377
119:67,68,71 93
119:104 143
119:105 367,418
119:130 143
121:1-8 59
131:2 326

133:2 142,146,371
135:4 172
139:1-7,14-18 57,122
139:7,8 57,122,232
139:8 122,232
141:5 60,92
141:7 122
143:3 318
145:8 58
145:20 164,312
146:4 328
147:19,20 172
148:8 131
149: 63,77,98,118,204
149:1-9 63,77,98,118,204
149:5-9 63,77,98,118,204
149:8,9 63,77,98,118,204

PROVERBS

1:12 122,318
1:16,11-18 122,318
2:21 288
3:1-10 271
4:18 209,367,418
5:5 122
7:27 122
8:17 264,271
8:17,32 264,271
9:18 122
10:22 264,330
11:24 347
11:31 288
12:4 211
13:22 270
13:24 263,271
14:10 326
14:12 320
15:3 200,268
15:11 122
15:24 122
16:28 334
18:22 209
19:18 264,271
20:7 271
22:6 263,271
22:15 264,271
23:7 28
23:13,14 122,264,271
23:14 122,264,271
23:15,16,24,25 271
23:26 43,88,130
23:29-35 260
24:30-34 260
27:20 122
29:15 265,271
29:15,17 265,271
29:17 265,271
30:15,16 122
31:10-12,25-28 211

ECCLESIASTES

1:4 288
1:13; 3:10 93
3:19 131,164,230,283,325
3:19,20 131,164,230,283,325
3:19-21 131,164,230,283,325
3:21 164,283
5:2 273
5:4 111
7:14 60,92
7:20 318
7:29 55
9:5,6,10 122,178,231,251,328
9:5,10 122,178,231,251,328
9:9 212
9:10 122,178,231,251,328
11:3 293
12:1 267
12:14 200

THE SONG OF SOLOMON

8:6 122

ISAIAH

1:9 103
1:18 25,233,367,373
1:25 315
1:26 4,167
2:2 172,288,365,371
2:2,3 4,172,288,365,371,379,416
2:2-4 4,172,288,365,371,379,416
2:3 4,172,288,365,371,379,416
5:1-6 260
5:7 257,381
5:11,12 383
5:14 122
7:2 131
7:12 155
8:1,4 361
8:11-13 36,397
8:12 36,397
8:14 103,118,170,399
8:19,20 27,60,232,311,329,348,368
8:20 27,60,232,311,329,348,368
9:6 287,291,337,351
9:6,7 287,291,337,351
9:7 287,351
10:22 103
11:2 142,143,157
11:2,3 142,143,157,287
11:3-12 . . . 71,94,143,287,292,346,363 371
11:4 71,287
11:5 287,363
11:9 94,287,292,346,371
12:2 14,350
13:1,2 69
13:4 63,64,297
14:1 172
14:4 122
14:4-8 122
14:9 122
14:11 122
14:12-15 6,126,309
14:12-17 6,126,309
14:14 6,126,309
14:24,27 59
17:4-6 172
19:10 326
19:19,20 277,360
19:19-21,24,25 277,360
21:12 130,197
22:5 198
25:6-9 83,287,288
25:6-10 83,287,288
25:8 83,287,288
26:3 134
26:4 14,59,350
26:9,10 232,312
26:10 232,312
26:13,14 197
28:1 382,395
28:1-7 64,133,382,395
28:2 64,382
28:2,3 64,382
28:5,6 133,382
28:6 133,382
28:7 382
28:10,13 90
28:15 122
28:16 237,277
28:17 74,116,151,363
28:17-19 74,116,122,151,363
28:18 116,122
28:21 111
28:23-29 261
29:9-12 383,395
29:13 60
29:18 83
30:33 356
31:1,3 366
32:1 99,206,365
33:6 91
33:14,15 127
33:24 83,287
34:1-10 . . . 36,39,61,62,71,126,366,376
34:2-4,5-10 . . . 36,39,61,62,71,126,366 376
34:4 36,39,61,62,366
34:4,6 36,39,61,62,71,366
34:6 39,61,62,71
34:8 61,62,126,376
34:8-10 61,62,126,376
34:10,11,13 61,62,126,376
35:1 173,236,287
35:1,2,5-10 . . . 83,151,152,173,236,281 287,288,292,344,346
35:5 83,151,287
35:5,6,10 . 83,151,281,287,288,292,346
35:8 152,287,288,292,344,346
35:8,9 152,287,288,292,344,346
35:8-10 . . 83,152,281,287,288,292,344 346
35:9 287,288,292,344,346
35:10 83,281,287,288,292,346
37:16 375
38:10 122
38:18 122
38:19 271
40:1,2 34,120,172,178,183,379
40:2,3 34,120,172,178,183,379
40:4 287,379
40:4,5 287,379
40:6,7 363
40:6-8 363
40:12,15,17,22,26,28 59
40:13 57
42:1 14,131,143,287
42:1-8 14,131,143,216,287
42:1,3,4 14,131,143,287
42:6 14,216,287
42:6,7 14,216,287
42:8 14
43:1,3,5-8,10,12,22-24,26-28 . . 172,194
43:2 389
43:5,6 172,194
43:12 194
44:28 392
45:1,13 392
45:4 102,179
45:7 59,92
45:18 235
46:9,10 57,59
46:9-11 57,59
47: 39
47:9,11 39
49:6 25,287
49:6,8-13 25,198,287
49:8 198,287
49:26 14
50:2 59
52:7 77,117,286,296,361,401
52:7,8 77,117,286,296,361,401
52:9 287,416
52:9,10 287,416
52:11 116
53:3 24,322
53:4 87
53:5 24,220,280
53:5,6 24,220,280,318
53:6 24,280,318
53:7 24
53:9 24,163
53:9,11 24,163
53:10 322,325
53:12 24,280,325
54:13 271
55:10,11 59
55:13 236,362
56:1 407
57:9 122
57:20 374
58:1,2 118
59:18 68
60:5 374
61:1 118,123,143,242
61:1-3 118,123,143,242,346
61:2 118,242,346
62:6 257
62:10 152,284,346
63:1,3 39,63
63:1-6 39,61,63,198
63:4 39,61,198
63:7-9 5,58,133
63:9 5,58,133
65:16-25 89,199,252,287,292,416
65:18 287,416
65:20 89,199,252,287,292
65:25 287
66:5 136
66:7,8 107,108,109,110,115,416
66:8 107,108,109,110,115,416
66:10-12 416
66:22 125
66:24 125,245,314

JEREMIAH

3:1 212
3:17 416
4:20,26-29 172
6:17 257
8:20 108
12:4,7-13 275
15:16 401
16:9-13 34,184,185
16:13-15 34,184,185
16:13-15,18 34,184,185,186
16:13-18 34,184,185,186
16:18 34,184,186
16:19 25
19:7-9 275

23:5-8 172,351
23:6 172,351
24:6 172,362
24:5,6,8,9 172,362
24:7 288
25:8-12 30
25:15,13 72
25:29,31-33 39,62
25:29-32 39,62
29:13 273
29:14,17,18 273
30:7 75,172,175
30:7-11,18-24 75,172,175
30:11 172
31:5-34 . . . 51,58,123,150,151,172,173 181,199,288,292,312,346
31:8-12 172,173
31:15-17 173,288
31:16,29 123,173,199,288,312
31:23-34 . . 51,58,123,150,151,173,181 199,288,292,312,346
31:29,30 123,173,199,288,312
31:31 51,173,181
31:31-34 . . 51,58,150,151,173,181,288 292,346
31:33 51,150,151,173
31:33,34 . . . 51,58,150,151,173,288,292 346
31:34 51,58,151,173,288,292,346
32:17 144
32:20 277
32:36,37 144,271,277
32:39 271
33:7,10,11 172
33:16 287,351
37:13-21 257
38:6 24
48:16 60
48:47 288
49:7-22 69,70,395
49:17 69,70,395
49:39 288
50: 39
50:14-16 39
51: . . . 17,36,37,39,60,68,69,76,177,197 354,401
51:2 60,68
51:1-3 60,68,69
51:1,6,8,9,45 39,68,69,76,177
51:6 68,69,76
51:7 177,354
51:7-9 39,69,177,354
51:8,9,63,64 17,36,37,39,68,69,177
51:12,13 401
51:24 17,36,37,68
51:39,57 197
51:44,58 69
51:63,64,42,24-26 17,36,37,39,68
52:12 99
52:12-15 99

LAMENTATIONS

1:21 60

EZEKIEL

1:4-25 5
3:17 257
4:1-8 31,53,79,357,358
4:6 31,53,79,357,358
7:16 196
7:17-19 62
9:1-11 316
9:2,4 316
10:1-7 288,316
10:2-5 288,316
11:9 157
11:19 150
12:21-23 85
16:16-63 172,173,196,288
16:44-63 172,173,196,288
16:46,53,60,61 172,173,196,288
16:53-55,60-63 172,173,196,288
16:55,60-63 172,173,196,288
17:3-10 261
18:2 123,312
18:2,3 123,312
18:4,20 163,199,232,280,318,325
19:2-9 261
21:24-27 30,96,175,357,411
21:25-27 30,96,175,357,411
21:26,27 30,96,175,357,411
21:27 30,96,175,357,411
23: 261
24:3-5 261
25:12-14 70
28:14 6
28:15-20 6
31: 123
31:15-17 123
32:1-16 261
32:21 123,350
32:27 123
34: 262
36:1-15,24-38 172,173,184,288
36:16-24 172,173
36:21-38 172,173,184,288
36:24 172,173
36:25-38 172,173,184,288
36:26 172,173,184,288
36:26,27,35 172,173,184,288
37: 132,172,183,184,412
37:1-14 132,183,184
37:5-10,13,14 132,183,184
37:9 132,183
37:11 183,184
37:11-14 183,184
37:21-28 172,412
37:24 172,412
38: 75,76,175
38:11,12,15,16 75,175
38:11-13 75,175
38:15,16 75,175
38:19-22 76
43:26 45
44:10 108,110
44:10,11 108,110
44:14 108
47: 289,326,393,401
47:1-12 289,326,393,401
47:8 289,393,401
47:9 289,326,401

DANIEL

2: . . . 63,96,97,98,100,203,204,224,276 288,356,371,377,400
2:1,5,17-19 224
2:20-23 276
2:31-35 96,97,204,288,371,400
2:34,35 96,97,204,288,371,400
2:35 96,97,204,288,371,400
2:35,44,45 . . . 63,96,97,98,204,288,356 371,377,400
2:37,38 96,100,203
2:37-42 96,100,203,356
2:37-44 . 63,96,98,100,203,204,288,356 371,377
2:38 96,100,203
2:41 96,203,356
2:43 96,203,356
2:43,44 . 63,96,98,203,204,288,356,371 377
2:44 63,96,98,204,288,356,371,377
2:44,45 . 63,96,98,204,288,356,371,377
2:44,45,35 . . . 63,96,97,98,204,288,356 371,377,400
2:45 288,371,377
3:23-27 221
4: 100,176,224
4:4,5,10,12-16 100,176
4:4,16,23-26 100,176
4:16,23,25,32 100,176,224
4:31-34 176,224
4:34-37 176,224
5:2 110
5:3 380
5:5 98,224
5:5,25-28,30,31 96,98,224
5:18,28 96,98
5:26-28 96,98
6:16,20-22 5,220,224
6:21,22 5,220,224
6:22 5,220,224
7: . 10,11,78,79,97,204,288,355,357,365 366
7:2-7 10,97,204,355,365
7:3-7 10,97,204,355,365
7:7,8 10,78,97,204,355,365
7:7,8,24-26 . . . 10,11,78,79,97,204,355 357,365,366
7:8 10,78,97,204,355,365
7:8,11,20-22,25 . . 10,78,79,97,204,355 357,365
7:8-11,21,24,-26 . 10,78,97,204,355,365 366
7:8,21 10,78,97,204,355,365
7:11 78,204,365
7:11,12 78,97,204,365
7:12 97,204
7:13,14,27 97,288
7:24 10,366
7:25 10,79,357,365
7:26 10,11,204
7:27 97,288
8: 5,11,78,96,97
8:5-7 96
8:9,11,13 11,78
8:10-12,24-26 11,78
8:10-26 5,11,78,97
8:16 5,11
8:20,21 11,97
9:2 30
9:9 58
9:21 5
9:23-27 . . . 24,31,34,35,86,113,186,187 357
9:24 31,86,113,186,187,357
9:24-27 . . . 24,31,34,35,86,113,186,187 357
9:25 31,34,35,86,113,186,187,357
9:26 24,31,86,113,186,357
9:27 31,86,113,186,357
10:5-9 4,235
10:6,7 4,235
10:13 4,5
10:21 5
11: 8,11,17,78,79,214,354
11:29 79
11:30 79
11:31 8,11,78,214,354
11:31-33 8,11,17,78,214,354
11:32-35 17,78
11:36 8,79
11:36-39 8,79
11:37 79
11:38 79
11:40 79
12:1 5,61,75,77,78,127,297,378
12:1,2 . . 5,61,75,77,78,127,289,293,297 378
12:2 289,293
12:2,3 3,166,289,293,377,378
12:3 3,166,289,377,378
12:6 78
12:7 79
12:10 80
12:11 80,214,354
12:12 80,247

HOSEA

2:19,20 211
3:4,5 172
4:1-3 63
4:6 91
11:1 360
13:14 123,281,288,289

JOEL

1:3 271
2:1,2 61,75,77
2:2 61,75,77
2:10,11 63
2:22,32 288
2:28 150,151,160,288,379
2:28,29 150,151,160,288,379
3:1 76,172,288
3:1,2 76,172,288
3:1,2,17-21 76,172,288
3:10 113
3:13 116

AMOS

3:2 2,49,85,102,172,179
3:6 59,92
5:3,5 172
7-9: Chapters 115,123,167,172,173,174 221,288,394,413
7:8,9 172
8:11 221,394
8:14 172
9:2 123
9:9,11 167,173,288,413
9:11,12 167,173,288,413
9:11-15 . 115,167,172,173,174,288,413
9:12 167,173,288,413
9:13 115,173
9:14,15 172,173,174

OBADIAH

1,7 36,121
1,16 36,121

21 36,121

JONAH

1:4,11,12,17 224
2:2 123
2:10 224
4:6,7,10,11 224,288
4:11 224,288

MICAH

4:1 173,288,365,371
4:1-4 . 41,151,173,288,365,371,379,416
4:1-5,7,8 . 41,151,173,288,365,371,379 416
4:2 151,173,288,365,379,416
4:3 41,173,288,365
5:2 14,24

NAHUM

1:3,6,7 64
1:4,5,8 64
1:9,10 36,62
1:10 36,62
2:3-6 288

HABAKKUK

1:13 59
2:1-3 85,316
2:2 85,316
2:2,3 85,316
2:5 123
2:14 288,292
3:19 350

ZEPHANIAH

1:14-18 62,118
2:2,3 77,118,268
2:3 77,118,268
2:11 288
3:8 64,77,196,288,296,362
3:8,9 . . . 64,77,78,196,288,292,296,362
3:9 77,78,196,288,292
3:10-20 172

HAGGAI

2:6 77,364
2:6,7 77,288,364
2:7 77,288

ZECHARIAH

1:7-6:15 259
1:15 60
2:11 288
3:1,2 4,5,308
3:2 4,5,308
3:9 360
3:10 288
4:7 277
6:15 259
8: 72,173,288
8:3,12,20-23 173,288
8:9-11 72
8:20-23 173,288
9:9 33,34,35
9:9,12 33,34,35
11: 24
11:12 24
12:10 150,173,178,379
13:8 110
13:9 362
14:2,3 76,175,296
14:2,3,13 76,175,296
14:3,4 76,175,296,372,380
14:4 296,372,380
14:8 289,381
14:8,9 289,365,381
14:9 365,381
14:16-21 77,173,372
14:17 77,173,372

MALACHI

3:1 297,337,396
3:2 171,315
3:2,3 110,126,171,315,375
3:3 110,126,315,375
3:6 57,60
3:11 288
3:15 25,155,204,346
3:15,18 1,25,155,204,346
3:16,17 242,366,382
3:17 242,366,382
3:18 1,25,346
4:1 6,63,64,296
4:1,3 6,63,64,296
4:2 83,288,296,378,415
4:4 216
4:5,6 393

NEW TESTAMENT

MATTHEW

1:16 21
1:20 4,224
2:1,2 21,170,224
2:1,2,9 21,170,224
2:1,4 21,170,224
2:3-16 21,224,288
2:12,13 224
2:16-18 288
2:20 326
3:11 146
3:12 114,177,399
3:16 145,224,234,358
3:16,17 145,224,234,358
4:1 308
4:3,4 343
4:5-7 155,343
4:7 155,343
4:8-10 203,343,349
4:9 203,343
4:10 343,349
5:5 148
5:11 157,218,256
5:13 373
5:14 157,160,161
5:14,16 157,160,161,284
5:15 161
5:16 161,284
5:18 32,386
5:22 124,313,318
5:22,28,32 124,212,313,318
5:23,24 43,273
5:29,30 124,125,313
5:32 212,318
5:35 4
5:37 . . 4,32,41,43,124,125,148,157,160 . 161,212,218,256,273,284,313,318,335 373,386
5:41 335
5:43-46 41
6:7,8 273
6:8 273
6:9-13 273,276,321
6:12 273,276,321
6:12,14,15 273,276,321
6:19,20 148,330
6:19-21 148,330
6:23 112,157,161,284
6:24 45,111,369
6:25 326
6:34 331
7:1,2 320,321
7:2 320,321
7:7 138
7:12 41
7:13,14 48,129,152,344
7:14 48,129,152,344
7:21-23 82,302
7:22 82,302
7:24-27 248
8:2,3 224
8:5,6,8,10,13 80,224
8:13 80,224
8:14,15 224
8:16,17 84,87
8:17 84,87
8:21,22 43,290
8:22 43,290
8:26 224
8:28,31,32 224
9:2 26,224
9:2,3,4,5,7 26,224
9:16 249
9:17 249,383
9:18,24,25 225,290
9:20,22 225
9:24,25 225,290
9:27,29,30 94,225,307
9:29 94,225,307
9:32,33 225
10:1 133,225
10:1,5,8 2,102,133,171,225,348
10:5 2,102,171,225
10:5,6 2,102,171,225
10:6 2,102,171
10:7 114
10:8 225,348
10:11 195
10:15 288
10:19,20 133,157
10:20 133,157
10:22 105
10:25 44,135
10:28 124,125,232,313,325,326
10:32 136
10:36 265
10:37,38 43
10:38,39 43,326
10:39 43,326
10:41 332
11:4,5 82,225
11:11 4,399,410
11:13,14 401
11:14 401
11:23 123,196
11:23,24 123,196,288
11:24 196,288
11:25 143
11:28,29 43,385
11:29 43,385
12:4 415
12:10,13 80,225
12:13 80,225
12:15 80,82
12:22 225
12:25,26 82,84,311
12:25,26,29 82,84,248,311
12:26 82,84,311
12:29 248,311
12:31 196,319
12:31,32 45,155,158,196,319
12:32 45,155,158,319
12:40 401
12:43-45 329
13:3-9,18-23 253
13:11 144
13:24-30 111,113,116,127,169,259,374 382,399
13:24-40 111,113,116,127,169,248,249 . 259,318,362,368,374,378,382,385,399
13:24-30,36-43 . . 111,113,116,127,169 . 259,291,296,318,362,374,378,382,399 415
13:24,36-43 . 111,113,127,169,259,291 296,318,362,374,378,382,399,415
13:24-30,37-43 . . 111,113,116,127,169 . 259,291,296,318,362,374,378,382,399 415
13:30 . . . 111,113,116,127,169,259,382 399
13:30,38 . 111,113,116,127,169,259,318 362,374,378,382,399
13:30,40-42 . 111,113,116,127,169,259 374,382,399
13:31,32 249,399
13:33 248,368,385,399
13:37-43 111,113,127,169,259,291,296 318,362,374,378,382,399,415
13:38 . . . 111,113,169,259,318,362,374 378,382,399
13:39 111,113,169,259,374,399
13:43 . . . 111,113,169,259,291,296,374 378,415
13:44,46 44
13:47-49 244,382
13:47-50 244,382
13:52 370,419
14:4 397
14:6-11 37
14:14 80,82
14:19-21 225
14:25,28-31 225
15:1-3,7-9 60
15:13 257
15:22,28 225
15:24 2,102,171
15:26,27 251,358
15:36-38 225
16:16,17 239,351
16:17,18 123,239,351,372
16:18 123,239,372
16:19 146,239,367
16:24 43
16:25 326
16:26 148
17:1-3,5 225
17:11 285

17:14,15,18 225
17:27 225
18:8,9 125,245,314
18:10 5
18:15-17 218,219
18:18 239
18:20 219,242
18:23-35 255
19:6 210,211
19:7-9 210,212
19:9 210,212
19:12 21,210
19:14 46,271
19:14,15 46,271
19:18 41
19:21 44
19:26 95
19:28 196
20:1 115,244,381
20:1-16 115,244,381
20:18 171
20:22 338,391
20:22,23 338,357,391
20:23 357,391
20:28 280,326
20:34 225
21:5,9,4 170,171,217
21:5-9 170,171,217
21:9 170,171,217
21:10-15 171
21:19 225,245,362
21:19,20 225,245,362
21:22 138,273
21:33 381
21:42 103,237,258,277,377
21:42-46 103,178,237,258,277,377
21:43 178,258
21:44 258,277
22:2-14 114,258
22:21 205
22:37 14,49,58
22:37,38 14,49,58
22:37-40 14,49,58
22:39 49,58
23:2,6-8 239
23:11 241
23:15,33 125,314
23:34-36 62,321
23:35 62,321
23:35,36 62,321
23:37,38 . 2,33,86,112,169,171,185,187
23:37-39 . 2,33,86,112,169,171,185,187
23:38 2,33,86,112,169,171,185,187
24:1,2 171
24:14 2,294
24:15 8,11,214,354
24:15,16 8,11,214,354
24:21 61,75,77,78
24:21,22 61,75,77,78
24:24 82,310
24:26 296
24:27 296
24:30 297
24:31 113,382
24:32 225,244,362
24:32,33 225,244,362
24:37 296,392
24:37-39 170,195,296,392
24:38 170,195,296,392
24:38,39 170,195,296,392
24:39 170,195,296,392
24:40 362
24:42,43 247,314
24:42-51 110,194,247,253,254,314,316
. 369,370
24:44 247,314
24:45,47,48 . . 194,254,314,316,369,370
24:45-47 194,314,369,370
24:45-51 110,194,253,254,314,316,369
. 370
24:47 194,314,369,370
24:48 254,314,316,369
24:48-50 254,314,316,369
24:51 110,253,314,369
25:1 106,108,114,170,254,367,381
25:1,2 . . . 106,108,114,170,254,367,381
25:1-12 . . . 35,36,106,108,110,114,170
. 254,367,371,380,381,382
25:1-13 . . . 35,36,106,108,110,114,170
. 254,367,371,380,381,382
25:2,3 . . . 106,108,110,114,254,367,371
. 381
25:3 . 106,108,110,114,254,367,371,381
25:3,4,8 . 106,108,110,114,254,367,371
. 380,381
25:4 . 106,108,114,254,367,371,380,381
25:6 106,108,114,254,367,381,382
25:10 . . 35,36,106,108,114,254,367,381
25:14-30 44,114,297
25:19 114,297
25:21 44,114,297
25:31,32 116,196,246,252,298
25:31-46 . . 3,101,116,168,196,199,246
. 252,298,303,304,310
25:34 . . . 101,116,168,199,252,298,304
25:34-36,40-43,45,46 . . . 3,101,116,168
. 196,199,252,298,303,304,310
25:40 116,196,199,252,298,303
25:41 116,199,252,298,310
25:45 116,199,252,298
25:46 3,116,199,252,298
26:24 21
26:26-28 339,395
26:28 339,395
26:39 351
26:42 351
26:52 41
26:64 294,364,378
27:24,25 61,181
27:25 61,181
27:46 165,307
28:2-4 5,235
28:3 5,235
28:20 155

MARK

1:10 145,224
1:10,11 145,224
1:23-26 225
1:30,31 224
1:34 80,83
1:40 224
2:1,2 196,224
2:1-12 196,224
2:19,20 244
2:27 28
3:1-6 225,326
3:4 225,326
3:10,11 226
3:14,15 225
3:23-26 84
3:29 156
4:11 134,144
4:19 111
4:37-41 224
5:1-17 224
5:22,23 225,271
5:22-43 80,81,84,87,225,271
5:25-34 80,87,225
5:29 80,225
5:30 87,225
5:35-43 81,84,225
5:41,42 81,84,225
6:17,18,22,24 397
6:35-44 225
6:47-51 225
7:25-30 225
7:32-35 226
8:1-9 225
8:23-25 226
8:35-37 326
8:38 136
9:2-8 225
9:26,27 225
9:43-48 125,245,314
9:44-46 125,314
9:45 125,314
9:46-48 125,245,314
9:48 125,245,314
9:50 373
10:3 216
10:9 210
10:11,12 212
10:13 46
10:16 271
10:29,30 44
10:38,39 19
10:45 280,326
10:46-52 225,350
10:51 225,350
11:13,14,20 225,368
11:13,14,20-26 138,225,273,368
11:24 138,225
11:25 225,273
12:1 257
12:2-5 257
12:6-9 258
12:9 258
12:25 5
12:30 43
12:32,33 14
13:26 297
13:32 351
14:21 21
14:25 218
14:61-64 10
16:5 5
16:9-18 Spurious 83

LUKE

1:11,13 21,226
1:13 21,226
1:15 139,264
1:16,15,44,66,80 139,264
1:17 400
1:19,26 5,31
1:20 226
1:26,27,36 5,31,226
1:30,31,36,39-41 31,139,226
1:32 287,412
1:32,33 287,412
1:34,35 21,166,319
1:35 21,166,319
1:37 59
1:41 139,226
1:62-64,67 226
2:1 97,203
2:9-11 21,25,33,226,288,417
2:10 25,33,226,288,417
2:10,11 21,25,33,226,288,417
2:10,11,13,14 . . . 21,25,33,226,288,417
2:11 21,226,288,417
2:13,14 226,288
2:25-30,36,38 226,350
2:29 226,350
2:40 139
3:10 140
3:14 76
3:15 35
3:21,22 35,224,408
3:22 35,224,408
3:22,23 35,224,408
3:38 55,56,61
4:1 371
4:12 155
4:18 123,143,360
4:19 346
4:33-37,41 225
4:38,39 224
5:5,6 226
5:12 224
5:18-26 80,224
5:24,25 80,224
6:6-11 225,326
6:9 225,326
6:19 84,87,226
6:22 285
6:35 331
6:38 321
7:2-10 224
7:12-15 81,226
7:12,14,15 81,226
7:28 21,22
7:41-43 255
8:10 144
8:11 253,374
8:12 308
8:22-25 224
8:26-37 7,224,329
8:27-33 7,224,329
8:31 7,224,329
8:41-56 225
8:43-48 225
9:12-17 225
9:24,25 326
9:28-36 225
9:37-42 225
9:56 41,326
9:61,62 43
10:1,9,17 225
10:2,16 169
10:7 195
10:15 123
10:18 6,308
10:20 61
10:30-37 245
11:9 273
11:11,12 270
11:13 131,138
11:14-26 225,248,311
11:21,22 225,248,311
11:36 296

11:50 110
11:52 367
12:1 368
12:5 125,313
12:8 136
12:10 156
12:12 133
12:16-21 251
12:22,23 326
12:32 88,194,291,399
12:35-37 246,248,315,363
12:35-48 110,127,194,232,246,247,248 . 253,254,314,315,316,320,363,370,419
12:37 246,248,315,363
12:39,40 246,247
12:42 194,246,253,314,370,419
12:42-44 194,246,253,314,370,419
12:42-46 194,246,253,254,314,316,370 419
12:42-48 110,127,194,232,246,253,254 314,316,320,370,419
12:45,46 246,253,254,316
12:46 246,253,254,316
12:47 110,127,232,246,253,320
12:47,48 110,127,232,246,253,320
12:50 19
13:6-9 244,362
13:11-13 80,226
13:13 80,226
13:16 28
13:24-27 254
13:28 3,100,166,399
13:30 399
14:2,4 226
14:3,5 28
14:7-11 246
14:16-24 246
14:26 326
14:27,28 43,47,255,404
14:28 43,47,255,404
14:28-30 43,47,255,404
14:33 44,111
15:4-7 248
15:8-10 248
15:11-32 250
16:1-15 135,256,292,396
16:13,14 256,396
16:15 135,256,292
16:16 256,288
16:18 212
16:19-31 123,177,251,252
16:23 123,177,251
16:29 177,251,252
17:7-10 249
17:11-19 80,84,226,368
17:12-14 80,84,226,368
17:12,14 80,84,226,368
17:14 80,84,226,368
17:20 100,296
17:20,21,26-30 100,296,393
17:24 296
17:26 296,393
17:26-29 296,393
17:33 326
18:1 138,256,273,274
18:1-8 15,68,138,256,273,274
18:7 68,256,273
18:7,8 15,68,256,273
18:8 15,68,256
18:9-14 201,249
18:13,14 201,249
18:15 46,271
18:15,16 46,271
18:27 59
18:35-43 225
19:10 56
19:12 114,158,249,254,291,297
19:12-27 109,114,158,249,254,291,297
19:15 114,249,254,291,297
19:22 109,114,249,254,291,297
19:39,40 34
19:44 112,170
20:33-35 5,197,232,293
20:35 5,197,232,293
20:35,36 5,197,232,293
21:1-4 347
21:20-24 31,72,99,100,175,203
21:22 72
21:24 31,72,99,100,175,203
21:25 374
21:27 297
21:34 111,148,294
21:34,35 111,148,294
21:36 77,416
22:17 219
22:32 220
22:50,51 80,226
22:51 80,226
23:29 21
23:46 281,351
24:1 299
24:13-31,36,37 21,280,295,300
24:21 280,295,300
24:31 21,295
24:32 299
24:36,37 21,295
24:39 295
24:49 144

JOHN

1:1 5,350
1:2 319
1:3 132
1:8,9 417
1:11 5,112
1:12 143,151,152,168
1:13 20,141,145
1:14 8,87,161,165,233,278,319,322
1:17 216
1:18 100
1:26,27 117,401
1:29 217,288
1:32 145,371
1:32-34 145,371
2:2 209
2:6 82,209,226,401
2:7-10 226
2:11 82
2:19 401
3:1-10 20,21,22,82,88,131,145,150,231 234,236,295,362,415
3:2 22,82
3:3 20,22,362
3:3,4,7 20,21,22,145,362
3:4,5 20,21,22,145,415
3:5,6 . 20,21,22,88,131,145,231,234,236 295,415
3:5-8,3,7 . 20,21,22,88,131,145,150,231 234,236,295,362,415
3:5,8,13 . . 20,21,22,88,131,145,150,221 234,295,415
3:6 . 20,22,88,131,145,231,234,236,295
3:6,8 . . . 20,22,88,131,145,150,231,234 236,295,415
3:8 . 20,22,88,131,145,150,234,295,415
3:13 221,415
3:14 220,389,390
3:14,15 220,389,390
3:16,17 58,377,417
3:17 58,377,417
3:18 60
3:29 170
3:33 134
3:34 19,147,338,371
4:7,9-15 258,358
4:9 258,358
4:21,23 40,47
4:23 40,47
4:24 131
4:34 45
4:35 114,170
4:35-38 114,170
4:35,38 114,170
4:38 114,170
4:46,47,50-53 80,226
4:50 80,226
5:1-9 80,83,226
5:5-9 80,83,226
5:9 80,83,226
5:19,20 351
5:22 199,298
5:23 403
5:25 230,292,298
5:25,28,29 . . . 185,200,230,288,292,298
5:26 57,164
5:28,29 185,200,230,288,292
5:36 82,351
5:36-38 82,351
5:39 . 57,80,82,83,164,185,199,200,216 226,230,288,292,298,345,351,403
5:44 345
5:45 216
6:5-14 225
6:16-21 225
6:27 137
6:31-33,35,51,63 . 138,140,244,281,290 296
6:32-35 244
6:37 46
6:38 43,153
6:45 140,306
6:51 281,290,296
6:53,55 198
6:63 138,140
6:70 237
7:16 90,351
7:16,17 90,351
7:19 216
7:31 82
7:32,45,46 196
7:37-38 258
7:37-39 134,152,258
7:39 134,152,258
8:12 157,160
8:15 343
8:26-29 351
8:32 243,416
8:39 178
8:41 21
8:42 351
8:44 163,308,309,317
9:1-7 . 21,37,81,82,83,115,130,160,226
9:1,6,7 81,83,226
9:2,19,20,32,34 21,83
9:3,33 82,83
9:4 37,83,115,130
9:5 83,160
9:6,7 81,83,226
9:31 272
10:1-5,7-18 . . 217,245,252,253,326,358 363
10:7 245,358
10:9 245,363
10:10 217,245
10:11 245,326
10:15 245,326
10:16 245,252,253
10:17 245,326
10:25,38 82,351
10:30 351
10:33,36 10
10:38 82,351
11:11-14 290
11:25 290
11:38,39,43,44 81,84,227
11:39-44 81,84,227
11:43,44 81,84,227
12:12-16 34
12:25 326
12:31 1,203,309
12:32 220,390
12:32,33 220,390
12:47,48 202
13:2 309
13:4,5 363
13:14 361
13:38 326
14:1 201
14:2 248
14:3 294,297
14:6 273,363
14:9 351
14:11 82
14:12 83
14:13 138
14:16 138,154,351
14:16,18,26 . . 136,138,140,144,154,155 158,238,351
14:16,26 . 136,138,140,144,154,158,238 351
14:17 144,153
14:18,23 58,154,155,351
14:19 162,295
14:21,23 58,155,351
14:26 136,140,144,154,158,238
14:28 351
14:30 1,203,309
15:1 105,256,351,380
15:1-11 . . 44,104,105,107,134,139,154 256,351,380
15:1,2,6 . 104,105,107,134,154,256,351 380
15:1,5 104,105,256,351,380
15:2 104,105,107,134,154,256
15:2,8 104,105,107,134,154,256
15:5,4,2,6 . . . 104,105,107,134,154,256 380
15:7 139,256
15:9,10 256,351
15:11 44,256
15:12,13 257
15:13 257
15:14,15 201

15:16 129,241
15:16,19 129,135,241,305
15:18 44,135
15:19 129,135,305
15:22 82
15:26 144
16:7 1,21,136,153,157,158,160,162,238 273,309,345,351,397,418
16:8 160,309
16:8,11 1,157,160,309
16:9-11 1,157,309
16:11 1,157,309
16:12,13 136,157,158,238,397,418
16:12,13,15 . . 136,157,158,238,397,418
16:13 136,157,158,238,397,418
16:14 158
16:16-19 162
16:21 21
16:23 273,351
16:23,26-28 273,351
16:24 . . . 1,21,136,153,157,158,160,162 238,273,309,345,351,397,418
16:33 153,345
17:1 43,351
17:1-8 43,236,351
17:5 236,351
17:11 61,351
17:14 44
17:16 129,305
17:17 137,305
17:19 137
17:20-22 38,59,131,345,351
17:20-26 38,59,131,345,351
17:21 38,131,351
17:22 59,131,345,351
17:22-24 59,131,345,351
17:23 59,351
18:11 1,21,85,195
18:20 195
18:36 1,85
18:37 21
19:12 61
19:36 25
20:11-18 294,352
20:17 294,352
20:19,26 21,88,295
20:29 295
21:1-12 295
22:25 83

ACTS

1:4,5 131,139,145
1:5 131,139,145
1:6 285
1:8 131,144,194
1:11 296
1:15-26 133,237
1:16 133,237
2:1-4 . . . 132,139,141,146,148,151,158 227
2:2-4 . . . 132,139,141,146,148,151,158 227
2:4 . . 132,139,141,146,148,151,158,227
2:7,11 133
2:8 21
2:22 171,352
2:22,24,25,27,30-32 . . . 61,123,146,163 171,278,352
2:24 278,352
2:27 61,123,163,352
2:29,34 121,352
2:32 146,352
2:33 137,145,149,160
2:34 121,352
2:34,35 121,352
2:36 196,352
2:36-39 145,196,271,352
2:38,39 145,196,271
2:39 145,196,271
3:2,3,6-8 81,227
3:7 81,227
3:12 171
3:13,15,20,26 . . . 2,32,120,146,151,163 . 179,183,184,196,235,285,291,294,352 380,395,402
3:15 146,291,352
3:17 311
3:19-21 . . . 2,32,83,86,120,151,163,179 . 183,184,196,235,285,286,288,294,297 298,300,352,380,395,402
3:19,21 . . . 2,32,83,86,120,151,163,179 . 183,184,196,235,285,286,288,294,297 298,300,380,395,402
3:19-23 . 2,10,32,83,86,89,120,151,152 . 154,163,179,181,183,184,196,215,230 . 235,250,258,285,286,288,292,294,297 . 298,300,303,312,352,360,380,395,402 408,413,417
3:20,21 . . . 2,32,83,86,120,151,163,179 . 183,184,196,235,285,286,288,294,297 298,300,352,380,395,402
3:21 . . 2,32,83,86,120,151,163,179,183 . 184,196,235,285,286,288,294,297,298 300,380,395,402
3:22 . 151,181,230,298,360,380,395,408
3:22,23 10,89,151,152,154,181,215,230 . 250,258,292,298,303,312,360,380,395 408,413,417
3:23 . . . 10,89,151,152,154,181,215,230 . 250,258,292,298,303,312,360,380,395 408,413,417
3:25 286
4:8 139
4:10-13,23-30 277,350,352,397
4:10,29,30 352,397
4:11 277,397
4:19 205
4:24 350,397
4:31 132,139
5:3 155,158
5:3,4 155,158
5:5,10 227
5:9 155,158
5:15,16 81,227
5:16 81,227
5:17-19 5,133,227
5:19 5,133,227
5:29 205,397
5:29-41 146,171,205,291,352,397
5:30,31 291,352,397
5:31 291,352,397
5:32 146,397
5:35 171,397
5:42 195
6:3,4 241
6:6 364
7:4 175
7:5 48,185
7:20 21
7:36 29
7:52 257
7:55,56 227
8:7 227
8:13-21 27,82,139,149,230,348
8:14-18 27,82,139,149,230,348
8:14,15,17,18 . . 27,82,139,149,230,348
8:15 27,139,149,348
8:17 27,82,149,348
8:18 27,149,230,348
8:29 150,159
8:39 150,159
9:3,4 227
9:6 305
9:7 235
9:10-12,18 227
9:15 237,380
9:17 139
9:33,34 227
9:36,37,40,41 81,227
9:36-41 81,227
10: . . . 86,143,144,146,149,150,159,170 227,294,337,352,371,408
10:1,3,5,9-15,19,20,44 . . . 146,150,159 227
10:19 150,159,227
10:37,38 143,144,170,337,371,408
10:38 143,144,170,337,371,408
10:39,41 146
10:40 294,352
10:40,42 294,352
10:44 146,227
10:45 86,149
10:45,46 86,149
11:19 397
12:7-10 5,227
12:7-10,15 5,227
13:1 159
13:2 150,159
13:3 364
13:9 139,227
13:9-11 139,227
13:16 171
13:19-21 29,30
13:21 29,30
13:23,34 352
13:31 146
13:33 21,352
14:2 326
14:8-10 81,227
14:10 81,227
14:22 44
14:23 364
15:10 155
15:13-18 57,159,167,186,412
15:14-16 159,186,412
15:16 159,186,412
15:17 159,167
15:18 57,159
15:21 216
15:26 326
15:28 150,159
16:1 239
16:3 239
16:6 150,159
16:9 159,227
16:16 157,227
16:16-18 157,227
16:25,26 228
17:11 140
17:18 350
17:24-26 54
17:29 350
17:30,31 198,230,352
19:4,5 230
19:6 82,149
19:11-13,15,16 228
19:20 350
20:9-12 82,228,326
20:9,10,12 82,228,326
20:10 82,228,326
20:20 195
20:23 150,159
20:24 326
20:27 12,238
20:28 150,159,240
20:35 348
21:11 159
21:14 159
21:15-19 364
21:20-26 239
21:28 171
22:3,28 21
22:6,7 227
22:12,13 227
22:17,18,21 228
23:5 350
23:11 228
24:15 185,195
24:16 41
26:4,5 264
26:13 227,235
26:13,14 227,235
26:16-18 309
27:10 326
27:22 326
27:23,24 228
28:3-6 228
28:8 81,228
28:8,9 81,228

ROMANS

1:1,3,4,7,8 128,157,352
1:4 157,352
1:7 128,352
1:11 27,230,348
1:16 136
1:18 62,199,318
1:18-23 62,162,199,318,350
1:19,20 62,350
1:23 62,162
2:3-6,8,9 127,129,165,167,172,327
2:5-7 . . . 127,129,162,165,167,217,281 291,327,409
2:6,10,11 127,129,165,167,172,327
2:7 . . 129,162,165,217,281,291,327,409
2:9,10 127,167,172
2:16 14
2:28 169
2:29 169,391
3:1,2 178,251
3:2 178,251
3:6 14
3:9,10,23 55,292,302,318,367
3:10 55,292,318,367
3:10,23 55,292,302,318,367
3:11-18 2,14,55,56,58,178,201,251,277 278,292,302,318,367,408
3:20 277,278,302
3:20,28 277,278,302
3:21,22,24-26 2,56,58,201,408
3:23 55,302,318
3:24-26 2,56,58,201,408

3:25,26 2,56,58,201,408
3:26 2,56,58,201,408
4:2,3 94,201,408
4:3 94,201,408
4:7,8 321
4:16 47,168,178,411
4:17 387
4:18 281
4:23,24 352
4:25 201
5:1 15,88,104,201,352,398,412
5:1,2 15,88,104,201,352,398,412
5:1,10,11 . . . 15,58,88,104,201,352,398 412
5:5 148
5:6-11 58,88,201,307,352
5:8 58,88,307
5:9 58,201
5:12 56,123,156,187,281,317,391
5:12-19 . 2,56,123,156,167,187,196,280 281,284,317,319,346,388,391,417
5:12,21 . . . 56,123,156,187,281,317,391
5:14 56,187,388
5:15-19 . 2,56,167,187,196,280,284,319 346,417
5:17-19 . 2,56,167,187,196,280,284,319 346,417
5:18 2,56,167,187,196,280,284,319,417
5:18,19 . 2,56,167,187,196,280,284,319 346,417
5:19 56,167,187,280,284,319,346
6:3 18,230,339,358
6:3-5 . . 18,19,152,230,291,339,352,354 358,415
6:4 18,152,230,352,354,415
6:4-6 . . 18,19,152,230,291,352,354,415
6:4,9,10,23 . 18,55,152,156,163,197,214 . 230,231,253,280,284,318,319,338,352 354,415
6:5 18,19,230,291,415
6:8 236
6:9 197,214,352
6:10,11 338,352
6:14 299
6:16-23 . . 55,156,163,231,253,280,284 318,319,352
6:23 . . 55,156,163,231,253,280,284,318 319,352
7:1 50,180,181
7:1,2,4 50,180,181,210,212
7:1,4 50,180,181
7:2 50,210,212
7:2,3 50,210,212,232
7:3 210,232
7:6 147
7:7-25 50,156,318
7:10 50,318
7:14 156,318
8:1 366,391
8:1,4 181,187,343,366,391
8:2 169
8:3 87
8:4 181,187,343,366
8:5 135
8:9 19,135,139,152,157
8:11 236,352
8:13 43,345
8:13,14 . . . 43,128,140,143,152,168,177 345,398
8:14 . 128,140,143,152,168,177,345,398
8:14-16 . 128,134,137,140,143,152,153 157,168,177,345,352,398
8:14,17 25,88,128,130,140,143,152,168 . 177,197,323,345,352,374,378,398,406 408
8:15 137,143,152,157,168
8:16 134,143,152,153,352
8:16,17 25,88,128,130,134,143,152,153 197,323,345,352,374,378,406,408
8:17 . . . 25,88,128,130,197,323,345,352 374,378,406,408
8:18 377
8:20,21 156,208,285,417
8:21 156,208,285,417
8:21,22 . . 156,160,208,217,285,363,374 389,417
8:22 160,217,285,363,374,389
8:22,19 160,217,285,363,374,389
8:23 137,160,236
8:24 199
8:26 160,272
8:26,27 48,160,272
8:27 48,160
8:28 103,152,291,306
8:28-30 . . 47,103,135,152,291,306,337 379,415
8:29 47,103,135,379,415
8:30 103,337
8:31 153,160,268
8:31-34 153,160,201,268
8:33 153,201
8:36 44
8:37 301
9,10,11: chapters . . . 3,22,50,52,57,102 . 103,120,154,157,166,167,168,171,173 . 179,181,183,186,251,252,286,298,301 326,372,395,399,400,411,416
9:2-4,6,13 . 3,103,167,168,171,395,399 400
9:4,5 3,171,395
9:4,27,29,31-33 3,102,103,157,171,372 395,399
9:6 167,168,395,399
9:6-8 167,168,251,395,399
9:6-8,13 . 103,167,168,251,395,399,400
9:8 167,168,251
9:10-13 22,102,103,167,395,400
9:11 22,102,103,400
9:11-16 22,102,103,167,395,400
9:13 103,167,395,400
9:14-17 102,400
9:22 102
9:27 102,103,157,171,399
9:27-32 102,103,157,171,399
9:27-33 102,103,157,171,372,399
9:33 103,171,372
10:1-4 171,181,298
10:4 171,181,298
10:5 50
11:1,7-14,25,26,31 . . . 120,154,157,167 . 171,173,179,181,183,186,252,286,400 411,416
11:3 326
11:5 399
11:6 301
11:8 154,157,171
11:12,15 171,286
11:17 3,166
11:19-32 . 52,120,167,171,173,179,181 183,186,252,400,411,416
11:19-33 . . 52,57,120,167,171,173,179 181,183,186,252,400,411,416
11:23,24 167,179,252
11:25-27 . 52,120,167,171,173,179,181 183,186,252,400,411,416
11:25-32 . 52,120,167,171,173,179,181 183,186,252,400,411,416
11:25-33 . . 52,57,120,167,171,173,179 181,183,186,252,400,411,416
11:26 . . . 120,167,171,173,179,183,186 252,400,411,416
11:26,27 . . 52,120,167,171,173,179,181 183,186,252,400,411,416
11:26-29 . 52,120,167,171,173,179,181 183,186,252,400,411,416
11:26-32 . 52,120,167,171,173,179,181 183,186,252,400,411,416
11:26-33 . . 52,57,120,167,171,173,179 181,183,186,252,400,411,416
11:27 . 52,120,167,173,179,181,183,186 252,400,411,416
11:27-31 . 52,120,167,171,173,179,181 183,186,252,400,411,416
11:31 . . . 167,171,179,181,183,186,252 411
11:33,34 57,167,179,183
12:1 . 20,43,44,86,128,130,236,305,398 404
12:1,2 . 20,28,43,44,86,128,130,236,305 320,335,398,404
12:2 28,128,130,236,320,335
12:3 147,148
12:5 146
12:6-8 240
12:10 40,291
12:11 148
12:12 273
12:13 332
12:17 148,218,330
12:18 302
12:19 14,62
13:1 203,205,335
13:1-7 203,205,334,335
13:1,7,8 203,205,331,334,335
13:7 205,334,335
13:8 331,335
13:9,10 252,319
13:10 252,319
14: 45,208,280,317
14:9 280
14:13-17,20,21 45,208,317
14:14,20,21 208,317
14:17 45,208
15:4 158
15:13 45,132,145
15:16 137
15:19 132,145,228
16:3 242
16:4 326
16:9 242
16:20 309
16:27 352
20:5 291

1 CORINTHIANS

1:1 352
1:2 128,137,305
1:9 128
1:21 306
1:23 361
1:26-28 48,128,147
1:26-29 48,128,147
1:27,28 48,128,147
1:30 . . 48,128,137,147,305,306,352,361
2:4,5 93
2:9 154,158
2:9,10 72,140,154,158,159,238,358
2:9-16 . . . 72,135,136,140,141,148,153 154,157,158,159,238,358,368,412
2:10 72,140,154,159,238,358
2:10,13 72,140,154,159,238,358
2:12 154,157
2:14 . . 72,135,136,141,153,154,159,368 412
2:14,10 . . . 72,135,136,140,141,153,154 159,238,358,368,412
2:16 148,154
3:1 71
3:3,4 40
3:11 12,115,237,372
3:11-15 . . 12,106,107,109,115,221,237 250,304,315,363,372,375,385
3:12 109,115,375,385
3:12-15 . 106,107,109,115,221,250,304 315,363,375,385
3:13 115,304,315,385
3:13,15 . . 106,107,109,115,221,250,304 315,363,385
3:15 . 106,107,109,115,221,250,304,363 385
3:15,18 . . 106,107,109,115,221,250,285 304,363,385
3:16 40,168,415
3:16,17 40,45,168,415
3:17 45,168
3:18 285
3:23 352
4:1 238,239
4:1,8-13 . . 93,100,154,238,239,240,323
4:5 151
4:8 100,239
4:9 93,239,240
4:9-13 93,154,239,240,323
4:10 154,239,240
4:13 239,240,323
4:15 21,141,241
5:5 106,107,109,304,309,345,405
5:7 71,217,368
5:7,8 71,217,368
6:2 121,130,151,196,200
6:2,3 7,121,130,151,196,200
6:3 7,130
6:11 137,201,305
6:20 197
7:1 210
7:2 209
7:3-5 212
7:8 210
7:9 209
7:10,11 211,213
7:10-15 211,212,213,263,271
7:14 213,263,271
7:15 212,213
7:20,24 44
7:23 280
7:27 211,269
7:27-40 . 209,210,211,212,262,265,269
7:28 209,210,269
7:34-38 209,210,262,269
7:36 209,210,269
7:38 210,262,269

7:39 211,212,265,269
7:40 210,269
8:2 148
8:4,6 15,132,156,158,352
8:5,6 15,132,156,158,352
8:6 15,132,156,158,352
9:24 104,105
9:24,27 43,104,105,106
9:25 162
9:27 43,105,106
10:1,2 18,216,222,399
10:1,4 18,222,372,399
10:1-6 18,216,222,372,399,407
10:2 18,216,399
10:3 399,407
10:4 222,372,399
10:7 396,399
10:7-10 155,396,399
10:9 155,399
10:11 336,354,399
10:12 161
10:13 27
10:16 218,338,369,395
10:16,17 146,218,338,369,395
10:17 146,218,338,369
10:18 168,176,398
10:21 195
10:28,29 207,317
10:29 207,317
11:3 211,352,355,375,383,384,388
11:3-7,10-15 7,55,211,242,352,355,375 383,384,388
11:3,5,7,10,15 . . . 7,55,211,242,352,355 375,383,384,388
11:4 383
11:5,10 7,242,383,384
11:7 55,383,384
11:10 7,242,383,384
11:23 217,218
11:23-26 217,218,219,369
11:24 218,219,369
11:24-26 218,219,369
11:27-29 219
11:31 43
12:1-7 147,149,159,243,364
12:4,6,12,14,18-20,22-25 . . 40,139,146 149,159,216,243,291,364,391
12:4-11 147,149,159,228,243,364
12:6,7 147,149,159,243,364
12:7 147,149,159,364
12:8-10,28-30 . . 27,82,139,144,149,228 348
12:12 146,216,243,391
12:13 19
12:18 146,243,291
12:20 146,243
12:25 40,139,243
12:25-28 . . 40,48,139,144,146,218,228 243,389
12:27 48,139,146,218,389
12:28 139,144,228
12:30 27,82,228,348
12:31 149
13:3 347
13:4 154
13:8 27,149,228,230,349
13:8-10 27,147,149,228,230,349
13:10 147,228
13:12 378
14:1 149
14:2-16 90,131,348,349
14:8 90,348
14:12 131,348
14:16-19,21-25 . . 150,228,243,348,349
14:18,23,27-33 228,243,349
14:22 150,349
14:23-26 228,243,349
15:3 86,88,280,290
15:4-8 145,238,370
15:6 370
15:8 145,238
15:12,17,18 25,284,290,328
15:13,18 25,284,290,328
15:16-18 25,284,290,328
15:16,18 25,284,290,328
15:20 121,288,290
15:20-23,54 . . 56,121,123,162,164,166 . 199,234,280,284,288,290,318,390,417
15:21 . 56,166,234,280,284,288,290,318 390
15:21,22 . . 56,166,199,234,280,284,288 290,318,390,417
15:22 . 56,166,199,280,284,288,290,318 417
15:24 98,101,164,352
15:24-28 . . 86,98,101,164,200,231,294 352
15:25 86,98,164,200,231,294,352
15:25,26 . . . 86,98,164,200,231,294,352
15:27 98,164,352
15:29 231,339
15:36-38 61,125,231,234,290,327
15:37,38 61,125,231,234,290,327
15:38 61,125,231,234,290,327
15:38-40 61,125,231,234,290,327
15:40 231,234
15:40,44 . 21,22,87,88,164,231,234,303
15:41 234,291
15:42 . . 22,88,162,164,234,291,303,321
15:42,43 . . . 22,88,162,164,234,291,303 321
15:42-44 . 21,22,87,88,162,164,231,234 291,303,321
15:42-49 . . 21,22,54,87,88,131,162,164 . 231,234,281,291,295,303,304,321,325 387,388,396
15:42-44,51,52 21,22,33,87,88,114,162 164,231,234,291,303,321
15:42-44,53,54 . . . 21,22,87,88,123,162 164,165,231,234,288,291,303,321
15:42-45,47-50 21,22,54,87,88,131,162 . 164,231,234,281,286,291,295,296,303 304,321,325,362,387,388,396,415
15:44 21,22,87,88,164,231,234,303
15:44,50-52 . . . 21,22,33,87,88,114,162 . 164,231,234,286,291,296,303,362,415
15:45 . 54,131,231,234,281,295,303,304 325,387,388
15:45-47 . 54,131,231,234,281,295,303 304,325,387,388
15:45-48 . 54,131,231,234,281,291,295 303,304,325,387,388,396
15:45,47 . . 54,131,231,234,281,295,303 304,325,387,388
15:45,47,48 . . . 54,131,231,234,281,291 295,303,304,325,387,388,396
15:45,47-49 . . 54,131,231,234,281,291 295,303,304,325,387,388,396
15:47 . . . 231,234,281,295,303,304,387 388
15:48,49 . 234,281,291,295,303,304,396
15:48-50 . 21,162,234,281,286,291,295 296,303,304,362,396,415
15:50 . 21,162,286,291,296,303,362,415
15:51 21,33,88,291,303
15:51,52 21,33,88,114,162,291,303
15:51,53 21,33,88,162,164,165,291,303
15:52 21,33,88,114,162,291
15:53 162,164,165,303
15:54 123,162,164,288
15:54,55 123,162,164,288
15:56 318

2 CORINTHIANS

1:1-3 59,352
1:3,4 59,352
1:21,22 137
1:22 137
2:11 309
3:2 161
3:5 215,241
3:5,6 215,241
3:13-16 178,379
3:17 131,157,161,207
4:4 1,48,148,247,310
4:6 161
4:7 140,153,380
4:8-10 284
4:11 351
4:17 311,344
4:18 153
5:1 153
5:2 291
5:7 154,307
5:14 197,243,416
5:14,15 197,243,416
5:16 161,294,343
5:17 40,88
5:18 215,352
5:18,20,21 . . . 215,220,278,281,319,352 390
5:19,21 220,278,281,319,352,390
5:21 220,278,281,319,352,390
6:1 44,89,104,302
6:2 198
6:4 241
6:14 210
6:16 415
6:17 40
7:1 320,414
8:12 199
10:4 147
10:5 307
11:2 170,381,384,387,393,409
11:3 55,318,396
11:5 238
11:13 12,376
11:14 27,82,204,209,309,311
11:14,15 27,82,204,209,309,311
12:1,3,4 1,228,238
12:2,4 1,228,238
12:4 1,228,238
12:7-10 27,44,83,129,145,307,345
12:8-10 27,44,83,129,145,307,345
12:9 27,44,83,129,145,307,345
12:11,12 238,348
12:12 238,348
12:14 270
13:5 91
13:11 59

GALATIANS

1:1 241
1:3,15,16 238,264,352
1:6-9 90,232,241
1:6-12 45,90,141,232,238,241
1:8 90,232,241
1:10 45,90
1:11,12 90,141,238
1:12 90,141,238
1:15 238,264,352
2:4 207
2:11-14 238
2:16 302
2:20 324
3:2,5,10 228,302
3:5 228,302
3:6 2,94
3:6,8,16 . . 2,47,94,101,196,286,297,339
3:8 2,47,101,196,286,297,339
3:8,16,29 . 2,47,48,101,178,196,251,286 297,339,409
3:12 50
3:13 280
3:14 145
3:17 29,48
3:17,19 29,48,49,215
3:18-20 48,49,215
3:19 48,49,215
3:24 50
3:29 . . 48,101,178,196,251,286,297,339 409
4:4,5 50,143,152,168
4:4-7,30,31 . 48,50,55,143,152,168,396 397,398
4:5 50,143,152,168
4:7 55,168
4:22 48,387,396,398
4:22-31 . . . 22,48,168,387,396,397,398 400
4:23 22,48,396,398
4:23,28,31 22,48,168,396,398
4:23,29 22,48,396,398
4:24,25 48,396,397
4:26 48,396,400
4:30 48,168,396,397
5:1 114,207,243,416
5:2 239
5:13 128,207
5:14 187
5:16 152,154
5:16,17 152,154
5:18 147
5:22 45,147,150,154
5:22,23 45,147,150,154
5:24 43,178,404
6:1 147,157
6:2 40
6:6 240
6:8 111
6:10 41,242
6:14 45
6:15,16 168,176,398
6:16 168,176,398

EPHESIANS

1:1-6,9,10,15-20 . . . 48,57,85,88,89,103 141,143,147,152,157,277,352
1:4 48,103,352
1:4,5,11 48,103,143,152,352

1:5 103,143,152,352
1:6 88,352
1:7 319
1:8,9 57,352
1:10 85,89,277,352
1:13 137,145,152,157,371
1:13,14 . . 137,145,152,157,365,371,408
1:14 137,152,365,371,408
1:17 147,157,352
1:17,18 141,147,157,352
1:18 141,147,352
1:21 164
1:22,23 48,215,338,356,386,389
1:23 48,215,338,356,386,389
2:1,5,6 290,301,323,352,391,415
2:2 1,6,247,309,354
2:3 197
2:4,5,10 290,301,352,377,378
2:5,8 94,290,301,352,377
2:6 290,323,391,415
2:7 85,86,377
2:7-12 85,86,94,301,352,377,378
2:8 94,301,377
2:8-10 94,301,352,377,378
2:10 301,352,377,378
2:16 146
2:19-22 194,205,237,277
2:20 194,237,277
2:20-23 194,237,277
3:3 141,388
3:3-11 5,57,85,141,352,388
3:5 141,388
3:9 352,388
3:9,11,14,21 57,85,139,352,388
3:10 5,57,388
3:10,11 5,57,85,352,388
3:11 57,85,352,388
3:14,16-19 139,140,141,144,352
3:18 139,141,144
3:19 139,140
3:20 145,307
4:2,3 40
4:4 . . . 43,108,109,146,215,239,307,404
4:4,5 . 43,108,109,146,215,239,307,404
4:7 147
4:8 149
4:9 61
4:11,12 26,27,133,208,215,218,240,389 416
4:11-13 . . . 26,27,133,208,215,218,240 389,416
4:11-16 . . . 26,27,133,140,147,208,215 218,240,242,389,416,420
4:12 . . . 26,27,133,208,215,218,240,389 416
4:14 208,420
4:15 140,147,208,242
4:15,16 140,147,208,215,242
4:16 140,208,215,242
4:21 141
4:27 309
4:29 334
4:30 137,155,157,371
4:32 40,352
5:5,20 140,352
5:8 161
5:8,11,13 161
5:18 140,147,152,305
5:18-20 140,147,152,305,352
5:22-33 . 138,211,215,305,381,398,401
5:22,25 138,211,305,398
5:23 211,398
5:25,26 138,211,305,381,398,401
5:26 138,305,381,398,401
5:30 215,398
5:31,32 211,398
5:33 211,398
6:4 264,271
6:6 326
6:10 95
6:12 1,7,156,310
6:13 112,311,420
6:13-18 112,273,296,311,378,420
6:15 296,311
6:17 311,378
6:18 273,311
6:24 162

PHILIPPIANS

1:2 352
1:11 140
1:27 326
2:1-4 40
2:5 6,126,157,166,352
2:5,6 6,126,157,166,198,233,352
2:5-7 . . 6,126,128,157,166,198,233,352
2:5-11 . . 6,87,126,128,157,161,166,198 233,289,352
2:6 6,126,166,198,233,352
2:6,7 6,126,128,166,198,233,352
2:7-9 . . . 6,87,126,128,161,166,233,289 352
2:7-11 . . 6,87,126,128,161,166,233,289 352
2:8 6,87,126,128,233
2:9 6,126,128,161,233,289,352
2:9,10 6,126,128,161,233,289,352
2:9,11 6,126,128,161,233,289,352
2:12 105,128
2:12,13 105,128
2:14,15 161,413
2:15,16 161,341,413
2:16 341,413
2:30 326
3:3,14 128,233,306,346,352
3:7,10,11,13-15 . 19,45,88,128,233,306 326,346,352
3:8,9 324,326,346
3:8-10 19,88,324,326,346
3:8-15 . . 19,45,88,128,233,306,324,326 346,352
3:10 19,88,326,346
3:10,11 19,88,326,346
3:13 45,306,346
3:14 128,233,306,346,352
3:18,19 27
3:20,21 291,294,364
3:21 291,294,364
4:7 160,352
4:7,19 160,352
4:11 77
4:13 145

COLOSSIANS

1:3 352
1:9 139,140,141,144
1:12 301,352
1:12,13,15,19,20,27 . . . 14,301,303,344 352
1:15-18 . . 5,14,87,132,194,215,303,352
1:16 5,14,132,303
1:18 14,87,194,215,303
1:23,24 . . 136,218,322,324,339,369,407
1:24 136,218,322,324,339,369,407
1:26 141,144
1:27 344,352
2:6,7 91
2:9 351
2:10 164
2:12,13 352
2:14 50,298
2:16,17 299,336
3:1 352
3:2 320
3:3 19,352
3:4 286,303
3:5 396
3:12 103,104
3:15 146,216
3:16 152
3:18,19 211
3:21 265,271

1 THESSALONIANS

1:1 352
1:4 103
2:11 271
2:12 128
2:16 120
4:3 138,306
4:7 128
4:9 141
4:11 333
4:14 281,352
4:16 5,33,114,296,297
4:16,17 5,33,88,114,296,297
4:17 88,114
5:2,3 62,63,296
5:5 161
5:10 281
5:11 242
5:12,13 240
5:15 41
5:17 273
5:19 155,157
5:20,21 208
5:23 138,305
5:24 381

2 THESSALONIANS

1:1,2 352
1:6-9 127,151,232,296,312,411
1:8 127,296
1:9 127,151,232,312,411
2:2,3 8,17,239
2:3 8,17,239
2:3,4 8,10,17,239
2:4 8,10
2:7 8,17
2:7,8 8,9,11,17,298,378
2:7-10 . 8,9,11,17,105,298,311,378,420
2:8 8,9,11,17,298,378
2:8-10 . 8,9,11,17,105,298,311,378,420
2:9 8,17,311
2:10,11 8,17,105,311,313,420
2:10-12 8,17,105,311,313,420
2:11,12 105,311,313,420
2:13 138
2:14 345
2:16 352
3:6 311

1 TIMOTHY

1:2 352
1:5 305,404
1:17 162,164,291
1:20 309
2:3-6 . 54,151,165,184,196,213,215,234 . 278,280,283,289,319,322,337,352,374 389,417
2:4 151,184,196,283,289,417
2:4-6 . 54,151,165,184,196,213,215,234 . 278,280,283,289,319,322,337,352,374 389,417
2:5 . . . 54,165,184,196,213,215,278,280 283,289,337,352,374,389,417
2:5,6 . 54,165,184,196,213,215,234,278 . 280,283,289,319,322,337,352,374,389 417
2:6 . . . 54,165,184,196,213,234,278,280 283,289,319,322,337,374,389,417
2:7 241
2:11,12 26,211,242
2:12,13 26,211,242
2:14 55,310
3:1-7 240,271,309,332
3:2 240,332
3:4 240,271
3:6,7 240,309
3:8-13 212,242,271
3:11 212,242
3:12 242,271
4:1,2 209
4:1,3 209
4:5 138
4:10 417,418
4:12 45
4:14 27,348,364
4:16 90
5:3-16 . . . 44,148,209,269,270,309,330 333
5:8 44,148,209,270,330
5:13 209,333
5:14 209,269,309
5:14,15 209,269,309
5:17 239
5:22 364
5:23 83
5:24 200,293
6:6 76,269
6:9 333
6:10 111,148
6:12 95,129,307,345
6:15 164,198,350
6:15,16 . . . 57,100,162,164,198,291,296 303,350,379
6:16 . . 57,100,162,164,291,296,303,379
6:20 27,161,306
6:20,21 27,161,306

2 TIMOTHY

1:1,2 352
1:5 264
1:6 348
1:7 73,145,147,154,157
1:10 162,278,304,344,409,418
2:3 147
2:7 144
2:11 105,129,218,291,323,345
2:11,12 . . . 45,105,129,135,218,291,323 345,408

2:11,13 105,129,218,291,323,345
2:12 . . 45,105,129,135,218,323,345,408
2:15 25,91
2:19 137
2:20 109
2:21 380
2:24,25 95,239
2:25 95,239
2:26 203,311
3:1,2,4,13 90,294
3:10 90
3:10,13,14 90,294
3:12 44,135,136,152,157,218
3:15 264,418
3:16 12,90,141,194,419
3:16,17 12,90,141,149,194,238,419
3:17 12,141,149,194,238,419
4:1 352
4:3 90,397
4:7 95
4:8 297,345

TITUS

1:1,4 352
1:5 241
1:7-9 240
2:4 271
2:7 162
2:14 178
3:4-6 352

PHILEMON

3 21
10 21

HEBREWS

1:1-6,8,9,13 . 21,61,88,132,143,164,233
. 291,296,303,353,371,378,379,415
1:2 132,353
1:3 . . . 88,164,291,296,303,353,379,415
1:3,4 . 88,164,233,291,296,303,353,379
. 415
1:4 233,303,353
1:5 21,61,353
1:7 4
1:8 353,378
1:9 143,353,371
1:14 5,234
2:1 92,141
2:3 179,228,304
2:3,4 179,228,304
2:6,7 4,233,350
2:7 4,233,350
2:7,9 . . . 4,87,102,154,181,199,233,319
. 336,350,353,417
2:8,9 . 87,102,154,181,199,233,319,336
. 350,353,417
2:9 . . . 87,102,154,181,199,233,319,336
. 350,353,417
2:9-13 . . 27,48,87,102,138,154,181,199
. 233,305,319,336,350,353,417
2:11 48,138,305,353
2:12 27,353
2:14 94,247,309,310,360
2:15 107,109,111,250,405
2:16 4,233,387
3:1 128,168,337,407,408,412
3:5 168,176,177,398
3:5,6 95,168,176,177,398
3:6 95,168,177,398
3:8,9 29,198,363
4:1 300,386
4:1-11 35,298,300,386,391,401
4:3 35,298,300,391,401
4:3,6,10 35,298,300,391,401
4:3,10 35,298,300,391,401
4:12 272,306,378
4:14 407
4:15 311,319,343
4:16 44,220,272,300,307,345
5:5 20,21,353
5:5-8,10 20,21,353,407
5:6,10 353,407
5:12,13 136,370
5:13,14 136,370,419
5:14 136,370,419
6:4 104,149,156,197,313,320,386
6:4-6 . 45,104,149,156,197,222,313,320
. 386
6:6 . . . 45,104,156,197,222,313,320,386
6:11 95
6:17,18 47,59,391
6:18 47,59,391
6:19 337,338,412
6:19,20 337,338,412
6:20 337,338
7:1,2 347,407
7:1,2,9,10,14,15,17 347,407
7:11,12 197
7:19 86,87,157
7:25 134,213,220,353
7:25,27 134,213,214,220,353
7:25,28 134,213,220,353
7:26 87,166,278,319,322
7:27 213,214
8:2 168,177
8:3 404
8:5 336
8:6 169,215,339
8:6-13 169,215,339
9:1,2,9,10 177,336
9:5 181
9:6 169,368
9:6,7 169,368
9:8,9 177,336
9:11 169
9:12-14 281,305,319,353,390
9:14 281,305,319,353,390
9:15 215
9:19 49,410
9:19-21 49,410
9:22,23 . . 168,169,177,181,336,339,398
9:23 168,169,177,181,336,339,398
9:24 323,336,337,353
9:28 213,214
10:1 87,177,386
10:4 201
10:7 87,322,390
10:7,9,14 87,213,214,322,390
10:9 322,390
10:10 138
10:12-14 213,214,390
10:13,14 213,214,390
10:15 134
10:19,20 278,337,338,379,412,415
10:20 278,337,338,379,412,415
10:21,22,35 93,135,218
10:22 93,135,218
10:23 90,95
10:24 40,242
10:24,25 40,242,298,299
10:25 242,298,299
10:26 . 45,104,124,156,159,197,313,320
10:26,27 . . 45,104,124,156,159,197,313
. 320
10:26-29 . 45,104,124,156,157,159,197
. 216,232,313,320,353,386
10:26,29 . . 45,104,124,156,157,159,197
. 232,313,320,353,386
10:26-29,31,38 . . . 45,104,124,156,157
. 159,197,216,232,313,320,353,386,417
10:26,38 . . 45,104,124,156,159,197,313
. 320,417
10:28 104,216,232,313,386
10:28,29 . 104,156,157,159,216,232,313
. 353,386
10:28-31 . 14,104,156,157,159,216,232
. 313,353,386
10:29 . . . 104,156,157,159,232,313,353
. 386
10:30 14,386
10:38,39 45,313,410,417
10:39 410,417
11: . 2,4,22,24,48,91,93,95,135,166,169
. 201,258,290,292,307,336,387,389,390
. 396,399,409,410
11:1 2,93,201
11:1,2,39 . . . 2,4,48,93,166,201,292,396
. 399,410
11:1-40 . 2,4,22,24,48,91,93,95,135,166
. 169,201,258,290,292,307,336,387,389
. 390,396,399,409,410
11:4 201,387,390
11:6 91,93,95,135,201,307
11:7 2,201,389
11:7-9 2,201,389
11:12 201,336
11:13,39,40 . . . 2,4,48,166,169,201,292
. 396,399,410
11:23 22,201
11:32-35 . . . 4,24,201,258,290,292,396
. 409
11:32,34 24,201,396,409
11:32-38 . . . 4,24,201,258,290,292,396
. 409
11:35 4,24,201,258,290,292,409
11:35-38 . . . 4,24,201,258,290,292,409
11:36-38 24,201,258,409
11:39,40 . . 2,4,48,166,169,201,292,396
. 399,410
11:40 . . . 4,48,166,169,201,292,396,399
. 410
12:1 88,194,306,320,336
12:1,2 45,88,194,306,320,336,353
12:2 45,306,353
12:3 326
12:4 321
12:6 231,315
12:6-8 . . 134,135,231,263,264,315,321
12:7 134,135,263,264,315,321
12:7,8 134,135,263,264,315,321
12:11 154,315
12:18-24 . 4,14,61,109,110,194,215,217
. 237,353,400
12:22-24 . 4,14,61,109,110,194,215,217
. 237,353,400
12:23 4,14,61,109,110,194,217,237,353
. 400
12:23,24 . 4,14,61,109,110,194,215,217
. 237,353,400
12:24 14,215,353,400
12:26,27 64,77,359,364
12:28 77,365
12:29 127
13:1 40
13:2 4,332
13:4 210,262
13:5 44,76
13:8 134
13:10 129,388
13:10-15 . 47,129,138,321,323,338,353
. 388
13:11 47,129,321,323,338
13:11-13 47,129,138,321,323,338
13:12 129,138,321,323,338
13:15,20,21 129,353
13:16 398
13:18 273

JAMES

1:1 353
1:5 95,139,273
1:5-8 95,111,139,273
1:8 95,111
1:12 44
1:13 59
1:15 320
1:17 57,60,94,150
1:18 20,109,141,152,236,337
1:25 207
1:26 43
2:5 48,128
2:9,10 319
2:12 207
2:14-25 87,152,201,302
2:17 302
2:19-24 87,152,201,302
2:23 87,152,201,302
2:24 201,302
2:26 301
3:2,10,14 319
3:6 125,314
3:9 55,333
4:3 111,273
4:3,4 111,273,345
4:4 111,345
4:5 154
4:6 43,148
4:7 309
5:1-6 127,238
5:1-7 127,238
5:10,11,17 2,394
5:12 267
5:13-16 83,273
5:16 83,273
5:17 394

1 PETER

1:2 103,138,305,396
1:3 20,59,142,236,291
1:3,4 20,59,142,163,232,236,291
1:4 59,163,232,236
1:7 315
1:10-12 86,133,144,176,419
1:11 86,133,144
1:12 133,144,176,419
1:13 363
1:15 128
1:16 306
1:18 148,280,403
1:18,19 148,280,339,403

1:19 280,339,403
1:22 40
1:23 142,163
2:2 152,370,419
2:4,5 123,168,169,239,360,377,408,413 415
2:4-6 . . . 103,123,168,169,237,239,360 377,408,413,415
2:4-7 . . . 103,123,168,169,178,237,239 360,372,377,408,413,415
2:5 . . 123,168,169,239,360,377,408,413 415
2:5,9 123,129,160,168,169,178,239,306 360,377,408,409,412,413,415
2:5,9,10 . 123,129,160,168,169,178,239 306,360,377,408,409,412,413,415
2:6 103,237,360,377
2:6,8 103,237,360,372,377
2:7 178,237,360,372,377
2:7,8 103,178,237,360,372,377
2:7,9 129,160,168,169,178,237,306,360 372,377,408,409,412
2:9 . . 129,160,168,169,178,306,408,409 412
2:11 111,218,334
2:16 207
2:21 88,195
2:23 157
2:25 240
3:1 211,212
3:1,7 148,211,212
3:4 163
3:7 148,211,212
3:12 268,272
3:14 135,151
3:18 7,231,280,294,328,353
3:18-20 . . . 7,231,280,294,328,353,389
3:20 7,231,328,389
3:22 5,303
4:6 231
4:14 135,151,157
4:15 333
4:17 114,171
5:1-3 240
5:4 345
5:5,6 128,148
5:8 309
5:10 345,353

2 PETER

1:1,2 284,353
1:2-4 . . . 85,86,88,129,165,233,281,284 291,304,350,353,379,412
1:3,4 . . . 85,86,88,129,165,233,281,284 291,304,350,379,412
1:4 . 85,86,88,129,165,233,281,284,291 304,350,379,412
1:5-9 103,104,136,152,385
1:5-11 103,104,136,152,380,385
1:8 103,136,152,385
1:10,11,9 103,104,136,380,385
1:10,11 103,104,136,380,385
1:11 103,104,136,380,385
1:15 238,239
1:19 141,419
1:21 2,132,133,144
2:1 313,350
2:1,10,12,20-22 . . . 45,105,313,320,350 410
2:4 4,7,61,125,231,328
2:4,5 4,7,61,125,231,328
2:12 45,313
2:20-22 105,313,320,410
2:22 105,313,320,410
3:3,4 238
3:5-7,13 . . . 1,26,62,77,85,198,359,364
3:5,7,13 1,26,62,77,85,198,359,364
3:5-13 . . . 1,26,53,62,64,77,85,198,238 296,359,364
3:6,7,10-13 . . 1,26,62,64,77,85,198,238 296,359,364
3:7 1,85,198,359,364
3:7,13 1,26,62,77,85,198,359,364
3:8 1,53,62
3:8,10 1,26,53,62,64,238,296,359
3:10 1,26,62,64,238,296,359
3:10,12 1,26,62,64,238,296,359
3:10,13 . . 1,26,62,64,77,85,238,296,359 364
3:13 1,26,62,77,85,359,364
3:17 105

1 JOHN

1:1-3,5,7 353,411
1:5 353,411
1:8 318,319
1:8-10 318,319
2:1 1,215,319,353
2:2 280,319,337,338,398,399,407
2:15 345
2:16 111
2:18-27 . . . 8,141,143,146,147,153,159 337,353,355,371,420
2:18,19 8,355,420
2:18,22 8,355
2:19 8,355,420
2:20 141,153,159,355
2:20,27 . . 141,143,146,147,153,159,337 355,371
2:24 353,355
2:27 . 141,143,146,147,153,159,337,355 371
2:29 20,22,142,145
3:1 58,285
3:2 20,44,131,162,165,234,248,281,291 295,303,324,344,379,412,415
3:3 91,145
3:4 317
3:5 319
3:8 309,319,353
3:8,10 309,319,353
3:8,23 309,319,353
3:9 20,22,142,145
3:12 390
3:13 44,135
3:14 20,40,301
3:15 319
3:16 306,326
3:20 57
3:22 273
4:1 156,161,208,348,420
4:1,6 144,154,156,157,161,208,348,420
4:2 161
4:2,3 8,156,157,161
4:3 8,156,157,161
4:4 153
4:6 144,154,156,157
4:7 20,58,142,145
4:7-10,16,19 20,58,142,145,353
4:9,10,14 58,353
4:10 58,353
4:15 353
4:18 148,154,197
4:20 242
5:1,4,18 . 20,91,94,136,142,145,153,307 309,319
5:1,18 20,136,142,145,309,319
5:3 137
5:4 91,94,142,145,153,307
5:5,9-11,20 144,353
5:7,8 134,353
5:8 134,353
5:12 293
5:14,15 139
5:16 45,105,156,159,222,313,386
5:17 319
5:18 20,136,142,145,309,319
5:18,19 20,136,142,145,309,319
5:20 144,353

2 JOHN

3,9 91
7 8,161
9-11 91

3 JOHN

JUDE

1,4,21 105,313
3 96,160,311
4 313
4,5,10-13,16 221,313,376,389,390
6 7,328
7 411
9 5,297,309
11 221,313,389,390
13 313,376
14,15 . 5,7,96,105,107,109,160,221,242 . 297,309,311,313,328,376,389,390,411
20 242
21 105
23 107,109

REVELATION

1:1 353
1:4,5 143,353
1:5 143,353
1:7 297
1:10 228
1:11 368
1:16 378
1:17,18 122,123,164,327,367
1:18 122,123,164,327,367
1:20 194,368,375,376,391
2:1 7,384,391
2:1,8,12,18 7,384,391
2:2 376
2:7 153,297
2:7,11,17 137,153,297,341,388,407
2:10 44,105,129,300,304,309,387
2:17 137,153,297,341,388,407
2:20 37,394,400
2:26 97,153,297
2:26,27 97,153,286,297
2:27 97,286,297
2:28 6
3:1,7,14 7,14,69,76,87,116,317,353
3:4,5,12 110,153,168,297,353,400
3:5 110,153,297
3:11 108
3:12 153,168,297,353,400
3:12,14 . 7,14,69,76,87,116,153,168,297 317,353,400
3:14 7,14,69,76,87,116,317,353
3:14-22 . 7,14,34,35,69,76,86,87,97,100 . 116,153,169,171,247,297,304,317,353 363,378
3:16 34,35,69,76,116,169,171,317
3:17 69,76,100,116,317
3:18 69,76,116,247,317,363
3:20 69,76,116,247,317
3:21 . 69,76,86,97,116,153,297,304,317 353,378
5:6 360,403
5:9 280,403
5:9-13 . . 280,337,353,377,396,403,407 409
5:10 337,377,403,407,409
5:13 353,396,403
6:8 124
6:9-11 62,350
6:10 62,350
6:14 36
6:17 198
7: . 71,83,103,106,107,108,109,110,115 126,136,195,304,345,405,406
7:1-3 115
7:2,3 115
7:4 103
7:9 106,108,109,136,195,345,406
7:9,10 . . . 106,108,109,136,195,345,406
7:9,13-17 . . 71,83,106,107,108,109,110 115,126,136,195,304,345,405,406
7:9,14 71,106,107,108,109,110,115,126 136,195,345,405,406
7:9-17 . 71,83,106,107,108,109,110,115 126,136,195,304,345,405,406
7:9,14,15 . 71,106,107,108,109,110,115 126,136,195,304,345,405,406
7:14 . . 71,106,107,108,109,110,115,126 136,345,405,406
7:14,15 . . . 71,106,107,108,109,110,115 126,136,304,345,405,406
7:15 . 106,107,108,109,304,345,405,406
7:15-17 . . 83,106,107,108,109,304,345 405,406
7:17 83,106,108,304,345
8:2 33
8:9 326
11:3 394
11:15 33,61,98,206,297
11:15,18 33,61,98,206,294,297,378
11:17,18 33,61,98,294,297,378
11:18 33,61,98,294,297,378
11:19 415
12:1 12,149,237,370,376,377,385
12:6 79,221,384,394
12:6,16 79,221,363,384,394
12:9 375
12:11 221,326
12:14 79
12:15,16 363,394
13: 8,9,10,36,37,38,79,131,354,355,361 366,397
13:1-8,18 8,9,10,36,79,354,355
13:1,2,5-7 8,9,10,79,354,355
13:1-8 8,9,10,79,354,355
13:2 8,9,10,354,355
13:2,5-7 8,9,10,79,354,355
13:3 8,9,354,355

13:5 8,9,10,79,354
13:11,12,14 9,36,366
13:11,14-17 . . . 9,36,37,38,131,361,366
. 397
13:13 37
13:14,15 9,36,37,38,131,361,366
13:14-18 8,9,36,37,38,131,361,366,397
13:15 9,36,37,38,131,361,366
13:15-17 . . 9,36,37,38,131,361,366,397
13:17 9,36,37,397
14:1 44,103,194
14:1,4 44,103,194,384
14:3 280
14:4 103,194,384
14:9-11 39,126
14:9-14 39,113,126,170,297
14:14 39,113,170,297
14:14,15 39,113,170,297
14:14-16 39,63,113,170,297
14:14-19 . . . 39,63,71,113,116,170,297
. 380,383
14:16-20 . . . 39,63,71,113,116,170,380
. 383
14:17-20 . . . 39,63,71,113,116,380,383
14:18 39,63,71,113,116,380,383
14:18,19 39,63,71,113,116,380,383
14:18-20 . . . 39,63,71,113,116,380,383
14:19 39,63,71,113,116,380
15:1 393
15:3 286,289,386,407
15:3,4 286,289,386,407
15:4 286,289
15:5-8 376
15:8 376
16:12 64,168,392,403
16:12-16 . . . 36,64,76,168,296,361,392
. 403
16:13 36,64,76,361
16:13,14 36,64,76,361
16:13,14,16 36,64,76,361
16:14 36,64,76
16:15 64,296
16:17-20 64,68,75,359,382
16:18 64,75,359,382
16:18-21 64,68,75,359,382
16:19 68,75,359
17: . . 8,9,10,16,17,18,37,68,69,130,168
. 170,205,206,354,355,360,366,381,382
. 383,395,397,401,402
17:1 9,16,168,381,401
17:1-6 . . . 8,9,16,17,18,69,168,205,354
. 360,381,383,395,397,401
17:1,2,18 . . . 9,16,168,381,383,395,401
17:1,15 9,16,168,381,382,401,402
17:2 9,16,381,383,395
17:3-6 . 8,16,17,18,69,205,354,360,381
. 397
17:3,5 . . 8,16,17,18,69,205,354,360,381
. 397
17:3,5,16 . 8,10,16,17,18,68,69,205,354
. 355,360,381,397
17:5 . . . 8,16,17,18,69,205,354,360,381
. 397
17:12-14 37,130,170,206,366
17:14 37,130,170,206
17:15 168,382,401,402
17:16 10,18,68,355
17:16,17 10,18,68,355
18: . . . 10,17,18,36,37,39,68,69,112,116
. 117,122,206,247,382,383,394,395
18:1,21 . . . 10,17,18,36,37,39,68,69,122
. 247
18:1-5 . . . 10,17,68,69,112,116,117,382
. 383,395
18:2 10,17,69,112
18:2-4 . . . 10,17,68,69,112,116,117,382
. 383,395
18:2,5,8,9,21,23 . . 10,17,18,36,37,39,68
. 69,112,122,247
18:3 69,112,383,395
18:4 68,69,112,116,117,382
18:5-7 10,68,69,206,394
18:7 68,69,206,394
18:7,9 10,68,69,206,394
18:8 10,17,36,39,68,69
18:8,21 . . . 10,17,18,36,37,39,68,69,122
. 247
18:21 . . . 10,17,18,36,37,39,68,122,247
19: . . 4,11,37,39,48,63,68,69,71,76,116
. 124,157,178,206,211,297,314,361,369
. 376,378,413
19:1,2 68,69
19:2 68,69
19:3 376
19:7 48,413
19:8 178,369
19:9 211
19:10 157
19:11-16 4,63,71,116,297,378
19:13 4,71
19:14,15 63,71,116,297,378
19:15 63,71,116,297,378
19:15,21 63,71,76,116,297,378
19:17,18 . 4,11,37,39,48,63,68,69,71,76
. 116,124,157,178,206,211,297,314,361
. 369,376,378,413
19:19 37,76,206
19:19-21 . 11,37,39,76,124,206,314,361
. 378
19:20 11,39,76,124,314,361
20: 2,3,37,39,48,89,94,100,105,108,124
. 125,165,196,200,202,222,231,236,248
. 289,292,293,302,304,309,310,312,314
. 345,355,356,367,371,375,377,383,406
. 412
20:1,2 196,248,289,309,375
20:2 196,248,289,309,375
20:2,3 . . . 196,200,248,289,309,375,383
20:3 196,200,289,309,375,383
20:4 2,37,48,108,355,377
20:4-6 . . . 2,37,48,100,105,108,165,231
. 236,293,304,345,355,371,377,412
20:5 108,231,293
20:6 . 100,105,108,165,236,304,345,371
. 412
20:7-9 3,89,406
20:9 3,89,406
20:10 39,125,310,314,356
20:10,14 . . 39,124,125,222,289,292,310
. 312,314,356,367
20:10,14,15 . . . 39,124,125,200,222,289
. 292,310,312,314,356,367
20:12 94,202,231,289,302
20:12,13 94,124,202,231,289,302
20:12-14 . . 39,94,124,202,222,231,289
. 292,302,312,314,367
20:13 124,202,289
20:14 . 39,124,222,289,292,312,314,367
20:15 124,200,314
21: . . 2,12,16,77,83,84,106,124,149,153
. 167,169,194,200,237,239,289,304,312
. 314,345,349,356,367,374,392,400
21:1 374
21:2 400
21:3 106,289,304,392
21:3-5 2,83,84,106,289,304,392
21:4 2,83,84,289,392
21:7 153,289
21:8 200,312,314,367
21:9 16,345,356,400
21:9,10 16,124,345,356,400
21:9-11 16,124,345,356,400
21:9-27 . 12,16,77,124,149,167,169,194
. 237,239,289,345,349,356,400
21:10-27 . . . 12,16,77,124,149,167,169
. 194,237,239,289,349,356,400
21:14 . 12,124,149,169,194,237,239,349
. 400
21:22 124,400
21:24 77,124,167,289,400
21:24-26 77,124,167,289,400
22 . . 6,83,101,104,151,202,232,289,297
. 312,317,382,401
22:1,2 289,382,401
22:1,2,17 101,104,151,289,382,401
22:1,17 101,104,151,289,382,401
22:3 83,289
22:3-5 83,289
22:8 317
22:12 202,297
22:15 312
22:16 6
22:17 101,104,151,289,382
22:18,19 232